



















WILD GEESE IN SPANISH FLANDERS, 1582-1700

© Government of Ireland, 1964.



COIMISIÚN LÁIMHSCRÍBHINNÍ NA hÉIREANN

WILD GEESE  
IN SPANISH FLANDERS  
1582 - 1700

DOCUMENTS, RELATING CHIEFLY TO IRISH  
REGIMENTS, FROM THE ARCHIVES GÉNÉRALES  
DU ROYAUME, BRUSSELS, AND OTHER SOURCES.

EDITED BY  
BRENDAN JENNINGS, O.F.M., D.LITT., M.R.I.A.



DUBLIN:  
STATIONERY OFFICE  
FOR THE  
IRISH MANUSCRIPTS COMMISSION  
1964

To be purchased from the  
GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS SALE OFFICE,  
G.P.O. ARCADE, DUBLIN 1,

or through any Bookseller

Price £3 15. 0.

## CONTENTS

	Page
FOREWORD	VII
INTRODUCTION :	
SOURCES IN THE BRUSSELS ARCHIVES	I
GOVERNORS OF THE SPANISH LOW COUNTRIES 1581-1701	2
IRISH REGIMENTS IN THE LOW COUNTRIES :	
I REGIMENT OF COLONEL WILLIAM STANLEY	3
II UNATTACHED COMPANIES	4
III REGIMENT OF COLONEL HENRY O'NEILL	4
IV REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN O'NEILL	5
V REGIMENT OF COLONEL HUGH O'DONNELL	7
VI REGIMENT OF COLONEL OWEN [ROE] O'NEILL	8
VII REGIMENT OF COLONEL THOMAS PRESTON	10
VIII REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN BARRY	11
IX REGIMENT OF COLONEL PATRICK O'DONNELL	12
X REGIMENT OF COLONEL PATRICK FITZGERALD	13
XI REGIMENT OF THE MARQUIS OF ANTRIM	14
XII REGIMENT OF COLONEL DERMOT O'SULLIVAN MOR	14
XIII REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN MORPHY I.	15
XIV REGIMENT OF COLONEL CHARLES MOLEDY	16
XV REGIMENT OF COLONEL DUDLEY COSTELLOE	17
XVI REGIMENT OF COLONEL CHARLES DILLON	17
XVII REGIMENT OF COLONEL RICHARD GRACE	17

## CONTENTS

	Page
XVIII REGIMENT OF COLONEL PHILIP O'REILLY	18
XIX REGIMENT OF COLONEL GEORGE CUSACK	19
XX REGIMENT OF THE EARL OF BRISTOL	19
XXI REGIMENT OF COLONEL LOUIS FARRELL	19
XXII REGIMENT OF COLONEL JAMES DEMPSY	20
XXIII REGIMENT OF COLONEL THEODORE O'MEARA	20
XXIV REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN MORPHY II	21
XXV THE TAAFFE REGIMENT	22
XXVI REGIMENT OF COLONEL DENIS O'BYRNE	23
COLONELS AND OFFICERS WHO SERVED WITH CONDÉ	24
COLONELS AND OFFICERS WHO SERVED WITH THE DUKE OF LORRAINE	24
PAY OF OFFICERS	25
RECRUITING	26
COSTS OF RECRUITING	45
RELATIONS WITH IRELAND	47
ENGAGEMENTS	52
SOURCES USED FOR NOTES:	
MANUSCRIPT MATERIAL	58
PRINTED AND CALENDARED MATERIAL	58
DOCUMENTS FROM THE ARCHIVES GÉNÉRALES DU ROYAUME, BRUSSELS	65
APPENDIX: DOCUMENTS FROM OTHER ARCHIVES	481
NOTES	515
INDEXES	629



## FOREWORD

The documents presented in this work have been transcribed and translated from the Spanish or French originals preserved in the Archives générales du Royaume at Brussels. Every section of the archives which seemed likely to afford any information of Irish interest has been investigated, and it is hoped that nothing of importance has been overlooked, though perhaps, as the archives are so vast, and not yet completely catalogued, this may be unduly optimistic. I am happy, however, to be able to say that in my investigations I had the unflinching assistance of Monsieur Joseph Lefevre, who until his recent retirement from the post of head of his department, had spent most of his life in the archives, and had an intimate knowledge of the sections likely to yield any Irish results. I am likewise glad to be able to say that at his suggestion and with his full approval I was able to avail myself later of the guidance by the standard volumes on the correspondence of the Governors of the Low Countries which were published very largely with his cooperation by Joseph Cuvelier. I had done my own research at Brussels during the years 1919-20, before the first volumes of Cuvelier's work were published<sup>1</sup>; but when I returned to Brussels at various intervals later, I was able to check with their help the material I had found previously, and to fill in some omissions. In every instance, however, I have worked directly upon the original documents, and generally speaking I have given the full text whenever this was apposite. Cuvelier is satisfied usually, and more so when documents of Irish interest are concerned, with a very brief *précis*.

Many of the documents found at Brussels relate to Irish ecclesiastical history, and are of some importance for the information they convey upon such subjects as the foundation and government of the Irish colleges at Antwerp, Louvain and Douai. They have been published elsewhere<sup>2</sup>. In this present collection the material is almost exclusively of political or military interest, and relates to the Irish regiments which served with the Spaniards in the Low Countries from 1587-1685, and to the recruiting carried out in Ireland by which these regiments were established and maintained. This is a page of Irish history upon which so far very little has been published. The names of

<sup>1</sup>*Correspondance de la Cour d'Espagne sur les affaires des Pays-Bas au XVII<sup>e</sup> siècle*. Tome I. Henri Lonchay et Joseph Cuvelier, Brussels, 1923. Five volumes of the correspondence were published by Cuvelier, the last at Brussels in 1935. A sixth volume, *Supplément etc.*, was published by Cuvelier and Lefevre Brussels, 1937. Later, in 1940, 1953, and 1956 respectively, Lefevre published at Brussels volumes I, II, and III of the *Correspondance de Philippe II, 1577-1591*.

<sup>2</sup>See *Archivium Hibernicum*, Maynooth, 1946, 'Miscellaneous Documents' I; *ibid.*, 1949, 'Miscellaneous Documents' II; and 1950, 'Miscellaneous Documents' III. In the same journal, 1943, X, pp. 163-210, 'Documents of the Irish Colleges at Douai'.



Colonel Owen O'Neill and Colonel Thomas Preston are familiar enough to every Irish student, as is also the fact that both these experienced officers returned to Ireland in the year 1642 to take a prominent part in the war of the Confederacy of Kilkenny. Of their military career on the continent, however, very little hitherto has been brought to light; and this is true to even a greater extent of the many other Irish colonels and officers who served with their regiments in an unbroken succession in the Low Countries in the 17th century. The present documents do not give us by any means all the information on this subject which could be desired, but they provide a large and important addition to the sparse and mostly insignificant items which so far have been available. The notes which have been added from other trustworthy sources make no claim whatever to be exhaustive; but they provide much information on the general subject, and it is hoped that they will spare the student much time and trouble on further research.

The preparation of this work brought me into contact with many archivists, librarians, and other scholars, to whom I wish to express my indebtedness and grateful appreciation. I mention in the first place Monsieur Étienne Sabbe, Archiviste Général du Royaume, who gave me his permission to publish the Brussels documents, with his good wishes for the success of the work. During the many months when I worked in the Brussels archives, and later upon the occasions of my many visits there, the officials and assistants were always most generous in their attention and guidance, and in placing their wide information at my disposal. In particular I wish to mention Monsieur Joseph Lefevre, who has since established his reputation as one of Belgium's outstanding scholars; and Mademoiselle Lucienne Van Meerbeck, who enjoys the same distinction. To the officials of the Record Office, London, who were always most helpful on the occasion of my visits there, I am indebted also for their permission to publish the documents which are noted in the Appendix to this work. The Controller of H.M. Stationery Office, London, has most generously allowed me to make use of the Downshire MSS, the quotations from which are of great interest and importance for the history of the Flight of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell to the Low Countries, and their departure for Rome. I wish to express my deep appreciation. Mr Bebington, Director of the City Libraries at Sheffield, obtained for me the permission of Earl Fitzwilliam's agent to publish from the Library's collections some documents of importance for the career of Patrick Daniel or O'Donnell, and an English translation of a letter of Owen O'Neill. These also are published in the Appendix, and I thank Mr Bebington for his most friendly cooperation.

In Dublin, I wish to thank the officials of the National Library for the attention and services I received from them invariably on the occasions of my many visits. At the Record Office, Dublin, Miss Griffith, Deputy Keeper, very kindly suggested to me upon her own initiative that it would be a great convenience for me to work there, and I was very glad to be able to avail myself of this privilege. The

officials were always most helpful, and I am privileged to thank them.

The Index to this work has been made by Mr MacLellan,\* whom I cannot thank sufficiently. He undertook a tiresome task, which few men would have brought to a finish; for he had to deal with Irish names contorted in every fashion, no doubt in the first place by the Irishmen themselves, and then by Spanish clerks to whom they must have been unintelligible. It is hardly necessary to remark that the same clerks made no better success of the Flemish or French names of localities.

I wish, finally, to express my thanks to Dr E. MacLysaght, Chairman of the Irish Manuscripts Commission, for his unfailing courtesy and assistance, and to Miss E. Brereton, Secretary to the Commission, likewise always most helpful and courteous.

BRENDAN JENNINGS, O.F.M.

---

\* Mr. MacLellan was engaged in the correction of the first proof of the index prior to his untimely death in February, 1963. The correction of the proofs of the index has been completed by his daughter, Mrs. Joan Kennedy.

In footnotes to the introduction reference to a document in the Archives Générales du Royaume, Brussels, is indicated by the number which is printed in heavy type in the following calendar, pp. 1-479.

Where the document number is followed by the word 'note', the reference is to one of the 'Notes from other Sources' (i.e. the notes printed in pp. 515-628).



## INTRODUCTION

### THE ARCHIVES GÉNÉRALES DU ROYAUME AT BRUSSELS

The sources in the archives which have been drawn upon, and the abbreviations by which they are designated are as follows:<sup>1</sup>

- AJ. Archives Jésuitiques.<sup>2</sup>  
CC. Chambres des Comptes, Registres aux gages et pensions.<sup>3</sup>  
CF. Conseil des Finances (Consultes du Conseil des Finances).<sup>4</sup>  
CPE: Conseil Privé Espagnol.  
EA. Papiers d'Etat et de l'Audience.<sup>5</sup>  
EAR. Papiers d'Etat et de l'Audience, Négociations de Rome.  
EAP. Papiers d'Etat et de l'Audience, registres de contrôle des passeports.<sup>6</sup>  
EG. Secrétairerie d'Etat et de Guerre, registres des patentes, titres, ordres et dépêches.  
EGC. Secrétairerie d'Etat et de Guerre, Correspondance des Gouverneurs.

Correspondance de l'Archiduc Albert avec Philip III.

Correspondance particulière de l'Archiduc Albert avec Philip III.

Correspondance de Philippe III avec Juan de Mancicidor, secrétaire d'Etat et de Guerre de l'Archiduc Albert.

Correspondance de l'Infanta Isabella avec Don Gaspar de Guzman, Comte de Olivares, Duc de San Lucar de Barrameda, premier ministre.

Correspondance du Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand avec Philippe IV.

Correspondance du Cardinal Infante Ferdinand avec Don Juan de Neocolalde, residant à Londres.

Correspondance de Don Alonso de Cardenas avec le Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand.

Correspondance du Cardinal Infant Don Ferdinand avec le Marquis Miguel de Virgilio.

Correspondance du Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand avec les Marquis de Cardenas, de Velada, et de Malvezzi, ambassadeurs à Londres.

---

<sup>1</sup>Except where otherwise noted, all documents are in Spanish:

<sup>2</sup>Spanish or Latin. <sup>3</sup>French. <sup>4</sup>French or Spanish.

<sup>5</sup>Mostly Spanish; some French or Latin.

<sup>6</sup>French. For the attributions of the Audiencer see E. Lameere, 'Essai sur l'origine et les attributions de l'Audiencier', *Revue de l'Université de Bruxelles*, I (1895-6), pp. 607-80. At p. 653: "C'est d'abord en 1600. pour éviter de nouvelles difficultés entre l'Audiencier et les secrétaires d'Etat, Albert et Isabelle élaborèrent un édit réglant minutieusement les attributions de chacun d'eux." P. 678. "Il fut décidé en 1617 que l'audiencier aurait l'expédition des lettres de finances, des placards, des ordonnances, de toutes les nominations militaires."

- Correspondance du Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand avec le Comte de Villamediana à Chelsea, Angleterre.
- Correspondance de Don Francisco de Mello, gouverneur général des Pays Bas, avec divers, 1642-3.
- Correspondance du Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand avec le Marquis de Castel Rodrigo, ambassadeur extraordinaire à Rome.
- Correspondance de Philippe IV avec l'Archiduc Léopold Guillaume, gouverneur des Pays-Bas.
- Correspondance de l'Archiduc Léopold Guillaume avec Philippe IV.
- Correspondance de Philippe IV avec Don Juan d'Autriche.
- Correspondance de Philippe IV avec le Marquis de Caracena.
- EGR. Secrétairerie d'Etat et de Guerre, Requetes.<sup>1</sup>
- GS. Secrétairerie d'Etat et de Guerre. Gastos Secretos (secret expenses).

GOVERNORS OF THE SPANISH LOW COUNTRIES. 1581-1701

- Farnese, Alexander, Duke of Parma, 1581-3 Dec. 1592.
- Mansfeld, Count Peter Ernest of, Dec. 1592-94.
- Ernest, Archduke of Austria, 30 Jan. 1594-21 Feb. 1595.
- Azevedo, Pedro Enrique de, 1595-Jan. 1596.
- Albert, Archduke of Austria, 29 Jan. 1596-13 July 1621.
- Isabella Clara Eugenia, Infanta of Spain, 6 May 1598-1 Dec. 1633.
- Moncada, Francesco de, 1633-4 Nov. 1634.
- Fernando, Cardinal, Infante of Spain, 4 Nov. 1634-9 Nov. 1641.
- Mello, Francisco de, Count of Assumar, Nov. 1641-44.
- Moura Cortereal, Manuel de, Marquis de Rodrigo, 1644-47.
- Leopold William, Archduke of Austria, 1647-1656.
- John of Austria, 1656-Mar. 1659.
- Benavides Carillo, Luis de, Marquis de Fromiata, 1659-Sept. 1664.
- Moura Cortereal, Francisco de, Marquis de Castel Rodrigo. 1664-Sept. 1668.
- Velasco, Inigo Melchior Fernandez de, Duke of Feria, Sept. 1668-July 1670.
- Zuñiga y Fonseca, Fernandez de, Duke of Feria, Count of Monterey, 1670-Feb. 1675.
- Gurréa, Carlos de, Duke of Villahermosa, 1675-Oct. 1677.
- Farnese, Alexander, 24 Oct, 1678-1682.
- Ottone, Enrique, Marquis de Carretto, Count of Millesimo, 1683-85.
- Agurto, Francisco Antonio de, Marquis of Castañaga, 1685-92.
- Wittelsbach, Maximilian of, 26 Mar. 1592-22 Mar. 1701.

<sup>1</sup>French or Spanish.



## IRISH REGIMENTS 1586-1686

In the list which follows the Irish regiments mentioned in the Brussels documents are given in their chronological order, and to each regiment has been attached a list of its officers, so far as it is possible to gather their names from the documents. It is hoped that this will facilitate a view of the regiments as a whole, which otherwise could be obtained only with great difficulty. Further information about each individual can be gathered from the general index.

## I. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL WILLIAM STANLEY. 1586-1604

The regiment of Colonel William Stanley had been recruited in Ireland after the Desmond wars, and sent to Holland to help the Dutch in their war against Spain.<sup>1</sup> The men are stated to have numbered 1,000. Some of them had seen service with Bingham; others had formed part of the garrison at Carrickfergus; and others had belonged to a company which had served in Ireland under Captain Woodhouse. On 8 May 1586 it was reported that they were already mustered at Waterford, to make the journey by sea to Flushing; and on 11 July Walsyngham wrote to Leicester that he hoped "the next westerly wind will bring him [Stanley] and his troops unto your Lordship." On 2 August they were in the Low Countries with Stanley, in action before Dixmude, after he had already made an unsuccessful attempt to gain possession of Gravelines; and on 22 September they took a distinguished part in the battle of Zutphen. By November they had gone into winter quarters under Stanley at Deventer; and that marked the end of their English service, for on 19 January 1587 Stanley changed his allegiance, and with practically all his men went over to the service of the Spaniards. They were formed into one body with two hundred and nine Catholic refugee gentlemen then in the Low Countries, and the whole regiment, with a few Scots, was reported to number 2,000 officers and men. Stanley retained the command, and the regiment was known as Stanley's, or the Irish regiment. The officers of the regiment whose names are mentioned in the Brussels papers are:

Lieutenant-Colonel: Jacomo Francisco.

Captains: Orlando York. Edward Stanley. William Ward, campaign-captain. Robert Bostock. Patrick Giles. Eduard Viless. Lawrence Fallan. — Stanley. John de la Marsella. Martin Meinart. — Paton.

<sup>1</sup>For references see notes 8, a-z; and 'Irish Swordsmen in Flanders 1586-1610', in *Studies*, vol. XXXVI, no. 144, December 1947, pp. 402-10; and vol. XXXVII, no. 146, June 1948, pp. 189-200, 'Irish Swordsmen in Flanders' II, 'Independent Irish companies and Regiment of Henry O'Neill'.

Ensigns: John Quellay. John Stanley. Ensign Hugo. Patrick Dillon. George Barret. Dimiez Connier. Thomas Ostanhuerts.  
 Lieutenants: John Petit. Edward Greffette. — Trogmorton.  
 Quartermaster. John Guierne.  
 Doctor. Dermot Harrin.  
 Chaplains: Thomas Worthington. Philip Woduardo. Nicholas Laghley. John Fenno.

## II. UNATTACHED COMPANIES

Stanley's regiment seems to have maintained its existence down to the time of the siege of Ostend, 1601-4, but in the year 1594 a considerable section of his men refused to serve under him any further as he was an Englishman, and in association with a large body of Italians they mutinied, and withdrew to Sichem, and later to Tirlmont. They were pardoned on 12 June 1596, by the new governor of the Spanish Low Countries, the Archduke Albert of Austria, and three days later a commission was granted to Captain John Claramont with authority to levy the Irishmen at Tirlmont, who numbered 300. On the same day a commission as captain was also granted to Edward Fitzgerald, to enable him to recruit a further 80 Irishmen who were in the castle at Granloy. Fitzgerald retained his command until June 1602, when he was succeeded by Captain George Barnewall, who seems to have retained his command at least down to 6 October 1605. On 17 January 1605 a company was disbanded which had been under the command of Captain Lawrence Barnewall; and on 20 February a company of Captain Alexander Eustace is mentioned, and on 2 April 1605, another, of Captain Willis Walsh, who had come to the Low Countries with 60 Irishmen levied by him at his own expense. These companies maintained the Irish tradition until the formation of the regiment of Colonel Henry O'Neill in 1605-6.

## III. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL HENRY O'NEILL.<sup>1</sup> 1605-10

Henry O'Neill, second son of Hugh O'Neill Earl of Tyrone by his wife Siobhan sister of Hugh Roe O'Donnell, had been sent by his father to Spain as a hostage on 19 April 1600, against the promise that within six weeks of his arrival a Spanish army would be landed in Ireland. On 22 September 1605 he was made a grant by the King of Spain of 220 crowns monthly, to be paid to him at Brussels, where he seems to have arrived before the 2nd of December following. On 28 June 1605 the Council of State at Madrid had reported to Philip III that O'Neill had asked to be

<sup>1</sup> 'See Irish Swordsmen in Flanders' II, 1586-1610, 'Independent Irish Companies and Regiment of Henry O'Neill', *Studies*, June 1948, pp. 189-202.



given command of a regiment of Irishmen in Flanders, which could be formed from the men already serving there, and others whom he would be able to recruit. The first appointment to the regiment is recorded on 11 December following in the person of William Barry, chaplain, and others followed immediately afterwards, as reported in the military registers at Brussels. Henry O'Neill held the command until his death on 25 August 1610, in Spain, where he had gone during the twelve years truce which had been signed with the Dutch United Provinces in 1609. The officers of his regiment who are mentioned in these papers are:

Major: Edward Geraldin.

Captains: Thomas Preston. Jenquin Visumuns, Henry Hagan. Miler Maconel. Thomas Barri. George de la Hid. Thomas de San Lorenzo. John Torquel. Art Oneill. Hugo Mostin. Eugenio Oneill. William Darsi. Paul Redico. George Bernaval. James Galant. Walter Delayt. Henry Geraldin. Neillan Omulloaghlyn. William Barret. Thadeus Carti. Denis Garlo. Mauricio Geraldin. Robert Daniel. William Vales. Thomas Stanihurst. Cornelius Driscol. John Rath.

Ensigns: Derbi Grenon. James Garland. Peter Geraldine. Martin Brangan. Denis Carti. Nicholas Lince. Walter Husse. Denis Mbel. James Beth. Gerald Darsi.

Sergeants: Manus Odoherty. Hugo Obruyn. James Drum. Edward Sherle. Macon Driscol. Thadeus Fa. Thomas Quelli. Dermot Ros. William Mauris. Morart Mortog.

Quartermaster: Salamon Geraldin.

Drum-major: Nicholas Erlens.

Judge Advocate: Robert d'Asiliers.

Doctor: Thomas Lodgies.

Preachers: Hugh Cavello. Cornelius Desmond.

Chaplains: William Barri. Edmond Odonoghoi. Nicholas Brae. Dermot Hullacayn. John Hoydt.

#### IV. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN O'NEILL. 1610-28

John O'Neill, youngest son of Hugh Oneill, Earl of Tyrone, and of Catherine Magennis, had been brought to the Low Countries at the time of the Flight of the Earls in September 1607. Upon the departure of the Earls for Rome he was left in Louvain under the charge of the Augustinian Canonesses, and later of the Irish Franciscans. The Irish regiment passed to him after the death of his half-brother Colonel Henry O'Neill, but as he was then a child, the actual command was given to Major Edward Geraldin, and later to Lieutenant-Colonel Owen Roe O'Neill, until John was sufficiently old to take over in the year 1625. The officers of the regiment were:

Majors: Edward Geraldin. Eugenio O'Neill.

Captains: Art O'Neill. Thadeus Carti. Cornelius Odriscol. William Barret. James Garland. Thomas Preston. Thomas Stanihurst. James Geraldin. Eugenio O'Neill. Maurice Geraldin. — Danly. Thadeus Osulevan. William de Burgo. Alan Noris. Paul Redico. William Walsche. Rodrigo Odonoghue. Oghyuis (Eugenius) Hanluon. Robert Odonel. Daniel Odoneil. Rodrigo Odocharti. Edmond Omor. Charles Oneil. George de la Hoyd. — Hond. Walter de la Hoyd. Henry Ohagan. Patrick Daniel. John Maguir. Cormac O'Neill. George Geraldino. Edmond Butler. Sobre Macdonel. Francis Cruli. Hugh Odonell. Hugh Ogallecor. Mauro Mahono. Dermot Osulleban mor. Hugo Obrien. Diego Obrien. Anthony Omulrian. Mauricio Macdonel. Constantine O'Neill. Daniel Odali. Daniel Omahon. Philip Reyck. James Hanom. Gerald Barri. Richard Geraldin. Henry Hagan. Richard Butler. John Macdonille. Eugenio Omulrian. Henry O'Neill. Thomas Magdonados. George Car. John de Burgo. Eugenio O'Reilly. Hugh O'Reilly. Thomas Plunquete. Artur Obrin. Gaspar Geraldin. John Jordan. John Macdonel. Richard Nugent. Charles Odaly. Remundo Geraldin. Thadeus Plunquet. Daniel Carti. Denis Osullivan mor. Henry O'Neill.

Adjutants: John Bal. Maurus Maono. John de Burgo. Richard Ayo. John Jordan. Hugh O'Neill. John Massi. Charles Odaly.

Ensigns: Thomas Goodman. Denis Rathe. Walter Sea. Charles O'Neill. Patrick Odonille. Eneas Macafi. Thomas Geraldin. John Geraldin. Henry Ohagan. Thadeus Carti. Mauro Mahono. Richard Aya. Gerald Barri. Gerald Mauricio. Manus Mahone. John de Burgo. Nellan Mageoghagan. Roderick de la Hoyd. Richard Geraldin. Denis Carti. John Geraldin. Henry O'Neill. Gaspar Geraldino. Daniel Omahon. John Jordan. Nelan Boyll. Philip Porcel. Malachy Omoro. Maurice Ohem. Edmond O'Reilly. Thomas Machquigot. Ferdinand O'Reilly. Cornelius Osullivan. Daniel Omulrian. Edmond Walsh. Anthony Grugan. Charles Huibeg. Hugh O'Neill. Charles O'Neill. Cornelius Odriscol. David Barri. John Dixon. Cornelius Machon.

Sergeants: Lewis Oen. Thadeus de Barragan. Florence Odriscol. Owen Rinquier. Rodrigo Mac Magon. Oen Macherel. Demis Macana. Nicholas Barri. Dermot Ruis. William Nachlen. Thomas de Longueval. Francis Vos. Dermot Odriscol. James Car. Daniel Brito.

Quartermasters: Stephen Meagh. Valentine Bron. Thadeus Crolly.

Drum-majors: Henry Claro. Thomas O'Connor. Art Macmureitz.

Judge-Advocates: Licentiate Ferdinand de Belber. Gaspar de Haen.

Doctors: John Fieldo. Eugenio Oshiel.

Chief-surgeon: Florence Ocallanan.

Chaplains: Hugh Cavello, senior chaplain. Bernard Gormlaeus.



Dermot Hulano. Donat Omaelano (Molano). Ferdinand Fuadano. Philip Cardillio. John Corcoran. Nicholas Mede. Richard Birn. Donat Luneo. Terence Finigan. Cornelius Silvano. Bernard Cormonio. Bernard Hayo. Edmund Lerco. Eugenio Daneto. James Fallagano. Terence Frigilio. Bernard Magrath. Gerardo Cohano. Patrick Kynan. Bernard Berneo. William Ferrallus. Henry O'Neill. Nicholas Shea. James Faldegan. James Rudolfo. John Kervell. Stephen Goldein. Patrick Hugonis. Hugh Vardes. Robert Aylmer. Edmund Flaherty.

#### V. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL HUGH O'DONNELL. 1632-8

Hugh O'Donnell, son of Rory O'Donnell Earl of Tyrconnell and Brigid daughter of the Earl of Kildare,<sup>1</sup> was brought to the Low Countries at the time of the Flight of the Earls in 1607, when he was an infant, and after having been nurtured for some time by the Augustinian Canonesses at Louvain, was transferred to the charge of the Irish Franciscans in the same town. On 18 October 1621 he was inscribed as a student of the university at Louvain, and later was attached to the Court at Brussels, until he reached military age, when the grant he had enjoyed hitherto from the King of Spain was transferred to the Castle at Antwerp, on 11 September 1625. In the following October it was suggested to Philip IV that he should be given the command of an Irish regiment, but this was not thought feasible by the Archduchess Isabella, then Governor of the Spanish Low Countries, and no further action was taken. On 15 May 1627 he was commissioned as captain of a company of Spanish mounted cuirassiers, of which he held the command until 13 January 1632, when he was commissioned as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry, to consist of fifteen companies, with Spanish rights. It is stated in his commission that he was a knight of the Order of Calatrava, and that he had distinguished himself especially during the campaign for the relief of Bois-le-Duc and the Isle of Veluwe, and in an action near Bruges in the year just past. All the fifteen companies of his regiment had been recruited by 20 February and on 2 April Captain Philip Purcel was granted licence to go to Ireland to recruit yet another company, thus bringing the number to sixteen. A year later, on 20 April 1636, both the regiment of O'Donnell and that of Henry O'Neill had fallen so much in numbers that together they counted not more than 800 men, and Don Ferdinand, then governor of the Low Countries, suggested to Philip IV that the two colonels should be granted other posts, and their regiments given to other officers of the same nation, amongst whom were "many good colonels, soldiers of fortune, who will see to their

<sup>1</sup>See 'Hugh, Son of Rory O'Donnell', 1607-42, in *Studies*, June 1941, pp. 219-234.

maintenance." On 15 November following O'Donnell's regiment was strengthened by the addition of the men of eight companies from the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston, established in 1634, and recently disbanded.

In January 1638 it was reported that O'Donnell's men had been withdrawn from before Aire, and they are probably the Irishmen who on 6 February following were reported to have embarked at Dunkirk for Spain, and to have arrived there on 12 April. Five companies of the regiment, however, were still in the Low Countries on 27 August, when they were ordered to Spain by Philip IV. O'Donnell was killed in a naval encounter with the French shortly before September 1642. The officers of his regiment in the Low Countries, mentioned in these documents are:

Major: Thomas Preston.

Captains: Lawrence Geffry. Nelan Obuyllé, John de Burgo. Eugenio Omulrian. James Preston. Daniel Ocahan. Gerald Hocq. Pedro Morca (campaign-captain). Oliver Geraldin. Richard Plonqueto. Walter Dalton. Maurice Oseral. John Scoclocq. Daniel Odaly. Philip Purcel. Richard Geraldin. Malachy Omorra. Maurus Feral. Thomas Terrel. Gerald Open. James Quenenacq. Thomas Nugencio. James Alem. James Moreau (campaign-captain). Gaspar Geraldin. Richard de la Hoit. Lawrence Geffry. Nelan Obuil. Robert Flaminghe. Edmond Butler. Bonaventure de la Vithe. Gerald Hop.

Adjutants: Bonaventure de la Biche. Edmond de Burgo.

Ensigns: David Sinot. Philip Porcel. Melchior de Burgo. Malachy Omorra. Adam Loftus. Anthony Aylmer. William Felly. Francis Talbott. Michael Batheo. Gaspar Geraldin. James Geffry. Robert Voludeston. Christoher Smit. Oliver Geraldin.

Sergeants: Denis Okenedy. Maurice Quenacq. Patrick Huin. Patrick Obrigan. Gerald Dardis. William Quelli. Daniel Obragan. John Odugan. Gerald Brin.

Quartermasters: Gerald Ohagan. Niell Oqualcur.

Judge Advocate: Doctor René le Rous.

Chief-surgeon: John Conel.

Chaplains: Hugh Vayrds. Patrick Kenano. Nicholas Deys. Daniel Quimim. Denis Gefry. John Seridan. Maurice Hoseo. Bernard Molano. James Gefrey.

## VI. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL OWEN [ROE] O'NEILL. 1633-42

Owen O'Neill is mentioned for the first time in these papers on 23 February 1606, when he received a commission as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Henry O'Neill. In a letter, however, written by the Archduchess Isabella to Philip IV on 16 November 1626, it is stated, perhaps mistakenly,



that Owen O'Neill had then been in the Low Countries for twenty five years; and this would place his actual arrival there in 1601. On 18 January 1609 his company was disbanded, and on 28 July he was granted licence to go to Spain with Colonel Henry O'Neill, accompanied by Captain James Fitzsimons, whose licence is dated 19 August. A year later, on 25 August 1610, Henry died at Arunda in Spain, and the regiment passed to his brother John, then just eleven years of age, and apparently still under the care of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain. The major of the regiment so far had been Edward Fitzgerald, but in May 1611 Owen petitioned Philip IV for the post, and the petition seems to have been granted.<sup>1</sup> He is not mentioned again in these papers until 12 July 1613, and as a nine years' truce had been signed with Holland in April 1609, his presence in Flanders would not have been needed. In her letter of 16 November 1626, referred to above, Isabella states that he had held the command of the Irish regiment for twelve years, which would take us back to 1614, or perhaps 1613, as he may well have relinquished the command some time before the letter was written. In January 1632, when John O'Donnell had been given a regiment before him, Owen made very strong representations about his own position, and threatened to transfer his services elsewhere, with the result that he was given a regiment of his own shortly before December 1633. The date of his commission is not stated, but recruiting for one of his companies is registered on 14 December 1633. By 2 September 1634 thirteen other companies had been recruited, of which, however, on 16 October four were disbanded, and two others sent to the regiment of Colonel John O'Neill. Intense recruiting for the regiment was carried out in Ireland, and one of the most interesting items of information we have of this is the letter of Owen O'Neill to his representative in Ireland from Westkapelle on 24 August 1634.<sup>2</sup> The recruiting done for his regiment during the remaining years of his command shows that his casualties were very heavy. His most remarkable commission was the governorship of Arras in 1640, which town he was obliged to surrender to the French on 9 August 1640. He returned to Ireland in 1642. The officers of his regiment named in these papers are:

Majors: Patrick Daniel. Art O'Neill.

Captains: Felix Obrun. Raymund Geraldino. Thadeus Oquelly. Don Ros Carve. Patrick Valecio. Constantine O'Neill. Denis Laler. Thomas Butler. Walter Triel. William Butler. Godfrid Mones. Art Obrin. Edmond (Edward) Obrin. Nelan O'Neill. Philip Purcel. Thomas Plunquet. Henry O'Neill. John Flamine. Patrick Geraldin. James Geraldin. Bernard O'Neill. John Geraldino. Walter Cativei. Christopher Duarse. Mathias Obrin. George Hovendon Orendocq. Marcus Dungan. Dermicio

<sup>1</sup>See *The Irish Sword*. vol. IV, no. 14, Dublin, Summer 1959, p. 10.

<sup>2</sup>See Appendix, no. 11.

(Denis) Constantine. Richard Terrel. James Plonquet. James Balsvelt. Walter Delahoid. John O'Neill. George Hovendon. James Furlong. Nicholas Dalton. Malachy Omorra. Constantine O'Neill. Richard Nugent. Richard de Burgo. Maurus Mahon. Henry O'Neill. Stephen de la Hoyd. Maurice Macdonel. Walter Cahalan.

Adjutants: Daniel Carti. Maurice Ohoeyn. George Hovendon. John Daniel. Denis Constantine.

Ensigns: Maurice Ohem. Denis Odier. John O'Neill. M. Creagh. David Barri. — Donoly. James Geraldin. Henry O'Neill. Terence Maguire. Edward Butler. George Orendoncq. P<sup>o</sup>. Taaffe. Bernard O'Neill. Triell Oquendy, Cornelius Mahon. Christopher Plunquet. John Daniel. Robert Oferol. Gerar Geraldin. Dermot Carti. Patrick Lalor. Anthony Obrin.

Sergeants: Dominic Carti. John Rassly. William Melfont. Richard de Burgo. Edmond Butler. — Roque. Maurice Ohoeyn. Patrick Clossen. John Alerd.

Drum-major: Edmond Oqueley.

Quartermaster: Robert Pordi.

Doctors: Walter Charahsio. Julius Conrry. Eugenio Osheyl.

Chaplains: Thadeus Lernaecus. Thadeus Ruarcke. John Madden. John Callaghan. Philip O'Neill.

#### VII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL THOMAS PRESTON. 1634-41

Thomas Preston, son of the fourth Viscount Gormanston, is mentioned as being in the Irish infantry in the Low Countries on 9 May 1605, when he received a grant of twelve crowns monthly. On 14 December following he was commissioned as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John O'Neill. He had brought the company from Ireland at his own cost, but on 4 September 1607 he received a grant in aid of 500 crowns to defray expenses incurred by him upon the instructions of the Spanish ambassador at London, Count de Villa Mediana. On 19 March 1625 it is stated that he had served with his company in the Low Countries for nineteen years, and on the same date he was granted a commission, for which he had petitioned, as captain of a company of mounted cuirassiers. This company was disbanded six months later, on 22 September. On 13 January 1632 he was commissioned as major of the recently established regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, and on 23 February following he received licence to proceed to Ireland to recruit.

It is stated in this commission that he had distinguished himself on all occasions which had offered, and in particular that he had served in the campaign to relieve Bois-le-Duc and to enter the Isle of Veluwe, and also in an engagement near Bruges in the year 1631. On 16 August 1634 he was given a commission as colonel



of a regiment of Irish infantry to consist of fifteen companies, each 200 strong, and in the following October he was again in Ireland, recruiting his men. He returned in time to distinguish himself during the successful defence of Louvain in June 1635. His own company and seven others of the regiment were disbanded on 15 November 1636; and two more on 1 January 1637. On 28 January following he was granted permission to attend at the Court at Brussels, and in 1638 arrangements were made for recruiting for his and other Irish regiments. No further development, however, is reported in this direction, and the money provided was used for other purposes. He was governor of Gennep, in the dutchy of Cleves, when it was forced to surrender to the Dutch in 1641, and in the year following he returned to Ireland to take part in the war of the Confederacy of Kilkenny. His activities after his return to the Low Countries in 1652 as Viscount Tara were mostly confined to recruiting and politics. The officers of his regiment named in the Brussels documents are:

Majors: Richard Geraldin. Richard Plunquet.

Captains: Michael Batheo. James Preston. Robert Preston. Anthony Aylmer. Francis Talbot. James Power, Edward Eustas, Walter Shea. Terence Ogalacur. Charles Odaly. Bernard Mac Diermoet. Walter Cantor. Bartholomew de San Lorenzo. John Comerford. Patrick Taylor. Thomas Talbot. George Car. Robert Carew. Christopher Dungan. Gref Cavanacq. Denis Dier. Richard Plunquet. Robert Carrero. Peter Puer. Thomas Netervel. Richard de Burgo. James Furlon. — Foux.

Adjutants: Michael Bathe. Peter Geraldin. Charles Roco.

Ensigns: Anthony Aylmer. Francis Talbot. John Russel. Maurice Roche. Charles Roque. William Geraldin. Melas Eustace. Francis Russol. Patrick Taylor. Anthony Dier. Denis Duil. James Nugent. Edward Gualek. George Porres.

Sergeants: Hugh Clanci. Gerald Dazdes. Edward Quelly. William Quelly. John Bens. Edward Luthere. Mauro Tellan. Ferdinand Conor. Conoco Oconigm.

Judge Advocate: Ottavio Lemmens.

Senior chaplain: Appointment assigned to the Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain.

#### VIII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN BARRY. 1636

John Barry was commissioned on 25 February 1636 as colonel of an Irish regiment to be newly recruited and to consist of fifteen companies. Two days later Captain Gerald Barry, of his Spanish Majesty's Council of War, was commissioned as major of the regiment, and on the same day fourteen blank commissions were issued for the captains of the new regiment. On 7 March Ensign Sudwel, of the company of Captain James Barry, was sent to

Ireland to recruit for his company, but on 13 March thirteen commissions were sent to the Spanish ambassador at London, including the commission for the colonel, and it was stated that two companies had already been raised in Flanders. These commissions were acknowledged by the ambassador on 21 March, but he states that there are difficulties, which have been raised by Gerald Barry. On 27 April Captain Gerald Barry was given a licence to go to Ireland, and on 20 August orders were issued for the resumption of his pay to Captain James Barry, who had returned from recruiting in Ireland. A report from de Neocolalde, the Spanish ambassador at London, indicates that Colonel Barry was there, and had done great harm to the cause of Irish recruiting. His regiment never came into existence.

#### IX. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL PATRICK O'DONNELL. 1643-7

Patrick O'Donnell (or Daniel)<sup>1</sup> was in the Low Countries on 26 February 1606, attached to the regiment and company of Colonel Henry O'Neill. On 19 November 1619, when he was an ensign, he was granted licence for Spain on business of the Earl of Tyrone, and later on 6 April 1621 he was granted licence to accompany the Earl to Spain. On 17 April 1622 he was commissioned as captain of a company to be raised for Tyrone's regiment; and on 2 June following, Henry O'Neill was given licence to proceed to Ireland, for six months, at Don Patricio's request, to assist him in recruiting. The letter written on 24 August 1624 by Owen O'Neill to the officer recruiting for him in Ireland<sup>2</sup> appears to have been directed most probably to O'Donnell, though his name is not mentioned; and later, on 13 April 1635, when it is evident that he was in London on his way back from recruiting again, he is referred to as Owen O'Neill's major. He makes it clear about that time that he considers himself entitled to the command of a regiment, but he is mentioned for the first time as colonel on 21 August 1643; and it would seem not improbable that he had taken over what remained of the regiment of Owen O'Neill after the latter's return to Ireland in the year 1642. His regiment was placed under the command of the Duke of Lorraine in 1646, and orders to disband all his superior officers were issued on 1 March 1647. The officers whose names are preserved in the registers are:

Major: Dermot Osullivan Mor.

Captains: Peter Taf. Dermot Carti. Philip Ohay. Maurice Macdonel. Patrick Tayller. Patrick Garlon. Thomas Machail. Terence Maguir. Terence Ogalachur. The Baron de Gleanomalun. Christopher Plunquet. John Odaniel. Stephen de la Hoid.

<sup>1</sup>He is usually named Daniel, no doubt to distinguish him from Colonel Hugh O'Donnell.

<sup>2</sup>See Appendix no. 11.



Michael de la Hoid. Mauro Mahuno. Maurco Macro. Dermot Odensi. Dermot Carti. Nicholas Dalton. Thadeus Carti. Densi Odensi. Daniel Carti. Dermot Constantine.

Adjutants: Art Ocalan. Daniel Odensi.

Ensigns: Corremock Macarru. Edmond de Burgo. Thomas Machail. Patrick Ocharula. Michael de la Hoid. Thadeus Carti. Denis Odionsi. Art Ocalan. Christopher Plunquet. Daniel Densi. James Barri. John Lenan. William Momiell. George Ohay. Roger Odeinsi. Charles Macarti. Bernard Obrin. Mauro Nilian.

Sergeants: Thomas Rurque. Thadeus Ohigny. Michael Cuerck. James Geraldin. John Margredi. Bernard Omale. Richard Quixig. Thomas Cul.

Chaplains: John Terruano. Licentiate Maurice Croft. Daniel Odonel. John Leinsi. Bartholomew Plunquet.

#### X. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL PATRICK FITZGERALD. 1639-41

Patrick Fitzgerald was in the Low Countries on 4 July 1631, when he received a grant of four crowns monthly in addition to his ordinary pay as a soldier in the Irish infantry. He had arrived there with his brother Maurice Fitzgerald, from Spain, where they had taken a company of Irish infantry with which they were to have served in a regiment of the Earl of Desmond, but which never came into existence. They were consequently transferred with their men to the Low Countries, and instructions were given by Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella that they were to be given commissions as captains in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. On 3 March 1636 Patrick Fitzgerald is mentioned as captain of a company in the regiment of Colonel Owen O'Neill, and on the 29 May following he was in London on his way to Ireland, and in charge of O'Neill's officers who were going there to recruit. On 13 February 1637 he was called to Spain by Philip IV, and received licence for the journey on 11 April, and again on 18 May. On 29 January 1639, when he was still captain of a company of the same regiment, he was granted licence for Ireland, for three months, on the recommendation of his doctor; and on 1 August following he informed Don Ferdinand, then governor of the Low Countries, that Philip IV had granted him a commission as colonel, with licence to recruit an Irish regiment of 1,000 men. He gathered his men in small groups from France, Holland, England and Ireland, and by the end of January orders had been issued for the assignment of ten of his companies, three at Saint-Omer, four at Bergues-Saint-Winnoc, two at Malines, and one at Saint-Vite. On the 2 May 1640 he was ordered to unite his companies with those of Colonel Owen O'Neill, near Douai, and there is sufficient indication that he was in Arras with O'Neill during the siege of that town in the summer of 1640. On 17

August, a week after the surrender, orders were sent to La Bassée to receive him and five of his companies; and in November he was ordered to proceed to Ypres with six of his companies, the sixth being probably one which had been raised in September from seventy eight men who had surrendered from the French. The losses of his regiment appear to have been very heavy, for when orders were given on 11 January 1641 that it was to embark at Dunkirk for Spain, it numbered "about 300 men" only. James Geraldin, lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, had been sent to recruit, on 1 November 1640, but of the results nothing is reported. The officers named of the regiment are:

Major: James Geraldin.

Captains: James Geferi. Edward Butler. Denis Mahon. James Carty.

Ensigns: Florence Carthi.

Chief surgeon: Stephen Elfort.

Senior chaplain: Licentiate Cajetan Callaghan.

Ordinary chaplains; Licentiate John de Burgo. Licentiate Denis Cleri.

#### XI. THE REGIMENT OF THE MARQUIS OF ANTRIM. 1645

On 1 June 1645 Randal MacDonnell, 2nd earl and first marquis of Antrim, offered to raise a regiment of 2,000 men from amongst his vassals, and on the same day a blank commission was issued for the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment. The Marquis himself was given, also on the same day, licence to proceed to France. On 27 July he renewed his offer to recruit a regiment of his vassals for service in Flanders, and offered to recruit a further 6,000 men for service in Spain. On 30 June licence was issued to Captain Maurice MacDonnell to assist with the recruiting. Nothing more is heard of these proposals except that on 14 September 1645 payments of 44,445 crowns were issued for shipping prepared and delivered to the Marquis for a regiment of 2,000 Irish infantry. There is a passing reference on 8 June 1647 to "the Marquis of Antrim's sailors."

#### XII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL DERMOT O'SULLIVAN MOR. 1646-7

Dermot O'Sullivan Mor is first mentioned on 22 January 1627, when a grant which he held upon the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Juan Claros de Gusman was transferred to the garrison at Lierre, and he began service in the Irish infantry. He is probably identical with the Don Dionisio O'Sullivan Mor of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone who on 26 December 1636 was given licence to attend the Court at Brussels. In the year following, on 19 April,



he was called to Spain by Philip IV, and on the 18 May was given leave of absence for four months for the journey, "with retention of his company", which indicates that by then he had been commissioned as captain. On 26 August 1646, when major of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, he was granted the commission of a regiment to be newly recruited; but on 24 December following orders were issued that the regiment was to be disbanded, except for four companies into which the men of all the other companies were to be drafted; and these four in turn were to be attached orders were issued that his regiment was to be recruited anew, to the regiment of Colonel John Morphy. On 30 August 1647 orders were issued that his regiment was to be recruited anew, but the only further information of this is on 30 August 1647 when a commission was granted to Walter Harrison of a company he had raised, which was to be attached to O'Sullivan's regiment. The officers mentioned are:

Major: Maurice MacMahon.

Captains: Dominick Merriman Torella. Walter Harrison. Martin Lalor. Richard Fanning. Philip Osullivan. Thadeus Carti.

Ensigns: Henry Dudal. — Machedemaron.

Sergeants: Edmund Hali. William Obrin. Eugenio Conragen.

### XIII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN MORPHY. I. 1646-59

Colonel John Morphy does not appear to have served in the Low Countries until he was authorised to recruit a regiment for service there. The earliest mention of this is dated 2 September 1646, when it is noted that the Spanish ambassador at London, Alonso de Cardenas, had arranged with him for the formation of a new regiment, and that for this purpose Morphy had already sent across 350 men, of whom 150, however, had been taken in the fort at Mardick when it was captured by the French. Morphy was given his commission as colonel on 23 September, his regiment to consist of fifteen companies, the men for five of which were transferred to him when the regiment of Colonel Dermot O'Sullivan was disbanded on 24 December. On 12 January 1647 orders were issued that the regiment was to be reduced to twelve companies, the men of the other three to be divided between these in proper proportion. The officers mentioned are:

Majors: Peter Butler. Maurus Macmahon. P. Gerardin.

Captains: Peter Butler. Daultach Moricio. Adam Roche. Dominick Meriman Torella. Walter Harrison. Martin Lalor. Richard Fanin. Theobald de Burgo. David Roche. Thadeus Moriche. Charles Ocheale. Dudley Murry. Matthew de la Hide. Edmond Suini. Henry Caus. Thomas Wisgerald. Michael de Whyte, Bonaventure de la Biche. Daniel Carti. John Odonel.

Thadeus Macgriles Patrick. Philip Ohay. William Weston. Charles Omoledi. Nicholas Bermingham. William Rost. Charles Creagh. James Hernan. Christopher Plunquet. Walter de Val. Seneca Savage. Dermot Dempsy. Theodore Carly. Francis Dudal. Edmund Bremigan. Francis Berneval. Terence Coglono. Gerard Dillon. Balaquias Flins. Fergus Lisco. Terence Coestlan. Francis Coestlan. Maurus Coxglan. Matthew Mony. James Odoneil. Manus Macciole. Mortiato Coghlan. Dermot Dempsi. Gaspar Duit. Francis Barnaval. Daniel Deymse. Malachy Ocalan. Mortan Macdermody. Morirtach Coglan. Mortan Maccoremly. Fergieri Ofaril. Charles Orelly Castebran. Thomas Cavanagh (campaign captain). Maurus Quileano. Oliver Sartel. John Macragh. Richard Bodquin. Gerard Dillon. James Goul. Ambrose Brun. Dermot Feral. Cornelius Ruerque. Ambrose Brun. Malachy Calan. John Patricio. Richard Rossel. — Macmahon. Robert Cusacq.

Adjutants: Denis Muriarti. Daniel Deymse. Henry Dudal. Ambrose Brun. Maurus Oquenedy.

Ensigns: Walter de Burgo. William Husten. Dominic Mayghe. Mauro Swyne (Huynes). Walter de Val. Denis Muriarti. Henry Dudal. David Roche. Daniel Quenedach. William Obrin. Richard Brimigam. James Obren. Mortiato Coghlan. Roger Dempsi. Amiele Macdermot. Christopher Geraldin. Marirut Macqsini. John de Burgo. Florence Carti. Thadeus Faril. John Mackerin. Hugo Orelly Castebran. Donald Flin. Richard Barri. Ambrose Brun. Bernard Rely. Thomas Flynn. John Olemarr. John Quelly.

Sergeants: Conor Meloy. Lawrence Ruerqui. Remundo Chody. Martin Ofay. John Laurean. William Mocaredesi. Dermot Ocas. Oliver Brum. James Dixon. Dermot Feral. Felix Carti. Richard Cusacq.

Quartermasters: Thadeus Ohay. Maurus Quenedi. Denis Olalor.

Judge Advocate: Licentiate Thomas Okearny.

Chaplains: John Leinsi. Bartholomew Blanquet. Licentiate Bernard Gulbrinas, senior chaplain. Art Macaglon. John Maccarig. Edmond Croak. Licentiate Denis Egano.

#### XIV. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL CHARLES MOLEDY. 1653

On 3 January 1653 Charles Moledy received a commission as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the promotion of Captain Maurice Macmahon. On 19 November following he is referred to as colonel of a regiment which is to be disbanded, of which the only officers mentioned are Captain P<sup>o</sup>. Barnaval, Hugo Daleo, and Francis Caglano, whose men were to be transferred to the regiment of Colonel Morphy. Moledy's regiment may have



been one of the three newly established by commissions granted on 30 May 1653.

XV. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL DUDLEY COSTELLOE. 1653

On 6 May 1653 Dudley Costelloe agreed to conditions upon which he would form a regiment to consist of 732 Irishmen whom he had already brought to the Low Countries, and 600 others whom he had offered to recruit. On the same day he was given a commission as colonel of the regiment. A little later, probably in August, he was given licence to go to Ireland for six months, to recruit a regiment of 1,000 men, as he had undertaken. The regiment was evidently recruited for service in Lorraine, as appears from a grant made on 13 November 1658 to Colonel Dudley Costelloe, formerly in command of a regiment in Lorraine;<sup>1</sup> and from a similar grant on 26 November of the same year to Captain Constantine Magennis, who had been captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Costelloe, likewise in Lorraine. On 25 March 1659 a grant was made to Captain William Costelloe who had served in Lorraine, and very probably in the same regiment.

XVI. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL CHARLES (CARY) DILLON. 1653

In the year 1653, and probably in August, Colonel Charles Dillon was granted licence for Ireland, for six months, to recruit a regiment of 1,000 men, according to his contract. No further information is given until November of the same year, when the superior officers of the regiment were disbanded, and the men sent to the regiment of Colonel John Morphy.<sup>2</sup> The officers mentioned are.

Major: Gilbert Talbot.

Captains: Christopher Dillon. Francis Bernard. Fergus . . . (*sic*). Gerard Dillon. Balaquias Flins. Fergus Lisco. Valentine Barnabal. Hogel Halfiedt. John Stalledt. Ludovico Diano. Richard de la Heyde. Gaspar Fuyt.

XVII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL RICHARD GRACE. 1658

The earliest mention of the regiment of Colonel Richard Grace is to be found on 18 December 1658, when orders were issued that

<sup>1</sup>See No. 2248.

<sup>2</sup>Colonel Dillon was given licence on 31 December 1653 to leave the Low Countries; and on 21 December Major Talbot had been given licence to go to Spain.

commissions granted by the King of England (Charles II) to Major Bolger and Captain Art Molloy, of the regiment, were to be recognised. On 31 March 1659 a commission was granted by the King of England to Garret Elmer, of the company of Colonel Grace, formerly commanded by the Marquis of Ormonde; and on 17 August a commission was granted by the same King to Captain Valois as captain of a company of the same regiment of which previously Viscount Iveagh had been captain. On 19 August 1660 mention occurs of Captain John Magrach, of a company of the same regiment; and on 20 January 1661, of Captain Stapleton of a company of the same regiment, to which Captain Fugarty was attached on half pay. On 8 February 1661 Sergeant John Fahan is mentioned, of the company of Irish infantry of Colonel Grace, "who is colonel of one of the regiments of the King of England."

XVIII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL PHILIP O'REILLY.  
1655-20 Mar. 1660

At the end of the war of the Catholic Confederacy in Ireland Colonel Philip O'Reilly surrendered to Theophilus Jones in April 1653, and later took a regiment of 1,200 Irishmen to Spain. He served later with his regiment in the Low Countries, where on 7 April 1655 a mutiny of some of the troops under his command at Armentières was reported, which however was suppressed before 17 April. In a letter of 15 January 1661 Philip IV informs Caracena, governor of the Low Countries, that on account of sinister reports O'Reilly had been arrested, and his regiment disbanded before his sentence had been pronounced; and as this was contrary to the contract made when the regiment was established, the colonel has asked for reinstatement, with all his rights and privileges; and he has offered to recruit the regiment again. Caracena sets out the accusations against O'Reilly in a letter to Philip IV on 23 February 1661, and nothing further appears to have been done in the matter. O'Reilly's regiment seems to have been disbanded on 20 March 1660. The officers whose names occur are:

Captains: John O'rely. Cornelius Ruerque. John Mager. Cahir Magire. John Rely Macmilor. Constantine Oneill. Charles Creach. Thadeus Morfi. Fergus Ofarel. Thomas Gul. Charles Rely. Castebrynn. Edmund Rely, campaign-captain.

Adjutants: John Reli. Terence Reli. Cahire Ohaer, John Bradi.

Ensigns: Philip Bradi. Bernard Rely. Terence Rely. Cahire Ohaer. Thadeus Faril. John Rely. Richard Barri. Hugh O'rely.

Sergeants: Edmond Rely. Bernard Rely. Thadeus Rorque. Luke Magauran. Eugenio Rely. James Bradi. Philip O'reli. Dermot Farelli. William Farelly. James Sheridan. William Lahagam.



Quartermaster: Edmond Rely.

Preacher and chaplain: Licentiate Edmond Macquernan.

Senior Chaplains: Licentiate Thomas Brady. Licentiate Patrick Hoodal.

#### XIX. REGIMENT OF COLONEL GEORGE CUSACK. 1656-62

Colonel George Cusack had served with his regiment in the army of the Duke of Lorraine, but went over to the Spaniards when Duke Francis went over to the French, though only, it would appear, after two more years in the French service with his regiment. He received a commission as colonel of an Irish regiment in the Low Countries on 6 July 1656, and it is explicitly stated that he had brought his regiment with him. Cusack was pensioned as a disbanded colonel on 21 June 1662. The following are the names of his officers mentioned in the Brussels papers:

Major: Dominick de Roe.

Captains: John Morfi. Henry Morfi. Richard Laloer. Morgan Flarqui. Constantine O'Neill. James Nolan. — Dudal. Daniel Olinan. Edmond Vuteler. Thadeus Morfi. Francis Coghlan. Fergus Offarel. Richard Russel. Philip Hoya. James Groghega.

Adjutants: Richard Russel. Henry Donnelly. — Doudal. John Brady. Nicholas Nolan. Henry Odonel.

Ensigns: John Morfi. Philip Morfi. Oliver Lince. Ensign Nolan. Anthony Butter. William Morsi. Lawrence Rurque. Hugo Maclear. Patrick Oneill. Peter Cusack.

Sergeants: Denis Obrin, Omultuli. David Hey, Quedar y Organ. Guillan Goyh. Dermot Morgan.

Quartermaster: Ensign Nolan.

Chaplains: Senior: Licentiate Luke Garvy. Licentiate Bartholomew Plunquet. Ordinary: Eugenio Egan.

Judge Advocate: Anthony French.

#### XX. THE REGIMENT OF THE EARL OF BRISTOL. 1657

On the 29 March 1657 orders were issued for the formation of an Irish regiment under the command of the Earl of Bristol; to consist of 16 companies, and to be maintained in the same manner as the other regiments of the King of England (Charles II). On 1 May of the same year Licentiate Alexis Falvy was appointed chaplain, and on 19 July Licentiate Hubert Cahill.

#### XXI. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL LOUIS FARRELL. 1658-60

On 5 November 1658 Louis Farrell was commissioned as

colonel of the regiment formerly commanded by the Earl of Bristol; Connell Farrol as lieutenant-colonel; and James Farrel as major; in conformity with the letters which they held from the King of England. On 31 March 1659 John Shaa and Gaspar Tuit were commissioned as captains of companies formerly under the command of Colonel William Butler and John Farolle, of the regiment of the Earl of Bristol. On 17 August 1660 Ensign Theodore Butler of the company of Captain Shaa, is mentioned; and on 7 November, Edmond Ryan, soldier of the colonel's regiment, and formerly captain of a company of the army of Condé.

XXII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL JAMES DEMPSY. 1660-62

James Dempsey was granted a commission on 16 February 1660 as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be formed from thirteen companies which he had brought to the Low Countries at his own expense. He appears to have come with the regiment from service with Condé, and to have arrived in the Low Countries at the beginning of February, between which time and 7 March the regiment was formed into a *tercio*. Commissions for twelve captains were issued on 28 February, and on 14 May 15 companies were received to pay. One company was transferred to Spain before 21 June 1662, and very probably the whole regiment, as after that date no further mention is made of it. The officers whose names occur are:

Major: Louis Riano.

Captains: Peter Chortal. James Dempsey. Peter Bertin. Peter Butler. Edward Butler. Peter Pouzel. George Heydin. Edmund Rely (campaign-captain). Philip Rely. Charles Rely Machui. John Rely Machuyer. Miler Riler. John Rely Macmelor. Peter Geraldin. Roger Dempsey. Mortagh Clancy. Denis Demsey. James Onulan. Cura Dempsey. Patrick Bath.

Adjutants: David de Burgo. Terence Rely.

Ensigns: John Rely. Francis de Witthe. William Obrin. Malachy Geagin. Hugo Rely. Philip Brady. Florence Maguillicudy. John Rely. Thomas Fox.

Drum-major: Patrick Maguna. Quartermaster: Edmond Rely.

Sergeants: Patrick Carol. Terence Conel. Daniel Maccarty. Eugenio Rely.

Chief surgeon: Hugh Cassidi.

Chaplains: Senior: Licentiate Peter Demsey. Ordinary: Licentiate Andrew Routh, secular priest. Licentiate Charles Tully.

XXIII. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL THEODORE O'MEARA. 1660-4

Theodore O'Meara had first served as colonel of an Irish regiment under the Duke of Lorraine, and later under Condé, but had



remained in the Spanish service after Condé had returned to the French. He was given a new commission in the Low Countries as colonel of an Irish regiment on 15 February 1660, and it is chiefly of this regiment that the Brussels papers give us information. It was to be newly formed, and by an order of 16 February, seventeen companies of O'Meara, evidently of his old regiment, were to be strengthened by the addition of six companies of the regiment of Major Fitzgerald, to form a *tercio* of twenty two companies. Fifteen new commissions were issued to captains on 21 February, and on 15 March a further commission was issued for the captain of a company to be formed from the Irishmen who had remained in Flanders, of the regiment of the King of England. On 8 April 1660 orders were given that men who should come from service with Condé were to be received to pay upon the representation of O'Meara. On the other hand, on 29 April the captains and other officers of five companies of O'Meara's old regiment were disbanded. In his commission, O'Meara is stated to have been previously colonel, lieutenant-colonel, and Marshal. The following are the names of the officers who served in his regiment between 15 February 1660 and 15 May 1664, when it is mentioned for the last time:

Major: Anthony Mulrian.

Captains: Theodore Obrien. Alexander Bryth. Nicholas Barry. John Patricio. Thomas D'Alard (Dolart). Philip Odwyer. Henry Ferrier. Thomas Geraldin. Bernard Kevenagh. Bernard Kenedy. Charles Bern. Patrick Bath. Florence Magdonogh. Charles Rian. Emmanuel Magdonogh. John Oquian, campaign-captain. Richard Ferriter. Charles Omulrian. Nicholas Barry. Bernard Kenedi. Charles Obirren. Maurice Macmahon. Robert Cusack. Alexander Domeara. Ambrose Brun. Francis de Withe. Richard de la Hoyde. Thomas de Meara. Richard Cusacq. Edmond Sinot. Cornelius Magullucudy.

Adjutants: Henry Lews. William Okwirk. Nicholas Nolano. Henry Odonely.

Ensigns: Michael Macdonogh. John Caroll. Charles Macdonogh. William Lonorgan. Theodore Conor. Cornelius Obrien. Denis Omeara. Edmund Omulrian. Remy Macnamara. James Walsh. Dermot Magullucudy.

Quarter-masters: John O Dwier. Peter Schydy.

Drum-major: Felix Macnamara.

Senior chaplain: Licentiate Charles Ryan.

#### XXIV. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL JOHN MORPHY. II. 1667-9

Colonel Morphy was again in command of a regiment in 1667, though of this we have very little information. It is mentioned

for the first time on 1 July 1667, when awards were made to some of the men who had been taken by the French at Tournai that year, and robbed. On 16 December 1669 Colonel Morphy complains that many of his officers and men had been sent to Spain, and after their return to the Low Countries had continued to serve with the infantry and cavalry of the (Spanish) army. Others daily desert from their companies, to go over to them, and consequently his regiment will soon be ruined. Orders were issued to all colonels and officers that they were to hand over all Irish soldiers to those who demanded them, and that the officers were to return to their place in the regiment of Colonel Morphy. Two days after this a commission was given to a new major, Denis Oberni; but from orders issued on 22 January 1670 it appears that by then Colonel Morphy had relinquished his command. It is very probable that the regiment passed on to the command of Colonel Taafe. On 29 April 1670 a note is registered of a blank commission sent to the King of England for the regiment with which Colonel Morphy had served. The few officers named are:

Majors: Louis Reano. Denis Oberni.

Captains: John Patricio. William Dargan. Macmahon. Robert Cusack. Rachel. German Koskier. Edward Butler.

Ensigns: John Oquelly. John Relly.

Sergeant: Richard Cusacq.

Quartermasters: Richard Cusacq. Solomon Sonny.

Doctor: Licentiate John Odwyer.

Senior Chaplain: Licentiate Gerard Offarll.

#### XXV. THE TAAFFE REGIMENT. 1672-3

The earliest mention of the Taafe regiment occurs on 4 May 1672, when Ensign Lawrence Coghlan, of the company of Captain Richard Russell, regiment of Colonel Nicholas Taafe, was appointed adjutant, in succession to Alexander Macdonel, who had recently died. On 10 May of the same year Charles Omeara was appointed quartermaster of the same regiment. On 29 May, when a grant of 60 crowns monthly upon the regiment was made to Lieutenant-Colonel Chevalier Conel Offarel, the Colonel is mentioned as Count de Taf, with a company of Spanish infantry under his command, and he is again referred to as Count de Taf on 2 and 10 June, and finally on 12 July, when he was given licence to relinquish command of his regiment and return to England, in consequence of the approval of the King of England.

On 17 July 1672 the commission as colonel of the regiment was issued to Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Taafe, whose death is registered fifteen months later, on 13 October 1673. The few officers mentioned are:

Captains: Daniel Dempsi. Theobald de Burgo. John Patrick.



Thadeus Ruerque.

Adjutants: Alexander Macdonel. Laurence Coghlan.

Ensigns: Thomas de Burgo. Daniel Odeoran. Thadeus Senexane.

Quartermaster: Francis Geoghegan.

Chief Surgeon: Maurice Ivoir.

Judge Advocate: Peter de Archibold.

XXVI. THE REGIMENT OF COLONEL DENIS O'BYRNE. 1673-86

On 13 October 1673 the command of the regiment which had become vacant by the death of Colonel Nicholas Taaffe was given to Denis O'Byrne, who was destined to be the last colonel of an Irish regiment in the Low Countries at this period. In December 1677 the Earl of Clare made an offer to recruit in Ireland a regiment of 2,000 or 3,000 men for service in the Low Countries or elsewhere, but the outcome of the offer is not stated. On 24 January 1681 orders were issued at Brussels that there should be 1,000 Irishmen in the Spanish army of the Low Countries, but less than a month later, on 20 February, by order of the Marquis de Grana, then Governor, the Irish regiment was disbanded, together with those of the English and Scots. Nevertheless, O'Byrne does not appear to have lost heart, and on 28 May he presented conditions upon which he offered to recruit 500 infantry; and two days later orders were given that a new Irish company was to be formed from men whom the Colonel had added recently to his own company. On 12 September 1681 Colonel O'Byrne was actually given a licence to go to Ireland to recruit, men, and to take with him a number of his officers; and it may well have been in connection with this that on 31 July 1682 Charles II of England gave permission to raise in Ireland 400 volunteers to complete the Irish regiment of the King of Spain in the Low Countries, and to ship them from any port. The order of de Grana to disband O'Byrne's regiment was countermanded by letters of Charles II of Spain, to the new Governor of the Low Countries, de Castañaga, on 28 February and 30 August 1685, and by a peremptory order of 15 August 1686. But with that all information ceases, and the history of these Irish regiments, which had begun in the year 1586, comes to an end after just a full century. The officers of O'Byrne's regiment who are named in these documents are:

Majors: Daniel Dempsi. John Patricio.

Captains: John Taaf. Thadeus Ruerque. Thomas de Burgo, Odwier. Richard Russel. Charles Omulrean. Nicholas Nolan. Edward Butler. Lucas Taafe. Henry Platt. Constantine Odonell. Luis de Burgo.

Adjutants: Charles Brenach. Richard Cusacq. Eugenio Ohea.

Ensigns: Patrick Duiet. Charles Brenach. Richard de Burgo. Charles Cusacq. Terence Oneill. Richard de Burgo. John de Burgo.

Sergeants: James Mahon. William Oduir.

Quartermaster: Philip Oconor. Solomon Egant.

Judge Advocate: Peter Archiboldo.

#### OFFICERS WHO SERVED WITH CONDÉ. 1653-9

Colonels with their regiments: Colonel Richard Farelle. Colonel John Geraldin. Colonel Dempsy. Colonel Theodore de Meara. Colonel Theodore Obrian. Colonel Walter Butler. Colonel George Cusack. Colonel Morto O Brian. Colonel Louis Offarrel.

Majors: Theodore Obrian. Denis Mackguilligully.

Captains: Denis Morfeo. Daniel Macnamara. Henry Ferriter. Richard Ferriter. John Ofihily. Peter Omulrean. John Fox. — Odroy. James Langles. Alexander Brith. Joorge Hesdin. Cornelius Mac Gillo dye. — Fitzgerald. William Hurli. Moriarto Clancy. Stephen Taluy. John Patrick. Andrew Comine. James Butler. Theodore Mullineux.

Lieutenants: Moriarto Hogan. Charles Macdonogh. Charles Mac Coghlan. Daniel O Kalechane. Gerardo Ottea. Daniel O Kearnye. Phe Odwuys. James Surdane. Edmund Mulriane. Patricio Davine. William de Bourgh. Malachie Mac Roghe. John O Doyen. Martin Nagle. Daniel O Kervick. John O Carrole. John Mac Donogo. Mortagh O Donogh. Mouris Rouly. John Barry. Cornelius Karroy. William Oquenin. — Mortogh. Denecio Hanely. Terence Obrien. Daniel Carthy. Dermityo Carty. Thomas Leaghio. Calagane Carthy. Peter Lassi.

Ensigns: Morto Omoriartagh. John Geraldin. Daniel Mac Carty. Philip Dully. Daniel Oscaulan. Gerardo Geraldin. Philip Odaniel. Theodore Patricio. James Duly. Daniel Oscaulan.

Sergeants: Theodore Dinnagh. Joorge Bedloe. Hugo Magir. Daniel Ocakil. Hugo Madin. Daniel Quesa. William Mory.

#### OFFICERS WHO SERVED WITH FRANCIS DUKE OF LORRAINE. 1654-9

Colonels with their regiments: Colonel George Cusack. Colonel James de La Hoyde. Colonel James Conor. Colonel Dedalo de Costello. Thadeus Flaharti. Theodore de Meara. Colonel du Vivier.

Majors: Oliver Hiquy. Edmund Jordan.

Captains: Theobald Butler. Richard de Lalor. Ulices de Burgo. Constantine Magenise. Edmond Sinnot. Ignatius Kelly. John Burgo. Bermout Odolani. Henry Rochfort. William Odorgan. Ednis Quely. Philip Rely. Edmond O Mally. Roque



Connor. Lawrence Theodor. Baltasar Tresy. Bernard Connor. Leonard Blancheville. Richard Duyr. Thimoly Lany. William Bary oge. Dermicio Goeghan. William Costello. Thomas Jordan. Thomas Braty. James Plonquet.

Ensigns: William Morfi. Richard Burgo. Simon Carme.

## PAY OF OFFICERS

The terms mostly used in the Brussels documents in reference to the pay of officers of the army are *entretenimiento* and *ventaja particular*, and they refer to officers who have been disbanded, and in modern terms would be said to be on half pay. They have been translated invariably in these papers by grant and special grant respectively, and it is hoped that thus a difficulty will be avoided particularly in respect to *entretenimiento*, which is used at times to designate a non-military grant, and does not moreover represent half an officers actual pay, as will be seen later. It may also be noted that the first of the terms is used where the pay of disbanded senior officers is concerned, including colonels down to adjutants; *Ventaja particular* is used of grants to disbanded ensigns and sergeants.

The highest commission held by an Irish officer in the Spanish forces in the Low Countries for which pay is mentioned was that of major-general, conferred upon Thomas Preston on 1 April 1651, with pay of 300 crowns monthly.<sup>1</sup> A grant to Preston on 16 August 1652 states the pay of an active colonel, which was 120 crowns monthly;<sup>2</sup> though in a grant made to Colonel Daniel O'Neill in December 1673 it is stated to have been 116 crowns.<sup>3</sup> A further difference appears from the grant made to Colonel Edward Fitzgerald of 150 crowns monthly,<sup>4</sup> though he was not in active service at the time; and Colonel the Earl of Tyrconnell states that he received the same amount from his regiment.<sup>5</sup> Fitzgerald however had seen service not only in the Low Countries but also in Germany and Burgundy; and perhaps the Earl's large pay was due to his earlier service as captain of a Spanish cavalry company. A disbanded colonel was granted 80 crowns monthly,<sup>6</sup> which, it may be remarked, is more than half the official pay of 116 crowns for an active colonel.

The full pay of an active major is not mentioned, but when disbanded he received 65 crowns monthly, or in some cases 60.<sup>7</sup> A disbanded captain was granted 40 crowns monthly,<sup>8</sup> though the eight captains whose regiments were not actually formed in 1606,

<sup>1</sup>2007-8. <sup>2</sup>2028. <sup>3</sup>2767. <sup>4</sup>1729.

<sup>5</sup>1344. On 26 June 1906 Colonel Henry O'Neill received an extra grant of 32 crowns monthly in addition to the 220 crowns monthly he already enjoyed, making a total of 352 crowns monthly; but other than mere military considerations were evidently responsible. <sup>6</sup>2078, 2146, 2293, 2306, 2623, 2653.

<sup>7</sup>2582, 2583; and 2289, 2242, 2341, 2622. <sup>8</sup>*Passim*.

though they had been commissioned, received only 25 crowns.<sup>1</sup> A disbanded adjutant was granted 25 crowns, or sometimes 20;<sup>2</sup> a disbanded ensign, usually 10 crowns;<sup>3</sup> and a disbanded sergeant, usually 6 crowns.<sup>4</sup>

When the first chief surgeon of an Irish regiment was appointed on 8 March 1606, he was granted only 5 crowns monthly, if this entry be correct; later his regular pay was 15 crowns, which was also the pay of a doctor.<sup>5</sup> The preacher of the regiment was paid 25 crowns monthly; the head chaplain, 25 crowns;<sup>6</sup> and the ordinary chaplain, 10 crowns in the early years, but later, from 1612 onwards, 12 crowns.<sup>7</sup>

The pay of an Irish private soldier was 4 crowns monthly;<sup>8</sup> and the allowance for the billeting of the men was 4 placas for each, equal to 4 pence.

About the pay of the first of these Irish regiments, Stanley's, there is no precise information. Many grants are registered, but these were usually not for service in the Low Countries. There is likewise little information about the pay of the officers of the Irish regiments formed in the Low Countries by the future Charles II of England, who stipulated, however, that they were to be on the same footing as his other regiments which were serving in England, Holland and France.<sup>9</sup> About the officers who returned to the Low Countries after their service with Lorraine, it is noteworthy that they received very modest grants, a mere twenty five crowns for the captains instead of the usual forty.<sup>10</sup>

## RECRUITING

The documents provide much information about the recruiting necessary for the establishment and maintenance of these regiments. For Stanley's regiment no serious difficulty arose, as the English authorities in Ireland were only too willing to use in their own service abroad the Irishmen whom they had trained for the Geraldine wars, and who might now, if left idle, become a serious source of trouble at home. Neither was there any difficulty in the earliest days of the regiment of Colonel Henry O'Neill, when again recruiting appears to have been carried out with the assent of the English, and even with their full approval; for on 30 April 1605 the Baron of Hoboken, who then represented the Court of Brussels, reported from London that he had spent the whole evening negotiating the levy of 2,000 English, 1,500 Scots, and 500 Irish.<sup>11</sup> Shortly before that, on 2 April 1605,<sup>12</sup> a small group of sixty men had been brought to Flanders by Captain William

<sup>1</sup>242. <sup>2</sup>861, 1393, 1653, 1919. <sup>3</sup>396, and *passim*. <sup>4</sup>396, 2588, and *passim*.

<sup>5</sup>214, 852, 1220, 2841, 2742; and for doctors: 32, 1298, 1414. <sup>6</sup>1009, 2162.

<sup>7</sup>*Passim*. <sup>8</sup>107; 2647. <sup>9</sup>2170; but see 2193. <sup>10</sup>See from 2219 to 2266.

<sup>11</sup>143 note. <sup>12</sup>143.



Walsh; and in October men for the company of Captain William Darcy were allowed to depart freely from the port of Southampton, into which they had been driven by the storms, and proceed to Flushing.<sup>1</sup> It is safe to conjecture that Hoboken's negotiations were carried on with Salisbury, who is stated by Chichester in a letter of 12 September 1606, to have permitted "to carry men hence about this time twelve months ago".<sup>2</sup>

The attitude of the authorities must have changed, however, early in the year 1606, for on 2 June<sup>3</sup> an order was issued at Brussels that seven companies which had been authorised for O'Neill's regiment could not be recruited on account of the difficulties raised in London. Nevertheless, that men were still brought over, and in large numbers, is evident from the fact that two commissions for new companies were issued on 19 and 22 July 1607;<sup>4</sup> and two reports procured by agents in the Low Countries, one in 1606 and the other in July 1607, contain very precise accounts of the fourteen companies which by then were already in the Irish regiment. The fact that the English authorities were so willing to secure such information may point to the conclusion that they were not fully aware of the scale upon which recruiting had proceeded.

During the years of the truce with Holland, from 1608 to 1622, recruiting would normally have slackened for the whole army, but the great anxiety for the Irish officers must have been lest their regiment would be disbanded altogether. A section of English influence was in favour of trying to bring this about,<sup>5</sup> and it is not improbable that the situation was saved largely by the intervention of Pope Paul V with the Archduke Albert, by his brief of 5 July 1608.<sup>6</sup> Further efforts on the English side, this time more decided, but again not more successful, were made in the early months of the year 1616, and is evident from the letter of Philip III to the Archduke Albert on 20 April. But though the regiment maintained its existence, no mention whatever is made of any recruiting for it until 1 May 1621, when two companies of Irish infantry were raised in Artois, apparently from men who had been brought over from Ireland. In April 1622, by which time the truce had come to an end, commissions for four new companies which they were to raise, each company of 200 strong, were given to Captains Walter de la Hoyd, John Maguire, Henry O'Hagan, and Patrick Daniel.<sup>7</sup> The officers appear to have left Flanders in June,<sup>8</sup> and as at that time James I allowed recruiting for Spain owing to his anxiety to bring about the marriage of his eldest son Charles with the Spanish Infanta, they were able to carry on their

---

<sup>1</sup>156 note.

<sup>2</sup>271 note. For the sentiments of the Lord Deputy in the year 1601, see 85 note.

<sup>3</sup>242. <sup>4</sup>184 note and 172 note. <sup>5</sup>326 note a.

<sup>6</sup>354 note and 358 note.

<sup>7</sup>779-80; and see 791.

<sup>8</sup>789-90.



work without difficulty, and even, it would seem at their leisure; for Captain Maguire seems to have returned to his regiment in the Low Countries in March 1623.<sup>1</sup>

Again there is a long interval before any further recruiting is recorded. It may be of interest to remark, however, that a document which appears to belong to the early part of the year 1630 mentions that in Tyrone's regiment there were then eleven companies;<sup>2</sup> and in another document, of early 1631, seventeen companies are enumerated, most of them with very few men, and a total of 524 only.<sup>3</sup> A commission to raise a new company had been granted to Captain Hugo Obrin sometime before 16th October 1629, and during the year 1630 similar commissions were granted to Captains Anthony Mulrian,<sup>4</sup> Maurice Macdonel,<sup>5</sup> Daniel Odaly,<sup>6</sup> Daniel Omahun,<sup>6</sup> and on 11 December 1631, to Richard Butler. During the next two years however there were developments which would necessitate recruiting on a very large scale.

On 13 January 1632 a second Irish regiment was established, under the command of Hugh O'Donnell, titular Earl of Tyrconnell; and this was quickly followed, in 1633, by a commission for a third Irish regiment granted to Owen O'Neill.<sup>7</sup> Yet a fourth regiment was established on 16 August 1634, of which the command was given to Thomas Preston; and as each of these regiments was to consist of fifteen companies, and each company of 200 men, a total of 9,000 new recruits was thus called for. The threatening attitude of France towards Spain since 1632; her alliance with the Dutch in 1635 and her declaration of war in May of that year, intensified the urgency of the demand.

For the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell fourteen blank commissions for the lieutenant-colonel and captains were issued on 13 January 1632, the day upon which the colonel had been given his commission; but the fact that nine of the companies were received to pay before the end of February is sufficient evidence that they had already been recruited and brought over to Flanders some time previously. This is confirmed by a letter of the Lords Justices and Council of Ireland to the English Privy Council, on 14 November 1632, in which they report the activities of Captain Thomas Preston in Ireland during the previous year, when "he secretly enlisted many people to serve abroad", and was said to have had a letter for this from the Privy Council. Preston, who had been commissioned as major of Tyrconnell's regiment on 15 January 1632, had obviously been recruiting for him during the year 1631. On 22 February 1633 he was given a licence at Brussels to proceed to Ireland to recruit again; and no doubt he then succeeded in sending back to Flanders the five remaining companies required to bring up Tyrconnell's regiment to its full strength.

<sup>1</sup>843, 847.<sup>2</sup>1079.<sup>3</sup>1136.<sup>4</sup>1097.<sup>5</sup>1114.<sup>6</sup>1123.<sup>7</sup>1234.



Recruiting for the regiment of Colonel Owen O'Neill was carried on early in the year 1634, and at about the same time for the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; and a letter of O'Neill to one of his recruiting officers in Ireland, on 24 August 1634, seems to point to a certain amount of competition for the men. He writes: "I would let you understand that Preston of Gormans-ton his sonne is going over instantly . . . Know you what good he would doe you or me; doe what you can with ye Deputy [Wentworth] that noe body that did promise either to you or me, shall goe to him. And knowe you it is uppon the licence I gott that he seems to bringe over his men".<sup>1</sup> A month later, on 27 September, de Neocolalde, the Spanish ambassador at London, to whom all arrangements for recruiting had been committed, reports for his part that in virtue of a licence he had obtained, "with little noise, and in small parties, 6,000 men have passed over to Flanders; this on account of my friendship with the Lord Deputy". He also remarks incidentally that for the 6,000 men referred to he had not expended 2,000 crowns, whereas to an Irish colonel lately sent over to recruit, 5,000 crowns had been allotted, "which will send up the price accordingly". The colonel here referred to is undoubtedly Preston, who was in Ireland on 2 October, and perhaps earlier, and remained there until April 1635, on the 15th of which month he was reported back again in Flanders where two months later he took an important part in the defense of Louvain against the combined armies of the French and Dutch.

The position of de Neocolalde during this period was not without its difficulties, the most serious of which arose from the competition of the French in the recruiting field. This appears almost from the beginning, and he refers to it in a letter of 1 December 1634, when he reports to Brussels that he had known well that some 250 soldiers recruited for the Spaniards had been driven into English ports by the weather, and detained there; and that attempts had been made by the French to win them over with the help of three or four Irish officers who were greatly indebted to the French, and had been sent over from France to go to recruit in Ireland. He adds that the French ambassador had a hand in the work, and had brought with him letters to the Queen of England from her brother, to win her assistance, though later he had promised that he would desist from such action. Very shortly after this, on 31 January 1635, Mr Secretary Cooke reports to Wentworth, Lord Deputy in Ireland, that the Irish companies concerned had actually allowed themselves "to be debauched" by the French ambassador, and now served under French colours; and he names, as the Irish officers who had been responsible for the change of allegiance, Colonels Sweeny and O'Reilly, and Captains James Roche and James Nolan, who all had served previously with the Spaniards, "and have left them for more

<sup>1</sup>See Appendix, document 11.



pay".<sup>1</sup> Apparently as a result of this information, Wentworth demanded that the captains of the companies recruited, and the masters of the ships which were to carry them over to Flanders, should give a guarantee that they would faithfully do this, and not go to France, or touch at any French port.<sup>2</sup> From Madrid, on 14 Feb. orders were sent by Philip IV that steps were to be taken to avert the harm which could be done by the French intrusion, and that the Irish Earls in the Low Countries were to be shown all becoming esteem, and given the greatest possible satisfaction, so that through them might be secured the attachment of their nation.<sup>3</sup>

Difficulties for de Neocolalde arose also on the part of the English authorities, with regard to the transport of the recruits. The 250 men referred to above, who had been driven by storm into an English port, and detained there, had been released upon de Neocolalde's intervention, without any great trouble; but when, for one reason or another, Irish recruits had to make their journey by land down through the length of England, as was sometimes the case, the situation could easily become very unpleasant, and on this account the ambassador reports that he had been obliged to agree that they should go to Flanders by the most direct route, without touching upon England. "The new regiment" he writes, "and recruits for the others, a matter of 7,000 men, passed over in this way; but some, who had been dismissed for their wantonness or rudeness, for not observing any orders, and had come to England, were arrested and put to death, and caused ill-feeling, as were also those who on account of the storms or accidents at sea took refuge in English ports. It is well known that it would be safer for them to pass through the Channel, and as the cost must be by agreement and contract, if the men were to pass through England, from one end to the other, it would cost twice as much, on account of the tumult and excesses usual on such journeys. Here the men are suffered badly; and there is great readiness to hang people, Irishmen especially, and more especially still those who are going to join our service."<sup>4</sup> He suggests that the same method should be followed as hitherto, and that if the levies are to be negotiated, suitable men should be sent to Ireland, and no money be given to colonels or captains, as it would be badly used and lost. He adds incidentally that he would greatly like to receive the tapestries for the Lord Deputy, as "the best way to recruit is to keep him in humour".<sup>5</sup>

Notwithstanding these, and no doubt other difficulties, recruiting in Ireland seems to have proceeded very normally, and in letters exchanged with de Neocolalde in March 1635, Strafford, on his side, protests that he had helped in every way, both in Ireland and in London, and had shown honour to the Irish officers who had been sent to Ireland. He refers in particular to the assist-

<sup>1</sup>1344 note.<sup>2</sup>1652.<sup>3</sup>1346.<sup>4</sup>1362.<sup>5</sup>*Ibid.*



ance he had given to the Sergeant-Major (Major) Donnell (who had recruited for Colonel Owen O'Neill) and to Colonel Preston, of whom he adds, "well doth he deserve to be respected, seeming to me one of the civilest gentlemen of his nation."<sup>1</sup> And this satisfactory situation continued down to the year 1636.

On 25 February 1635 a commission for a fifth Irish regiment, to be newly recruited, and to consist of fifteen companies, was granted to John Barry, and on 27 February Gerald Barry was appointed his lieutenant-colonel. The permits issued at Brussels during March and April for officers to go to Ireland to recruit were very numerous, and on 28 March de Neocolalde reports that Thomas Preston had once more been sent there, and that the other Irish officers who were coming over from the Low Countries, though belonging to different regiments, were apparently under his command. He had given Preston instructions how to act, and letters upon Dublin for funds, from the amount allotted for his regiment, and for the other four regiments to be recruited. A few days previously, on 21 March, he had reported that he had received the commissions for the regiment to be raised by Colonel John Barry, for which two companies had been recruited already, and were actually serving in the Low Countries.

Serious trouble arose, however, when the Irish officers from Flanders actually reached London, and by their numbers and behaviour aroused the ill-feeling there against Ireland and Spain which was never more than very lightly dormant. On 20 May de Neocolalde reports to Don Ferdinand, then Governor of the Low Countries: "The arrival of the Irish officers, in great numbers and with great noise, has caused the King to order the Lord Deputy not to allow men to leave the kingdom. As he himself (de Neocolalde) had not been aware of this, he had already sent to Ireland Richard Plunket, lieutenant-colonel to Colonel Preston, with letters to the Lord Deputy; but upon his arrival, he had been informed by the Lord Deputy that recruiting was impossible". In a letter of 29 May to an official at Brussels de Neocolalde sends the same news, and throws the responsibility for the arrival of the officers in such large numbers upon Esteban de Gamarra, an official at Brussels, "who had assured them that they had only to come; with what foundation I do not know; and when he acted in this manner I warned Martin de Arpe not to allow these officers to come". He mentions in each of these letters that Captain Patrick Fitzgerald was in charge of the officers of the regiment of Colonel Owen O'Neill, and also had control of the funds. He gives further details in a letter of 20 December, in which he states that he had sent Lieutenant-Colonel Plunket, of the regiment of Colonel Preston, to Ireland, to recruit quietly, and without commotion; but "then more than sixty three officers of the regiment arrived in London, with much commotion; whereupon the French and

<sup>1</sup>1351 note.



Dutch went to Cooke, the Secretary of State, with their complaints, and as a result the King expressly excluded Ireland in the order about recruiting. The Irish captains and officers were threatened with imprisonment, and forbidden to leave England without express licence. de Neocolalde, however, obtained permits for some of them to return to Flanders, and the others had obtained a like permission for themselves. He had paid their debts; and Plunket had come back from Ireland unsuccessful and disconsolate, and looking for money".

The ban imposed on recruiting by Charles I was to be enforced during the next two years. In the meantime, in October 1637, it was suggested from Madrid, by the Duke de Olivares, that Spanish and Italian troops should be sent to the Low Countries in exchange for Walloons and Irishmen;<sup>1</sup> and on 30 January 1638 a large section of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell embarked for Spain at Dunkirk. On 12 April both the Irish Earls, Tyrone and Tyrconnell, are stated to have arrived in Spain, though seven of their companies still remained in Flanders, five belonging to the regiment of Tyrconnell, one to Tyrone's, and one recently recruited. These companies were also sent for by Philip IV in August;<sup>3</sup> but by the time his letter reached Brussels only seventy of their men survived, and they appear to have been left in garrison at Geneppe under the command of Colonel Preston.<sup>4</sup>

It may be noted that the transfer of these regiments to Spain, where their presence was called for by the French invasion in 1638, was not without importance as regards recruiting in Ireland. In the first place, Spain was henceforward constantly to call for a greater number of Irish recruits, especially after the revolt of Catalonia in 1640, and of Portugal in the same year. Moreover, at the defence of Fuentarabia against the French in the summer of 1638, the Irish troops greatly distinguished themselves, and this was reported, with certain suggestions, to the Lord Deputy in Ireland by the English ambassador at Madrid, Sir Arthur Hopton: "The Irish here in the service of Fuentarabia have gotten much reputation, and with good reason, for they have served well. I perceive that here they the *Spaniards* would be sorry to be without them in their armies, and I shall not be against it, as long as it shall be for the honour of His Majesty and his Crown; but I must acquaint your Lordship that the two colonels that are here [*Tyrone and Tyrconnell*] would make them believe that all the Irish that serve them come for the love of them, and without His Majesty's leave". Hopton proceeds to express his opinion that this is "prejudicial to His Majesty's service, both in regard to the honour of his sovereignty, and depriving him of the gratitude that is due unto him from this King"; and he wishes "there were a watchful eye had, that no soldiers be suffered to pass out of that kingdom but by His Majesty's order".<sup>5</sup> In his answer to Hopton

<sup>1</sup>1357 note.<sup>2</sup>1527 notes a-f.<sup>3</sup>1534.<sup>4</sup>1538.<sup>5</sup>1154 note.



on 20 January 1639, the Lord Deputy expresses his sentiments very frankly, and writes that "for the two Irish colonels and their regiments, I like that employment best that carries them farthest hence;" and he continues "that without His Majesty's leave they would not have had many hundreds, which have passed since my coming hither by my warrant pursuing His Majesty's directions to me in that behalf".<sup>1</sup> In a letter to Mr Secretary Windebank a month later he expresses himself even more emphatically, and continues: "Now that I understand that they are to raise new companies amongst us, I shall so watch them, I trust, as either to force the King of Spain to send to His Majesty for the favour, or put them besides their expectation. And in case they sue to His Majesty, and it be thought fit to grant it, then my humble advice is, that the men to be raised new be not disposed to either of these fugitives Tyrone and Tyrconnell, but put under the command of Colonel Preston, governor of Ginnip, a gentleman of English race, well affected to the King, and in great emulation with these other two, who being native Irish, and the sons of rebels, acknowledge no other King but the King of Spain".<sup>2</sup> Subsequent negotiations for recruits show that the Lord Deputy carried out the policy which he here expounds, and that so far as he was concerned, pressure was brought to bear to secure that henceforward the command of the Irish regiments should be given not to Irish colonels, but to Anglo-Irishmen only.

Less than a month after the departure for Spain of the two regiments of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, it was reported that the Irish regiments in the Low Countries were 3,500 below their official strength, and the request was made that officers be sent immediately to recruit, "so that the present good opportunity be not lost. The men should be of use during the coming Spring, and if those who are to raise the levy so wished, instead of 1,300 men they could easily get more than 3,000, as at present their nation is oppressed, and there are many who are anxious to leave the country, and would do so to the great advantage of His Majesty's service."<sup>3</sup> It was also suggested that the same officers should not recruit for the Low Countries and for Spain. Nothing further is mentioned until the 31 July 1638, when the Cardinal Infante tells de Cardenas, who had replaced de Neocolalde as ambassador at London, that "it would be well to raise between 4,000 and 6,000 men"; and shortly after, on 18 September, he again writes to de Cardenas that by war and disease the army had been greatly reduced this year, especially the Irish and English regiments, which must be strengthened at once. Licence must be obtained from the King of England and his Ministers to recruit at least 3,000 English, and as many Irish. de Cardenas, however, was of the opinion that this would be difficult, as the King has

<sup>1</sup>1563 note.

<sup>2</sup>1569 note a.

<sup>3</sup>1527.



heard with great anxiety of the Spanish victories, those in the Low Countries especially, and desires nothing more than the prolongation of the war between Spain and France.<sup>1</sup> Later, on 17 November, de Cardenas reports that he had spoken with several of the Ministers about the English and Irish levies, and recently had audience of the King, who had given permission for the English, but would consider further the question of the Irish.<sup>2</sup> A few days later again he emphasises that it will be difficult to recruit a large number of men in Ireland, as there are very few left there, and the King has need of them for the war in Scotland.

None the less, in January 1639 two new companies are mentioned, recruited recently for the regiment of Colonel Owen O'Neill, and on the 14th of the same month licence for Ireland was granted to David Mac Thomas, of the same regiment, to raise men for his captain's company.<sup>3</sup> On the 29th of the same month, in a letter from Arras to Wentworth, Patrick Daniel, the same of whom Wentworth speaks in 1635, announces that the Cardinal Infante has granted him permission to recruit a regiment, and he does not doubt but that the Lord Deputy "will extend all favours in the furtherance of my said affairs and proceedings herein".<sup>4</sup> His appeal, however, does not appear to have been successful, possibly for the reason given by Strafford in a letter to Mr Secretary Cooke on 28th of May following, promising that certain French levies would be allowed to pass, but "that His Majesty would not be engaged for any more; the many of the like nature granted hitherto have brought things to such a pass that the Earl of Barrimore, as I am informed, cannot make up a thousand men he is to raise for His Majesty's own immediate service."<sup>5</sup>

None the less, the demand of the Spaniards for men did not slacken, and on 1 August 1639, Captain Patrick Fitzgerald represented that he had received a commission as colonel from Philip IV, and a licence to recruit 1,000 men; and on 3 September, Colonel John Butler was given letters (to de Cardenas) which authorised him to recruit a regiment of 3,000 men, in fifteen companies. In a letter of 17 August Philip IV had gone so far as to suggest a levy of no less than 10,000 Irishmen, as part of an agreement for a loan to Charles I; but on 4 November de Cardenas reports that he does not wish to speak to Charles about the proposed levies until the Cardinale Infante had been advised of the changed circumstances, and of the difficulties involved. He has heard that the King does not intend to allow any recruiting except for the old Irish regiments; and he is of the opinion that difficulties will be all the greater when his Majesty will have heard that the levy will be one of the conditions of the proposed loan. Nevertheless, on 23 December de Cardenas announces that he has

<sup>1</sup>1539.  
<sup>2</sup>1560.

<sup>3</sup>1545.  
<sup>4</sup>Appendix, no. 17.

<sup>5</sup>1569 note b.



begun to take action about the recruiting of the 10,000 Irishmen, and is awaiting the answer as to how his proposals should be presented. On the same day he reports that Maurice MacDonnell, whose offer the Cardinal has accepted, is trying to get a licence for 300 men; and on 26 December he sends a copy of the agreement which he has signed with Colonel John Butler for 2,000 Irishmen. On 28 December letters of the same import were signed with Colonel Patrick Fitzgerald, three of whose companies would be ready to be received at St Omer on 3 January 1640.

During the year 1640 no great progress was made. In May it was reported on behalf of Charles I that he felt it very much that the Irish in Flanders enjoyed precedence over the English, who had conquered them; but in answer to this it was stated by the Spaniards that precedence in their armies was a thing of long standing, and to introduce innovations would be difficult. A little later, on 23 May, Wentworth gave an assurance that although not many Irishmen were available, as the population was not as numerous as it usually was, nevertheless he would use diligent efforts with the King to grant one regiment. To the answer of the Spanish ambassador that this was very little, and that there should be two regiments, he undertook to propose this to the King, on condition that they should not be under the command of Tyrone, Tyrconnell, or Owen O'Neill, as all three had shown themselves disaffected towards the King, their natural sovereign.<sup>1</sup> At a conference in London on 25 May, between Wentworth and the three Spanish representatives, de Velada, Malvezzi and de Cardenas, at which they agreed upon an offensive and defensive alliance with Spain, and a break with the Dutch, it was stated that the King of England grants a levy of 3,000 Irishmen for the service of the King of Spain, and that Wentworth undertook to have the necessary orders for this dispatched at once; for which, and other notable services, the King of Spain was to grant Charles a loan of 1,200,000 crowns.<sup>2</sup> When, however, on 2 August 1640, the representatives again consulted Wentworth about the levy, they were told once more that the King was dissatisfied about those who hitherto had been in command of the Irish regiments, Tyrone, Tyrconnell, and Owen O'Neill; and Wentworth named two or three others whom he wished to propose in their place, and so facilitate the grant of the necessary permission.<sup>3</sup> The proposed loan was urged; but no licence to recruit was actually granted.

During the year 1641 the possibilities for recruiting were to be governed in great part by the establishment and subsequent disbanding of the army which Wentworth had established for the service of Charles I. Eight thousand men had been enlisted for the four provinces of Ireland, and ordered to assemble on 15 May 1640, and begin their march to Carrick-on-Fergus for the general

---

<sup>1</sup>1617.<sup>2</sup>1618.<sup>3</sup>1635 and 1669.



assembly on 25 May. Developments in England, however, lead to the disbanding of one half of this army towards the end of September, and the remaining 4,000 men were dismissed by the King's order on 18 May 1641. Wentworth himself had been executed in the meantime on Tower Hill, on 12 May.

As early as 18 January 1641 Lord Cottington had informed the Spanish representatives at London that, if a few colonels were sent over to arrange for the transport, it would be possible to raise a new regiment from the Irish recruited by the King, who were now free to go away. In their correspondence with Brussels the representatives emphasise that the occasion will not recur, and that should the French hear of it, they will not neglect to take the men at any price, in order to deprive Spain of them, "in which case the service of His Majesty will suffer gravely."<sup>1</sup> The King's ban on recruiting seems at last to have been lifted definitely, so far as he was concerned, and the earliest evidence of this is that Colonel Hugh O'Brien, though at first unsuccessful owing to the disturbed situation in England, was able to announce on 22 March 1641 that he had been authorised to recruit a regiment of 1,500 men. They were destined for Spain, where Philip IV expressed the opinion that there was no other equal way of obtaining foreigners, and that no nation was so well suited to the Spanish service as the Irish. On 20 April following Constantine O'Neill likewise received permission from King Charles to recruit 150 Irishmen for the regiment of Colonel Owen O'Neill; and on 22 April Raymund Roche was commissioned as captain of a company to be recruited in Ireland for service in Spain with the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. On 10 May, Colonel Owen O'Neill signed an agreement for the recruiting of 400 men in Ireland for his regiment; and on 27 May Captain Maurice Macdonel was commissioned to recruit a company 300 strong. At the end of the same month the papal representative at London reported to Cardinal Barberini that "Spain was to get 6,000 and France 3,000" Irishmen; and on 3 June de Cardenas urges again that the good occasion for taking 6,000 or 7,000 Irishmen to Spain should not be lost. It was said probably on the same day, and seemingly by a French officer writing from London, that the Spanish ambassador had actually dealt for 7,000 Irishmen, but that nothing was decided as he had not the money.<sup>2</sup> On 11 June it is stated that altogether there will be six regiments to be recruited, each consisting of fifteen companies; and on 12 June the conditions were signed under which Colonel John Butler would recruit 1,000 Irishmen to serve in Spain, and the same conditions were accepted, in each instance for the same number of men, by Colonels Viscount Dillon, Viscount Taaffe, John Barry, George Barry, George Porter, Richard Plunket, and Dermot O'Brien. After Wentworth's death, as is apparent from all these names except the last, his policy of

---

<sup>1</sup>1687.<sup>2</sup>1753.



insisting on the appointment of colonels of English descent had obviously triumphed. Two days later de Cardenas reports that he had arranged for 10,000 recruits, in eight regiments, and sends a copy of the conditions, which "were the best he could get"; and he adds that he is engaged at present in sending off the colonels to Ireland, and for the employment by them of English ships for the transport of the men.<sup>1</sup>

At Brussels, the Cardinal Infante does not appear to have been so optimistic, and in a letter to Philip IV on 16 June, with noteworthy foresight as will appear later, he expresses his fears lest the English Parliament, which was no friend of Spain, may impede these levies, as it can do without difficulty. He would not wish himself, nevertheless, to hinder the recruiting, and he has taken measures to have more money sent to London.<sup>2</sup> de Cardenas, however, continues to report favourably, though he complains of some delay in the sending of commissions from Brussels.<sup>3</sup> He gives good news too of the arrangements made in Ireland for the transport of the men, from Waterford and Kinsale, by an Irishman who claims that he enjoys influence, as he belongs to the Irish Parliament.<sup>4</sup> On 12 July he reports that the colonels have actually been sent off from London to Ireland, and have gone to assemble the men, who will number 10,000, or, if the colonels carry out their promises, more than 12,000. But he emphasises again that of the assurance he has received from the Cardinal Infante were now to fail, the loss would be double, as the enemy would take the men into their service, and that even as it is they are doing all they can to thwart the levy, and are even trying to persuade the ships' captains that when they reach Spain they will not be paid. On 17 July he reports once more that all the colonels had been sent off, and that great haste was necessary, first to facilitate the transport of the men, and secondly on account of the arrival of the French ambassador, who might win over some of the colonels by offering them better conditions. Before 20 July seven of the colonels had reached Ireland, and were already assembling their men. The merchant in London who had undertaken to provide the shipping had instructed his agents in Ireland, fifteen days ago, to hasten the embarkment of 4,000 men; and de Cardenas himself, on the day he was writing, had signed a contract with the masters of two of the ships for the transport of more than 1,000 men.<sup>5</sup> From Ireland Colonel Richard Plunket had written to him that the affairs of the colonels were sailing along with the wind in their poop, and that the Lords Justices had shown him much favour and honour in the matter of the levy. He had also received much help from the nobles and gentlemen of Parliament, who for the most part were relations of his; and within eight days he will be able to send 1,500 men, in good condition and fit for his Catholic

<sup>1</sup>1740.<sup>2</sup>1754.<sup>3</sup>1760.<sup>4</sup>1761.<sup>5</sup>1769.



Majesty's service, His captains and men are to assemble for 20 August, and he aske that all the necessary ships be sent, and especially, nine or ten commissions for captains.<sup>1</sup> At about the same time Colonel George Porter gives an optimistic account of his own activities, and hopes to have a very fine regiment in a short time, for which he wants the ships to be ready at Waterford for 15 August.<sup>2</sup>

Everything seemed to be progressing much more favourably than could have been expected, but the fears expressed by the Cardinal Infante were soon to be verified. Already on 30 July the Irish House of Commons had passed a resolution in which they stated nine reasons "for the stay of the sixteen thousand men intended to be sent to Spain";<sup>1</sup> and that steps had been taken to implement this resolution appears from a petition presented by eight Irish colonels on 4 August 1641, stating that they had been prevented from taking troops to Spain from Ireland.<sup>2</sup> On 8 August it was noted, in an endorsement to this petition, that it had been referred by the King to the English House of Parliament, with a note that he was anxious to grant it; and on the day before this, in the House of Lords, the Lord Privy Seal had already acquainted their Lordships with a letter on the subject which he had received from the Spanish ambassador; and it had been decided to await further information.<sup>3</sup> On 16 August the subject was discussed again, when the Lord Privy Seal stated that the Spanish ambassador had asked for 12,000 men, "which was an army", and that the King was now content that he himself would accept of £3,000 or £4,000, if the Parliament should so advise him; to which the Lords assented, and "my Lord of Bristol said further that when the Spanish ambassador disbursed the money, it was acceptable work to this kingdom".<sup>4</sup> In the meantime de Cardenas had received orders from Madrid to get the men "cost what it may", and to go as far as twenty crowns for each man. He states that he had offered from thirteen to twenty crowns, and that he had asked for 10,000 Irishmen, for whom the money would be paid when they took their departure.<sup>5</sup> On the day that the question had been discussed in Parliament, the 16th of August, he sent an account of his negotiations to Brussels, and mentions that he has sought the good offices of the Queen Mother, and that in an audience with the King he had asked to be allowed to take 6,000 men at once, without revocation of the licence for the remaining 4,000. Charles in turn had assured him that he would do his best to obtain 6,000, and in case he could not arrange this he would give a secret order for Ireland that the authorities there should allow de Cardenas to have a further 2,000 men. de Cardenas also asked him for an order that the men be permitted to leave Ireland without hindrance, should instructions

<sup>1</sup>1768.<sup>2</sup>1767.<sup>3</sup>Appendix 19.<sup>4</sup>1774, note a.<sup>5</sup>1774, note b.<sup>6</sup>1774, note c.<sup>7</sup>1776.



come from England to prevent them.<sup>1</sup> Nevertheless, on 3 September following, in a letter to Secretary Vane, the Lords Justices and Council report "that we are carrying out the King's orders, permitting 4,000 soldiers to be exported hence for the service of foreign princes";<sup>2</sup> though they report again to Vane on 3 and 5 September, petitions presented by Colonels John Butler, Thomas Butler, and John Bermingham, to be allowed to export their men.<sup>3</sup> The ships for the transport of the men were to have been at the Irish ports on the 20th of August, but at the end of the month they were still waiting in the Downs.<sup>4</sup> Parliament intervened again, and on 7 September the House resolved: "That the House holds it is not fit that there should be any levies of men in Ireland for the service of the King of Spain", and "holds it fit that there be a sudden stop of the ships contracted for the Spanish ambassador, for the transporting of soldiers out of Ireland."<sup>5</sup> On 8 September the Lord Privy Seal acquainted the House "that the House was very sensible of a complaint, made to the King, of both Houses, of stopping the ships to transport these soldiers, which they could not but resent, and said that what the Spanish ambassador had done concerning these soldiers was done without the consent of either House, and that they had looked into their journals and could not find any consent of either House to such a thing".<sup>6</sup> It was also reported that the ambassador had arranged to conduct horsemen from the North to Plymouth, at £3 a man, and it was ordered that the committee appointed for the levy shall take into consideration to make a stop of any horse or foot at Plymouth, or any other port, and likewise to take into consideration some way to declare them enemies of the State, that received entertainment from any foreign ambassador, without consent of the King and Parliament".<sup>7</sup> de Cardenas attributed the opposition of Parliament to the Puritan faction, lead by Lord Warwick, who had their own schemes in the West Indies and pushed forward enmity to Spain as a cover.<sup>8</sup> After much dispute, and the report of the visit of the delegates of the House (Sir John Colpeper, Mr Waller, Sir A. Vane and Lord Falkland) to the Spanish ambassador, it was finally ordered that "the merchants that are parties to the Charter-party, and the masters and owners of the ships that were appointed to transport the Irish soldiers into the King of Spain's dominions, shall be set at liberty to trade with their ships, provided that they give ten thousand pounds security by their own bonds for every ship, to the Judge of the Admiralty, not to transport any of His Majesty's subjects as soldiers out of England, Ireland, or any other part of His Majesty's dominions, to any foreign State for the service of the King of Spain, or the French King, without His Majesty's consent, by the advice of Parliament."<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup>1776. 1781.<sup>2</sup>1779 note b.<sup>3</sup>1779, notes c, d, e.<sup>4</sup>1772.<sup>5</sup>1783 note c.<sup>6</sup>1783 note d.<sup>7</sup>*Ibid.*<sup>8</sup>1783.<sup>9</sup>*Ibid.*



From October 1641 until 1650, the years of the rebellion in Ireland and the Confederation of Kilkenny, recruiting in Ireland depended almost altogether upon the Council of the Confederation and the Apostolic Nuncio, Archbishop Rinuccini. Moreover the two principal Irish colonels in the Low Countries, Owen O'Neill and Thomas Preston, had returned to Ireland in 1642 to play their part in the war there, O'Neill associated with his kinsmen in Ulster, and Preston with the Anglo-Irish of the Pale. Recruiting for the Low Countries slackened, and is mentioned for the first time again on 1 June 1645, when a commission was given at Brussels to the Marquis of Antrim as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be recruited from his vassals, and to consist of fifteen companies; and on the same date commissions were issued for the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, and one of the captains. On 20 June following, licence for Ireland for one year, to recruit for Antrim, was granted to Captain Maurice MacDonel; and on 27 February 1646 a passport for Ireland was granted at Brussels to Major Thomas Plunket, who had been chosen by the Duke of Lorraine, then allied with the Spaniards in the Low Countries, to be colonel of an Irish regiment to be newly recruited; but this the Apostolic Nuncio, then all powerful in such matters, could not see his way to permit.<sup>1</sup> On 20 June following a commission as colonel of a regiment to be recruited was issued at Brussels to Major Dermot O'Sullivan Mor, but whether he succeeded in recruiting the men is not stated, and there is no further mention of the regiment. That the Spanish authorities did not relax their efforts to obtain men appears from a notification given from London by de Cardenas on 2 September following, that he had arranged at London for the formation of an Irish regiment to serve in the Low Countries under Colonel John Morphy, who had already sent across 350 men, of whom, however, 150 were in the fort at Mardyck when it was taken by the French. Morphy was given his commission as colonel of the regiment, to consist of fifteen companies, on 23 September, though on 12 January 1647 the number of the companies was reduced to twelve. A year later it was reported, in January 1648, that in the Irish regiment there were only 500 men,<sup>2</sup> and nothing further about recruits is mentioned until 1 October 1649, when it is stated that men had been brought over from Ireland by Nicholas Birmingham, and formed into a company for Colonel Morphy's regiment. In March 1650, one of the last acts of the Irish Catholic bishops of the Confederacy was their offer to hand over the fort of Dungannon to Philip IV, and to raise a considerable number of Irish infantry to serve in Flanders.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, Daniel O'Neill reports to the Marchioness of Ormonde, on 12 October 1650, that the Spanish ambassador had given no answer to his offer of 5,000 men, whom Ireton had permitted him to recruit.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup>1893 notes a, b.<sup>2</sup>1968.<sup>3</sup>1991.<sup>4</sup>1995 note.



If however during these years recruiting for the Low Countries was not of remarkable importance, it was carried out on a much more intensive scale for Spain and France, and as much of the correspondance relating to this is to be found in the Brussels archives, it is not without some interest here. From France, de la Monnerie was sent to recruit in Ireland where he arrived in January 1644, and at the same time Foissot arrived on the same mission for Spain. On 18 February both received an assurance from the Supreme Council of the Confederacy at Kilkenny that by 24 June they would each be authorised to recruit 2,000 infantry and their officers,<sup>1</sup> and that de la Monnerie was active at once appears from a report from Galway at the end of the year that 1,000 men had sailed from that port for France under the command of Arthur Magennis Viscount Iveagh, and a company of a further 100 men under the command of Edward Plunket, son of the Earl of Fingal.<sup>2</sup> Foissot was replaced in December 1645 by de la Torre,<sup>3</sup> who however had no great success, and was replaced by Foissot in September.<sup>4</sup> Recruiting now seems to have proceeded normally, and on May 12, 1647, two shiploads of men, under the command of Diego Preston, sailed for Spain from Waterford; and another regiment, under the command of Colonel Barnewall, was about to be embarked for the same destination. Foissote himself saw Diego Preston's men off, but saw their capture by three French frigates before they had reached the mouth of the river;<sup>5</sup> and three weeks later he reports how "800 men of our regiment for Spain have disbanded, after having been kept for eight weeks, at incredible cost . . . The Marquis of Antrim's sailors all ran away when the wind began to be favourable, and it has not since been possible to get the frigates to make the voyage . . . At last Diego de la Torre and "le Sieur Colonel Barnewall" by offering four times the price got the frigate *St Mary* ready to go to the war . . . Mr Barnewall and his two brothers went with them". Foissot suspected treachery: "But as soon as I saw the ships allowing the two French ships to pass, and giving them a salvo, I knew that your son had been sold, either by foreigners or by his own people".<sup>6</sup> There can be little doubt that he was right.

The three frigates which had taken over Foissot's men had arrived at Passage on the 26 March preceding, and had brought to Ireland Mr de la Moniere and Mr du Talon, besides two ships "of burthen able to transport nearly a thousand men apiece".<sup>7</sup> This news was communicated to Ormonde by Digby on the day of their arrival, and he adds: "Their pretence to carry over men, which they expect from the Confederate Catholicks; but their real and prime errant was to me, upon the business of B., and to you for the thousand men; for which you are engaged to the

<sup>1</sup>1848 notes a-d.<sup>2</sup>1161 notes b-c.<sup>3</sup>1867 and 1868.<sup>4</sup>1898, 1907.<sup>5</sup>1960 note a.<sup>6</sup>1960 note b.<sup>7</sup>1954 note b.



French Agent." It appears clearly from the subsequent correspondence that besides the thousand men, Digby had promised an extra 5,000. It also appears that this was to be done with the permission of the English Parliament; that sixteen vessels to take the men to France were ready to sail from La Rochelle, which implied, Digby thought, that the permission of Parliament had been secured; that this would facilitate the restitution of Ireland to the Crown of England, by such a weakening of the rebels' forces as should be; and, Digby adds, "I am not more confident than I am of anything that in a month's time the Irish shall be more broken and weakened by art, than they [Parliament] can hope to do with twelve months wars". With Digby and Ormonde, General Preston was implicated in the plot, and apparently the personal interest of all three was to secure a safe commission for themselves in France.<sup>1</sup> That this scheme failed is made very certain by the letter of Castel Rodrigo, Governor of the Low Countries, to Philip IV, on 21 January 1648, in which he states that Ormonde had offered to recruit 4,000 men for Spain, one of his conditions being that he should be colonel-in-chief.<sup>2</sup> For the time being the King, although very anxious to get recruits, declined this offer. On 1 May 1648, Ludovic (Lindsay) Earl of Crawford reported to de Cardenas that he had raised troops according to the agreement he had made and had them ready for transportation to Spain.<sup>3</sup>

The measures taken by Cromwell and the Commissioners of Parliament to dispose of the Irish armies which had opposed them are too well known to need emphasis. In the articles of surrender signed by the Irish leaders there is, almost without exception, one which allows the colonels concerned to treat for the transport of their men with any Prince in amity with the State of England; and the Parliamentary Commissioners undertook to see that the shipping necessary would be provided.<sup>4</sup> The first Irish colonel to surrender, Fitzpatrick, agreed for the transport of his men to Spain; and both Spain and France took every advantage of the situation to strengthen their armies. So far as the Spanish Low Countries were concerned Don Leopold, who was now Governor in succession to the Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand, reports to Philip IV on 1 February 1651 that recruiting in Ireland had been suspended since last autumn, owing to the plague there; and he adds that the conditions for recruits offered by James O'Neill, perhaps meaning Daniel, had not been acceptable, and that de Cardenas had informed him that one of the Secretaries of State had offered facilities to recruit 5,000 Englishmen and as many Irishmen. Whether these were intended for the Low Countries does not appear, and there is no further information concerning them. Two months later, on 1 April 1651, orders were given from

<sup>1</sup>1954 notes a and b. 1956 note. 1962. 1965.      <sup>2</sup>1966.      <sup>3</sup>1968.  
<sup>4</sup>See Dunlop, R., *Ireland under the Commonwealth*, Manchester, 1913.



Brussels to accept the terms upon which Colonel Thomas Preston had agreed to raise 2,000 men in Ireland, of which to form two regiments, each of fifteen companies and one thousand men, one of his conditions being that he himself should be given the rank of Major-General; but on 21 February 1653 the Archduke Leopold reported to Philip IV that Preston had failed to carry out the agreement, as there was not enough money at Brussels to pay for the levy. On October 6-16 1652 licence had been granted to Con McCormac O'Neill to transport 1,000 Irishmen from Drogheda; and on 22 December Philip had sent instructions to Brussels to have Juan Triquet sent as a special recruiting agent to Ireland,<sup>1</sup> under the impression that an official living in the quarters of the Parliamentarians would be able to recruit more expeditiously and at less expense than was actually being done; but de Cardenas appears to have advised against the proposal.<sup>2</sup> On 7 May 1653 conditions were agreed upon with James Kannan for the raising of a new regiment of 550 men, of whom he had already brought across 275 to the Low Countries. He was granted a commission for the colonel, and blank commissions for the officers; but of this also nothing further of importance is reported. On the preceding day, 6 May, a commission had been granted to Colonel Dudley Costelloe for a regiment of 732 men whom he had already brought over from Ireland, and of a further 600 whom he had offered to recruit there; and in August following he was granted licence to proceed to Ireland for six months to recruit 1,000 men.<sup>3</sup> Yet another regiment was commissioned in the same year, and in August, apparently, licence for Ireland to recruit 1,000 men was granted to Colonel Cary Dillon.<sup>4</sup> On 19 November following, however, orders were issued to disband this regiment, and also the men of the regiment of Colonel Charles Moledy, and transfer both officers and men to the regiment of Colonel John Morphy. On 31 December Colonel Dillon himself was given permission to withdraw from the Low Countries. On 28 August 1654 assistance was given for 1,000 Irishmen who had landed at one of the ports of Flanders, of whom, however, nothing further is reported. In 1655, on 7 April, mention is made for the first time of the regiment of Colonel Philip O'Reilly, with which he had come from Spain; and on 6 July 1656 a commission was granted as colonel to George Cusack, and other commissions for his lieutenant-colonel and nine captains, for a regiment which appears to have been brought from Ireland for service with the Duke of Lorraine.

A development of importance took place when in the year 1656 a treaty which had been discussed between Don John of Austria, then Governor of the Low Countries, and Charles II of England, was ratified by Philip IV; for in connection with the treaty Charles had dealt of bringing over to the Spanish service the Irish regiments which were then serving in France. Philip refers to this

---

<sup>1</sup>2033.<sup>2</sup>2040.<sup>3</sup>2061.<sup>4</sup>2060.



in a letter to Don John of Austria on 11 July,<sup>1</sup> and about the same time (2 July) Hyde, then acting as Chancellor, laid the question before de Cardenas in London, emphasising that the number of Irishmen in the French service was considerable, and suggesting the methods by which their transfer could be brought about successfully.<sup>2</sup> The actual arrangements for this, and particularly for the safety of the Duke of York, their principal commander in France, were entrusted by Charles to Ormonde, "as it is very probable that when their intention should be discovered, the French would use every means to prevent the harm which would probably follow from their action".<sup>3</sup> The whole transaction however was carried out successfully.<sup>4</sup> The Duke of York left Paris on 21 September "accompanied by 120 horse and three coaches";<sup>5</sup> and the Irish regiments followed with just as little incident, only three of them preferring to remain with the French, Darcy's, Inchiquin's and James Preston's, which for greater security the French sent to serve against the Spaniards in Italy.<sup>6</sup> From the 4,000 men who had come over to him, Charles on 20 December 1656 authorised the formation of two Irish regiments, together with one of English and one of Scots each regiment to consist of sixteen companies; the company of the colonel to consist of 100 men, and the other fifteen companies of sixty men each; the one half of the men to be armed with pikes, and the other half with arquebuses and pikes, in equal numbers.<sup>7</sup> On the 27 March 1657 a regiment was given to the Earl of Bristol to be formed from the men, mostly Irish, in the French service, who had surrendered St Ghislain to the Spaniards. On 1 May chaplains were appointed the regiments of Ormonde, Muskerry, and Viscount Taaffe, and on 21 June, to the regiment of Colonel Rochester. The regiments are designated in the Brussels registers as the regiments of the King of England, and as under his command. After the return of Charles II to England in May 1660 the Irish regiments still maintained their existence in the Low Countries, though in diminished strength, and it does not appear that any further recruiting was actually done in Ireland at this time. On 15 February a commission had been granted to Theodore O'Meara of a regiment, which as stated in an order of 16 February, was to consist of seventeen companies which were already under his command, and six others formerly under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Fitzgerald; and it is clear from the registers that both these officers had come, with their men, from service with Condé. On 23 March 1661 an order had been given for the formation of yet another company for the same regiment, from those Irish soldiers of the King of England who had remained in Flanders; but three days later, on 23 March, it was

<sup>1</sup>2147.<sup>2</sup>2153.<sup>3</sup>2153.<sup>4</sup>2163.<sup>5</sup>2157 notes a, b, c.<sup>6</sup>2162, 2163 notes.<sup>7</sup>2171, and see 2166 note.



reported that by royal orders the regiment was to consist in future of twelve companies only. It is mentioned for the last time on 15 May 1664.

Also in the year 1660, on 16 February, Colonel James Dempsy was granted a commission for a regiment, to be formed from thirteen companies which had come to the Low Countries at his expense. On 24 February 1661, blank commissions were issued for three companies of this regiment which were to be newly recruited, but where is not stated; and on 5 August 1664 there is reference to this regiment having at some time previously gone to Spain. In May 1672 there is mention of the Taaffe regiment, which in 1673 came under the command of Colonel Denis O'Byrne, destined to be the last colonel of an Irish regiment at this period. It then numbered 344 men, and he contracted to recruit a further 56, and so bring up its strength to 400. The Earl of Clare offered, on 17 December 1677, to recruit in Ireland a regiment of two or three thousand men for service in the Low Countries, or Catalonia or Sicily; but nothing more is heard of this. On 12 September of the same year the colonel of the last Irish regiment, Denis O'Byrne was given licence to go to Ireland to recruit new men, and to take with him some of his officers for the same purpose; and it was probably in this connection that on 31 July 1682<sup>1</sup> Charles II of England gave permission to raise in Ireland by beat of drum 400 volunteers to fill the ranks of the Irish regiment of the King of Spain in the Low Countries, and to ship them from any port. The fact that an order was issued on 15 August 1686 for the reestablishment of the regiment on 30 August seems to indicate that the men needed had been secured. But of any further developments the documents give no information, and two years later, on 5 November 1688, the landing of William of Orange in England, and the subsequent war in Ireland, put an end definitely to all recruiting in Ireland for the benefit of the Spanish Low Countries.<sup>2</sup>

### COSTS OF RECRUITING

When Sir William Stanley was assembling his men for service in the Low Countries, Leicester promised that he would receive

<sup>1</sup>2841 note b.

<sup>2</sup>On 23 August 1689 it was reported that there were 400 or 500 Irishmen in hospital at Louvain and Tirlemont, and it was proposed to transfer them to Lille. 'Franco-Irish Correspondence 1685-89', ed. Lilian Tate, *Analecta Hibernica* No. 21. Dublin, Irish MSS Commission, 1959, p. 52, no. 183. Orders had been given on 8 August 1689 that all the English and Irish possible were to be assembled at Lille under the command of Denis MacGillycuddy, to be sent over to Ireland during the coming winter. *Ibid.* p. 50, no. 128. On 19 March 1689 a Colonel Demsy, not more clearly identified, landed at Ambleteuse with 15 Irishmen and one captain. *Ibid.* p. 76, no. 167. It does not appear for certain whether any of these had been in the Spanish service in the Low Countries. On 10 February 1681 Tyrconnell reports from Limerick that William of Orange had ordered that all the prisoners of war he had taken, and an equal number of Irish peasants who had never been soldiers or prisoners, to the total number of 3,000, were to be sent to Flanders, to be exchanged, it was thought, for prisoners held by the French. *Ibid.* p. 208, no. 289.



above thirty shillings, "if I can it shall be forty shillings", for every man he would bring out of Ireland to Flushing.<sup>1</sup> Probably this included the costs of transport and maintenance, and this may well have been the case in all subsequent agreements to which reference occurs in these Brussels documents. Our next information on the subject does not occur until 17 September 1634, when de Necolalde, the Spanish representative at London, states that 6,000 Irishmen had been sent to Flanders at the cost of 2,000 crowns, which represents three men per crown, and is very economic. In the same letter, however, de Necolalde refers to an Irish colonel, evidently Thomas Preston, who had arrived in London provided with 6,000 crowns to recruit 2,000 men, which represents a sharp rise to three crowns per man, irrespective of other costs which, it is said, will rise to as much again. On 28 March it is stated that 15,000 crowns had been assigned for the recruiting of four regiments, and on 20 December it is specified that the grant was for 750 men for each regiment, or a total of 3,000; which represents a further rise to five crowns per man. A contract made on 26 December 1639 by de Cardenas, Spanish ambassador at London, with Colonel John Butler, guarantees payment of 2,000 ducats, equivalent to £500 for 2,000 men to be taken to Flanders; and should the number be less than 2,000, the pay shall be one ducat for each man, the ducat to be of the value of ten reales, or five shillings; a remarkable drop in price, due no doubt to the special circumstance. In the next contract, which was made by Colonel Hugh O'Brien on 15 April 1641, the price is fixed at twenty reales or ten shillings per man, though later the colonel asks for six crowns, each of the value of ten reales, in accordance with the agreement he had made with the Spanish representatives at London. Five days later, on 20 April, Constantine O'Neill, who has a permit to recruit 150 men, asks eight crowns for each man; and on 28 April Moriarty O'Brien contracts to land 1,000 Irishmen at any port in Biscay at the cost of £3,000, or £2 for each man. A contract made by Colonel Owen O'Neill on 10 May 1641 is for 400 men at six crowns each man, each crown of the value of six reales, although, as is stated, the previous price had not been more than five crowns. Should he bring over more than 400 men, he asks six and a half crowns for each one, as men were scarce, and it is difficult to get them across from England. Three weeks later, through Sir Francis Windebank, eight crowns for every recruit from Ireland were offered to Charles I; and on 12 July the seven colonels who were leaving London to recruit in Ireland were given 18,000 crowns, for which sum they promised 10,000 or 12,000 recruits; but this evidently did not include the costs of transport. One month later, on 9 August, de Cardenas has been instructed from Madrid that he may go as far as twenty crowns for each recruit, and he says that

<sup>1</sup>No. 8, note i.

he himself had already offered from thirteen to twenty crowns. This however was for men for Spain. The high price seems to have been maintained during the years following, for on 12 October, 1650 Daniel O'Neill offers to raise 3,000 infantry, and deliver them at the seaside to a commissary of Spain, at £4 for each man; and also a further 600 men to form a regiment of Horse; but his proposals were not accepted. On 1 April 1651 Colonel Thomas Preston contracts to recruit 2,000 men at eighteen crowns per man, each crown to be of the value of ten reales, and the total sum to be 36,000 crowns payable immediately. His offer was accepted, but it was never carried out.

In the year 1653 the price had already fallen, when on 6 May Colonel Dudley Costelloe, who had brought 632 men over to Flanders, and offered to bring 600 more, asks and receives six crowns each of ten reales for every man. On 15 December of the same year Francis Owen, who had brought over to Flanders men for three regiments, asks and is given eighteen crowns for each of the eighteen recruits of the contingent who had died before arriving at their destiny; and no doubt he had received the same price for the men who had survived. By the year 1654, on 7 January, the price had fallen to 3,000 crowns for 1,000 men, paid to Major Guilbert Talbot, which brings us back to the price asked in September 1634. On 20 January 1676 Colonel Denis O'Beryue contracts to bring from Ireland fifty six men for each of whom he will receive twelve crowns. No further information on this subject occurs until 28 May 1681, and this is the last, when the same Colonel agrees to recruit 500 Irishmen at sixteen patacones each, which is equivalent to sixty four shillings.

## RELATIONS WITH IRELAND

As would be expected, there is some reference in the documents to the relations of the exiles in Flanders with their own country. From the days of Stanley's change of allegiance, his regiment was a source of hope to those who were prepared to withstand the English authorities in Ireland, and of active concern to these same authorities lest when an occasion should offer, these men might return home with their training and experience in war. It would have been a great relief to them had the regiment by some means been brought to an end, and as early as the year 1591 we have an account of an attempt given to Lord Burghley by Thomas Finglas, of his efforts to "break" it. His narrative may not all be credible, but he concludes with the claim which he knew would be well received: "Your honour may perceive how at three different times I have broke that unfortunate regiment,



which of 700 I have brought to 300."<sup>1</sup> Four years later, in March 1599, Captain Oliver Lambert reports to Leicester about his occupation "to see to the coming over of the Irish", but without success, as "finding the revolt of the Irish doubtful, I prepared for Ostend".<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, Hugh O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone, asks the Archduke Albert to grant licence to all the Irish soldiers in the Low Countries to return to Ireland to assist against the English; and in the year 1602 during the preparations for the engagement which ended at Kinsale, a body of 38 well skilled soldiers, captains and engineers amongst them, were actually sent over to afford what aid they could.<sup>3</sup>

The establishment of the new Irish regiment in 1606, under the command of Henry O'Neill, did not ease the situation. The departure of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell from Rathmelton on Lough Swilly in September 1607 was planned and carried out by one of the men of the regiment, Cormac Maguire;<sup>4</sup> and if, when the travellers were prevented from continuing their journey through France to Spain, they changed their course and went to Brussels, they must have been influenced to a great degree in their decision by the thought that they would meet there so many of their friends and relations. Sir Thomas Edmondes, then English ambassador, kept himself well informed about every movement, and sent his information to London, and it is to him no doubt that we owe, among other things, the two detailed reports on the Irish regiment which were sent to London in 1606 and 1607.<sup>5</sup> Chichester, who was then Lord Deputy in Ireland, was likewise not very happy about the situation, and suggested in a letter to Salisbury who had written to him on "this business" that the King of England should entertain and employ the men for a time, and thinks "they would serve very fitly for the service intended upon the Isles of Scotland", and for other purposes which he specified.<sup>6</sup> In May 1608 the subject was mentioned in an interview of the Baron of Hoboken with Salisbury, then Secretary of State, who however expressed the opinion that he preferred the Irish to be in the Low Countries "better than in Ireland, as long as the men can do us no harm there."<sup>7</sup> On 7 July following, the question was considered sufficiently grave to be made the first item for discussion at a meeting of the Baron with the Privy Council,<sup>8</sup> at which Salisbury presided: "That evil reports were current about the Irish who were in the service of his Highness [the Archduke] according to which they only awaited the return of the Earl of Tyrone, their father, to go back to their country and cause trouble there, and that when peace should be made [with the United Provinces] his Highness would free all his troops so that they might nurture sedition in Ireland". To which the Baron answered that

<sup>1</sup>46 note b.<sup>2</sup>55 note a.<sup>3</sup>94 note.<sup>4</sup>290 notes a, b, c.<sup>6</sup>326 note a.<sup>7</sup>344 note b.<sup>5</sup>184 note. <sup>271</sup> note.<sup>8</sup>355.



“as for the Irish who are in the service of his Highness, nothing is less true than what has been imagined; and if some soldier, badly informed and indiscreet, had taken the liberty to talk in such a strain, his Highness was quite ignorant of it, and was not to be blamed; the King could rest assured that he would make proper investigations, and put the matter right as soon as he would be informed”.

On 9 April 1609 a twelve years truce was signed between Spain and the Northern Provinces of Holland, and the future of the Irish regiment seemed very precarious, as the men would not now be employed in active service. Salisbury again, and now more emphatically, showed his opposition to the breaking of the regiment, though it would appear that by now the Baron of Hoboken had become only too willing to bring this about, and had taken some action in this regard at Brussels; for on 25 July 1609 Salisbury writes to Sir Thomas Edmondès from Whitehall: “It hath been strange to me to understand that the Baron of Hoboque doth pretend to have some commission from hence to deal with the Marquis Spinola about the breaking of the Irish regiment, though his Majesty might have just cause to observe it as an argument of no great amity. For I do easily believe that by the colour of dismissing that regiment upon this conjuncture, all the intention [of an invasion of Ireland by Tyrone] may be covered and executed; so as I should think, that this may now be done of purpose to licentiate them to pass into Ireland to support the party. And therefore you shall do all in that kind, to hinder any such matter, rather than approve it; for they cannot be better than where they are, though you need not say so, as if you had any such direction; for that were to move him to do it, or by not doing what they intend not, to value it as an obligation.”<sup>1</sup> Edmondès lost no time in carrying out his instructions, and in a letter to the Archduke Albert he asks for an assurance that the regiment will do no disservice to the King of England; and he adds that Colonel Henry O’Neill before his recent departure for Spain has endeavoured to dispose some of the principal members of the regiment for an enterprise in Ireland.<sup>2</sup>

Whatever assurance the Archduke may have given, watchfulness did not slacken on the part of William Trumbull who as Agent took over the charge of English affairs at Brussels after the departure of Sir Thomas Edmondès. In a letter of 20 September 1609 he reports to Edmondès, now in London, that there is division in the Irish regiment, and if it is fomented in some way, it cannot long stand.<sup>3</sup> On 25 September he reports that two of the Irish companies have lately been ordered to Dunkirk, to embark there, and that the other Irish companies except one are stationed in the coast towns, from which they can easily be transported to any destination in Christendom.<sup>4</sup> In a

<sup>1</sup>397 note<sup>2</sup>416 note 2.<sup>3</sup>429 note a.<sup>4</sup>429 note b.



letter of 11 October he questions whether it would be wise to reduce the Irish serving in Flanders to despair, and asks whether it would not be wiser to maintain a party in the regiment which would report any malicious practices, and counterbalance those who are devoted to the Colonel and his part.<sup>1</sup> The answer of Edmondess from London was not encouraging, for on 18 March 1610 he writes that it is useless to make any propositions to London concerning the breaking of the Irish regiment "for our State is of opinion it is better those men should live in any sort there, than to have any of them to return into Ireland, and there is very little care taken here of dangers which do not nearer press us".<sup>2</sup> Nevertheless Trumbull does not relax his watchfulness, and in 1611 he writes to Sir John Digby that "Our Irishmen having added experience to their valour, thinke all the world not comparable to themselves for the warrs", and he adds that they have sent one Conor O'Reilly to command their troops in Poland, and to keep them together until they do us a mischief in Ireland".<sup>3</sup> He reports to Digby in September that the Irish regiment had much increased, and that all comers are received, and none allowed to leave";<sup>4</sup> and in February 1612, when writing of a proposed reconciliation between James I and Tyrone, he observes that "a grievance between his Majesty and the King of Spain would mean that the Earl would be sent over to Ireland to destroy the new plantations and kindle another rebellion there. The Irish can furnish 400 able commanders, and they have many friends and allies in Ireland."<sup>5</sup>

On 3 December 1612 Trumbull reports to King James information given by an Irishman concerning a confederacy between the King of Spain and the Pope to send 6,000 men to Ireland.<sup>6</sup> He can hardly have looked upon this as serious, but no doubt thought himself bound to report it in the course of his duty. Shortly after this it is admitted that "For breaking the whole Irish regiment, it is impossible, their conditions there being so good, and so little to be promised at home"; and new methods were suggested, or rather a reversion to a former one: "Never deal upon the whole body, but find out some particular men amongst them discontented of the reasons of their fortunes, and work upon such to discover the designs of the rest."<sup>7</sup> By May 1613 the reported size of the army with which Tyrone was to invade Ireland had risen to 18,000, as stated by a friar preaching in Maguire's country";<sup>8</sup> and in April 1614 Sir Dudley Carleton sent news from Venice that Tyrone "will soon leave Rome and spreads the rumour that he intends to go and settle in Brussels. His real purpose is to go by way of Brussels to Ireland, and take the Irish companies from the Low Countries to Ireland and start a rebellion";<sup>9</sup> but the Archbishop of Canterbury, George Abbot, while reporting that the

<sup>1</sup>429 note c.  
<sup>6</sup>537 note b.

<sup>2</sup>425 note.  
<sup>7</sup>537 note c.

<sup>3</sup>459 note.  
<sup>8</sup>571 note b.

<sup>4</sup>472 note.

<sup>5</sup>487 note.  
<sup>9</sup>575 note a.



Archduke "has been approached to arrange that the Irish regiment may go to Ireland" concludes "that the old fox [Tyrone] in my opinion if he is not desperate, will make show of coming to Ireland twice before he come once".<sup>1</sup> In the following May, 1616, Trumbull was instructed by Robert Earl of Somerset "to omit no means that may nourish distaste and distractions amongst the Irish there";<sup>2</sup> and in June 1614 an exact report was sent to London, of the Irish regiment, the companies and captains, and the number of the men, who totalled 1,050.<sup>3</sup> A further report of the same kind was sent over in June, in which the number of the men is given as 981, and 90 pensioners.<sup>4</sup> Two months later Trumbull reports again that numbers had increased by 200 men;<sup>5</sup> and rumours of the return of the Earl of the Low Countries were again current in the year 1615.; How greatly all this apprehension was superfluous and futile is made clear beyond doubt by the letter of the Archduke Albert to Philip III, on 2 May 1615, asking him "to command O'Neill not to come here".<sup>7</sup> And in all probability O'Neill was by then too old and infirm to think of conducting any military expedition. That he was still interested in the Irish regiment is clear from his complaints in February 1616 to de Castro, Spanish ambassador to the Holy See, whom he asked to inform Philip of the efforts made by the King of England to destroy the regiment;<sup>8</sup> which lead Philip to send instructions to the Archduke at Brussels that he was to take whatever steps might be necessary to save it. These instructions were repeated on 28 June, with the injunction "to have great care to see that the Irish regiment in those States is not disbanded, for as your Highness has been informed already, it may be necessary to maintain it".<sup>9</sup> O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone, died on 20 July following, at the age of 76.<sup>10</sup>

The failure to bring about the Spanish Match was followed by hostile relations between Spain and England concerning the

<sup>1</sup>575 note b.                      <sup>2</sup>575 note c.

<sup>3</sup>576 note a.                      <sup>4</sup>576 note b.

<sup>6</sup>576 note c.                      <sup>6</sup>581 note.

<sup>7</sup>581.                              <sup>8</sup>589.                              <sup>9</sup>595.

<sup>10</sup>Extract from a manuscript volume entitled 'Memorie istoriche del Convento di S. Pietro Montorio'. The volume was formerly preserved in the archives of the Franciscan Convent of S. Pietro in Montorio, Rome, but was transferred about thirty years or more ago, with all the other documents in the said archives, to the archives of the Franciscan Convent of S. Maria in Aracoeli, Rome, the head house of the Roman Franciscan Province. 'Memorie istoriche' was compiled in the 18th century, and at p. 212 begins a section entitled: Nota di personaggi illustri tumulati nella chiesa di S. Pietro Montorio, cavate de' libri della sagristia (A note of distinguished persons buried in the church of S. Peter in Montorio, taken from the sacristy books). The following entries occur at p. 212 of the manuscript: Ai 22 Luglio 1613. Un gentiluomo Ibernese della parochia di S. Spirito. A di 24 Setteb. 1610 fu qui sepolto il segretario del Principe d'Ibernia della parochia di S. Spirito. A di 21 Luglio fu qui sepolto il Signore Conte di Tironi d'Ibernia della parochia di S. Spirito. Translated: On the 24 September 1610 an Irish gentleman of the parish of Santo Spirito. On the 24th day of September 1610 was buried here the secretary of the Prince of Ireland, of the parish of S. Spirito. On the 21 of July was buried here the Earl of Tyrone in Ireland, of the parish of Santo Spirito.



Palatinate, and on 17 May 1624 Philip IV sent orders to Brussels to prepare an army for attack and defense, and in particular "to strengthen the Irish regiment which is in residence there, with new recruits, and supply and arm them for the best use which will be made of the regiment."<sup>1</sup> The repercussions of this situation had reached Ireland as early as March, and rumours were in circulation there that the Irish regiment was discharged and "are coming over into this kingdom for no good purpose".<sup>2</sup> By June the rumours had grown, and a loyal-hearted Papist, as he describes himself, had reported to the Lord Deputy, from a servant of his who had served in the Low Countries under Tyrone, "that in the Low Countries they make no question but that Tyrone, with the rest of his fugitives, assisted by a great army, will be sent for this kingdom, and that all their shipping and other necessaries are ready to come upon a sudden."<sup>3</sup> Much other information was sent in to the Irish authorities at the time, and has been preserved, but it is of very small importance, and is of interest only for the names of the informants, notably of the superior of the Franciscan house at Timoleague, Florence Carthy. Among the Brussels documents, on the other hand, there are many of great interest and importance, covering the years from 1624 to 1627, and dealing with a proposed invasion of Ireland, the preparations made for this by the Infanta Isabella at Brussels, the observations of Philip IV from Madrid, memorials on the situation contributed by Florence Conry, Archbishop of Tuam, who with Owen O'Neill had been called to Madrid for consultation, and lastly the long document drawn up by Philip IV after his discussions with O'Neill, presenting twenty-three suggestions for the proposed invasion, and advising that upon the arrival of the Irish forces in their country, they should proclaim an Irish Republic; a suggestion which may owe its inspiration to Owen O'Neill.<sup>4</sup> The invasion was never actually attempted, owing to the fact that Philip wanted peace with England as soon as he could secure it.

When the next occasion for intervention in Ireland occurred in 1641, the response from the Low Countries could hardly have been slighter. The Irish regiments as such played no part in the rebellion. Very few of the Irish soldiers and officers were able to return; and the return of Owen Roe O'Neill was long impeded by the Spanish Governor.

## ENGAGEMENTS

The service of Irishmen with the armies of Spain in the Low Countries began in the year 1587 and continued for just a full

<sup>1</sup>873.   <sup>2</sup>873 note b.   <sup>3</sup>873 note f. and the remaining notes under this number.

<sup>4</sup>For the relative letters and documents see 873-7, 893, 895-6, 904-5, 968, 971-3, 980, 982-3, 986, 988-92, 994-6, 1001-04, 1029-31.

century, until 1686. It may certainly be presumed that as the men were mercenaries they would have been employed on every occasion upon which their presence would have been advantageous and possible. In the Brussels documents, however, mention is made only rarely, and incidentally, of any particular engagement in which they took part. The list which here follows refers to the more important of the military engagements between Spain and her enemies, the United Provinces (Holland) France and England, during the century in question, and will facilitate a general view of the situation for which the Irish regiments were recruited. The engagements in which Irishmen are mentioned as having taken part are given in italics.

It may be of some advantage to recall that from the year 1587 to 1595 hostilities were limited to the northern front, against the United Provinces; but when Henri IV of France declared war against Spain in 1595, hostilities were extended to the southern front until the Peace of Vervins, signed on 2 May 1598. The war against the United Provinces continued until an armistice for six months was signed on 24 April 1607, and this, though broken for a short interval on 25 August 1608, was prolonged until a truce for twelve years was signed on 24 April 1609. Hostilities were resumed in 1622; and later France, aided by her English allies, again opened up the southern front, on 19 May 1634. Final peace with the United Provinces was agreed upon when the Peace of Westphalia was signed on 24 October 1645; but France, aided for a time by England, continued hostilities until the Peace of the Pyrenees, signed in November 1659; and again from May 1667 until the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, signed on 2 May 1668, and from the treaty of Dover signed on 31 December 1671 until the peace signed between France and Spain on 8 March 1678.

- 1585. Elizabeth I of England decides to assist the Northern States of the Netherlands against Spain. Her forces to be under Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester.
- 1586. Recruiting in Ireland for a regiment for the Netherlands under Colonel William Stanley. Regiment sails for Flushing in July. In action at Gravelines, 26 July; at Dixmude before 2 August; at Zutphen, 22 September; in winter quarters at Deventer, 20 October.
- 1587. Stanley surrenders Deventer to the Spaniards; transfers his allegiance to Spain, with his officers and men.
- 1588. The Spanish armada. Ernest Mansfeld takes Wachtendonck for the Spaniards. Farnese attempts to take Bergen-op-Zoom.
- 1589. Charles Mansfeld repels an attempt of the United Provinces against Neymegen. Besieges Rheinberg, which surrenders on 30 January. Farnese takes Gertruidenberg, 10 April.
- 1590. Maurice Nassau takes Breda, 25 February; threatens



- Nymegen. Farnese obliges Henri IV to raise the siege of Paris.
1591. Norris with English troops occupies Blankenberg in February. Maurice Nassau takes Zutphen, 30 May; and Deventer, 10 June. Farnese fails to take Nymegen; raises the siege, 26 July. Maurice Nassau takes Hulst; enters Nymegen, 21 October.
1592. Farnese twice relieves Rouen, blockaded by Henry IV; takes Caudebec. Maurice Nassau takes Steenwyk, 6 July, and Coeverden, 2 September. Farnese succeeded by Pedro Enriquez de Azivedo, 3 June.
1593. Gertruidenberg taken from the Spaniards, 24 June.
1594. Maurice Nassau takes Groningen, 24 July.
1595. Henri IV declares war against Spain, 17 January. Huy taken by the Spaniards. Fuentes invades Picardy. Gains a victory at Dourdon; takes Le Catelet; retakes Cambrai.
1596. Archduke Albert, Governor of the Low Countries, enters Brussels 11 February. Takes Calais, 24 April; Guines, Ham, and Ardres; and *Hulst* in August.
1597. Porto Carrero takes *Amiens* for the Spaniards, 11 March. Amiens retaken by the French, 25 September. French attack Arras, 3 October; besiege Doullens, Maurice Nassau takes Rheinberg, 20 August; Meurs, 20 September; Grol, 26 September; Oldenseel, 21 October; Lingen, 12 November.
1598. Peace signed by France and Spain, Vervins, 2 May. Low Countries ceded by the treaty to the Archdukes, Albert and Isabella, who marry by proxy at Ferrara, 15 November 1598.
1600. Maurice Nassau retakes fortress of Crevecoeur before Bois-le-Duc, 22 January; the fortress of St André, 8 May. Spaniards take Passchendael, Breedene, Snalskerke. Nassau invades Flanders, 19 June. Battle of *Nieuport*, victory of the United Provinces, 2 July.
1601. Spaniards besiege *Ostend*, Take Grave, 20 September. Frederick Spinola killed at sea, 26 May 1603; succeeded by his brother, Ambrose.
1604. Maurice Nassau takes Ardenbourg, 12 May; Ecluse, 20 August. Spaniards take *Ostend*, 20 September. Peace between Spain and England.
1605. Maurice Nassau attacks Antwerp; fails. Ambrose Spinola advances towards Overysseel. Takes Oldenseel; and Lingen, 19 August.
1606. Spinola takes *Grol* and *Rheinberg*. Attempts to enter *Veluwe*. Nassau besieges Grol; defeated by Spinola.
1607. Six months armistice concluded, 24 April.
1608. Short breach of armistice, 25 August.
1609. Twelve years truce signed, 9 April.
1614. Spinola marches against Juliers, August.

1619. Spinola enters the Palatinate, 4 September.
1621. Hostilities against the United Provinces re-opened. Death of the Archduke Albert, 13 July.
1622. Spinola takes Juliers, February. Besieges *Bergen-op-Zoom*. Ernest Mansfeld, in command of the Dutch, defeated at *Fleurus*. Relieves *Bergen-op-Zoom*, 5 October.
1625. Death of Maurice Nassau 23 April. Spinola takes *Breda*, May,
1626. Spinola recalled to Spain.
1629. Frederick Henry of Nassau, brother of Maurice, blockades Bois-le-Duc. Henri de Burgh given supreme command of the Spanish troops; crosses the Yssel; advances by Veluwe; takes Amersfort, 14 August. Montecuculli ravages Gueldre and the territory of Utrecht; Otto van Gant takes Wezel for the United Provinces; Bois-le-Duc surrenders to Frederick Henry, 14 September.
1630. Financial treaty between France and the United Provinces, 17 June.
1631. Frederick Henry invades Flanders; forced to withdraw. Spaniards attempt invasion of the Island of Overflakke, June; their flotilla defeated, 13 September.
1632. Frederick Henry invades the valley of the Meuse; takes Straalen, Venlo, Ruremonde, Sittart. Besieges *Maestricht*, 10 June; Spaniards attempt relief; city capitulates, 22 August. Surrender of Limbourg, Rolduc, Dalhem, Fauquemont.
1633. Death of the Archduchess Isabella, 1 December. Aytona occupies *Stevensweert*.
1634. Francisco de Moncada, marques de Aytona, Governor of the Low Countries. Attempts to take *Maestricht*. Frederick Henry marches against *Breda*. Alliance of France with the United Provinces, 15 April. Ferdinand, Cardinal Infante, Governor of the Low Countries, enters Brussels, 4 November.
1635. Alliance of the United Provinces with France against Spain, 8 February. France declares war against Spain, 19 May. French invade Luxembourg; plan to unite with the Dutch at *Maestricht*, and advance against Brussels. Defeat Prince of Savoy at Avines, near Huy, 20 May. Sack Tirlmont. Besiege *Louvain*; repulsed; 24 June—3 July. Retire upon Ruremond, 4 July. Spaniards take fortress of Schenk, and Goch; retake Limbourg and some neighbouring places.
1636. Spaniards invade Picardy under Prince Thomas of Savoy, Piccolomini and John de Weert, towards Paris. Frederick Henry retakes Schenk, 30 April. Demonstrates against *Breda*. Spaniards retire upon Arras.
1637. Frederick Henry takes *Breda*, 10 October. Forces of



- Cardinal de la Valette for France take Cateau Cambresis, Landrecies, and *Maubeuge*.
1638. Frederick Henry attempts to take Antwerp; severely defeated at Calloo, 30 June. Attempts to take Gueldre at end of August; repulsed. French besiege *St Omer*; fail.
1639. Unsuccessful attempts of Frederick Henry against Hulst and Gueldre. French defeated at Thionville by Piccolomini, 7 June. French take Hesdin. Pirates of Dunkirk defeated by van Tromp, 18 February. Spanish fleet in the Downs destroyed by van Tromp, 21 October.
1640. *Arras* taken by the French, 9 August.
1641. *Gennep*, dutchy of Cleves, taken by Frederick Henry. In Artois, *La Bassée*, Lens and *Bapaume* taken by the French. Death of the Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand, 9 November; succeeded by Francisco de Melle, who retakes *La Bassée* and Lens.
1642. de Mello defeats the French at Honnecourt, 26 May.
1643. de Mello routed before Rocroi by the Duke of Enghien, 19 May. French take Thionville, 8 August. Attempts of Frederick Henry on northern frontier repulsed.
1644. Manuel de Maura, marques de Castelrodrigo, succeeds de Mello as Governor of the Low Countries. The United Provinces take Dalhem, Rolduc, Fauquemont, and Sas van Ghent. French take Gravelines.
1645. Victory of the French under Turenne at Nordlingen, 7 August. Army of the United Provinces within sight of Ghent. Take Hulst, 4 November. French take *Mardyck*, Cassel, St Venant, Béthune, Armentières, Warneton, Comines and Menin.
1646. Courtrai capitulates to the French, 29 June. French under Condé take Dunkirk, 11 October. Congress of Münster; provisional articles signed by the Dutch and Spaniards, July.
1647. Preliminary treaty signed by the Dutch and Spaniards, 8 January. Archduke Leopold William, Governor of the Low Countries, enters Brussels, 11 April. French take Dixmude and *La Bassée*; loose Menin, Armentières, Comines, Lens and Landrecies.
1648. The Peace of Münster between the Dutch and the Spaniards, January 16; ratified, 15 May. Ypres taken by Condé for France, 29 May. Leopold William surprises Courtrai; threatens Peronne; withdraws before Condé; besieges and occupies Furnes; defeated by Condé with heavy losses at Lens in Artois, 20 August. French civil war of the Fronde begins, 27 August. Turenne flees to Spanish Netherlands.
1649. Spaniards recover Ypres.
1650. Archduke Leopold William, with Turenne, enters Picardy,

- seizes Le Catelet, Vervins, Rethel and Chateau Porcien; defeat French under Hocquincourt, near Fismes, 25 August. Turenne heavily defeated by Marshal du Plessis-Praslin for France at Rethel, 15 December.
1651. Turenne returns to Paris, May 1651. Spaniards recover Furnes and Bergues-St-Winoc. Condé allies himself with Spain.
1652. Spaniards recover Gravelines, Mardyck, and Dunkirk.
- 1653-4. Condé driven from Rethel and Sainte Menehould in Champagne; from *Stenay* and Clermont in Lorraine; defeated before Arras.
1654. Charles, Duke of Lorraine, arrested by the Spaniards, February.
1655. French occupy Landrecies. Minor hostilities in Hainault, between the Sambre and the Meuse. Hocquincourt, French general, plans to surrender Peronne and Ham to the Spaniards; discovered. Peace of Westminster between France and England, 24 October; brings about the expulsion of Charles II and the Duke of York from France.
1656. French under Turenne defeated before *Valenciennes*, 16 July.
1657. Treaty of Paris; England and France undertake the conquest of Mardyck, Dunkirk, and Gravelines; March. Operations begun in May. *Montmédy* and *St Venant* taken. *Mardyck* taken in September. French defeated before Cambrai, 30 May. Irish surrender *St Ghislain*.
1658. Dunkirk invested, 1 May. Don John of Austria and Condé defeated by the French under Turenne at the *Dunes*, 14 June. Dunkirk and Mardyck ceded to England. Bergues-St-Winoc, Dixmuyde, and Furnes and *Gravelines* taken by the French; Oudenard, Menin and Ypres surrender. Turenne and the French approach Brussels. Philip IV offers his daughter the Infanta Maria Teresia in marriage to Louis XIV.
1659. The Peace of the Pyrenees between France and Spain, 7 November.
1660. Condé pardoned. January.
1667. Hostilities renewed between France and Spain, 7 November. Turenne crosses the Flemish frontier, 24 May. Occupies Charleroi, *Tournai*, Ath, Courtrai, and Douai. *Lille* surrenders to Louis XIV in person, 28 August. Truce of three months with Spain.
1668. Alliance of England, Holland, and Sweden against France, 23 January. Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, 2 May. Spain surrenders to France her conquests on the Sambre, the Scheldt, the Scarpe and the Lys, and Bergues and Furnes on the coast. France restores Franche-Comté.
1670. Secret treaty of Dover between Charles II of England and



- Louis XIV against Holland and her allies, Spain, Brandenburg and the Emperor, May-June.
1673. Imperial, Spanish and Dutch troops take Bonn, 12 November.
1674. Peace between England and Holland, 19 February. Battle of Seneff between French under Condé and Allies under William of Orange, 11 August; indecisive.
1676. Towns of Condé and Bouchain taken by Louis XIV.
1677. Battle of Cassel, to relieve St Omer; French under Duke of Orleans defeat Allies under William of Orange. French take Valenciennes, *Cambrai* and St Omer.
1678. Ghent taken by the French, 8 March; and Ypres. Mons besieged by the Duke of Luxembourg. Battle of St Denis, 14 August. Peace concluded between France and Spain, 17 September. Spain yields: Franche Comté, Valenciennes, Aire, St Omer, Cassel, Bailleul, Poperinge, Warneton, Ypres, Cambrai, and the Cambresis. France restores to Spain: Courtrai, Oudenarde, Ath, Ghent, Binche, Charleroi, and the duchy and town of Limburg.

The peace lasted for ten years, by which time the Irish regiments in the service of Spain in the Low Countries receive no further mention in the military registers preserved at Brussels.

### SOURCES USED FOR NOTES

#### MANUSCRIPT MATERIAL:

Brussels.	Bibliothèque Royale.	MS. 16149. Cartas del Marqués Francisco de Aytona al Rey.
Dublin.	Trinity College.	MS 567, E. 3. 15.
Killiney.	Dún Mhuire.	D.I. pp. 189-91; 407; 409-11; 413. D. IV. p. 235. p. 395. pp. 479f. J. I. J. II.
London.	Public Record Office.	Flanders Papers. S.P. 77/6, fol. 218. 77/9, fol. 203. 77/10, fol. 364.
Oxford.	Bodleian Library.	Carte Papers, vol. 18, p. 5, no. 3.
Munich.	Staatsbibliothek.	Codex Monacensis Hispanicus 22.
Rome.	Collegio S. Isidoro.	W. 2. 8.
Sheffield.	Central Library.	Strafford Letters. 14 (162); 8 (283). 18 (168/1).
Simanças.	Archivo General Estado. Negociaciones de Flándes	Legajo 594; 599; 608; 622; 624; 628; 1749; 2291.

## PRINTED AND CALENDARED MATERIAL:

- Aiazzi, Giovanni, *Nunziatura in Irlanda di Monsignor Gio. Rinuccini*, Florence 1844.
- Analecta Hibernica*, including reports of the Irish Manuscripts Commission. (Published by the Irish Manuscripts Commission, Dublin.)
- Archivium Hibernicum*, or Irish ecclesiastical records (published by the Catholic Record Society of Ireland, Maynooth and Dublin).
- Barry, Captain Gerrat, *The siege of Breda by the armes of Philip the Fourth under the government of Isabella atchived by the conduct of Ambr. Spinola*. Louvain, 1627.
- Barry, Captain Gerat, *A discourse of military discipline, divided into three books etc.* Brussels, 1634.
- Bentivoglio, Cardinal, *Della guerra di Fiandra*. Venice edition, 1645.
- Bertrand, Raymond de, *Histoire du couvent des Pauvres Clarisses anglaises de Gravelines*. Dunkirk, 1857.
- Birch, Thomas, *Historical view of the negotiations between the Courts of England, France and Brussels, from the year 1593 to 1617*. London, 1749.
- Birch, Thomas ed. *Thurloe Papers, the collections of State Papers of John Thurloe*. 7 vols. 1742.
- Borlase, Edmund, *History of the execrable Irish rebellion of 1641*. London, 1680.
- Brady, W. Mazière, *Episcopal succession in England, Scotland and Ireland*. 3 vols. Rome, 1876-7.
- Bruce, John, ed. *Correspondence of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester*, Camden Society, London, 1848.
- Bhulbh, Pádraig de, 'Notes from the Roman archives, A hunted Primate,' in *Catholic Bulletin*, XI, pp. 47ff. Dublin.
- Calendar of Carew MSS*, 1589-1600, 6 vols, London, 1867-73.
- Calendar of the Clarendon Papers preserved in the Bodleian Library, Oxford*, ed. by O. Ogle and W. H. Bliss, Vol. II, to January 1649. Oxford, 1872.
- Calendar of Salisbury MSS*, IV, V, VIII, XIII, new series III.
- Calendar of State Papers, Domestic series, James I*, 1603-25.
- Calendar of State Papers, Foreign*, 1585-6.
- Calendars of State Papers, Ireland*, 1588-1655.
- Collección de documentos inéditos para la historia de España*, Madrid.
- Carte, Thomas, *History of the Life of James, Duke of Ormond*. 3 vols. London. 1735 and 1736.
- Carte, Thomas, *A collection of original letters and papers . . . 1641 to 1660*. 2 vols. London, 1739.



- Chambers, Robert, *Historie of the miracles wrought . . . at a place called Montague*. 1600?
- Clarendon, Edward Earl of, *History of the Irish rebellion and civil wars in England*. 8 vols. Oxford, 1826.
- Collectanea Hibernica*. 'Sources for Irish history. I.' Dublin, 1958.
- de Meester, Bernardi<sup>6</sup>, 'Correspondance du Nonce Giovanni-Francesco Guidi di Bagno', Première Partie, (1621-1624); Deuxième Parti (1625-1627). Brussels, 1938, in *Analecta Vaticano-Belgica* . . . publiés par L'Institut Historique Belge de Rome.
- Dictionary of National Biography*.
- Dunlop, R. *Ireland under the Commonwealth*, 2 vols. Manchester, 1913.
- Edinburgh Catholic Magazine, new series*, vol. II. London, 1838.
- Gardiner S. R., *History of England 1603-42*. London, 1883-4.
- Giblin, Cathaldus O.F.M. ed., 'MSS Barberini Latini, Catalogue of material of Irish interest in the collection Nunziatura di Fiandra, Vatican Archives', Part I, vols 1-50, in *Collectanea Hibernica* No. 1, Dublin, 1958.
- Giblin, Cathaldus O.F.M., ed., 'MSS Barberini Latini', in *Archivium Hibernicum* XVIII (1955).
- Gilbert, J. T. ed., *The aphorismical discovery of treasonable faction, a contemporary history of affairs in Ireland*, 3 vols, Dublin. 1879.
- Guiney, Marquis de, *Histoire militaire du regne de Louis le Grand de France*. Paris. 1726.
- Hagan, J. ed., 'Miscellanea Vaticano-Hibernica, Borghese Collection, Vatican Archives', *Archivium Hibernicum* II, 1913, III, 1914, IV, 1915.
- Healy, T. M., *The Planter's Progress*. Dublin 1921.
- Heywood, Thomas ed., *Cardinal Allen's Defence of Sir William Stanley's surrender of Deventer*, Chetham Society, 185.
- Historical MSS Commission:
- Downshire MSS*, 4 vols.
- Franciscan MSS preserved at the Convent, Merchants' Quay, Dublin* (since transferred to Dún Mhuire, Killiney, Dublin).
- Ormonde MSS*.
- MSS of the Duke of Portland*.
- MSS of George Wingfield Digby*.
- Ireland, *Statutes at Large passed in the Parliaments held in Ireland*, vol. I. Dublin, 1786.
- Irish MSS Commission:
- Jennings, Brendan O.F.M. ed. *Wadding Papers*. Dublin. 1954.
- Brussels MS 3947, 'Donatus Monatus, De Provincia Hiberniae S. Francisci, in *Analecta Hibernica* No. 6, 1934.
- McNeill, Charles ed. Rawlinson A., 237, in Reports on MSS in the Bodleian Library, in *Analecta Hibernica* I, Dublin, 1930.
- The Tanner Letters*, Dublin, 1943.

- Jennings, Brendan O.F.M. 'Irish Swordsmen in Flanders I, Stanley's regiment, 1586-1610', in *Studies*, vol. XXXVI, no. 144. December 1947, pp. 402-10.
- 'Irish Swordsmen in Flanders II, 1586-10, Independent Irish Companies and the Regiment of Henry O'Neill'. *Studies*, vol. XXXVII, no. 146, June 1948, pp. 189-202.
- 'Hugh, Son of Rory O'Donnell, 1607-42', in *Studies*, vol. XXX, no. 118, 1941, pp. 219-234.
- Journal of the House of Commons Anno 1641.*
- Journal of the House of Commons of the Kingdom of Ireland from the eighteenth of May 1613 inclusive in the eleventh year of King James the First, to the seventh day of August 1666 inclusive etc.* I. Dublin, 1796.
- Kavanagh, Stanislaus O.F.M.Cap. ed. *Commentarius Rinuccinianus*, by Barnabas O'Ferrell and Daniel O'Connell, 6 vols. Dublin, 1932-43.
- Knowler, William ed. *The Earl of Strafford's letters and dispatches.* 2 vols. London, 1739.
- Knowles, Edwin B., Thomas Shelton, translator of Don Quixote in *Studies in the Renaissance.* New York, 1958.
- Lemeere, E., Essai sur l'origine et les attributions de l'Audiencier, in *Revue de l'Université de Bruxelles*, I, 1895-6, pp. 607-80.
- Ludlow, Edward, *Memoirs.* 3 vols, Vevay, 1698.
- MacGeoghegan, James, *Histoire de l'Irlande ancienne et moderne.* Paris. vol. I, 1758; vol. II, 1762; vol. III, 1763. English translation, Dublin, 1831-4.
- Matthews, David, *The Celtic Peoples and Renaissance Europe.* London, 1933.
- Meehan, C.P. *The Rise and Fall of the Franciscan Monasteries.* Dublin, 1867.
- Mooney, Canice O.F.M. 'A noble shipload', in *Irish Sword II*, Dublin, 1958.
- Morrin, James ed. *Calendar of the Patent and Close Rolls of Chancery in Ireland from the 18th to the 45th of Queen Elizabeth.* II, Dublin, London, 1862.
- Ó Cianáin, see Walsh.
- O'Donovan, John ed. *Annals of the Four Masters.* Dublin, 1848-51.
- Piot, G. J. C., *Histoire de Louvain depuis son origine jusqu'aujourd'hui. Partie I. Histoire de la ville.* Louvain, 1839.
- Pirenne, Henri, *Histoire de Belgique.* 4 vols. Brussels, 1919.
- Puteanus, Erycius, *Historiae Belgicae, Liber singularis de obsidione Lovaniensi.* MDCXXX. Antwerp, 1636.
- Relation raisonnée du siège de Louvain ainsi que de la défense . . . écrite par un témoin oculaire, traduite du latin etc.* Louvain, 1835.
- Ryckman de Betz de, ed. *Les livres de raison des Spoelberch* 1563-1875.
- Sawyer, E. ed. Winwood, Sir Ralph, *Memorial of affairs of State in the reigns of Elizabeth and James I.* 3 vol. London, 1725.



- Simms, J. G., 'Hugh Dubh O'Neill's defence of Limerick.' *Irish Sword* III, no. II. Dublin, 1957.
- Stephens, Captain John, *A new Dictionary Spanish and English etc.* London, 1726.
- Strada, Famianus S. J., *De bello Gallico decas secunda, ab initio praefecturae Alexnadri Farnesii Parmae Placentiaeque Ducis III An. 1588 usque ad annum 1590.* Antwerp, 1648.
- [Strafford, Thomas]. *Pacata Hibernia Ireland appeased and reduced . . . under the government of George Carcw.* London. 1633. Dublin, 1610.
- Studies. An Irish quarterly review.* Dublin.
- Temple, Sir John, *The Irish rebellion*, published in the year 1646. Dublin, 1724.
- Ussher, James, Archbishop of Dublin. *Whole Works of.* 17 vols. Dublin, 1847-74.
- Van der Essen, Léon, *Les Italiens en Flandre au XVIIe et au XVIIIe siècle.*
- Van Terlan, J. Eggen, *Graf Ernst von Isenburg und sein Jahrhundert.* (no place or date).
- Walsh, Micheline, *The O'Neills in Spain*, The National University, Dublin (1960)
- Walsh, Paul, ed. Ó Cianáin, Tadhg, *The Flight of the Earls*, Dublin, 1916. *The will and family of Hugh O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone.* Dublin, 1930.
- Warner, George F., ed. *The Correspondence of Sir Edward Nicholas.* 4 vols. London 1886-1920.

## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

Aiazzi.	Aiazzi, Giovanni, <i>Nunziatura in Irlanda di Monsignor Gio. Rinuccini.</i>
<i>Arch. Hib.</i>	<i>Archivium Hibernicum.</i>
Brady.	Brady, Maziere. <i>Episcopal succession in England, Scotland and Ireland.</i>
<i>Carte, Ormonde.</i>	Carte, Thomas, <i>History of the Life of James Duke of Ormonde.</i>
<i>C.S.P.</i>	<i>Calendar of State Papers.</i>
<i>C.S.P. Dom.</i>	<i>Calendar of State Papers, Domestic series.</i>
<i>C.S.P. Ire.</i>	<i>Calendar of State Papers, Ireland.</i>
<i>Commentarius.</i>	<i>Commentarius Rinuccinianus.</i>
<i>Dudley Correspondence</i>	<i>Correspondence of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester.</i>
Dunlop.	Dunlop, R. <i>Ireland under the Commonwealth.</i>
H.M.C.	Historical Manuscripts Commission.

- Knowler. Knowler, William. *The Earl of Strafford's letters and dispatches.*
- Nicholas Papers Warner, George F., *The Correspondence of Sir Edward Nicholas*
- Ó Cianáin. Ó Cianáin, Tadhg, *The Flight of the Earls.*
- Strafford. [Strafford] Thomas, *Pacata Hibernia.*
- Thurloe Papers. *The collections of the State Papers of John Thurloe.*



*An asterisk in the text indicates that a relevant note will be found under the appropriate document number in pp. 515 to 628.*

DOCUMENTS FROM THE ARCHIVES GÉNÉRALES DU  
ROYAUME, BRUSSELS

1. 1582. Feb. 8. Tournai. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to John Flaminio, Irishman, in virtue of a letter of Philip II, and in consideration of his birth and good parts, and because in order to be able to live as a Catholic he left his country and possessions, and has little means of support. EG., reg. 7, fol. 2v.
2. 1582. June 1. Beveren. Grant of two crowns monthly to John Stanihurst. EG., reg. 10, fol. 77.
3. 1585. June 1. Beveren. Grant of five crowns monthly, in addition to the twelve crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Thomas Butler, Irishman, in consideration of his services at the siege of Alost. EG., reg. 9, fol. 274v.
4. 1585. Sept. 1. Beveren. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to John P., an Irishman; has served in these States for twelve years. EG., reg. 9, fol. 177v.
5. 1586. Jan. 1. Beveren. Grant of thirty crowns monthly to Richard Stanihurst, Irishman; suffered exile from his country and possessions to be able to live as a Catholic. EG., reg. 10, fol. 127v.
6. 1586. Mar. 13. Brussels. Grant of an additional five crowns monthly to Thomas Butler, Irishman. EG., reg. 10, fol. 190v.
7. 1588. Aug. 7. Bruges. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to John Quellay, ensign of the disbanded company of Lancers of Captain Orlando Yorck; to serve with the Light Horse. EG., reg. 11, fol. 81.
8. 1588. Aug. 20. Bruges. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly to James Whiteo, Irishman; to serve in the company of Colonel William Stanley.\*
9. 1588. Sept. 10. Bruges. Grant of three crowns monthly, in addition to the twelve crowns monthly he already enjoys, thus making fifteen crowns monthly, to Hugo Daveid. EG., reg. 11, fol. 2.
10. 1588. Oct. 17. At the camp near Bergen-op-Zoom. Grants as under to the five Irish gentlemen, all brothers, in consideration of the devotion and zeal with which they have left their own country and possessions to come and serve his Majesty in these States: William de Burgo, thirty crowns monthly. David de Burgo, twenty crowns monthly. Walter de Burgo, twenty crowns monthly. John de Burgo, twenty crowns monthly. Richard de Burgo, twenty crowns monthly. To serve in the regiment of Colonel William Stanley. EG., reg. 11, fol. 45v.
11. 1588. Nov. 4. At the camp. Licence to John Daniel, Irishman, pensioner in this army, to go to Italy to fulfill a vow in honour of our Lady of Loreto, and to Rome and Spain, in which



- latter country he has his wife and children. EG., reg. 11, fol. 70.
12. 1588. Nov. 15. Brussels. Grant of an increase of ten crowns monthly in addition to the fifteen crowns monthly they already enjoy, to Thomas Worthington, Philip Woduardo, Nicholas Lagley and John Fenno, chaplains of the regiment of Colonel William Stanley. EG., reg. 11, fol. 80v.
  13. 1589. Feb. 2. Brussels. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Thomas Roncen, Irishman, who served his Majesty for some years in Italy, and has now come to continue his services in these States; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 11, fol. 128.
  14. 1589. May 7. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Edmond MacSamragan, Archbishop of Armagh and Primate of Ireland. EG., reg. 11, fol. 9.
  15. 1589. June 15. Spa. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to Walter Cuin, Irishman; to serve as and when he shall be ordered. EG., reg. 12, fol. 50v.
  16. 1589. July 20. Spa. Grant to fourteen gentlemen of the regiment of Colonel Stanley: Conmac Ros Oconos, thirty five crowns. Giraldo Fisgeralde, twenty five crowns. Giraldo Nugent, twenty five crowns. Rulin Obirne, twenty crowns. Gerod Mas Hul, twenty crowns. John Lucwood, twenty crowns. John Leynden, twenty crowns. Bartholomew Gardiner, twenty crowns. James Owgan, fifteen crowns. Denis Conor, fifteen crowns, William Cadel, fifteen crowns. Total: 285. EG., reg. 12, fol. 173v.
  17. 1589. Oct. 15. Binche. Passport for Spain, to join the fleet, to John Slatimor, Irishman. EG., reg. 12, fol. 11v.
  18. 1589. Oct. 15. Binche. Passport for Spain, on special personal business, to John de la Lay, Irish gentleman of Dudenemeand. EG., reg. 13, fol. 11v.
  19. 1589. Oct. 15. Binche. Passport for Spain, to join the fleet, To Thomas Geraldin, Irish gentleman; served his Majesty in the royal armada and was lost off Scotland, whence recently he came to these States. EG., reg. 12, fol. 12.
  20. 1589. Oct. 15. Binche. Grant of sixty crowns to John de Lacy, Irish gentleman; to pay his expenses to Spain. EG., reg. 12, fol. 12.
  21. 1589. Nov. 3. Binche. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Richard Mac Enri, Irish gentleman; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 19, fol. 64.
  22. 1589. Nov. 4. Binche. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to Andrés de Cordova y Argote, of the Order of St Augustine; "while serving with the armada last year was lost on the Irish coast, and has now come to these States; to give his services to the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 11, fol. 209v.
  23. 1589. Nov. 24. Binche. Licence for four months to John Daniel, Irishman, pensioner in this army, so that he may go to Loreto in fulfilment of a vow, and from there to Spain, where he



has his wife and children. EG., reg. 12, fol. 29.

24. 1589. Dec. 31. Binche. Grant of an alms of fifty gold crowns to Fr Miler Candal, provincial of the order of St. Augustine in Ireland, to pay his expenses to Italy. "An account has been given us of the many services which Fr Miler Candal, provincial of the order of St. Augustine in Ireland, rendered his Majesty when some ships were lost there last year; and in consideration of his good parts, and as he is in a state of need, and without the means to continue his journey to Italy". EG., reg. 12, fol. 61.
25. 1589. Dec. 31. Brussels. Free passport to Spain, or anywhere else he may wish to go, to Oliver Haquet, Irishman. EG., reg. 12, fol. 61.
26. 1590. Jan. 7. Binche. Passport to Italy to Fr Miler Candal. EG., reg. 12, fol. 63v.
27. 1590. Feb. 15. Brussels. Licence to John Daniel, Irishman. [As on 24 Nov. 1589]. EG., reg. 12, fol. 92.
28. 1590. Mar. 22. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to James Ricardo, Irishman; to serve in the regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 12, fol. 135.
29. 1590. Apr. 12. Brussels. Grant of eighteen crowns monthly, in addition to the twenty five crowns monthly he already enjoys, to John Daniel, Irishman; to serve in the regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 12, fol. 183v.
30. 1590. Apr. 26. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to John Baynam, Irishman; to serve as hitherto in the regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 12, fol. 181v.
31. 1590. May 31. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Oliver Haquet, Irishman; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 12, fol. 224.
32. 1590. June 25. Spa. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to Dermot Harrin, Irish doctor; has served for some years with the royal fleet, and has come here from Spain at his own expense to continue his services; to serve as doctor in the regiment of Colonel Stanley.\* EG., reg. 12, fol. 231.
33. 1591. Feb. 2. Brussels. Grants to be paid monthly to nineteen Irish and English men: Edmond Fitzmoris, thirty crowns. John Scherley, thirty crowns. Thomas Grienfield, twenty five crowns. James Schegan, twenty crowns. George Solker, twenty crowns. John Tippen, twenty crowns. Walter Talbot, twenty crowns. Clement Trochmorton, twenty crowns. Richard Cherrel, twenty crowns. George Plunket, twenty crowns. Richard Grene, twenty crowns. Thomas Walpoule, twenty crowns. Thomas de Franceschi, twenty crowns. James Suppel, fifteen crowns. Terreloch Macene, fifteen crowns. Denis Macarte, fifteen crowns. Patrick Cullon, fifteen crowns. William Moore, fifteen crowns. Richard Sherwood, fifteen crowns.\* EG., reg. 13, fol. 121.
34. 1591. Feb. 27. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly



- to Artur Querman, Irishman; to serve with the Light Horse. EG., reg. 13. fol. 116v.
35. 1591. Feb. 28. Brussels. Licence to William Collier, son of Herman Flenne, to go to Spain or elsewhere, as he is unfit for further service on account of his wounds. EG., reg. 13, fol. 67v.
36. 1591. Apr. 22. Brussels. Grant of 1000 gold crowns, each of the value of three florins, to Richard Stanihurst, pensioner in the army, whom his Majesty has called to Spain, "for affairs of his royal service in which he desires to employ him, and for that end has ordered that assistance be given him not only for the journey, but also to enable him to carry out certain affairs entrusted to him, which on account of their importance it is not expedient to reveal." EG., reg. 13, fol. 138.
37. 1591. Apr. 24. Brussels. Grant of a further five crowns monthly to John Stanihurst, in addition to the fifteen crowns monthly he already enjoys; to continue his service in the regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 13. fol. 138.
38. 1591. May 22. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Edward Stanley, brother of Colonel William Stanley, whose company has been disbanded. EG., reg. 13, fol. 168.
39. 1591. May 22. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to Ensign John Stanley, of the disbanded company of Captain Edward Stanley. EG., reg. 13. fol. 168.
40. 1591. May 22. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to John Petit, lieutenant of the disbanded company of Captain Edward Estanley. EG., reg. 13, fol. 168.
41. 1591. May 22. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Lieutenant Edward Greffette, of the disbanded company of Captain Edward Estanley. EG., reg. 13, fol. 168v.
42. 1591. May 22. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to William Ward, campaign-captain of the regiment of Colonel Stanley; has left the regiment and consequently is without pay. EG., reg. 13, fol. 168v.
43. 1591. May 22. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to John Guerne, who has resigned the post of quartermaster of the regiment of Colonel Stanley, and consequently is without pay. EG., reg. 13, fol. 168v.
44. 1591. Sept. 16. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Richard Stanihurst, Irish gentleman, called thither by his Majesty. EG., reg. 13, fol. 185.
45. 1591. Sept. 16. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to John Bal, Irishman; has served for some years in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 13, fol. 215v.
46. 1591. Oct. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmund Wesley, Irishman, of the company of Captain Jacomo Francisco, regiment of Colonel Stanley; his father has died, and he wishes to arrange some family affairs.\* EG., reg. 13, fol. 177v.
47. 1594. Mar. 15. Brussels. Special grant of five crowns



monthly to each of the undernamed Irishmen, of the Irish infantry, recommended by Colonel Stanley for their services to his Majesty; likewise because it is proper to reward them for their sufferings for the Catholic religion, for the sake of which they have left their country and possessions: Martin Hernigton, Rolandt Blondt, Rolan Owens, Thomas Arden, Caloo Macdomiots, Marroc Aurache.\* EG., reg. 15, fol. 6.

48. 1594. Mar. 15. Brussels. Special grant of five crowns monthly, on the same recommendation and for the same reasons as in the preceding, to six Englishmen: William Tye, William Botecques, Edward Codrington, George Amont, Thomas Berneueks and Cormac MacRory.\* EG., reg. 15, fol. 6v.

49. 1594. Aug. 16. Brussels. Grant of a dead place in the garrison at Maestricht, of the value of fifteen florins monthly, each florin of the value of twenty placas, to James Eustace, Irishman; has served his Majesty in these States in the regiment of his nation. EG., reg. 15, fol. 88v.

50. 1594. Oct. 6. Brussels. Licence to go to his home in Ireland to Ensign Hugo, Irishman, of the company of Captain Robert Bostock, regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 15, fol. 144v.

51. 1594. Oct. 14. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Ensign Patrick Dillon, of the company of Captain Patrick Giles, regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 15, fol. 164.

52. 1594. Dec. 27. Brussels. Orders to continue the payment of the monthly grant held by certain Irish, English and Scots of the regiment of Irish infantry, notwithstanding the general reduction made in August 1593:

[a] In the company of the Colonel: Ensign George Barret, twenty crowns. Robert Dier, twenty five crowns. Thomas Vothington, twenty five crowns. Henry Gervis, fifteen crowns. Nicholas Lauchlin, twenty five crowns. John Smith, twenty crowns. William Chuarre, twenty crowns. Richard Sher Vood, twenty crowns. Edmond Valentin, fifteen crowns, John Gréne, 20 crowns. William Ubart, forty crowns. William U. Bip, fifteen crowns.

[b]. The company of the lieutenant-colonel:\* Lin Oberne twenty crowns. Lieutenant Trogmorton, twenty crowns. Walter Talbot, twenty crowns. Dermot Harin, fifteen crowns. Edmond Fitzmoris, thirty crowns. Thomas Gréne, twenty five crowns. Thomas Grenfield, twenty five crowns. Edmond Halsey, twenty crowns. Ensign Dimis Connier, fifteen crowns.

[c]. In the company of Captain Bostocq: Ensign Thomas Ostanhuerts, twenty crowns. Henry Fluel, thirty crowns. Richard Burgo, fifteen crowns.

In the company of Captain Edward Stanley: Ferald fitz Gerrald, twenty five crowns.

In the company of Captain Edward Villess: John Stanihurst, twenty crowns.



In the company of Captain Lawrence Fallan: Richard Wright, twenty five crowns.

In the company of Captain Stanley: Richard Kerrel, twenty crowns, Richard Grene, twenty crowns. Francis Watz, fifteen crowns.

[d]. In the company of Captain John de la Marsella: James Gaston, fifteen crowns.

In the company of Captain Martin Meinart: Richard Aver, fifteen crowns.

In the company of Captain Paton: Tomasso de Francischi, thirty crowns. EG., reg. 15, fol. 220v.

53. 1595. Jan. 7. Brussels. Orders for a similar grant to the same, Lachlin is here written Lauchlin; Vard is U.Bard; Whip is U.Bip. EG., reg. 15, fol. 237.

54. 1595. Feb. 17. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Patrick Cherne and John Croyle, of the regiment of Colonel Stanley. E.G., reg. 15, fol. 282.

55. 1595. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to John Quenedi, of the Irish infantry.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 15, fol. 287v.

56. 1596. June 12. St Omer. Grant by the Archduke Albert of a free pardon to those soldiers of the Italian infantry, of the Irish infantry of Colonel Stanley, and of various companies of the Italian Light Horse, who in the year 1594, against the orders of their officers, had withdrawn to the town of Sichem, and later to Tirlemont, where they are at present, under pretext of obtaining their pay by mutiny.<sup>1</sup> E.G., reg. 16, fol. 104.

57. 1596. June 15. Brussels. Grant to John Claramont of the Commission of a company of Irish infantry: The Archduke Ernest, having pardoned the rebels after he had heard their grievances, had established them in Tirlemont. They had complained that although they are all Irishmen, they are under the command of Stanley, an Englishman, and they have asked to be put under the command of a man of their own nation; wherefore the Archduke Albert appoints John de Claramont captain of an Irish company, with the right to levy the said soldiers, who number 300, in the town of Tirlemont. EG., reg. 16, fol. 113.

58. 1596. Aug. 5. At the fort of Fuentes. Commission to Lieutenant Edward Geralde for a company of Irish infantry to be formed of eighty men who are at present in the castle of Granloy, and who had deserted on the occasion of the withdrawal from Stanley. Geralde has served in these States in the Light Horse and in Stanley's regiment, in which he was ensign, and lately lieutenant of a company. EG., reg. 16, fol. 163v.

59. 1596. Sept. 31 (*sic*). Brussels. Licence to leave these States, on private business, to Morgan Cavanca, Irishman, formerly lieutenant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Jacomo Francisco, of the regiment of Colonel Stanley. EG., reg. 17, fol. 16.



60. 1596. Sept. 21. Brussels. Licence to leave these States on private business to Richard de Burgo,\* Irishman, formerly pensioner in the Spanish infantry; at present serving in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 17, fol. 16.
61. 1597. Jan. 1. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to John Butler; had come from Ireland at his own expense to serve his Majesty; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 17, fol. 232.
62. 1597. Jan. 1. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Barnabas Harquot, Irishman; has come from Ireland at his own expense to serve his Majesty; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 17, fol. 232.
63. 1597. Jan. 12. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Thomas Butler, soldier of the Irish infantry of Captain John de Claramonte; was wounded in the leg and burnt in the face at the siege of Hulst. EG., reg. 17, fol. 204v.
64. 1597. Feb. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Edmund Fistmoris de Geraldino, Irish gentleman, who formerly held a grant in the Irish infantry. E.G., reg. 17, fol. 229.
65. 1597. Feb. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Lieutenant Ferdinand Donel, Irishman, to arrange the affairs of his family. EG., reg. 17, fol. 229.
66. 1598. May 10. Brussels. Orders to continue payment, without any intermission, of the grant of thirty crowns monthly held by Richard Stanihurst previous to the general reduction made in the year 1593. EG., reg. 18, fol. 68.
67. 1598. May 10. Brussels. Orders to continue payment, without any intermission, of the grant held by Walter Stanihurst<sup>1</sup> before the general reduction made in the year 1593. EG., reg. 18, fol. 68.
68. 1598. May 15. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Thomas de Goal, Irishman; has served his Majesty on various occasions and has come from Spain to continue his services with the men of Don Sancho Martinez de Leyra. EG., reg. 18, fol. 78v.
69. 1598. May 27. Brussels. Grant in aid of 400 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to Robert Bostocq, captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Stanley; "has served with distinction both at the capture of Amiens, with the men of the said regiment whom he recruited at his own cost, and upon other occasions during the defence of that city." EG., reg. 18, fol. 95v.
70. 1598. June 17. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Thomas Barri, Irish gentleman, for services rendered at Amiens; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 18, fol. 116v.
71. 1598. July 18. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly, together with the grant of thirty crowns monthly which he already enjoys, to Richard Stanihurst.\* EG., reg. 18, fol. 147v.
72. 1598. Aug. 8. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly



- to Henry Walsche; to serve in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 18, fol. 169v.
73. 1599. Mar. 8. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of fifteen crowns monthly made before the last general reduction in the year 1593 to Denis Geraldin, pensioner in the company of his nation. EG., reg. 19, fol. 30v.
74. 1599. Mar. 6. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of ten crowns monthly made before the last general reduction in the year 1593 to John Bal, Irishman, who has been a pensioner in the infantry of his nation. EG., reg. 19, fol. 31.
75. 1599. Mar. 14. Maestricht. Licence for Ireland on business to Charles Mahohier, soldier of the company of Lancers of our guard. EG., reg. 19, fol. 41.
76. 1599. Apr. 3. Ruremonde. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Thomas Stanihurst, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 19, fol. 59v.
77. 1599. June 8. Bois-le-Duc. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Thomas Macarag, lately ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain John Declaramonte; resigned the banner of the company and is now without pay. EG., reg. 19, fol. 104v.
78. 1599. June 29. Bois-le-Duc. Special grant of six crowns monthly in addition to the four crowns monthly he already enjoys, making a total of ten crowns, to Thomas Barri, Irishman, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Edward Gerardin. EG., reg. 19, fol. 125v.
79. 1599. July 20. Bois-le-Duc. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Bittor Bray, sergeant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Edward Gerardin; resigned his post and is at present without pay. EG., reg. 19, fol. 148.
80. 1599. July 30. Bois-le-Duc. Special grant of fifteen crowns monthly to Thomas Barneval, Irishman, for his services.\* EG., reg. 19, fol. 159.
81. 1600. Jan. 26. Brussels. William Fitzgerald to the Privy Council. To their Highnesses in their Privy Council. William fils Gerald, an Irish priest, represents that moved by his ardent zeal for the salvation of the souls of his neighbours, and aware of the few ways open to the Catholics of his country and of England of obtaining religious works in their own language, he has composed a book entitled *A Christian and devout exercise etc.* He therefore begs your Highnesses that it may be their good pleasure (as the book has received the approval of the censor of books at Antwerp) to grant the suppliant your licence to have the book printed by any printer he may choose.
- In margin: Let it be sent to some Father of the Society of Jesus who knows the language, to be examined, and his opinion given.
- In a different hand: In view of the opinion given, let the necessary licence be granted.\* CPE., carton 1276.
82. 1601. Apr. 9. Brussels. Grant of four crowns monthly, in



addition to the six crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Ensign John Smit, Irishman, of the company of Captain Edward Geraldin; has served for some years, and was ensign of the company of Colonel William Stanley. EG., reg. 20, fol. 14.

83. 1601. Apr. 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his house and estate, to Ensign Dorbi Densi, of the unattached company of Irish infantry of Captain Edward Geraldin. EG., reg. 20, fol. 10.
84. 1601. Apr. 10. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly, in addition to the eight crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Ensign Robert Daniel, soldier of the company of Captain Edward Geraldin; has served for sixteen years, of which eight in Spain and eight here. EG., reg. 20, fol. 11.
85. 1601. Apr. 15. Brussels. Licence for Spain for John Colman, Irishman, soldier of the castle of Ghent.\* EG., reg. 20, fol. 17v.
86. 1601. June 20. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Thomas Rocha, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 20, fol. 63.
87. 1601. June 27. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Richard Nugent, Irish gentleman; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 20, fol. 66v.
88. 1601. Nov. 3. At the camp [against Ostend]. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to John Maqueshy, Irish gentleman, who has represented the many years during which his father and several of his vassals and dependants in Ireland served against England, with the Catholic party, and lost their possessions. EG., reg. 20, fol. 123.
89. 1601. Dec. 18. Nieuport. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Ensign Thomas Bremechan; has served his Majesty many years here and in France, lately as lieutenant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Edward Geraldin. EG., reg. 20, fol. 139.
90. 1601. Dec. 28. Nieuport. Licence for Ireland on business relating to his family and property to Sergeant Vitor Bray, Irishman, of the cavalry company of Captain Juan Gamarra. EG., reg. 20, fol. 141.
91. 1602. Jan. 1. Nieuport. Grant of a dead place of the value of twelve crowns monthly to Dermot Ogmakere, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Edward Geraldin; his left arm was shot off at the siege of Ostend, by a cannon-ball. EG., reg. 20, fol. 192v.
92. 1602. Mar. 15. Nieuport. Licence for Italy, along with fifty three others, to Ensign Aeneas Lein, son of Charles, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain John de Claramonte. EG., reg. 20, fol. 197v.
93. 1602. Mar. 15. Nieuport. Licence for Italy to John Brandon, son of Edward, drummer of the company of Captain Edward Geraldin. EG., reg. 20, fol. 198v.



94. 1602. June 20. Ghent. Licence to Captain Edward Geraldin to go to Ireland, to serve his Majesty in the circumstances which may offer.\* EG., reg. 20, fol. 254v.
95. 1602. June 30. Brussels. Licence to Zierlock Mahohier, soldier of the company of Captain Edward Geraldin, to go to Ireland, to serve his Majesties in the circumstances which may offer; and similar licence to Bernard Millegan, soldier of the company of Lancers of Captain Juan de Silva. EG., reg. 20, fol. 254v.
96. 1602. June 30. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Barri, Irish gentleman of the company of German infantry of Captain Martin Heyk, regiment of Count de Barlaymont. EG., reg. 20, fol. 254v.
97. 1602. No date. June ? Brussels. Commission to Captain George de Barneval for the captaincy vacant by the departure of Captain Edward Geraldin for Ireland; has served his Majesty for twelve years in the Spanish infantry and in the infantry of his own nation, and has been ensign and lieutenant. EG., reg. 20, fol. 259.
98. 1602. July 19. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Hugo Shaghanes, Irishman, of the company of Captain George Barneval; has heard that he can serve his Majesty better there. EG., reg. 21, fol. 5.
99. 1602. July 19. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Manes Dogorton, Irishman, of the company of Captain George Barneval; has heard that he can better serve his Majesty there. EG., reg. 21, fol. 5.
100. 1602. July 23. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to John Doyn, of the company of Captain George Barneval; has heard that he can better serve his Majesty there. EG., reg. 21, fol. 9v.
101. 1602. Aug. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Riordan, of the company of Captain George Barnaval; has heard that he can better serve his Majesty there. EG., reg. 21, fol. 11.
102. 1602. Sept. 13. Diest. Licence for Ireland to Henry Walsh, Irish gentleman, soldier of the company of Captain George Barnaval. EG., reg. 21, fol. 21.
103. 1602. Oct. 25. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Oliver Wessele, sergeant of the company of Captain George Barnaval. EG., reg. 21, fol. 43.
104. 1602. Nov. 14. Ghent. Grant of a place in the castle of Antwerp of the value of four crowns monthly, with obligation to present himself at the musters of the men on active service who are attached to the Castle, to John Lorquan, soldier of the company which served under Captain Edward Geraldin; had lost his army by a cannon-ball at the siege of Ostend. EG., reg. 21, fol. 65v.
105. 1603. Feb. 33. Ghent. Licence for Spain to Ensign Thomas Stanihurst, Irishman, pensioner in the company of Captain George Barneval. EG., reg. 21, fol. 116.



106. 1603. Feb. 3. Ghent. Orders to pay, without further objection, for the years 1594-98, the grant of twelve crowns monthly made to Robert Daniel, Irishman; when travelling from Spain to Flanders to serve his Majesty, was robbed in Languedoc and lost the letters-patent which made him the said grant. Upon his arrival here on 18 Nov. 1594, orders had been issued to pay him the twelve crowns monthly until he should have procured a duplicate of the said letters, but as he has no one in Spain to help him, he has not been able to procure them. He has begged that he may be paid from the year 1594 to the year 1598, when he took service with the company of Captain John de Claramonte. EG., reg. 21, fol. 116v.
107. 1603, Feb. 12. Ghent. Orders to pay Dermot Omaghear without any intermission the four crowns monthly, the value of a dead place in the Irish infantry, which had been cancelled by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 21 June 1602. EG., reg. 21, fol. 135v.
108. 1603. Feb. 13. Ghent. Licence for Spain to William Sachnez, soldier of the company of Captain George Barnaval; has received a promise from Baron Redemont that he will send him to the Spanish coast, so that from there he may return to Ireland.\* EG., reg. 21, fol. 123.
109. 1603. Feb. 24. Ghent. Licence for Spain to John Lorquam, an Irishman; is unable to serve further as he has lost his right arm. EG., reg. 21, fol. 134.
110. 1603. Mar. 2. Ghent. Licence to Ensign Robert Daniel, of the company of Captain George Barnaval, to go from Spain and from there to Ireland, where he hopes the better to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 21, fol. 142.
111. 1603. Apr. 30. At the camp. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Darby Demsi, Irish gentleman; to serve in the company of Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 21, fol. 190.
112. 1603. June 6. Brussels. Licence for six months to go to Ireland on business to John Quenede, Irishman, soldier of the company of Captain Flud. EG., reg. 21, fol. 216.
113. 1603. June 6. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Daniel Cablet, Irishman, soldier of the company of Spanish Lancers which served under the Duke of Osuna; is totally deaf, and unable for further service. EG., reg. 21, fol. 216.
114. 1603. June 22. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Walter Sachet, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain George Barnaval; has served his Majesty for four years on different occasions, and especially at the siege of Ostend, when he reconnoitred an enemy boat thought to contain incendiary devices, and brought back from it two prisoners. EG., reg. 21, fol. 242.
115. 1603. June 25. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Dermot Macherey, Irishman, who holds a dead place in the company



- of Irish infantry of Captain George Bernaval. EG., reg. 21, fol. 232.
116. 1603. June 29. Brussels. Grant of a dead placw in the castle of Ghent, of the value of four crowns monthly, to James Min, of the company of Irish infantry which served with Captain John de Claramonte; has served in these parts for fourteen years, and having been wounded by a cannon-ball at the siege of Hulst, is not fit for further service. EG., reg. 21, fol. 235v.
117. 1603. July 29. Brussels. Passport for Ireland, his native land, to Conacio Oconhuar. EG., reg. 21, fol. 257v.
118. 1603. Aug. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Art Conrad, of the company of Captain George Barnaval. EG., reg. 21, fol. 260v.
119. 1603. Aug. 20. Antwerp. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Copinger, soldier of the company of Italian Lancers of Captain Lucas Cayro. EG., reg. 21, fol. 268v.
120. 1603. Aug. 24. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Olmedo, 6 Apr. 1603) of thirty Crowns monthly to Terence Mahoni, Irishman, son of the Baron of Carrigconlli; to serve in the Irish infantry in Flanders. EG., reg. 21, fol. 271v.
121. 1603. Aug. 27. Antwerp. Orders to pay Thomas Barri, Irishman, the grant he enjoys while serving with the company of German infantry of Captain Hazde, of the regiment of Count de Barlaymont; has been pardoned the sentence pronounced upon him for his quarrel with the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, Monsieur de Telly. EG., reg. 21, fol. 273.
122. 1603. Nov. 28. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 14 July 1603) of twelve crowns monthly to Hugo Shaguenes, Irishman; had left his own country, fleeing from the persecution by the heretics. EG., reg. 21, fol. 340v.
123. 1603. Dec. 1. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 5 July 1603) of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Cornelius Maris, Irishman; to serve henceforward in the Irish infantry in Flanders. EG., reg. 21, fol. 348.
124. 1603. Dec. 10. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Cornelius Morian, soldier of the company of Captain George Barneval; wounded in the right hand, and unable for further service. EG., reg. 21, fol. 360v.
125. 1603. Dec. 11. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter from Philip III (Valladolid, 27 Sept. 1603) of fifty crowns monthly to Captain Edward Geraldino; to serve about the person of the most serene Archduke Albert. EG., reg. 21, fol. 362.
126. 1603. Dec. 14. Brussels. "Be it known that whereas report has been made to us of the good services rendered by some soldiers of the Irish infantry of Captain George Berneval at the siege of Ostend, especially by those mentioned below, how in particular on the day the enemy set fire to the platform\* they put forward every effort and diligence in overcoming the flames; as it is proper



to honour them, that they may continue their services with even greater good will, we have thought well to reward each of them as follows; to Ensign John Esmite, a special grant of four crowns monthly; to John Conor, a special grant of two crowns monthly; to Humphrey Plunquet, the same; to William Frayn, a special grant of two crowns monthly; to John Geraldin, a special grant of two crowns monthly. The said awards to be paid from the date of these present." EG., reg. 21, fol. 374.

- 127.** 1605. Jan. 17. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Irish infantry of Captain Lawrence Barnaval, on account of the small number of men; the English and Scots of the company to be sent to their own national companies, and the Irish to theirs.\* EG., reg. 22, fol. 3v.
- 128.** 1605. Jan. 28. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 26 Nov. 1604) of fifteen crowns monthly to James Veedloo, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his services in Ireland, and of his sufferings and losses in order to live in the holy Catholic faith. EG., reg. 21, fol. 25v.
- 129.** 1605. Jan. 29. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 27 April 1605) of fifteen crowns monthly to Thadeus Macdonel, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 22, fol. 28.
- 130.** 1605. Feb. 15. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign John Standley, who served with the company, now disbanded, of Captain Lawrence Barnaval; to serve in the English infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 54v.
- 131.** 1605. Feb. 19. Brussels. Licence to ten English soldiers, who had served with the Irish company of Captain Lawrence Barnaval, to return to England.\* EG., reg. 22, fol. 59v.
- 132.** 1605. Feb. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Omalle, soldier of the company of Captain Alexander Eustacio. EG., reg. 22, fol. 62v.
- 133.** 1605. Feb. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Dermot Odonenen, of the company of Captain Alexander Eustacio; to Ensign Lawrence Mallon, of the company of Captain Lawrence Barnaval; and to Con Mac Ros, pensioner in the company of Captain George Barnaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 62v.
- 134.** 1605. Feb. 23. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 8 Apr. 1604) of twenty crowns monthly to Charles Carti; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 22, fol. 65v.
- 135.** 1605. Feb. 23. Brussels. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 26 Nov. 1604) to Walter Hacquet; to serve in the Irish infantry; has represented to us that he served in the wars in Ireland, and also his sufferings



and losses in order to be able to live in the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 22, fol. 66.

136. 1605. Feb. 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Hu, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Alexander Eustacio. EG., reg. 22, fol. 71.
137. 1605. Feb. 26. Brussels. Licence for Scotland to Donoch Na Calen, Scot; has served in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Lawrence Barnaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 71.
138. 1605. Mar. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmond Fismauricis, soldier of the company of Captain George Bernaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 74v.
139. 1605. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmund Geraldin, soldier of the company of Captain George Barnaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 74v.
140. 1605. Mar. 13. Brussels. Pay of ten crowns monthly to Davit Suton, Irishman, to serve as chaplain in the company of Captain Alexander Eustacio. EG., reg. 22, fol. 93v.
141. 1605. Mar. 13. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Ventosilla, 22 Oct. 1604) of twenty four crowns monthly to James Eustacio, Irishman; for his services in Flanders. EG., reg. 22, fol. 93v.
142. 1605. Mar. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Sergeant Michael Maxum; has served in the company of Captain Lawrence Barnaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 95v.
143. 1605. Apr. 2. Brussels. Commission as captain of a company of 200 men to William Wals, Irish gentleman, who has come to this country with 60 men recruited by him in Ireland at his own cost.\* EG., reg. 22, fol. 120v.
144. 1605. Apr. 28. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Vitor Bray, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 216.
145. 1605. May 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Ensign Maurice Geraldino, of the company of Captain George Barnaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 152.
146. 1605. May 9. Brussels. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Thomas Preston; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 147.
147. 1605. May 19. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Cornelius Omulrian, who holds a dead place in the castle of Antwerp. EG., reg. 22, fol. 108v.
148. 1605. June 19. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly, in addition to the eight crowns monthly he already enjoys, to John Quenedi; to serve as hitherto in the Irish infantry, in the company of Captain George Berneval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 209v.
149. 1605. June 21. Brussels. Licence to David Nelis, Irishman, soldier of the company of mounted carabineers of Captain Bartholomew Sanchez Pardo, commissary-general of the Light

Horse of this army, to go to Spain to obtain from the English representative there the restoration of property by the King of England. EG., reg. 22, fol. 213v.

150. 1605. June 26. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Maurice Carney, of the company of Captain George Berneval; has lost his right leg and been wounded in the hand, and is not able for further service.\* EG., reg. 22, fol. 221.
151. 1605. July 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Patrick Oconor, of the company of Captain Alexander Eustacio; was wounded at the siege of Ostend, and is unable for further service. EG., reg. 22, fol. 242v.
152. 1605. July 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Quelly, of the company of Captain George Berneval; has been wounded, and is unable for further service. EG., reg. 22, fol. 270v.
153. 1605. Aug. 4. Brussels. Orders to pay henceforward to John Quenedy, of the company of Captain George Barnaval, sixteen crowns monthly in the German infantry, with which he will serve in future; instead of twelve crowns monthly which he enjoys at present in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 276v.
154. 1605. Sept. 22. Brussels. Grant of thirty crowns monthly to Captain Jenquin Vissumes; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 323v.
155. 1605. Sept. 28. Brussels. Grant of thirty crowns monthly to Richard Nugencio, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; report having been made to us of his birth and good parts. EG., reg. 22, fol. 333.
156. 1605. Oct. 2. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 3 Oct. 1604) of four crowns monthly to Morgan Macbrien; to serve in the Irish infantry; has suffered in his own country for the Catholic cause.\* EG., reg. 22, fol. 344.
157. 1605. Oct. 6. Brussels. Grant of five crowns monthly, in addition to the thirty crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Captain Jenquin Vissumens; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 340v.
158. 1605. Oct. 6. Binche. Grant of sixteen crowns monthly to Redmund Dalton; to serve in the Irish infantry; report having been made to us of his birth and good parts. EG., reg. 22, fol. 346.
159. 1605. Oct. 6. Binche. Grant of sixteen crowns monthly to Redmund Alora; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 347.
160. 1605. Oct. 6. Binche. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Henry Pulchet; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 349v.
161. 1605. Oct. 6. Binche. Special grant of an increase of four crowns monthly, in addition to the six crowns monthly he already enjoys, to John Terguol, soldier of the company of Irish infantry



of Captain George Bernaval. EG., reg. 22, fol. 351v.

- 162.** 1605. Oct. 6. Binche. Special grant of an increase of four crowns monthly, in addition to the six crowns monthly he already enjoys, to David de la Rocha, of the company of Captain George Bernaval; to serve henceforward in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 22, fol. 354.
- 163.** 1605. Oct. 16. Binche. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of eighteen crowns monthly to Gelasius Suliban, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 357v.
- 164.** 1605. Oct. 17. Binche. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of four crowns monthly to Stephen Aliag, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 358.
- 165.** 1605. Oct. 17. Binche. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of fifteen crowns monthly to Finin Carti, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 358.
- 166.** 1605. Oct. 22. Binche. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of four crowns monthly to Denis Carti, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the wars in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 359.
- 167.** 1605. Oct. 22. Binche. Special grant, in virtue of a letter Monthly of Philip III (Lerma, 2 Sept. 1605) of four crowns to Maurice MacMortagh, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in the wars in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 360.
- 168.** 1605. Nov. 4. Binche. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III, Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of six crowns monthly to Denis Calechan; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the wars in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 365.
- 169.** 1605. Nov. 4. Binche. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of six crowns monthly to Maurice Longe; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the wars in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 365v.
- 170.** 1605. Nov. 10. Binche. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Tordesillas, 3 Mar. 1605) of an increase of ten crowns monthly, in addition to the fifty crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Richard Stanihurst, Irishman; to serve as hitherto about the person of the Archduke; "has served for many years in Flanders and Spain, as it is more than twenty four years since he has been an exile from his own country in order to devote



himself to my service." EG., reg. 22, fol. 370.

171. 1605. Nov. 28. Brussels. [a]. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of twelve crowns monthly to Dermot Carti; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause.  
[b]. Likewise orders for a grant, under the same date and by authority of a letter of his Majesty, of twelve crowns monthly to Finni Omahoni; to serve in the Irish infantry.  
[c]. Likewise a special grant of six crowns monthly to James Geraldino; the same to Daniel Omahon; a special grant of four crowns to Raymond Yllan and Bernard Cullan; a grant of twelve crowns to Cornelius OMahun; a special grant of two crowns monthly to Thomas Omahun; a special grant of four crowns to Thomas Raymundo, William de la Rocha and John Ciarna. EG., reg. 22, fol. 388.
172. 1605. Dec. 2. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of twelve crowns monthly to Denis Bathe, Irish gentleman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has represented to us his services and losses in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 396.
173. 1605. Dec. 2. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Olmedo, 22 Sept. 1605) of pay of twenty crowns monthly to Henry Oneill, son of Onell the Earl. EG., reg. 22, fol. 399v.
174. 1605. Dec. 3. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of eighteen crowns monthly to Bernardine Doniel; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 399.
175. 1605. Dec. 4. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of fifty crowns monthly to Con Oconoi Fali, Irish gentleman; to serve in the army of the Archduke shall decide; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 22, fol. 398v.
176. 1605. Dec. 11. Brussels. Appointment of William Barri, Irish priest, to serve as chaplain in the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Henry Oneill, with pay of twelve crowns monthly. EG., reg. 22, fol. 407v.
177. 1605. Dec. 14. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Richard Mauris, Irishman. EG., reg. 22, fol. 410.
178. 1605. Dec. 14. Brussels. Commission to Thomas Preston, of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, as captain of a company of Irish infantry which he has recruited at his own expense, and with which he has come from Ireland. EG., reg. 22, fol. 412v.
179. 1605. Dec. 15. Brussels. Commission to Jenquin Visumuns as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be formed for the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. Pay to be granted from 1 February following.



Similar commission to Henry Hagan, Miler Maconel, Thomas Barri, George de la Hid, and Thomas de San Lorenço. EG., reg. 22, fol. 413.

180. 1605. Dec. 18. Brussels. Commission to Captain Edward Geraldin as major of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill; has served for seventeen years in these countries, eight years as a soldier, ensign and lieutenant, six years as captain of the Irish infantry, and three years as a pensioner attached to the person of the Archduke; distinguished himself at the siege of Cambrai, the siege of Rheinberg, and the siege of Ostend; was wounded in both legs at the taking of Manlin, and in the encounter with the enemy on 2 July last was wounded and made prisoner. EG., reg. 22, fol. 418.
181. 1605. Dec. 22. Brussels. Commission to John Torquel as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., 22, fol. 427.
182. 1605. Dec. 23. Brussels. Appointment of Fr Hugo Cavello to be preacher to the army. EG., reg. 22, fol. 425v.
183. 1605. Dec. 23. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Maurice Douvam, Irishman; has served for twenty one years in these parts, in the Light Horse and in the infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 63.
184. 1606. Jan. 2. Brussels. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly to Christopher Ruperforti, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 22 Dec. 1605); to serve in the Irish infantry; "It has been represented to us that he served in the gallies in Ireland, and has undergone many sufferings and losses in order to live in our holy Catholic faith."\* EG., reg. 23, fol. 105.
185. 1606. Jan. 3. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary grant of thirty crowns due to the companies formed for the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 18v.
186. 1606. Jan. 13. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Ensign Derbi Grenon, Irishman, hitherto attached to the company of English infantry of Captain Jaxon, regiment of the Earl Thomas of Arundel; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 72.
187. 1606. Jan. 14. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of twelve crowns monthly to Cornelius Oloer, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 73.
188. 1606. Jan. 14. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of six crowns monthly to Charles Nauricio, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 33, fol. 73.
189. 1606. Jan. 14. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of six crowns monthly to

- P<sup>o</sup>. Vels, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 73v.
190. 1606. Jan. 14. Brussels. Grant of eighteen crowns monthly, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) to P<sup>o</sup> Brenagh, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 74v.
191. 1606. Jan. 14. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of six crowns monthly to Henry Balton, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 74.
192. 1606. Jan. 26. Brussels. Grant of an increase of pay of thirty two crowns monthly, in addition to the two hundred and twenty crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 83.
193. 1606. Jan. 28. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of a dead place of the value of four crowns monthly to Philip Macride, Irishman; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 94v.
194. 1606. Jan. 29. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 3 Aug. 1605) of fifteen crowns monthly to Eugenio Riano, Irish gentleman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 92v.
195. 1606. Jan. 30. Brussels. Commission as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to Arturo Oneill, cousin of Colonel Henry Oneill; he has assembled seventy of the men, and wishes to have his commission in order to be able to recruit the rest.\* EG., reg. 23, fol. 95.
196. 1606. Feb. 1. Brussels. Grant of ten crowns monthly to Edmond Oqqueli, to help him to continue his studies at Louvain; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 105v.
197. 1606. Feb. 3. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to John de Quenedi, soldier of the company of Colonel Henry Onell. EG., reg. 23, fol. 102.
198. 1606. Feb. 5. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Sergeant Manus Odohort; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 118.
199. 1606. Feb. 6. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 6 Dec. 1605) of eight crowns monthly to Charles Conor, Irishman, and also his ordinary place in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 109v.
200. 1606. Feb. 7. Brussels. Appointment of Edmond Odonoch, Irish priest, to serve as chaplain of one of the companies of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, with pay of twelve crowns



monthly; "has served as chaplain for some years, in the administration of the holy sacraments and the other duties of his profession, in his Majesty's fleets and in Spain." EG., reg. 23, fol. 119v.

201. 1606. Feb. 9. Brussels. Grant of 10 crowns monthly to Hugo Obryn, Irish priest; to serve with the army; has represented that he has been occupied in some affairs of his Majesty. EG., reg. 23, fol. 118v.
202. 1606. Feb. 9. Brussels. Commission to Nicholas Erlens as drum-major of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 120v.
203. 1606. Feb. 15. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Denis Fildo, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 134v.
204. 1606. Feb. 16. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for one month, to Captain Hugo Mostin, of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneil. EG., reg. 23, fol. 133v.
205. 1606. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Alin Magdul, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 139-139v.
206. 1606. Feb. 21. Brussels. Commission to John Maxi as one of the adjutants of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneil, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 23, fol. 149v.
207. 1606. Feb. 23. Brussels. Commission to Eugenio Oneill as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneil. vacant owing to the departure of Captain Hugo Mostin for Spain; "having consideration of your birth, and of the zeal with which you have come from Ireland to serve his Majesty in these parts." EG., reg. 23, fol. 151v.
208. 1606. Feb. 24. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Burgos, 13 Aug. 1605) of twelve crowns monthly to Daniel Molmoy, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of "his services and losses in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause." EG., reg. 23, fol. 153.
209. 1606. Feb. 28. Brussels. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Walter de San Miguel; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 161.
210. 1606. Feb. 28. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Walter Butler; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 160v.
211. 1606. Feb. 28. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Con Oneill; to serve in the Irish infantry; "relation having been made to us of the birth and good parts of Con Oneill, and of his zeal to serve his Majesty in the said army". EG., reg. 23, fol. 161v.
212. 1606. Feb. 28. Brussels. Grants to the following men of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill:  
[a]. In the company of the colonel: John Butler, grant of



twenty five crowns monthly. Philip O Reli, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Thadeus O Sullivan, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Patrick Daniel, special grant of twelve crowns monthly. Con O Muloghlyn, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Richard Hay, special grant of six crowns monthly.

[b]. In the company of Captain Maurice Geraldine: David Eustas, grant of twenty five crowns monthly.

[c]. In the company of Captain William Darsi; Gerard Nugent, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Maurice Oconor, special grant of eight crowns monthly.

[d]. In the company of Captain Thomas Preston: Redmund O Hanlon, 10 crowns monthly.

[e]. In the company of Captain Eugenio Onell: Redmundo de Burgo, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Total: 140 crowns. [sic]. EG., reg. 23, fol. 162v.

213. 1606. Mar. 1. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Thomas Geraldin; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth and good parts. EG., reg. 23, fol. 167.
214. 1606. Mar. 8. Brussels. Grant of five crowns monthly to Murgan Colan, Irishman; to serve as chief surgeon of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 228.
215. 1606. Mar. 12. Brussels. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Denis Fullan, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; EG., reg. 23, fol. 205v.
216. 1606. Mar. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Gerald Barry, of the company of Captain Hugo Mostin, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill; was wounded in the left hand and is not able for further service. EG., reg. 23, fol. 202.
217. 1606. Mar. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Trant, of the company of Captain Hugo Mostin, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill; wounded in the right arm, and not able for further service. EG., reg. 23, fol. 202.
218. 1606. Mar. 20. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to Fr David Queano, Irishman, of the Order of St Bernard, in consideration of his learning, good parts, and of his Majesty's letter; to serve with the army as shall be ordered. EG., reg. 23, fol. 205.
219. 1606. Mar. 21. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Ampudia, 21 Jan. 1605) of four crowns monthly to John Colman, a wounded Irishman; to serve in the garrison at Lierre. EG., reg. 23, fol. 216.
220. 1606. Mar. 20. Brussels. Commission to Ensign James Garland, of the company of Captain Paul Redico, as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, vacant by the death of Captain George Barnaval; has served for nineteen years in these parts, twelve as a soldier and the other six as ensign; has distinguished himself on all occasions, especially during the siege of Ostend where he was wounded. EG., reg. 23, fol. 216v.



221. 1606. Apr. 5. Brussels. Grant of the continuation of the allowance of thirty crowns monthly held by Thomas Leingh, pensioner in the company of Colonel Henry Oneill; to serve the banner of the said company. EG., reg. 23, fol. 218.
222. 1606. Apr. 12. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Ampudia, 21 Jan. 1606) of twenty crowns monthly to Cornelius Machaliph, Irishman; to serve as pensioner in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 250v.
223. 1606. Apr. 12. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Ampudia, 21 Jan. 1606) of eight crowns monthly to Edmond Thomas Gerardino, in consideration of his services in Flanders and Ireland; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 247v.
224. 1606. Apr. 15. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to Gerardo Nugent, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 246v.
225. 1606. Apr. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Richard Vitus; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 248.
226. 1606. Apr. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on account of his infirmities, to John Daniel, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 248v.
227. 1606. Apr. 20. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Denis Mahon; to serve as pensioner in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth and good parts. EG., reg. 23, fol. 250.
228. 1606. Apr. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Robert Artur; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 250v.
229. 1606. Apr. 20. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to John Jordan; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 252.
230. 1606. Apr. 20. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to P<sup>o</sup> Preston; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 252.
231. 1606. Apr. 29. Brussels. Licence to William Barry, chaplain of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Walter Daleyt, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, to go to our Lady of Loreto in fulfilment of a vow. EG., reg. 23, fol. 262v.
232. 1606. May 10. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Cornelius O Keyli; to serve as pensioner in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth and good parts. EG., reg. 23, fol. 286.
233. 1606. May 10. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Hugo Oreali, Irishman. EG., reg. 23, fol. 286v.
234. 1606. May 13. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to John Barret. EG., reg. 23, fol. 286v.

235. 1606. May 19. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Edmond Moro; to serve as pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 290
236. 1606. May 26. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Walter Carri; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 295.
237. 1606. May 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Guin, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Arturo Oneill, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill; is wounded in the left leg and unable for further service. EG., reg. 23, fol. 296v.
238. 1606. May 27. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to John Bathe; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 296v.
239. 1606. May 27. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to James Fitz Harris; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 296v.
240. 1606. May 27. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to James Butler; to serve in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 23, fol. 296v.
241. 1606. May 29. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Ampudia, 22 Jan, 1606) of four crowns monthly to Dermot Mecaliph, Irishman; to serve in the Spanish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 297.
242. 1606. June 2. Brussels. Grant of thirty four crowns monthly to Captain Jenquin Vissumuns; to serve in the Irish infantry. "On account of the difficulties met with in England against the recruiting of the Irish infantry lately decided upon for the service of his Majesty in his army, we have ordered that this recruiting is to be stopped, and that pay shall be assigned to the captains who had been chosen to carry it out, to enable them to serve in the meantime as occasion may offer; and as Captain Jenquin Vissumuns is one of these etc."
- In the same manner, grant to Captain Thomas San Lorenzo of thirty crowns monthly; to Captain Henry Geraldine, twenty five crowns monthly; to Captain Neilan Omulloaghlyn, twenty five crowns monthly; to Captain John Conor, twenty five crowns monthly; to Captain Thomas Barri, twenty five crowns monthly; to Captain George de la Hid, twenty five crowns monthly; to Captain Miler Maconel, twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 23, fol. 304v.
243. 1606. June 9, Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Florence Carti; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 317v.
244. 1606. June 9. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Edmond Odea; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 317v.
245. 1606. June 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Dermot



Omaer, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain James Garland.\* EG., reg. 23, fol. 317.

246. 1606. June 17. Brussels. Commission to Salaman Geraldin as quarter-master of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 329v.
247. 1606. June 18. Brussels. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly to Florence Carti; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth, and of his services to his Majesty both in Ireland and in these parts. EG., reg. 23, fol. 329.
248. 1606. June 21. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Nicholas Nugent; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 23, fol. 329.
249. 1606. June 22. Brussels. Commission to Robert de Assiliers as judge-advocate of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 340v.
250. 1606. June 22. Brussels. Pay of ten crowns monthly to Nicholas Brae; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain William Barret, of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 348v.
251. 1606. June 26. Brussels. Secretary Prats to the Archduke Albert, "This morning, as the Marquis Spinola, Juan de Mancicidor the Inspector-General, and Count Henry Oneill were together in the antechamber of your most serene Highness, the Marquis called me and told me that the Earl had told them of your intention that the forty three Irishmen recently arrived from Spain by way of France should be enrolled in the service, and be sent to the place where the Irish regiment is stationed. In compliance with this he had come here of his own accord, as it seemed to all of them (under correction of your Highness) that it would be better that the men should be quartered near Arras, and there await the arrival of the others, whom they expect to the number of 400. In this way the men would not be lost, as they would be if they were sent to the regiment in the manner directed. As I had not an occasion to bring this to the notice of your Highness this morning, and cannot do so this evening, I do so now by this note, and await the orders of your Highness."
- In margin, in the hand of the Archduke: Arrange to speak with me about this tomorrow morning. EA., reg. 365, fol. 29.
252. 1606. July 5. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1606) of thirty five crowns monthly to Walter Butler, Irishman; to serve as pensioner in the Irish regiment; has served in his own country in the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 370v.
253. 1606. July 6. Brussels. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 22 Dec. 1604) to Cornelius Quelli; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his good parts, of his service during the Irish war, and of his

- sufferings and losses in order to live in the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 23, fol. 372.
254. 1606. July 10. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of fifteen crowns monthly to Bernard Reyli, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 375.
255. 1606. July 17. Brussels. Orders that Thomas Lodgies, doctor of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, is to serve henceforward with the three English companies. EG., reg. 23, fol. 384.
256. 1606. July 19. Brussels. Commission to Thadeus Carti, Irish nobleman, as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, which he wishes to recruit for the service of his Majesty. EG., reg. 23, fol. 285v.
257. 1606. July 22. Brussels. Commission to Neland Omolcaghlin as captain of a company of Irish infantry which he is to raise; has distinguished himself on all occasions during his service in these parts, particularly at the siege of Ostend, where he was twice wounded, and during the last campaign. EG., reg. 23, fol. 391.
258. 1606. July 26. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of four crowns monthly to Alonso Dasuni; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the wars in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 390v.
259. 1606. July 29. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1606)<sup>1</sup> of twelve crowns monthly to P<sup>o</sup>. Laci, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 393.
260. 1606. July 29. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 22 Dec. 1604) of six crowns monthly to Thomas Murca, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in Ireland against the heretics. EG., reg. 23, fol. 393v.
261. 1606. July 29. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 21 Mar. 1604) of twenty crowns monthly to Robert Daniel; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served for sixteen years in these parts, of which seven years in the fleet, and nine in Flanders. EG., reg. 23, fol. 394.
262. 1606. Aug. 1. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of ten crowns monthly to John Burk, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; had served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 395.
263. 1606. Aug. 20. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 22 Sept. 1604) of four crowns monthly to Malachy Riegan; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the

<sup>1</sup>Sic, an error for 1605.



- wars in Ireland against the heretics. EG., reg. 23, fol. 423.
- 264.** 1606. Aug. 20. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of six crowns monthly to Malachy Ofallan; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the wars in Ireland against the heretics. EG., reg. 23, fol. 423v.
- 265.** 1606. Aug. 22. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of thirty crowns monthly to John Raymund de Burgo, Irish gentleman,\* to serve in the Irish infantry; had served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 23, fol. 407v.
- 266.** 1606. Aug. 22. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 6 July 1605) of twenty crowns monthly, including a previous grant of fifteen crowns monthly, in these same States, to William Sagnes, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in Flandres and elsewhere. EG., reg. 23, fol. 408.
- 267.** 1606. Aug. 22. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 26 Nov. 1604) of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Roger Macdermod, Irishman; has represented that he served in the Irish wars, and also his sufferings and losses in order to be able to live in the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 23, fol. 409.
- 268.** 1606. Aug. 22. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Dermot Hullacayn; to serve as chaplain of one of the companies of the regiment of Colonel John Oneil. EG., reg. 23, fol. 410.
- 269.** 1606. Aug. 29. Brussels. Grant of a dead place, of the value of four crowns monthly, to Cornelius Mulrian, of the company of Captain Denis Garlo, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 23, fol. 416v.
- 270.** 1606. Aug. 29. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 22 Dec. 1604) of four crowns monthly to Macon Driscoll; to serve in the Irish infantry; served in the wars in Ireland against the heretics. EG., reg. 23, fol. 423v.
- 271.** 1606. Sept. 4. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Valladolid, 22 Dec. 1604) of four crowns monthly to Bernard Quilan, Irishman; served in the wars against the heretics in Ireland; to serve in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 23, fol. 420v.
- 272.** 1607. July 26. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Thomas Masdun, of the company of Captain Walter Dalhut, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 24, fol. 1.
- 273.** 1607. July 26. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Thomas Lang, of the company of Captain Mauricio Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 1.
- 274.** 1607. July 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Matthew De laid, of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoid, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 4.
- 275.** 1607. July 27. Brussels. Licence for England to William



Perceval, of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 4.

276. 1607. July 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Edmond Oflame, soldier of the company of Captain Walter de la Hide, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 6.
277. 1607. Aug. 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Robert Daniel, formerly captain of a company of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 7v.
278. 1607. Aug. 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to William Vales, formerly captain of a company of Irish infantry; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 7v.
279. 1607. Aug. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Walter Butler, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 10v.
280. 1607. Aug. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Florence Carti, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 11v.
281. 1607. Aug. 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Daniel Oquillin, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain William Darsi. EG., reg. 24, fol. 16.
282. 1607. Aug. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to Tully O Conrrey, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thomas Stanihurst,\* regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 19.
283. 1607. Aug. 9. Brussels. Licence to go to Paris, for treatment of an incurable disease, to Gulari Tuli, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Walter de la Hid, and to Marcus Reis of the company of Captain Thomas Stanihurst. EG., reg. 24, fol. 19.
284. 1607. Aug. 11. Brussels. Licence to Eugenio Omalli. of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Stanihurst. Purpose not stated. EG., reg. 24, fol. 20v.
285. 1607. Aug. 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Philip Cusaq, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 21v.
286. 1607. Aug. 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Dionisio Brin,\* of the company of Captain Eugenio Oneill, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 23v.
287. 1607. Aug. 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Arthur Gal Vey, of the company of Captain James Garland, regiment of Colonel Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 23v.
288. 1607. Aug. 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Roch, of the company of Captain Thomas Stanihurst, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 23v.
289. 1607. Aug. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Raynal Macdonel, of the company of Captain Walter de la Hid. EG., reg. 24, fol. 26.
290. 1607. Aug. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Dermot Grenan, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill; to



Thomas Geraldin of the same company; and to Cormac Guire,\* of the company of Captain Thomas Stanihurst. All of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 26v.

291. 1607. Aug. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business to George Tathe, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, and to Thomas Clerque, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 24, fol. 28.
292. 1607. Aug. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Moris Long, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 31v.
293. 1607. Aug. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edward Eustacio, of the company of Captain Walter Dal Heyd. EG., reg. 24, fol. 35v.
294. 1607. Aug. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Hugh O Coyn, of the company of Captain Walter Dalheyd. EG., reg. 24, fol. 35v.
295. 1607. Aug. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Ofinala, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 24, fol. 35v.
296. 1607. Aug. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Vit, of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 24, fol. 35v.
297. 1607. Sept. 4. Brussels. Grant of 500 crowns to Captain Thomas Preston, of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, for expenses incurred, by order of Count de la Villa Medina, his Majesty's ambassador in England, in recruiting and bringing over a company of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 40v.
298. 1607. Sept. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Redmund Barri, of the company of Captain Cornelius Driscol. EG., reg. 24, fol. 41.
299. 1607. Sept. 10. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of fifteen crowns monthly to Nulario Tuly and Marcos Reys, which was suspended by the licence given to them to go to Paris, as they have been cured and will serve henceforward with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 43v.
300. 1607. Sept. 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Odoela, of the company of Captain Thomas Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 47v.
301. 1607. Sept. 15. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Robert Batheo, in consideration of his birth; to serve as pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 53v.
302. 1607. Oct. 18. Binche. Commission to Thomas de San Lorenzo as captain of the company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Captain William Darsi; has served well in these States for some time past, and especially during the last campaign. EG., reg. 24, fol. 68v.
303. 1607. Oct. 20. Brussels. Orders to cancel the grant of six crowns monthly held by Anna Magin, Irishwoman, as she will be paid henceforward in Galicia. EG., reg. 24, fol. 68v.
304. 1607. Nov. 1. Binche. The Archduke Albert to Jean



Richardot, President of the Council. Your last letter presented to us the proposals made by the [English] ambassador about the coming of the Earl of Tyrone and others to this country, and stated that the Earls had already passed through Arras, Douai and Valenciennes, and should soon be at Brussels. The ambassador likewise wished that you should make known to us the request he has presented, very properly if he had orders to convey such a message to you. As it is evident that he will return to hear our answer, you may tell him that we neither can be nor feel obliged to refuse such a person the entrance to our States, which are open to all; and that we do not understand that we are under a greater obligation to refuse him entrance, or to oblige him to leave when once he may have come in without our knowledge, than the King of France was, from whose country we hear he is arriving. This is what you will tell the ambassador should he speak to you again of the matter. As regards the Earl, we will communicate whatever it may seem well to determine.\* EA., liasse 1906.

305. 1607. Nov. 9. Brussels. Commission to John Rath, on the recommendation of the Earl of Tyrone and the Earl of Tyrconnell, as captain of a company of Irish infantry; "a company of Irish infantry, pikemen, to be formed of the men of that nation who have recently come from Ireland in the train of the Earls, and of other men who shall join the company, with which you will serve in the regiment of the same nation which is under the command of Colonel Henry O'Neill."\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 78v.
306. 1607. Nov. 14. Binche. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly to Nicholas Bray, hitherto chaplain in the Irish infantry, for the spiritual services he rendered to the Irish and English soldiers invalided in the hospital at Malines.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 24, fol. 81.
307. 1607. Nov. 21. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert.\*

"Your Highness's letter of the 30th of last month was delivered to me by the last ordinary courier, and I have since made known its contents to the King of Great Britain. The King spoke to me afterwards at great length about the withdrawal of the Earl of Tyrone, and said he regretted to see that all the treasonable actions against himself were hatched in our country, and that the traitors were well received there, and made much of; in particular, that preparations had been made for the reception of this traitor Tyrone (so he called him) who had conspired against the government of Ireland. He alledged also that Hugh Owen had returned there, and with a bigger grant than before; also Stanley and Fr Baldwin, both of whom he named with epithets. I told him that as regards the said Father, he knew that your Highness had no jurisdiction over him, to imprison him; that the King knew what had happened, and that both Baldwin and Stanley were enlarged with his consent; that as regards Hugh Owen, I had offered his Majesty on behalf of your Highness to have him tried after his



long imprisonment, if his Majesty had been pleased to submit the charges against him, and that for lack of these he had been released, according to the laws of the country. As for the grant which Owen enjoys, or the increase of it, he had obtained this in Spain, apparently through the influence of some Minister favourable to him, in the usual manner in which such things are asked for; and this in no way concerns your Highness.

"As for the Earl of Tyrone, I said that I believed firmly, and that even his Majesty had the same idea, that he had intended to go to Spain, and from there to Rome, and that only by chance of the winds had he landed in France, and so taken his route through Flanders; that it was certain your Highness must have received him as a refugee for the sake of the Catholic religion, and not as a traitor; for if he is such, your Highness is completely ignorant of the fact.

Whereupon he made much discourse to me about the withdrawal of Tyrone, and the favours he had done him; yet nevertheless he was a traitor, and had been guilty of treason, and had plotted to change the whole situation in Ireland; that as for religion, he has never once been sought after, or constrained to take the oath, or go to church; that he had been accompanied by his priest, and had been allowed to return with him; that the laws of England are not enforced except in the towns, where the English are in authority, and that gentlemen who are in the country are often free from them; so that the pretext of religion which he advances is false; but as he had to come to this Court, and knew that he was guilty, and that his treason had already been discovered, he did not dare to come; and that no prince who was informed of the truth should receive and still less cherish such traitors. He himself did not receive them into his kingdom, at least not those who had conspired against their Prince.

"I answered that I was not aware that he had received any such since his accession to the Throne, but that I was well aware that many such came here in the time of the late Queen, and are here still, but that none the less I would inform your Highness of what his Majesty had said. And so I took my leave, after congratulating him, however, on his return to this city; and I condoled with him upon the loss of his young daughter, as I had done at the beginning." EA., reg. 365, fol. 191.

308. 1607. Nov. 24. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly upon the castle of Antwerp, as from October last, to Catalina Geraldina, sister of the Earl of Desmond,\* who died in prison in London for his devotion to the Catholic faith and the service of his Majesty; she is herself an exile for the same cause, and all her estate has been confiscated. EG., reg. 24, fol. 85.

309. 1607. Nov. 29. Brussels. Licence for England to Sergeant James Dum, of the company of Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 84v.



- 310.** 1607. Nov. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Edward Sherle, of the company of Captain Mauricio Geraldin. EG., reg. 24, fol. 84v.
- 311.** 1607. Dec. 8. Brussels. Orders for the payment of the ordinary grant of thirty crowns due to the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscoll, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 91.
- 312.** 1607. Dec. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign P<sup>o</sup>. Geraldine, of the company of Captain Mauricio Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 100v.
- 313.** 1608. Jan. 10. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. "Notwithstanding all this I have heard from a good source that Secretary Cecil, without the knowledge of the Council, has so primed the King that he has had instructions sent to the deputies in Holland, that when peace is made he will enter into an offensive and defensive alliance with the States to safeguard the peace; and a well informed person tells me that the reason for this change must be the fact that they see that the affairs of the Earl of Tyrone are dissolving into smoke, but that if a great stir had been made, and the fear had been nurtured here which they had anticipated, they would well have avoided accepting this league and doing anything whatever contrary to our peace. In a word, it is thought that they want to see the peace broken, or never made, but that they would not dare to make this known so long as they fear your Highness or the King of Spain. In the meantime, your Highness should not rely upon their friendship."<sup>1</sup> *Excerpt.* EA., reg. 365, fol. 198.
- 314.** 1608. Jan. 12. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the citadel of Cambrai the grant of fifteen crowns monthly held by Thadeus Obrenan on the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 111.
- 315.** 1608. Jan. 12. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of fifteen crowns monthly made to Bernard Mac Diarmada in the Irish infantry, and suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 20 July last. EG., reg. 24, fol. 111.
- 316.** 1608. Jan. 12. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of thirty crowns monthly held by Walter Butler in the Irish infantry, and suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 3 August last. EG., reg. 24, fol. 111.
- 317.** 1608. Jan. 17. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. Your Highness will pardon me if I fill my letters with these trifles, for I do so merely that you may learn that nothing of importance has happened contrary to our interests, considering how we stand, namely in very bad odour on account of having received the Earl of Tyrone over there, a thing they cannot forget. EA., reg. 365, fol. 200.
- 318.** 1608. Jan. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Cormac Macarte, of the company of Captain Walter del Hay. EG., reg. 24, fol. 112v.



**319.** 1608. Jan. 22. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma, 3 Sept. 1605) of three crowns monthly to John Brenat, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in his own country in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 24, fol. 116.

**320.** 1608. Jan. 23. Whitehall. A report of the proceedings at the conference of the Baron of Hoboken, ambassador of the most serene Archdukes, with the Council of the King of Great Britain, at Whitehall on Wednesday, 23 January 1608.

[a]. The Earl of Salisbury began by saying that the King of Great Britain had been informed by Edmondess, his ambassador to the most serene Archdukes, that at his last audience his Highness had told him that matters concerning the treaty of peace with the States of Holland were, thank God, so far advanced, and the terms so good, that the deputies of both parties were upon the point of very soon coming together to bring the treaty to a conclusion, and that therefore his Highness had wished him to inform the King his master of this, and to get him, in his name, to lend a friendly hand, in accordance with the confidence he had in that friendship, and order his deputies at the Hague to bring to it all their possible good offices. Moreover, his Highness had ordered the Baron of Hoboken, his ambassador to the King, to convey to him the same information and request on his behalf. And although it seemed to the King more becoming to wait until the said overture should be made to him by a Minister of his Highness rather than by his own Minister, his Majesty indeed wished to forestall this step, and to have the Baron enter into discussion with his Council, in order to make known to him the good services he wished to have carried out for the execution of the treaty, as well as the good services he wished to have continued afterwards, in order to bring the treaty to fruition. But his Majesty wished also to make clear to him two other points. The first, that he found it strange that his Highness from the beginning had kept these negotiations secret and hidden, without giving any notice of them, either through the Baron or through his own ambassador to his Highness. Not that the King was unaware of them (for he was well informed from other quarters) or that he wished to complain of this as though his Highness were obliged to impart the information; but that thereby was shown the distrust of the good inclination and will of his Majesty for the success of his affairs; and that whereas his Highness already had need of him to interpose his credit and authority with the States to bring about a peace wanting altogether in probability and equity, now that it was desired to proceed to other conditions, which were just and proper, trust could have been placed in his sincerity and good affection, of which he has already given so many proofs.

The other point was that while the King was engaged on so worthy a task on behalf of the Archdukes, they on the other hand



were doing him the displeasure of receiving subjects of his who were traitors, and fugitives from their country; people with whom they had no alliance, and to whom they were under no obligation. They had received them not merely with charity as refugees, but with honour and favour; as ambassadors admitted to audience, and allowed to remain covered like *grandees* of Spain; and they were entertained to dinner by the Marquis Spinola, the Captain-General, which had given his Majesty great pain. Not that he worried about the Earl and his accomplices, but because of the bad impression which the world receives from these outward demonstrations of the solidity of their friendship, and of the strength of the peace. Nevertheless, in accordance with his candour and his royal wont, he did not affect to avenge himself for the incident, nor on this account to desist from the good offices he had begun to use for the furtherance of the treaty, and the public good of Christendom.

[b]. To this Baron Hoboken made answer that it was true that his master the Archduke had commanded him, by his letters of 30 December, to give an account to the King of Great Britain of the prospects of the peace, and of the resolution, taken only three days previously, for both sides to come together, as Salisbury had just said. And immediately upon the reception of these letters, he had not delayed to ask for an audience for this purpose; but his Majesty had had answer conveyed to him that at the time he was going hunting for three days, putting him off until his return; and that since then, he had come back again, and had put him off until the end of the week. Wherefore the Baron had not been able to carry out the order. Of a truth, the Archduke his master had not found it well to communicate this overture for peace to the King any sooner, because as it was subject to very great difficulties of all kinds, there was always a likelihood of a rupture of relations rather than of success. His Majesty should not attribute that to a want of confidence, on the part of their Highnesses, in his friendship and good affection, which they had already experienced, and had testified how much they esteem it; neither should he attribute it to a want of esteem of his authority as regards the States;<sup>1</sup> for their Highnesses know well how great it is, and how much it can help to advance their desire for peace.

[c]. With regard to the reception given to the Earl of Tyrone, and others, it was given as to refugees, and out of charity, and not because they were known to be traitors. Moreover, his Highness had not expected him in his States, as he came there by chance, and he could not refuse him entrance; but it was not his intention that the Earl should stay there, or remain there long, and he had had this conveyed to him, and had assured himself that he would leave soon, if he had not already left. The Baron had not received any information about the Earl's audience, and still less had he

---

<sup>1</sup>The States of Holland.



received information that his Highness had made him cover; but even if this were so, they should not look upon it as any great novelty, since their Highnesses are accustomed to treat very courteously foreigners of such high rank as the Earl is held to be; nor, for that reason could the Earl be called a grandee of Spain.

[d]. The dinner which the Marquis Spinola had given the Earl was as from one foreign nobleman to another, in which matters everyone is free; and the Marquis had done just the same after the surrender of Ostend, to all the officers and soldiers who came out from the town, who nevertheless were enemies and rebels against their Highnesses. The Baron said it was not such a remarkable thing to have given a dinner to a traitor, even if he were such, and he asked Salisbury himself if he had never dined with traitors to their Highnesses, though nevertheless the King his master was not chargeable therewith. That stung him, and he said "No, and that Mr Caron was not a traitor, but a servant of the States". The Baron said he did not wish to refer to anyone in particular, as he hoped that we should all soon be friends; but since he mentioned Caron, the latter knew well whose vassal he was. Salisbury replied: "Of the States". The Baron, "that the States have no vassals". Salisbury showed himself very much heated at this, and said that he saw well how the Baron made trouble between the Archdukes and the King his master, and that they had been told of this long ago, and now it was confirmed. The Baron answered that Salisbury knew his nature badly, and would have had a much better opinion of him if he knew what a friend he was of peace and quiet; that moreover the thing most recommended to him by the Archduke his master was always to strive to nurture friendship, even as he had done, and that he would deserve to be punished by their Highnesses if he acted otherwise; that he noticed that he, Salisbury, had taken offence at this remark about dining with traitors, but he had not said it in order to charge him with it, but because he had given the occasion, making so much ado about a repast which the Marquis Spinola had given to the Earl of Tyrone, whom he called traitor. Moreover he himself did not wish to defend the actions of an individual, but only those of the Archdukes his masters, who were entirely good, sincere and equitable princes.

[e]. The Earl of Salisbury said that doubt should not be cast upon what was certain and true, as was the fact of the audience, and of the honour done to the Earl of Tyrone by making him cover; and that whereas the Archduke could not refuse him the entrance to his country, he should at least have forbidden him entrance to his presence, since the ambassador of the King of Great Britain had advised one of the principal Ministers of State of the flight, and of the attitude of Tyrone and his accomplices. The dinner given by the Marquis was indeed the act of an individual, but he would not have acted so if his Highness had given him to under-



stand that it was not pleasing to him; and princes have often done things through their Ministers which from prudence they do not wish to do themselves. To say that his Highness did not know whether Tyrone had left or not, was an excuse which one had to accept, but which was not sufficient to satisfy the King his master; the answer of the Baron was unworthy of the Council, and he had expected from him more solid and conclusive reasons. He saw well, however, that having no others which were better, the Baron had been well advised to pick out the weakest of the charges to answer them. He recognised the inconveniences which resulted from the fact that the Baron was not present at the discussions on the peace treaty, as this was an excuse for many difficulties which would not since have arisen had he informed himself of all that was then said and alledged. It was very harmful to princes when their Ministers, either through carelessness or from want of personal feeling, omit to tell them freely the truth concerning their personal affairs. He hoped to find himself at some time in the presence of the most serene Archduke, to make known to him the sincerity and frankness of the King his master, and the absence of the same on his own [Hoboken's] part.

[f]. To this the Baron replied that it would take so little time to refute these details that he did not know to what purpose they delayed over them with so much resentment. He felt sure of the good will and desire of the King of Great Britain for the quiet estate of their Highnesses, and wished to beg Salisbury, and also the Lords of the Council, to allow this to appear at this juncture by the good offices requested by their Highnesses for the conclusion of the treaty now in hand, under conditions which were the mildest and fairest that could be made; and he requested them to report thereupon to his Majesty, who also would profit by it, as the treaty with the States of Holland would more firmly establish and confirm the treaty which had been made with England, since many things which at present cause umbrage and jealousy would thereby come to an end.

To this Salisbury answered that he would do so as concerned the treaty; but as for his answer concerning the reception of Tyrone, as it was contrary to his own feelings, he preferred that his Majesty should hear it from the Baron rather than from him. He would beg the King to use his authority with the States, which was so great that it had depended solely upon him to break off everything, and have the war start again, with a good front, and in such a way that it would not have been as easy for the Archdukes reasonably to blame him for it, as it was for his Majesty to blame their Highnesses for the reception of Tyrone and his company. However he had not wished to act in such a manner, as he loved peace, and saw that their Highnesses would never believe in the sincerity of his sentiments so long as they were at war with the States.



The Baron avowed the authority of the said Lord King, saying that he felt assured that a prince so just and wise would never be author of war or trouble against such an assured brother and good friend as the most serene Archduke his master was to him.

[g]. Salisbury spoke again, and said that if their Highnesses and his Catholic Majesty wished to declare without reserve the article concerning liberty as the first point and the foundation of the treaty, the States would have to show them much injustice as regards the other terms before they would advise them not to come to an agreement, and he wished to know if their Highnesses were altogether decided upon this point. To which the Baron answered: "Yes, when peace would be made." And he read to them the part of the above mentioned letter of 30 December in which it is spoken of. Salisbury then asked the Baron if he had not been instructed to propose some special points. To which the Baron answered, No. So Salisbury then promised that word would be sent to their deputies to use their influence to remove all difficulties which might arise against the treaty for which their services might be asked by the deputies of the Archdukes. The Baron replied that such was the request of their Highnesses, and Salisbury then spoken once more, saying that with regard to the points touching religion, it was contrary to the welfare and quiet of the State of the King his master, and that it was not possible to have any hand in it. Whereupon the Baron asked him to be pleased to mediate in those points which do not concern religion. Salisbury said that they would instruct their deputies to take pains in settling all difficulties which they should judge not to be prejudicial to the King their master; but with regard to those points which they would consider affected him in any manner, they would first inform his Majesty, and await his orders; and he further added: "I see well, Mr Ambassador, that you are very badly informed about things, and if I were in your place I would complain about it. I want to tell you that the most serene Archduke, in the above mentioned audience given to our ambassador, declared to him that in what concerned religion he had asked the most Christian King to use his influence and to have his deputies intervene, having the intention to use the King of England in those other matters which do not concern religion.

[h]. The Earl of Northampton, the Admiral, and the Treasurer also brought forward some points concerning the same subject, and in particular the Admiral stated that the Earl of Tyrconnell had sent to his wife, who was a grand-daughter of the Admiral, some gold pieces with the stamp and effigy of the Archdukes, and had conveyed to her that he was promised more, thus tacitly implying that this gold came from their Highnesses, and in a remarkable quantity. The Baron asked whether they thought his master the Archduke supplied this money, and they all answered that they did not say that; and in particular the Earl



of Salisbury protested that he did not wish to be charged with such an opinion, but they had intercepted a courier with letters of different Irish gentlemen who promised very good treatment over there [in Flanders]. And so after some similar obscure discussions the conference ended, after it had lasted an hour and a half. EA., reg. 365, ff. 202ff.

**321.** 1608. Jan. 30. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. "Early the day before yesterday I had audience of the King . . . He spoke afterwards of the Earl of Tyrone, and complained greatly at the honour your Highness had done him by receiving him to audience, though in Brussels this can be refused to no one, and moreover is not very hard to obtain. But the King complained especially that the Earl had been made to cover, concerning which I knew that it was because it was rainy, or sunny, or windy, or perhaps because he was a stranger, to whom your Highness always shows courtesy. He was not satisfied, and began again to talk bitterly of the Earl, and of Hugh Owen, who has returned to the Low Countries with increased honour and pension; and of Stanley and Fr Baldwin, who are well known public traitors, but nevertheless are welcome in your dominions. He said that the Pope, who nevertheless is not his friend, had done him the favour of not wishing to receive Tyrone; that your Highness, being his friend, should not do less; and if you did not wish to punish traitors for such treason, you should at least chase them out of your dominions; that if your Highness is an absolute Prince, since you are as well born as the King of Spain, you should not give in so much to him as to keep these traitors out of regard for him. I said that of a truth your Highness is an absolute Prince, and well born, but that you had much respect for the King your brother, and that he [the King of England] knew the obligations you were under to him; that as for Fr Hugo Owen, Fr Baldwin, and Stanley, his Majesty knew what had happened; but as for the Earl of Tyrone (who, he said, over there in Flanders was called Prince O'Neill) I assured him that he was not remaining there, and that he had not received the help and support he had expected. And in my opinion, should your Highness hope for any help from the King of Great Britain with regard to this treaty, you will do well to make Tyrone withdraw, together with Tyrconnell, and their accomplices. If the same were done with the said Hugo, the King would be greatly bounden to your Highness." EA., reg. 365, fol. 208.

**322.** 1608. Feb. 8. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to the Baron of Hoboken. "You have given a good answer to the objections made by the Earl of Salisbury concerning the complaint made by the King, that our negotiations for peace had been kept hidden from him; likewise to the long discourse he made about the reception, salutations and honours supposed to have been given by us here to the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, so as even to make them cover, like the grandees of Spain. For this was not the



case, but they were given the honours we usually show to those of their rank. If Marquis Spinola banqueted and feasted him [Tyrone] he did so at his own expense and without orders from us. Moreover we are not the cause that the earls have stayed so long in our country, from which they will take their departure in four or five days time. We wish to think that you have already had audience of the King, and that without fail he will have told you, as the Earl of Salisbury did, that he will order his deputies to take pains to ease the difficulties which may arise at this conference, concerning which our representatives may request them to do so, even where there will be no question of religion, seeing that in this he does not wish to intervene. The objection made to you about the gold pieces with our effigy which the Earl of Tyrconnell sent to his wife, merits no answer, since it does not follow that they were given by us; for they were not." EA., reg. 365, fol. 213.

323. 1608. Feb. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Macon Odriscoll, whose ill health does not allow him to continue his service. EG., reg. 24, fol. 120.
324. 1608. Feb. 13. Brussels. Licence for Spain, on business, to Doctor Robert Chamberlino, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, 24, fol. 120v.
325. 1608. Feb. 13. Brussels. Licence for Spain, on business, to Mathew Tulio,\* pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 120v.
326. 1608. Feb. 14. Brussels. Special grants to the following soldiers of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill for services at the siege of Rheinberg:\*

[a]. The company of the Colonel: Special grant of three crowns monthly in addition to his present pay, to Patrick Coyne. Special grant of two crowns monthly, in addition to his present pay, to Richard Hayo. The same to John de Wael. Two crowns monthly to Hubert Brin, Hugh Quin, and Tireligh Macgilibridi. One crown monthly to Patrick Conran, Leysigh Omory, Morog Hinacome, Edmond Oferri, Thomas Dollan, John Muir, William Quelli, James Morish, and — Moriman.

[b]. The company of Maurice Geraldin: Special grant of three crowns monthly, in addition to his present pay, to Tibbot Emolyn. [Total]: 225.

Two crowns monthly in addition to his present pay to Christopher Geraldin; the same to John Geraldin. One crown monthly to Egmond Berront, Michael Bernaval, John Bernaval, Christopher Veldon, William Mortel, Donogh Ocarol, Olice Bourque, Gerat Mabe, Daniel Meehoro, Christopher Eustacio, William Juricard, Eugenio MacSoyni, and Cahil Oferal.

[c]. The company of Thomas San Lorenço: Special grant of three crowns, in addition to his present pay, to Edmond Ledu. The same to Patrick Oconell. Two crowns to Christopher Tebatt, and Charles Faral. One crown to Henry Dromogal, John Sinan,



Edward Nugent, Patrick Plonquet, John Coghlan, William Turill and Hugo Dermicio. [Total]: Fifty nine crowns.

[d]. The company of Eugenio Oneill: Special grant of two crowns monthly in addition to his present pay to John Maguir. The same to Daniel Dermicio. Two crowns to Patrick Machoyre, A special grant of one crown monthly to Richard Angles. The same to Richard Mosten. One crown to Mulrony Ogrogan, James Miagh, Patrick Ohyr, Richard Murri, John Macgunin, Dermot Mahon, Cornelius Hanracan, and Teyge Oconor.

[e]. The company of William Bartet: Special grant of four crowns monthly to Gerald Barry, in addition to his present pay. Two crowns to Daniel Mahon, Richard Vitus, Edmond Thome Geraldin, David Barri, Edmond Macdonel. and Ricquird Barret. One crown to William Boyo, Mortagh Beglin, soldiers of the same company, and to Tireligh Omorogh and James Brenagh.

[f]. The company of Walter Delahoyd: Special grant of two crowns monthly to Thomas Enrat, and the same to Cormac Hilli, Maurice Lasor, Morgan Dalton, and Patrick Balage. One crowns to Richard Vite, James Dulin, William Tuite, Cormac Conell, Edmondo Poure, George Wel, and Teyge Dun.

[g]. The company of Arturo Oneill: Two crowns each to James Tomis, William Quelli, Eugenio Machougegun, John Conor, Julim Machane, Charles Conor. One crown to Walter Butler.

[h]. The company of Captain Preston; Two crowns each to Peter Preston and Eugenio Macorardi. One crown to Thomas Falagan and Edmond Nelan. [Total]: 131.

One crown each to Ferral Toulli, soldier of the same company, John Malli, William Ronot, Felim Odoquirti, Cormac Ocleari, John Cassi, Brien Ohugin, Patrick Carolan, and Donogh Ocleari. 140 crowns.

All the said grants to be paid in addition to the ordinary pay, from 17 October 1606.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 121v.

327.

1608. Feb. 21. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. "I told the Earl of Salisbury, who was present, that he had been wrongly informed that your Highness had treated the Earl of Tyrone as a grandee of Spain; so Salisbury did not insist. He spoke in the same manner of the other traitors who reside in Flanders. I answered that he was far too sensitive, and did not attach sufficient weight to the sincerity your Highness had always shown in all our actions; and I begged him to accept this as a first principle, and then many misunderstandings would be ended."<sup>1</sup> EA., reg. 635, fol. 216.

328.

1608. Mar. 1. Brussels. Philip Prats to the Archduke Albert. When I came out from the presence of your most serene Highness this morning, the Marquis de Guadeleste asked me if you had given orders to write to the Duke of Lorraine<sup>1</sup> in favour of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell. When I answered in the affirmative, he requested me to send the letter to the Earls



themselves by express courier, as otherwise it would not overtake them, as they were already well advanced on their journey. As I told him that this would be very expensive, and that in any case it would be better to send it by some messenger of the Council of Finances, your most serene Highness must be pleased to command his wishes in the matter, as it appears to the Marquis that the letter must by all means be sent by an express who must leave at once.

In margin, in the hand of the Archduke: A courier may certainly be sent with this letter, as the Marquis de Guadeleste requests. EA., reg. 365, fol. 136.

- 329.** 1608. Mar. 6. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Mores, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 128.
- 330.** 1608. Mar. 11. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of twenty crowns monthly, held by David Barri, to the Irish infantry with which he will serve in future. EG., reg. 24, fol. 132v.
- 331.** 1608. Mar. 12. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Ensign Peter Geraldin, who has served for many years in these States; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 169v.
- 332.** 1608. Mar. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Henry Geraldino, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 135.
- 333.** 1608. Mar. 12. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (El Pardo, 22 Nov. 1607) to resume payment of the dead place in the citadel of Antwerp granted to Cornelius Morran by his Majesty in 1604; on account of his having been seriously wounded at the siege of Ostend; is at present in Spain, but wishes to return to Antwerp and again enjoy his privilege. EG., reg. 24, fol. 138v.
- 334.** 1608. Apr. 12. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 14 July 1607) of thirty crowns monthly to William Geraldino, Irish gentleman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 147v.
- 335.** 1608. Apr. 12. Brussels. Grant of ten crowns monthly to Edmund Oyquelli; the grant to be entered in the accounts of the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 149.
- 336.** 1608. Apr. 30. Stepney. The Baron of Hobken to the Archduke Albert. "There is a small complaint about the reception given by Count de Fuentes to the Earl of Tyrone during the journey through Switzerland and his entrance into Milan, but it is not made as much of as the journey in the States of your Highness, seemingly so as not to give offence to his Majesty, whose power is feared. Also the complaints are increasing against the Duke of Florence for having recently seized and confiscated the English goods and ships. About this the King has sent an



agent there, who will arrive too late to prevent the blow." EA., reg. 365, fol. 222.

337. 1608. May 3. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to Thomas de la Roche; to serve the banner of the Irish infantry of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 24, fol. 160.
338. 1608. May 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Donoch Omadin, on business relating to his house and property.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 24, fol. 162.
339. 1608. May 12. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the special grant of four crowns monthly held by Richard Mores, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneii, payment of which was suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 6 March last. EG., reg. 24, fol. 167.
340. 1608. May 17. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the special grant of two crowns monthly held by Donoch O Madin, which was suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 8 May last.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 170.
341. 1608. May 20. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 21 Dec. 1607) of a vacant place in the citadel of Cambrai, of the value of four crowns monthly, to Dermot Oriegen, Irish soldier, whose right hand had been blown off by a canon-ball at the siege of Rheinbergh. EG., reg. 24, fol. 171.
342. 1608. May 20. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the grant of fifteen crowns monthly held by Florence Carti, which had been suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 4 August last. EG., reg. 24, fol. 173.
343. 1608. May 20. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. Since may last letter I have heard nothing, except that Irish affairs remain just as they were. The Lord Deputy of Ireland sent some men to retake the forts which O Dogherty had taken from him, but they found them well armed, and so well supplied with everything necessary that it does not seem wise to attack. Some say the Irish have an understanding with the borders of Scotland, so that the Council here is disturbed. There has been a rumour of some fresh trouble amongst the people of the Lowlands, of the same nature as last year; but this rumour appears to have only a slight foundation. EA., reg. 365, fol. 226.
344. 1608. May 21. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert.

[a]. I went this morning to congratulate the Earl of Salisbury upon his appointment by the King to the office of Chief-Treasurer. It is the principal office of this country, after the Chancellorship, and the holder takes precedence over all the dukes and other titled gentlemen who are vassals of the Crown. He thanked me courteously, and later on, when we discussed our peace, and their league, which last, I remarked did not well suit such Princes as the King his master and the King of France so long as the Dutch



had not reached an agreement with us, he argued with me fairly reasonably, and said that they had never intended to form the league before we had made peace; as however the French had joined the league and it was not advisable to leave them sole control of the peace and of the other affairs of Holland, and especially as the King his master had been requested to do all he could to our advantage, he had thought it wise, in order to be in a position to render better service, especially as he had been approached by the Dutch about the league, to give them some hearing, and to negotiate about the articles which they would agree to after the peace. Nothing has been determined, however, up to the present, although he had discussed with the Dutch the demands for expenses and money which they know well they will not get.

[b]. He afterwards lauded the good offices of the King his Master, and told me he had given no help to the Dutch since our treaty. I answered that I readily believed him, but also that I knew well the Dutch had received his money through the hands of the French, to be added to their account of their debts to the Crown. He said this was not so, and that it was true that Monsieur de Rony wanted to maintain the contrary; as however the King his master had given his answer, the French had not insisted. I alledged that the French ambassador here had told me that the King his master understood otherwise, and relied upon the written agreement with de Rony, made before our peace, and not afterwards withdrawn, the said agreement containing a clause that the King here agrees to help the Dutch with a certain sum, of which the third should be placed to his account of what the French owed him. But he disabused me of all this, and assured me that the King of France no longer insists, and that I could assure your Highness of this, and that the King his master had given him no help since the peace, either directly or indirectly; and he put it to me whether your Highness, for this good deed, had acted reciprocally in the business of Ireland. I told him that I know well of some misunderstanding about Ireland, but that I considered it of slight foundation, and I asked him if he were of the opinion that your Highness had done a disservice therein, or whether anything relating to this had been plotted in your dominions, He answered that he did not assert that, but that the head of the Irish was the son of the great traitor; and I replied that it was not as such that he had come to us, but to serve in the war against our enemies. I begged him to tell me freely whether the King had been badly impressed by this, so that I could inform your Highness, just as I had done about his [O'Neill's] father. He said to me: "We like them better there than in Ireland, so long as they can do us no harm there." I replied that I should be sorry if they did, and that their own prudence would prevent this, and that this bad understanding which had arisen would be



settled at its birth, since I desired nothing more ardently than universal peace and quiet.\* EA., reg. 365, fol. 224.

345. 1608. May 30. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of fifteen crowns monthly, held by Florence Carti, from the Irish infantry to the citadel at Cambrai, whence he will draw it in future, without obligation to serve, while studying at the university of Douai. EG., reg. 24, fol. 175v.

346. 1608. June 2. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 11 Feb. 1608) of eight crowns monthly to Zepherinus Pringadas; to serve in the Irish infantry; has represented that he served in the Irish wars, and has represented also his sufferings and losses in order to be able to live in our holy faith. EG., reg. 24, fol. 180.

347. 1608. June 4. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. [a]. In my preceding letter I informed your Highness of what I had learned about the state of things in Ireland. Two days later a courier dispatched to the King arrived, and is said to have brought the news that a gentleman named Nel Garve had revolted also, and had had himself proclaimed Prince of that district, which is in the North, and even of the lands of the Earl of Tyrconnell, which he claims belong to him. He is said to have seized also some forts belonging to the English, and to have taken under his protection Odogherty, head and prime mover of the first revolt, all under pretext of playing the good servant, and of wishing to keep the said country under the King's obedience, but in reality, as those think who are best informed, to forestall the King's plans; so that, to make sure of the district, and to sever the understanding which the said gentleman may have with the Earl of Tyrone, it has been decided to strengthen the garrisons there; for which purpose up to 1,000 infantrymen have been recruited, though some mention a greater number; and some seamen have been taken, willy nilly, to man four vessels which are being prepared near Rochester.

[b]. This spread of revolt has marvellously increased the apprehension of the gentlemen of the Council here, who are careful to offend none of their neighbours during this domestic danger. I think the ambassador at Brussels will already have spoken to your Highness on the subject, as they did to me this morning at the conference I had with the gentlemen of the Council, as your Highness will see from the enclosed summary.<sup>1</sup> Although the Earl of Salisbury knew how to dissimulate his own participation in this alarm, and told me that O Dogherty and his followers were already driven from the forts, and had withdrawn to the mountains and bogs, nevertheless I knew well from his way of speaking that plenty remains to be done there, and that he is hiding his bad game under a smiling countenance. Time will enlighten us about all this, and I will not fail to keep your Highness informed. I have already got better information since the confer-



ence, and I hear that in reality the Lord Deputy had sent some men to retake the forts, but that they never reached to within six miles of them; for they were prevented, as they themselves say, and were fought and beaten on the way by some of the Irish, and lost some men, among whom is mentioned a brother of Captain Tyrrell, who himself was wounded. However, your Highness in your prudence will weigh well the terms of Salisbury's conversation, for he makes me great trouble about our peace, and says very little about their own trouble in Ireland. I have not been informed of what he says passed at the last audience given to their ambassador, nor of the complaints your Highness is said to have made to him about the league, or even of the state of our treaty, and so I did not know how to give a more solid answer to their statements about it, and preferred to confess my ignorance rather than to say something out of place. This is why I have begged your Highness from the beginning to be pleased to have me kept well informed on such occasions of what I am to say, so that I may be able to render better service. As regards the offer they have made of withdrawing their deputies, it seems to me, under very humble correction, that this shows their wish to please your Highness in this manner, and that in the meantime you could answer them that as the said deputies were sent by the King of England without your having been informed, you are content that they still remain there, until the treaty is concluded, and pray the King always to continue, in the interests of the treaty, the good services you expect from the sincerity of his friendship, and which are called for by regard for the peace of Christendom, of which the King has always expressed himself so desirous. Excerpt. EA., reg. 365, fol. 227.

348. 1608. June 8. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Florence Carti; to serve in the Irish infantry; this sum being the four crowns which the King ordered should be paid to him.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 165v.
349. 1608. June 10. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of thirty crowns monthly held by Doctor Robert Chamberlin on the Irish infantry, without obligation to serve; to continue his services at Louvain. EG., reg. 24, fol. 184v.
350. 1608. June 18. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. I have received your Highness's letter of the 3rd of the month, with the information of the events concerning the right to seize an Englishman, of which I was keeping myself well informed so as to be able to answer anyone who may speak to me about it. In this matter I am carrying out the instructions of your Highness. The Earl of Salisbury has not mentioned a word to me about it, although I saw him to day and he spoke to me at length about other matters, and especially about the affairs of Ireland, which he says are of small moment, and that they have almost finished with them, and that the rebels have abandoned



the forts. From other sides it is reported that they still hold them, and as a matter of fact I see that here they still go on recruiting, and that they talk of giving the command to Colonel Francis Vere. It appears however that he is scarcely anxious for it, as the men have been recruited and taken by force, and not much is to be expected of them. Moreover he married a young lady some time ago. But I think he will not be able to evade it, if the King so wishes.

In his conversation about Ireland the Earl tacitly revealed some ulterior motive, and discontent with your Highness and with Spain; but I explained, and emphasised the sincerity of your Highness, so much so that he came to the conclusion that the King his master would never again believe what was told him of the secret intrigues of your Highness unless he actually saw them, and that he would use all his good offices in the furtherance of peace. EA., reg. 365, fol. 237.

**351.** 1608. June 28. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Ensign Dermot Grinan, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 191v.

**352.** 1608. July 1. Stepney. The Baron of Hoboken to the Archduke Albert. The Earl of Shaftesbury, who has just received some hounds from Ireland, has asked me if your Highness would be pleased to receive some of them, to add to the pleasure of your hunting. I had the answer conveyed to him that your Highness would regard with favour anything which came from the Earl's hands. Thereupon he sent me the three dogs which the lackey is bringing over. He knows their names. According to what I am told, they will grow a lot, as they are young . . . Affairs in Ireland seem to be going in the King's favour, for it is reported that the rebels have abandoned everything, and taken to the woods, though there are not wanting opinions to the contrary, so long as there is such a poor service of reliable news. The King has sent over there a gentleman named Desmond to take command of the reinforcements, which puts an end to the reports about the Earl of Southampton or Colonel Vere. EA., reg. 365, fol. 240.

**353.** 1608. July 4. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Donoch de Feral, of the company of Captain Eugenio Oneill; has been wounded in both legs and is unable for further service. EG., reg. 24, fol. 196v.

**354.** 1608. July 4. Mariemont. Licence for Donoch Farel, of the company of Walter de la Hoyt, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill, to go on pilgrimage to St James in Galicia, in fulfilment of a vow.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 196v.

**355.** 1608. July 7. A summary of the conference held by the Baron of Hoboken, ambassador of the most serene Archduke, with the Council of the King of England, at London, 7 July 1608.

[a]. The Lords of the Council: Salisbury. Northampton. Nottingham. Suffolk. Worcester.



The Baron of Hoboken began by saying that for the better understanding of the most serene Archduke, his master, with regard to the conference held on the 4th of June, and out of consideration for those who had taken part in it, he would repeat briefly the chief points, which were:

That evil reports were current about the Irish who were in the service of his Highness, according to which they only awaited the return of the Earl of Tyrone, their father, to go back to their own country and cause trouble there, and that when peace should be made, his Highness would free all his troops so that they might nurture sedition in Ireland; and that all the plots against the kingdom were hatched in his States, and it seemed that the countries of Brabant and Flanders were the gathering ground and asylum for all the traitors of this kingdom.

The said Baron having informed his Highness of all this, had just received letters from him, and thereupon had put their Lordships to the inconvenience of this meeting, to impart to them his answer.

As for the Irish who are in the service of his Highness, nothing is less true than what has been imagined, and if some soldier, badly informed and indiscreet, had taken the liberty to talk in such a strain, his Highness was quite ignorant of this, and was not to be blamed. The King could rest assured that he would make proper investigation, and put the matter right as soon as he would be informed.

[b]. However much his Highness was offended by and strongly resented the expressions, so uncivil and unworthy, which had been used about him at the last conference, as though he received all the traitors from this realm and his country served them as a refuge, a reputation which could not reasonably be attached to him, since his Highness has always given proof that he hates and detests such people, as he does his own enemies; just as many things can be hatched by the English in Flanders without the knowledge of his Highness, so many others can be started here in England by the Flemish of which the King of Britain could say nothing. Nevertheless the Baron did not wish to bring any charge against the King or his Council, but he said this much by way of comparison. On this account, by reason of his great desire to maintain friendship between these princes, he begged the members of the Council to forego in future similar pungent expressions, which only caused bitterness between their masters. Whereupon the members of the Council wished to speak together in order to consult as to what answer they would give the Baron, and they desired to rise; but he begged them to remain where they were, and he himself withdrew to a gallery near at hand, where, after they had consulted together for half an hour, they sent the Earl of Northampton to ask him to return.

[c]. Thereupon the Earl of Salisbury, opening the conversation,



told him that they found occasion to praise the Baron's discretion in so far as he had well noted not only the substance of their conference, but also the very words; and they were grateful for the report thereof which he had made to his Highness.

With regard to the complaints which the members of the Council had made against their Highnesses at the last conference, concerning the Irish and the receiving of traitors, they were remonstrances coming from Ministers anxious to forestall the sinister judgments which would be passed concerning such external manifestations between Princes, and to prevent the evil effect proceeding therefrom against their common interest, and which lessons their friendship and good understanding. On the like occasions they used the same liberty of remonstrance with all the friends of the Crown of England concerning anything which injured their interests; and on the other hand, they listened to and willingly remedied whatever incidents were found on their side. Consequently the Baron was wrong in wishing to exclude this frankness by persuading them to desist from such terms against the Archduke his master, and the King's Majesty was not to be checked in this respect, if he found that just cause of complaint had been given on the part of the Archduke. FA., reg. 365, fol. 243.

356. 1608. July 12. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip III, to pay in Flanders the grant of twelve crowns monthly enjoyed by Daniel Osuliban, Irishman, at Coruña; has served in his own country and elsewhere. EG., reg. 24, fol. 200v.
357. 1608. Aug. 13. Brussels. Orders to transfer from the Irish infantry to the citadel of Cambrai the grant of twelve crowns monthly made to Thomas Geraldino, thus permitting him to continue his studies at the university of Douai. EG., reg. 24, fol. 213v.
358. 1608. Aug. 7. Brussels. Special grant to Daniel Machichi, Irishman, of five crowns monthly in the Irish infantry, in which he will serve henceforward, in accordance with his wishes; instead of the grant of nine crowns monthly which he has at present in the German infantry.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 218.
359. 1608. Sept. 1. Brussels. Licence for three months to Captain Thomas Barri, pensioner of the company of Captain William Barret, regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill; has represented that he wishes to take the baths at Aix-la-Chapelle. EG., reg. 24, fol. 223.
360. 1608. Sept. 8. Brussels. Licence for Scotland for James Cherensi, of the company of Captain Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 226.
361. 1608. Sept. 10. Brussels. Licence for Spain for six months to Captain Thomas Barri, pensioner in the company of Captain William Barret.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 227v.
362. 1608. Oct. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign



Martin Brangan, of the company of Captain Thomas Stanihurst. EG., reg. 24, fol. 245v.

363. 1608. Oct. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Lachlyn Quineghan, of the company of Captain John Ract. EG., reg. 24, fol. 248v.
364. 1608. Oct. 18. Brussels. Licence for France to Donogh Macnealis of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill, to seek a cure for the king's evil, with which he is afflicted. EG., reg. 24, fol. 248v.
365. 1608. Oct. 21. Brussels. Grant of ten crowns monthly to John Hoydt; to serve as supernumerary chaplain to one of the companies of the Irish regiment.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 260v.
366. 1608. Oct. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Suetman, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 257.
367. 1608. Oct. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Nicholas Obrenan, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 24, fol. 257.
368. 1608. Nov. 5. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the citadel at Cambrai the grant of ten crowns monthly held by Gelasius Lurcano; to enable him to live at Douai. EG., reg. 24, fol. 226v.
369. 1608. Nov. 13. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the grant of twenty five crowns monthly held by Captain John Oconor, which had been suspended by the licence granted him for Spain. EG., reg. 24, fol. 272.
370. 1608. Dec. 4. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the grant of forty crowns monthly held by Ferdinand Maconel in the Irish infantry; suspended on account of a certain delinquency committed by him.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 328v.
371. 1608. Dec. 9. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lerma. 3 Sept. 1605) of twelve crowns monthly to Denis de Burgo, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; had served in the wars in his own country in the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 24, fol. 284.
372. 1608. Dec. 10. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies at Louvain to the Archduke Albert. As it has pleased your Highness to command your very humble and obedient vassal to receive into your Highness's convent of the White Ladies at Louvain the son and heir of the Earl of Tyrconnell,\* aged between two and three years, for his safe keeping, and to command that he is to be kept and maintained in our convent until further instructions from your Highness, the reasonable expenses to be paid, and that we must be responsible for him, and keep careful guard over him, and not entrust him to anyone else unless upon the express order of your Highness, to whom we are under so many signal obligations for the numberless acts of kindness which we have always received, and which oblige us to obey your commands promptly, in everything and in every way: I and my Sisters will take such care of him as shall be humanly possible. I very humbly



pray your Highness to command the nurse to allow me to have two of my Sisters, upon whom I can rely and have confidence, to sleep in the same room, so that the child may never be without the presence of a Sister, day or night. Also, that the nurse be ordered to treat the child according to our instructions, for she does not provide for his warmth and comfort in accordance with our local custom. Your Highness promises to pay the reasonable expenses. Would to God we had the ways and means which other convents have, and we would ask for nothing; but being so poor as we are, I very humbly pray your Highness to be pleased to order that as there are four persons in question, we may receive two hundred florins every three months for our expenses in wood, light, laundry, and other services, as everything is expensive. I also beg your Highness to name some one to whom I may apply for payment every three months. Your Highness will thus oblige myself and my Sisters to pray both day and night for your long life, prosperity and health; and we very humbly kiss your hands. From your town and convent of the White Ladies. From Louvain, 10 Dec. 1608.

To his Highness. The very humble and obedient and unworthy vassal, the Prioress of the White Ladies, Sister Catharina de Tserraerts. Flemish. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

373. 1608. Dec. 11. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the citadel at Cambrai the grant of 8 crowns monthly held by John Conrie on the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 285.

374. 1608. Dec. 12. Brussels. Juan de Mancidor to Luys Verreyken. The Mother of the monastery of the White Ladies has answered that in obedience to the command of his Highness she will receive the heir of the Earl of Tyrconnell, with the nurse and two other persons, four in all. However, on account of the poverty of the convent, and of the great expenditure which these persons will occasion, for food, as well as light, fuel, and white laundry, and such other things, she asks and petitions that his Highness may be pleased that for such she may be paid two hundred florins, which make eight philipps, every three months, protesting that if the convent had means, this service would very willingly be done for nothing, and without request for anything. His Highness has instructed me to inform your Excellency, so that you may advise him as soon as possible of the decision he should take thereon. I beg your Excellency to order that I be informed, to enable me to answer the said Mother accordingly. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

375. 1608. Dec. 12. Brussels. Juan de Mancidor to Luis Verreyken. When I reported to his Highness the representations made by the Mother of the White Ladies at Louvain, that two hundred florins be given her monthly for the board of the son of the Earl of Tyrconnell and his nurse and two servants, as your Excellency informed me in his note, his Highness thought well to



grant the request, and he has commanded me to advise your Excellecnny, who will inform the Mother of the decision, and assure her that she will receive the grant of the said two hundred florins. 12 Dec. 1608. Juan de Mancicidor. To Luis Verreyken, Minister of the Audience and first Secretary of State of his Highness. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

- 376.** 1608. Dec. 13. Brussels. Luis Verreyken to the Prioress of the White Ladies at Louvain. His Highness has commanded me to inform you that he has received your letter of this month, in answer to his letter to you and your convent about the son and heir of the Earl of Tyrconnell. His Highness has heard with pleasure that in conformity with his wishes you are prepared to receive the child into your monastery and take care of him, and keep good guard over him until further orders from his Highness, and that care and guard over him which you consider best. Moreover, he finds your suggestion good, that you should have two Sisters whom you think best, to sleep in the child's room, for his better safeguard. It seems to his Highness, however, that you can scarcely avoid permitting the nurse to use her own discretion in treating the child in her own way, since she has looked after him so well up to the present. As for the rest, his Highness has commanded me to assure you that he will see that you are paid every three months the two hundred florins you ask for, both for the expenses of food, wood and light, and for board and similar expenses; and to secure the payment of this sum you may have recourse from time to time to his Highness, so that he may give the necessary orders, which will be carried out in such manner that there will be no default of prompt payment. And hereupon commending myself to your good favours and prayers, I pray God to grant you, Madame, together with health a happy and long life.

In margin: My cousin Sister Elizabeth Verreyken will find enclosed, with your permission, my very hearty commendations to her good prayers, Draft. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

- 377.** 1609. Jan. 22. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly, in addition to the eight crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Ensign Derbi Grenan, of the company of Captain Thomas Stanihurst. EG., reg. 24, fol. 317v.
- 378.** 1609. Jan. 24. Brussels. Orders to transfer the allowance of twelve crowns monthly, held by Denis de Burgo, to the citadel of Cambrai, from the Irish infantry, to enable him to continue his studies at Douai. EG., reg. 24, fol. 303.
- 379.** 1609. Jan. 25. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies at Louvain to Luis Verreyken. The Franciscan<sup>1</sup> who placed in our convent the son and heir of the Earl of Tyrconnell with the other three children and the nurse, came yesterday to tell me that he is leaving at once for France, and thus the care of these children

<sup>1</sup>Fr Donogh Mooney. See 439.



will remain entirely in my hands, as regards their food and clothing. I have not wished to delay in informing you of this at once, that you may be pleased to treat with his Highness that a further four hundred florins yearly be paid to us, to enable us to make provision for the clothing both of the nurse and of the children. This all told will make twelve hundred florins yearly, together with the other expenditure. You might also be pleased to arrange to have orders given for the immediate payment to us of four or five hundred florins, to provide clothing both for the children and for the nurse, as during this winter season it moves us to compassion to see them naked and full of sufferings, and on account of the poverty of the convent it is impossible for me to remedy matters. Wherefore I beg you to use your influence with his Highness, that we may have immediately an assignment upon Haenens, the Collector, in order to remedy this, and even that orders be sent to the Collector by his Highness to pay us a hundred florins monthly, as part of the twelve hundred florins, in consideration of the poverty of our convent, and because without undergoing very great indigence we cannot wait upon the delays of payment. If this cannot be done, his Highness might be pleased to command immediately a remittance for what has been expended up to the present. He will thus place us under a still further obligation, in addition to the favours we have received already, to pray God, as we do every day, for his long life. And to this end I beg that letters may be sent to Haenens, the Collector for his Highness, by my hands, for the payment of the said one hundred florins monthly, and that he is to pay in advance, immediately, in order to remedy the said sufferings promptly. And while we hope that you will not fail to help us in this matter, we shall also beseech the Lord to preserve you in health for a long and happy life, in the meantime kissing your hands, and remaining always your humble and obedient servant in God, the unworthy Prioress of the White Ladies, Chaterina Tserraerts.

Sir. Your cousin the subprioress also very humbly kisses your hands. The children have changed very much, and have improved greatly in health since they came to the convent, and the biggest is beginning to learn very well. From our convent at Louvain, 25 January 1609. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

**380.** 1609. Jan. 30. Brussels. Juan de Mancicidor to Luis Verreyken. His Highness has decided that one hundred florins monthly are to be paid to the White Ladies at Louvain, in payment of all they ask for the lodging, food and the rest, of the son of the Earl of Tyrconnell. And with this I send your Excellency four hundred florins, to be given to the Mother, on account, for the present, and in future payment will be made in the proportions mentioned. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

**381.** 1609. Jan. 31. Brussels. Luys Verreyken to the Prioress of the White Ladies at Louvain. I was unable sooner to answer your



letter of the 25th of this month on account of certain hindrances which intervened. I wish now to inform you that his Highness has received the report of the contents of your letter. He is pleased to grant the four hundred florins you have asked for your expenses of food and board, and for the expenses which will be incurred for the son and heir of the Earl of Tyrconnell, and the other three children and the nurse who are with him. So that altogether you will receive one hundred florins monthly, in part payment of which the bearer of this letter will deliver to you four hundred florins, for which you will be pleased to give a receipt for my discharge. The said four hundred florins will be paid to you in fifty gold pieces, each of the value of three philipps. See if I can serve you in anything else, and if you command me therein, you shall be served with the same good will. And commending myself and my wife very humbly to your favour and the favour of my cousin the sub-prioress, I pray God to preserve you, Madame, and all your holy community, in his good keeping. From Brussels, the last day of January 1609.

His Highness is pleased to learn that the children are better in health than when they came to you, and that the eldest is beginning to learn very well. Indeed one would not expect anything else of those entrusted to your care. E.A., liasse 1947. fol. 2.

- 382.** 1609. Feb. 1. Louvain. A receipt given by the White Ladies. We the undersigned, Lady Prioress Kateryna Tserrarts and Sister Anna Van Wamel procuratrix of the White Ladies at Louvain, acknowledge that we have received from the hands of Gillam de Villey, messenger of the Treasury, the sum of 400 Rhine florins, at one time and in one sum. for clothing and linen for the three Irish children and the nurse, this being the amount due for one full year. In testimony whereof we have signed this, the 1 February 1609. Lady Prioress Katharina Tseraerts. Sister Anna Van Wamel, procuratrix. Flemish. EA., liasse 1904. 2.
- 383.** 1609. Feb. 10. Brussels. Licence to Fr Cornelius Desmond of the Order of St Francis, preacher to the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Henry O'Neill, to allow any other friar of his Order appointed by his superior and approved by the Archbishop of Malines or the vicar-general of the army, to act for him whenever he is obliged to be absent. EG., reg. 24, fol. 324.
- 384.** 1609. Feb. 15. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the citadel at Cambrai the pay of seven crowns monthly of John Fildeo, Irish student, soldier of the company of Captain Dononello Odriscoll, without obligation to serve; to enable him to continue his studies at the university at Douai.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 235.
- 385.** 1609. Mar. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Caha, of the company of Captain Thomas Estanus. EG., reg. 24, fol. 335.
- 386.** 1609. Mar. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edward



- Butler, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 341.
387. 1609. Mar. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Planquet, of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 24, fol. 343.
388. 1609. Apr. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Ensign Denis Carti, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 24, fol. 345.
389. 1609. Apr. 10. Brussels. Orders that the Scots troops who took service with the Irish after their own companies had been disbanded are to return to their Scots companies. EG., reg. 24, fol. 350.
390. 1609. Apr. 12. Brussels. Orders in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 22 Nov. 1608) to transfer to the castle at Ghent the maintenance grant of thirty six crowns monthly held by John Val, an Irishman, on the embassy in England; has served his Majesty for many years in these parts, and served recently in England as interpreter to the ambassador P. de Cunigo. EG., reg. 24, fol. 349v.
391. 1609. Apr. 29. Brussels. An attestation by Colonel Oneill. Henry Oneill, colonel of the Irish regiment in these States. I testify that Denis Quelli, pensioner in the said regiment, in the company of Captain Maurice Geraldini, and his wife, are charged with the nursing of the most illustrious Earl of Tyrconnell, an infant, who is at Louvain and that the said Denis attends upon him with the pay which he receives from his Majesty, without receiving anything for his own support from the Earl. In attestation whereof I have signed with my own name. At Brussels. 29 April 1609. EA., Liasse 1885. 4.
392. 1609. June 18. Mariemont. Orders to disband the following companies of the Irish infantry, on account of the small number of their men, who are to be distributed amongst the remaining companies: the companies of James Garland, Thomas San Lorenzo, Walter Deoyd, John Rat, and Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 386v.
393. 1609. July 4. Diest. Licence for Ireland to Dermot Dasman, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 24, fol. 291v.
394. 1609. July 9. Brussels. Colonel Henry Oneill to the Archduke Albert. Represents that the companies of his regiment which are stationed at Hulst complain seriously that the governor of the garrison will not permit their sutlers to sell necessaries, as they have hitherto done in the town of Ostend, and in conformity with the laws formerly issued by his Highness. The men are consequently in great need, and there is no one who will allow them credit for any purchase. He begs that orders be given allowing the sutlers to buy and sell as hitherto. In margin: Dispatched on 13 July 1609. EA., carton 1930.
395. 1609. July 13. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Emile de



- Biche, governor of Hulst. Orders to permit, until further notice, one sutler for each of the companies of the regiment of Colonel Oneil stationed at Hulst. EA., carton 193.
- 396.** 1609. July 14. Brussels. Orders for grants to be made to each of the following captains, ensigns and sergeants of the disbanded companies of the regiment of Colonel Henry Oneill: to Captain Walter de la Hoyd, grant of forty crowns monthly. Grants of forty crowns monthly to Captain John Rat, Captain Eugenio Oneill, and Captain James Garland. To Captain Thomas de San Lorenço, fifty crowns monthly, which is the same as he already enjoys. To Ensign Nicholas Lince, formerly of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd, ten crowns. To Sergeant Thadeus Fa, formerly of the same company, six crowns. To Ensign Walter Husse, formerly of the company of Captain John Ratt, ten crowns. To Sergeant Thomas Quelli, formerly of the same company, six crowns. To Ensign Denis Mbel, formerly of the company of Captain Eugenio Oneill, ten crowns. To Sergeant Dermot Ros, formerly of the same company, six crowns. To Ensign James Beth, formerly of the company of Captain James Garland, ten crowns. To Sergeant William Mauris, formerly of the same company, six crowns. To Ensign Gerald Darsi, formerly of the company of Captain Thomas San Lorenço, ten crowns. Total: 290 crowns. All to serve with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 402v.
- 397.** 1609. July 15. Brussels. Emile de Biche to Secretary Prats. Reports that his provost has informed him that the Irish wish to have a sutler attached to their companies at Hulst. This would be the ruin of the town, as under this cover there would be cabarets all over the town, of which the citizens would soon gain control. He himself has refused the soldiers this right, and they had been satisfied. The Spaniards have no sutler in their garrison, neither have the Germans, nor the troops of any other nation. He has come to town to treat with his Highness about everything relating to the garrison, both about the beds and mattresses they demand, and their billets; but he had met with an accident on the way.\* EA., carton 1930.
- 398.** 1609. July 28. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Eugenio Oneill, in company with Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 416v.
- 399.** 1609. July 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Dermot Oclanichi, who is unable for further service on account of his infirmities, as he is sixty years old; formerly of the company of Captain Robert Daniel. EG., reg. 24, fol. 416v.
- 400.** 1609. July 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on private business to Richard Ferral, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti, and to Edmond Ledroiche of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 24, fol. 417.
- 401.** 1609. July 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business



concerning his family, to Edmund Vitus, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 24, fol. 417.

402. 1609. Aug. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his family, to Donogh Omorroghu, of the disbanded company of Captain Walter Delahoyd. EG., reg. 24, fol. 419v.

403. 1609. Aug. 1. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Raet, to accompany Colonel Oneill.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 420.

404. 1609. Aug. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Dolfin, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 420.

405. 1609. Aug. 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Hallen, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston; to safeguard his property. EG., reg. 24, fol. 424v.

406. 1609. Aug. 12. Douai. Dermot Roger Omallun to the Archduke Albert. Had I not been very much occupied in a public discussion concerning Law, which I have sustained during these days, under the banner of the singular protection of your Highness, I would have been in Brussels in person with a royal letter of his Majesty which my uncle the Bishop of Killaloe\* sent me recently, commending me to your Highness. Whereas your Highness, since I was exiled when a boy from my own country, on account of the Catholic cause, has favoured me, and educated me in letters and virtue up to my present age of discretion and the standing of a man of letters, I would beg, as the crown of all these past favours, that you would grant me an office and position in this country. And as the office of bailiff of this town is still vacant, and as I am a citizen of these States in virtue of letters-patent of your Highness, and have graduated as Licentiate in Law, and am well-versed in the languages and customs of the country, and am thus capable (as I hope) of filling any office, even that of counsellor, or any other which your Highness may be pleased to give me, and as moreover I cannot return to my own country, nor enjoy my estate, which has been confiscated by the heretics, I beg your most serene Highness that in consideration of my exile and of my great losses for the Catholic cause, and of the services of my uncle the bishop, you would give orders for me to be examined as to my fitness, learning and abilities, in both the languages and the customs of the country, and according to the result, confer upon me the said office of bailiff of this town, taking into consideration that besides my servants, I have to support two young students who are my relations, and relatives of the bishop my uncle, who have no means whatever whereby to support or clothe themselves during their studies at the university, except what I enjoy from your Highness. And to assist their needs and my own, the said office in the university will be more suitable than any other of larger remuneration and esteem outside the university, although it is not worth more than 300 florins yearly, as the bailiff is the third appointment, after the



governor and the lieutenant of the town. This becoming favour I hope to receive from your Highness, whose royal person may God preserve etc.

- In margin: He asks for the vacant post of bailiff of Douai. Let him have letters-patent. 18 Aug. 1609. EA., liasse 1885. 2.
407. 1609. Aug. 13. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, on business of his father the Earl and his own private business, to Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 388.
408. 1609. Aug. 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his family, to Thomas Ohalegan, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 428.
409. 1609. Aug. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his family, to Art Oconor, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 24. fol. 429v.
410. 1609. Aug. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his family, to John Conor, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 429v.
411. 1609. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his family, to Miles Daltan, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 430v.
412. 1609. Aug. 18. Brussels. Licence for Spain, to accompany Colonel Henry Oneill, to Captain Jaqum Fitz Simon, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 24, fol. 431v.
413. 1609. Aug. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Redmond Dalton, pensioner in the Irish infantry; on business relating to his family. EG., reg. 24, fol. 434.
414. 1609. Aug. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmund Odaes, of the company of Captain William Barret, and to John Macater, of the same company. EG., reg. 24, fol. 439.
415. 1609. Aug. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Matthew de la Hoyd, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, on business relating to his family. \*EG., reg. 24, fol. 439v.
416. 1609. Aug. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business concerning his family, to William Tobin,\* of the company of Captain William Barret.<sup>2</sup> EG., reg. 24, fol. 440.
417. 1609. Sept. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thadeus Sea, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 447.
418. 1609. Sept. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Macan, of the company of Captain Arthur Oneill, and to John Neil, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG. reg. 24 fol 450.
419. 1609. Sept. 12. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 22 Dec. 1608) of twelve crowns monthly to R<sup>o</sup>. Macsuyni; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of the desire he shows to serve his Majesty after the example of his father and ancestors.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 456.
420. 1609. Sept. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Nicholas

- Husey, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 457v.
421. 1609. Sept. 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William O Bray, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 457v.
422. 1609. Sept. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Freyne, of the company of Colonel Henry Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 459.
423. 1609. Sept. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Stephen Batth, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, and to Gerald Thomas, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 24, fol. 458v.
424. 1609. Sept. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Robert Fleyng, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston; to Richard Fitz Harris, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill; and to Ensign Denis Carti, of the company of Captain Thadeo Carti. EG., reg. 24, fol. 459.
425. 1609. Sept. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Hulston, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 451.
426. 1609. Sept. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Galchut, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston; and to John Hayn, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 24, fol. 463.
427. 1609. Sept. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Maurice Madoc, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 24, fol. 464.
428. 1609. Sept. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Malachy Quelli, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 24, fol. 464v.
429. 1609. Sept. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Libod Tebon, of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, and to Patrick Predergas, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill.\* EG., reg. 24, fol. 468.
430. 1610. Feb. 12. Louvain. An attestation by Fr Hugh Cavellus. A second copy. I, Fr Hugo Cavello, Guardian of the Irish friars at Louvain, attest that Denis O Kelly, an Irish gentleman, having been requested by the late Earl of Tyrconnell, has with great attention assisted and attended upon the son of the said Earl, who by order of his Highness stays with the nuns of St Augustine in the said town. And I testify, as an eye-witness of the same, that he has received nothing from what his Highness has granted and still grants for the education of the said child, not even the smallest amount, for those belonging to him; but he manages with his own pay, and does not trouble anyone. And for the truth of this I have signed this with my own name, at Louvain, 12 Feb. 1610. Fr Hugo Cavello.

These two copies were made, read and certified, each from its



original, and their respective contents guaranteed by me Liberto Melyn, public notary and scrivener of our Lords and Princes and most serene Archdukes resident in their Court and city of Brussels. In testimony whereof I have signed with my name and affixed my usual sign-manual, the 16th day of August in the year of our Lord 1610. Liberto Melyn, notary. EA., liasse 7885. 4.

431. 1610. Feb. 20. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies at Louvain to Luys Verreyken. Noble Sir. We are very much surprised at certain complaints which have been made to her Highness, that we do not dress these young princes according to their state. As we dress them in velvet and hermine, it seems to us that this should be satisfactory. Whenever my revered Sir may wish, he may have this investigated by someone. We fear that this originates from someone who wishes to have the children out of the convent. With regard to the account you wish to have of the amount we have received for these children, we have sent you a receipt for 800 Rhine florins, for the last eight months, that is to say down to 10 August 1609. At present, on this the 10th of February, six more months have passed. It if were possible for us to receive the remaining 600 florins, it would give us great pleasure, and we will send one of our Sisters to Brussels with a blank receipt, to enable her to speak with you also about various matters. Herewith commending my revered Sir to Almighty God, from Louvain, this 20 February 1610. Catharina Tseraerts, Prioress. To my noble Sir, Ludovicus Verreyken, knight, and Secretary of the Audience of his Highness, Brussels. Flemish. EA., liasse 1947. 1.

432. 1610. Feb. 21. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies to Madame Verreyken. May it please your Ladyship to learn that two days ago we wrote a letter to his Excellency in which I informed him that we would send one of our Sisters to Brussels, in case it might please him to send us the money for the board and maintenance of the two little Irish princes, with their nurse and her son, for the half year ended on 10 February of this year 1610. I am sending also one of the suits worn by these children, that your Ladyship may be pleased to assure us that we dress these children as is proper. It is true that we cannot keep them as clean as we would like, but that is the fault of their nurse, who is absolutely dirty. We have much to put up with on this account, and we bear with it because we hope by doing so to serve his Highness and please him, and also because we are poor and hope to gain something by it. Otherwise we should by no means wish to do so, as it brings much disquiet to the convent. We also very humbly beg your Ladyship to be pleased, when we shall have received this money, to allow one of our maids to go with our Sister to buy some material which pleases your ladyship, with which to clothe these children afresh; to make an over garment and an under garment for each of them, and also a new hat for



each. By doing this you will perform an act of great friendship, and we shall not cease to pray for your ladyship according to our poor abilities. Our friendly commendation to his Excellency, and we enclose with this a blank receipt, as we do not know what amount we shall receive. From Louvain, this 21 Feb. 1610. Catharina Tseraerts, Prioress. To the noble Madame, Madame Verreyken, wife to the secretary of the Audience, at Brussels. Flemish. EG. liasse 1747, 7.

433. 1610, Mar. 5. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies to Luys Verreyken. We thank your Excellency for this good payment. We also wrote to your Excellency, two months ago, a letter in which we made it known that these two little earls had had a serious illness, on account of which we had to pay two doctors, and we had to pay also for medicine; all which amounted to four livres. One of the little earls had to be operated upon, for which the surgeon had to be paid two livres. Altogether we should receive six livres. If your Excellency can help us in this, you will do us a great kindness. Our good sub-prioress thanks your Excellency for the present you sent her by our Sister, and commends herself to your good favour; and she will pray heartily for you. From Louvain, this 5th of March 1610. Katharina Tseraerts, Prioress. Flemish. EA., liasse 1747. 1.

434. Undated. Denis Quelly to Luys Verreyken, Secretary of the Audience. Denis Quelly, an Irish gentleman, represents that he is charged with the upbringing of the only son of the Earl of Tyrconnell, who is in Louvain, and of two other children who are with him; and as the Sisters have put one of these children out of the convent, and do not give him what is necessary to support or maintain him during his studies, he is in great want, and is very badly clothed. Wherefore the petitioner, who is charged by his Highness with the care of the said earl and of the other two children, prays your Excellency to give an order, in the form you consider best, authorising him to obtain every month from the said Sisters a fixed and notable sum from the money granted by his Highness for the maintenance of the said earl and the two children, for the support of the said child, and his clothing and studies, in view of the fact that the Sisters have put him out of the convent; and thereby the petitioner will receive favour of your Excellency. To his Excellency. Denis Quelly. EA., liasse 1904. 2.

435. 1610. Mar. 9. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies at Louvain to Luys Verreyken. We thank your Excellency very heartily for your letter, with the enclosed request that we should justify our manner of acting. We regret that the delay has been so long, but the Jesuit Fathers who were witnesses to the agreement were not in town. As we put the nurse's son out of the convent for certain reasons mentioned in our petition, these people wish to know how much extra we are going to contribute



towards the clothing of this woman and her son, We inform your Excellency that this nurse, and the two little earls, with the nurse's son, have been under our charge for a half year. On that account, we have had very much work and anxiety, besides the fact that the nurse tired us continually with her requests that her husband might be allowed to come to meals with her every day at our convent, a thing we neither could nor would allow. After that, she asked us that she might go every day to take her meals with her husband, which seemed to us very reasonable, also upon the advice of the Jesuit Fathers. Consequently we agreed with her husband that we would give two hundred Rhine florins yearly for the expenses of the woman, and eighty Rhine florins for the expenses of the son; and for her clothing, and the clothing of her son, one hundred and thirty Rhine florins. This amounted altogether to four hundred and ten Rhine florins, so that for ourselves we keep only eight hundred and ten florins, for the maintenance of the two little counts, for their clothing and linen, for the laundry of the nurse and her husband and son, a good room with fire and light, and two nuns to look after the said children early and late. If we have not done enough for the nurse and her son, your Excellency will inform us; and should your Excellency judge well, he may inform his Highness of all this. It must be borne in mind that the Jesuit Fathers have approved of everything. We hope the two little counts will be better off, with regard to both food and drink, than with the nurse. We very humbly beg your Excellency to be so good as to defend us always in these matters, so that these two children may remain here for some time longer, as we have had so much trouble and anxiety on their account, and they are now so well that everyone who sees them is surprised. May our Lord grant that they remain so. We hope your Excellency will send us an answer about this; and herewith we commend your Excellency to our Lord in our poor prayers. From Louvain, this 9th of March 1610. Katarina Tseraerts, Prioress.\* Flemish. EA., liasse 1947. 1.

436. 1610. Mar. 10. Louvain. An attestation by Fr Peter Wadding S.J. I Father Peter Wadding, priest of the Society of Jesus, certify that Anna ny Madin, who is an Irishwoman of noble birth, has been for a long time nurse of the Earl of Treconel, who is still a child, and even at present she is sedulously engaged in the same duty of bringing up the child, with all diligence, and she has gone and still daily goes to great trouble on his behalf. On this account I consider her most worthy of commendation to his Highness, that she may receive some reward for her sollicitude and work. Louvain, 30 March 1610. Peter Wadding. Latin. EA., liasse 1885. 4.

437. 1610. May 8. Brussels. Commission to Captain Gaspar Croin, of the camp guides, to lead a company of Irish infantry, along with other troops, from the neighbourhood of Tirlemont



into Flanders by way of Sichem and Waas, crossing the Scheldt at St Bernard, and proceeding thence by Langerbrugge in the direction of Bruges and so to their garrison, marching at least three or four leagues daily. EA., liasse 1986. 2.

438. 1610. May 8, Brussels. Blank commission to lead the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thadeus Carti into Flanders by way of Dendremonde and Ruysbroeck, marching at least four leagues daily. EA., carton 1937.

439. 1610. June 1. Louvain. An attestation by Fr Donagh Mooney O.F.M. I Fr Donatus Moneus, preacher of the Order of Friars Minor of the Observance, hereby attest that when I was Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, and the most excellent Lord of happy memory the Earl of Tyrconnell had committed to my charge to see that proper care was taken for the upbringing and education of his only son, whom, when setting out for Rome, he left at Louvain, I, with the consent of the most excellent Earl, as the boy was greatly in need of a nurse, approached Denis Kelly, whose wife, named Anna ny Madin, gave the boy the best nursing, and up the present has cared for him and brought him up with great attention and sollicitude, not without some detriment to her own interests. And as, upon the present occasion of my departure from here, I have been asked for a testimony of the care thus given by her, I have willingly given this present testimony under my own hand; for I consider it proper that both the son of the Earl, and any others to whom her love and care shall extend, should return thanks for this diligent service. Louvain, this 1 June 1610. Signed: Donatus Moneus, as above, and signed with my own hand.

This has been collated with the original and has been found to agree with it. Attested by me, Conradus Silvius, public notary, apostolic and imperial, this 26 June 1610. EA., liasse 1885. 4.

440. 1610. June 16. Louvain. The Prioress of the White Ladies to Luys Verreyken. We have received your letter which reports that there are certain people who would like to place another woman here to look after the Irish children. This certainly should not be done on any account, as the nurse is back again in our convent, and during the time she was absent the children were very well looked after by the nuns, and her own child too is being nursed. So that from this point of view we suffer no inconvenience or anxiety. Hence our Reverend Mother and all the Sisters respectfully wish your Excellency may be pleased to request on our behalf that we may now retain the first nurse, as we now understand one another. Moreover, she can speak a little Flemish, whereas the other does not know a word of the language; so that we should have to expect more trouble. It also seems to us that it would not be reasonable, since the present nurse with the help of God brought the child back to health; for we are told that when she received charge of him, he had completely wasted away



We therefore again beg very sincerely that everything may remain as it is, for the peace and quiet of both parties; and by making this arrangement you will do us a great kindness. I pray our dear Lord to spare your Excellency for a long and holy life. With our humble commendations, from Louvain, this 16 June 1610. Katharina Tseraerts, Prioress. Flenish.

441. Enclosed: I. Excellency. Hugo O Galuchor represents that his wife and he are the real persons to whom the Earl of Tyrconnell, who died in Rome, committed and gave over his son (who is at present in Louvain) to foster and nurse, and that they brought him from Ireland, and had fostered and nursed him for a year before they left Ireland; and the Earl, his father, when going to Rome left the child in their charge, and they maintained him for a full year and six months in this country at their own expense. After this, they paid another woman to remain with the child in the convent, and she has now given birth to a son and has left the convent to nurse her own boy, with her slovenliness and unpleasantness. And as the term of the hired woman was finished, and she has behaved so unbecomingly, and had looked after her own interests rather than the interests of the child, they beg your Excellency to have orders given that the rightful nurse of the child should be with him, who naturally will take more care of him than one who is a stranger, and will teach him his mother-tongue. Your Excellency did them the favour of writing a letter about this to the Lady Prioress. They come again to beg your Excellency for the love of God to have orders given that the rightful nurse of the child must stay with him in the convent, since it is they who brought him from Ireland, and he was entrusted to them from the hour of his birth, and they lost all their possessions in order to come here with him, and they have no other consolations except this child, or means of support, or income; whereas the other woman is not the rightful nurse of the child, and enjoys support and pay from the King. Moreover, she has her own child to nurse, and there is no reason why she should stay in the convent with the earl, since it is the Irish custom that the most trustworthy and the most nearly connected should nurse and foster the sons of the great, and not strangers. Very illustrious Sir, the true relation of Hugo O Galuchor, Irishman, rightful fosterer of the Earl of Tyrconnell.

442. Enclosed II. Highness. Cecilia O Galuchor, an Irishwoman, represents that the son of the Earl of Tyrconnell, who is in a monastery in Louvain, was entrusted to her to nurse from the moment of his birth, and that she nursed him for a whole year in Ireland, and that in order to come here with him she sacrificed all her belongings, and that the child's father, when he left for Rome, committed him to her to nurse, as she was his rightful nurse. After this the Suppliant, not being in a condition to nurse, looked for another woman to undertake it. The time is now up,



and the woman she looked for has given birth to a child, has left the monastery, and has sons of her own to nurse, and a grant from the King with which to support herself. The Suppliant, besides being the rightful nurse of the child, is poor, lost all her goods in order to come with the child from Ireland, and has nothing to eat except what your Highness with your wanted kindness is pleased to grant her. Wherefore she prays your Highness to have orders given that she should reside with the child in the convent. since she is his true and rightful nurse, to enable her to nurse him well, and attend upon him, and teach him his mother-tongue; and she will thus receive the favour she hopes for from your Highness. Most serene sir, Cecilia O Galuchor, Irishwoman, rightful nurse to the Earl of Tyrconnell. EA., liasse 1947. 1.

443. 1610. June 26. Louvain. An attestation by Doctor Fienus. I, the undersigned, give testimony that for two years from this present time I have attended and treated medically, and restored to health the small son of the most illustrious and most excellent the Earl of Tyrconnell, at present living with the White Ladies of the Order of St Augustine, when he was laid up with a certain illness and in danger of death, perhaps chiefly owing to a deficiency of milk on the part of the first nurse. Whereupon having asked the advice of those friars to whom the care of the son of the said most excellent Earl had been confided, after I had examined the bodily health of Madame Anna Ny Madin, the wife of Denis Kelly, I designated her as proper for the nursing of the said child, so that in this wise he might somehow be saved from death. This she has most faithfully performed, and performs at present with the greatest care, and most sedulously, and she spares no effort to rear him. At her request for a testimonial from me of the dutifulness she has shown and the service she has rendered, I have thought well to give her this letter, signed with my name. Louvain, 26 June 1610. Thomas Fienus, first professor of Medicine. Latin. EA., liasse 1885. 4.

444. 1610. Aug. 18. Louvain. Sister Anna Van Wamel to Luys Verreyken. With all respect we beg most sincerely that if possible we may receive for the half-year ending on this 10th of August 1610 the expenses for food and lincn etc. of the young Earl of Tyrconnell and his cousin, and of the nurse and her son. By granting this, you will do us a friendly act; and herewith we commend ourselves to the good favours of your Excellency and his beloved wife. Our good subprioress, your honourable niece, also does the same, with the prayers of all the good community, praying for the preservation of your Excellency for a long and happy life. From Louvain, this 18th of August 1610. Your very humble servant, Sister Anna Van Wamel, procuratrix of the White Ladies at Louvain. To the Minister of the Audience of his Highness. Presented at Brussels. Flemish. F.A., liasse 1947, 1.



445. 1610. Aug. 26. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Captain Deste, governor of Weert. Informs him that he has done well to send in his letter the information which the confessor of the Irish had discovered, that there was something new afoot, and to give warning that there was danger lest the soldiers who were the prime movers in the business might try to surprise the town of Weert in order to carry out their evil designs. Deste is to find out the full truth, and discover to which nation the soldiers belong, and report everything in detail as soon as possible. EA., carton 1935.
446. 1610. Sept. 3. Weert. Captain Geoffrey Deste to Secretary Prats. Only two of the Irish soldiers were concerned in the affair at Weert, the prime mover and his accuser. The former has been punished according to his deserts, and as an example to the rest. Moreover, his plans could never have succeeded.\* EA., liasse 1885. 4.
447. 1610. Oct. 8. Brussels. The Archdukes Albert and Isabella to the Prioress and Community of the White Ladies at Louvain. Religious persons, dear and well beloved. Whereas after mature deliberation we have thought proper that the son of the Earl of Tyrconnell and his cousin, whom you have at present under your charge, should in future be boarded with the Irish Franciscans resident in our town of Louvain, along with the two sons of the Earl of Tyrone, we have thought well to inform you of this by these present letters, and at the same time to order, as we hereby expressly do order, that you place him in the hands and under the charge of Fr Hugo Cavello, Guardian of the said convent, together with all the clothing and outfit of the children. To which we add only that we are satisfied and grateful to you for the care you had of them. as also for the good attention you have bestowed upon these children; and when you send us your account of the amount due to you under this heading, we shall have full and entire payment made to you, as is proper. Draft. EA., liasse. 1947. 1.
448. 1610. Oct. 10. Louvain. A Receipt for Expenses. We Kateryna Tserraerts, prioress of the convent of the White Ladies at Louvain, and Sister Van Wamel, procuratrix, acknowledge that we have received from the hands of Monsieur Verreyken, Minister of the Audience of his Highness, the sum of eight hundred and thirty nine florins, in one remittance, for the food, clothing, linen, and doctor's fees, for the young boy Tyrconnell and his cousin, together with the nurse and her son, during the eight weeks which ended on 10 October. *Actum etc.* Katharina Tseraerts, Prioress. Sister Van Wamel, procuratrix. Flemish. EA., liasse 1904. 2.
449. 1610. Oct. 12. Fr Hugo Cavello to Luys Verreyken. May our Lord have your Excellency in His keeping. Today, Tuesday, I delivered to the nuns the order your Excellency gave me, but they answered that they would not allow the children to leave



until they were paid what is owing to them. They represent, moreover, that the child is very small, and will not be able to live without them, and that he will be able to leave in a year's time. I am surprised that they hold in such slight respect the order which your Excellency sent them, and as for what concerns myself, God knows that I have never done anything to bring the children to our house, to rob us in great part of our quiet; but as Mr Secretary Mancidor ordered me in the name of his Highness to come to your Excellency's house for this command, it would be unreasonable for me to refuse the charge. That your Excellency may not look upon me as raising difficulties against the orders I have received, I transcribe herewith the answer which the Mother of the nuns gave me, along with the rest. I neither have made nor do make any claims as regards anything which concerns them, and of this I think you are a very good witness. I will not inform Mr. Secretary Mancidor of their answer before I receive the answer to this from your Excellency, whom may our Lord keep as I desire. Your Excellency's chaplain Fr Hugo Cavello, guardian of the Irish convent. EA., liasse 1947. 1.

450.

Undated. [Oct. 1610]. The White Ladies of Louvain to the Archduke Albert. The nuns at Louvain who are charged with nursing the Irish child, the little Earl of Tyrconnell, represent that it is not becoming that he should leave them and their convent, as he is only three and not yet four years old, and it is necessary that he should have a woman with him, to take care of him, and she cannot do this at the Franciscans, where they wish to place him. The nuns represent in particular that he will not bear to be separated from his nurse, because as she attended him when he was dying in Louvain, he cherishes and loves her tenderly, and the nuns too, on account of their good nursing. Recently, when he was told that he would have to leave them, he screamed, and bled from the nose. Moreover, the place where the Franciscans live is the most unhealthy in all Louvain, and Colonel John O'Neill who lives there is unwell, and so often enough are the Franciscans themselves; whereas the baby earl, during the two years he has been with the nuns, has never been unwell, but always strong and bright. There are some Irish people for whom it is not of particular interest that the child be here or elsewhere, who say nevertheless that there is great danger that he will die should he leave the nuns. These Irish people maintain this. For these reasons, and also considering that the expense to your Highness will be less if the child be with the nuns than if he were with the Franciscans, they beg he may be left with them until he is a little older, and more sensible; and in this manner your Highness will do a great service to God and to this child. Your Highness, the Nuns at Louvain. EA., liasse 1947. 1.

451.

1610. Oct. 15. Binche, Juan de Mancidor to Luys Verreyken. Along with your Excellency's letter of yesterday I received that



of the Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, and at the same time the petition of the nuns; and while understanding the difficulties which the nuns raise, and their insistence that the little Earl of Tyrconnell stay with them, yet as this is no way feasible, your Excellency will be pleased to give orders that he be removed from there immediately. And as it is proper to pay them whatever is owing to them, I am writing to Arandia, so that the necessary money be had immediately. God keep your Excellency as I desire. Juan de Mancidor.\* EA., liasse 1904.2.

452.

1611. Mar. 6. Douai. Sebastian Hanedouche, seigneur of Hunctun, to the Archduke Albert. Cornelius Bishop of Killaloe, uncle of my son-in-law Dermot Roger Omalun, and the Irish nobility who reside about the person of his Majesty, have again importuned me to make fresh instance with his Highness on behalf of Omallun. As a new council is being instituted at Mons, and there are some vacancies in the councils at Malines and Ghent, and as Omallun is a licentiate in Law, and is naturalised, and knows the languages and customs of the country, and is suited for any office his Highness may bestow upon him, and enjoys no income from his own confiscated estate, the petitioner begs that in consideration of the prayers of the bishop and nobles, and of his own services during twenty years to his Majesty and the Archduke, as counsellor, lieutenant, and first ordinary judge of the judiciary of the cities of Ghent and Douai and Orsi; and also in consideration of the unlimited services of his ancestors in war and administration, and of his uncle Colonel Clarambon, seigneur of Merna, who was sent as ambassador of these States to Louis XI of France to treat of peace, and was cruelly executed by him at Hesdin, his Highness may grant a place to Dermot Roger Omalun on the council of Mons, or elsewhere. The bishop has asked the petitioner to say that what he desires above all else for his nephew is that he might be a servant of his Highness's household, rather than the first counsellor of the land; but as there is no place for him in that position, may his Highness be pleased to make use of him as his servant and minister on some one of the councils. EA., liasse 1886. 2.

453.

1611. Mar. 20. Douai. Petition of Christopher Cusack to the Archduke in favour of Omalun. Latin. As in the preceding. EA., carton 1938.

454.

1611. Mar. 16. Douai. Davie [Kearny] Archbishop of Cashel, to the Archduke Albert. Whereas lately, as I have heard, your Highness has decided, at the instance of many gentlemen of rank, to promote Dermot Roger Omallun to some post which may soon become vacant in your provinces, and some such are vacant at this moment in various places; and whereas I understand that by a decree of your Highness a new council is to be established at Mons in Hainault; confiding in the generosity of your Highness, I presume to present this my letter, and most humbly to beg



that some post be provided for the said Dermot Omallun in this council at Mons, or elsewhere if more convenient. For whereas he realises that from his youth he has been educated in virtue and letters solely by your munificence, so at present he knows that he can hope for no other Maecenas or protector but your Highness. Neither has he any other ambition in seeking office than, having been laden with your favours, to devote himself henceforward altogether to your service, in testimony of his gratitude, and when he has received office, to dedicate to the public service of Belgium, since he is an exile from his own country, the fruits of his present endeavours. I was all the more willing to make this petition as I felt confident that the said Dermot will afford your Highness the fullest satisfaction, and as I am convinced that the letters of naturalisation given to him by your Highness, and the letters of the university of Douai which certify that he has graduated in both Laws, would have been granted only to one capable of undertaking public service. Moreover he is ready to undergo any examination which may be thought necessary. I shall esteem any favour which your Highness may confer upon him as though conferred upon myself, and shall consider myself all the more obliged on that account to have continual remembrance of your Highness in the Holy Sacrifice. Whom may God long preserve for our welfare and the welfare of the whole Christian community. Latin. EA., liasse 1947. 2.

455.

1611. May. Brussels. The trial by Puteanus, judge of the Criminal Court, of six Irish soldiers who had left the hospital at Malines on 24 May 1611, Patrick Macarti, Richard Burgo of the garrison at Herentals, Thadeus Singardel of the garrison at Ostend, Oliver Canthon of the garrison at Hulst, Thomas Herbert from Damme, and Edmund Magregiborn from Philippeville. On their way to Brussels they came to a tavern near the fountain at Vilvorde, where they stayed to drink with a passer-by, and spent twenty eight sous. They then left for Brussels, but the stranger complained that they had robbed him of his purse. They denied the accusation, and before going further, showed what money they had upon them. Upon reaching Brussels, they were arrested by the guard, who had been informed of what had happened by those who had come from Vilvorde by boat. At the trial by the civil authorities at Brussels. no proof was brought against them, and the owner of the purse did not even appear. Four of them were released, but Macarti was detained because although he belonged to Hulst he had come to Brussels, giving as his reason that he was going to pay his devotions to Our Lady at Hal, and return to Hulst afterwards. Thadeus Sangardel was detained because if the purse had been stolen, he must have been the thief, as he was nearest to the stranger. EA., carton 1939.

456.

1611. June 9. Order for the release of Brian Onachten, with orders that he is to return to his own country. Had been ill for a



time at Ostend and Damme, and had gone to Louvain to ask help from his colonel, who lives there, as he had not enough money for his journey home. Had been arrested while on his way from Louvain to Brussels. Arrested along with him, but released as his papers were in order, was William Kelly, soldier of the garrison at Ostend. He himself had gone to Louvain on his way to Our Lady at Montaigu, and when he was on his way back because he had heard that a muster was to be held, he had been arrested. EA., carton 1939.

457. 1611. July 28. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Bernard Gormlaeus; to serve as chaplain in the Irish company of infantry of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 3.
458. 1611. Aug. 5. Brussels. Grant to the Earl of Tyrconnel and Hugh Oneill. "Be it known that whereas his Majesty has written to us by a letter of 28 June last that in consideration of the rank of the Earl of Tyrconnell and of Hugh Oneill, his cousin, and for other reasons he has for honouring and entertaining them, he has thought well to assign to the said Earl 100 crowns monthly, and 50 crowns monthly to the said Hugh, for their support and maintenance; in conformity therewith we consider it well to assign to each of them the said grant, to be drawn upon the army, without obligation to serve until they shall have reached the proper age." EG, reg. 25, fol. 5v.
459. 1611. Aug. 12. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly to Gelasio Lurcano, upon the garrison at Cambrai; to live at Douai, as he has done up to the present.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 12v.
460. 1611. Aug. 13. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the monthly grant of two crowns to John Bath, of the Irish infantry, although he neither assists nor serves with it, as he has duties to perform at Louvain.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 13.
461. 1611. Aug. 26. Brussels. Licence for six months to Henry Sammes, pensioner in the Irish infantry, to enable him to go to Rome and Loreto, in fulfilment of a vow. EG., reg. 25, fol. 19.
462. 1611. Aug. 30. Brussels. Licence for two months, to go to Aix-la-Chapelle, to Thomas Barnebal, pensioner of the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 25, fol. 22.
463. 1611. Sept. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thadeus Obrenan, pensioner in the citadel of Cambrai. EG., reg. 25, fol. 33.
464. 1611. Sept. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Everard, pensioner in the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 33.
465. 1611. Sept. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Cormac Carti, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 35.
466. 1611. Sept. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to George Ichingham,\* of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscol, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 37v.



467. 1611. Sept. 14. Brussels. Licence to go to Rome in fulfillment of a vow to William Keran, of the company of Captain William Barret, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 38.
468. 1611. Sept. 14. Brussels. Licence to go to Rome in fulfillment of a vow to Melon Roche, of the company of Captain William Baret. EG., reg. 25, fol. 38.
469. 1611. Sept. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Mor, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 25, fol. 38.
470. 1611. Sept. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Thomas Goodman, of the company of Captain James Garlan, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 39v.
471. 1611. Sept. 17. Brussels. Licence for six months to Mortagh Fay, to go to Rome in fulfillment of a vow. EG., reg. 25, fol. 40v.
472. 1611. Sept. 20. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the special grant of eight crowns monthly to William Oscachnati, which had been suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him last June.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 44v.
473. 1611. Sept. 26. Mariemont. Grant of ten crowns thirty two placas monthly to Denis Queli; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 25, fol. 64.
474. 1611. Oct. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to David Walsh, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 54.
475. 1611. Oct. 20. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Conel, of the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 35, fol. 71.
476. 1611. Nov. 1. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Licentiate Edmond Oquelli. EG., reg. 25, fol. 81v.
477. 1611. Nov. 20. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to William Senan, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 89.
478. 1611. Dec. 12. Brussels. Licence for France for two months, to seek a cure, to Hugo Brenan, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 101.
479. 1611. Dec. 19. Brussels. Grant of fifty crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Geraldin; to serve about our person. EG., reg. 25, fol. 106v.
480. 1611. Dec. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on personal business to Thomas Ayo, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 106v.
481. 1611. Dec. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmund Suyni, pensioner in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 108.
482. 1612. Jan. 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Col Oquelli, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 118v.
483. 1612. Jan. 13. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of forty crowns monthly held by Captain Thomas Stanihurst, to the Irish infantry from the castle at Antwerp; to serve in the Irish



- infantry. EG., reg. 25, fol. 123v.
484. 1612. Jan. 31. Brussels. Safe conduct for Edward Eustace, Irishman, who has represented that he has been in these States for some months to collect debts, but had been arrested by the judge advocate of the camp, and kept in prison for seven or eight days. He had then been banished from the country, although he had done nothing whatever contrary to the service of the Archdukes. He is a stranger, poor, and burdened with debts which are due to him from the Archdukes' subjects. EA., carton 1946.
485. 1612. Feb. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Carti,\* pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG. reg. 25, fol. 131.
486. 1612. Feb. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Christopher Talbot, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 139v.
487. 1612. Feb. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on personal business to Theobald de Burgo, pensioner in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 139v.
488. 1612. Mar. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on personal business to George Varen, of the company of Captain James Garlon. EG., reg. 25, fol. 152.
489. 1612. Mar. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on personal business to James Hadsor, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 152v.
490. 1612. Mar. 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on personal business to Denis Suyni, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 157v.
491. 1612. Apr. 2. Brussels. Licence for Scotland to William Eruin, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 169.
492. 1612. Apr. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Patrick Rath, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 187v.
493. 1612. May 14. Brussels. Charles O Daly to the Infanta Isabella. Represents that after he had been for a long time a prisoner and persecuted by the heretics of his own country, he had found a means of escape and had fled with two hundred of his relations, kinsmen and friends, to France, where he had left them all, and had come here himself with the purpose of bringing them into the service of his Majesty. As there had been no opportunity to have them received into service, or for the suppliant to obtain a commission as their captain, because four new captains had been named to go to Ireland for men before he had arrived, he finds himself in debt, and has no other remedy than to have recourse to her Highness. In consideration of his exile, and of the great losses and services of his ancestors on behalf of the Spanish Crown, he begs her Highness may be pleased to write in commendation of him to the Queen of France, or at least to his Majesty's or her own ambassador at Paris, that he may be given



- a captain's commission in the service of the King of France with the said two hundred soldiers, who are all awaiting him in the neighbourhood of Paris, since there is no desire to receive him into the service here. Referred to de la Faille. EA., carton 1944.
494. 1612. May 14. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Thadeus Mahan, of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 25, fol. 203v.
495. 1612. May 17. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Anthony Tadeo, of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscoll; to be cured of certain infirmities. EG., reg. 25, fol. 205.
496. 1612. May 17. Mariemont. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 9 July 1611) to pay henceforward in Flanders to Mariana Mahuna the two reales daily paid to her hitherto at Coruña; in consideration of her sufferings and losses in her own country for the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 25, fol. 205v.
497. 1612. June 23. Rome. Philip Maes to the Archduke Albert. Yesterday the Earl of Tyrone, an Irishman, came to visit me, asking me to consent on his behalf to kiss the hands of your most serene Highness, and to thank you for your favours, including the care and protection you have had of his sons; and he begs you to continue so to act, in consideration of the services of the father, and of the services he still hopes to perform, by God's grace, should the occasion present itself. He said, too, that in that country [Flanders] there is an Irish gentleman, a vassal of his, named Cornelius O Rely, who, while serving your Highness in the war, went with licence to Poland, to seek command of a regiment there, but was not successful. It appears that when he returned to his previous service difficulty was raised about allowing him his former pension. In consideration of the merits of this gentleman, the Earl begs your Highness to be pleased to order that he may receive his pension. The Earl would have written himself, but as he knows only his native language, he has asked me to perform this duty in his name, which I did not know how to refuse, as I felt confident that your Highness would receive it in good part. EAR., reg. 447, vol. 13, fol. 58.
498. 1612. June 24. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Denis Geraldino, of the company of Captain James Geraldin. EG., reg. 25, fol. 240.
499. 1612. July 6. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Richard Geni, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 247v.
500. 1612. July 13. Brussels. The Archdukes Albert and Isabella to Philip Maes. "As regards the Irish Earl of Tyrone, we have heard willingly what you have written, and you may tell him that we will see whether what he asks for Cornelius O Reilly can be done. You will be informed of this in its proper time." EAR., reg. 447. vol. 13, fol. 130v.
501. 1612. July 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard fitz



- James, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 25, fol. 248.
502. 1612. July 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Mlaghlin Obrine, of the company of Captain James Galon. EG., reg. 25, fol. 248.
503. 1612. July 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Walter Tobin, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 248.
504. 1612. July 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Bernard Oconor, of the company of Captain James Carlon. EG., reg. 25, fol. 252v.
505. 1612. July 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Donogh MacIneslis, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 252v.
506. 1612. July 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Hugo O Mulloy, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 254v.
507. 1612. July 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmond Thomas Geraldin, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 25, fol. 255.
508. 1612. July 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Gaspar Copinger, of the company of Captain Jamee Garlandt. EG., reg. 25, fol. 258v.
509. 1612. July 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Hierleston, of the company of Captain James Garlandt; to Alexander Robertson, of the same company; and to Eugenio Sullivan of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 259.
510. 1612. July 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to David Otortau, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain James Garlandt. EG., reg. 25, fol. 259.
511. 1612. July 27. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to Eugenio Soyni; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 25, fol. 260.
512. 1612. Aug. 2. Brussels. Orders to transfer the monthly grant of six crowns held by Anna Madina on the Irish infantry to her daughter Cecilia Queli. EG., reg. 25, fol. 261v.
513. 1612. Aug. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Ofilan, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 261v.
514. 1612. Aug. 16. Brussels. Commission to Stephen Meagh as quartermaster-sergeant of the regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 278.
515. 1612. Aug. 18. Rome. Philip Maes to the Archduke Albert. I had an occasion some days ago of communicating to the Irish Earl of Tyrone the kind answer given by your Highness on 13 July, which pleased him greatly, and he thanked your Highness for it, in testimony of which he kissed your signature. The

enclosed letter in answer contains, I think, still another petition and request, which he has asked me to communicate. He begs you may be pleased to add this new favour to the former ones, namely that as his son, Bernard Oneill, who resides at Louvain, has not yet been confirmed, your Highness would be pleased to be his godfather in this sacrament; and in case you were not pleased to present yourself in person, to deign to delegate someone else in your name. EAR., reg. 447, vol. 13, fol. 179.

516. 1612. Aug. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thadeus Halpeni, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 276.
517. 1612. Aug. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard de Burgo, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 277.
518. 1612. Aug. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Walter de Burgo, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 277.
519. 1612. Aug. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Neill O Keherni, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 281.
520. 1612. Aug. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Leonard Garce, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 281.
521. 1612. Aug. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Daniel Muledi, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 283.
522. 1612. Aug. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Macmoris,\* of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 25, fol. 283.
523. 1612. Aug. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Richard Conor, of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscol. EG., reg. 25, fol. 285v.
524. 1612. Aug. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Mer, of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 25, fol. 285v.
525. 1612. Aug. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thadeus Denis Suliban, of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscol. EG., reg. 25, fol. 285v.
526. 1612. Sept. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Omulchonor, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 290.
527. 1612. Sept. 7. Brussels. The Archdukes Albert and Isabella to Philip Maes. Along with your letter of the 18th of last month we have received the letter of the Earl of Tyrone, and have learned from it with pleasure the satisfaction he feels at our intention of favouring his affairs here whenever an opportunity may arise. In the meantime, in compliance with his request, we have sent someone to be present at the confirmation of his son Bernard Oneill. Excerpt. EAR., reg. 447, fol. 179.



528. 1612. Sept. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Oquelly, of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, EG., reg. 25, fol. 304.
529. 1612. Sept. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmond Maganille, of the company of Colonel John Oneill; to Edmond Roche of the company of Captain William Barret; to William Malson and Edmond Felipe of the same company. EG., reg. 24, fol. 315.
530. 1612. Sept. 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ferdinand Gernuni, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 318.
531. 1612. Sept. 27. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Dermot Hualono, chaplain of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin; to accompany the Countess Clancarti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 315v.
532. 1612. Sept. 29. Rome. Philip Maes to the Archduke Albert. "I received the last letters of your Highness on the 27th of last month, and tomorrow, with God's help, I will give the Earl of Tyrone an account of the new favour you have shown him concerning the confirmation of his son Bernard Oneill." EAR., reg. 447, vol. 13, fol. 205.
533. 1612. Oct. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edward Dixon, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, and Edmond Reylle, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 322v.
534. 1612. Rome. Philip Maes to the Archduke Albert. "I have conveyed to the Earl of Tyrone the new favour you have been pleased to show him on the occasion of the confirmation of his son Bernard. He, and the Countess, Bernard's mother, were greatly rejoiced, and humbly thank your Highness." EAR., reg. 447, vol. 13, fol. 210.
535. 1612. Oct. 8. Mariemont. Orders to pay the grant of forty crowns monthly, at present held on the Irish infantry by Captain Walter de la Hoyd, "about our person, where he will enjoy the grant in future." EG., reg. 25, fol. 324v.
536. 1612. Oct. 9. Mariemont. Orders for the payment of twelve crowns monthly to Donat Omaelano; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 324.
537. 1612. Oct. 29. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to George Lalor, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 25, fol. 333v.
538. 1612. Dec. 20. Brussels. Grant of pension of sixteen crowns two placas and two thirds to Dermot Omallun, gentleman of the royal household; "to serve about our person." EG., reg. 25, fol. 355v.
539. 1613. Jan. 11. Brussels. Letters of authorisation to seek for alms granted to William Roche and Peter Bellemy, sailors, who have represented that they had served for many years in the fleet at Dunkirk, and were actually in the service of the Grand

Duke of Tuscany when their ship, which was laden with sugar for Dunkirk, was wrecked, with the loss of eighteen of their companions, and all their own goods and belongings. As they wish to get back to Dunkirk, and have no means to support them on the journey, they very humbly beg of their Highnesses a passport which will authorise them to receive help. CPE., 1356.

540. 1613. Jan. 12. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 29 June 1612) of twenty five crowns monthly to Eugenio Bardeo, Irish gentleman; to serve in the army in such manner as shall be ordered. EG., reg. 25, fol. 361v.
541. 1613. Jan. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Conor, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 361.
542. 1613. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for England to David Cravart, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 367.
543. 1613. Jan. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ulic de Burgo, of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin. EG., reg. 25, fol. 369v.
544. 1613. Feb. 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Cornelius Obrin, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 385.
545. 1613. Feb. 25. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 10 Sept. 1612) of six crowns monthly to Thomas Barot, Irishman, in consideration of his services with the ocean fleet; "in the assault made at San Juan de Luz on the admiral's ship of the squadron of Cantabria, in which the ship was lost, he was instrumental in saving the men aboard by swimming for help." The special grant awarded on that occasion is to be paid henceforward in Flanders, whither Thomas Barot is now proceeding, to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 25, fol. 387.
546. 1613. Mar. 26. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Donah Macdouil, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, and to Rou Doulen and Edward Turel, of the same company. EG., reg. 25, fol. 400v.-401.
547. 1613. Mar. 28. Brussels. Licence for six months to Ensign Denis Rathe, of the company of Colonel John Oneill, to enable him to go to Our Lady of Loreto in fulfilment of a vow. EG., reg. 25, fol. 402.
548. 1613. Apr. 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Patrick Rathe, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill, and to William Brislan of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 414v.
549. 1613. Apr. 20. Brussels.\* Licence for Ireland to Daniel Oquelli, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 417v.
550. 1613. Apr. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Aulon



- Obrin, of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 25, fol. 418.
551. 1613. Apr. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Philip Mactrenir, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 422.
552. 1613. May 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Miller, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 423.
553. 1613. May 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Hay, of the company of Captain William Barret.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 428v.
554. 1613. May 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Walter Sea, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 426v.
555. 1613. May 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Daniel Angloin, of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscol. EG., reg. 25, fol. 430.
556. 1613. May 19. Brussels. John de Ley to the Archduke Albert. Represents that his father Vasco de Ley an Irishman, died when absent from his country, and left his property to John, who is his son. John gave authorisation to Gaspar Grande, an Irishman, and secretary in England to the King of Spain, to petition the King of England, in his name, to order Thomas Ley, his uncle on his father's side, resident in the town of Qelquein, to deliver over the entailed property which he inherited from his father. The said uncle refuses to hand over the property, although he has been asked several times; neither will he deliver it up unless the King of England orders him. The suppliant therefore begs for a letter to this effect from the Archduke to the said King, and another letter to the ambassador at London, of which mention will be made of the service rendered by his father to the Archduke, in Lisbon, and to the King in Spain. EA., liasse 1984.
557. 1613. May 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Mahorone, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 25, fol. 432.
558. 1613. May 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Quien Mahon, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 25, fol. 432v.
559. 1613. May 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Raphael Hely, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 436.
560. 1613. May 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Coffloy, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, foll 436.
561. 1613. July 12. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 23 Feb. 1611) that Captain Eugenio Oneill is to be given his pay for the six months he was absent from Flanders. He has represented that his father served in the recent wars in Ireland, and was one of the principal Catholic leaders,

and that he himself came to Flanders to serve his Majesty and commanded a company of infantry for four years, until it was disbanded. EG., reg. 25, fol. 463v.

562. 1613. July 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Henry Maller, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 25, fol. 465v.
563. 1613. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Haquet, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 25, fol. 478.
564. 1613. Aug. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Mathias Weston, of the company of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 25, fol. 482.
565. 1613. Aug. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Cornelius Odriscol, of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscol, and to Cornelius Anglois, of the same company. EG., reg. 25, fol. 484.
566. 1613. Aug. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Oquelli, of the company of Captain James Garlan; to Philip Trant, of the company of Captain Thadeus Carti; and to Malachi Olem of the same company. EG., reg. 25, fol. 484v.
567. 1613. Aug. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Macon Driscol, of the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscol. EG., reg. 25, fol. 483v.
568. 1613. Sept. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmond Oceanam, of the company of Captain Charles Garlon. EG., reg. 25, fol. 498v.
569. 1613. Sept. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Conor Omorley, of the company of Captain William Barret. EG., reg. 25, fol. 497v.
570. 1613. Sept. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Connio, hitherto pensioner in the citadel of Cambrai. EG., reg. 25, fol. 505v.
571. 1613. Sept. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to David Barri, of the company of Captain James Garland.\* EG., reg. 25, fol. 505v.
572. 1613. Oct. 24. Ventosilla. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. The Nuncio of his Holiness has presented to me the memorial of which a copy accompanies this, concerning the non-reduction of the grants and alms which are given to the seminaries and convents of the English, Scots and Irish in those States; and on account of the just reasons there are for seeking the welfare of that nation, I have decided that the reduction of payments should not extend to the alms and grants which are given to the convents, seminaries and persons mentioned by the Nuncio; and in conformity with this your Highness will issue orders, for such is my will. EGC., reg. 177, fol. 165.
573. Enclosed: The Nuncio of his Holiness humbly presents to your Majesty a communication of the Nuncio in Flanders, which represents that the Catholic subjects of the King of England are



maintained principally in the States of Flanders by the assistance and grants of your Majesty, which were first made by King Philip II of glorious memory, now in heaven. Hence at the universities of Louvain and Douai, and in the cities of St Omer and Brussels, there are various seminaries, and convents of religious and of nuns, English, Scotch, and Irish. And whereas on account of the last reduction made relating to the army there, the payment of the said assistance and grants to these convents and seminaries has already been suspended for some months past, the nuncio humbly presents for your Majesty's consideration the need in which those pious houses stand of the continuation of the usual assistance, for the exaltation of the holy Catholic faith, and in view of the importance of preserving and augmenting the Catholic party in those kingdoms, for the service of God, and the glory and authority of your Majesty. EGC., reg. 177, fol. 166.

574. 1614. Jan. 30. Brussels. Daniel Farrell to the Archduke Albert. Daniel Farrell, an Irish soldier and pensioner belonging to the company of Captain Cornelius Odriscoll, represents that although his inheritance and possessions, which were large, were confiscated by the King of England, and he himself obliged to go into exile to the King of Spain, who in consideration of the services in which the suppliant engaged himself and his vassals in defence of the Catholic faith, granted him a pension of fifteen crowns monthly, which he enjoyed until the general reduction of such pensions by one third, which left him with ten crowns: since the general reduction made in June 1613, he has not more than five crowns, for himself, his wife and his three children in this Court, and to maintain this burden he has had even to sell his clothes, and at present he is without hope. Wherefore he humbly begs your Highness, for the love of God, to order the Secretary of the Audience to grant him a written licence, and his wife and children, to go about the country begging, until such time as a general decision shall be made concerning all such pensioners.

Referred to the Secretary of the Audience. Begging letters for three months. Brussels.\* 4 Feb. 1614. CPE., carton 1356.

575. 1614. Feb. 10. Brussels. An account of the contributions to the under-mentioned religious, which have been annulled as a result of the last general reduction on the army, and of what each of those bodies enjoyed monthly: The Jesuits, 200 crowns monthly, instead of 300 crowns which they received until 7 April 1609. 200. The Scots' seminary at Douai, 91: 33 1/3. The Irish students at Douai, 2,000 crowns yearly, 166: 33 1/3. The English Benedictine nuns at Brussels, 50 crowns monthly. 50. The English Carthusians at Malines, 10 gold crowns monthly. 120. St Dominic's, 40. Our Lady of Mount Carmel's, 40. St Francis's, 40. St Augustin's, 40. The grants enjoyed formerly



by the above mentioned bodies have been annulled, and this is what they enjoy at present.\* EGC., reg. 177, fol. 167.

576. 1614. June 9. Douai.<sup>1</sup> Sebastian Handouche, seigneur of Hunctun, to the Archduke Albert. Feels very sure that the Archduke intends to favour in good time Dermot Omallun, gentleman of his Household, even though the petitioner has refrained for a whole year from commending him. As he himself is now infirm, and in danger of death on account of his advanced age, he cannot refrain from informing his Highness of the many complaints of some of his most important relations, that he had given his only daughter in marriage to a stranger, to the exclusion of many rich men of the country. They had said that last year Omallun had lost his grant from the government and had received nothing in its place. Although these complaints had been the cause of his own illness, he would not fail to maintain his son-in-law and his family in the service of his Highness, as honourably as any other man of his rank, as he has done during the three years he has been serving his Highness, with his establishment at Brussels. He begs, however, that to put a stop to the complaints, and in consideration of his own many services, and the services of the Colonel his deceased brother, governor of Hesdin, and out of regard of the loss of estate of his son-in-law, and of the services of his uncle, Cornelius, Bishop of Killaloe, who is at present in Portugal, the grant of 200 florins yearly which Omallun enjoys from his Highness, may be increased by another hundred florins at least, to be paid from the finances of Douay. The quantity does not matter so long as there is an increase upon the two hundred florins, and this will please the petitioner more than if his Highness gave him hereditary possession of an estate, as it is only to please his relations that he asks for it, and to let them see that they are wrong about the esteem his Highness has of Omallun. This will encourage the petitioner to grant his son-in-law a still larger income during the few remaining years of his own life, and to make him his heir of his lands and estate when he himself shall die. EA., liasse 1887. 3.
577. 1614. July 28. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to the governor of Hulst. Orders to permit the infantry companies of Captain Danly and Captain Thadeus Carti to leave the town when Colonel Claude de Lamoy shall require, as their services are needed elsewhere. EA., liasse 1938.
578. 1614. July 28. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Count d'Egmont. Orders to receive and billet on 11 and 12 of August the company of Irish infantry of Captain Artur Oneill, which is being sent from Philippeville on 11 August so as to reach the neighbourhood of Namur on August 12. The company is to march on August 13 with the regiment of Count de Hoochstraet, under the command of the colonel, towards Maestricht. EA., liasse 1960. 1.



579. 1614. Nov. 10. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Dermot Umallu, an Irish gentleman, Master of Hageru and gentleman of my Court, is of noble birth, and as he himself will more fully inform your Majesty, his uncles expended all their possessions in defence of the Catholic cause. As his relatives have procured for him an ecclesiastical pension which brings in 2,000 crowns, he desires, for the better enjoyment of it, that your Majesty may be pleased to reward him with the honour of a knighthood. As he is under my patronage, I have thought well earnestly to beg your Majesty to grant him this favour, in compensation of his great losses.<sup>1</sup> EGC., reg. 518, fol. 69.
580. 1615. Jan. 24. Araganda. Philip III to Juan de Mancicidor. Has seen Mancicidor's letter of the 21st of October to the Secretary of state Ciriza, about the payments to be made to the Irish. As it is understood that the persons of that nation are not to enjoy pensions and grants exceeding a total of 1,000 crowns, any portion of that amount which falls vacant is to be allotted to someone who does not already enjoy a grant, and it is not to be disposed of in any other manner. EGC., reg. 523, fol. 35.
581. 1615. May 2. Diest. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. When the Earl of Tyrone came to these States as a fugitive from Ireland, great efforts were made on different occasions by the King of England through his ambassador to have him handed over, as was made clear in the reports which I sent to your Majesty. Your Majesty thought well to approve of the expedient of sending the Earl to Rome, both to avoid any embarrassment, and to give some satisfaction to the King, by the Earl's departure from here. And whereas during these days (by different reports, and in particular through the report of the agent of the King who resides here, and who complains that such a thing is allowed) I have heard that the Earl is returning to these States, I have written to Count de Castro to divert his coming, and to see that it is put off until I have given an account of the affair to your Majesty, and reported my own opinion. Since, as I say, the Earl left these States on account of the King of England, and as a complaint that he is returning is laid with me on the King's behalf, it seems proper not to give his Majesty reason for complaint, or offend him. I beg your Majesty that under these considerations you command the Earl not to come here, and so avoid the embarrassment which his coming would cause.<sup>1</sup>
- In the hand of the Archduke: This draft is satisfactory, and may be drawn up in a fair copy.
582. 1615. July 31. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Prince de Ligne. Orders to billet for two nights in the neighbourhood of Pont-à-Wendin, by which route they will enter the district of Lille in order to proceed further, a certain number of Irish soldiers under Captain Thadeus Osulevan whom he has been



ordered to conduct from Arras to Hulst by way of the castle of Lille. EA., liasse 1962. 2.

583. 1615. July 21. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Count de Genappes. Captain Thadeus Osulliban has been ordered to conduct 100 Irish soldiers from Arras to Hulst. Orders to provide him with quarters for three nights when he reaches Pont-à-Wendin, and to inform him of the places where he is to halt until he reaches Estampuys, whence he will proceed to Hulst. EA., liasse 1962. 2.

584. 1615. July 31. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to the governor of Hulst. Orders to billet in the usual way the Irish soldiers of the company of Captain Thadeus Osulliban. EA., liasse 1938. 2.

585. 1615. Sept. 20. Burgos. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. It has been represented to me by Dermot Umallu, an Irish gentleman, that his family is one of the most noble in Ireland, and that he and his ancestors have served me with great loss of their possessions. Also that in his own country he has the right to a commandery of the value of 2000 crowns yearly, which however he is unable to enjoy unless he belongs to one of the three military orders, one of which he begs me to confer upon him. Before making a decision, I have wished to learn from your Highness the birth, merits, and good parts of of the said Dermot. Your Highness will send me precise information on these points.\* EGC., reg. 178, fol. 266.

586. 1615. Oct. 12. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Edward Geraldin, formerly captain and major of the regiment of Irish infantry in this army, who served your Majesty for twenty five years in these States, and took part in various engagements, and was wounded, as will appear from his papers, has asked me for licence for Spain, as he has been included in the general reduction, like others serving about my person. I have granted the licence, and I beg your Majesty that as becomes his great services and merits you may order that all favour be shown to him. EGC., reg. 178, fol. 273.

587. 1616. Jan. 13. Brussels. An attestation in favour of Dermot Omallun. In this city of Brussels, on the 13th day of the month of January of the year 1616, before me John Sdroogen, public notary and scrivener of the most serene Archduke and Archduchess our Lords and Princes, residing in this Court and city of Brussels. appeared and were present Captain William de Burgo, Lord of Bealatury, and Thomas de Burgo, Lord of Clonaloe and of Ballynanean, both of them brothers of the Baron of Leitrim, and Don Cornelius Aquely, Lord of Theboynan, all three pensioners of his Majesty in these States of Flanders. Who certified and pledged their faith that they know with great certitude that the ecclesiastical endowment which is at present vacant at Tomgreny in Ireland has been redeemed in perpetuity by some Catholic gentlemen from the possession of Queen Elizabeth of England



and her successors for a certain sum of money, which they paid in one assignment, fearing lest the endowment might fall into the hands of the heretics, thus doing as many other Catholics of those parts are accustomed to do at other church sales, with permission of his Holiness, who prefers that the purchasers should enjoy them rather than the heretics. Moreover, they know that married men cannot enjoy the said income unless they are in possession of a military order, as it belongs to the Order of Calatrava. Finally they stated and affirmed that the last man who enjoyed the said income died on the 24 July of last year, and that at his death the relations of Dermot Omallun, Lord of Hageru and Gentleman of the Household of the most serene Archduke Albert, have procured the said income for him, and that he needs nothing more in order to be able to enjoy it than a military Order, as he is married. In testimony of the truth of this, as being from near the said place Tomgreny, where the endowment is founded, they signed this document with their names in the register: William de Burgo. D. T. de *Burgo*. Cornelius Okelly. Being present thereat as witnesses Charles Hanedouche, seigneur de Fay and Gentleman of his Highness's Household, and Bonaventure Bizes, both belonging to this Court. In testimony whereof I the said notary have written this out and signed it with my name, and fixed to it my notarial seal used for such purposes. John Sdroogen, public notary. 1616.

We the mayor aldermen and council of Brussels in the duchy of Brabant in the States of Flanders bear witness and testify that John Sdroogen, in whose presence the above statement was made and testified, is a trustworthy, lawfully established and properly appointed notary and scrivener, worthy of all confidence in his official capacity, to whose writing, signature and seal full faith and credit have always been given in and out of Court. In testimony whereof we order that the present be countersigned by our undersigned sworn secretary and sealed with the seal of the said city. Drawn up therein on 13 Jan. 1616. P. Van der Noort. *Sigillum magistratus oppidi Bruxellensis*. EGC., reg. 179, fol. 27.

588.

1616. Jan. 15. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. By your letter of 26 December your Majesty commanded me to inform you of the family and good parts of Dermot Omallun, an Irish gentleman, who desires to be granted the habit of one of the three military Orders, to enable him to enjoy the endowment which he says belongs to him by right in his own country. To which it seems appropriate to reply that he is one of the Gentlemen of my Household, and according to my information is of such birth and parts as befit him to receive every favour from your Majesty.\* EGC., reg. 179, fol. 26.

589.

1616. Feb. 19. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. by a letter from Count de Castro, my ambassador at Rome, I have learned that the Earl of Tyrone has begged him to inform me



of the efforts made by the King of England to destroy the Irish regiment which is in those States, and of the importance of preserving it, as gentlemen of every family are serving in it. I have thought well to advise your Highness of this, that you may give orders for its maintenance, using whatever means may be necessary, as it is important to preserve the regiment. [In code, with transcript attached.] EGC., reg. 179, fol. 77.

590. 1616. Mar. 8. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Conatio Oneil, a nephew of the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, has come to these States, a fugitive from Ireland, on account of the English having tried to make him a prisoner, as I have heard, and because some months ago they had beheaded his brother on the charge that he had tried to rise out in rebellion with a place situated near the sea. And as this gentleman, who is only ten years old, has come to place himself under your Majesty's protection, because if he had been captured it is believed that he would have been in the same danger as his brother, it would be worthy of your royal estate and of your accustomed kindness to order that he receive help for his maintenance and studies until he shall be old enough to serve, and thus show consideration of his birth, as I beg of your Majesty most earnestly; and I shall hold in especial esteem the favour done to him. EGC., reg. 179, fol. 116.

591. 1616. Apr. 20. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. I have received your Majesty's letter of 19 February, which deals with the pains taken by the King of England to destroy the Irish regiment which serves your Majesty in these States. Greater efforts are always being made to preserve it, and the vacancies which occur in it are given to those of that nation who come here to serve. At present the Irish regiment consists of 1070 men, including two companies of English and Scots, which, according to the report enclosed in this, have not been detached from it. The pensions and grants enjoyed by the Irish nation amount to 1047 crowns, as appears from the attestation of the Pay-Master of the Army, which will be enclosed. According to this, and to the information contained in reports, no grant has been made of those pensions which your Majesty ordered should be given to the fourteen persons mentioned in the memorial of O'Sullivan Beare. I beg your Majesty to be pleased, when you have considered everything, to have your royal will made known to me with special clearness as to what is to be done concerning this Irish nation.

592. Enclosed: [a]. A report on the soldiers actually serving in the eight companies of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Oneill, and in the two companies of English and Scots, in this army, together with the special grants they enjoy, and also the pensions held by certain Irish persons, except the women, who were mentioned in another report made in August 1614: according to the receipts for the two years in which they have received



payment as assigned to them at the last general reduction:

[b]. In the company of the colonel, 77 men, 52 special grants. In the company of Maurice Geraldin, 107 men, 61 special grants. In the company of James Garland, 115 men, 51 special grants. In the company of Cornelius Odriscol, 98 men, 83 special grants. In the company of Thomas Preston, 108 men, 60 special grants. In the company of Art Oneill, 97 men, 32 special grants. In the company of Thadeus Carty, 82 men, 58 special grants. In the company of Thadeus Osullivan, 107 men, 18 special grants. [Total]: 781 men, 395 special grants.

[c]. In the English company of Alan Noris, 127 men, 47 special grants. In the Scots company of Paul Redico, 162 men, 74 special grants.

[d]. The following are the Irish pensioners: John and Bernard Oneill, 200 crowns. The Earl of Tyrconnell, 100 crowns. Hugo Daniel, 30 crowns. Maria Mahuna, 6 crowns. To Nola O Doniel are paid monthly by order of his Majesty through a secret channel 175 crowns. Special grants to the Irish, Scots and English, 516 crowns. Which make in all 1047 crowns. EGC., reg. 179, ff. 162-3.

593. 1616. June 10. Mariemont. The Archduke to Philip III. Letters recommending Captain William Walsche; has served his Majesty in these States with a company of Irish infantry; took part in various engagements, and was wounded in the performance of his duties. His grant, with that of others, was included in the last reduction. EGC., reg. 179, fol. 239.

594. Undated [1616]. An account of those persons of different nations who retained their pay at the last general reduction, made on 20 June 1613, for the term of three years, which run from the said date and end on 20 June of this present year 1616. Among the forty six persons mentioned: John and Bernardino O Neil, 200 crowns. The Earl of Tyrconnell, 100 crowns. Hugo Daniel, 50 crowns. EGC., reg. 79, fol. 199.

595. 1616. June 28. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. "I also commend to your Highness to have great care to see that the Irish regiment which serves in those States is not disbanded, for as your Highness has been advised already, it may be necessary to retain it; and as the Earl of Tyrone desires a pension for his nephew John Oneill, I would like your Highness to provide him with the first which becomes vacant in the Irish regiment, in conformity with his birth, as it is proper to grant the Earl all becoming satisfaction." Excerpt. The part of the letter referring to the Irish regiment is in code, with a transcript attached. EGC., reg. 179, fol. 257.

596. 1616. July 5. Mariemont. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. "To Conatio Onel, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, and son of a brother of his who is a prisoner in London, your Majesty may be pleased to command that he be granted fifty crowns monthly for his maintenance, in consideration of his birth, and of his having



come here to place himself under your Majesty's patronage. With this sum he will continue his studies in a seminary or elsewhere, and will then serve your Majesty after the example of his ancestors." EGC., reg. 180, fol. 13.

597.

1616. July 5. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. By Osulleban Bearra, an Irishman, it has been reported to me that Rodrigo Odonoghue, one of the chief men of Ireland, served in those States for ten years, with a pension of thirty crowns, until the general reduction, and that at present he is in the service of the most Christian King with a company of men of his nation. He has begged me that as the affairs of France are being settled, and for this reason the army is being disbanded, I might be pleased to write to your Highness to join this company to the regiment of those of his nation which serves in those States. Your Highness will inform me if there is need of men in the said regiment, and of whatever else may be opportune in this matter, so that I may make the best decision upon it. EGC., reg. 180, fol. 23.

598.

1616. Aug. 13. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. I have received your Majesty's letters of the 28th of June and the 5th of July dealing with the Irish infantry regiment, and giving instructions to admit to pay the company of Rodrigo Odonoghue, of that nation, which is in the service of the Most Christian King. I will say what occurs to me. In the said regiment there are 1,000 Irishmen on active service, as ordered by your Majesty, besides the two companies of English and Scots which are attached to that regiment. The regiment shall be maintained as your Majesty has directed, and special orders have been given that it shall always contain 1,000 Irishmen, besides the two companies mentioned; and the places which are vacant are to be filled. In conformity with this, and as more men are available than are needed, it would seem that the admission to pay of the company of Rodrigo O Donoghue might not be insisted upon. Your Majesty orders that the Irish are to enjoy 1,000 crowns in pensions and grants, so I drew up a list of all the pensions this nation enjoys, including in it John and Bernard O'Neill, the Count of Tyrconnell Hugo O Doneill, some Irish widows who enjoy pensions on the garrisons, the money which is paid from secret funds, and the additional pay of the two companies of English and Scots, all which amount to 1045 crowns, I sent this report to your Majesty on 20 April. When the general reduction was carried out, your Majesty ordered that certain persons were to be informed that they could retain their pensions for a limited period, amongst whom were the above mentioned Irish people; and as the time limit has expired, the pensions they enjoyed have ceased. And on the supposition that the 1,000 crowns are to be divided among this nation in conformity with your Majesty's intention, it would appear that the pensions which have ceased must be continued,



I beg your Majesty to declare whether these are to be included in the 1,000 crowns mentioned, or whether the whole 1,000 are to be distributed among the soldiers and persons who actually serve in the regiment, not reckoning the places granted to women and children, for the Earl of Tyrconnel is a child. In this way the question of the 1,000 crowns can be settled at once, and afterwards provision can be made for anyone who has been passed over. EGC., reg. 180, fol. 66.

599. 1616. Aug. 17. John Maguyr to the Archduke Albert. John Maguyr, grandson of the Earl of Tyrone, represents that as he knew for certain that when he reached the age of eighteen the English would imprison him for life or sentence him to death, he fled the kingdom and placed himself under the protection of his Majesty and your Highness. For this reason, and on account of the services of the Earl his grandfather, and of those of his own father, who was one of the chief lords of Ireland, and died in the service of his Majesty, and rendered singular services on the day he was killed, as for instance his having killed the President of Munster and Captain-General of both Munsters with his own hand, after he had defeated his men;<sup>1</sup> wherefore on this account he humbly begs your most serene Highness may be pleased, in accordance with your accustomed magnanimity, to be his protector, and grant him a pension which will enable him to serve your Highness; or should that not be possible, to give him letters of commendation, and assistance for his journey to Spain.

In a second hand: Brussels. 17 August 1616. To the Secretary of War. Let letters of commendation be given to him. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 37.

600. 1616. Sept. 10. San Lorenzo. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. To Conatio Onel, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, I have granted fifty crowns monthly, as seemed well to your Highness, and I have dispatched the warrant for the same, which accompanies this. Your Highness will order that it be given to him, and that he be maintained by the punctual payment of the amount stated. EGC., reg. 180, fol. 127.

601. 1616. Sept. 15. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to ——. The President of the Council has ordered me to forward to you the enclosed petition of Cornelius Driscot,<sup>1</sup> that you may be pleased to mention it to the Archduke, and say that the Council is of the opinion that it may be granted. EA., carton 1961.

602. 1616. Sept. 30. Tervueren. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Captain Cornelius O Driscot, as I understand, has served your Majesty in Ireland and in these States for 15 years, on all occasions which have presented themselves, and has given a good account of everything entrusted to him. He has fulfilled all his obligations, especially during the time he has been here,

<sup>1</sup> Missing, but see the following letter.



and marched with his company on the expeditions of the army into Friesland and Juliers, where he rendered special services, as he himself will recount to your Majesty. He has asked me for licence to go to Spain, which I have granted, and I beg your Majesty to show him all possible favour and honour. EGC., reg. 180, fol. 165.

603. 1616. Dec. 6. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. On behalf of the son of the Earl of Tyrone, and of the Earl of Tyrconnell and his cousin, it has been reported to me that when the general reduction of pensions was made, orders were given that their grant should be continued for a further three years, which have now expired. As they are still in the same state of need and have no support, they beg me to be pleased that the reduction should not extend to them. Your Highness will inform me of your opinion concerning their request, so that proper provision may be made. EGC., reg. 180, fol. 270.
604. 1616. Dec. 13. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. It has been considered that in order to restrain and punish the enemies of the Crown who harass us so insolently at sea, the best means would be to reinforce the marine services, and this is receiving the care it demands. And whereas in order to put this into effect there is need of mariners and sailors in this kingdom, and this is one of the most essential things for the execution of the purpose desired, I have decided that the men should be recruited in those States [Flanders] without regard as to whether they are Irish or Dutch, or of any other nationality. I have thought well to advise your Highness of this, so that after consideration of what can be done, and upon the supposition that it is possible to recruit the men and pay them well, you may inform me both of what it is possible to do and of the best way of doing it. EGC., reg. 180, fol. 286.
605. 1616. Dec. 20. Madrid, Philip III to the Archduke Albert. From the enclosed memorial, which has been presented to me by a person zealous in my service, your Highness will see what he says about the reasons which obliged the Irish and Scots who came to Dunkirk in a French ship in order to flee from their countries, and also what happened in this affair; also how proper it is to commute to one of exile the sentence of those who have been condemned to the galleys. Your Highness will give orders that all favours compatible with justice be shown to the said Irish and Scots, since for the reasons pointed out in the memorial it is proper to favour and protect them, especially as they withdrew to those States [Flanders] in order to follow the Catholic cause. Yo el Rey. Juan de Ciriça.
606. Enclosed: Copy. My Lord. There arrived at Dunkirk in the month of June in this present year fifty two persons, Irish and Scots, and amongst them some very close relatives of the highest nobility of the Highlands and the Islands of both kingdoms,



who to escape from the persecution of the heretics who sought to behead them (on the false charge that they sought to rise in rebellion, with certain strongholds and forts on that coast) seized an English ship in an Irish port, and afterwards, in the Islands of Scotland, exchanged it for a French ship, which was a better sailor than the English one. They gave the English ship to the French, and the Englishmen, who knew the language, navigated the French ship, and brought them to Dunkirk. When they arrived there, they left the ship and the crew without doing any more harm than gaining their own freedom, as has been said, and landing at Dunkirk. Whereupon the Governor, when he was informed of this, and had seen that they were people of good standing, and were well armed, arranged with the Archduke to grant them places in the Irish and Scots infantry. And when this became known to the English ambassador in Brussels, he denounced them to the Archduke as rebels against their King, and as sea-pirates, and requested that they should be handed over to him to be sent to England. Whereupon the Archduke had them arrested, and upon the testimony of the Englishmen, without admitting their defence, he had many of them taken out of the church of St Francis, to which they had withdrawn, and had four of them condemned to death, and they were executed. Twenty four were condemned to the gallies, and when the others saw this severity, they fled. On account of the evil impression which has been caused, since these Catholics had come to your Majesty's dominions with the confidence of receiving protection there, it has seemed well to me to acquaint your Majesty, in case you may deem well to have orders sent to the Archduke to commute the sentence of the gallies to one of banishment from those States; and in this way greater mercy will be shown to these Catholics who came to your Majesty's protection, and whose persons are demanded by the English.\* EGC., reg. 180, 309-10.

607. 1617. Jan. 27. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. I have received your Majesty's letters of the 10th and 20th of last month, with the memorial about the Irish and Scots who came to Dunkirk in a French ship; and what it seems to me well to say about the matter is that the punishment of those who were condemned to the gallies has been commuted to one of banishment, having consideration of your Majesty's command. Excerpt. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 21.

608. 1617. Jan. 27. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. I have received your Majesty's letter of the 6th of last month, concerning the petition of the Earl of Tyrone and of the Earl of Tyrconnell, and his cousin, that the last general reduction should not apply to them. What it occurs to me to say about this is that recently your Majesty ordered that their pensions were to be extended for another three years, to be reckoned from the expiry of three years from the last general reduction; so that the sole



purpose of their petition was that they might enjoy their pension without any limit of time. As there is reason why your Majesty should grant them this request, since you made the grant yourself for so many reasons, I beg your Majesty to be pleased to grant their petition. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 24.

609. 1617. Feb. 3. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Oghyius alias Eugenius Halun, who says he is nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, has presented to me the enclosed memorial. I beg your Majesty, in consideration of his birth, and of the zeal he claims to have for the Catholic religion, as also of the causes which obliged him to leave his country, to show him all becoming favour as regards his wishes, and I shall hold this in particular esteem.

610. Enclosed: Captain Oghyius alias Eugenius Hanlun,\* nephew of the late Earl of Tyrone, represents that after the Earls fled from Ireland, the heretics deprived him of his estates, and would also have deprived him of his life had he not taken up arms to defend himself, as he did in the best way he could, until, when a settlement was made, he had to leave the kingdom. And when he came to serve your most serene Highness, they did not allow him, but by sheer force obliged him and his men, and many other Catholics, to serve the King of Sweden, as they were certain they would all die there, as in fact not a few of them did. There were about 1,000 Catholics. The King of Sweden allowed the Suppliant, on account of his good services, to leave his kingdom, and gave him very favourable letters to the King of England; but when the petitioner arrived with them in London, the English were within little of hanging him, and as a great favour they exiled him to Sweden, where he would not go, as he did not wish to die among heretics; hence he has come to seek the patronage of his Majesty and of your most serene Highness. Wherefore he humbly begs your most serene Highness that if it is not possible to grant him a pension, you would give him letters of recommendation, and assistance for the journey to Spain; whereby he will receive very special favour.

Dorso: To his Highness. Captain Don Oghyius alias Eugenius Halun, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, Brussels. 17 August 1616. Secretary of War. Let him be given letters of recommendation.

In margin: Another letter in the same manner for John Mauir, nephew as he says of the Earl of Tyrone. To his Majesty from Brussels, 3 February 1617. EGC., reg. 181, ff. 34-5.

611. 1617. Feb. 9. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Cormatio Oneill, who states that he is a grandson of the Earl of Tyrone, has represented to me that on account of the wars in which he and his family were engaged in Ireland, on the Catholic side, and the side of the late King and of your Majesty, they suffered through want of the means to continue the wars, and were obliged to abandon their country and possessions; and as at



present he is poor, he has decided to go to Spain and place himself under the protection and clemency of your Majesty. I beg he be shown all honour and favour with regard to his intentions, as befits his merits and birth. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 46.

**612.** 1617. Feb. 23. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. On other occasions I have written to your Majesty about the necessitous state in which the Earl of Tyrconnell tells me he is situated, and the small means he has with which to support himself as becomes his rank; begging your Majesty may be pleased to order that the same favour be shown to him as to his late father in Rome; in which case he undertakes to fulfill the same obligations as his father fulfilled. Once more I beg your Majesty to order that due favour be shown to him as regards this petition, and this I myself shall esteem most highly. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 64.

**613.** 1617. Mar. 10. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to the Duke of Lerma. I have written to my Lord the King about the request of the Earl of Tyrconnell, that his Majesty show him the same favour as the Earl his father had enjoyed, with the same obligation of supporting his people; or that his Majesty be pleased to show him this favour in some other manner, to enable him to support himself as becomes his birth, as a reward of the services of his father and ancestors. I beg you to assist and favour the Earl's petitions, so that he may receive a favourable answer; and I shall duly esteem your action.\* EGC., reg. 181, fol. 84.

**614.** 1617. Aug. 22. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Henry Oneill, nephew of the late Earl of Tyrone, has come here from England to place himself under the protection of your Majesty, as they sought to capture him when he reached the age of eighteen years, and lodge him in the Tower of London, as they did his father, who is there for the past nine years,\* for the Catholic cause, as is stated, and for having rendered service to your Majesty in the past. Wherefore he desires some favour in keeping with his birth and obligations, to enable him to support himself, and when he will have reached a suitable age, to be able to serve your Majesty, as did his father, uncles and ancestors. I beg your Majesty may be pleased to grant him all becoming favour as regards his wishes. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 310.

**615.** 1617. Sept. 17. Tervueren. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Captain George de la Hoyd has represented to me that he has served your Majesty in these States, whither he came from Ireland, after he had abandoned his estate for that purpose, and to be able to live in the Catholic faith. As his grant has been cancelled, owing to the fact that he was included in the last general reduction, he has asked licence for Spain, which I have granted. I beg your Majesty to command that all honour be shown to him, in conformity with his service, merits and good parts. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 363.



616. 1617. Nov. 4. El Prado. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. Florence Conrrio, Archbishop of Tuam in Ireland, who will present this to your Highness, is going to live in those States [Flanders] on account of his present poor health, and for other good reasons which oblige him to do this. For this reason, and on account of his good parts, I consented that he be granted there the same allowance as he enjoyed in my Court, as your Highness will see by the warrant I have given him for this purpose. Moreover, as he is a very exemplary person and of great zeal, I shall be pleased if your Highness honour him and show him favour on any occasion which may arise, for this would give me particular pleasure. EGC., reg. 181, fol. 402.

617. Undated. Abbot Paul Ragetto to the Archduke Albert.

[a]. Paul Ragetto, doctor of theology, abbot of St Mary's in Dublin, vicar and commissary-general of the Cistercians in the kingdoms of Ireland, England and Scotland, and the other provinces etc., represents that the Catholics of those provinces have deputed and charged him to supply information concerning the many hardships, tyrannies and injuries which they suffer on account of religion ever since his Catholic Majesty made peace with the King of England. Therefore in the name and at the request of the Catholics of the kingdom of Ireland, both ecclesiastic and lay, he will set forth the hardships, persecutions, and insults by which they are troubled daily, beseeching your most serene Highness, who is so pious and Christian a prince to favour and protect those who are afflicted for the profession of their faith, and to give ear to the following statements with attention and clemency.

[b]. First. Perpetual banishment has been decreed against the highest Catholic nobles and gentlemen, and they have been deprived of their estates and possessions, their honour and dignities, both ecclesiastic and lay; and the lower classes suffer in the same way. They are decreasing in number, and are upon the point of total extinction, while their lands, titles, dignities, and properties are being given over to the lowest and vilest heretics, English and Scots, to be found in the whole country, while they themselves are not tolerated even as vassals on their own estates.

[c]. Again, all the laws against our Christian religion which were made in the time of the late Queen and of Henry VIII were not enforced or observed by her teachers and ministers against Catholics until the time of the present King; but since peace was made with his Catholic Majesty, not only have these sacrilegious laws been enforced, but many other enactments and unjust and extraordinary means have been added daily, such as the excommunication of the highest and richest, and the seizure and impoverishment of their persons, the inflictions on them of a thousand vexations; and the obligation has been placed upon them of begging absolution from their excommunication



from the heretical bishops, which is not given unless upon attendance at their churches to hear and profess their sect or heresy; and if they do not consent to do this, they have no way of getting out of prison.

[d]. Again, in order to have better opportunity of persecuting Catholics and of carrying out their own unjust laws, they appoint, to enforce them, twelve or more men who usually are Catholics, and force them to swear to present before the King's justice those who contravene the laws, one of which orders that everyone shall resort to their churches on the feast-days of the year, under penalty of a fixed fine every time they are absent; and as they know that these jurymen, being Catholics, do not present the others who are Catholics, they fine them heavily, and throw them into prison as perjurers until they confess they have done wrong and have not presented the other Catholics of the town or country at the King's general assises, which are held twice yearly in every town, diocese or district, and four times again yearly by special judges of each city or county.

[e]. Again, when the Catholics do not wish to present or discover other Catholics, in accordance with this unjust law, the judges select and name twelve or more heretics sworn to present everyone who does not live according to their law and heresy, and these, to enforce the law, present all Catholics, who not only must pay the fine in money, but are also served with the King's orders for the arrest of their persons; and to save themselves from this vexation, they pay the officials and ministers of the law more than the law exacts.

[f]. Again, no one can hold any dignity, title, office or lands, either in spirituals or temporals, unless he first swear that the King is supreme head of everything both spiritual and temporal in his kingdom. In like manner the eldest sons or heirs cannot enter upon their fathers' possessions until they first take the same oath.

[g]. Again, there are no schools, private or public, for the instruction of the young, either noble or commoner, unless under masters who are heretics, and have sworn the same oath; and then they are obliged to conduct all their pupils to the churches of the heretics.

[h]. Again, when some individuals, worn out and practically forced by these unjust vexations, join their sect, making profession of it and going to their churches, they oblige them, in order to prevent them from returning to the Catholic religion, to give security, in some instances under oath, that they will live and die in that sect, and in that heretical condition.

[i]. Again, since peace was made with his Catholic Majesty, a royal decree has been published every three years against all ecclesiastics of whatever standing or rank, which obliges them under pain of the King's displeasure, and the loss of goods, and of perpetual imprisonment, to leave the kingdom and never



return; and also, under the same penalties it is ordered that no person, of whatsoever rank or condition, may receive, shelter, or help the aforesaid ecclesiastical persons; and for the rigorous enforcement of this decree, certain companies of foot and horse have been appointed, which, accompanied by certain officers, spies, and impious people, whom they bring together to lead and guide them, range through the whole country in search of priests and religious, and of the Catholics who may have offended against their edict, in order, when they have found them, to arrest them and confiscate their houses and lands.

[j]. By which means, and by other special enactments which it would not be possible to enumerate, all the provinces under the domination of England are almost overwhelmed and destroyed, whereas formerly, they were so Christian, especially the kingdom of Ireland, which will be altogether overwhelmed unless God and your most serene Highness oppose some remedy as soon as possible; and on the other hand, the heretics will all join with their neighbours and will endeavour to cause trouble and harm to the States of your most serene Highness and his Catholic Majesty. The best possible remedies to be had for all this I will, with God's help, explain to your Highness in person, together with the economy of expense and other obstacles which cannot be avoided on such occasions. May our Lord guard the person of your most serene Highness for the spreading of the Catholic faith.

618.

Enclosed: [a]. We read in profane histories that amongst the perilous undertakings in which Hercules was victorious not the least was the dangerous contest which he had with the Hydra. Neither his invincible valour nor his intrepid courage sufficed to overcome her, for when, with no small risk to his life he cut off one of her heads, for every one which rolled to the ground others appeared, springing up and rising aloft until the brave warrior, realising how much he had wearied himself during a whole year, aimed a blow at the principal and highest head, which rose above all the others; and scarcely had this one fallen when all the others drooped, and by a glorious ending he gained the victory he had scarcely hoped for.

[b]. This is well represented in the Catholic Majesty of our Lord the King of Spain, the special pillar and admirable defence of the Roman religion and Church, who with even greater valour and spirit than Hercules employs all his force and strength in her defence, without any regard to cost, destroying difficulties and smoothing out obstacles, directing his power chiefly against the infernal serpent of heresy, which with the various and monstrous heads of its different sects, appears to seek the destruction and annihilation of Holy Church. Although the power of Spain has combatted this enemy for many years past, nevertheless it scarcely subdues and subjects the heretics of one province when in their place many others arise in opposition; whence it follows



that wars never cease, now in Germany, now in Italy, now in France and in the States of Flanders. And since it is evident that many of those who carry on war against Spain are of themselves not sufficiently powerful, it remains to find out which is the Head, high and exalted among them, which openly or secretly sustains and animates them, stirring up dissensions, sowing hatred and maintaining discord against Spain.

[c]. The Head which more than all others vomits infernal poison against the Catholics is King James of England, although he enjoys the Crown without any title, or even the semblance of one. It is he who supports so much intrigue, and by his friendship, advice, men and money foments and stirs up the wars in different quarters against Spain and against the most blessed and august House of Austria. Then, however much he may dissimulate and swear to the contrary (a very old practice among heretics, who keep word neither with God nor man) from the time when to make worse war against Spain, he made peace with her, he has omitted no means or steps to incite his Majesty's subjects, to annihilate his possessions, and destroy his power. In the first place, on this account, the navigation of the Indies has become very dangerous, and grave injury to Spain has been done there; and the English desire so eagerly to molest his Catholic Majesty throughout those parts that they granted his life to Walter Raleigh who had been condemned to death for a certain act of treason, because he offered to perform great things in the Indies for the service of England and against Spain. Wherefore the King gave him letters patent, creating him Apostle of the Indies, so that he might plan his heresies in those parts, and at the same time he gave him special and secret instructions signed by himself and his Council, to conquer whatever lands he could, and molest their coasts; and although they took off his head when he returned to England, it was to hide his damnable intention, and because the said Walter Raleigh effected nothing in the Indies, and did not accomplish the King's aim. All which is made clear because the said Walter, to justify his case, showed and delivered to certain people the patents he held from the King which enabled him to act as he did. In the same manner the King helped and fomented the wars in Savoy, and on his account on many occasions the Venetians showed themselves hostile to Spain. And who doubts, although he denies it, that Frederick the Palatine upon the King's advice and trusting in his help, dared to undertake so many and such things against the Church, and had such conflicts with the Catholics, and made such endeavours, although in vain, to molest the House of Austria. In all which the King of England was concerned, although secretly.

[d]. Wherefore, seeing that at present his Catholic Majesty of Spain and your most serene Highness wish by all possible means to subdue the Dutch rebels who have resisted so arrogantly for so



many years, and persisted in their obstinacy; and since their principal abettor is the Englishman, who helps them with men, money and advice; it is necessary, in order that by a miserable end this pestiferous serpent may cease to molest the Church, that a blow should be dealt at the uplifted head of England, since, as I have already said, it is that head which gives life and existence to all the others; and as long as it survives it will be difficult to put down the Dutch rebels, or the other enemies of the House of Austria and of the Spanish Crown. And it is not wise to trust his false and poisonous promises, though in appearance they may be words of sweetness. Still less is it right that he should succeed in his ill-intentioned designs to obtain as wife for his son the most serene Infanta, sister of our Catholic King of Spain, so as to be able to carry out freely his harmful intentions both in the Indies and elsewhere with the assurance of meeting with neither hurt nor resistance. This is so unjust that it would not become Spain, even for reasons of state; even as no one doubts that for godly reasons it cannot lawfully be done. Otherwise let us listen to the Apostle and Teacher of the Gentiles, Paul, who condemns similar unions and marriages, saying: "Nolite jugum ducere cum infidelibus: quae enim participatio justitiae cum iniquitate? Aut quae societas luci ad tenebras? Quae autem conventio Christi ad Belial? Aut quae pars fidei cum infidei? Quis autem consensus templo Dei cum idolis?"<sup>1</sup> So that such a marriage with infidels is condemned by Scripture, and it is much more dangerous with the English, because even if the party were Catholic, Henry VIII acted towards Queen Catharine in the way we know. Wherefore, in order that he may not disturb his Majesty's dominions, it is necessary to carry the war into his, that having something to attend to in his own house, he will not go to sow cockle among the corn. The way to carry out this without expense and with little trouble is as follows:

[e]. In the first place it is to be remarked that as regards the Kingdom of Ireland, which always had its own kings, when their line was extinguished the right of election rested with the Pope. Hence Pope Adrian IV, who was an Englishman, gave this kingdom to the English, not with the title of King, nor with proprietary rights, but as governors, so that, as is clear from the histories of England and Ireland, the election and investiture of that kingdom belong to the Roman Pontiff, to whom they [the Irish] often addressed their supplications and complaints, begging him to free them from the rule of England, as they could not support the cruelty and tyranny with which they were treated; and this all the more so when with the introduction of heresy the English treated them with much greater cruelty, and usurped the name of Kings of Ireland, the first to take this title being Henry VIII immediately after his refusal to obey the Holy See.

<sup>1</sup>2 Corinthians 6, 14.



And the one who has treated them with the greatest rigour is the present King, who hates them not only on account of the religion they profess, but also because (as he himself says) they are greatly hispanicised and belong to the followers of the Catholic King. All these reasons, and the sight of this kingdom so happy as regards temporal goods, and so rich, but unjustly held by tyrants, have moved all the nobles, ecclesiastics and people, to wish to free themselves from a yoke so heavy; and the knowledge of the clemency, courtesy and Christian feeling of the Spanish nation, has move them to look to Spain for their defence, with the desire to have for their King and Lord one who will uphold them in justice, and permit them to maintain the Catholic religion. For this reason the principal men judge that no one would be more worthy of this crown than the most serene Prince Don Carlos, the brother of his Catholic Majesty of Spain.

[f]. In order to attain the desired end, it appears to me that it is first of all necessary to obtain from His Holiness a bull declaring that the King of England has no claim to that kingdom (Ireland) both because he is a schismatic and a heretic, and for the reasons stated above; likewise on account of the tyrannies he exercises against the Catholics. And let the Pope in this bull grant the same or greater indulgences, favours, dispensations etc., as are gained by those who enjoy the Bull of Crusade. And let the bull be published in Spain every year in favour of those who shall take part in the conquest for the Catholic cause, and in favour of all those who shall help by fighting, or by favouring, patronising, promoting, or procuring the restoration of the holy Catholic faith, along with doing whatsoever else may be of consequence for its maintenance in the said kingdom or kingdoms. And if any one, directly or indirectly, shall act contrariwise, if he be an ecclesiastic or a religious, let him be *ipso facto* excommunicated, with the same severity as those mentioned in the bull *Coena Domini*, and declared, named and denounced as such; and if he hold any dignity, such as that of primate, archbishop, bishop, abbot, or any other prelacy, benefice or office, let him be deprived, and be incapable of holding any other office; and let his goods be confiscated, to the benefit of the Catholic cause; and let all such be punished as schismatics and heretics; and let the same be done with seculars or laymen, of whatever title or rank they may be. And for the execution of the bull it is necessary that there should be an apostolic vicar or legate, with two or more assistant judges, men of authority and learning, and holy zeal, who may delegate their places to others whom they shall think fit for them. This bull will produce great results, in so much as the natives of that country consider themselves more obedient to the Pope than all others, and in his cause they abandon honours, possessions, and their lives. They will be all the more obedient to him since their liberty is at stake; and the bull will serve to unite them, for if



there should be any difference among them, they will all come together; and it will help more than if a large army were dispatched.

[g]. All rents, tithes, and products of ecclesiastical benefices which are vacant or about to become vacant, greater or less, secular or regular, or belonging to the military Orders, should be applied for the liberation of the nation and the preservation of the Catholic cause, for as long as the war shall last. For this purpose it will be necessary to obtain another special bull from the Pope, that the same use may be made of the conquered goods and lands; and while the war lasts, competent pay should be made to the ecclesiastics, both secular and regular, who serve the churches of the kingdom, and for the maintenance of the churches and monasteries. Their pay and ordinary allowances should be paid to the captains and officers; and the gentlemen and soldiers who belong to Ireland and who assist the Catholic side with their own persons, vassals, and possessions, should be rewarded according to their services by the conferring of honours and titles; and the offices and dignities of the Church shall be conferred only upon persons tried in virtue, learning, and holy zeal for the increase of the Catholic faith.

[h]. The person upon whom the supreme command shall be conferred must be a noble, and must have full power in civil and military matters, and in matters ecclesiastical also if he be capable thereof. And it is to be noted that he must not be a native of these kingdoms, but a Spaniard, in order to avoid jealousy, and the factions which usually spring up on such occasions among those who belong to the country. And this person shall have assistants and counsellors belonging to the country itself, care being taken that they are drawn equally from the four provinces [of Ireland] and that some be chosen from among those who derive their origin from the ancient Spaniards, and the rest from among those descended from the French and English conquerors, who came to the Island six hundred years ago; otherwise, whichever party is passed over will think itself of no importance, and will fear some harm; but if all are united, they will all be loyal.

[i]. There are many good harbours at which to carry out whatever may be intended, but one presents itself to me which for many reasons seems to be the best, as it is upon the sea, and is open to it. The entrance is not very wide, but inside, the harbour is spacious and deep. Its natural position, with but little fortification, is inaccessible and unconquerable by sea and land, and the country around it is very wide, and good both for cattle and corn. Its approaches and entrances are free at almost any state of the wind, and it abounds in fish. It can be approached and entered on every side from the sea without those on land being able to observe anything, and from it there is easy access to the other parts of the country; it would be difficult, however, to convey



artillery from there to the other parts of the country except by sea, and for this purpose it will be necessary to have some boats of the galley class; and these will also be useful for many other purposes of great importance, such as the transport of artillery, ammunition and fighting men either to the neighbouring or to the distant harbours of Ireland and Scotland etc.; and for the carrying out of other very important enterprises.

[j]. It seems to me that with a good wind it is not more than three days sail from this port in question to Spain. This port would also serve as a great threat to all the provinces both of Ireland and of Scotland, and would serve to waylay ships leaving or approaching Holland, France, Scotland, England, Denmark etc., by the open sea; and apart from all this I consider it the place of which the ancient saints of Ireland prophesied, that from it would come a king who would conquer that land, and drive the English out of it for ever, and their power. And before those on land can be aware of anything, orders can be given for the undertaking of movements of major importance even in the most distant parts, and for the discovery of those who are with us, and of those who are not, or the place of their coming and going. And so it seems to me that for a military post it is one of the best places both by sea and land that can be found in these parts. It will be necessary to take planks and sufficient timber to make two landing-stages there upon arrival, so as to be able to make the place safer for future use. EA., reg. 366, 153ff.

619. 1618. Jan. 26. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. The Earl of Tyrconnell, page to the Infanta, has made known to me the great need he is in on account of the small means he has on which to live as becomes his birth. He shows a great desire to serve as a page to the Prince, and he begs your Majesty to order that he be accepted as such, and to grant him such favours as he desires, to enable him to live. As your Majesty is aware of his rank, and of the faithful services rendered to your royal Crown by his father and ancestors, I cannot refrain from begging you may be pleased to grant the Earl the entire fulfillment of his request.
620. Enclosed: 1618. Jan. 26. Brussels. The Archduke to the Duke of Lerma, asking him to forward and favour the requests contained in the letter to his Majesty. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 2.
621. 1618. Mar. 4. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 25 June 1617) of three crowns monthly to Thadeus Galchuir; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. iv.
622. 1618. Mar. 11. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Ferdinand Fuadano Irish cleric; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Arturo O'Neill, regiment of Colonel John O'Neill. EG., reg. 26, fol. 5.
623. 1618. Apr. 17. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III.



John Bal, an Irishman, has represented to me that he has served your Majesty in these States for twenty eight years, as soldier, pensioner, and adjutant to the Major, and has served on all occasions which have presented themselves, and fulfilled his duties with great satisfaction. On account of his person and his fidelity, he was sent to England as interpreter with the Constable of Castille, and has since served in the household of the ambassador Don Pierre de Cuniga; and whereas his services have been so many and so important, he begs your Majesty may be pleased to order that in reward he may be granted all honour and favour. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 38.

624. 1618. Apr. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Geraldin, of the company of Captain Thadeus O Sullivan, regiment of colonel the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 28v.
625. 1618. May 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Cornelius Odonel, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill, and to Terence O Mellan of the same company. EG., reg. 26, fol. 41v.
626. 1618. May 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Christopher Doudal, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; and to Richard Mac Mahon, of the same company. EG., reg. 26, fol. 42.
627. 1618. May 22. Brussels. Commission to Henry Clerq, of the company of Captain Arturo Oneill, as drum-major of the regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 51.
628. 1618. May 23. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to Ensign Carlos Oneill, of the company of Captain James Garland, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 48v.
629. 1618. May 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Mortigh Odonollan, of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 26, fol. 48v.
630. 1618. May 23. Brussels. Orders to transfer to Maria and Juana Seacnassi, in equal shares, the grant of two reales daily held by their mother Maria Mahuna on the Irish infantry; the two reales had been granted by letters of the 17 May 1612 to Mariana Mahuna in view of the services of her late husband Hugo Seacnasi, but she now requests that her daughters, who wish to enter religion, may be allowed to partake of the benefit. EG., reg. 26, fol. 60.
631. 1618. May 24. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Dermot Omallun, of the Order of Calatrava, gentleman of my Household, has represented to me the special services rendered to your Majesty and his royal Crown by his father, grandfathers, and ancestors during the wars in Ireland, and that after the heretics had destroyed the Catholic league in those parts and confiscated his possessions, he was obliged to withdraw to this country, where he is in need, and is burdened with his wife and family, and enjoys no allowance, as he was included in the last general reduction; neither has he any means of support. Since he is a person of rank, and his ancestors served your Majesty in



the manner already mentioned, he well deserves to receive from your Majesty all honour and favour in what he asks for. I beg your Majesty to order this to be done for him as fully as I hope, and I shall esteem it in a special manner.

632. Enclosed. Brussels. 1618. May 24. The Archduke Albert to the Duke of Lerma, asking him to forward the petition. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 46.
633. 1618. May 24. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Ensign Carlos Oneil, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, has asked me for a licence to go to Spain, which I have granted. On account of his birth and services, and the services of his ancestors, he well deserves to receive every honour and favour from your Majesty. I beg your Majesty to order that in this respect he be treated with all favour, as he hopes. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 47.
634. 1618. May 28. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to the Duke of Lerma. A similar recommendation of Carlos Oneill. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 47.
635. 1618. June 8. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Philip Cardillio, Irish cleric; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Thadeus Sollivan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 67v.
636. 1618. June 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to John Corcoram, Irishman, chaplain of the company of Captain Thadeus Sollivan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 68.
637. 1618. July 3. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Walter de la Hoid, who has served hitherto as pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 88v.
638. 1618. July 6. Mariemont. Orders to issue a passport to Elena Carti, who wishes to go to Spain, and has stated that at present she enjoys no grant of any kind from the King. EG., reg. 26, fol. 91v.
639. 1618. July 25. Mariemont. Special grant of six crowns monthly to P<sup>o</sup>. Walsheeh; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 107v.
640. 1618. July 30. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Captain Walter de la Hoyd has reported to me the many great services he has rendered your Majesty, and that when he came to these States for that purpose, moved thereto by his zeal for the Catholic religion, he was dispossessed of his estate in Ireland, which has since been confiscated. He has asked licence from me to go to Spain, which I have granted, and I beg your Majesty to order that he be shown becoming favour, in conformity with his services and qualities. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 61.
641. 1618. July 30. Ghent. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 20 June 1618) of four crowns monthly to Hugo O Reyly. EG., reg. 26, fol. 115.
642. 1618. July 31. Ghent. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Aranjuez, 17 May 1618) of two crowns monthly to



Denis Quenedi, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 116v.

643. 1618. Aug. 7. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to James Nicholas Geraldino, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 125v.

644. 1618. Aug. 7. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Morgan Conor, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 126.

645. 1618. Aug. 19. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Dermot Riurdan, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 142.

646. 1618. Aug. 20. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. Licentiate John Culenano, an Irish priest, has reported to me that his ancestors served in the wars in Ireland, and were attached always to the Catholic party. For this reason, and because he has always been detained in Flanders by your Highness as tutor to the Earl of Tyrconnell, and has no means of support, he begs me to be pleased to write to you in commendation of his requests. On account of the report given to me of his good parts, I have sought to recommend your Highness to assist him in whatever may present itself for his profit and advancement; and I shall be pleased with whatever your Highness may do for him. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 62.

647. 1618. Sept. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Eugenio Riurdan, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 173v.

648. 1619. Dermot Omallun to the Archduke Albert. Dermot Omallun, seigneur of Hagerue, knight of the Order of Calatrava, and nephew of Cornelius bishop of Killaloe who served his Majesty in Portugal, represents that his ancestors and predecessors served his Catholic Majesty to the great loss of the enemy, and at their own expense maintained a considerable number of their relations and vassals, until the members of the Catholic League were defeated and the heretics remained masters of the territory of Glean Omallun; and other lands of the suppliant were confiscated to the Crown of England, and the Earl of Clancarty, his cousin german, was arrested and taken to England, where he is at present in the Tower of London. There likewise for the Catholic cause died the Earl of Desmond, who also was a kinsman of the Suppliant; and the Archbishop of Cashel, Dermot Ohurly, was put to death for the same cause by the heretics in Ireland; hence at the age of fifteen years the Suppliant was obliged to leave his country, at great danger to his life, and go and place himself under the protection of the King of Spain. Later he came to these States, where he has served your Highness for several years. As he no longer enjoys the pension he received from his Majesty, and is burdened with several daughters, and wishes to place the eldest, Marie Omallun, in some religious house to be brought up and educated, and knows of none better than the Abbey of Avesnes near Arras (the abbess of which is a relative of the young child, and a virtuous lady who educates young girls exceedingly well), he very humbly begs that for the reasons mentioned above



- and out of favourable regard for the birth of his daughter, and for the merits, services and losses of his ancestors for the Catholic faith and the service of his Majesty, your Highness may be pleased to write to the said Abbess of Avesnes, that she may receive the said Maria Omallun into her house and under her charge, and show her all necessary friendship and favour. EA., liasse 1895. 2.
649. 1618. Oct. 31. La Vuere. The Archduke Albert to the Abbess of Avesnes. Dermot Omallun, gentleman of our household, has informed us that he has destined his eldest daughter, Mary, to the service of God under the rule of St Benedict, and that he has set his regard upon your house, that she may be educated and trained there from her earliest years. We have been moved therefore to inform you by this letter that we should be pleased that you receive her into your house, and treat her with that affection and friendship of which the relationship which binds you to her gives promise. And may God have you, dear and well beloved, in His holy keeping. Albert. de la Faille. EA., liasse 1945. 3.
650. 1618. Nov. 10.—The Archduke Albert to the Abbess of Avesnes. Letter in commendation of Mary, daughter of Dermot Omallun, as in the preceding. To be sent to Dermot Omallun, knight of the Order of St Iago. EA., liasse 1945. 2.
651. 1618. Dec. 4. Tervueren. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Nicholas Mede, Irish cleric; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 26 fol. 215.
652. 1619. Jan. 2. Brussels. The Archdukes in favour of Dermot Omallun, who wishes to place his daughter in a religious house, where she may be educated in religion and virtue. With the note: "This letter has been written at the request of the Suppliant." All reference to the daughter becoming a nun has been omitted. EA., liasse 1947. 2.
653. 1619. Jan. 28. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 3 Oct. 1618) of ten crowns monthly to William Netervilla, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 253v.
654. 1619. Feb. 9. Brussels. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Ensign Patrick Odonille; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 267v.
655. 1619. Feb. 19. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Dominic Tuoil. EG., reg. 26, fol. 261v.
656. 1619. Undated. Louvain. [Fr Hugo Cavello] Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain to the Archduke Albert. Represents that the new building, consisting of church and convent, of which his Highness had been pleased to lay the first stone, is now held up. Asks for letters of recommendation to the Archbishop of Cambrai and the Bishop of Tournai, requesting them to help the building, and to encourage the abbots and prelates within their jurisdiction to do the same. Also asks letters to the prelates



of Loa, near Lille, and to the Prelate of Dunes between Dunkirk and Nieuport. EA., liasse 1947. 1.

657. 1619. Fr Hugo Cavello, Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, to the Archduke. Represents that out of compassion for the said religious, who are exiled for the faith, and are engaged in studies in order to preserve the faith in their persecuted country, his Highness has given them a large alms with which to begin their building, and with the help of which and of the alms of their benefactors they had begun a humble building of which their Highnesses had laid the first stone. The most important part, however, the chapel, is still wanting, and for the need of alms it is impossible to finish it except by special favour of his Highness. Wherefore, and on account of the special obligations of these States to Ireland as regards the faith, he humbly begs licence and a recommendation to the bishops, abbots and prelates of the country, to enable the religious to beg for alms, for once only. As neither they themselves are well known, nor their purpose, which is to complete their studies and be able to go back to preach in Ireland and Scotland, at the risk of their lives, the recommendation of his Highness is very necessary. EA., liasse 1947. 1.
658. 1619. Feb. 21. Brussels. Recommendation of Fr Hugo Cavello by the Archduke to the abbots of St Vaast, St Martin at Tournai, St Pierre at Ghent, and St Amand at Anchin. EA., liasse 1945. 3.
659. 1619. Feb. 23. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenço, 24 Aug. 1618) of fifty crowns monthly, in addition to the 100 crowns monthly he already enjoys, to the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 26, fol. 277.
660. 1619. Feb. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Ferdinand Gallchur; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 276.
661. 1619. Feb. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Denis Ocahan; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 276.
662. 1619. Feb. 25. Brussels. A recommendation of Fr Hugh Cavello by the Archdukes to an unnamed bishop. EA., liasse 1945.
663. 1619. Brussels. Recommendation of Fr Hugh Cavello by the Archdukes to the Bishop of Namur, with the request to commend him to the abbots in the same diocese. EA., liasse 1844.
664. 1619. Feb. 25. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Eugenio Rirdan. EG., reg. 26, fol. 276v.
665. 1619. Mar. 18. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Richard Geraldin, soldier of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin his father, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 291v.
666. 1619. Apr. 11. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Thomas Plunquet, who has served in these parts for



- some years; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 26, fol. 310v.
667. 1619. Apr. 17. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Fr. Patrick Ploncquet, cleric; to serve as chaplain of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Francisco Lasso, regiment of Colonel Inigo Borsa. EG., reg. 26, fol. 316.
668. 1619. May 2. Diest. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. He had represented to his Majesty by a letter of 19 June last the great desire of the Earl of Tyrconnell, page to the Infanta, to become page to the Prince. The Archduke had begged his Majesty to be pleased to order that the Earl should be accepted as such, and to grant him the allowance he desires for his maintenance. The Earl has again asked him to have him received by his Majesty, and in consideration of his birth and of the good and faithful services rendered to the royal Crown by his father and ancestors, he cannot refrain from begging that the Earl may be granted every satisfaction in his wishes. EGC., reg. 182, fol. 279.
669. 1619. May 10. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 29 Dec. 1618) of ten crowns monthly to Roderick Odocherti, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth and good parts, and of the services of his father in defense of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 26, fol. 338v.
670. 1619. July 22. Brussels. Commission to licentiate Ferdinand de Belber as judge advocate of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 26, fol. 381.
671. 1619. Aug. 3. Mariemont. Orders to pay for a further three years the grants made to the Earl of Tyrone and the Earl of Tyrconnell, and to Hugh O Donell. EG., reg. 26, fol. 386v.
672. 1619. Aug. 22. Mariemont. Licence for Spain to Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 26, fol. 406v.
673. 1619. Aug. 23. Mariemont. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 6 July 1617) of twelve crowns monthly to Gerald Mauricio, Irish gentleman. EG., reg. 26, fol. 402v.
674. 1619. Sept. 7. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to Doctor John Fildo, former pensioner. EG., reg. 27, fol. 3v.
675. 1619. Oct. 31. Mariemont. Licence for Ireland to John Fildo, holder of a vacant place in the company of Captain Daniel Odoneil, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 18v.
676. 1619. Nov. 19. Tervueren. Licence for Spain, for six months, to Ensign Patrick Daniel, of the company of Captain Arturo O'Neill, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; on business of the Earl. EG., reg. 27, fol. 24v.
677. 1619. Dec. 2. Tervueren. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 30 Mar. 1619) of thirty crowns monthly, on the castle of Antwerp, to Captain Robert Odonel; to serve about the person of the Archduke in Flanders. EG., reg. 27, fol. 28.
678. 1619. Dec. 18. Tervueren. Orders to continue the payment, for one year further, of the special grant of eight crowns monthly



to Thomas Macmoris, held by him on the castle of Antwerp. EG., reg. 27, fol. 32v.

679. 1619. Dec. 23. Brussels. Orders to continue for one year further the pay held by Edward Commin in the company of Irish infantry of Captain James Gernalt; to be reckoned from the expiry of the last two grants made to him, in aid of his studies at the university of Louvain. EG., reg. 27, fol. 40v.
680. 1620. Jan. 2. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Patrick Daniel has served his Majesty for fifteen years continuously, as soldier and ensign of the company of Henry Oneill, who was colonel of the Irish infantry. He took part in all occasions which presented themselves during this time, and fulfilled all his duties with great satisfaction. He has been given licence for Spain in order to forward the affairs of the Earl of Tyrone, and he is given this letter that he may be granted the reward which he merits and hopes for, in conformity with his services, good parts and birth. EGC., reg. 183, fol. 216.
681. 1620. Feb. 8. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to William Loftus, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has represented that he lost his possessions in Ireland for the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 27, fol. 69.
682. 1620. Feb. 8. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Richard Oferal, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has represented that he lost his possessions in Ireland for the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 27, fol. 69v.
683. 1620. Mar. 8. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Madrid, 22 Feb. 1619) of fifty crowns monthly to Henry Oneil, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 87.
684. 1620. Mar. 14. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to John Ohagan, of the company of Captain Art Oneill; has represented that the special grant of eight crowns monthly, and his ordinary pay in the Irish infantry, had been withheld because he had not presented himself at a muster owing to the fact that he had gone to Rome at the call of the late Earl of Tyrone, and had remained there until the Earl's death. EG., reg. 27, fol. 101v.
685. 1620. Mar. 31. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and grant held by Dorbi Grinant from the Irish infantry to the castle of Antwerp. EG., reg. 27, fol. 104v.
686. 1620. Mar. 31. Brussels. Licence to Major Geraldini, pensioner upon the castle at Antwerp, who has represented that the Duke of Bavaria has invited him to take up service for the Catholic League in Germany. EG., reg. 27, fol. 109.
687. 1620. Aor. 19. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Daniel Clanci, an Irishman, is a man of good birth, as I have been informed, and has studied theology in these States. He is going to Rome to visit the sacred places there, and from Rome will go



to Spain. The Archduke begs his Majesty to show him appropriate favour, in consideration of his birth and good parts, and of his virtuous inclination, and because he is poor and needy. EGC., reg. 184, fol. 40.

688. 1620. May 11. Brussels. Petition of Eugenio Riordan to his Highness in his Privy Council. Eugenio Riordan, an Irishman, very humbly represents that the heretics banished him from his country, together with his wife and children, after they had deprived him of his means of living; and whereas your Highness, as appears from the accompanying letters, was pleased to grant him one month wherein to ask for Christian charity, and since then he has been ill in the hospital at Ghent, and unable to avail himself of the said licence, as is testified by the enclosed letters<sup>1</sup> of the Franciscan his confessor and pastor of the said hospital, he very humbly begs that in consideration of his illness, and of his burden of a wife and children, your Highness may be pleased to grant him a period of two months in which to pass freely through the country subject to your Highness, and then return to his own country. CPE., liasse 1357.
689. 1620. June 18. Brussels. Fr Enrique de Brizuela to —? I remember that at Diest I told you that the bearer of this letter, who is a bishop of Ireland, or rather, a bishop in Ireland, was very highly commended to me at Rome. Afterwards I spoke to his Highness, and told him that this person passed many years in these States. He was regent of the Irish college at Douay, and later vicar-general of the Archbishop of Armagh in Ireland, where he did much work for God, of which, when the Holy Father was informed, he made him a bishop. I beg that he may be assisted by his Highness in his travelling expenses to Ireland, whither he has to set out immediately. His Highness told me that as I assured him that all this was certain, and known to me by letters from Rome, he would order that something be given to him. He is going to Tervueren with the desire to speak to his Highness, should this be possible; and if it is not, he will present his memorial to you. I beg you to favour him by procuring the audience for him, and if he cannot have one, receive his memorial, and be pleased to speak to his Highness, explaining about him, and recalling to the memory of his Highness that this is the person on whose behalf I spoke to him at Diest. EA., liasse 1890. 2.
690. 1620. Aug. 6. Mariemont. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Felim Oneil. EG., reg. 27, fol. 199.
691. 1620. Aug. 6. Mariemont. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Ferdinand Oneil; lost his possessions in Ireland for the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 27, fol. 199.
692. 1620. Aug. 6. Mariemont. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Captain Eugenio Oneil; lost his possessions in Ireland for the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 27, fol. 200v.

<sup>1</sup>These, and the letters referred to above, are missing.



693. 1620. Aug. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Eneas Macafi, of the company of Captain Daniel Odonel, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 202.
694. 1620. Sept. 5. Mariemont. Commission to Roderick Odocharti as captain of the company of Irish infantry in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone which is vacant by the death of Captain Daniel Odoneil; in consideration of his birth, and of the distinguished services of his ancestors, who lost their lives and estates in upholding the Catholic cause, and in view of the fact that after their example he has served for ten years in these parts. EG., reg. 27, fol. 207.
695. 1620. Sept. 12. Mariemont. Licence to Daniel Clanci, Irish student, who holds the place of a soldier in the castle of Antwerp, and has represented that he wishes to go to Rome to receive sacred orders. EG., reg. 27, fol. 206.
696. 1620. Sept. 18. Brussels. Extension for one month of the licence already granted to Eugenio Riordain, Irishman. Represents that the licence for one month which he had previously obtained will expire on Sunday next. While begging, he had been injured by a farmer named Everard de Noeuville of the village of Geest Geronpoint in the bailiwick of the Roman country, and has not the means to prosecute the said de Noeuville and obtain satisfaction. CP., liasse 1357.
697. 1620. Sept. 22. Mariemont. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Patrick Tireo; to serve as chaplain to the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Antonio Sarmiento, regiment of Colonel Simon Antunez. EG., reg. 27, fol. 212.
698. 1620. Nov. 1. Tervueren. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Lisbon, 16 July 1619) of twenty five crowns monthly on the castle of Antwerp to John Val, Irish gentleman; before the last reduction had enjoyed a grant of thirty crowns monthly; is wounded and old. EG., reg. 27, fol. 239.
699. 1620. Nov. 20. Tervueren. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 20 Aug. 1620) of six crowns monthly to Daniel Flanagan; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 239.
700. 1620. Nov. 20. Tervueren. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 20 Aug. 1620) of six crowns monthly to Thadeus Bradagan, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 239.
701. 1620. Dec. 1. Tervueren. Orders to continue for one year the pay of Edmond Comin in the Irish infantry; to aid his studies at the university of Louvain. EG., reg. 27, fol. 243.
702. 1620. Dec. 1. Brussels. Orders to continue the payment of the place and special grant held before his departure for Spain, with licence, by Patrick Odonelly, of the company of Captain Art Oneill, although he has not yet returned to these States. EG., reg. 27, fol. 266v.



703. 1620. Dec. 1. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. To Thadeus Obrenan, an Irishman, who is returning to those States with a grant of forty crowns, I have ordered that 200 ducats be given to assist him to make the journey, with his wife and children, as he is in need. The said amount is to be deducted from his pay in Flanders, and the Archduke is hereby informed so that orders may be given to that effect. EGC., reg. 184, fol. 301.
704. 1620. Dec. 15. Brussels. Orders to continue for one year the special grant of eight crowns monthly made to Thomas Macmoris on the castle of Antwerp. EG., reg. 27, fol. 254v.
705. 1621. Jan. 4. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (Aranjuez, 1 May 1620) of twenty crowns monthly to Captain George de la Hoyd. EG., reg. 27, fol. 265.
706. 1621. Jan. 4. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to George Hovenden, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 258v.
707. 1621. Jan. 19. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 2 Sept. 1620) of two crowns monthly to Florence Clery, Irishman; his ancestors served in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 27, fol. 260v.
708. 1621. Jan. 21. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Dermot Maconor, Irishman, former pensioner. EG., reg. 27, fol. 301.
709. 1621. Jan. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to John Oneyl; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 265v.
710. 1621. Jan. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Henry Oneyl; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 265v.
711. 1621. Jan. 24. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Daniel Oneyl; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 265v.
712. 1621. Feb. 11. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to the Earl of Tyrone, on business relating to the service of his Majesty. EG., reg. 27, fol. 270v.
713. 1621. Mar. 6. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. Your Majesty has been pleased to write to me recommending that Charles Oneyl, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, be provided with one of the companies of his nation. As there has been no opportunity of doing this, I have thought well to beg your Majesty, as I now do, that in consideration of his birth and the services of his ancestors, you may be pleased to favour him in his wish to have some payment or grant with which he may continue to serve. EGC., reg. 185, fol. 81.
714. 1621. Mar. 11. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip III. The Earl of Tyrone, colonel of the Irish infantry, is going with licence to the Court of Spain on business. Your Majesty is well informed of the good, signal and special services which his father



the Earl, rendered your Majesty and his royal Crown during the wars in Ireland, and of how, for this reason and on account of his zeal for the Catholic religion, he left Ireland, with the loss of his estate and property. In consideration of this I very earnestly beg your Majesty may be pleased to show the said Earl every becoming honour and favour, in conformity with the said services, and of his own birth and good parts. EGC., reg. 185, fol. 97.

715. 1621. Mar. 21. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Carlos Oneill; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 287v.
716. 1621. Mar. 21. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Edmond Doniel; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 287v.
717. 1621. Mar. 21. Brussels. Commission to Eugenio Ohanlon as captain of the company of Irish infantry in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone which has become vacant by the death of Captain Roderic Odoarti; in consideration of his birth, and of the losses he has suffered in support of the Catholic faith. EG., reg. 27, fol. 288.
718. 1621. Mar. 29. Madrid. Philip III to the Archduke Albert. Thadeus Obrenan, an Irishman, is going to those States with a grant of 200 ducats which has been made to him upon his pay. This sum is to be given to him upon his arrival, and to be deducted from the amount which shall become due to him later. EGC., reg. 185, fol. 111.
719. 1621. Mar. 29. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip IV. Fr Hugo Cavello, Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, is going to the Court there [*Madrid*] to represent to your Majesty the need they are in on account of their number having increased to forty four, and of their not having the means to finish completely the church and convent they have built at Louvain. He also wishes to beg your Majesty may be pleased that a good alms be given him, as is your Majesty's practice for works which are so pious and for the service of God. He has begged me to intercede in this, and therefore I beg your Majesty to show the said Guardian all becoming favour. EGC., reg. 185, fol. 133.
720. 1621. Mar. 30. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Terence Oneill, of the company of Captain Art Oneill. EG., reg. 27, fol. 304.
721. 1621. Apr. 3. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Edmund de Burgo, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 292.
722. 1621. Apr. 2. Brussels. Licence for six months to Ensign Patrick Odoniell, of the company of Captain Art Oneill; to enable him to accompany the Earl of Tyrone to Spain, at the Earl's request. EG., reg. 27, fol. 292.
723. 1621. Apr. 16. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip IV. Letters in commendation of Patrick Odongayle, ensign of the



- company of Irish infantry of Colonel Henry<sup>1</sup> Oneyll, who is going to Spain for six months. Has represented that he has served the royal cause in these States for fifteen years, and has taken part in the engagements fought during that time, and fulfilled all his duties with great satisfaction. EGC., reg. 185, fol. 156.
724. 1621. Apr. 19. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Richard Birn; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Edmond Omor, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 297.
725. 1621. Apr. 21. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Ardel Ohanlon, of the company of Captain Eugenio Oanlon, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 297.
726. 1621. Apr. 25. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly, for one year, to Doña Elena Carti; "has represented to us that her ancestors rendered very special services in Ireland, and that she has lost all her possessions for the Catholic cause, and has come to these States in great need." EG., reg. 27, fol. 307.
727. 1621. May 1. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Prince de Ligne. Orders to unite, on 7 May, the two companies of Irish infantry which are being recruited in Artoise, so that on May 8 they may proceed to Merville, and be marched on the day following to Beveren, in the district of Waes, in conformity with the orders dispatched herewith. EA., carton 1980.
728. 1621. May 10. Brussels. Grant of four crowns monthly to John Levingston, of the company of Captain Thadeus Osulevan regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; lost his possessions in Scotland for the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 27, fol. 308.
729. 1621. May 23. Brussels. Commission to Edmond Omorra as captain of a company of Irish infantry for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; "as it seems well for the service of his Majesty to increase the number of men in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, and Omorra has offered to raise a company of 200 men of the Irish nation without charge or remittance." EG., reg. 27, fol. 317.
730. 1621. May 23. Brussels. Commission similarly worded to Ensign Carlos Oneil, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, as captain of a company of Irish infantry 200 strong, to be recruited by him for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 317.
731. 1621. May 24. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Donat Luneo; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Carlos Oneil. EG., reg. 27, fol. 318.
732. 1621. May 24. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to each of the companies of Captain Edmond Omorra and Captain Carlos Oneill. EG., reg. 27, fol. 317v.
733. 1621. June 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to James Macana, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has represented that he served in Ireland in defence of the Catholic

<sup>1</sup>An error for *John*. Henry O'Neill died in 1610.



cause, until forced to abandon his country and estate. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 330v.

734. 1621. June 17. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Lewis Oen, of the company of English infantry of captain Alan Noris, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 331v.
735. 1621. June 30. Brussels. The Archduke Albert to Philip IV. The Earl of Tyrconnell has reported to me that Terence O Galachuir, an Irishman, is son of the Lord of Lagan, a gentleman of high birth, and one of those who with great valour, zeal and affection followed the side of the Earls of Tyrconnell in the service of your Majesty's royal crown during the wars in Ireland, maintaining a troop of Horse at his own expense, and taking part and fighting in every engagement, like a valiant gentleman, until the end of the war. On this account he lost his lands and estate, because of the aforementioned alliance, and for the Catholic faith, and consequently he is now in need and has no means. The Earl desires that your Majesty be pleased to grant him an honourable pension as befits his birth. EGC., reg. 185, fol. 288.
736. 1621. July 5. Brussels. Commission to George de la Hoyd as captain of a company of 200 Irish infantry which he has offered to raise at his own expense. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 336v.
737. 1621. July 7. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Irish infantry raised by Captain George de la Hoyd. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 336v.
738. 1621. July 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Conacio Oneill, nephew of the late Earl of Tyrone, E.G., reg. 27, fol. 343.
739. 1621. July 17. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip III (San Lorenzo, 2 Sept. 1620) of twenty crowns monthly to Thadeus Obrenan, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth, and of the sufferings and losses sustained by his father and himself for the Catholic cause. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 346.
740. 1621. July 18. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to John Purzel, of the company of Captain James Garland. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 355.
741. 1621. July 18. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Thomas Purcel, of the company of Captain Eugenio Ohanlon. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 355v.
742. 1621. July 22. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Terence Finigan; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain George de la Hoyd, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 348.
743. 1621. July 23. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Thadeus Cleri, of the company of Captain Arturo Onell; report having been made to us of the birth and good parts of Thadeus Cleri, and of the persecution and loss of estate he has suffered for



the Catholic cause in Ireland. EG., reg. 27, fol. 348v.

744. 1623. July 23. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Neaghten Odonel, soldier of the company of Captain Charles Oneill; in consideration of the persecution and loss of estate he has suffered for the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 27, fol. 349.
745. 1621. July 23. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Thomas Masterson, of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these parts for two years. EG., reg. 27, fol. 351.
746. 1621. July 30. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Abbot Cornelius O Driscol has represented to me the services which his Father, Dermot O Driscol, rendered to your Majesty and his royal Crown during the wars in Ireland, with the loss of his estate, leaving his widow in great need with four children. The Abbot begs your Majesty may be pleased to grant his brother, Daniel O Driscol, the allowance in these States of seventy crowns monthly which his father enjoyed, and which was granted to him by your Majesty in consideration of his services. I beg your Majesty, in consideration of these statements, and of his birth, to make such a grant as seems to you to correspond to his wishes. EGC., reg. 186, fol. 19.
747. 1621. Aug. 6. London. Louis Van Maele, Envoy at London of the Infanta, to Antonio de Suarez de Arguelo, secretary of the Infanta's cabinet. The Polish ambassador has left . . . The Polish ambassador also took his leave, the King having granted him licence to recruit 2,000 Irishmen. For the cost of embarkation and rations he has already paid the King £12,000 sterling.<sup>1</sup> EGC., liasse 363, 35.
748. 1621. Aug. 17. Brussels. Extension for a further three months of the licence for Spain granted to the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 365.
749. 1621. Aug. 17. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Mortagh Odonolan, formerly sergeant of the company of Captain James Garland; to serve in the Irish infantry; had represented that he was in Ireland by permission of the Archduke to recover a certain estate left to him by his father, and had been persecuted there by the heretics and was unable to effect his purpose, and was thus obliged to return to these States to continue his service. EG., reg. 27, fol. 369.
750. 1621. Sept. 3. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Denis Macarti; to serve in the Irish infantry; had served the King for some years in these States, whence he went with licence to Ireland, and has now returned. EG., reg. 27, fol. 384v.
751. 1621. Sept. 3. Brussels. Orders to reinstate in their commissions Thomas and John Geraldin, the former as ensign of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, and the latter as sergeant of the same company; the



order to take effect as from 23 July last, when their suspension was removed. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 392.

752.

1621. Sept. 30. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. The Guardian of the college of St Anthony of Padua of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain has begged me to be pleased to order that an alms of 100 crowns be given in those States to each religious of the college who goes to preach in Ireland, just as it is customary at this Court to give the like amount to those who return home, as your Highness will see in more detail from the enclosed copy of the Guardian's memorial. In order to make a proper decision, it will please me if your Highness would inform me of your opinion concerning this request.

753.

Enclosed. The Father Guardian of the college of St Anthony of Padua of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain in Flanders represents that your Majesty in his zeal, and as general patron and protector of the Catholics, gives an alms of 100 crowns for travel and expenses to every priest, secular or regular, who by his superior's orders goes to preach and administer the sacraments in England or Ireland. For this reason, and as there was no occasion for your Majesty to give help to the said religious for the purchase of the site and the building of the college, which is under your Majesty's patronage; and in order that these religious may not be of lesser standing than the others of the said nations; the Guardian most humbly begs your Majesty may be pleased to order that the same alms be given for the journey to the members of the college who go to those kingdoms to preach or to administer the sacraments by order of their superior, who at present is Fr Andrew de Soto, confessor of the most serene Infanta Doña Isabella Eugenia. EGC., reg. 186, fol. 110.

754.

Undated. [Oct. 1621?] The Irish Franciscans at Louvain to the Infanta Isabella. Represent that they have petitioned his Majesty as in the foregoing letter, and he has answered that he will not decide until he has heard the opinion of your Highness. Their college is in great straits on account of the expense incurred in having to build from the foundations. Moreover, since communication has been stopped with Holland by the cessation of the truce, they have lost the alms they used to receive by that route from their own country. As a rule, the college maintains forty religious, and travelling expenses must be provided every year for five or six of them who are sent to their own country to exercise the ministry. It has been impossible to send them this year solely because there is nothing to give them for their journey, and consequently their afflicted nation suffers great harm, as it is in need of preachers. They beg her Highness to report in their favour concerning the petition, or to secure from his Majesty some other alms for the same purpose. EGC., reg. 186, fol. 113.

755.

1621. Oct. 6. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Thomas de Burgo. E.G., reg. 27, fol. 303.



756. 1621. Oct. 7. Brussels. Louis Verreyken to the Infanta Isabella. As her Highness has sent him the request of Captain Hond, Irishman, in garrison with his men at Nieuport, in which he asks her Highness for fifty two beds for his men, of whom several have fallen ill on account of the bad accomodation, the matter could be referred to the governor of Nieuport, and orders given accordingly. EA., liasse 2009.
757. 1621. Oct. 21. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 2 Sept. 1621) of 100 crowns monthly to the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 394v.
758. 1621. Oct. 21. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Walter de la Hoyd, Irishman; as he was included in the general disbanding, he is without pay. EG., reg. 27, fol. 404.
759. 1621. Oct. 30. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Charles Odaly, of the company of Captain Thadeus Soliban. EG., reg. 27, fol. 400.
760. 1621. Nov. 5. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 19 August 1621) of eight crowns monthly to Charles Onel, grandson of the Earl of Tyrone, and soldier of the company of Captain Eugenio Ohaolen. EG., reg. 27, fol. 398v.
761. 1621. Nov. 5. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 19 August 1621) of eight crowns monthly to Conacio Onel, nephew of the late Earl of Tyrone, and soldier of the company of Captain Charles Onel. EG., reg. 27, fol. 399.
762. 1621. Nov. 6. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 19 August. 1621) of eight crowns monthly to Henry Onel, grandson of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 405.
763. 1621. Dec. 16. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Denis Quelly, lately pensioner, as he now holds no pay from his Majesty. EG., reg. 27, fol. 421v.
764. 1621. Dec. 23. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Captain Walter de la Hoyd, an Irishman, who with our licence is going to Spain, has served your Majesty and your royal crown, as I am informed, for many years, with credit, and for this reason it has seemed well to me to beg your Majesty, as I now do, to be pleased to order that all proper favour be shown to him, as befits his merits and good parts. EGC., reg. 186, fol. 260.
765. 1622. Jan. 22. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Replies to his letter of 30 September asking her opinion about the alms petitioned for by the Irish Franciscans at Louvain. The alms would be holy and good, but would be an innovation, and other colleges and convents would ask for the same. These religious already enjoy a grant from his Majesty, paid from the funds of the army. However, it should be considered at Madrid whether the alms is given to the Irish only, and not to the others there, so that the English and others could make no claim of



precedent. His Majesty will order as he thinks best. EGC., 187, fol. 32.

766. 1622. Jan. 23. Brussels. Special grant of sixteen crowns monthly to Captain Walter de la Hoyd; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served his Majesty in these States for fifteen years. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 429.
767. 1622. Jan. 26. Brussels. Special grant of five crowns monthly, which is one crown more each month than the grant he already enjoys, to Sergeant Thadeus de Barragan. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 435.
768. 1622. Jan. 26. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Denis Macarti, Irish gentleman, soldier of the company of Captain Edmond Omor; has served his Majesty in these parts for some years, and after having gone to Ireland with licence, has now returned. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 435v.
769. 1622. Feb. 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Hugh Oneill, nephew of the late Earl of Tyrone; to serve in the Irish infantry. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 457.
770. 1622. Feb. 24. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Jehan de Pretz, Treasurer of the Domains. Orders to pay 200 florins, his yearly pension, to Dermot Omalun. CF., liasse 185.
771. 1622. Mar. 24. Brussels. Orders to continue for one year further the grant of a place in the castle at Antwerp to Licentiate Daniel Clanci, Irishman; has represented that he has studied for ten years in these parts, and with licence from the late Archduke had gone to Rome, and from there to Spain, and has now returned to these States. As he has no other means of support, and hope's to receive priest's orders within a year, he begs for the continuation of his place in the castle. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 488v.
772. 1622. Mar. 24. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Huberto Obrin, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 492.
773. 1622. Mar. 24. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to John Tullio, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. The same to Philip de Burgo, of the same company; to John de Burgo, of the same company, three crowns; to Richard de Burgo and Edmond de Burgo, of the same company, and to Colero Suyno, of the same company, two crowns; to Nellan Mageocheman, of the company of Captain Omorra, two crowns. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 500v.
774. 1622. Mar. 24. Brussels. Special grant of three crowns monthly to Gerard Geraldin, of the company of Captain Carlos Oneill. EGC., reg. 28, fol. 32.
775. 1622. Apr. 12. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Florence Cleri; to serve in the Irish infantry. EGC., reg. 27, fol. 498v.
776. 1622. Apr. 17. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Daniel Donovan, of the company of Captain Eugenio Ohanlon;



- has served his Majesty in these parts for nineteen years. EG., reg. 27, fol. 506v.
777. 1622. Apr. 17. Brussels. Commission to Captain Walter de la Hoyd, who has served in these parts for seventeen years, as captain of a company of Irish infantry 200 strong to be recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone.\* EG., reg. 27, fol. 508.
778. 1622. Apr. 17. Brussels. Commission to John Maguir, grandson of the late Earl of Tyrone, as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 508v.
779. 1622. Apr. 17. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Henry O Hagan as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 508v.
780. 1622. Apr. 17. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Patrick Daniel\* as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 509.
781. 1622. Apr. 19. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Eneas Macafi; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 27, fol. 506.
782. 1622. Apr. 25. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Colla Macdonel, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty for some time in these parts, after the example of his ancestors. EG., reg. 27, fol. 516.
783. 1622. Apr. 25. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Patrick Macibin, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 27, fol. 516v.
784. 1622. May 13. Brussels. Orders to appoint Thadeus Carti to be ensign of the company of the Earl of Tyrone, which post has been offered to him by the Earl; served the King of France for some years, and has come to serve in these States. EG., reg. 28, fol. 6v.
785. 1622. May 13. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Denis Quelli, of the company of Captain James Garland; has served his Majesty in these States and elsewhere for seventeen years. EG., reg. 28, fol. 27v.
786. 1622. May 21. Brussels. Orders to continue for two years further the grant of six crowns monthly to Elena Carty; to be drawn upon the company of Captain Thadeus Sullivan. EG., reg. 28, fol. 31.
787. 1622. May 31. Brussels. Louis Verreyken to Matheo de Urquina. Asks for the names of the four Irish captains of the companies to be newly recruited, concerning whom he has to issue orders. EA., liasse 2003. 1.
788. 1622. May 31. Brussels. Matheo de Urquina to Verreyken. The Irish captains for whose names he enquires are Walter de la



Hoyd, John Maguire, Henry Ohagan. and Patrick Daniel. EA., liasse 2003. 1.

789. 1622. June 2. Brussels. Licence for six months to Carlos Oneill, to go to Ireland at the representation of Captain Henry Ohagan, who wishes to have his services in recruiting his company, on account of his experience and knowledge. EG., reg. 28, fol. 28.
790. 1622. June 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for six months to Henry Oneill, of the company of Captain Carlos Oneill, as Patrick Daniel wishes to have his services in recruiting a company of Irish infantry, on account of his experience. EG., reg. 28, fol. 33.
791. 1622. June 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Prince de Ligne. Has found it expedient to recruit four companies of Irish infantry in Artois, each company to consist of four hundred men, under Captain Walter de la Hoyd, John Maguire, Henry O Hagan, and Patrick Daniel. The captains are to be assigned a walled town as near as possible to the coast, and orders are to be issued for the accomodation of the men.
792. Enclosed: Petition to the Infanta from the four captains who have been commissioned to recruit four companies in Ireland and bring them to these States; they ask to be assigned quarters in which they can assemble their men. EA., liasse 2043. 1.
793. 1622. June 11. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Margaret O Donnell, sister of the late Earl of Tyrconnell, has represented that fourteen years ago, on account of the Catholic cause, the heretics made prisoner in Ireland Cormacio Onell, brother of the late Earl of Tyrone, and after they had confiscated his estates they carried him off to the Tower of London, where he is a prisoner. The said Margaret is despoiled of all her property, having lost two brothers in your Majesty's service. In consideration of this and of her birth, I beg your Majesty to order that every favour be shown to her as regards her requests. EGC., reg. 187, fol. 253.
794. 1622. June 12. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. The Earl of Tyrone has given me the accompanying memorial, from which your Majesty will understand the request he makes of me. I beg your Majesty may be pleased to command that in case an agreement be reached with the Palatine about his father-in-law the King of England, the Earl of Tyrone be treated of or included in the said agreement, so as to secure that the King restore to him his estate in Ireland, which was confiscated from the Earl his father. And as the Earl is here, serving your Majesty with a regiment of infantry, and as the services which his father rendered your royal Crown (with such fidelity and satisfaction) are so well known, it would seem that whatever is possible on the part of your Majesty should be done for him, as I beg of your Majesty.
795. Enclosed: [a]. Oneil Earl of Tyrone, colonel of the Irish



regiment in these States, represents that when Prince Oneil, his father, made war against Elizabeth, Queen of England, he reduced her to such straits and danger, that she was forced to withdraw from France all her veteran soldiers who were helping the Dutch, and send them all against him in Ireland. At the same time, and for the same reason, she ordered the return of the fleet and of the squadrons which were marauding by land and sea on the coasts of Spain and the Indies, and the return of her general the Earl of Essex with his ships, and gathering them all she sent them to Ireland, and withdrew them from all those territories. The said Prince, at his own expense, courageously began to maintain a sanguinary war against them, which lasted seventeen years, with such slaughter on both sides as can be imagined in such a war, in which he received no quarter on account of the great loss he inflicted and because he carried on this war for the Catholic faith. And on account of the confidence which he placed in his Catholic Majesty, your Highness's father of happy memory, for whose sake he began the war (as is altogether certain from the royal letters of credit, and from the royal standard which his Majesty sent him) he never sought to surrender to the enemy on terms, or make any truce or peace, even though he would perhaps have received the free possession of his estates in the same manner as his ancestors. Nevertheless, he was obliged to accept certain conditions from the English, on account of the cruel straits he was in, although he hoped for his Majesty's assistance for having undertaken the war.

[b]. Nevertheless, the English were never secure while he was alive or at liberty, so much so that they had no other purpose in view than to seize his body and imprison him, along with his sons, his brothers, his cousins and the principal gentleman of his territories, of which he had information from the principal members of the English Council; which lead him to place himself under the protection of his Majesty and of your serene Highness, for whose sake he had carried on the said war, and lost his estates, and found himself an exile with his wife and children and his relations; and for which reason also the King of England confiscated the said estates to the Crown in perpetuity, and left him no hope of ever again enjoying them except through the intervention of his Majesty and of your most serene Highness; whom the Earl of Tyrone very humbly begs to be pleased to order that favourable letters be given him for his Majesty and the Emperor, that in the conditions and capitulations may be included the restitution of his estates and lands, so that he may enjoy the benefit of them either while serving here with a regiment, like the Duke of Argyle and many others, or serving his Majesty there [in Ireland] after the example of his ancestors; and therein he will receive very special favour from your royal Highness. EGC., reg. 187, ff. 259-60.



796. 1622. June 13. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Richard de Burgo, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 28, fol. 32v.
797. 1622. June 13. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to William Petit, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston; has served in these parts for seventeen years. EG., reg. 28, fol. 32v.
798. 1622. June 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edward Barneval, soldier attached to the company of Spanish infantry of the governor Juan Gonzales; is wounded in one arm and incapable of further service. EG., reg. 28, fol. 40v.
799. 1622. June 23. Brussels. Commission to Valentine Bron, of the company of Captain James Garland, as quarter-master of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 43v.
800. 1622. June 25. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Gelasius Macdonnel, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone, and descendant of the house and family of Macdonnel, has represented to me that his father died while fighting for the Catholic cause in the wars in Ireland; and for the same cause Gelasius Macdonnel himself has lost his estate, after he had suffered persecution and imprisonment at the hands of the heretics. I beg your Majesty may be pleased, in view of this, that all becoming favour may be shown him. EGC., reg. 187, fol. 280.
801. 1622. July 11. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I have seen the letter of your Highness of 12 June, and the enclosed memorial of the Earl of Tyrone, in which he prays that his estate be restored to him, and that this should be exacted in the treaty which is in course of being made with the King of England concerning affairs in the Palatinate. I have desired to say to your Highness that although the King of England is interested in these agreements, it is only as a third party, and not in his own cause, and for this reason it would not be opportune to associate this question with the Palatinate. Consequently it would be well to put the Earl off in the manner which appears best to your Highness. EGC., reg. 188, fol. 33.
802. 1622. July 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Patrick Cavello, of the company of Captain Cormac Onel; for the past year has been infirm and helpless. EG., reg. 28, fol. 50v.
803. 1622. July 14. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to John Geraldin; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 28, fol. 58v.
804. 1622. July 14. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Hugh Oneill, nephew of the late Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 58v.
805. 1622. July 24. From the camp. Colonel de Fontaine to the Infanta Isabella. Reports that he is at Regersvliet with eight companies of his regiment, four companies belonging to the Count de Henin, two unattached companies, four German, and five Irish



companies. EA., liasse 1983. 1.

806. 1622. July 28. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Edmond Ohara; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 28, fol. 62v.
807. 1622. Aug. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities of the castle at Cassel. Orders to billet a company of Irish infantry which has been ordered to proceed from Lillers to the camp at Regersvliet and will rest at Norbertin on the 15th of this month.  
Similar instructions to the authorities at Ypres, whence the company will proceed on the 17th of the month to Wytzcate, and on the day following to Nieuwerkerche. EA., liasse 1990.
808. 1622. Aug. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Major-General de Fontaine. Order to receive the company of Irish infantry of Captain Henry O Hagan, regiment of Count d'Onel, and to billet them along with the other companies of the same regiment under his command. EA., liasse 2049. 1.
809. 1622. Aug. 14. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Asks that some favour be shown to the Abbot of Moy and Baron Clanmoris in Ireland, who has represented the rank of his family and the services of his ancestors. The grant he has enjoyed up to the present has now come to an end, and he has no means to support himself as befits a cleric. EGC. 188, fol. 81.
810. 1622. Aug. 28. At the camp before Berg-op-zoom. General Ambrose Spinola to Louis Verreyken. Has given orders to Major-General de Fontaine to send him the Irish companies, and the four companies under his command. EA., liasse 2058. 2.
811. 1622. Sept. 5. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to be paid to the company of Captain Henry Ohagan. EG., reg. 28, fol. 94.
812. 1622. Sept. 15. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Henry Hovenden; to serve in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth and good parts, and of the loss of estate he has suffered for the Catholic faith in Ireland, whence he has come to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 28, fol. 107.
813. 1622. Oct. 8. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Arturo Magmaon; in consideration of his birth and good parts, and the loss of his estates which he has suffered for the Catholic faith in Ireland, whence he has come to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 28, fol. 123.
814. 1622. Oct. 20. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 23 Mar. 1622) to Quiano Mahuno, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 28, fol. 121.
815. 1622. Oct. 23. Brussels. Passport for England to John Dermott. EG., reg. 28, fol. 124v.
816. 1622. Nov. 2. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count d'Aldegonde. Orders to receive and billet at Namur the company of Irish infantry of Captain George Geraldino, of which about



fifty men are here in Brussels, and the others have orders to follow. They have orders to muster at Namur, and are then to be sent to wherever may be thought fit. Five pataars daily are to be allowed until the muster, so that the citizens shall have to provide lodgings only. EA., liasse 2055. 1.

817. 1622. Nov. 8. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Your Majesty has been pleased to order that I be instructed to inform you of my opinion concerning the request of the Earl of Tyrconnell to have his pension increased. Concerning this, in conformity with your order, it appears to me opportune to said that the Earl is of the rank and character which are known, and the services performed by his father for the royal Crown are very famous. He requests that you would order that his pension of 150 crowns annually be increased to 200 crowns, and made equal to the pension of his cousin the Earl Tyrone, who moreover has the pay of a colonel. It appears to me that your Majesty could do the Earl of Tyrconnell this favour, and make both cousins equal as regards their pension; and even then Tyrone will have the advantage by the amount of the pay of a colonel. EGC., reg. 188, fol. 201.
818. 1622. Nov. 9. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to James Talbot; to serve as chaplain in the company of Irish infantry of Captain George Fickgeralde, of the regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 28, fol. 147.
819. 1622. Nov. 11. Brussels. Commission to George Geraldin as captain of a company of Irish infantry which he has offered to recruit at his own expense for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 148.
820. 1622. Nov. 16. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain George Geraldin. EG., reg. 28, fol. 138.
821. 1622. Nov. 21. Brussels. Orders to disband two companies of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, now vacant by the death of Captain Eugenio O Hanlon and Captain George de la Hoyd; the men to be distributed amongst the different companies of the regiment. EG., reg. 28, fol. 148.
822. 1622. Nov. 22. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 10 August. 1622) of twelve crowns monthly to Eugenio Suyne, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served in Flanders after the example of his ancestors. EG., reg. 28, fol. 142.
823. 1622. Nov. 22. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Cornelius Silvano; to serve as chaplain in the company of Captain Henry Hagiben, regiment of Colonel John Oneill. EG., reg. 28, fol 147.
824. 1622. Dec. 5. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Captain James Garlon, vacant by his death; the men to be distributed amongst the other companies of the regiment of the



Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 157v.

825. 1622. Dec. 11. Brussels. Matheo de Urquina to — ? The Infanta has ordered that the enclosed letter be sent to Captain George Geraldin, who is in command of the new Irish regiment now at Gibe; in which letter he is directed to send thirty men of his company, with a company leader, to Ostend, to embark in the galleons of the fleet; the soldiers are to tell the archer of their guard to take the said letter with orders to march them to Ostend. EA., liasse 2003. 1.
826. 1622. Dec. 15. Brussels. Commission to Captain Edmund Butler as captain of a company of Irish infantry which he has undertaken to recruit as his own cost, for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 163.
827. 1622. Dec. 15. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Manuel Cahano, of the company of Captain Sobre Macdonel. EG., reg. 28, fol. 168.
828. 1622. Dec. Brussels. Louis Verreyken to the Infanta Isabella. He has left a blank in the enclosed orders, to enable her Highness to decide whether the Irish company is to be stationed at Diest, Aerschot, Sichem or Louvain, in which towns the Marquis Spinola has thought well to station the Irish regiment.  
 Note in the hand of the Infanta: The Marquis has always thought that this company should be stationed along with the other Irish. It seems to me that it could be assigned to Louvain. Send an archer to Notre Dame de Hal, with an ensign's passport made out here in Brussels, to find out who the men are who are roving about there, as I am told there is a band of Irishmen in the place, pillaging all they can. It would be well to investigate this, and see if they cannot be restrained. EA., liasse 2007. 3.
829. 1622. Dec. 17. Brussels. Matheo de Urquina to the authorities at Diest. The Infanta has ordered that the new company of Irish infantry, which Captain Edmond Butler has recruited recently and brought to these States at his own expense, shall be reviewed and received to pay. As her Highness has decided that the other Irish companies are to be stationed at Diest and the other places of which I have sent you information, see that this company also is properly accomodated. EA., liasse 2003. 1.
830. 1622. Dec. 22. Maestricht. Ambrose Spinola to Louis Verreyken. Has received his letter of the 18th of this month. The Irish company will go into garrison at Louvain. The other companies of the regiment can go into garrison as directed in the enclosed, and concerning this the enclosed orders are to be sent to their colonel, who will be at Tirlemont on the 26th. The company which is at Givet is to be sent from there to its allotted quarters, at once. He will see what can be done with the company at Hal when he returns. EA., liasse 2058. 1.
831. Enclosed originally in the preceding: Report on the Irish companies which are being sent to Brabant. The company of



the colonel; the company of Henry O Hagan; the company of Thomas Preston; the company of Anthony O Neill<sup>1</sup> the company of Edmond O Marro; the company of Carlos O Neill; the company which is coming from the Palatinate; the company of George Geraldin, which is to leave Givet; the company of James Garland; the company of George de la Hoyde; the company of Eugenio O Hanlon. The three companies mentioned last are marked with a cross and are to be disbanded. Of the remaining eight companies, two are to be sent to Diest, three to Aerschot, one to Sichern. the one from the Palatinate to Landen, and one to Hainault. The division of the companies is to be carried out by their colonel, who will be at Tirlmont on the 26th of December with six companies. He is to be informed in good time, so that his companies may be properly received, and to enable him to send orders to the company at Givet to march to Diest. EA., liasse 1995. 1.

832. 1623. Jan. 10. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Antony Aylmer, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 28, fol. 180.
833. 1623. Jan. 10. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 28 December 1621) of thirty crowns monthly to Dermot Osullevan Mor, Irishman; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 28, fol. 182v.
834. 1623. Jan. 11. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly, which is the same as the grant he already holds in virtue of a letter of Philip IV, to John de Burgo, in the Italian infantry; has been hitherto a pensioner in the company of Italian infantry of Colonel the Marquis de Campo Lataro; has represented that he has served his Majesty for thirty years in this capacity in these States upon the different occasions which presented themselves, and recently in the Palatinate, but on account of his advanced age and his infirmities he is unable further to continue his services. To serve henceforward in the garrison at Termonde. EG., reg. 28, fol. 250v.
835. 1623. Jan. 18. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pay and service of Terence Finigan, chaplain, from the company of Captain George de la Hoyd to the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd. EG., reg. 28, fol. 198.
836. 1623. Jan. 24. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Bernard Comonie; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Samberloy Maconel. EG., reg. 28, fol. 201v.
837. 1623. Jan. 28. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Florence Odriscol. of the disbanded company of Captain George de la Hoyd. EG., reg. 28, fol. 193.
838. 1623. Jan. 28. Brussels. Orders for the transfer of the place and pay of Patrick Plonqueto, chaplain of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Juan Ortiz, of the regiment formerly commanded by Don Diego Messia, to the company of cuirassiers of

<sup>1</sup>A mistake for Arturo.



- Captain and Commissary General Ochoa Gomez, with which he will serve henceforward. EG., reg. 28, fol. 196v.
839. 1623. Jan. 28. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Maurus Mahuno, of the disbanded company of Captain Eugenio O Hanloin. EG., reg. 28, fol. 197.
840. 1623. Fed. 4 Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. The Earl of Tyrone, colonel of the Irish regiment, belongs to the most noble and ancient families of Ireland, and to those which suffered the greatest damage and loss in defence of the Catholic cause and of your Majesty's royal Crown. His father, in particular, maintained and supported for many years a war against England at his own cost, in which he found himself so heavily oppressed and in such danger of losing his life, and the lives of his children and relatives, that they were obliged to come to these States to place themselves under your Majesty's protection, and leave their property, confiscated and in the hands of the enemy. In consideration of this, and of the praiseworthy manner and zeal with which the Earl remains in your Majesty's service with his regiment in these States, after the example of his father and ancestors, who served for so many years with the satisfaction and fidelity which are so well known, he requests that in case the estates of the Palatine be restored, there may be inserted in the articles of agreement, or in the articles which will be made in preparation for the marriage of the Infanta Maria with the Prince of Wales, the condition that the Earl's estates be restored to him in full. I beg your Majesty to show him every honour and favour in this matter, as besides being proper in this respect, on account of his services and the services of his father, it would also be of advantage for the service of your Majesty, to which the Earl could then more easily devote himself. EGC., reg. 189, fol. 55.
841. 1623. Feb. 12. Brussels. Special grant of fourteen crowns monthly to Ensign Richard Ayo, of the disbanded company of Captain George de la Hoyd. EG., reg. 28, fol. 217v.
842. 1623. Feb. 6. Brussels. Orders that the three regiments, the Irish, Scots, and English, are to be of the same strength, and to be armed in the same manner as was the regiment of the Earl of Arundel, namely each company to consist of 200 men including their superior officers, sixty of them to be armed with muskets, the same number with pikes, and the remainder with arquebuses. EG., reg. 28, fol. 213v.
843. 1623. Feb. 23. Brussels. Orders for the payment of twelve crowns monthly to Bernard Hayo; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Patrick O Donel. EG., reg. 28, fol. 232v.
844. 1623. Feb. 26. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns to John Bal, adjutant to the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 233.
845. 1623. Feb. 28. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty



- crowns to the company of Captain Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 28, fol. 220v.
846. 1623. Mar. 1. Brussels, Grant of four crowns monthly to Ferdinand Germin; to serve in the Irish infantry; has returned from Ireland at his own expense to continue his services in these States. EG., reg. 28, fol. 239.
847. 1623. Mar. 9. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain John Maguirre. EG., reg. 28, fol. 235.
848. 1623. Apr. 4. Brussels. Grant in aid, for once only, to Thomas MacMoris,\* in consideration of a special service he has rendered the royal estate. EG., reg. 28, fol. 275.
849. 1623. Apr. 4. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Fr Edmund Lerco, Irishman, chaplain of the company of Captain Sorle Macdonel, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has represented that he is no longer able to serve on account of his age and infirmities. EG., reg. 28, fol. 292.
850. 1623. Apr. 4. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Daniel Odonovan, of the company of Captain Eugenio Ohanlon. EG., reg. 28, fol. 297.
851. 1623. Apr. 6. Brussels. The Earl of Tyrone to the Secretary of the Audience. "With regard to the complaint of the Abbot of St Gertrude's against my major, I asked the Abbot to grant him a spare room, as he has a wife and children, and no place to lodge them. The Abbot answered that he could not do this, and the major contents himself with what he has, and we give the Abbot no trouble." EA., liasse 1983. 3.
852. 1623. Apr. 14. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Florence Ocallanan, Irishman; to serve as chief surgeon to the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 285.
853. 1623. Apr. 26. Brussels. Passport for Spain, on business, to Fr Roberto Brito, Irishman. EG., reg. 28, fol. 298v.
854. 1623. May 7, Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ferdinand Fuadono, former chaplain of the company of Captain James Garland. EG., reg. 28, fol. 300v.
855. 1623. May 12. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 19 Sept. 1622) of ten crowns monthly to Thadeus Carti; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 28, fol. 312v.
856. 1623. May 15. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to William Plonquet, of the company of Captain Thomas Preston; has served his Majesty in these States for seventeen years. EG., reg. 28, fol. 324.
857. 1623. May 24. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. The Baron of Gleanomallun, knight of the Order of Calatrava, as I am informed belongs to the oldest and most illustrious families of Ireland, and his ancestors served your royal Crown with great fidelity and zeal, especially during the wars of that kingdom with England. They were among the first to take up



arms for the Catholic faith, and raised many men at their own cost, until the Catholic league was dissolved and the enemy retained the upper hand. Their estates consequently were confiscated, and they themselves were in no small danger of losing their lives; and the said Baron went to Spain, and later on came to these States, where he has served your Majesty with full satisfaction, bearing himself always in a manner befitting his person. For this reason, and in consideration of his having served for some years with the cavalry, I feel myself obliged to wish for his advancement. EGC., reg. 189, fol. 139.

**858.** 1623. May 27. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Eugenio Daneto; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain George Manquiere, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 28, fol. 331v.

**859.** 1623. June 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. The Earl of Tyrone is a nobleman of such birth and good parts as your Majesty will have heard, whose ancestors served the royal Crown, and suffered such great tribulations, and losses of their estates for the Catholic faith in Ireland; and last of all, during the wars which those of that kingdom fought against England, the Earl's father was dispossessed of his estates. After his example the present Earl has served in these States for some years with every satisfaction, and continues to serve at present with a regiment of infantry of his nation. He desires that on this occasion of the marriage your Majesty would be pleased to intercede with the King of England to have him restored to his estates. I beg your Majesty to do him all honour and favour, as I hope of your Majesty, for as he is one of such rank, and is as firmly attached to your Majesty's service as were his ancestors, this would be fitting in his regard.\* EGC., reg. 189, fol. 158.

**860.** 1623. June 12. Brussels. Orders to continue for one year further the place of a soldier of the value of four crowns monthly granted to Licentiate Daniel Clanchi, Irish priest, to enable him to continue his studies. EG., reg. 28, fol. 346v.

**861.** 1623. June 24. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Gerald Barri as adjutant to the major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, with pay of 25 crowns monthly. EG., reg. 28, fol. 338.

**862.** 1623. June 26. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, on business of great importance, to the Earl of Tyrone, pensioner in this army. EG., reg. 28, fol. 347v.

**863.** 1623. June 26. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (El Pardo, 12 Jan. 1623) of six crowns monthly to Richard de Burgo, without the obligation of serving until he reaches the required age. EG., reg. 23, fol. 356v.

**864.** 1623. July 5. Brussels. Extension of the yearly grant of 800 crowns to the Irish seminary at Douai for a further two years, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV. EG., reg. 28, fol. 356v.

**865.** 1623. July 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James



Ogaligor, of the company of Captain Carlos Oneill; is wounded in the right hand and is not able for further service. EG., reg. 28, fol. 391.

866. 1623. July 24. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to John Oneill, of the company of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Argyle.\* EG., reg. 28, fol. 438.
867. 1623. Aug. 6. Brussels. Orders to continue payment for a further three years, to date from the expiry of the last grant, of the allowance made to the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, and to Hugh Odonell and Conacio Oneill. EG., reg. 28, fol. 399v.
868. 1623. Sept. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thadeus Odriscoll, former pensioner. EG., reg. 28, fol. 458v.
869. 1623. Oct. 13. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Ensign Gerald Mauricio, an Irish gentleman, has represented to me that the Earls of Desmond and the Baron of Lixnaw, his grandfather, father, and uncle, served your Majesty and the royal Crown in Ireland for forty years, and lost their lives and estates in that cause and in the cause of the Catholic religion. And on account of a certain mission on which he was employed by the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell who died in Rome, he was obliged to flee with them from his country to these States in 1607, and he has served here for fourteen years, as soldier and ensign, with the men of his nation; and he has taken part in all the engagements which have occurred during that time, and fulfilled his duties. He has asked me for licence to go to Spain, and it seems proper to me on this occasion to grant him this letter, begging your Majesty to show him all becoming honour and favour. EGC., reg. 189, fol. 209.
870. 1623. Oct. 13. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Thomas Preston, captain of an Irish company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, has represented to me that it is now eighteen years since he brought his company to these States at his own cost, and that he has served here ever since in the engagements which have been fought, with all satisfaction. He is going to Spain on business, with my permission, and on this occasion it seemed to me fitting to beg your Majesty, as I sincerely do, to be pleased to show him every honour and favour in those opportunities which shall be for his advancement. EGC., reg. 189, fol. 209.
871. 1623. Dec. 12. Entries of payments of 108 livres during a period of six months to Rosa Barraval, an Irish refugee here. Payments begin on 12 Dec. 1623 and continue until 20 June 1624. CC., reg. 45973, fol. 406.
872. 1624. Jan. 10. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Lierre. Orders to receive and billet in the usual manner three companies of Irish infantry which are being sent there to replace the ordinary garrison. EA., carton 2001.
873. 1624. May 17. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella.\* By the last courier your Highness informed me (as also I have been informed by the Marquis Inijosa and Don Carlos Colonna) of the



declaration made by the King of England to regain by force of arms the territory of his son-in-law [Frederick the Elector Palatine] and that if circumstances should oblige us to oppose the English plans, and there should be a breach of relations, your Highness will be obliged to order the Marquis de los Balbases, Don Luis de Velasco, or Count Enrique, to defend the Palatinate with such forces as they shall judge sufficient to hold off or attack the English, on the supposition that they will have full information of the strength the enemy will put into the enterprise. Your Highness will therefore order the Marquis de los Balbases or Don Luigi de Velasco, whichever of them shall be there, to prepare an army for attack and defence, according to the need, and to strengthen the Irish regiment, which is in service there, with new recruits, and supply and arm them for the best use which will be made of the regiment. I am confident that your Highness will proceed in everything with your customary care and zeal. EGC., reg. 190, fol. 183.

874.

1624. July 30. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I have seen the letter of your Highness, of the 23 May, and the papers mentioned in it about the meeting of the prelates, priests and religious of Ireland, held to treat of the liberty of that country, for the reasons pointed out in those papers. I have also seen what your Highness says, in this connection, of having ordered Juan Baptista van Male to interest himself in the proposal mentioned, and I know that, being of his ability, he is well fitted for this. And because, before proceeding further in the matter, it is right that your Highness should be informed upon every point, I wish to charge your Highness, that after you have heard in all secrecy the person who will be there to treat of this business, and when you have informed yourself about it, you should inform me of your opinion on all points; and before this, let me know at once whether it would be well to change the regiment of English and Scots in those States into an Irish regiment; and proceed in this with the circumspection which the situation demands. Your Highness will likewise order that instructions be sent to Juan Baptista van Male to keep up correspondance in Ireland through the channel he considers best, and to continue to report on everything to your Highness. Your Highness will keep me advised, as I wish to know about it, and of the manner in which it should be arranged. EGC., reg. 191, fol. 105.

875.

1624. Sept. 12. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. I have received your Majesty's letter of 30 July and of the 6 of the last month, As regards the meeting of the prelates, priests and religious of Ireland, your Majesty's commands shall be carried out. And as regards the formation of another Irish regiment in place of the regiment of English and Scots, it is well that your Majesty should understand that although as many Irish are taken on as come here, it is difficult to keep up the members for one regiment;



much more so for two. As regards the regiment of English and Scots, it might be well, after the campaign, to see whether it should be strengthened. EGC., reg. 191, fol. 141.

876.

1624. Oct. 26. San Lorenzo. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. Copy. Don Carlos Colonna wrote to me the letter of which a copy accompanies this, in which, as your Highness will see, he gives an account of the proposal which an Irish captain made to him for the invasion of Ireland. I have written to him that with the caution and secrecy the affair demands he is to give an account of it to your Highness; and when Don Carlos will have come, I would greatly desire that your Highness would hear him, and learn from him what substance and foundation there may be in it; and afterwards, if the second person with whom, as the captain says, the affair may be discussed, is in Louvain, your Highness will be able to learn from him whatever you consider opportune; and if it has solid grounds, you could correspond with the person in Bordeaux. I again recommend caution to your Highness, for so long as the break with England has not been declared, it is right to impede it, and not to commit ourselves in anything. Your Highness will keep me informed of anything you do in the affair.

877.

Enclosed: [a]. Copy of the letter of Don Carlos for his Majesty, from London, 26 August 1624. Three days ago a certain Irish captain came to me, and through the Agent of Flanders who acted as interpreter for him, told me that it is six years since he and Fr Paul Requet, another Irishman, and General of the Order of St. Bernard for all those northern parts where heresies prevail, had audience of the King, your Majesty's father, then gloriously reigning, and put before him an easy way of invading Ireland, by means of which, with the help of God, good success could be expected in an undertaking of such importance as that of delivering that kingdom from the English heresy and tyranny, and of keeping in check from there all the northern nations, both by sea and by land, and of subduing absolutely the Dutch rebels; that his Majesty thanked him for the offer with his accustomed kindness, and although he was pleased to accept the papers given to him concerning the affairs, which were confided to an important Counsellor-of-State whose name I do not remember, he put them off so far as the execution of the plan was concerned, because at that time the King of England had given him no occasion to trouble his realms,

[b]. At present this captain, seeing what has happened and is happening every day, desiring to help his country, and considering the present occasion the best that could be had, has resolved to renew the negotiations once more through me, having informed me that the said Fr Paul, who is the principal originator of this idea, is at present in a certain abbey of his order near Bordeaux (where the liberality and grandeur of your Majesty support a



number of subjects of his nation) so that your Majesty could order him to be called to that Court, and after having seen and examined the proposal, be pleased to take the resolution most opportune for the service of God and your Majesty.

[c]. The captain left at once for Ireland, where, without being idle in the meantime, he will await what the monk will write, or what your Majesty may write through the ambassador here. He is resolved to risk not only his life, but a thousand other lives if he had them, in an undertaking so holy, and so worthy of the sacred zeal, greatness and valour of your Majesty. He says, moreover, that if the monk should not be available, on account of death or for any other reason, the matter could be treated of just as well with the archbishop of Tuam [Duniense]<sup>1</sup> who resides at Louvain, and is no less well informed on these affairs, or less desirous of serving your Majesty, and of effecting the freedom and happiness of his country. EGC., reg. 191, ff. 206-7.

878. 1625. Mar. 19. Brussels. Commission to Captain Thomas Preston as captain of a company of Irish cuirassiers. "Whereas Captain Thomas Preston has served his Majesty for nineteen years in these States, with a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, after he had brought the said company from Ireland at great personal expense; and whereas lately he has recruited a company of mounted arquebusiers, men of this country, at his own expense, and has petitioned us that he be given a commission as captain of cuirassiers, for his greater distinction, the said company to serve with the pay and arms of arquebusiers as at present; as it is proper to honour him etc."\* EGC., reg. 29, fol. 13.
879. 1625. Mar. 23. Brussels. Orders to issue to Thomas Preston the pay of a captain of a company of Irish cuirassiers; the men of the company to be given the pay of arquebusiers. EGC., reg. 29, fol. 15v.
880. 1625. Apr. 12. Brussels. Commission to Francis Cruli, of the company of Captain Patrick Daniel, as campaign-captain in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; vacant by the death of Hugo Ogallecor. EGC., reg. 29, fol. 25.
881. 1625. Apr. 20. Brussels. Commission to Gerald Mauricio, ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Edmond Omorra, as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Captain Hugo Odonel; in consideration of his birth, and of the good services he has rendered his Majesty for twenty years, six years in Ireland, and the remainder in these States, during which he has distinguished himself on the occasions which have presented themselves, and especially during the siege of Bergh, and of Breda. EGC., reg. 29, fol. 32.
882. 1625. Apr. 20. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Maurus Mahona, adjutant to the major of the regiment of the Earl of

<sup>1</sup>Florence Conry, archbishop of Tuam *Tuamensis*.



Tyrone, as captain of the company of Irish infantry vacant by the promotion of Captain Thomas Preston; in consideration of his birth, and of the good services he has rendered his Majesty for fifteen years in these parts, during the first five years as volunteer in the royal fleet, and during the remainder in these States, as active ensign, and as adjutant, having distinguished himself during this time on the occasions which offered, and especially at the sieges of Bergh and Breda. EG., reg. 29, fol. 32v.

883. 1625. May 24. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 27 June 1624) to resume payment of a vacant place in the castle at Antwerp, valued at six crowns, to Morgan Quenedi who held it previously; has represented that he bore arms for his Majesty in Flanders ever since his age permitted, but he is now old and paralysed. EG., reg. 29, fol. 59v.
884. 1625. May 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Licentiate Thadeus Obrenan, pensioner in the Irish infantry; has represented that he wishes to withdraw to his own country in order the better to serve God.\* EG., reg. 29, fol. 73v.
885. 1625. June 5. Breda. Commission to Ensign John de Burgo as adjutant to the major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 29, fol. 81v.
886. 1625. June 13. Breda. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Eugenio Ringuier, formerly sergeant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Charles Honel, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has represented his services, and that he was suspended by sentence from his post in the company after he had been accused of selling a barrel of beer, the property of the company; since when he had been without pay. EG., reg. 29, fol. 77v.
887. 1625. June 17. Breda. Commission to Ensign Richard Ayo as adjutant to the major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 29, fol. 79.
888. 1625. July 3, Brussels. Orders to admit Nellan Mageoghagan to the post of ensign of the company of Captain Edmond Omorry, to which the captain had nominated him. EG., reg. 29, fol. 96v.
889. 1625. Aug. 4. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Aranjuez, 7 May 1625) of four crowns monthly to Felix de Galijur, Irishman; has served in defence of the Catholic cause. EG., reg. 29, fol. 142v.
890. 1625. Aug. 12. Complaint of the captains and officers of the Irish company of the garrison of Bourbourg. According to the regulations they should be lodged in the second best room of the people upon whom they are billeted by the magistracy. However, they are put out of their billets daily by the magistrates, and when they complained to the governor, he refused to provide billets for the said soldiers of the Irish garrison, who as a result are greatly inconvenienced. They beg to be billeted according



- to the orders given on 1 August 1625. EA., liasse 2028. 2.
- 891.** 1625. Aug. 15. Dunkirk. The Infanta Isabella to Louis Verreyken. Orders to billet in the houses of the citizens of Dunkirk the four companies of Irish infantry which have been sent there. EA., liasse 2096.
- 892.** 1625. Aug. 28. Dunkirk. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 10 March 1625) of eight crowns monthly to Dermot O'Brien, Irishman; has suffered for the Catholic cause; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 29, fol. 163.
- 893.** 1625. Sept. 11. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I have received the letters of your Highness of the 6th and 7th of last month, and have noted the decision you have taken to go to the coast of Flanders, and the motive for this; likewise that your Highness has decided to build another and large fort at Mardyck, and that you have stationed the Irish regiment there, for the reasons you mention. The assembling of the ships you mention has seemed to me very characteristic of your prudence, as likewise the moving of part of my army to the French frontiers; and I agree with your opinion. Excerpt. EGC., reg. 193, fol. 111.
- 894.** 1625. Sept. 11. Dunkirk. Orders to transfer the grant of 150 crowns monthly held by Odonel, Earl of Tyrconnell "about out person" to the castle at Antwerp, where he will enjoy it in future. EG., reg. 29, fol. 176v.
- 895.** 1625. Sept. 19. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. The enclosed document relating to English affairs, and to the measures it would be well to take in their regard, has been presented to me by a person zealous for my service. I have thought well to send it on to your Highness, that you may see and understand its contents, and inform me of your opinion on the points emphasised. As the persons who would be employed for the purpose mentioned in the document would run great risk if it were known in England that they are in our confidence, I enjoin upon your Highness the strictest secrecy, since it would not be right that they should suffer for this affair. However, it has seemed well to me to inform your Highness, that in case it may be necessary to send any orders to Jacques Bruneau, he should be given sufficient information of them and of their persons.
- 896.** [a]. Enclosed: Sire. It is well known that England has been sufficiently powerful, by means of her secret service and her wealth, to bring about all the misfortunes of Christendom, and has also directed her chief purpose to the ruin of Spain. The evils which the English have wrought in these parts during the last ninety years (especially since the beginning of the wars in the Low Countries, where they have helped the rebels in the not impregnable positions in Holland, Zeeland and Frisia, where we had such great losses and only minor successes) have increased to such an extent as to cause Spain the loss not only of her revenue from those countries, but also of the revenues she should have



derived from the Indies. Whenever England has seen that the affairs of this Crown were advancing towards recovery and progress, and threatened the ruin and division of Spain's enemies, she has taken care to use her evil and pernicious information, which has enabled her to dissipate Spain's energies and divert her from her objectives. Last of all, when she saw that your Majesty at the beginning of his reign, began to take such precautions at sea as would enable him to remedy the losses he had suffered, and in turn inflict them upon the English by obstructing their fishing and commerce, which are the sources of their wealth and strength, and enable them to injure this Crown, England immediately fomented and stirred up troubles in Germany, just when things there had come to a crisis, putting us to so much trouble and expense that if the Lord had not helped His cause at the battle of Prague, and defeated the enemy, our ruin would have been complete.

[b]. And having perceived this, the English have since followed up the same machinations and revolutions, not only in the Empire but in all directions. And as they think the hoped for time will come when they will be able to ruin Spain and finish her once for all, they have incited, and sworn in, all Spain's enemies, and have brought together such powerful alliances by land and sea. When they saw that the forces of this Crown were divided between the siege of Breda, the recovery of Brazil, and the protection of the coasts, they immediately began the war they had intended in Italy, promising themselves surer successes there than those they had gained elsewhere. At the same time they assembled a large fleet in England, and made the great preparations which are known. Who can doubt but that their primary intention was to make a feint of stirring up the French forces in Italy, and under cover of that, prevent Spain from giving help, and so gain their ends on land and sea in those parts, and then pursue the rest of their designs together with their allies. However, as at this same time the Lord was pleased to grant this Crown such glorious victories against all its enemies, by the taking of Breda, the recovery of Brazil, and the success in Italy, their first intentions have been defeated. It is clear, however, that they have other plans for the employment of their forces, and to justify the great expenses they have incurred. It appears that their design for this year is to destroy the ships and galleons of both the Indies, and it is to be believed that for this purpose they will use all means possible, though may God grant that their plans prove vain, and that the injuries they hope to inflict upon others may be turned upon themselves.

[c]. It is to be looked upon as well established that the defensive at sea is the ruin of any State, and that the offensive is the only remedy, and the carrying out of a diversion in the home of the enemy. This is evident from what has been said at the beginning



of this paper concerning the actions of our enemies and the diversions they have made everywhere against the Crown. And having thus come to the action to be taken this year, it is evidently of great importance that when the enemy fleet will have set out in search of our ships and galleons, if we cannot offer him opposition in the Low Countries, we should proceed to the fishing grounds of the rebels, and deal them a blow there, as there would be time to do during the whole of this coming September. Immediately after, they could pass on to disembark on the coast of Ireland, at the port of Veda, or some other in the neighbourhood of the Scottish Hebrides, where lie the estates of the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell. There should be at disposal about 8,000 soldiers, and arms for as many more, and 100,000 crowns in money; and Secretary Brubeau should at the same time treat with Sorley MacDonnell, Earl of Antrim in Ireland, and with MacDonnell Viscount of Kyntire in Scotland, who are both held by the King in London, to go to Scotland, and join hands from the Scottish Hebrides with the Irish from the mountain country; and Baron Ledirlan, who was here a few days ago, should also be informed to join the Scots and Irish with your Majesty's forces. Orders should be given to provide the two MacDonnells with 50,000 ducats, and arms, to enable them to create a diversion, and unite the men of the Scottish Hebrides with the Irish. Twenty thousand ducats should be provided for Baron Ledirlan, who, if he were able to accomplish what has been stated and bring about the union of the greater part of the Scots, who number more than 3,000 in the north of Ireland, with your Majesty's forces, would at least cause ill-feeling between the English and Scots, and so make the King of England doubt very seriously whether he could defend Ireland.

[d]. Ireland must be thought of as divided into two parts, the northern part, where it may be hoped to make the real diversion, and the part which lies over against England, from Galway to Dublin, where the English garrisons are, and the greater number of Irish Catholics and religious. These latter, though Catholics, are related to the English, and are united with them, and are rich, and enjoy their liberty, and are able to trade with Spain in great peace. Hence they do not wish to be disturbed, and would join with the English, as they did in the last wars, unless a powerful army of 20,000 men were landed there; they would then join with Spain from fear and necessity. Hence it is all the more reasonable and right that Spain should select which of the three countries, England, Ireland or Scotland, best suits her purpose; the one in which it would be better to assist religion and ownership; and make up her mind to help that one. This leads to the choice of Ireland, without regard to the number of Catholics, who perhaps are more numerous in the part where less could be effected on account of their understanding with



England. If, besides this, the Spanish fleet should land 10,000 men at the port of Milford Haven in England, these would not only prevent the English from bringing any help to Ireland, but would also ruin all her trade at sea. If at the same time England's trade with Spain were ruined, this would bring about her ruin by the same method that she has brought about ours. It would cause her gradual destruction, and this would suit Spain better than a conquest, of which Spain has no need, as she wishes only to preserve those territories which God has given her. It is certain that the united fleets of Spain, Brazil and Flanders would be superior to those of England, and braver and more warlike, seeing that the English are given to peace and ease, and to the great development of their trade, as they have never been attacked except by Philip II. The advantages which the Spanish arms might expect from an offensive war would allow them a long breathing space, and besides this would be the honour they would gain. EGC., reg. 193, ff. 126ff.

897. 1625. Sept. 22. Dunkirk. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Captain Thomas Preston, whose company of mounted cuirassiers has been disbanded, and he is without pay. EG., reg. 29, fol. 184v.
898. 1625. Sept. 24. Dunkirk. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Fr James Fallagano; to serve as chaplain with the company of Captain Mauricio Geraldin. EG., reg. 29, fol. 204v.
899. 1625. Oct. 12. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I have seen what your Highness says in the letter of 28 August about the difficulty there is for the present of giving a regiment to the Earl of Tyrconnell, and of newly forming it, and I praise your solicitude that he should receive punctual delivery of his pay and of the fifth of his allowance as a knight. On account of my esteem for the Earl, and of his merits and rank, I shall be very glad, and I charge your Highness, that, if it should be possible at present to grant him a regiment, or if there should be occasion to raise one, your Highness should by all means set this in motion. If this is not possible at present, it would be proper that your Highness should give him a regiment upon the first occasion which arises, because besides what has been already remarked, there are many advantages to be gained by keeping this nobleman occupied and satisfied. EGC., reg. 193, fol. 146.
900. 1625. Oct. 16. Dunkirk. Special grant of one crown monthly to Terencio Oneil, of the company of Captain Henry O Hagan; has served for three years in these parts, especially at the siege of Breda. EG., reg. 29, fol. 232.
901. 1625. Oct. 17. Dunkirk. Grant, at the request of their father, of a place in the castle at Antwerp, of the value of three crowns monthly, to Anthony and James Preston, minors in age, the eldest sons of Captain Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 29, fol. 203.
902. 1625. Nov. 2. Dunkirk. Licence for Ireland, on personal



business, to Constantine Oneill, of the company of Captain Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. fol. 222v.

903. 1625. Nov. 4. Dunkirk. Orders to transfer the grant of fifty crowns monthly held by Constantine Oneill in this army to the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 29, fol. 232.

904. 1625. Nov. 5. Dunkirk. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. With your Majesty's letter of 19 September I have received the document which the person zealous for your Majesty's service presented to you, suggesting that the fleet should sail from here to the enemy's fishing grounds, deal him a blow there, and then effect a disembarcation in Ireland, to secure the results mentioned in the said document. After having considered the matter attentively, I judge it proper to reply to your Majesty that as regards the fishing grounds, as I report in another letter, ships have already been sent there to do the enemy all the damage possible. As regards the landing in Ireland, the necessary equipment is not ready for this year. It might be well to consider what could be done for next year, and if your Majesty should decide to go to war with the King of England, I would think it better to attack the main objective, which is England. Should God grant us victory, it would be as glorious an event as we could wish for, both as regards England, and also as regards the effect upon Holland, which is nearer at hand. If some place were captured in England, it would be easier to cross over to Ireland, and this would be a consideration of great importance for any subsequent enterprise. EGC., reg. 193, fol. 173.

905. Enclosed: [a]. English efforts have always been directed against Spain. Help has been given to the rebels in the Netherlands, and Spain has been deprived not only of the revenue from those countries, but also of the gold and silver from the Indies. The English have also stirred up troubles against Spain in Italy and Germany. For this present year their plan would appear to be the destruction of the fleets and galleons sailing from the Indies, as is evident from their choice of a son of the late Count Maurice as admiral, helped by a Dutchman who has a special knowledge of the East Indies. If the English fleet should meet with the galleons bringing back the silver and gold, it would be better for the Spaniards to throw this overboard. The defensive at sea is the ruin of any State, and the offensive is the only remedy for Spain's troubles.

[b]. This year, when the enemy fleets have set out for the Indies, the Spanish fleets should raid their fishing grounds, and then proceed to disembark a force on the coast of Ireland, at the port of Veda, or some other in the neighbourhood of the Scotch Hebrides, As there are 8000 soldiers at disposal, and arms for as many more, and 100,000 crowns in money, Secretary Bruneau should treat at the same time with Sorley MacDonnell, Earl of Antrim in Ireland, and with MacDonnell Viscount Cantire in Scotland,



who are held for the King in London, to go to Scotland and join hands from the Hebrides with the Irish in the mountain country. On the other hand, Baron le Dirlan, who was here a few days ago, should be instructed to join the Scotch and Irish with your Majesty's forces, with orders to provide each of the MacDonnells with 50,000 ducats, and with arms, to enable them to make a diversion, and unite the men of the Scotch Hebrides with the Irish. And 20,000 crowns should be provided for Baron de Ledirlan, who if able to accomplish what has been agreed upon, and bring about the union of the greater part of the Scots (who number more than 30,000 in the north of Ireland) with your Majesty's forces, would at least cause bad feeling between the English and the Scotch, and thus make it very doubtful whether the King of England could defend that kingdom.

[c]. Ireland is divided into two parts, the north, where it may be hoped that the real diversion will be made, and the part over against England, from Dublin to Galway, where the English garrisons are, and the greater number of Irish Catholics and religious. The latter, though Catholics, are related to the English, and united with them, and are rich. They enjoy their liberty, and are able to trade with Spain in great peace. Hence they do not wish to be disturbed, and they would join with the English, as in the last wars, unless a powerful army of 20,000 men were disembarked, in which case they would join with the Spaniards from fear and necessity. Hence Spain must choose which of the three countries, England, Ireland, or Scotland suits her plans best, and in which of them it would be better to assist the Faith; and she must make up her mind to assist that one. This points to the choice of Ireland, without regard to the number of Catholics, who are more numerous in that part where perhaps less could be effected on account of their understanding with England.

[d]. If, in addition to what has been suggested, the Spanish fleet should land 10,000 men at the port of Milford Haven in England, which is very spacious and lies opposite Ireland, they would not only prevent the English from bringing any help across to Ireland, but would ruin all her trade by sea. If at the same time England were deprived of her trade with Spain, this would bring about her total ruin, just as she has brought about the ruin of Spain. EGC., reg. 193, ff. 174-5.

906.

1625, Nov. 5. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. She has received various letters from his Majesty dated 27 September and 2 and 12 October, dealing with different questions . . . As regards the Earl of Tyrconnell, everything possible will be done, when the occasions arises, to provide him with an Irish regiment; but of this at present there appears little likelihood, as she had already informed his Majesty. EGC., reg. 193, fol. 183.

907.

1625. Nov, 15, St Omer. Grant of a place in the Irish infantry of the value of four crowns monthly to John Geraldin,



- without obligation to serve or present himself; he is aged sixteen years, and is the eldest son of Ines Barri, who has represented the services of her husband William Geraldin, who left her with four children and without means of support. EG., reg. 29, fol. 236v.
- 908.** 1625. Nov. 15. St Omer. Grant of a place in the Irish infantry of the value of four crowns monthly, without obligation to serve or present himself, to Daniel Gallocjur, aged twelve years, eldest son of Juano Barri, widow of Hugo Gallocyur, late campaign-captain of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, who had served his Majesty for 18 years and had left four children without means of support. EG., reg. 29, fol. 237.
- 909.** 1625. Nov. 29. Ghent. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Furnes. Orders to billet "besides the Irish whom we have already ordered you to billet", Lieutenant-Colonel Eugenio Oneill, with some of the superior officers of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EA., liasse 2028. 2.
- 910.** 1625. Nov. 20. Ghent. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Dixmude. Orders to receive and billet, in conformity with the enclosed instructions, the company of Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrone, together with the household of some of the superior officers of his regiment. EA., liasse 2028. 2.
- 911.** 1625. Dec. 7. Dunkirk. Licence to Sergeant Thadeus Barragan, of the castle of Cambrai, who has represented that Bernardine de Menesses, governor of Perpignan, is about to send him to sea on business which will be to his advantage. EG., reg. 29, fol. 170.
- 912.** 1625. Dec. 22. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Furnes. Orders to deliver the keys of the town to Major Oneill, unless there be some reason to the contrary, of which, should this arise, the authorities will be informed later. EA., liasse 2082. 2.
- 913.** 1625. Dec. 23. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Eugenio Taneto, chaplain, from the company of Captain Gerard Mauricio to the company of Captain Patrick Donneilli. EG., reg. 28, fol. 262v.
- 914.** 1626. Jan. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Terence Frigilio, chaplain of the company of Scots infantry of the regiment of the Earl of Argyle. EG., reg. 29, fol. 287.
- 915.** 1626. Jan. 21. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the grant held by Thadeus Barragan on the castle of Cambrai, which had been suspended by the licence granted to him on 7 Sept. 1625. EG., reg. 29, fol. 298.
- 916.** 1626. Feb. 7. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Arturo Hagan, soldier of the company of his father Captain Henry Ohagan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 140.
- 917.** 1626. Feb. 20. Brussels. The Infanta to the authorities at Bourbourg. Orders to provide the two Irish companies stationed



there with wood and candles necessary for the guard. EA., liasse 2028. 2.

918. 1626. Mar. 11. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Terence Hagan, soldier of the company of his father Captain Henry Ohagan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, EG., reg. 30, fol. 139v.
919. 1626. Mar. 19. Brussels. The Infanta to the authorities at Antwerp. Orders to provide the boats necessary for the transport of the company of Captain Thadeus Osuelban across the Scheldt. EA., liasse 1985. 2.
920. 1626. Mar. 25. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly in addition to his ordinary pay, to Manuel Odonel of the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth, and of his desire to serve in the army after the example of his ancestors. EG., reg. 30, fol. 5v.
921. 1626. Mar. 25. Brussels. Orders to grant to Roderick de la Hoyd, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Walter de la Hoyd, regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone, the post of ensign in his company, to which his captain has nominated him. EG., reg. 30, fol. 7v.
922. 1626. Mar. 30. Brussels. Orders to grant 100 crowns to Major Felice Oneil, as a gratuity. EG., reg. 30, fol. 9v.
923. 1626. Apr. 2. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Richard Geraldin as captain of the company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Captain George Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty in these parts for more than ten years, and has distinguished himself on all occasions which have offered, especially recently at the siege of Breda, imitating in this manner many of his relatives, and Captain Maurice Geraldin his father, who also served his Majesty in these parts for over forty years, with full satisfaction. EG., reg. 30, fol. 11v.
924. 1626. Apr. 4. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 13 Dec. 1625) of two crowns monthly to Denis Rindan, Irishman, together with an ordinary place in the infantry of his nation; wishes to serve after the example of his father, Dermot Rindan. EG., reg. 30, fol. 16v.
925. 1626. Apr. 9. Brussels. Orders of Juan de Lerma in the name of the Superintendent of the Military Police. Whereas Eugenio Oneill, major of the Irish infantry, towards the end of February 1624 made a prize of some waggons loaded with fish and coming from the country of the enemy, contrary to his Majesty's proclamations, the party interested had recourse to Belver, who is the judge advocate of the regiment, to procure the return of the said waggons and of the fish, under security given by the party concerned and accepted. Since then matters have progressed so far that sentence has been delivered, declaring that the whole was a lawful prize; but when the question of execution of this sentence arose, the condemned party gained the interest



of the Council of Brabant, which is endeavouring to create obstacles. As the Council has no right to issue orders concerning questions of military jurisdiction, it has been considered proper to have recourse to the Superintendent of Military Justice, in his Majesty's name, and to ask him to order that the military sentence be carried out, so that everyone's jurisdiction may be maintained and military privileges upheld. By order of Salas, Superintendent of Military Justice.

In margin: 1626. Apr. 9. Brussels. Let a copy of this letter be sent to the Council of Brabant, to have the said orders executed, unless the Council has grounds to the contrary, of which in such case they will give notice within eight days of the receipt of this. EA., liasse 1985. 3.

926. 1626. Apr. 25. Brussels. Grant of two crowns monthly, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (12 August 1625) to Rosa Quegan, an Irish widow, as enjoyed by her before the last reduction. EG., reg. 30, fol. 27v.
927. 1626. Apr. 29. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the Council of Brabant. Sends a copy of the letter of Juan de Lerma of 22 April 1626, with orders to carry out the sentence pronounced by Belver the judge advocate on 27 May 1624. In margin: The papers attached to this letter were given to Major Oneill at the beginning of June 1626. EA., liasse 1985. 3.
928. 1626. Apr. 30. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Mauricio Corban, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these States for twenty years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 30.
929. 1626. May 7. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly in addition to the four crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Edmond Burghque, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty in these parts for eighteen years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 36.
930. 1626. May 8, Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 13 Dec. 1625) of the ordinary place of a soldier, of the value of four crowns monthly, to James Galixur; has served for some years in these parts, and was wounded in the left arm at the siege of Breda. EG., reg. 30, fol. 35.
931. 1626. May 9. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to William Tiber, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty in these parts for twenty years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 39v. Entered again at fol. 106, with the same date.
932. 1626. May 9. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Ferdinand Orelly, soldier of the company of Captain Patrick Daniel; in consideration of his birth and of his services at the siege of Breda. EG., reg. 30, fol. 39v.
933. 1626. May 16. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to James Torel, soldier of the company of Captain Carlos



Oneil; has served the King in these parts for twenty years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 44v.

934. 1626. May 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly in addition to his ordinary pay, to Ensign Denis Carti; has served the King for twenty years in these parts, and having become ill last year, was obliged to go to Spa and other places for a cure, and has now returned. EG., reg. 30, fol. 46v.
935. 1626. May 16. Brussels. Orders to reinstate sergeant Roderick MacMagon, of the company of Captain Patrick Daniel; has been deprived of his post by sentence of 9 March last, but her Highness had remitted the sentence on account of his services. EG., reg. 30, fol. 49.
936. 1626. May 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Gerald Dardis, "of good stature, beard bright red, aged thirty years, soldier of the company of Scottish infantry of Captain William Hamilton." EG., reg. 30, fol. 43v.
937. 1626. May 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Arthur MacMahon, "of good stature, beard bright red, aged thirty, soldier of the company of Captain Arturo Oneil; is married and has his home and property in Ireland, and wishes to settle his affairs there." EG., reg. 30, fol. 44v.
938. 1626. May 27. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to Charles O Daly, "of good stature, brown beard, aged thirty eight, soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone." EG., reg. 30, fol. 57v.
939. 1626. June 19. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Charles Ogalchur; to serve with his arms in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his birth, and of the zeal with which he has come from Ireland to serve his Majesty, after the example of his father. EG., reg. 30, fol. 80.
940. 1626. June 19. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Hugh Doharty, soldier of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin; in consideration of his past services. EG., reg. 30, fol. 80v.
941. 1626. June 24. Brussels. Orders to grant the post of ensign, to which he had been appointed by his brother Captain Richard Geraldin, to John Geraldin, of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 84.
942. 1626. June 30. Brussels. Orders to transfer Donatus Molano, chaplain, from the company of Captain Thadeus Carty, to the company of Captain Giraldi Mauricio. EG., reg. 30, fol. 89.
943. 1626. June 30. Brussels. Transfer of the services of Bernard Magrath, chaplain, from the company of English infantry of Captain Henry Norris to the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thadeus Carty. EG., reg. 30, fol. 89.
944. 1626. July 6. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Hugo Ororque, "of good build, brown beard, aged twenty six years," soldier of the company of Captain Sorle Macdonel; is not able for further



service on account of his infirmities. E.G., reg. 30, fol. 99.

945. 1626. July 8. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. The Baron Glenomalun,\* Lord and Peer of the Kingdom of Ireland, Knight of the Order of Calatrava, and my Equerry, is of the birth, merit and services of which your Majesty will have heard, and according to his own statements he is related to the most noble families of that kingdom. His father and ancestors served your Majesty and the royal crown with all fidelity and zeal, and were the first to take up arms for our holy faith against England, relying upon the promises which my lord the King (may he be in glory) made them in a letter of which a copy is enclosed. But at last they were obliged to leave their country, after they had lost their estates and possessions, as the said Baron lost his, and withdraw to the protection and patronage of your Majesty. And although since then he has been all the time in these States, he has received no favour worthy of mention, as the other Irish have who were confederates in the same league, and have come and are still coming to these States, and who are serving with pay of 20 or 30 crowns monthly. In order that the said Baron may continue, your Majesty could show him all the favour which is opportune, in consideration of the above, as I beg your Majesty, so that he may be able the better to support his family and fulfill his obligations.

946. Enclosed: Copy of a letter written by his Majesty King Philip III to the gentleman of the Catholic League in the province of Munster in Ireland. Don Philip, by the grace of God King of Castile, Leon, Aragon, the two Sicilies, Jerusalem, Portugal, Navarre, and the Indies. Noble and well beloved. Even had you not signified to me by your letter of the 12th of the last month your zeal for the service of God and the defence of His holy faith, such was well known by the demonstration you made of it at the arrival of my forces; by which I am well gratified, and do much desire to assist and help you. And in order to make this plain, and the particular remembrance I shall have of you, I again send you 20,000 crowns, to enable you to pay and support the men who follow and are devoted to you, and for arms and munitions if you can obtain them; for which the ship is to be sent which brings this supply. And I am very anxious to send you the help you desire, and you may be quite certain of it; and you may give assurance to your friends who signed your letter to me, and on my behalf acknowledge their good will. However, if you find yourself in such a condition that it would be better for you to come to Spain for your own safety, you could do so by embarking in this ship, for I will take care of your persons, and of everything that concerns you. Valladolid, 14 Mar. 1602. I the King. Andres de Prada. EGC., reg. 195, ff. 12-14.

947. 1626. July 8. Brussels. The Infanta to Diego de Messia. Informs him of the letter she has written in favour of Baron



Gleanomalun, and charges him to forward the matter with his Majesty. EGC., reg. 193. fol. 15.

948. 1626. July 11. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Daniel Ocean,\* in consideration of his birth and good parts, and of the zeal with which he has come from Ireland to serve his Majesty after the example of his father and ancestors. EGC., reg. 30, fol. 99.
949. 1626. July 11. Brussels. Grant to Elena Carti of fifteen crowns monthly for six months, upon the garrison of Lierre; has represented that her late father, Denis Carti, served his Majesty in these States for many years with a pension of eighty crowns monthly, and that on account of his death, and the loss of his estate which he had suffered in Ireland in defence of the Catholic faith, she is left without means of support. EGC., reg. 30, fol. 100.
950. 1626. July 14. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Elena Carti, who is here, has represented to me the services of Denis Carti, an Irish gentleman, her father, and her own need, and has begged me to grant her an allowance to enable her to support herself, and improve her status. I consideration of this I have assigned her a pension of fifteen crowns for six months, during which time your Majesty may be pleased to decide to show her favour. I beg your Majesty to show her the favour her need calls for by making her a grant, or by payment of the balance due to her father. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 38.
951. 1626. July 14. Brussels. The Infanta to Philip IV. Felix Oneyll, an Irish gentleman, has represented to me his birth, and the services which his ancestors rendered your Majesty and his royal Crown, with the loss of their lives and estates. After their example he himself has served, as I understand, for eleven years on the side [*of Spain*] first in Italy and Germany, as an ordinary soldier, as lieutenant of cavalry, captain of a company of Burgundian and Walloon infantry, and lastly as major of an infantry regiment with the said nations. He has taken part in various engagements, and has borne himself and fought with all satisfaction and valour, and has been wounded. This down to the year 1624, when on account of the disbanding of the regiment and the cessation of hostilities in Lombardy, he came to these States, where he has served with the same approval, and without pay, at the siege of Breda and in other engagements which have taken place. As he is now going to Spain with licence from me, I beg your Majesty, in consideration of the above and of his good parts, to show him the favour he hopes for, and secure his promotion. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 39.
952. 1626. July 14. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Diego Messia, Instructions to show sincere favour to Major Felix Oneyll, so that his Majesty my honour and reward him for his services. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 40.



953. 1626. July 20. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Gerard Cohano; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Gerardo Maurici, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 113v.
954. 1626. July 27. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Bourbourg. Orders to billet the Irish captains and officers according to the orders originally sent, in such manner as to avoid further complaints.
955. Enclosed: Complaint of the Irish captains and officers of the garrison at Bourbourg. According to the regulations they should be billeted in the second best room of the citizens upon whom they are quartered by the magistrates; but they are put out of their billets daily by the magistrates, and when they complained to the Governor, he refused to billet the Irish soldiers of the garrison, and consequently they suffer great inconvenience. They ask to be billeted according to the orders issued on 1 August 1625. EA., liasse 2028. 2.
956. 1626. July 29. Brussels. Grant of one crown monthly, in addition to the special grant he already enjoys, to William Plonquet, soldier of the company of Captain Maurice Mahuno, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty in these parts for thirty years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 119v.
957. 1626. Aug. 1. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly, upon the castle at Antwerp, to Daniel Clanci, Irish priest; in consideration of his good parts, and to enable him to continue his studies, for which he has but small means. EG., reg. 30, fol. 121v.
958. 1626. Sept. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Felize Oneil, on account of illness.\* EG., reg. 30, fol. 139.
959. 1626. Sept. 13. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to James Nugente, soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty in these parts for many years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 143v.
960. 1626. Sept. 10. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 9 June 1626) of two crowns monthly, in addition to his grant of one crown monthly upon the fleet, to Alonso Grigon, to enable him with the grant of three crowns to serve with the Irish infantry in Flanders. EG., reg. 30, fol. 147.
961. 1626. Sept. 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on account of his age, to Hugo Ocone, "of medium height, beard grey, gun-powder mark near his left eye, aged fifty six years;" soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 149v.
962. 1626. Sept. 17. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Henry Quelly, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty in these parts for some years. EG., reg. 30, fol. 153v.
963. 1626. Sept. 17. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Eugenio Macdiernuda, soldier of the company of Captain Mauro Mahuno, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his



Majesty in these States for some years, after the example of his ancestors. EG., reg. 30, fol. 155.

964. 1626. Sept. 28. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Florence Conrio, Archbishop of Tuam. I have orders to send your Lordship the enclosed petition presented to her Highness by Nicholas Everard, an Irish merchant, that you may read it, and inform her Highness of the truth about the provisions which are stated to be sent to those of the Irish nation who reside here, by the said merchant, for sale here, as coming from Ireland. Draft. Unsigned.
965. Enclosed. I. Your Highness. Nicholas Everardo, an Irish merchant, represents that in the town of Calais he has four hundredweight of butter, which, as he will show by the papers he has, he brought from Ireland. Moreover, it is easy to know the difference between Irish butter and butter from Holland, and for greater security your Highness can have it examined by those who can tell; and as it is for sale to those of the Irish nation who are in your service, no one will be wronged. Wherefore he humbly begs your Highness to order that a licence be given for the transport of the said four hundredweight of butter to this country of Flanders, for sale to those of the Irish nation who are in your service. He will thus receive very special favour of your most serene Highness,
966. Enclosed II. No. 239. Nicholas Everardo. Let this request be sent to the Archbishop of Tuam, who resides at Louvain, that he may inform her Highness of the truth concerning the provisions which are said to be sent to those of the Irish nation who live here, for sale here by the said merchant.
967. Enclosed III. If the said butter is not counterfeit, and apparently not made in the country of the rebels, as this suppliant states, entry and sale are not forbidden by the proclamation, and he has no need of a licence for these purposes. Albert Boonhef. EA., liasse 1993. 1.
968. 1626. Oct. 22. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Fr Florence Conryo, an Irishman, Archbishop of Tuam, has represented to me that it is now thirty four years since he was first employed and engaged by the nobles of the kingdom of Ireland to treat with his Majesty my lord and father about important and weighty affairs which were then afoot, and that he has continued so to do. He made various journeys from Ireland to Spain, and resided for a long time at the Spanish Court in the same interests, until in the year 1618, on account of the efforts to make peace with England, through the marriage of the Infanta Doña Maria, he returned to these States. As the marriage, however, did not take place, and war has been declared with Spain, he has decided to return to Spain on business of which he will inform your Majesty. I beg your Majesty to show him every favour in this and in his other purposes, as he is a religious of



such holy and exemplary life, and is very zealous in the royal service. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 219.

969. Undated. [Oct. 1626] Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Don Diego de Messia. Instructions to further the interests of Florence Conryo, Archbishop of Tuam, who is going to Spain on business which he himself will declare.\* EGC., reg. 195, fol. 22.
970. 1626. Oct. 22. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. There is here a certain Hugo Ororque, an Irish gentleman, who say he is a grandson of the late Brian Ororque, lord of Leitrim and brother of the present lord. He has represented that in the year 1588 his grandfather sheltered 500 Spaniards who reached the ports adjoining his territory after they had suffered shipwreck when the Armada was dispersed which was sent against England, and that he assisted and maintained them until he sent them safely to these parts; on which account Queen Elizabeth was so indignant that she ordered his arrest and execution.\* In like manner one of Hugo's uncles, a son of the aforementioned Brian, cooperated with the league of the Irish Catholics by supplying 1000 men, and maintaining them at his own expense until his death; and the actual lord, his brother, is a prisoner in the Tower of London for the last seven years, for differences relating to jurisdiction. Moreover, the present King has likewise ordered the arrest of Hugo himself, who managed to escape, however, when the order was about to be carried out, by coming to these States, where he wishes to serve your Majesty in the war. For this reason he seeks a grant corresponding to his birth, and I beg your Majesty that in consideration of the services of his ancestors, and the zeal he himself has shown to continue those services, you may be pleased to grant his wishes. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 221.
971. 1626. Nov. 13. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to Eugenio Oneil, major of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone; has represented that he must go to Spain on business, and asks for the necessary licence with retention of his post. EG., reg. 30, fol. 186.
972. 1626. Nov. 16. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Eugenio Oneill, major of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone, whose cousin german he is, has represented to me the services which his ancestors rendered your Majesty in Ireland, and to your royal Crown, and that in the wars there he lost his brothers, whose estates were confiscated. After their example, he himself has served your Majesty in these States, for twenty five years, for the first five as captain, and for the remainder as major. Moreover, on account of the youth of the Earl, he has held command of the regiment for twelve years, of the town and fortress of Rembergh for eight years, and of the town of Oloonzel for six months. He has taken part in the various perils and actions which have presented themselves, and on every occasion has fulfilled all his duties in a manner becoming his birth.



Your Majesty will learn of his wishes, and I very ardently beg you may be pleased to show him all honour and favour concerning them. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 268.

973. Undated. (Nov. 1626). Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Diego de Messia. Instructs him to further the interests of Eugenio O'Neill, as he is a soldier of such great valour and has given such satisfaction. EGC., reg. 195, fol. 269.
974. 1626. Dec. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on account of his various infirmities, to Eugenio Daveto, chaplain of the company of Captain Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 30, fol. 207.
975. 1626. Dec. 5. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly, in addition to the six crowns monthly he already enjoys, to Hugh O'Neill, soldier of the company of Captain Thadeus Sullevan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 207.
976. 1626. Dec. 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for four months, on account of the death of his father, and to recover the estate which he has lost thereby, to Tobias Tulli, "of medium height, beard flaxen, a scar below the right eye, aged nineteen years;" soldier of the company of Captain Edmond Moro, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 210.
977. 1626. Dec. 13. Brussels. Orders to continue for a further six months the grant of fifteen crowns monthly upon the garrison of Lierre to Elena Carti. EG., reg. 30, fol. 216v.
978. 1626. Undated. Passport for Patrick Ocely, Irishman. Ten florins. EAP., reg. 1050, fol. 115v.\*
979. 1627. Jan. 2. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. To Elena Carti, daughter of Denis Carti, an Irish nobleman, who was a pensioner in these States, I assigned on 11 July last a grant of fifteen crowns monthly, for six months, in consideration of the services of her father, the loss of estate he had suffered in Ireland in defence of the Catholic cause, and because she herself is in great need. At the same time I wrote to your Majesty and gave an account of this, and begged you, in view, of the above, to be pleased to order that the said pension of fifteen crowns monthly should be continued without any limit of time; concerning which, however, your Majesty has taken no decision. As in the meantime the six months have expired, I have thought it just to extend the pension for as many months more, and this I have done, until your Majesty be pleased to come to a decision. I once again beseech you most earnestly, assuring your Majesty that this will be a very pious action, and will give me great satisfaction. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 1.
980. 1627. Jan. 13. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. I have received your Majesty's letter of 7 of last month, together with the correspondance which came under a separate cover and treats of a plan of Major Eugenio Oneyl. About this it only occurs to me for the present to acknowledge the receipt of the said dispatch, and to say that when the major arrives, the plan will



be discussed with him, and whatever decision is made will be communicated immediately to your Majesty. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 79.

981. 1627. Jan. 18. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Elena Osullivan, daughter of the late Philip Osullivan, an Irish gentleman, and cousin, as she states, of the Earl of Birhaven, has represented to me her birth, the services of her father and her ancestors, and the hardships and persecutions they suffered during the wars in Ireland, in defence of the faith and in the service of your Majesty's royal Crown, three of her brothers having died in the wars. She represents also the condition in which she finds herself at present, very poor and without protection; and she desires to become a nun. She begs me to intercede with your Majesty to be pleased to assist her by granting her some favour. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 85.

982. 1627. Jan. 19. Madrid. The Duke of San Lucar to the Infanta. The Irish archbishop of the Order of St Francis who recently came here from those States [Flanders] has given me the enclosed memorial. By it your Highness will see what he proposes. On account of the discussions which are proceeding about this same matter in Flanders, it has seemed well to send the memorial to your Highness, that you may arrange and decide everything as seems best for the end in view.

Note in a different hand: Deciphered letter of the Count Duke of San Lucar, for her Highness, from Madrid. 19 Jan. 1627.

983. Enclosed: [a]. Observations presented by the Irish archbishop. Donegal Bay is the most beautiful bay in the kingdom of Ireland, being about twenty or twenty four leagues long, and about twelve or seventeen leagues wide; and it divides the two provinces of Ulster and Connaught. At its entrance on the north side there is a promontary or cape called Cape Teelin, and very near that, six or seven leagues before coming to Killybegs, is a small but very good harbour, which could be fortified with two pieces of artillery to defend its narrow entrance. This must necessarily be done, to prevent the enemy from establishing himself there, to molest those who enter or leave the harbour of Killybegs. The port of Londonderry, which also is in Tyrconnel, fifty miles from Killybegs by land, is well known. The city of Londonderry is small, but beautiful and wealthy. It is inhabited by the English only, and is situated on an island in Lough Foyle, which is an arm of the sea running for miles to the said city, and continuing for many miles further. Queen Elizabeth was never able to conquer the province of Ulster, nor weaken the forces of the Earls, until she sent a royal fleet to this port, and fortified it, and founded the city there; after which she made gradual progress with the war. Whoever shall win that port, with the port of Killybegs, will easily rule the whole province of Ulster and the province of Connaught, which are the strongest provinces of the kingdom of



Ireland. And as the port of Londonderry is very near the Scottish islands of the Hebrides, these would immediately arm themselves against the English. The city has good walls, but for its defence it has not more than one piece of artillery, unless some pieces have been placed there recently.

[b]. To prevent jealousy between the Earls, it appears that it would be well to promote them to be Generals, on an equal footing, as one will never serve under the other; and it might be feared that the one who would be General on sea, and not on land, would think that his position was inferior to the other. In any case, it would be proper to divide the Irish regiment which is in Flanders, and form two regiments from it, giving the regiment which will be newly formed to the Earl of Tyrconnell, and making up with Walloons the number of men which shall be wanting in both regiments.

[c]. It would likewise be well that his Majesty should send the son of O Rourke, who lately fled from England, and is a cousin of the Earl of Tyrconnell, giving him some command, or some large grant; for he could immediately draw a whole countryside to the service of his Majesty.

It would likewise be well to send three or four thousand more weapons than those ordered at present, so that in case the Scotch of the Islands of the Hebrides asked for arms, they could be supplied with them.

[d]. As on account of their gallantry and youth, and their delight and joy at hearing the news, it could be possible that the young Earls, with good intention, might tell some captain of the scheme, or some confidential friend, it would be proper in any case for her Highness or the Marquis Spinola, to make them take an oath not to reveal anything until they are out at sea. It would also be well to tell them that so long as they are united, his Majesty will bestow upon them ever greater favours. But this should be done in the same manner with both of them, with no further explanation to one than to the other, In the same way care must be taken that the Duke of Argyle obtain no information of the project, for if he should, it may be looked upon as finished, on account of his continual correspondance with England. EGC., liasse 301.

984. 1627. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to William Plunqueto, "of medium height, reddish beard, scar on the right wrist, aged forty years"; soldier of the company of Captain Mauro Mahun. Eg., reg. 30, fol. 242v.

985. 1627. Jan. 22. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of thirty crowns monthly held by Dermot Osulevan Moar in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Juan Clares de Guzman, to the garrison at Lierre, where he will enjoy it in future; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 30, fol. 246v.

986-7. 1627. Jan. 30. The Duke de Messia to the Infanta Isabella.



Besides the other memorial which I send your Highness by this courier, *the Archbishop of Tuam has given me the enclosed*,<sup>1</sup> which I have thought well to send to your Highness so that as regards both one and the other you may be pleased to make whatever arrangements you think best about the matter with which both of them deal. In this manner the purpose will be assured. May God keep your Highness, as your clients have need. From El Pardo, 30 January 1627. Your lowliest client kisses your Highness's feet. Gaspar de Guzman.

Enclosed. Decoded. [a]. Observations made by the Archbishop of Tuam. It seems well that your Excellency should think out the form of an exhortatory letter to be written by the Earls when they reach Ireland, to the principal gentlemen of the other provinces, to encourage them to unite among themselves, and free themselves from the heretical and tyrannical yoke under which they have laboured for so many years, and to call attention briefly to their servitude and slavery, which is much worse than that suffered by those Christians who live under the Turks, to the great ignominy of a nation so constant in the faith, and so valiant in arms as the Irish nation. The letter should emphasise what can be done by unity, as is seen by the Dutch, who though they do not possess the fourth part of as much territory as Ireland, nevertheless, on account of their unity, although they defend an unjust cause, as rebels against God and their lawful prince, have held out, and are still holding out against such a great power as Spain. And let it be added that if the Irish endeavour to unite, and fight in defence of their religion and country, God will help them, and most certainly the Pope and the other Christian princes will assist them.

[b]. It will also be well to order that no Englishman or Scot may go on the expedition which is contemplated, and also that no person of authority, or of outstanding ability, be allowed to accompany it from among the anglicised Irish who are serving in Flanders, so that there may not be in our army any suspect who could hold communication with the enemy, or write to him, giving him information of everything; for this would be most harmful, especially at the beginning.

[c]. It will be necessary to take many ladders, many small pieces of artillery (those cast by Mansfelt) and a good number of gunners, men skilled in fortification, and engineers; also some petards and men skilled in the use of them, of which so far they have [in Ireland] never had experience, and hence there is no castle or city gate in that kingdom which could not easily be assaulted, as they have not been prepared for attack by petards.

[d]. It will be necessary to place all the nobles under obligation that when they reach Ireland they must always remain united for the liberty and religion of their country. To give good example

<sup>1</sup>In the original the words in italics are in code, but have been written in full.



to the rest, it would be well to make the earls swear this first; and the same oath should be taken by the captains and soldiers when they are in Ireland. Rigorous orders should be given that when they arrive in Ireland no soldier shall burn down the houses, or do anything similar.

[e]. It would also be most proper that her Highness [the Archduchess] or the Marquis should tell the earls that when they set foot in Ireland they may declare themselves Dukes, and take that title, in consequence of His Holiness having granted them that favour; but that they are not to declare this, but keep it secret, until they shall have disembarked in order thereby to encourage both themselves, and the rest of the army and kingdom.

[f]. It will be of great importance, in order to avoid petty troubles and jealousy between the earls, that neither of them be declared General of the province of Ulster, as they both have estates in that province, and consequently neither of them will wish to be under the orders of the other. For this reason it would be better that without being named Generals of any particular provinces, both of them should have the title of General, Defenders of the liberty of the Fatherland, until affairs shall have made some progress and be upon a firmer footing.

[g]. Doña Nola O Doneil\* is aunt of the Earl of Tyrconnell. It would be well to order that during the absence of her nephew she be paid her pension and everything else due to her, punctually, as otherwise she would be deprived of the means of maintenance which she now receives during the Earl's presence.

[h]. The sister of the Earl of Tyrconnell has arrived from England in a very unusual fashion. It would be well that her Highness shelter her in the Palace, as this is demanded by her birth and her age, and by the absence of the Earl.\* EGC., liasse 301.

988.

1627. Feb. 4.\* Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. I have already informed your Majesty, by a letter of the 13th of last month, of the receipt, along with the other correspondance, of the despatch of 27 December, concerning the affairs of Ireland. It has since been decoded. I did not answer at once, as I awaited the arrival of Major Eugenio O'Neill, to be able to discuss the situation with him, and so give your Majesty a well founded report on this matter. He has since arrived, with a duplicate of the despatch, to which however he has added nothing by word of mouth. May your Majesty be pleased to see the letter which I wrote by him, which proposes a scheme for the Irish regiment to go to Ireland without banners. It seemed to me that I should give an account of this to your Majesty, so that if you should obtain reliable information that the people of those islands are well disposed for an insurrection, the Irishmen here could further it. It seems to me that if they went in this way (one could say, as a disbanded regiment returning home) even though their designs should not succeed, the reputation of your Majesty would



not greatly suffer. I see, however, that they look at the matter otherwise, as they suggest that two thousand Walloons should be sent, which they proposed at the beginning, but I would not have it; and they therefore abandoned the idea. If this were done, it is clear that the whole world would look upon the enterprise as your Majesty's; and if it did not succeed, the loss this time would be even greater than on other such occasions, as it would not seem prudent to have engaged in a war in a strange country with so few men. Moreover, besides the initial difficulties, that of maintaining the expedition would be even greater. Again, on this occasion the head and leader of the expedition would have to be the Earl of Tyrone, concerning whom Don Messia, who knows him, could give you some information. To think of sending the Earl of Tyrconnell at the same time would be even worse, as the two have never been able to tolerate one another, and it is not likely that they would do so now. So that to me it does not at all seem that the affair should be carried out in the manner suggested. As for the proposal that the Irish should go alone, although they themselves suggested this at the beginning, it appears now that they do not approve of it. With all this, I will not fail to prepare ten ships, with everything necessary, in case your Majesty, notwithstanding what I say, should command your orders to be carried out. If your Majesty should accept my opinion, these ships with the necessary crews will go to do whatever damage they can to the enemy at sea. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 127.

989.

1627. Mar. 5. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. [a]. I have seen your Highness's letter of the 4th of the last month, treating of the affairs of Ireland, and of your opinions about the enterprise and the men who are now proposed for it; also of the difficulty there would be about sending the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell together on the expedition, on account of their never having been able to tolerate one another, and of the necessity of making the Earl of Tyrone head and leader of the expedition. Here, in addition, on account of the lateness of the season, it is considered how difficult it would be to carry out everything this spring, even though this were desired, or before the coming month of September or October. Nevertheless, as there are some who think it would be well to get to work before the fleet sails which the English are assembling, I have thought well to leave to your Highness the executing and carrying out of the expedition at such time and season as shall seem best to you; and I will make sure that a report be sent to your Highness continually, by every courier, of the state into which my fleet will have been put. Your Highness will arrange for the fleet there, and for the other preparations, always bearing in mind that the manner, the time, and the men who have to carry it out, must remain in the mind of your Highness only, and the mind of the Marquis de los Balbases.



[b]. Upon this supposition, it will be well that your Highness should set about procuring agreement between the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, either by attaching to them a third person to act as their counsellor and to be over them both, and by granting them titular prerogatives, so that while in name and appearance they remain the leaders, the work and the expedition of it be in the hands of this person by reason of his seeming to be their guide; or by arranging something else of this nature, as your Highness shall judge best suited to overcome the difficulty. In the meantime your Highness will inform yourself of the state of things in Ireland, preparing, as has been said, whatever is necessary, and getting ready the ships, that the plan may be put into execution either when the English will have withdrawn their fleets, or whenever your Highness shall judge best. For which end you will give attention to three points. The first, that as the season is already advanced, arrangements must be made with a view to acting with the greatest safety. The second, that by this means it will be seen whether the opening which has been made for an agreement [with the English] is productive of any result, or whether it will be necessary or not to proceed with the enterprise. The third, whether in case of an arrangement with England, these ships can be used to attack the Dutch, or for any other enterprise in the northern waters.

[c]. By leaving this affair and its arrangement in the hands of your Highness, everything possible is being done, and I have not the anxiety I would have if it were otherwise, on account of the experience I have, which is so well known, of the prudence of your Highness in everything which has passed or passes through your hands and counsel. I once more charge your Highness to inform me of everything that shall be done, for the same care will be taken here to keep you advised of the dispositions and preparations of the fleet. May our Lord keep your Highness as I desire. Madrid, 5 March 1627. Your Highness's good nephew, The King. Don Juan de Billela. Reserved. EGC., reg. 196, ff. 207ff. Original in code, ff. 205-6.

990.

1627. Mar. 12. Madrid. The Duke de San Lucar to the Infanta Isabella. Florence Conryo, Archbishop of Tuam, has given me the enclosed memorial. I am sending it to you that you may be pleased to order that it be added to the other observations which the archbishop has made concerning this matter, and which I have continued to send to your Highness, so that you may order what you judge best suited to gain the ends in view; whereby the purpose will be attained. May God keep your Highness as we your clients have need. Madrid, 12 Mar. 1627. I kiss your Highness's hands. Your humble servant, Don Gaspar de Guzman.

Dorso: Madrid. 1627. To her Highness. The Count Duke de San Lucar.

991.

Enclosed: [a]. Observations of the Archbishop of Tuam



concerning the enterprize in Ireland, It is of great importance for the service of God and of his Majesty that there should be great friendship between our earls, who, however much united and in agreement they may be, could become still more so through close relationship. Wherefore it would seem well that his Majesty should order her Highness to treat of bringing about a marriage between the sister of the Earl of Tyrconnell, who has lately fled from England, and the Earl of Tyrone, his Majesty giving her a dowry, since her brother the Earl of Tyrconnell cannot do so. It would also seem well that his Majesty should make a large grant for expenses to each of the earls before they take their departure, giving the same amount to one as to the other, as they are in great need.

[b]. It would be very proper that his Majesty should order about four companies of Walloons who serve in the cavalry in Flanders to embark with the earls, leaving their horses behind, but taking with them in the ships their carbines, pistols, arms, saddles, bridles, boots and spurs, so that when the earls arrive in Ireland, they would have a body of experienced cavalry, as strong nags are not wanting there, and in time there will be good horses; otherwise the enemy, with his cavalry, would be able to have a very great advantage over our men, if they found them without cavalry; and those four hundred cavalry will be worth more than a thousand horse of the enemy, and would teach the Irish to fight on horseback, and not with spears as they are accustomed to, but with carbines and pistols. In this manner there would be many troops of cavalry in our army in a short time. For this purpose it will be necessary that his Majesty should order that carbines, pistols, and saddles should be got ready for Flanders, and everything else of this kind which would be necessary to arm fifteen companies of Irish horsemen in Ireland. All this could be sent to Ireland when it is known that the earls have arrived there, unless it should be ready to send with the earls themselves. EGC., liasse 301.

992.

1627. Mar. 20. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. On 4 February of this year I wrote to your Majesty about the Irish expedition proposed by the Earl of Tyrone, and I said that notwithstanding the difficulties and inconveniences connected with it, I would have men levied and ships prepared. This I have done, and eleven ships are ready, so that if in any event your Majesty should decide upon it, your royal will could be carried out. However, as the month of March is so far advanced, and no order has come from your Majesty, and as, if these ships delay longer before putting to sea, there will be great difficulty about their doing so at all, on account of the short nights which will be coming, and because of the enemy stationing himself before the port, as he is accustomed to; and because of the disgrace it would be for them to remian here the whole summer doing nothing;



it has seemed proper to me to order them to put to sea with the first good wind, and do as much damage to the enemy as they can, in different groups; after which they will return to the docks to be repaired and provisioned. Then on the 20 or 25 of June they will leave, and in accordance with their orders, they will go to Greenland, where the Dutch do their whale fishing. They will go afterwards to the herring fishery of the same Dutchmen, and destroy it, as it is of such importance and advantage. They will be under the command of Captain Miguel Jacob. Of all this it has seemed proper to send a report to your Majesty. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 255.

993. 1627. Apr. 8. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV, to grant sixty five crowns monthly to Major Feliz Onell. EG., reg. 30, fol. 30IV.
994. 1627. Apr. 11. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. By the letter of your Highness of the 20th of last month I have seen the order to go to sea given by your Highness to the eleven ships which were ready, and the work they were to carry out; and by what I wrote to your Highness on the 5th of last month, you will have seen the resolution I have taken about the enterprise which has been arranged. Hence in this matter I have nothing to add, except to refer to what I have previously advised your Highness about it, concerning which I hope for an answer at the first opportunity, as, in case it is well to proceed with it, there is time between now and September, when it appears that it could be carried out, to make the necessary arrangements. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 283.
995. 1627. Apr. 17. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the Duke of San Lucar. I have received your letter of the 12th of last month, together with the memorial containing the observations given to you by the Archbishop of Tuam relating to the undertaking in Ireland. Concerning this I am informed that on account of the preparations which will be necessary, the enterprise cannot be carried out for the present, as you will have seen by what I have written to my Lord the King, and by what I am writing to him again. In the memorial referred to it is remarked that it would be well that I should bring about a marriage between the Earl of Tyrone and the sister of the Earl of Tyrconnell, so as to join them in closer friendship. Concerning this it has seemed well to me to tell you that this marriage has been treated of, but the sister of Tyrconnell has declared that she has no wish whatever to marry Tyrone. EGC., liasse 30I.
996. 1627. Apr. 17. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. I have received your Majesty's letter of the 5th of last month, dealing with the undertaking in Ireland, and as I advised your Majesty, the time for putting it into execution this spring has passed, and the vessels of war of the fleet have put to sea and have gone to the Channel port, where they will be fitted out for a voyage



to Greenland, the whale fishery of the Dutch, and after that to their herring fishery, as I have reported to your Majesty. When they come back in the autumn we shall see what can be done about the Irish expedition, on which I will report to your Majesty.\* EGC., reg. 196, fol. 309.

997. 1627. May 8. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Edmond and Roderick Oneil, soldiers of the company of Captain Arturo Oneil; in consideration of their birth, and of their services for some years past in these States. EG., reg. 30, fol. 330v.
998. 1627. May 12. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Patrick Kynan; to serve as chaplain in the company of Captain Patrick Odoneil, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 30, fol. 326.
999. 1627. May 18. Brussels. "Whereas by the letters patent which on the 15th of his month we ordered to be dispatched to Captain the Earl of Tyrconnell, Knight of the Order of Alcantara, of the company of mounted cuirassiers formerly commanded by Luis de Serria, it was declared that he was to enjoy only the pay which he receives from his company: as he has now prayed us to grant him the favour that he may enjoy also the allowance of 150 crowns monthly which he had at the time we provided him with the said company, we have thought well to do so, in view of his birth and of the services of his father and ancestors." EG., reg. 30, fol. 329.
1000. 1627. May 18. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (30 Dec. 1626) of eighty crowns monthly, on the garrison of Lierre, to Rosa Odocarty, in consideration of her birth and of the services of her husband Major Eugenio Oneill; she had formerly enjoyed the same pension on the embassy of these States. EG., reg. 30, fol. 329v.
- The order is repeated on 4 Aug. 1630, EG., reg. 31, fol. 163v.
1001. 1627. May 23. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. I have received your Majesty's letter of the 11th of last month concerning the expedition to Ireland, about which it seems well to me to say that it does not appear expedient to carry it out with such a small force as is proposed and could be sent from here at present, as this would be insufficient for such an undertaking, and reputation and everything else would be lost. If in the past, with good forces, nothing could be effected in the war carried on there at the time when the King of England was not also King of Scotland, now that he is, and holds that country around Ireland from which to send help there, and the Scotch are wilder and more hardy than the Irish, I leave it to your Majesty to consider what could be expected from small forces. Hence, should your Majesty determine to carry on this war, it would be well to consider, both as regards this enterprise and the enterprise against England, from where help could be sent; proposing, however, a solid foundation, and good forces.



The eleven war vessels which were here have gone to the Channel, with some prizes, as your Majesty will have heard. There they will prepare for the voyage of which I have informed your Majesty. EGC., reg. 196, fol. 369.

1002.

1627. June 1. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. John Batheo, who is a confidant with whom the Marquis de Inojossa keeps up correspondance in England, and who at present is equerry to the English King, has written to the Marquis through Jaques Bruneau, and given him a report of the intention of the English to send a battalion of infantry and cavalry to Ireland, and that they have sent him to Ireland to command it. He offers to report whatever is worth while. The said John also requests the marquis to arrange that for the primacy of Armagh, which is vacant, John Talbot, who is his friend and confidant, should be elected. And since, as Talbot is very friendly with John Batheo, it has been thought here that it would be wise to send him to Ireland, so that he could live with him. and get to know the country, and speak with the leaders, and get letters from there, and well grounded reports as to how this business of Ireland or the insurrection could be undertaken, I have desired to remit to your Highness, as I hereby do, the task of interviewing John Talbot, and of sending him to Ireland. As regards both matters, your Highness will do whatever seems good to yourself. In case you do interview him, and think that the enterprise should be undertaken, this must be done without telling him anything of our intention; and as regards the primacy, it would be well for your Highness to consult whomsoever you think well, while bearing in mind that the opinion here is that it is not proper to give this dignity to an Anglo-Irishman, on account of the dissatisfaction this would give to those of the other party, who would be more suitable for it. Your Highness will keep me informed of everything that offers in this matter.\* EGC., reg. 197, fol. 1. Decoded; the original, fol. 2.

1003.

1627. June 1. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I have seen your Highness's letter of the 17th of last month, dealing with the Irish expedition, about which, as I have written to your Highness all that occurred to me, and also my intentions, I have nothing to add except to charge your Highness, as I hereby do, to procure with all care and secrecy, information concerning the state of things in that kingdom, and of its temper, so that in conformity with such information it may be seen what should be done. In the meantime, your Highness will bring about agreement between the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, as this is one of the things most necessary for success. This being presupposed, your Highness will go forward with the preparations, and will advise me of everything that is being done, taking care that until the time fixed for putting it into execution, your Highness is to tell no one except the Marquis Spinola of this



project, or of the people who are to be engaged in it. And although I have left to your Highness the season and time of its execution, I have thought well to inform you that here it is considered that it would be best after the English fleet has been laid up, as it appears that in this manner any help which the English attempted would be rendered impossible, and time would be gained to make the weapons to be used in the expedition. And in case it should be impossible to compose the differences between the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnel, and that only of the two earls is to be sent, it has seemed well to me to tell your Highness that it is considered that the Earl of Tyrconnell would be the better. In this case, the other earl could come here, in order to be able to go with help which will be sent from the coast of Galicia. So, as already said, let your Highness carry out what you think best, and it will be well to keep me informed of whatever may be done. EGC., reg. 197, fol. 19. The original, in code, fol. 20.

1004.

1627. June 15. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. [a]. I have received your Highness's letter of the 23rd of last month, dealing with the expedition to Ireland, and as your Highness says, the force which it is proposed to send is small, considering that it is meant to be a royal expedition. However, as my intention is so far different, I have thought well to advise your Highness that as war with England has broken out, and the English have attacked fortified places which belong to Spain, even before the discussions with France had made progress, there is no reason to hesitate about trying anything which may succeed. And as your Highness proposed this expedition, and it has been approved of here, there is nothing in question except as to the addition of 1600 or 1800 men, and to ensure that the force be not lost; and also, about placing someone over them who can command them, and to afford them a pretext which will free me altogether of the implication of being involved, which was not the case with the proposal when it was first made. Moreover, it has seemed well to me to tell your Highness that I am not without the resolve to help them, and if, as is planned, they gain a footing after the English fleet has been demobilised, however little they may improve their position they will oblige the King of England to have a regular army to cover them, and a powerful fleet, which will not be easy when his fleet will once have gone into port and the men have dispersed; neither will the season enable him to do it. From Galicia, where I intend to maintain the fleet which will support the diversion, it is much nearer to Ireland than it is from London; so that there is no reason for me to change my mind, and there are many reasons why I should charge your Highness, as I do, to continue the preparations with every care. I place before your Highness for consideration whether it could be arranged with the major of the Irish regiment, and with the Earl of Tyrone, to leave it to the Earl of Tyrconnell to go and



make the first attempt, and to let the Earl of Tyrone come to Galicia to accompany the reinforcements. Tyrconnell is thought to be the best man for the first attempt, and the Earl of Tyrone, with a good royal admiral, could take the reinforcements; and proper arrangements can continue to be made for the time after the arrival of the reinforcements, in case they do not continue to agree.

[b]. Moreover, I propose for your Highness's consideration whether it would be well to bring the Earl of Tyrone down here immediately from Flanders, under the pretext that it is for important business in my service, without telling him about the enterprise. Your Highness will consider this, and make what arrangement you may consider best. And the orders to be given to those who carry out the enterprise must be that they are to fortify themselves on the coast, without penetrating inland, as that will constitute their greatest safety; and the ships of Dunkirk will arrive in good time, please God, and there will be a month and a half to prepare and be fitted out. As for the trouble about Scotland, it appears to be of little importance, since that country is as much in revolt as is all Ireland, and the people are as discontented, as your Highness is aware from the reports about the Marquis of Hamilton not having wished to go to Court; and it is to be believed that on account of the troubles between France and England, it may be hoped not only that they [the Scots] will help this undertaking, but that during the same time their discontents may work even greater results than in Ireland. Lastly, at a time of open war everything is planned, even though only some one particular thing may be embarked on, and to attempt many things at the same time will not bring less fear to the enemy. The nature of this diversion, together with the motives which have lead to it, will beget the highest hopes in them all, since God must help this cause which is His own, and is undertaken on that account. I again charge your Highness that this business must not become known to more people than know of it already, on account of the importance of secrecy. EGC., reg. 197, ff. 59-60. Decoded ff. 61-2.

- 1005.** 1627. July 3. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Bernard Berneo; to serve as chaplain in the company of Captain Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 30, fol. 346.
- 1006.** 1627. July 16. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to William Ferall; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Thadeus Sullevan. EG., reg. 30, fol. 362.
- 1007.** 1627. July 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Terence Oshiridan, "of good height, brown beard, aged thirty years;" soldier of the company of Captain Thadeus Osullivan; is wounded in the right hand, and unfit for further service. EG., reg. 30, fol. 356v.
- 1008.** 1627. July 22. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV.



Has received his Majesty's letters of 1st and 15th of last month, which treat of the discussions with England and of the Irish enterprise. Will answer them in greater detail when Diego de Messia arrives here, and she has learned what he brings. EGC., reg. 197, fol. 132.

- 1009.** 1627. July 24. Brussels. "Whereas Fr Hugh Cavello, Guardian of the Irish Franciscan convent at Louvain, held the post of head chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone through a substitute, as he was not able to act in person on account of the duties of his office; and whereas on account of his death his pay has ceased; consequently, because it is becoming for his Majesty's service that the soldiers of that regiment should receive the administration of the sacraments, and of all else which is necessary, as they have up to the present, we have thought well to assign, as we do by these present, the pay of twenty five crowns monthly to the said convent, that the superior may provide a person of ability and learning, approved by the Archbishop of Malines, and the vicar-general of the army, to serve as head chaplain to the said regiment. EG., reg. 30, fol. 364v.
- 1010.** 1627. July 27. Brussels. A free and absolute passport to Captain John Quetuing, who has served with Count de Hornes, to return to his home, or to go whithersoever he may please. EA., liasse 1973. 2.
- 1011.** 1627. Sept. 8. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Ghent to provide the boats necessary for the transport of four Irish companies, the expenses to be paid by the hamlets which will benefit by the passage of the troops. EA., liasse 2026. 2.
- 1012.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. Similar orders to the same authorities for the passage of three Irish companies.
- 1013.** Enclosed: 8 Sept. From the Palace. Instructions to send the above orders with all haste to her Highness for her signature; to send her also a commission for the officer who is to conduct the four companies. EA., liasse 2028. 3.
- 1014.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. Commission from the Infanta Isabella to Eugenio O'Neill, major of the regiment of Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrone. To conduct the company of the Earl of Tyrone from Dixmude to Santvliet, making the first halt at Lichtervelde, the second at Mereghem, thence to embark at Ghent on the third day and proceed to Antwerp; to proceed thence to Santvliet by Fort de la Crois and Stabroeck. Orders to all concerned to provide billets and the necessary rations for the said companies, and stabling and forage for their horses, which will go by land to Antwerp. In particular the authorities at Ghent will provide the boats, and the authorities of the Vieubourg of Ghent, of Alost and of Waas are to provide the necessary food in accordance with the instructions sent to them. EA., liasse 1993. 2.
- 1015.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. Orders of the Infanta Isabella to the



authorities at Ghent, Alost, Dendermonde and Waas. To provide sufficient beer, bread and cheese, for the company of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone, with their major, so that the men may not be obliged to disembark or lodge in the flat country, but may proceed straight onward. EA., liasse 2028. 3.

**1016.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Ghent, Alost, Dendermonde and Waas. Orders to provide the necessary provision for the company of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone, which has been ordered to proceed by boat from Ghent to Antwerp. EA., liasse 2028. 1.

**1017.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Ghent. Orders to provide the boats necessary for the transport of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone from Ghent to Antwerp; the expense of these boats to be borne by the villages which will benefit by the fact that the company is ordered to travel by water. EA., liasse 2028. 2.

**1018.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Dixmude. The company of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone has been ordered to leave Dixmude, but not to take their baggage with them. Orders to store the baggage in the usual manner. EA., liasse 2028. 3.

**1019.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to all lieutenants, governors etc. A commission has been given to Eugenio O'Neill, major of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone, and bearer of these letters, to proceed with two companies of the regiment from Nieuport to Santvliet, proceeding when he leaves Nieuport to the neighbourhood of Dixmude, where, as he passes, he will pick up the company of the said colonel, and proceed with the three companies to billet them at Crolscamp, Pethem, and Heegem; on the second day he will proceed to Meregem, Vorselaer, and Odonck, to embark on the third day at Ghent, and proceed thence to Antwerp, and from there proceed by way of Fort de la Croix and Stabroeck towards Santvliet. Orders to all to grant him not only free passage, but also on the journey to provide him with lodging and the provisions necessary for the men of the said companies, together with the stabling and forage for the horses, which will go to Antwerp by land. Orders as above to the authorities of the Vieubourg of Ghent, Tenremonde, Alost and Waas, to provide the companies with the necessary provisions, that the said companies may pass on without having to halt upon the flat country. The bearer of these letters is to see that the men of the said companies maintain such good military discipline that no complaint will be lodged against them. EA., liasse 1993. 2.

**1020.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. Commission from the Infanta Isabella to Major O'Neill of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. To proceed with two companies of the regiment from Nieuport to Santvliet. When he has left Nieuport with the two companies,



he is to lodge near Dixmude, and pick up there the company of the colonel; then to proceed with the three companies to Crolscamp, Pethem and Heegem; on the second day to be at Meeregem. Vorselaer, and Odonck; to embark on the third day at Ghent for Antwerp etc.; as in the preceding. EA., liasse 1993. 2.

- 1021.** 1627. Sept. 9. Brussels. Commission to Eugenio Oneill, major of the regiment of Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrone: to proceed from Dixmude to Santvliet, with the company of the colonel, and after leaving Dixmude, to make the first halt at Lichtervelde, the second at Mereghem, the third, embarking at Ghent and proceeding to Antwerp; and so to Santvliet by the fort of La Croix, Stabroeck etc. The horses to go by land, and to be provided with good stabling etc.

Orders to the authorities at Ghent, Alost, Dendermonde and Waas, to see that the said company is provided with the necessary rations, each authority to do this within its own jurisdiction. EA., carton 2019.

- 1022.** 1627. Sept. 14. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities of the Vieubourg of Ghent, of Waas, Tenremonde and Alost. Orders to meet the major and the three companies of Irish infantry which have been ordered to proceed by boat from Ghent to Antwerp, and to provide them with a sufficient quantity of beer, bread and cheese, to enable them to proceed without having to disembark or to rest upon the flat country. EA., liasse 2028. 3.

- 1023.** 1627. Sept. 15. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Nieuport. Orders to store in the usual manner the baggage of the two companies of Irish infantry which have been ordered to leave the town. EA., liasse 2028. 3.

- 1024.** 1627. Sept. 18. Vilvorde. Peter Butler to the Marquis Spinola. Most excellent Lord. Necessity obliges me to write these lines with such great boldness, for which I crave pardon. After having been persecuted in England and Ireland to such a degree that I was fourteen times in danger of my life, and in such misfortune that for two years I did not carry arms or spurs, and was not able to go to court to see the King, nor dared to come with the Duke of Buckingham fourteen months ago to these States for my safety; and as (in order to do this more safely) it seemed to me wiser to put on the dress of my servant, when I came near to Brussels I was immediately surprised, and brought to this castle of Vilvorde, on the suspicion, as I believe, that this change of clothing was made for some evil purpose, whereas it was for my protection, a thing which the laws of nature permit any man to do. I believe that my enemies, who were so powerful and so evil minded towards me when I was in those countries, have stirred up this storm against me. Let my persecutor be whosoever he may, I dare promise your Excellency that if it be established



that I have committed the least offence against these States, I hope they will remove my head in punishment. In the meantime may your Excellency know that I have been seven months a prisoner, without clothing and other conveniences; and the men of my nation shun me as an apostate, until I shall have been heard and acquitted; and on the other hand I have no friends to provide for my needs. Wherefore I beg your Excellency to be pleased to help me, and arrange that her Highness may order those who hold me here to provide me with proper clothing for the winter. By this favour, your Excellency will oblige me, when I leave this, to come and kiss your hands and offer you my service. If to seek this remedy for my needs seem very serious to my enemies, I beg your Excellency to be pleased to commend me to my captors, so that I may be examined immediately, and being innocent, be acquitted; and in this way I shall have greater convenience to seek what is necessary for my wants. I beseech our Lord to keep your Excellency many years. EA., carton 2019.

1025. 1627. Undated. Major Eugenio Oneil to Captain Franquin-Meable. Represents that his baggage, with that of the seven companies of his regiment, which are with him at Santvliet, is lying in the garrisons in which they were quartered in Flanders, and that for want of it they are suffering very great hardships. Asks for a licence to send a convoy for it.

Noted in a different hand: Two companies at Bourbourg, two at Dixmude, two at Nieuport, and one at Furnes. EA., carton 2020.

1026. 1627. Dec. 4. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella. Orders have been given to certain archers of our body guard to convey to Fort de la Croix, and thence to Santvliet, the women and baggage of the regiment of the Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrone, by way of Bruges and Ghent; of which regiment two companies are at Bourbourg, two at Nieuport, one at Furnes, and two at Dixmude. Orders to all concerned to grant free passage, and to provide the necessary lodging and food; and order to the authorities at Bourbourg, Furnes, the Nieubourg of Ghent, and others, to provide the necessary boats. EA., liasse 2021. 3.

1027. 1627, Dec. 13. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella. Gives notice that a commission has been given to Lieutenant — of the cavalry company of the Earl of Tyrconnell to come with the said company from Erquelens to Sichem, by way of Maestricht, Hasselt and Halen. Orders to all concerned to allow the company free passage, and to provide for one night the necessary rations and billets, together with stabling for the horses. EA., liasse 1993. 2.

1028. 1627. Dec. 14. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Sichem. Orders to receive and lodge in the usual manner the cavalry company of the Earl of Tyrconnell, which is being ordered to Sichem to replace the company of Prince d'Espinay. EA., liasse 2026. 4.



1029.

1627. Dec. 27. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I have seen the letter of your Highness, and I appreciate infinitely the good arrangements made for the business, which appertains so much to the service of God and of his religions. Everything centres upon your Highness, so you may do whatever is best in the affair. My own inclination is the same as that expressed in the enclosed letter. Undoubtedly I hope it is ours to do the Lord this service, and this I hope all the more as I approach it with no other wish than that He may be served, and those good Catholics live in security. What one risks in such causes is not misspent; neither is it lost. This dispatch is sent with the greatest secrecy, that your Highness may gain time until the arrival of the major. He is leaving to-morrow. I need not commend to your Highness the importance of dispatch in what is to be done, and of secrecy, because if it becomes known it cannot be carried out, and if there be delay, there will not be time during the winter for them to make the necessary progress and improve their position before the King of England sends help; neither will the deputies in Rome be able to carry on the necessary negotiations so hurriedly as to place the matter under discussion. The agreement between the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell must be so arranged that no misunderstanding may arise through any unforeseen incident. It is of the very greatest importance that the religious, military and literary leaders be efficient, and well united, for they must act as the tutors of these novices. Warning must be given that the leaders who are there in Ireland are to be greatly respected, and their advice is to be sought always; and instructions are to be given that in no wise shall partiality be shown between them and those who are going there from Flanders, but all must be well united. The major [Eugenio O'Neill] has made the right impression. May God direct in this matter whatever he shall find best for His honour and glory. The supplies will leave shortly. Thank God we are all well, except the cardinal, whose quartan fever continues. May God keep your Highness as I wish.

Dorso: Decoded from a letter of his Majesty to her Highness, from Madrid, 27 Dec. 1627. EGC., reg. 197, fol. 410.

1030.

Enclosed: [a]. The answer of our Lord the King to the general proposal made by your Highness about matters concerning Ireland, when you sent here to propose them Don Eugenio O'Neill, major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone in the States of Flanders.

This proposal, granting that the grounds as reported by the major, Don Eugenio, are correct, seems quite worthy to have moved the eyes and head of your Highness to give it consideration.

The affair is looked upon as of the highest importance. However it is equally clear that it involves great difficulties, both as regards its inception, its execution, and its conclusion.

Any attempt of his Majesty against England, Scotland or



Ireland must be a great and difficult undertaking, by reason of the incertitude of success in provinces which are strong on account of their very situation, and for the same reason cannot be cut off from help, as they are surrounded on all sides by the sea, which provides them with good ports and harbours; wherein, although the facilities for sending help, and the facilities for landing, are equal, on account of the impossibility of keeping all the ports fortified and defended, there must be noticed the advantage they afford us in the means for maritime equipment; and also the difference in our favour as regards the time in which help could reach those provinces.

[b]. It must be borne in mind that our own procedure is always slower, and that we act with greater deliberation, and weigh more carefully whatever we are about to undertake, and we base our greater reputation upon our constancy in pursuing and maintaining our objectives. But whereas we are slower and take longer consideration before we engage ourselves, so in the same measure we are constant and obstinate in pursuing our purpose when once it has been put into operation. When the power of his Majesty (which, because it is so great excites jealousy and vigilance amongst all, both friends and foes, even when it is limited to self-defence) is seen to be in motion, it will arouse fear in all, without any regard to the reason, and those who are neutral, and even those who are most friendly, will collaborate, either secretly or openly, against his Majesty, in their own common interests.

It is evident that the ill-success of the English against his Majesty would have this result in this war, and as regards the weakening of these enemies. No one will sympathise with them when they see them suffer disappointment in their enterprises. Neither will anyone sympathise if they are successful against his Majesty, on account of their passionate desire to keep his Majesty always under the menace of their fleets, which it is thought the King of England will always maintain in order to be able to send them against the coasts of Spain. As a result of this, all the others feel sure that his Majesty's fleets cannot attack theirs without having to stand on the defensive for his own.

[c]. On the very day when they see his Majesty undertake fresh conquests they will necessarily consider the result. If it be bad for us, they will all rejoice, and his Majesty's reputation will be impaired, and all will be lost. If the result be good, all the neutrals who are now watching the war from outside will help the English with all their heart, because as they have seen his Majesty defend himself and attack at the same time, against the whole of Europe united, during the year 1625 which is just past, they will know of a necessity that if he gain a footing in those maritime provinces, they will themselves be less secure in their possessions, except in so far as his Majesty allows otherwise; and it will thus



be necessary for us to maintain war against the whole world, and waste fresh treasure in it, whereas his Majesty has by no means sufficient wherewith to sustain the present expenses, unless some reduction be made.

[d]. It is to be considered that this undertaking is of a voluntary nature, all the more so since our policy of the defensive has been so successful. It is also to be considered that in this present enterprise it appears impossible to escape one of two difficulties. Either peace with England will become impossible, as she will never make peace without recovering what she will have lost in Ireland; or, if peace be made, these poor Catholics will have to be left to their final ruin. Those who will have taken part in this war will suffer in the same manner as those who took part in the previous wars, and so also will the earls, who in any event will always be looked upon as being closely united, as were their fathers in the last war.

[e]. Against all these reasons, which are well founded and cannot be denied, is to be placed the Catholic religion, which, it is represented, is oppressed, and the Catholics in Ireland call to the leaders here on account of the ruin which threatens them. They cry out at the door of the Catholic King Philip IV, who is firmly resolved to sacrifice all his possessions to advance the cause of his religion. Wherefore, his Majesty has no other means of bringing peace to his compassionate soul than to procure satisfaction for this demand, as far as shall be in his power.

[f]. In conformity with this resolution and in view of the difficulties mentioned, which are of such great temporal importance for this monarchy (whose power must be maintained without undue risk, as it is the strength and power upon which the temporal welfare of the Catholic religion is based) his Ministers have drawn up the following points to be placed before her Highness for her consideration, so that, with determination, as many as possible of these difficulties, if not all, may be avoided, and the remainder reduced to the lowest degree.

[g]. Let it be put before her Highness that if this enterprise is undertaken in the name of his Majesty, all those difficulties will be met with which have been already mentioned, and all those burdens which have been discussed. If it be undertaken in the name of the Earl of Tyrone, the friends of the Earl of Tyrconnell will take no part in it; and if in the name of Tyrconnell, the friends of Tyrone will disagree. If it be undertaken in the name of both, it will be impossible to maintain it, and still more difficult to get all the native gentlemen to rise up in a body for their service.

[h]. Consequently, it has been thought that all this would be settled by having the enterprise carried out in the name of the liberty of the fatherland, and of oppressed religion, and by establishing as the government a Republic, which should be so



called on its flags and in its commissions; and all other public ordinances should be in the name of the Republic and Kingdom of Ireland. The Earls should be called Captains-General of the said Republic and Kingdom; and if there should be any difficulty about both of them commanding on land, although jurisdiction could be divided according to the different provinces, one of the earls, according to his temperament, could exercise his office on land, and the other at sea. For Ireland to take the name and title of Republic appears to be best way to carry out this diversion with all possible success and safety. Then each one of the nobles, provinces, or principal cities which shall have taken part in the insurrection shall name deputies who will attend the headquarters of the army or Court, to vote the measures and assessments which shall have been decided upon. For this it would be well to draw up immediately a plan and instructions concerning the manner in which the aristocracy shall govern during the time necessary to make themselves masters of their provinces, and each one master of his possessions, as there will be a difference between the carrying on of the war and its final settlements; the time during the conquest, and after it. There will then be nothing else to be considered but the preservation and defence of what has been won. And on account of the shortness of this despatch, and of confidence in the good arrangements which will have been made by the Archduchess and her Ministers, this plan is not sent from here in detail. It is simply noted that this insurrection which the natives of that country wish to carry out, should be proclaimed as being for the purpose of establishing the country as a free Republic, and in order to make the Catholic religion there free, absolutely.

[i]. It appears very proper that this regiment, and the men who shall join it, should not go under his Majesty's flag, and that its numbers should be increased; that in Flanders, if it can be done with becoming secrecy, or when landing [in Ireland], they should show their flags, and make it known that their arms, and the purpose of the earls, are, not to conquer the country for any other prince, or for the earls themselves, but for the Kingdom and Republic of Ireland, on account of the oppression, violence and imprisonment inflicted and being inflicted upon their consciences, their children, their trade and commerce, and their freedom of navigation.

[j]. It would be especially proper to assign to the earls four or five good military leaders, who may command; some good colonels; but no lieutenant-colonels, and no general. Let these be chosen from different nationalities, giving preference, if equally good subjects can be found, to those nationalities which get on best with the Irish.

[k]. In the first place, in everything so far as can be foreseen, every occasion of dispute must be settled which might cause



jealousy between the earls, or between the leaders and officials, as this dissension would be the greatest obstacle to the success of the undertaking, and of itself alone would bring about complete failure.

[l]. One or two men must be assigned to them, who are of first class judgment and able to give first class advice in negotiation and government, one of whom shall carry secret instructions of which to make use to exercise the office of Agent or Representative of his Majesty to the Republic and its Ministers. These instructions are not to be published, nor are they to be used until his Holiness shall have declared the said rebellion just, on account of the oppression of religion, and because the ruler is a heretic.

[m]. This Counsellor, or Minister, or these other titular Ministers, as your Highness shall judge best, shall, subject to the Captains-General, decide the plan of the various enterprises, and their execution, while the Irish themselves are being given military experience; and until the Irish shall have made such progress as to be able to vote on these questions, as on the others, the members of the said Council shall themselves govern. The Agent of his Majesty and the Ministers shall in this act as they think right for the purpose in view, namely to establish a Republic and freedom of religion.

[n]. The men who are to be added to the Irish regiment shall be well picked, and veterans; and there must be amongst them some captains of disbanded companies, who can be given commands after they have set out, and they shall form their companies while at sea, so that the men may embark without confusion, and no differently from the way they embark when ships take to sea in pursuit of an enemy. It would appear that there will have to be 2000 or 3000 men.

[o]. When they land in Ireland, their landing place must be fortified with the greatest expedition, so that the sending and receiving of dispatches may be ensured, for whatever purpose and on whatever occasion they may be necessary. It would not be inadvisable to provide them with two or three frigates, and one or two fly-boats, which would be very useful to them for every purpose; and while fortifying their posts, they will be able to hoist their standard. The fleet can return to Mardick, and deputies and ambassadors can be sent back with it. For this purpose, religious can be employed, and other subjects of their nation who appear suitable and can travel at smallest expense.

[p]. The first thing they must do is to assign one or more messengers to the Pope, giving him an account of their condition, and asking him to declare their action justified, so that all Christian princes may be able to help them.

[q]. In the second place, all Catholics should be excommunicated who shall help publicly or openly, with arms or ships,



or in any manner whatsoever, directly or indirectly, the side of the King of England, or his allies.

[r]. In order that His Holiness may assist and help promptly with money, in large or small quantity, a cause which so closely concerns the Church, and wherein dispatch is of the first necessity (on account of the great importance of resisting the first fury of the King of England, for which only the means will be needed) let him send orders to all his nuncios, and if necessary, let him send special delegates to all the Catholic kings and princes of Europe, earnestly urging them to help the said Republic of Ireland, on account of the justice, piety, and necessity of their resolve, for the welfare, peace, and liberty of the consciences of those poor Catholics, who rely principally upon the zeal and constant sympathy of His Holiness, and hope that if necessary he will come to their assistance personally.

[s]. Let the Pope send orders that the princes be allowed to tax the ecclesiastics of their realms for the said purpose, to the amount to be assigned by His Holiness. And the said deputy shall remain at the Court of His Holiness, rendering services whenever occasion shall offer. For his maintenance there, His Holiness shall assist him, and the other Catholic princes, through their ambassadors, especially the King of Spain, while avoiding, however, all jealousies.

[t]. A deputy shall be sent to the Emperor, who shall put forward the cause of religion and ask for help.

This same shall be done, at the same time, by other deputies, who will urge their cause with the Duke of Bavaris, and with the Electors and Princes of the Catholic League in Germany. All shall have instructions to insist, event though they be repelled at their first audience. For this purpose, religious would make good agents.

A messenger should likewise be sent to the Duke of Saxony, to represent to him that as he is a just prince, they hope he will recognise and help them, so that they shall suffer no violence in the exercise of their conscience. To the King of Poland and the King of France they shall send deputies who are capable and active, for it is at the French Court that most skilful diligence will need to be exercised, so that the French may not suspect that it is all a pretence of ours. Concerning this point they will find everywhere the greatest bias, and this will have to be overcome as far as possible; as it can be done by asserting the truth, that their cause, namely, is one of liberty and religion.

[u]. Let them write to Venice, Savoy, Florence, and the other potentates of Italy, and send agents in the same manner, working zealously and with enterprise for the banners which the aristocracy shall set up.

In Scotland, especially in that province bordering upon the country which shall be designated, it will be well to make known



the purpose and resolution taken, and to incite to rebellion both for the cause of religion and on account of the oppression exercised by the government, with emphasis upon the great advantage which would ensue to the aristocracy from their intervention.

For the Hanseatic cities, let emphasis be placed upon the tyranny and oppression which the English inflict upon the world and upon them; and let help and assistance be asked from them in whatever way they can give it. In Holland, the delegates would be able to follow two methods; one with the Dutch, emphasising that if they oppose, or refuse to help the Republic, they condemn and act contrary to their own outstanding action and claim, which was that of religion; with the Palatine, they could suggest giving him an opening in Scotland, and supporting him, whereby liberty of conscience would be conceded.

To Spain they must send their principal delegate, to give thanks for the help given, and to beg its continuance.

For all these negotiations, if they cannot find fitting subjects they could be given some Fathers of the Society, and men who could serve them; but I well believe that they themselves have sufficient subjects apt for this task; and they could pick those who are not Religious from the regiment itself.

It would be well to provide them with some Religious of standing to go with them, who could help them with counsel and otherwise. It would also be proper to provide them with some money, so that they could give help, and with whatever supplies are necessary and can be given in a short time.

[v]. With this, and with the memorial which his Majesty has ordered to be given to the Earl of Tyrone, his opinion is made fully clear concerning this matter, as regards the undertaking of the expedition, its progress, and its termination, in so far as his good name is engaged for its importance, truth, and reality. He does not oblige himself to afford any help, or to maintain what may be gained. He keeps the door open to allow him to treat of peace and does not make the cause his own. Whereas recourse will be had to all the princes of Europe, it may well be believed that few of them will give help. The Pope must necessarily consider the affair as one concerning religion, and raise a cry; but the world is not anxious to be involved in division and confusion. His Majesty is arming heavily in Flanders and Spain, and the English must necessarily be reduced to a state of the greatest anxiety and danger; for if they send weak forces to Ireland, they will risk the loss of everything with the failure of the first blow, and there will remain on their hands a war similar to the war in Holland. Should they send a strong force, they will be obliged to remain weak elsewhere, and will endanger themselves in Germany. Upon the present calculations they must abandon either one position or the other. As his Majesty seeks nothing there in Ireland, he arouses no suspicions.



[w]. With the government of the Republic established, a general insurrection would be assured, and there would be no need to feel under any obligation either to a stranger or to a native, as suzerain. Time and events will show whatever else must be done, and if a footing be gained, it seems impossible that the advantage should not be very great in the event either of peace or of war. On the supposition that the expedition is carried out for God only and His religion, it would appear possible to hope that He will guide the human means, which of themselves might fail; and hence His mercy must be sought by special prayers for this particular enterprise, while it is being discussed, prepared, and put into execution. Extraordinary expedition means everything, and the secret is so important that it must be withheld from everyone.

[x]. All this, and the main decision to be taken, and also the arrangement and provision of everything considered necessary, are referred to your Highness; for here at Madrid it is thought that if anything is to be attempted, this is the way to obviate the principal difficulties; and his Majesty, God protect him, wishes moreover that something should be done, and more than merely something, to advance the Catholic religion everywhere. For this affair appears to him to be of the highest importance, as your Highness judged when you sent Eugenio O Neill here, and offered to carry out whatsoever should be decided. All these are reasons which may afford serious grounds for presuming that it is the hidden hand of our Lord which promotes this undertaking. EGC., reg. 197, ff. 412-22.

1031.

Undated. [Dec. 1627]. A reply to the memorial of the Earl of Tyrone.

[a]. Our Lord the Catholic King has no intention of undertaking any enterprise in the States of the King of England, and just as little in the provinces of the kingdom of Ireland, since he has no intention of acquiring any new dominion for his Crown, but wishes only to preserve what he has, and what the Lord has given him, to which he has just titles, and the right to maintain it in peace, justice and religion. Hence, so far as this is concerned, and so far as concerns himself, he will not admit of a proposal of the kind suggested. Neither, even should he change his purpose, will he attempt this undertaking in the manner proposed, as he considers that success upon the first invasion is very doubtful; and not less doubtful is success in the maintenance and progress of the expedition.

[b]. However, just as his Majesty is resolved not to make any attempt upon that island, equally so he is he disposed to protect and favour religion in all parts of the world, wherever it is oppressed, so far as shall be within his power. And on this present occasion, when war has not broken out with the King of England, he will have orders given that the Catholic ambassador approach



him, and beg him to free from oppression the Catholics who are suffering in Ireland, just as he has had such orders given on previous occasions. With no intention of starting a war, if the King of England does not do so, or of disturbing the peace existing between the two Crowns, he will help the Catholics in every way possible, until they obtain peace and the free exercise of their religion.

[c]. But should war break out with the said King, and should it not be possible consequently to make use of the said friendly means, since, as has been said, he has no intention of making any attempt against the territories of the King of Spain, or of making any plans for that purpose, he fulfills his obligations by advising the earls of the great uncertainty which this plan offers him, both as regards its inception as well as its maintenance and success, and by arranging at the same time that the earl or the earls be given the men, and whatever arms they ask for; for to act otherwise would be to do them wrong, since they desire to go to the assistance and relief of religion in their country, as he himself would desire before everything else the great success of the Catholic religion and the welfare of those provinces. Wherefore he will always be pleased to find himself in possession of the means to help and favour them, in conformity with his obligations in view of the titles which the Supreme Pontiffs have conferred upon him, and with which they have honoured him.\* EGC., reg. 197, fol. 422; and see fol. 432.

**1032.** 1628. June 7. Brussels. de la Faille to the Infanta Isabella. Encloses passports for six Irish Capuchins who wish to go to Ireland for the consolation of the Catholics of that country. The passports have been dispatched at the request of Fr Philip, who stated that her Highness had so ordered. EA., liasse 2076. 2.

**1033.** 1628. Aug. 1. Captain Maurice Marury of Feneit to the Infanta Isabella. Captain Maurice Marury of Feneit represents that some people have informed your Highness that the suppliant had married a Lutheran girl in Germany, and your Highness was pleased to write to Count Tilly not to allow the suppliant to serve in the army. For this reason he has come to this Court to represent to your Highness the injury the said informers have done him, as the report was untrue, since the suppliant can show, by persons worthy of credit, that the girl in question is married at present in Germany. Count Tilly has been well satisfied with the services of the suppliant during the short time he was in the army; to whose report he refers. And at the siege of Staden, during the skirmish, he lost one of his relations who was a lieutenant-colonel and had rendered very signal services during his lifetime. As the suppliant has no other profession than that of a soldier, and as on account of the false accusations he cannot serve in the army of Count Tilly, nor in the army of his Majesty here, and as he does not wish on any account to serve with the enemy, he humbly



begs your Highness to consider all the above, and in conformity therewith to write a letter to Count Tilly in his favour, to provide him with some post until he can receive a grant, in respect of his innocence and of the expense and loss he has suffered. The suppliant belongs to the Irish nation, and he left his country to defend the holy Catholic faith. Thereby he will receive favour of your Highness. Captain Maurice de Feneit, Irishman. EA., carton 2024.

- 1034.** 1628. Aug. 8. Brussels. Captain Maurice Maquiry of Feneit to the Infanta Isabella. Captain Maurice Maquiry of Feneit represented to your Highness by way of a petition that he had married in this country and had gone to Germany with licence from your Highness, and that while he was there, your Highness, in consequence of a report made to her that he had previously married a Lutheran girl in Germany, wrote to Count Tilly not to allow him to serve in the army under his command; and that thereupon he came here to clear himself, and to show that what had been said to your Highness was a calumny, and that he would make the contrary clear to Count Tilly. He begged your Highness to write to Count Tilly in the meantime to hold him commended in the circumstances favourable to his advancement which might arise in that quarter. The Cardinal in Curia and Don Carlo Colonna have seen this petition, and are of the opinion that your Highness might rightly have written letters to Count Tilly, that if he should find that the suppliant has not contracted the said marriage, he might be pleased to hold him in favourable consideration.

Note by the Infanta: Letters may be written to this effect.

In margin; 9 August 1628. Letter to Count Tilly in favour of Captain Maurice Maquiry. EA., liasse 2056.

- 1035.** 1628. Aug. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count Tilly. Upon the report made to me concerning Captain Maurice Marury of Feneit, that being already married in this country, he was married again in Germany to a Lutheran girl, I wrote to you by another letter that you were not to consent to allow him to serve in the army under your command. As he has come here to clear himself of the charge, and to show that it was a calumny, I have thought well to write the present letter to you to say that if it should be found that he has not contracted this marriage, you would hold him in commendation in any circumstances which may arise for his promotion there. EA., liasse 2056.

- 1036.** 1628. Aug. 11. Entries of the payment of a pension of 100 livres yearly to Elizabeth Oconnell, sister of Peter Oconnell, formerly soldier in the company of Count de Hornes; in virtue of letters patent of 10 August 1628. Payments begin on 11 August 1628 and continue until the recipient's death at Bruges on 6 June 1636. CC., reg. 45873, fol. 413.



- 1037.** 1628. Oct. 26. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. By your letter of the 8th of last month your Majesty was pleased to inform me that you have granted a company of Irish infantry to the Earl of Tyrconnell, in addition to the company of cavalry which he already commands; and you have ordered me to grant the necessary commission. As it seems to me that this innovation is very unbecoming, and opposed to the interests of your service, and that it would cause many difficulties and give rise to many precedents in the army, since a captain cannot serve two companies at the same time, one of infantry and one of cavalry, and such a thing has not been usual in the wars of the past: therefore, to avoid difficulties, I have suspended the execution of the order until a report will have been given to your Majesty of what it seems proper to do, before it will have been seen necessary to remedy what may have become a fixed practice in this respect in your Majesty's armies. Your Majesty will command whatever is your wish and is to the advantage of your royal service. EGC., reg. 199, fol. 178.
- 1038.** 1628. Dec. 18. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. From the contents of your letter of 28 of last month I have understood the difficulties which would arise from granting the Earl of Tyrconnell the company of infantry together with the company of cavalry which he already has, about which I sent instructions to your Highness. In this I agree with your Highness, for the reasons you give, which appear sound. I have also seen another letter of your Highness, of the same date, and the information which accompanies it. Nothing further occurs to me to say about this except to charge your Highness to inform me from every point of view about everything else which may arise. EGC., reg. 199, fol. 279.
- 1039.** Undated. 1629? Fr Columbanus of the most Holy Sacrament, Discalced Carmelite, represents that his Majesty had granted 200 florins yearly to Doctor Peter Murgesio upon the Council of Finances, and that the Doctor had entrusted to him the recovery of this sum in order to cover certain obligations, and in particular for the support of the Doctor's son. He petitions for what is due, to enable him to send the boy to his relatives in Ireland. CPI., liasse 35.
- 1040.** 1629. Feb. 11. Palins. Girardot de Noscroy to de la Faille. I have received what you were pleased to write to me on 26 January. Major Felix O'Neill an Irishman, writes to me that he has received the papers from Baron de Watterville. I have informed him that you are favourable to him, and that he should betake himself to your presence, and that as the Bishop of Lausanne should be in town to-morrow, we would write to him at greater length upon the first opportunity. On the assurance I gave him of your good will, he asked me to write to you in the



meantime of his own, and that he desires to have this affair from your hand only. EA., carton 2037.

- 1041.** 1629. Feb. 24. Brussels. de la Faille to Girardot de Noscroy. While awaiting what Lieutenant-Colonel Felix Onel will tell me about the Baron de Waterville's affair, you may assure the Bishop of Lausanne, if you think it well, of my attachment to his service, and that I will very willingly use my efforts that he and the Baron may have the assistance from me which they expect. Moreover I have done what I can to assure the aspirations of the Seigneur de Pin etc. EA., liasse 1987. 1.
- 1042.** 1629. Feb. 27. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the Abbot of St Vaast. I would not for all the world willingly trouble your Reverence, but as the Father Guardian of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain has begged me, I could not refrain from asking you by this letter, as I very humbly do, to be pleased out of Christian charity to help the said religious by an alms for the building and church which they have begun in that town. On account of the consolation I wish them in their undertaking, I shall have a great part in the obligation under which they will feel themselves bound to your Reverence.  
A similar letter to be sent to the Abbot of St Amand. EA., liasse 2041. 2.
- 1043.** 1629. Mar. 30. Brussels. Grant of 200 crowns yearly, for a further three years, to Baron Omalun, son of Baron Olean, lord and peer of the kingdom of Ireland, knight of the Order of Calatrava, and equerry to the Archduchess. The Baron had begged for the continuation and increase of his grant of 100 crowns yearly, which expired on 18 Feb. last. CF., reg. 845, fol. 195.
- 1044.** 1629. June 15. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Diest. Informs them that she has decided to have recruited in that town, under Captain Dermot Osulleban Mor, a company of Irish infantry from the men who have come over from the enemy. Orders to receive and billet in the usual manner the said captain and the soldiers he will receive into his company. The recruiting will begin on 27 June and end within twenty days. EA., liasse 2026. 4.
- 1045.** 1629. June 21. Brussels. de la Faille, Secretary of the Audience, to Count de Warfusse. Orders to issue rations for the company to be recruited by Captain Dermot Osulleban; the recruiting to begin on 17 June. EA., liasse 2056.
- 1046.** 1629. July 14. Brussels. de la Faille to Count de Coupigny. The Archduchess has ordered that a further ten days' rations, to be reckoned from the expiry of the last term, are to be granted to Captain Dermot Osulleban Moar, who has been commissioned to recruit a company of 200 men in the town of Sichem. EA., liasse 2056.



- 1047.** 1629. July 31. Brussels. Similar order from de la Faille to Count de Warfusse. EA., liasse 2056.
- 1048.** 1629. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to the Treasurer-General. Her Highness has been pleased to recruit a company of Irishmen in the town of Diest, under the command of Captain Hugo Obrien. She has ordered me to instruct you to see that provision is made for their maintenance, The levy is to start on the 6th of the coming month and to end within thirty days. EA., liasse 2037.
- 1049.** 1629. Aug. 10. Brussels. Orders from the Infanta Isabella. The captain or senior officer of the military, both cavalry and infantry, lately sent to Diest by the Prince de Brabançon, including the Irish company should it already have passed the muster, is to be under the command of Colonel the Baron de Moncle. EA., liasse 1987. 2.
- 1050.** 1629. Aug. 10. Brussels. Similar orders from the Infanta, with instructions that the invalids, the women and the baggage, are to remain in the town of Diest. EA., liasse 1987. 2.
- 1051.** 1629. Oct. 16. Captain Hugo Obrien to the Infanta Isabella. Begg that for the company he has been commissioned to raise he may be assigned quarters in Flanders, as this would be more convenient for the men, who will come from Ireland, England and France, and from other neighbouring places. EA., liasse 2033. 3.
- 1052.** 1629. Oct. 16. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count Henri de Bergh. Countermands the orders that the English company of Captain Cheam should be attached to the Irish infantry regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, and orders that it is to be attached to the regiment of Count de Salazar. EA., liasse 2044. 3.
- 1053.** 1629. Oct. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on account of old age and other infirmities to Valentin Brun, quartermaster of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 2v.
- 1054.** 1629. Oct. 21. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the governor of Bourbourg. A company of 200 Irishmen is to be recruited in that town under Captain Diego Obrien. Orders to receive the captain and his men and to billet them in the usual manner. Provision is to be made for them at the rate of five patars daily, the recruiting to begin on the 5th of November and to end within thirty days. EA., liasse 2033. 3.
- 1055.** 1629. Oct. 23. Brussels. Commission to Thadeus Cruly as quartermaster of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served his Majesty for ten years, of which seven in these States. EG., reg. 31, fol. 4.
- 1056.** 1629. Nov. 2. Brussels. Instructions that the Irish troops are to be stationed in Artois, to facilitate recruiting, and are to be billeted there during the coming winter. The Earl of Tyrconnell with his cavalry is to be billeted at Sichem. EA., carton 2036.



- 1057.** 1629. Nov. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, to place his estate in security, to Henry Onell, ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 31, fol. 4v.
- 1058.** 1629. Nov. 8. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the Duke of Aerschot. Orders that the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone is to be met near Meffe, and billets are to be arranged for the men at Fontaine l'Évêque. EA., liasse 2055.
- 1059.** 1629. Nov. 8. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to all concerned. Notice that orders have been sent to the Earl of Tyrone to proceed with ten companies of his regiment from the neighbourhood of Liège to Artois, by way of Meffe, the neighbourhood of Namur, Fontaine l'Évêque, Denain, Pont à Lambres near Douai, and so further, billeting them as he shall find necessary in the district of Namur under the Duke of Aerschot, in Hainault under Prince d'Espinay, and in Artois under Count de St Aldegonde, EA., liasse 2055. 1.
- 1060.** 1629. Nov. 9. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count de St Aldegonde. Orders to receive and billet in the towns under his government which are nearest to Flanders, Colonel the Earl of Tyrone with ten companies of his regiment, and their superior officers. EA., liasse 2055. 1.
- 1061.** 1629. Nov. 16. To be referred to her Highness the Infanta Isabella. That captains Maurice Geraldin, Thadeus Carti, Henry Norres, and Paul Redico, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, represented in the name of the officers of their companies that your Highness has been pleased to grant provender for their horses to the other companies of the regiment, in the same manner as to the Spanish troops, whereas the suppliants are excluded from this grant, although they render greater services than the others, as they were in garrison at Grol and Oldenseel for about fifteen years, and since the surrender of those places they have been constantly on active service with Count Henri de Bergh; and since then they have been put into garrison at Lingen and Orsay, where they are at present, daily expecting to go out again on active service. They beg for equal treatment with the other companies.

In margin: It seems to the Members of the Council of Finances, under very humble correction, that your most serene Highness may be pleased to declare that the suppliants are to be placed henceforward on the same footing as the other companies of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Nevertheless, we refer everything to the good pleasure of your Highness, while recalling, however, that these companies have not received provender up to the present because they are considered to be garrison companies. So advised, under very humble correction of your Highness, at Brussels, at the Office of Finances, 23 May 1629. C. d'Ongnyes, J. R. Maes. John Scots, J. V. Beken.



In the hand of the Infanta: I agree with the opinion of the Council of Finances. CF., reg. 846, fol. 18.

- 1062.** 1629. Dec. 3. Brussels. Licence to Hugo Vaguahoume, soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone, to transfer his service to the army of the Palatinate. EG., reg. 31, fol. 35.
- 1063.** 1629. Dec. 9. Brussels. Louis Verreyken to the governor of Bourbourg. The Infanta has ordered that the company of Irish infantry of Captain Hugh Obrin is to be received to pay and to be armed on 21 Dec. EA., liasse 1987. 2.
- 1064.** 1629. Dec. 14. Brussels. Licence to Nicholas Shea, chaplain of the garrison at Dunkirk, whom Don Carlos wishes to take with him to London; with retention of his post as chaplain. EG., reg. 31, fol. 40.
- 1065.** 1629. Dec. 18. Brussels. Morina Mahun to the Infanta Isabella. Morina Mahun, widow of Hugo Schchanesse, who died in the service of his Majesty, represents that his Majesty conferred upon her the favour of granting ten sous daily for her maintenance. She received this for sixteen years, down to the time of the last reduction. At present she has two grown up daughters, who were in a monastery, and on account of this reduction have been put out of it. Hence the suppliant has nothing for herself or for her support, and therefore she prays her Highness to grant a licence and a passport to her and another honest widow, to allow her to go through the country asking for alms for three or four months, to enable her to find some support for herself and her children. She and her children will feel obliged always to pray for her Highness.  
 Begging letters for six months to be granted. Brussels. 18 Dec. 1629. CPE., carton 1357.
- 1066.** 1629. Dec. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, to enable him to enjoy his estate there, to Ferdinand Relly, "of medium height, beard fair, aged twenty six years"; soldier of the company of Captain Patrick Doneli, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 43.
- 1067.** 1629. Dec. Brussels. Instructions to be sent to various officers. To the Earl of Tyrconnell, that on the 5th of the month he will leave Sichem with his company so as to be at Tirlemont by 3 o'clock in the afternoon, and there he will receive further orders from Don Diego de Cuniga. EA., liasse 2055. 1.
- 1068.** 1629. Dec. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to the Treasurer-General. Orders to provide, in conformity with the enclosed instructions, for the maintenance of a company of 200 Irishmen which her Highness has had recruited in the town of Bourbourg under the command of Captain Hugo Obrin; the recruiting of the company to begin on the 6th of the coming month and to end within thirty days. EA., liasse 2008.
- 1069.** 1629. Dec. Brussels. Louis Verreyken to the governor of Bourbourg. The Infanta has ordered that the company of Irish



infantry of Captain Hugo Obrin is to be received to pay and to be armed, on the 21st of December. EA., liasse 1987. 2.

- 1070.** 1629. Dec. Complaint of the abbot and monastery of St Bertin, that on the 28th of November Count de St Aldegonde had stationed at Comte d'Arques the Earl of Tyrconnell and all his staff. They beg that the regiment be sent elsewhere, as Comte d'Arques is an open town, and there is no way of stopping the incursions of the soldiers into the country.
- Orders from the Infanta to Comte d'Aldegonde to carry out the desired change.<sup>1</sup> EA., liasse 2055. 1.
- 1071.** 1630. Jan. 1. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to Hugo Obrin, captain of a company of Irish infantry which he has recently recruited by our orders to serve his Majesty in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; the thirty crowns were due to him, and were granted to the other companies. EG., reg. 31, fol. 51v.
- 1072.** Undated. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count de St Aldegonde. Informs him that she is sending to Artois the company of Irish infantry of Captain Hugo Obrin, and the other companies of the same nation. Orders to receive them at their arrival, and billet them in some town under his jurisdiction, wherever he may think best. EA., liasse 2055. 1.
- 1073.** Undated. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the governor of Bourbourg. She is sending to Artois the company of Irish infantry which has been recruited in the town of Bourbourg, of which he is hereby informed. EA., carton 2040.
- 1074.** 1630. Jan. 23. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Pedro de San Juan. The Infanta has heard that the two companies of the Earl of Tyrone stationed at Hesdin have caused very great damage to the neighbouring woods, which are the property of his Majesty. Her Highness sends orders that the Earl is to be instructed to stop these disorders. EA., liasse 2003. 2.
- 1075.** 1630. Jan. 26. Captain Dermot Osullivan Moar to the Infanta Isabella. Represents that proper accomodation is not provided for his men in the town of Hesdin, and begs that orders be sent to accomodate them in conformity with the instructions already given. EA., liasse 2003. 3.
- 1076.** 1630. Feb. The Earl of Tyrone to the Infanta Isabella. The magistrates of the towns in Artois in which his regiment is quartered refuse to provide billets for the soldiers newly recruited, or for those coming from hospital, without an order from her Highness, which he requests. EA., liasse 1994. 3.
- 1077.** 1630. Feb. 5. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Bernard Magrak, chaplain, from the company of Captain Thadeus Carti to the company of Captain Hugo Obrin. EG., reg. 31, fol. 88v.
- 1078.** 1630. Feb. 14. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count de St Aldegonde. Orders to instruct magistrates to provide



accommodation in those towns of Artois in which the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone is quartered. EA., liasse 1994. 3.

1079.

1630. Instructions concerning the Irish troops. [a]. To the Count of St Aldegonde. Orders to have all the Irish companies under his command united, so that in one day they will be able to make their first halt in Flanders at the villages of Hondegem, Westcapelle, Erdegem, and Elbelgem.

[b]. To the authorities at Bergues-St-Winnoc: Orders to billet the colonel, senior officers, and two companies of the Irish regiment.

[c]. To the governor of Bourbourg: similar orders for one Irish company. To the governor of Dunkirk: similar orders for two Irish companies. To the governor of Nieuport: similar orders for two Irish companies. To the governor of Ostend: similar orders for four Irish companies. To the Earl of Tyrone. Orders to bring together the companies of his regiment which are stationed in Artois at the place which will be designated by Count St Aldegonde, so as to be able to march with them all in conformity with the order which accompanies this. He himself will go into garrison with two companies and their superior officers at Bergues-St-Winnoc. One company will remain at Bourbourg, two at Dunkirk, two at Nieuport, and four at Ostend; in all which places they will be received in virtue of the letters which accompany this.

1080.

Enclosed: An order for the Earl of Tyrone. That leaving the county of Artois he will make the first stage of his march with the eleven companies of his regiment by the villages of country of Artois he will make the first stage of his march with the eleven companies of of his regiment by the villages of Hondegem, West Capelle, Staple, Erdegem and Ebbelgem; the second stage by Leeregem, Wormhout, Banbeck and Rotsbrugge. The day following he will bring in the companies which are destined for Bergues-St-Winnoc, Bourbourg, and Dunkirk; and those companies which are to proceed to Nieuport and Ostend will lodge for the night in the villages of Oudecapelle, St Jacobs Capelle, and Lampernesse; and on the day following they will march into the towns of Nieuport and Ostend.

In margin: the major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone is here to take these orders. EA., liasse 2028; 1998. 3; 19982.

1081.

1630. Feb. 20. Brussels. Licence for Spain to the Earl of Tyrone on important business, for six months. EG., reg. 31, fol. 80v.

1082.

1630. Feb. 20. Brussels. Licence for Spain for six months with the Earl of Tyrone, to Major Felicio O'Neill, pensioner in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 31, fol. 80v.

1083.

1630. Feb. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Terence Oshiridan, soldier of the company of Captain Thadeus Osuliban. EG., reg. 31, fol. 83v.



- 1084.** 1630. Feb. 25. Brussels. J. D. Lessena to the Secretary of the Audience. He had represented to her Highness the complaints made by certain captains of the Irish regiment against the nobles, mayor and aldermen of the Liberty of Bruges, that they had arrested seven of their soldiers in a hamlet called Lesin, and had summoned them from there to the prison of the Liberty, and had had them scourged at seven different places; and this on a big market-day, for their greater affront and ignominy, though they knew well that the men were soldiers, and that consequently they should have handed them over to their competent judge, in conformity with his Majesty's orders and proclamations. The captains have represented the evil consequences which have resulted, and are likely to result from this in the future. Her Highness has ordered me to instruct your Excellency to write a letter in her name to the authorities of the Liberty, reprehending their excesses, and commanding them to observe in future his Majesty's orders and proclamations, as befits his royal service. Your Excellency will be pleased to send me the letter, that I may give it to those who are to deliver it. EA., carton 2047.
- 1085.** 1630. Mar. 1. Brussels. Orders to pay Nicholas She during his absence in England with Don Carlos Colonna, in the same manner as though he were on service with the garrison at Dunkirk. EG., reg. 31, fol. 83v.
- 1086.** 1630. Mar. 8. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (28 June 1629) for once only, of 100 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to Nicholas Lynch, Provincial of the Order of St Dominic in Ireland, who is here at this Court, in great need, with two companions, after having been in Rome to represent the province at the election of a General; to help him to defray his expenses back to Ireland. EG., reg. 31, fol. 86.
- 1087.** 1630. Mar. 8. Brussels. Orders to transfer John Ferrado from the company of Captain Constantine Oneil, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, to the company of Captain Arturo Oneil.\* EG., reg. 31, fol. 91v.
- 1088.** 1630. Mar. 9. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to accompany the Earl of Tyrone, at the Earl's request, to Ensign Gaspar Pernave, of the cavalry company of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 31, fol. 93v.
- 1089.** 1630. Mar. 10. Brussels. Licence for Spain, on account of his inclusion in the last reduction, to Godfrid Puer, former pensioner in the company of Captain Thadeus Carti. EG., reg. 31, fol. 88.
- 1090.** 1630. Mar. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on account of his infirmities, to James de Faldegan, chaplain of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 92v.
- 1091.** 1630. Mar. 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, for one year, to Daniel Orierdan, "of good height, pitted with small-pox, aged twenty two years"; soldier of the company of



- Captain Gerald Maurice, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 94v.
- 1092.** 1630. Apr. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, to arrange family affairs on account of the death of his father, to Licentiate William Feral, chaplain of the company of Captain Thadeus Souliman, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 97v.
- 1093.** 1630. Apr. 4. Brussels. Commission to Thomas Oconor as drum-major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 99.
- 1094.** 1630. Apr. 10. Brussels. Commission to Gaspar Geraldino, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Maurice Geraldino, as ensign of the said company, to which post his father has nominated him; with remission of the years of service still requisite. EG., reg. 31, fol. 103.
- 1095.** 1630. Apr. 29. Brussels. Instructions from Verreyken, Secretary of the Audience. The Infanta has learned that although orders have been sent to the Earl of Tyconnell that Captain Brumeu was to leave Sichem, this has not been carried out. She now commands that the order be renewed. EA., liasse 1198. 1.
- 1096.** 1630. May 6. Brussels. Licence for Spain, on business, to Arturo Ohagan, soldier of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 112v.
- 1097.** 1630. May 7. Brussels. Commission of Anthony Mulrian as captain of a company of Irish infantry 200 strong which he has undertaken to recruit at his own expense for service with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 125.
- 1098.** 1630. May 11. Brussels. Orders of the Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Bergues-St-Winnoc to receive and billet in the usual manner one more company of Irish infantry, in addition to the companies already in the town. EA., liasse 2003. 2.
- 1099.** 1630. May 17. Brussels. Verreyken to an unnamed Franciscan Father. The Infanta has ordered me to inform you that she has written to the Governor of Ostend to send from there one of the four companies which entered that fortress lately, the company to be named by the major, Eugenio Oneill; and that she has written to the said lieutenant-colonel that from the three Irish companies which are at Bergues-St-Winnoc and the other company which is at Bourbourg, he is to send a reinforcement of eighty men to the fort of Mardick, under the orders of the Governor Marcos Ruiz, and he is to change the companies at intervals of two days between each of them, and to give orders that at their departure and arrival they are not to be billeted on the country, or create disorder. He is also to take notice that if the alarm be raised at Mardick, he is to proceed with the rest of the companies to that fort, and carry out the orders of the governor. The governor is to be informed that orders have been given to the major to send him a reinforcement of eighty men from the companies of the Irish regiment which are at Bergues-St-Winnoc



and Bourbourg, which are to be transferred at intervals of two days, and that he is to give orders that they shall be accommodated in the best manner possible, so that they be under cover. Also, that he is to be on his guard, and on no account to leave his post, however well he may be informed that the enemy has some design upon those forts; and he is to be informed that orders have been given to Don Lorenzo de Villa Vincentia to send him some help in case of need; and he is to conform to the instructions given him by the Marquis de Aytona when he was there. E.A., carton 2041.

**1100.** 1630. May 23. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Count de St Aldegonde. The Infanta has given orders that the Count is to send the Irish soldiers assembled at St Omer from there to Bourbourg, where they will be received and billeted according to the instructions given by the Secretary to the captain who is the bearer of the letter. The captain is to be given authorisation for the dispatch of the soldiers from St Omer. EA., liasse 2055. 1-2.

**1101.** 1630. May 25. Brussels. Don Eugenio Oneill to the Secretary of the Audience. I have received your Excellency's letter of the 19th of this month, in which you inform me that her Highness orders me to send to Don Lorenzo Villaviscença the number of men he asks for from the three Irish companies in this town and the company at Burbrucque. Consequently I do not know how I am to arrange, as I have another letter from the Secretary Pedro de San Juan, written on the 14th, in which he informs me that her Highness orders me to send a reinforcement of 80 men with a captain of the guard to Mardick, taking them also from the men of the same companies, and if the alarm should be raised at Mardick, to send the remainder of the said companies under a captain, and carry out the orders of the governor, Marcos Gruis. I beg your Excellency to let me know which of the two orders I am to carry out, as it could happen at one and the same time that the commander of the town of Dunkirk and the governor of Mardick might ask me to execute the order which each of them holds in this respect; and this would be impossible. It is necessary that her Highness should declare what is to be done, so that when the occasion arises there may be no difficulty.

Moreover, the magistrates of this town are not pleased that I have not asked them for the keys of the town [*Bergues-St-Winnoc*] or to put a guard on the gates; yet they do not at all wish to agree that I should place a guard of my men in the square, although I suggested that this would be for the common good of all, both citizens and soldiers, in order to prevent many incidents which could and do arise every day. Your Excellency knows that where there are three companies of infantry, one of them mounted, they cannot all be saints; and in case of disturbance, or of an affray, the guard can run up at once and put things right;



and so for a thousand other things which happen. Moreover, never in my life, wherever I have been, have I seen or heard of a lieutenant-colonel with three companies of his regiment who was not allowed to place a guard in any part of the land. However, I did not wish to act with arrogance or severity, in the hope that in this affair her Highness would command whatever is most fitting for her service. I thus beg you to be pleased to send her orders to the magistrates, that they may agree to assign me a position where I can station my guard in the square, as this is necessary for the peace of the town and the good discipline of the soldiers. May our Lord preserve your Excellency in good prosperity and health, as I your Excellency's servant desire. Signed: Don Eug. Oneill. EA., carton 2043.

- 1102.** 1630. May 27. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Kinschot. The Infanta has ordered Captain Anthony Omilrian to march with 150 men to Bourbourg, in order to form them into a company; the levy of the men is to start on the day appointed by the governor of the town, Baron de Licques, and to be notified by him to the Treasurer, who will issue orders for their daily pay and rations. EA., liasse 2008. 1.
- 1103.** 1630. May 29. Brussels. Orders for the payment of 300 livres to Baron Gleanomalun. CF., liasse 185.
- 1104.** 1630. June 1. Brussels. Orders of the Infanta Isabella to the authorities at Bergues-St-Winnoc to allow a guard to be placed on the square of the town, as required by Major Eugenio Oneill.
- 1105.** Enclosed: The Secretary of the Audience to Major Eugenio Oneill. Informs him that he has received his letter of the 25th of last month and has consulted the Infanta. Of the two orders given, one does not contradict the other. The order given by San Juan is to be carried out first, and then, with the men who remain, the order sent by the secretary in the name of her Highness. EA., liasse 2028. 3.
- 1106.** 1630. June 9. Brussels. Orders of the Infanta Isabella to the governor of Bourbourg to send to Dunkirk the company of Irish infantry which is now at Bourbourg. EA. liasse 1998. 1.
- 1107.** 1630. June 9. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to P. de San Juan. The Infanta has ordered that the governor of Dunkirk is to be instructed to receive and billet a company of Irish infantry. EA., liasse 1988. 1.
- 1108.** 1630. June 17. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Baron de Licques. The authorities at Bourbourg have complained that Captain Anthony Omulrian, who is raising his levy in that town, is not satisfied, neither are his men, with the billets which the magistrates have assigned them, but besides billets, they claim service, table cloths, serviettes, and furniture, in direct contradiction of the regulations. The captain has also proceeded by force, with seven or eight of his men, to enter the house of Adrien



Tasscel, citizen of Bourbourg, to take the furniture which is there, and maltreat him. Orders are given not to permit the captain to commit such disorders, and to oblige him to be content with the usual billets, as the magistrates will provide, in conformity with the smallness of the place, without asking or claiming anything further. EA., carton 2042.

1109. 1630. June 19. Brussels. Orders of the Infanta Isabella to the governor of Bourbourg. The company of Irish infantry lately ordered to leave Bourbourg is to return, and in its place the new company lately raised in Bourbourg is to be sent to St Omer. EA., carton 2042.
1110. 1630. June 20. Brussels. Verreyken to P. de San Juan. Transmits the orders of the Infanta that the governor of Dunkirk is to be instructed to send back to Bourbourg the Irish company lately sent to Dunkirk. EA., carton 2042.
1111. 1630. June 20. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Count de Ste Aldegonde. Orders that the company of Irish infantry of Captain Omulrian is to be received and billeted at St Omer. EA., liasse 2003. 3.
1112. 1630. June 29. Brussels. Orders to the Secretary of the Audience that the rations of the company of Irish infantry which is being raised at Bourbourg by Captain Omelrian are to be continued for a further fifteen days, to be reckoned from the expiry of the last grant. EA., liasse 2083. 3.
1113. 1630. July 12. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to Anthony Omulrian, captain of a company of Irish infantry which has been newly formed. EG., reg. 31, fol. 151.
1114. 1630. July 18. Brussels. Commission to Maurice Macdonel as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, which he has undertaken to raise at his own expense for service with the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 157.
1115. 1630. July 20. Brussels. P. de San Juan to de la Faille. Has received orders to send him the enclosed letter of Major Eugenio Oneill, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, so that Verreyken may deal with it in the Council. EA., carton 2045.
1116. 1630. July 21. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant held by Captain Robert Odonell on the Irish infantry, without obligation of service, or of presenting himself at the musters. EG., reg. 31, fol. 159.
1117. 1630. July 23. Brussels. de la Faille to P. de San Juan. The Gentlemen of the Council have ordered him to return the enclosed letter of Major Eugenio Oneill, and to instruct de San Juan to write to Oneill to send information about the men he has, and of the number of days they will be in charge of the guard. EA., carton 2045.
1118. 1630. Aug. 11. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Dunkirk to receive and billet a company of Irish infantry. EA., liasse 1988. 1.



- 1119.** 1630. Aug. 17. Brussels. Orders to issue, without any intermission of time, to Daniel Eslalive, Richard Ylarte, Walter Butilier, Francis Vlitte, Maurice Frein, Louis Queyo, Thomas Cogno, William Querain, Dogno Dally, Andrew Luche, William Angle, Thadeus Feli, Terence Algegor, and Melchior Mayordan, the pay they held in the Irish infantry before they were captured at sea by the enemy and taken to Holland, where they were imprisoned until the last general truce; the said pay to be issued to them as though they were actually serving with their companies. EG., reg. 31, fol. 165v.
- 1120.** 1630. Aug. 23. Brussels. Pay of 12 crowns monthly to James Rudolfo; to serve as chaplain to the company of Irish infantry of Captain Anthony Omulrian; and orders to transfer John Kervel, chaplain of the unattached company of Scots infantry of Captain William Hamilton, to the company of Irish infantry of Captain Constantine Oncil, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 168v.
- 1121.** 1630. Aug. 24. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. I told your Highness some time ago how greatly pleased I would be, if being well informed of the talents, learning and virtue of Fr Richard Gold, a religious of the most Holy Trinity, you would propose him for the church of Tuam in Ireland. As this church has been given to another, the opportunity has passed. I am now told that among other churches of that Kingdom that of Ardfert is vacant, and Master Hortensio Felix Paravicino, my preacher, and provincial of his order, looks upon this religious as well fitted for it, and very useful for its government, as your Highness will see in greater detail from the enclosed memorial he has given me, with which other trustworthy reports are in agreement. On this account, and because of the importance of having Irish bishops dependent upon me, I am obliged to remind your Highness of what I wrote to you, and again recommend you to propose this religious to his Holiness for this church, and for any others which are vacant, until one of them is granted to him, since the approval he enjoys here may assure us that this election would be for the glory of God, and for mine. The Count de Monterey is being informed of what I am writing to your Highness, so that he may help to forward matters there. EGC., reg. 203, fol. 203.
- 1122.** 1630. Sept. 7. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Eugenio Daveto; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 31, fol. 176v.
- 1123.** 1630. Sept. 21. Brussels. Commission to Daniel Odaly as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, which he has undertaken to recruit at his own expense for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 181.
- 1124.** 1630. Oct. 7. Brussels. Special grant of 6 crowns monthly, in addition to his ordinary pay, to Elias Shea; to serve with his arms in the Irish infantry; in consideration of his good parts,



and of the zeal with which he has come from England to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 31, fol. 188v.

- 1125.** 1630. Oct. 10. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. She has received his letter of 24 August, together with the memorial of Master Hortensio Paravicino in favour of Fr Richard Gold. She will take appropriate steps with his Holiness to have Fr Richard promoted to the see of Ardferf, or to any other see which may become vacant in Ireland. EGC., reg. 203, fol. 260.
- 1126.** 1630. Oct. 15. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 25 Sept. 1630) to issue his ordinary pay, together with the arrears, to the Earl of Tyrone during his absence on business in Spain, in the same manner as though he were serving in Flanders. EG., reg. 31, fol. 190.
- 1127.** 1630. Oct. 17. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 1 Feb. 1630) of four crowns monthly to John Osulleban, together with the ordinary pay of a soldier in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 31, fol. 193.
- 1128.** 1630. Oct. 31. Brussels. Orders concerning the seniority of the Earl of Tyrconnell. "Whereas the Earl of Tyrconnell, captain of a company of Mounted Spanish Lancers of this most victorious army of my Lord the King, has represented to us that on certain occasions when it has fallen to him to command other companies of Mounted Spanish Lancers and cuirassiers, the captains junior to him have raised difficulties against obeying his orders, we by these present enjoin upon and order all cavalry captains of the Light Horse of the said army, of whatever rank, nation or condition they may be, to observe the right of precedence, and whatsoever rights are his as captain of Mounted Spanish Lancers, as is laid down in his commission, and junior captains are to obey him according to his rank in everything appertaining to his Majesty's service." EG., reg. 31, fol. 208.
- 1129.** 1630. Nov. 6. Brussels. Licence to the Earl of Tyrone to remain in Spain for a further six months from the expiry of his last licence; and a similar licence to Ensign Gaspar Bernabe.\* EG., reg. 31, fol. 214v.
- 1130.** 1630. Nov. 15. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to Captain Daniel Odaly in respect of the company of Irish infantry which he has recently recruited. EG., reg. 31, fol. 209v.
- 1131.** 1630. Nov. 28. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Cornelius Ossulevan, soldier of the company of Captain Dermot Ossulevan Moar, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; in consideration of his good parts, and of the service he has rendered his Majesty.\* EG., reg. 31, fol. 218v.
- 1132.** 1630. Dec. 23. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. The Earl of Tyrone has begged me to order that the Irish regiment which serves with the army in the Low Countries, of which regiment he is colonel, should be placed upon the same footing



as the Spanish regiments, and be able to interchange the officers of the companies, as is set out with greater detail in the accompanying memorial. It has seemed well to me to inform your Highness of this, so that when you have consulted the Minister you judge best, you may inform me of what seems expedient in the matter, that the best decision may be made concerning the wishes of the Earl of Tyrone.

**1133.**

Enclosed: [a]. Oneyll, Earl of Tyrone, colonel of the Irish regiment in Flanders represents that of the many favours and honours which your Majesty bestows on the Irish nation, a very signal one is that your Majesty makes use of the said regiment in order that very many of the youth and nobility of this nation may be supported by it, and trained in arms and military discipline; which is likewise of particular service to your Majesty, not only because it keeps this nation attached to your orders, and that section of the nation which is experienced in war, whenever any occasion may arise against the English, but also on account of the great zeal and loyalty with which this regiment serves your Majesty in Flanders, where it distinguishes itself in the engagements which offer against the enemy, and never gives grounds for suspicion, or for anxiety concerning any change of allegiance; of all which your Majesty will have been kept informed by the various reports of their Highnesses, and of the Generals and Ministers of your most victorious army in Flanders. However, although your Majesty has ordered that this regiment, which is one of the oldest in Flanders, should be placed upon the same footing as the Spanish regiments, this has not been done, for the officers of the companies who are ensigns and sergeants are not changed when they have served for the length of time prescribed by your Majesty's regulations, as in the Spanish and Italian regiments, and as was done in the Irish regiment in the beginning when it was established.

[b]. This was done because Henry Oneyll, brother of the petitioner, and first colonel of the regiment, who should have had this question regulated, died early, and the petitioner, who succeeded him, was young when this command was conferred upon him, and up to the present has not made any representations to your Majesty of the harm done by not changing the officers. The change of officers means getting the best men, and not to change them means that some who come to the regiment leave it, as they see no prospect of promotion in it, and of taking an officer's commission in the army and service of your Majesty, as every honourable soldier should hope to do. There is consequently no such supply for your Majesty's service as is proper, and your Ministers desire, principally because although the ensigns and sergeant in a company may be changed, the pay of both is not always increased, as usually the sergeant succeeds the ensign, and the ensign the adjutant and captain. Moreover the fact that



there is no change is the cause why many of those who serve in the said regiment seek for a special grant or pension on the Court here from your Majesty, as they have no hope of promotion in any other manner, since the officers are not changed, a thing the captains should be able to do, according to their commissions, as is done in the companies of their nation which serve with the royal army of the fleet.

[c]. Therefore the petitioner humbly begs your Majesty may be pleased to order that in the companies of the said regiment, the officers, ensigns, and sergeants, shall be changed when they have served in those posts for the number of years prescribed by your Majesty's regulations, as is done in the Spanish and Italian regiments, and likewise, enjoy the same honours, favours, pay and precedence, prerogatives, immunities and emoluments as the Spanish and Italian regiments enjoy, according to the favour granted to the brother of the petitioner, and to the petitioner himself, as appears from his commission as colonel, which he herewith presents. EGC., reg. 203, ff. 311-12.

**1134.** 1630. Dec. 31. St Omer. C. de Bonnier to de la Faille. Secretary of the Council of State. The mayor and magistrates of this town have represented to him the demands of the Irish captain in garrison, that besides the 200 men of his company, they should billet a further 100, for whom the captain says he has the licence from her Highness, but he shows no orders, except an attestation of some commissary. Begs that the Infanta be informed, that she may take the necessary measures. EA., liasse 2035. 1.

**1135.** 1630. Entries of payments made during the year 1630 of two sums of the value of 300 livres to Baron de Gleanomalun, in virtue of letters of Philip IV dated 29 November 1628. CC., reg. 45873, fol. 323.

**1136.** 1631. An account of the places from which can be drawn 5,000 men for Count de Fontaine.<sup>1</sup> Among them: Mardick: The company of the Earl of Tyrone, 24. The company of Arturo O'Neill, 61. 125.

Dunkirk: The company of Thadeus Osullivan, 64. The company of Henry Ogahan, 46. The company of Hugo Obrin, 100. The company of Philip Reyck, 101. The company of James Hanom, 111. 422.

Nieuport: The company of Constantine Onell, 73. The company of Patrick Daniel, 51. The company of Daniel Malun, 37. 161.

Ostend: The company of Gerald Barry, 100. The company of Dermot Ossuliban, 70. The company of Gerald Mauricio, 49. The company of Mauro Mahun, 65. The company of Edmund Omorra, 69. The company of Walter de la Hoyt, 62. The

---

<sup>1</sup> This document was formerly in a carton with others which all belonged to the year 1631, January to March.



- company of Richard Geraldin, 45. The company of Sobre Macdonel, 64. 524. EA., liasse 1995. 2.
- 1137.** 1631. Jan. 5. Brussels. Licence for Spain, to procure his own advancement, to James Nugencio, "of medium height, hair turning grey, scar on the side of his right temple. aged twenty eight years;" soldier of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoid, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 236v.
- 1138.** 1631. Jan. 6. Brussels. de la Faille to M. de Sonaitre. He has reported to the Infanta the demands of the Irish captain. She approves of the action taken by the authorities of St Omer, who refused to admit the extra 100 soldiers. She does not remember having given any orders about them. EA., carton 2047.
- 1139.** 1631. Jan. 11. Brussels. de la Faille to Necolalde. Requests him to report the strength of the Irish company at St Omer, and to see that orders are sent that in the company in Artois no men are to be admitted above their present number. EA., liasse 1989. 1.
- 1140.** 1631. Jan. 15. Brussels. de la Faille to Necolalde, As regards the orders dated 11 Jan. the Infanta presumes that the men recently arrived from Ireland and England are to be received and billeted, as they hold certificates of enlistment from their officers. This is to hold until they reach their established strength. EA., liasse 1989, 1.
- 1141.** 1631. Jan. 15. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities at St Omer. Recalls that by her letter of 12 Jan. she had ordered that they were to billet in the town the company of Irish infantry of Captain Anthony Omulrian, to the strength of the list he had sent. She now orders that they are to billet in the town the men who shall come with a certificate that they have been given a place in the said company, up to the number of three hundred, which is the established strength of the company. EA., liasse 2028. 4.
- 1142.** 1631. Jan. 17. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Daniel Omahun as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, a vacancy having been caused by the death of Captain Thadeus Carty: "In consideration of the good services you have rendered his Majesty in these parts and in these States for twenty five years, after the example of your father and ancestors (who, as we are informed, took up arms for the Catholic faith in Ireland with the loss of their lives and estates) as soldier, ensign, and adjutant of the said regiment, having distinguished yourself on all occasions which have offered during that time, especially at the siege and taking of Rheinberg, the withdrawal from Friesland, the relief of Grol, the capture of the towns of Aix-la-Chapelle and Wezel, from the beginning of the siege of Breda until the surrender, and in other campaigns and military exploits which have occurred, giving always and in everything



entrusted to you the good account and entire satisfaction expected of a good soldier." EG., reg. 31, fol. 245.

1143. 1631. Jan. 18. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Thomas Bradeus; to serve as chaplain in the company of Captain Henry Hagan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31. fol. 246v.
1144. 1631. Jan. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, to put in order an estate he has inherited from his father, to Nicholas Skiddy, "of good stature, fair beard, aged twenty nine years;" soldier of the company of Captain Sobre Macdonnell, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 251v.
1145. 1631. Feb. 15. Brussels. Orders to appoint Ensign John Jordan to be adjutant of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 31. fol. 260.
1146. 1631. Feb. 19. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Along with your Majesty's letter of December 23 I have received the memorial of the Earl of Tyrone, in which he represents to your Majesty how proper it would be for your service that the Irish regiment should be upon the same footing as the Spanish regiments, and so be able to interchange the officers of the companies. Concerning this it seems to me proper to reply to your Majesty that the said regiment is upon the same footing as the Spanish regiments, except as regards the interchange of officers, which has never been the practice of the Irish, nor of any others except the Spaniards and Italians. On account of the other nations it seems not advisable to change this at present. Moreover, at this time, when it is necessary to restrict expenditure, this would cause an increase in new payments. However it will be seen later what is most advantageous for your Majesty's service. EGC., reg. 204, fol. 27.
1147. 1631. Mar. 1. Brussels. Licence for the Earl of Tyrone to remain in Spain for a further four months from the expiry of the last licence; and a similar licence to Gaspar Barnabe. EG., reg. 31, fol. 273v.
1148. 1631. Mar. 11. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to the authorities of the Liberty of Bruges. Requests full information about the complaints made by the Irish regiment that some of their men had been arrested and scourged with rods. EA., carton 2047.
1149. 1631. Mar. 26. Brussels. Orders to appoint Nicholas Shea, at present senior chaplain of the garrison at Dunkirk, to be senior chaplain of the regiment of English infantry recruited by Colonel Edward Parham; with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 31, fol. 278v.
1150. 1631. May 23. Brussels. Orders to continue the payment of the special grant made on 20 January 1621 to William Plunqueto, of the company of Captain Mauro Mahon, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 31, fol. 314.



1151. 1631. June 20. Brussels. Appointment of Tullio Conry, licentiate in medicine, to be doctor of the English regiment of Colonel Reresby. EG., reg. 31. fol. 326v.
1152. 1631. July 1. Brussels. Licence to the Earl of Tyrone to remain in Spain for a further four months from the expiry of his last licence, as he has not yet concluded the business for which he went there; and a similar extension of his licence to remain in Spain to Gaspar Bernabe. EG., reg. 31, fol. 341v.
1153. 1631. July 1. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Oliver Geraldino, of the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 31, fol. 343v.
1154. 1631. July 4. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 30 July 1630) of four crowns monthly to Patrick Geraldino, in addition to his ordinary grant as a soldier in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 31, fol. 341.
1155. 1631. July 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Cornelius Osullivan, to recruit men to fill up his company; "of good stature, beard fair, a small scar on the right cheek, aged twenty eight years;" soldier of the company of Captain Dermot Osullivan Moar. EG., reg. 31, fol. 348.
1156. 1631. July 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for three months to Daniel Omulrian, soldier of the company of Captain Anthony Omulrian. EG., reg. 31, fol. 348.
1157. 1631. July 26. Brussels. Orders to issue without any intermission the pay held by Eugenio oge Layl in the company of Captain Patrick Daniel before he was captured at sea by the enemy and brought to Holland, where he was up to the present time, when he has made his escape. EG., reg. 31, fol. 355v.
1158. 1631. Aug. 31. Brussels. Orders to pay Rosa Odocarti the grant of eighty crowns upon the garrison at Lierre made to her on 4 August 1630, the orders then given to this effect not having been carried out. EG., reg. 32, fol. 17.
1159. 1631. Aug. 22. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. Terence Oshiridan is proceeding to those States to serve me, with a special grant of six crowns which I have ordered to be transferred to him from the fleet, in consideration of his having served me here for some years, after the example of his father and uncles, who lost their property in defence of the Catholic faith during the wars in Ireland. For these same reasons I have wished to commend him to your Highness, that on the occasions which may present themselves for his advancement, you may honour him and show him favour according to his merits and services; and this will give me pleasure. EGC., reg. 204, fol. 88.
1160. 1631. Oct. 3. Antwerp. Orders to issue to Robert Poer Geraldo Baret the full pay enjoyed by him in the company of Captain Thadeus Sullivan. before he was captured at sea by the enemy, since when he has been a prisoner. EG., reg. 32, fol. 31v.



- 1161.** 1631. Oct. 11. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Stephen Goldein; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Daniel Daly, of the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 32, fol. 61v.
- 1162.** 1631. Oct. 21. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Julio Conry, at present doctor of the regiment of English infantry of Colonel Gilbert Reresby, to be doctor of the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel Ladron Alonso de Guevara, with pay of fifteen crowns monthly. EG., reg. 32, fol. 53.
- 1163.** 1631. Nov. 1. Brussels. Orders to continue for four months further the pay due to Eugenio Oshiel, doctor of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, for his services in the royal hospital at Malines.\* EG., reg. 32, fol. 63v.
- 1164.** 1631. Nov. 6. Brussels. To be referred to the Infanta. That Albert Baron d'Omalun, godson of her Highness, son of the Baron of Glean and Guerchy, represents that although his Majesty, in consideration of the confiscation of his estates and baronies because his family had taken up arms against England (in consequence of the letters and great promises of worthy compensation made by the late King Philip III of happy memory) had written to your Highness to grant him a pension upon Finances, such as had been granted to the Lady Mary of Tyrconnell of his nation, who received 2,400 florins yearly; nevertheless, instead of carrying out his Majesty's wishes in this respect, your Highness had increased his grant by 100 florins only, for three years, in addition to the 200 florins he enjoyed formerly; with which he cannot support himself. He very humbly begs that in favourable consideration of his services your Highness may be pleased to grant him at least 600 florins yearly.
- In margin: Since your Highness has granted the suppliant 300 florins yearly, instead of the 200 which he received for the support of his son, and as your Highness has been pleased to refer to us this new request in which he complains of the high price of everything, and that his grant is too small in respect of his Majesty's letter which mentions 600 florins yearly, the officials of the Council of Finances refer to your Highness an increase of 100 or 200 florins yearly.
- In the hand of the Infanta: He may be granted a further 100 florins. Granted by the Council of Finances, 25 October 1631. CF., reg. 848, fol. 30.
- 1165.** 1631. Nov. 14. Brussels. Licence to the Earl of Tyrone to remain in Spain for a further four months from the expiry of his last licence. EG., reg. 32, fol. 72.
- 1166.** 1631. Nov. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ensign Gaspar Bernabe to remain in Spain for a further four months from the expiry of his last licence. EG., reg. 32, fol. 72.
- 1167.** 1631. Nov. 29. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Maurice Roche, soldier of the company of Captain Gerald Barri, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 81.



1168. 1631. Dec. 1. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Aeneas Macdonald; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 32, fol. 87v.
1169. 1631. Dec. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to William Plunqueto, soldier of the company of Captain Richard Geraldin. EG., reg. 32, fol. 85v.
1170. 1631. Dec. 11. Brussels. Commission to Richard Butler, Irish gentleman, son of Viscount Mountgarret, as captain of a company of Irish infantry which he has offered to recruit at his own cost for service with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; was formerly a captain in the service of the King of England. EG., reg. 32, fol. 112v.
1171. 1631. Dec. 15. Brussels. Grant by the Infanta Isabella, upon the advice of the members of the Council of Finances, to the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, in consideration of the reasons put forward in their petition; the annual grant to be continued, which is 150 livres, each of the value of 40 Flemish *gros*, for a further term of three years, to be reckoned from the expiry of the last grant on 8 March last. The grant to be paid by Ambroise Van Oncle, Collector General of Finances. CF., liasse 35.
1172. 1631. Dec. 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Eugenio Riano, soldier of the company of Captain Antony Omulrian. EG., reg. 32, fol. 105v.
1173. 1631. Dec. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for three months to William Butlero, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Daniel Odali, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 109v.
1174. 1631. Dec. 22. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 15 April 1631) of eight crowns monthly to Maurice Cerban, Irishman, together with the ordinary place of a soldier in the Irish infantry. His Majesty's letter grants two crowns monthly in addition to the six crowns monthly which he enjoyed already upon the fleet, and states that he has served twenty years in Flanders and two years in Spain. EG., reg. 32, fol. 113.
1175. 1632. Jan. 6. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Patrick Hugonis; to serve as chaplain of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 124v.
1176. 1632. Jan. 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Carty, soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone, to administer his estate, on account of the advanced age of his father. EG., reg. 32, fol. 121v.
1177. 1632. Jan. 13. Brussels. Commission to the Earl of Tyrconnell as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry. "Whereas in order to strengthen the man power of the most victorious army of my Lord the King we have resolved to order the raising of a second regiment of Irish infantry of fifteen banners, with Spanish privileges; and whereas it is becoming to provide as colonel of



the said regiment a person of valour, birth, practice and experience, and of the other good qualities thereunto required, in the person of you, the Earl of Tyrconnell, Knight of the Order of Alcantara, in consideration of your birth, and of the good services you have rendered the King for some years past in these parts, while in enjoyment of a pension, and for the last five years as captain of a company of Spanish lancers, when you distinguished yourself on the occasions which offered, especially during the campaign in which an attempt was made to relieve the town of Bois-le-Duc, to enter the Island of Veluwe, and during the year just past in repulsing the enemy near Bruges, bearing yourself in everything committed to you with the satisfaction to be expected from a gentleman of your lineage etc". EG., reg. 32. fol. 132.

**1178.** 1632. Jan. 13. Brussels. Commission to Captain Thomas Preston as major of the regiment of Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrconnell; "in consideration of the good services you have rendered his Majesty for twenty six years in these parts, and in these States, having brought from Ireland at great cost a company of Irish infantry; and since then you continued to serve with another company of Irish mounted cuirassiers, raised at your own expense, until it was disbanded; and you distinguished yourself on all occasions which offered, and with a grant of 80 crowns made to you by our order, served as a pensioner in the campaign during which an attempt was made to relieve the town of Bois-le-Duc, and to enter the Island of Veluwe, and during the last year at the repulse of the enemy near Bruges". EG., reg. 32, fol. 132v.

**1179.** 1632. Jan. 13. Brussels. Blank commission for a captain of the new regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, with orders to make out thirteen others like it for the same regiment, the company of each captain to be 200 strong. EG., reg. 32, fol. 132v—103.

**1180.** 1632. Jan. 27. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. Eugenio O'Neill, major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, having seen that I am providing another regiment for the Earl of Tyrconnell, as your Majesty ordered me, has decidedly absolutely to leave his command and withdraw from your Majesty's service. And although, so as not to lose him, and as he is a gentleman of such well known birth and a soldier of long experience, it has been suggested to make him lieutenant of a camp-master-general, with which commission he could still command the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone (for which none is better suited) nevertheless, as I have such strict orders from your Majesty that such posts are not to be multiplied, I have deferred doing this until I shall have sent a report of it to your Majesty, as I am now doing, that you may order whatever decision you find pleasing, presupposing however that if the gentleman does not receive the favour he is looking for, he will undoubtedly leave your Majesty's service. EGC., reg. 204, fol. 254.



- 1181.** 1632. Feb. 9. Brussels. Orders to pay Owen Oshiel, doctor of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, the salary which he enjoys at present in the royal hospital at Malines; payment to be for four months, from the expiration of the last order. EG., reg. 32, fol. 153.
- 1182.** 1632. Feb. 13. Brussels. Commission to Gaspar de Haen as judge-advocate of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 228v.
- 1183.** 1632. Feb. 16. Brussels. Orders for the transfer of Nicholas Glin, chaplain of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Matheo de Carvayal, to the company of Colonel Luis de Benavides. EG., reg. 32, fol. 172.
- 1184.** 1632. Feb. 19. Brussels. Orders for payment to the Earl of Tyrconnell, knight of the Order of Calatrava, of the 150 crowns monthly which he enjoyed as pension in the company of Spanish cuirassiers, together with his pay in the regiment of Irish infantry which is to be newly recruited. EG., reg. 32, fol. 156.
- 1185.** 1632. Feb. 19. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the garrison at Nieuport the ordinary place of a soldier held by James Jalachino in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Constantine Oneil, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 150v.
- 1186.** 1632. Feb. 20. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. Thanks her Highness for not having given the lieutenancy of a camp-master-general to Eugenio Oneill, on account of the great importance of reducing expenses, as experience shows that to multiply them increases outlay without advantage, and with subsequent inconveniences. His Majesty has a very good report of Don Eugenio Oneill. He esteems him, and desires to reward his services, and on this account her Highness may assure him of the future succession to a regiment of his nation, the first which shall become vacant; or, if her Highness should find no great obstacle, she could give him a regiment of Walloons or Germans, or some governorship, one of those he could hold; and if he should propose any other favour which is feasible, the King would be pleased to gratify him by conferring it. But he must exclude altogether the multiplication of posts for the sake of pleasing individuals. Excerpt. EGC., reg. 204, fol. 289.
- 1187.** 1632. Feb. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Hope, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Walter de la Hoid, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit a company of infantry. EG., reg. 32, fol. 153.
- 1188.** 1632. Feb. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, to recruit the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, to Captain Thomas Preston,\* pensioner attached to the garrison of Sas. EG., reg. 32, fol. 146v.
- 1189.** 1632. Feb. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign David Sinot, to recruit for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 146v.



1190. 1632. Feb. 22. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Hugh Vardes; to serve as chaplain to the company of Irish infantry of Captain Sanherley Macdoneill, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 150v.
1191. 1632. Feb. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Patrick Guinche, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; Captain Preston wishes to take him, for his own advantage. EG., reg. 32, fol. 152v.
1192. 1632. Feb. 26. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to each of the companies already recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell: the company of Colonel the Earl of Tyrconnell; of Captain Lawrence Gefry; of Captain Nellan Obuyll; of Captain John de Burgo; of Captain Eugenio Omulrian; of Captain James Preston; of Captain Daniel Ocahan; and of Captain Gerald Hocq. EG., reg. 32, fol. 198v.
1193. 1632. Feb. 26. Brussels. Commission to Pedro Morca as campaign-captain of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 200.
1194. 1632. Feb. 29. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns monthly to each of the following captains of companies lately recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell: Captain Oliver Geraldin, Captain Nelan Obuis, and Captain Richard Plonqueto. EG., reg. 32, fol. 251.
1195. 1632. Feb. 29. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to Walter Dalton, Maurice Oseral, and John Scoclocq, captains of the Irish companies recruited by the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 268.
1196. 1632. Mar. 1. Brussels. Extension for a further four months of the licence for Spain granted to the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 171.
1197. 1632. Mar. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for three months to Nelan Boyll, ensign of the company of Captain Hugo Bruin of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, to recruit a company for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 166.
1198. 1632. Mar. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for three months to Philip Porcel, ensign of the company of Captain Daniel Odaly, to recruit a company for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 166.
1199. 1632. Mar. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Riano, of the company of Captain Antony Omulrian, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 166.
1200. 1632. Mar. 12. Madrid. Philip IV to the Infanta Isabella. Patrick and Maurice Geraldino, brothers, legitimate sons of William Geraldino, Lord of the country of Quieni in Ireland, have represented to me that for the regiment which I ordered the Earl of Desmond to raise they have recruited 200 men from among their vassals and relatives, in order to come and serve with them in these parts. When they came to Spain, they saw that this regiment was never made effective, and they beg me



therefore to give them express orders to take these men to those States [Flanders] and to order that when they arrive there, they themselves be given the rank of captains in the regiment raised by the Earl of Tyrconnell. As I have ascertained that their statement is true, I have decided that when each of these gentlemen arrives in those States with 150 men, your Highness shall give them commissions as active captains, as I hold this proper on account of their birth and the zeal they have shown to serve me, EGC., reg. 204, fol. 315.

- 1201.** 1632. Mar. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for three months to Eugenio Omulrian, soldier of the company of Captain Anthony Omulrian, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit a company for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 170.
- 1202.** 1632. Apr. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Denis Okenedy, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Daniel Dali, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has represented that Captain Philip Purcel, who is going to Ireland to recruit a company for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, wishes to take him, in order to give him the post of sergeant in the said company. EG., reg. 32, fol. 173v.
- 1203.** 1632. Apr. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Ensign Malachy Omoro, of the company of Captain Edmond Omoro, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit a company for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 181.
- 1204.** 1632, May 11. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Marcellus and Peter Geraldin, soldiers\* of the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, their father. EG., reg. 32, fol. 196v.
- 1205.** 1632. May 13. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Hugh Vayrds; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Eugenio Omulrigan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 197v.
- 1206.** 1632. May 28. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to John Ofogarty, soldier of the company of Captain Constantine Oneil; to serve in the garrison at Nieuport; has served his Majesty many years in these parts and is now old, and without sufficient strength to continue on active service. The grant is made to enable him to live in comfort. EG., reg. 32, fol. 198.
- 1207.** 1632. June 14. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Patrick Kenano; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain John Bourcq, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 205v.
- 1208.** 1632. July 15. Brussels. Orders to pay Eugenio Schiel, doctor of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, the fifteen crowns monthly due to him for his services at the royal hospital at Malines, this being the same pay as that of the other doctors of that hospital, where he is to serve as long as there is such a large number of patients. EG., reg. 32, fol. 211v.



- 1209.** 1632. Aug. 7. Brussels. Orders to enter on the official pay register of the army, for the service of his Majesty, the company of Irish infantry lately recruited by Captain Richard Butler for service with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, both the sixty men men of his who are attached to the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell and the men whom he brought recently from Ireland. EG., reg. 32, fol. 216.
- 1210.** 1632. Aug. 11. Brussels. Licence to the Earl of Tyrone to remain in Spain for a further four months from the expiry of his last licence. EG., reg. 32, fol. 234.
- 1211.** 1632. Sept. 5. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV, of six crowns monthly to Terence Osiredan. EG., reg. 32, fol. 226.
- 1212.** 1632. Sept. 6. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Nicholas Deys; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Lawrence Geffrey, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 227v.
- 1213.** 1632. Sept. 15. Brussels. Orders to disband certain companies of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, which served under the command of Don Gonzalo Fernandez de Cordova, the said companies being too greatly reduced in numbers to render efficient service; the men to be drafted into the remaining companies as Don Gonzalo Fernandez de Cordova shall order. To be disbanded: the companies of Captain Daniel O Mahun, Captain Geraldo Mauricio, Captain Gerald Barri, Captain Thadeus Osuleban, and Captain Richard Geraldin; also the three vacant companies of the same regiment. EG., reg. 32, fol. 230v.
- 1214.** 1632. Oct. 8. Brussels. Commission to Richard Geraldin as captain of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell vacant by the death of Captain Daniel Ocham; many of his ancestors have served the King in these parts, Maurice Geraldin, his father, for 11 years. Has distinguished himself as a very honourable soldier on all occasions, especially at the siege of Breda, the entry into the island of Veluwe, and during the campaign of this present year. EG., reg. 32, fol. 240.
- 1215.** 1632. Oct. 29. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Malachy Omorra as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, which he has offered to recruit at his own cost for service with the Earl of Tyrconnell; has represented that after the example of his father, Captain Edmond Omorra, he has served the King in these parts for 10 years. EG., reg. 32, fol. 248.
- 1216.** 1632. Nov. 11. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV, of two crowns monthly, together with an ordinary place in the Irish infantry, to Daniel Carti, in consideration of his service after the example of his ancestors. EG., reg. 32, fol. 267v.
- 1217.** 1632. Nov. 15. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to Captain Malachy Omora, of a company of Irish infantry,



- lately raised for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 258.
- 1218.** 1632. Dec. 2. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Daniel Quimim; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Maurus Feral, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 269v.
- 1219.** 1632. Dec. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Philip Porcel, of the company of Captain Daniel Odaly; to recruit a company of Irish infantry for service in Flanders. EG., reg. 32, fol. 268.
- 1220.** 1632. Dec. 3. Brussels. Grant of fifteen crowns monthly to John Conel; to serve as chief surgeon of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; in consideration of his good parts, and of his desire to serve his Majesty as a surgeon; he has made a sufficient study of surgery and has had some practice. EG., reg. 32, fol. 268.
- 1221.** 1632. Dec. 10. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Denis Gafry; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Malachy Omorra, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 32, fol. 271.
- 1222.** 1632. Dec. 10. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to John Seridan; to serve as chaplain to the company of Captain Oliver Geraldin; and to Maurice Hoseo, cleric, to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Nelan Boyle. EG., reg. 32, fol. 271.
- 1223.** 1632. Dec. 11. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly upon the garrison at Sas to Gerald Barri, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 274v.
- 1224.** 1632. Dec. 15. Brussels. Licence to the Earl of Tyrone to remain in Spain for a further four months from the expiry of his last licence. EG., reg. 32, fol. 280.
- 1225.** 1632. Dec. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Granill, of the company of Captain Daniel Odaly, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit men for his company. EG., reg. 32, fol. 284.
- 1226.** 1632. Dec. 16. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV, of six crowns monthly to Cornelius Osullivan, together with the ordinary place of a soldier in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 32, fol. 272v.
- 1227.** 1632. Dec. 19. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Thadeus Ossullivan, former captain of a company, since disbanded, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 32, fol. 274v.
- 1228.** 1632. Dec. 24. Brussels. Grant of the title of Counsellor of War to Captain Gerald Barry; has served his Majesty for thirty two years in these parts, the first four years in the royal fleet, and the remaining twenty eight years in these States, as soldier, ensign, adjutant, and during the last nine years with a company of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 32, fol. 285.



- 1229.** 1633. Mar. 18. London. Reports from England, of 18 March 1633, given to her Highness for transmission to his Majesty. Reports a conversation held three days previously 'with a very serious person of this Court.' "As regards England, the gentleman said it was forbidden a long time ago for any English to go to serve on one side or the other, but as regards the Irish, he himself is not very greatly opposed. Nevertheless, nearly all the members of the Privy Council repeatedly represent to the King that the friendship which exists between the Catholic Irish and the Spaniards was the cause of Queen Elizabeth losing nearly all the kingdom of Ireland, and for fear of the same thing happening now, there is no need to renew the ancient communication between the said nations, which is now almost broken off." EGC., portefeuille 304.
- 1230.** 1633. Apr. 20. A document giving the state of the army in Flanders at this date. Among the troops quartered with the Marquis of Aytona at Lierre are mentioned, among the infantry: The Irish regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, 400 men. The Irish regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, 800 men. EGC., portefeuille 204.
- 1231.** 1633. May 10. Brussels. The Infanta Isabella to Philip IV. The grant upon account and from their pay of 4,000 crowns which his Majesty has ordered to be paid to the Earl of Tyrone and the Earl of Tyrconnell, 2,000 crowns to each of them, has been entered duly in the books of the Controller-General and of the Auditor of the Army, as his Majesty ordered by his letter of 20 March last. \*EGC., reg. 222, fol. 35.
- 1232.** 1633. Dec. 4. Brussels. Commission to Raymond Geraldino as Captain of a company of Irish infantry 200 strong, to be newly recruited. EG., reg. 33, fol. 5.
- 1233.** 1633. Dec. 4. Commission to Felix Obrun to raise a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong. EG., reg. 33, fol. 5v.
- 1234.** 1633. Dec. 14. Brussels. Commission to Thadeus Oquelly as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be recruited for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 10.
- 1235.** 1633. Dec. 30. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (8 June 1633) that whatever grants are due to the Earl of Tyrone upon the army are to be paid regularly, from month to month. Hence from the date mentioned in his Majesty's letter the Earl is to be paid punctually the allowance which he holds of 200 crowns, and whatever else is due to him by reason of his command of the Irish regiment. EG., reg. 33, fol. 18.
- 1236.** 1633. Dec. 31. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV ( June 1633) that on account of the rank of the Earl of Tyrone, the good memory left by his father, and the fact that he is under the King's protection and in his service from the time he lost his estates for the Catholic cause, he is to be granted an increase of 50 crowns monthly, in addition to the 200 crowns he



already enjoys in Flanders; and to leave no door open for the contravention of the royal orders, this grant is to be paid from the secret service funds. The value of each of the fifty crowns to be ten reales. EG., reg. 33, fol. 17.

- 1237.** 1634. Jan. 2. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to George Gheraldin; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of Burgundian infantry of Colonel the Marquis de Warambon. EG., reg. 33, fol. 22.
- 1238.** 1634. Jan. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Richard Pluncqueto, captain of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit men for his company, which at present is weak in numbers. EG., reg. 33, fol. 23.
- 1239.** 1634. Jan. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Thomas Terrel and Gerald Open, captains of companies of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 23.
- 1240.** 1634. Jan. 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Ensign Adam Loftus, of the company of Captain James Quenacq, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit for his company. EG., reg. 33, fol. 23.
- 1241.** 1634. Jan. 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Sergeant Maurice Quenacq, of the company of Captain James Quenacq; to recruit for his company. EG., reg. 33, fol. 34v.
- 1242.** 1634. Jan. 10. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain Thadeus Quelli, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 34v.
- 1243.** 1634. Jan. 10. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain Thomas Nugencio, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 34v.
- 1244.** 1634. Jan. 11. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Thadeus Osulivan, pensioner in the garrison of Sas. EG., reg. 33, fol. 33.
- 1245.** 1634. Jan. 16. Brussels. Commission to Gersld Ohagan as quarter-master of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 34.
- 1246.** 1634. Jan. 17. Brussels. Orders concerning the expenses of Captain Thadeus Quelli. "Whereas Captain Thadeus Quelli is about to assemble the company of Irish infantry which he recruited lately for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniell, and as at present it is not possible to assign him quarters, for the payment of expenses four placas a day shall be issued to the men whom the captain shall present, until such time as the company be admitted to his Majesty's pay and service. No debt is to be incurred for such payment, and this order is not to serve as a precedent." EG., reg. 33, fol. 31.
- 1247.** 1634. Jan. 18. Brussels. Orders for the issue of bread rations to the company of Captain Thadeus Quelli, even though the company be not yet admitted to his Majesty's service. EG., reg. 33, fol. 32.



1248. 1634. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for Spain, on business to his advantage, to Nicholas Schea, head chaplain of the garrison of Dunkirk, and chaplain in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Luis de Benavides, governor of Dunkirk. EG., reg. 33, fol. 39.
1249. 1634. Jan. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Ros Carve, captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniell; to recruit eighty men for his company. EG., reg. 33, fol. 35v.
1250. 1634. Jan. 24. Brussels. Commission to Eugenio Omulrian as captain of a company of Irish infantry 200 strong to be recruited for service with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; in consideration of his birth and of the good services he has rendered his Majesty during twenty years in these parts, while a pensioner, and lately as captain of a company of Irish infantry which he recruited at his own cost for service with the Earl of Tyrconnell, until it was disbanded. EG., reg. 33, fol. 38.
1251. 1634. Jan. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Mackenissi, "of good stature, brown beard, scar on the forehead"; formerly soldier of the company of Horse of Captain Juan Mallea; has broken his thigh, and is unable for further service.\* EG., reg. 33, fol. 39.
1252. 1634. Feb. 1. Brussels. Francisco de Moncada to Miguel de Morales. The Earl of Tyrconnell has presented to me a letter of his Majesty to her late Highness which reads as follows:  
 "As your Highness is aware, I made a grant to the Earl of Tyrconnell of an *in commendam* of the value of 1,000,000 marevedis, and until he comes into the actual enjoyment of this, this amount is to be paid from the secret funds of those States [Flanders], notwithstanding all orders to the contrary. On his behalf representations have been made to me that notwithstanding, the Ministers there have not authorised the issue of the amount for this year, and have stated that a new order from me is necessary. Even should it be granted that by my letters to your Highness, of September 1624 and June 1625, all orders to the contrary before or after were declared null, it appears that as the letters to the Earl were not expressly rescinded by my last orders of 15 Jan 1631, they remain in force; and so I declare it to be, as this seems just, and the Earl should not be deprived of the grant which was made to him, and which he enjoyed in the past, and of which he has need for his future support. Your Highness will give the necessary order that he be paid punctually, as I hold this to be right. Madrid. 23 June 1632.
- Orders from Moncada to Morales to execute his Majesty's orders, and pay the Earl of Tyrconnell the said grant yearly from the secret funds, in monthly portions, from the date mentioned by his Majesty. EGC., reg. 212, fol. 427. Also EG., reg. 33, fol. 52v.



- 1253.** 1634. Feb. 6. Brussels. Orders that rations are to be issued to the company of Captain Eugenio Omulrian, recently recruited by him for service with the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 43v.
- 1254.** 1634. Feb. 6. Brussels. Orders to pay four placas daily for one month to the soldiers presented by Captain Eugenio Omulrian, as they have no billets. EG., reg. 33, fol. 44.
- 1255.** 1634. Feb. 11. Brussels. Commission to Patrick Valecio as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 52v.
- 1256.** 1634. Feb. 11. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain Patrick Valecio. EG., reg. 33, fol. 52v.
- 1257.** 1634. Feb. 11. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Denis Odriscol, pensioner in the company of Captain Daniel Odaly. EG., reg. 33, fol. 53.
- 1258.** 1634. Feb. 12, Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the companies of Captain Constantine Oneill, Captain Denis Lalar, Captain Felix Obruin, Captain Raymund Geraldin, and Captain Thadeus Quelly, which companies were recruited by them for service with the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 58.
- 1259.** 1634. Feb. 12. Brussels. Special grant of 12 crowns monthly to Ensign Henry Oneill, of the company of Captain Henry Oneill, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; went to Ireland with licence of her late Highness in the year 1629, and has now returned to serve. EG., reg. 33, fol. 73.
- 1260.** 1634. Feb. 21. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant held by Captain Richard Geraldin from the Irish infantry to the Spanish. EG., reg. 33, fol. 65.
- 1261.** 1634. Feb. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Normel, of the garrison at Dunkirk; to enable him to recover a certain property which he has inherited from his father, and with regard to the fact that he has lost his right hand and is reduced to a state of need. EG., reg. 33, fol. 70.
- 1262.** 1634. Feb. 22. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Richard Macmoris, in addition to his pay in the Irish infantry, which is to remain as it was; had served in the army until he returned to Ireland with licence from Archduke Albert in 1612, and has now returned to serve. EG., reg. 33, fol. 62.
- 1263.** 1634. Feb. 23. Brussels. Commission to Thomas Magdonados, a Scottish gentleman, for a company of Scots infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for service with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 54v.
- 1264.** 1634. Mar. 1. Brussels. Orders to grant the post of ensign to Francis Talboto, soldier of the company of Captain Diego Preston, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; had been nominated for it by Captain Thomas Tiriell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 61.



1265. 1634. Mar. 6. Brussels. Commission to George Car as captain of a company of Scots infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for service with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 64.
1266. 1634. Mar. 6. Brussels. Licence for England, for two months, to Ensign Maurice Ohem, of the company of Captain Constantine Oneill; Colonel Eugenio Oniell wishes to send him there on business. EG., reg. 33, fol. 64v.
1267. 1634. Mar. 6. Brussels. Orders to grant the post of ensign, to which he had been nominated by his captain, to Denis Obrin, soldier of the company of Captain James Quenenacq, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 64v.
1268. 1634. Mar. 12. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Daniel Onell, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 69.
1269. 1634. Mar. 12. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Thadeus Lernaeus, cleric; to serve as chaplain in the Irish regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniell, as one of the four ordinary chaplains the regiment should have. EG., reg. 33, fol. 79.
1270. 1634. Mar. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to James Nugencio, together with his ordinary pay in the company of Captain Walter de la Hoid; in virtue of a letter of her Highness, 11 Jan. 1631. EG., reg. 33, fol. 72.
1271. 1634. Mar. 20. Brussels. Licence for Germany, on business to his own advancement, to James Nolano, captain of a company of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 33, fol. 75v.
1272. 1634. Mar. 21. Brussels. Commission to John de Burgo as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; in consideration of his good services in these parts for 28 years, as soldier, sergeant, ensign, adjutant of the same regiment, and captain of a company of Irish infantry; had well comported and distinguished himself on the occasions which had offered in Germany and in these States, particularly in battles, engagements, and the taking of fortified places, having received wounds, and having given a good account of himself in everything placed under his command. EG., reg. 33, fol. 74.
1273. 1634. Mar. 22. Brussels. Commission to Henry Hagan as captain of a company of Irish infantry 200 strong, to be recruited for service with the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these states for twenty three years, as ensign, and as captain of an Irish company, and has distinguished himself on all occasions which have offered. EG., reg. 33, fol. 76.
1274. 1634. Mar. 28. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and special grant of Maurice Geraldin from the company of Irish infantry to the company of Burgundian infantry. EG., reg. 33, fol. 86v.



1275. 1634. Mar. 31. Brussels. Orders to disband the companies of Irish infantry of Captains James Alem and Thomas Tiriell, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, as they contain only few men, who are to be distributed amongst the other companies of the same regiment in accordance with the number which each company shall consider proper. EG., reg. 33, fol. 80.
1276. 1634. Mar. 31. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for four months to Captain Eugenio Orelly, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, to recruit men for his company. EG., reg. 33, 82v.
1277. 1634. Mar. 31. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for four months, to recruit men for their companies, to Captains Richard de Botlero, Hugh Orelly, Hugo Obruni, and Antony Molrian, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 82v.
1278. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Ensign Anthony Aylmer, of the company of Captain Oliver Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to conduct to these States some men he had recruited for his Majesty's service. EG., reg. 33, fol. 86.
1279. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain James Alem; is at present without pay, as his company has been disbanded. EG., reg. 33, fol. 94.
1280. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign William Felly, of the disbanded company of Captain James Alem. EG., reg. 33, fol. 94.
1281. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Patrick Huin, of the disbanded company of Captain James Alem. EG., reg. 33, fol. 94.
1282. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Thomas Teriel, of a disbanded company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 94.
1283. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Francis Talbot, of the disbanded company of Captain Thomas Teriel. EG., reg. 33, fol. 94.
1284. 1634. Apr. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Patrick Obrigan, of the disbanded company of Captain Thomas Teriel. EG., reg. 33, fol. 94.
1285. 1634. Apr. 28. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (San Lorenzo, 20 Oct. 1633) of eight crowns monthly to John Maguir, nephew of the Earl of Tyrone; in consideration of his desire to serve his Majesty in the war, in imitation of his father Captain John Maguir, who served his Majesty for many years with a company of Irish infantry in the States of Flanders. EG., reg. 33, fol. 92.
1286. 1634. Apr. 29. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (San Lorenzo, 20 Oct. 1633) of eight crowns monthly, in addition to his ordinary pay in the Irish infantry, to Daniel de Brito, Irishman; has served for some years in the ocean fleet. EG., reg. 33, fol. 90.



1287. 1634. May 1. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain Maurice Macdonel, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 106v.
1288. 1634. May 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Ferdinand Orelly, of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Juan Feliz Veguer, of the regiment of Colonel the Marquis de Zelada; on account of certain incurable infirmities, he is incapable of further services. EG., reg. 33, fol. 105.
1289. 1634. May 10. Madrid. Philip IV to Marquis de Aytona. On the part of the college of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain it has been represented to me that at the last reduction made in these States the yearly alms which they received from the finances of the castle of Antwerp has been reduced. And as they have no other means of support, and as their foundation was authorised under the condition that they should not quest alms, they are reduced to a state of extreme need, and are unable to continue their studies in arts and theology, and the sending of their missionaries to Ireland has been stopped, to the great affliction to the Catholics of that kingdom, and with the recognised risk that the practice of the Catholic religion will be lost. In consideration of their report, and as the alms is well bestowed upon these religious for the service of God and the welfare of the Catholic religion to which they devote their service, and on account of the good example of their lives, it has been decided that henceforward no reduction which I may order in those States shall apply to them without express derogation of this command; and the said alms, and all that portion of it which is due to them since the reduction was made, is to be paid to them immediately, in the same manner in which they received it up to the present, all orders to the contrary notwithstanding, which in this regard are declared of no force, so that in future they may give the necessary order for this. EGC., reg. 33, fol. 154.
1290. 1634. June 4. Brussels. Commission to Thomas Butler as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 112v.
1291. 1634. June 20. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV, of four crowns monthly to John Pour. EG., reg. 33, fol. 130v.
1292. 1634. July 21. From the camp at Haeren. Commission to James Morea as campaign-captain of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, a vacancy having been caused by the death of Peter Moreau; in consideration of his long services in these parts. EG., reg. 33, fol. 144v.
1293. 1634. Aug. 1. Antwerp. Commission to Walter Triel as captain of a company of Irish infantry, 200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 146.
1294. 1634. Aug. 1. Antwerp. Commission to William Butler and Godfrid Mones as captains of companies of Irish infantry, each



200 strong, to be recruited for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 146v.

1295. 1634. Aug. 3. Antwerp. Licence for Ireland for three months, to Ensign Denis Odeir, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; to bring over a number of men recruited for these States. EG., reg. 33, fol. 146v.
1296. 1634. Aug. 11. Louvain. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 18 May 1634) that the 1,000 crowns originally granted to the Irish Franciscans are to be paid in full, notwithstanding the general reduction ordered last year, unless special mention be made to the contrary. EG., reg. 33, fol. 154-5v.
1297. 1634. Aug. 16. Tirlemont. Commission to Thomas Preston as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry, to consist of fifteen companies, on a Spanish footing, and each company to be 200 strong.\* EG., reg. 33, fol. 155.
1298. 1634. Aug. 17. Tirlemont. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Doctor Charahsio; to serve as doctor of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniell. EG., reg. 33, fol. 184v.
1299. 1634. Aug. 22. From the village of Lunack. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Michael Batheo, of the company of Captain Richard Plunquete, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit a company there, of which he has been offered the captaincy by Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 33, fol. 159v.
1300. 1634. Aug. 22. From the village of Lunack. Licence for Ireland to Robert Preston, soldier of the company of Captain James Preston; to recruit a company there, of which Colonel Preston has offered him the captaincy. EG., reg. 33, fol. 159v.
1301. 1634. Aug. 22. From the village of Lunack. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Anthony Aylmer, of the company of Captain Oliver Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit a company there, of which Colonel Preston has offered him the captaincy. EG., reg. 33, fol. 159v.
1302. 1634. Aug. 22. Lunack. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Francis Talbot, soldier of the company of Captain James Preston, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit a company there of which Colonel Thomas Preston has offered him the captaincy; similar licence to Sergeant Hugh Clanci, soldier of the same company; to William Geraldino, Walter Roche, Francis Stamerts, Bartholomew San Lorens, George Brete, and James Nugent; all soldiers of the company of Captain James Preston. EG., reg. 33, fol. 160.
1303. 1634. Aug. 25. Luncak. Orders to pay in proportion monthly and regularly as in the past the grant of 1,000 crowns yearly made by his Majesty to the Guardian of the college of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain. EG., reg. 33, fol. 169v.
1304. 1634. Sept. 2. Brussels. Commission to Captain Richard Geraldin as major of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; in consideration of his service of twenty years in these parts,



as soldier, ensign, and captain of two different companies of his nation, and in particular of his services at the siege and capture of Breda, the fortification of the town of Santvliet, with the marines at the last entry into Veluwe, his services in the Palatinate at the capture of Speier, and in the other campaigns which have been fought. EG., reg. 33, fol. 161v.

- 1305.** 1634. Sept. 2. Brussels. Orders to pay four placas daily to the officers of the two companies of Irish infantry recruited by Arturo and Edmond Obrin for service with the regiment of Colonel Eugenio O'Neill, as they are still without quarters. EG., reg. 33, fol. 170.
- 1306.** 1634. Sept. 3. From the village of Lunack. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Miler Dalton, prefect of the Irish college; to serve as chaplain of the military hospital in place of Fr Bernard Magrall, who has died. EG., reg. 33, fol. 164v.
- 1307.** 1634. Sept. 8. Lierre. Commission to Captain Maurice Geraldin as major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, vacant by the promotion of Thomas Preston; in consideration of the good services he has rendered his Majesty in these parts for 45 years in the infantry and cavalry, as soldier, ensign, lieutenant, and during the last 29 years as active captain of a company of Irish infantry; has distinguished himself on all occasions which have offered, especially at the siege and capture of Hulst, at the siege of Rheinberg, during the troubles in the Island of Bommel, in the battle of the Dunes, where, while fighting vigorously, he was made prisoner, and at the siege of Ostend, where in the course of his duty he received several wounds and rendered special service, and brought about the repulse of two attacks. EG., reg. 33, fol. 163.
- 1308.** 1634. Sept. 17. London. Juan de Neocolalde to Martin de Arpe. Prince Thomas is making preparations during these days to take his departure for the ports on the coast of Flanders, and is occupied with the levies. He wanted to raise a regiment of Irishmen, and without my having been informed, an Irishman who has been created colonel has been sent over to carry out the levy, with a letter of commendation to me, asking me to procure for him the licence required and the necessary orders from the King. This is just the way to cause me embarrassment concerning the licence which I hold from last year, in virtue of which, with little fuss and in small parties, 6,000 men have been sent over to Flanders. This on account of my friendship with the Irish Lord Deputy. To try to raise a new regiment now, at the beginning of winter, for the sake of creating a new colonel and new officers, is not to the advantage of his Majesty's service, and is also an embarrassment, as I would send over the men they want for half the money which has been given to the Irishmen. For the 6,000 men referred to I have not spent 2,000 crowns, and this man is



now sent over here with 6,000 crowns; and the expenses will rise to as much again. EGC., reg. 364, fol. 165.

- 1309.** 1634. Sept. 21. Brussels. Commission to Edmond O Reli, of the company of Captain Hugh Orelli, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, as ensign of the company of Captain Eugenio Orelli. EG., reg. 33, fol. 167v.
- 1310.** 1634. Sept. 21. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Gaspar Geraldin as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell vacant by the promotion of Captain Maurice Geraldin to be major; has served in these States for seven years, after the example of the said major his father, and has distinguished himself on all occasions, especially during the attempt to relieve the town of Maestricht, when he was one of those who with the men of Count Rappenheim cleared the trenches of the enemy. EG., reg. 33, fol. 168v.
- 1311.** 1634. Oct. 2. Namur. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Gerald Dardis, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; has represented that Colonel Thomas Preston calls him, in order to promote him in the Irish regiment. EG., reg. 33, fol. 178.
- 1312.** 1634. Oct. 2. Namur. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant William Queli, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Walter Dalton, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; has represented that Colonel Preston has invited him, in order to promote him in the Irish regiment. EG., reg. 33, fol. 182v.
- 1313.** 1634. Oct. 2. Namur. Francisco de Moncada to Diego de Hernani. Know that whereas it is proper to appoint a senior chaplain and a preacher to the regiment Irish infantry of Colonel Thomas Preston and that for this purpose men of learning and ability are required, I have thought well to assign, as I do hereby, payment of forty crowns monthly to the two persons whom the actual or future Guardian of the Irish Franciscans of St Anthony of Padua at Louvain shall name to act as senior chaplain and as preacher respectively to the said regiment. EG., reg. 33, fol. 185v.
- 1314.** 1634. Oct. 2. Namur. Orders to issue the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to each of the companies of Irish infantry of Captains Nelano Oneill and Edward Obrin, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 185v.
- 1315.** 1634. Oct. 2. Namur. Appointment of Robert Aylmer and Edmond Flaherty, priests, to be chaplains in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, with pay of twelve crowns monthly. EG., reg. 33, fol. 186.
- 1316.** 1634. Oct. 3. Brussels. Orders to disband the companies of Captain Maurus Mahuno, Captain Hugh Orelli, and Captain Eugenio Orelli, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, on account of the small number of their men. EG., reg. 33, fol. 178.
- 1317.** 1634. Oct. 10. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Edmond Claherty; to serve one of the four chaplaincies of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 33, fol. 182v.



- 1318.** 1634. Oct. 16. Namur. Orders to disband the companies of Captains Ros Cario, Godfrey Mores, Philip Purcel, and Thadeus Quelli, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, on account of the small number of the men. EG., reg. 33, fol. 179.
- 1319.** 1634. Oct. 16. Namur. Orders to incorporate in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone the two companies of Captains Thomas Plunquete and Artur Obrin, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 33, fol. 179.
- 1320.** 1634. Oct. 17. Namur. Licence for Spain to Sergeant Boyle, of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Francisco de Belvi, regiment of Alonso Ladron; has represented that his brother Fr Francisco Boyle has sent for him from Spain to promote his advancement there. EG., reg. 33, fol. 187.
- 1321.** 1634. Nov. 8. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Dominick Carti, of the disbanded company of Captain Rosse Carri, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 130.
- 1322.** 1634. Nov. 10. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Maurus Macmahon, whose company in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone has been disbanded; and a special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Thadeus Bradegan, of the same disbanded company. EG., reg. 33, fol. 127.
- 1323.** 1634. Nov. 12. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Edmond Orelly, of the disbanded company of Captain Eugenio Orelli, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 34, fol. 130v.
- 1324.** 1634. Nov. 13. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Oen Machel, of the disbanded company of Captain Eugenio Orelli, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 34, fol. 138v.
- 1325.** 1634. Nov. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for three months, on account of the death of his father, to Ensign Ferdinand Orelli, of the disbanded company of Captain Eugenio Orelli, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 34, fol. 128.
- 1326.** 1634. Nov. 15. Brussels. Special grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Eugenio Orelly, who is without pay, as his company has been disbanded. EG., reg. 34, fol. 130v.
- 1327.** 1634. Nov. 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Denis Macana, of the disbanded company of Captain Hugo de Orelli, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 34, fol. 134v.
- 1328.** 1634. Nov. 16. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Thomas Machquilgot, of the disbanded company of Captain Hugo de Orelli. regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 34, fol. 134v.
- 1329.** 1634. Nov. 20. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Patricio Machouen; to serve as one of the four chaplains of the



regiment of Walloon infantry of Colonel Count de Fontayne. EG., reg. 34, fol. 182v.

- 1330.** 1634. Nov. 23. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant John Rassly, of the company of Captain Philip Purcel, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 142v.
- 1331.** 1634. Nov. 23. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Thadeus Quelli, of a disbanded company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 143.
- 1332.** 1634. Nov. 23. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Godfrid Mones, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 143.
- 1333.** 1634. Nov. 24. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Philip Perzel, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 145.
- 1334.** 1634. Nov. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, on business which concerns him, to Captain Ros Carve, of a company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 146.
- 1335.** 1634. Nov. 27. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to John Offa, of the company of Captain Gaspar Geraldin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these parts for twenty eight years. EG., reg. 34, fol. 152.
- 1336.** 1634. Nov. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Captain Thadeus Quelli, of the company of Captain Henry Oneill, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 34, fol. 152.
- 1337.** 1634. Dec. 1. London. Juan de Necolalde to Moncada. Since the time when I reported that some 250 Irish soldiers, recruits of ours on their way to Flanders, had been driven into these ports by a storm, and had been detained, and prevented from continuing their journey, I requested that they should be given permission to depart, and this was granted. I added that I knew well that attempts were being made among them by the French to get them to pass over to France, whence three or four Irish captains had been sent, who were greatly indebted to the French, and made great proposals to the men, and had been sent to recruit in their own country. The French ambassador had a hand in this, and had given letters to the Queen in order to bring it off. He told me he would not follow it up, and gave me an assurance of this. Since then I thought it well to avail myself of the occasion to secure a levy of Scots, and I asked the Secretary if it would be feasible to allow us to raise another regiment; for although in some respects that nation is not adapted for service in Flanders, we would carry out this levy in order to counterbalance the French, and prevent them from getting as many men as they expected. I am afraid the Irish who are in these ports will be won over, and be taken off to France, for one of their captains and his officers have asked me for money to assist them, as they are unable



to continue their journey and are in great need. However, I have not given them anything, as I am not able, and am in great danger of losing all credit on account of my obligations and debts. At the beginning of this year you were pleased to order that 20,000 ducats should be sent over to me, but ten months of anxiety and efforts have gone by, and now I am told that application has been made to Count Umanes. EGC., reg. 364, fol. 215.

- 1338.** 1634. Dec. 2. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to John Geraldino, former ensign of the company of Captain Augustine Herro, regiment of Colonel Guascro. EG., reg. 34, fol. 161v.
- 1339.** 1634. Dec. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Captain Hugo Orelli, pensioner of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 34, fol. 169v.
- 1340.** 1634. Dec. 7. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Thadeus Osullivan, of the garrison of Sas. EG., reg. 34, fol. 170.
- 1341.** 1634. Dec. 12. Brussels. Special grant of twelve crowns monthly to Ensign John Oniel, of the disbanded company of Captain Hugh Purzel. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant William Malfont, of the disbanded company of Captain Walter Mores. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign M. Cragh, of the same company. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Daniel Barri, of the disbanded company of Captain Ros Carve, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Richard de Burgo, of the disbanded company of Captain Thadeus Quelli, of the same regiment; and a special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Donoly of the same company. EG., reg. 34, fol. 191.
- 1342.** 1634. Dec. 15. Brussels. Orders to Colonel Eugenio Oneill to send back all the men of the company of Captain Malachy Omorra, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, who, as represented by the captain, had passed over to the company of Captain Denis Labour without licence.\* EG., reg. 34, fol. 186.
- 1343.** 1635, Jan. 3. A list of army widows and of the pensions they enjoyed.
- [a]. Section entitled: Widows of governors, captain, colonels, and pensioners. No. 63. Doña Elena Carty, sister of Don Thadeus Carty; does not state where her husband served. Twenty florins.
- [b]. In the list which follows, entitled: Widows of commissaries, pensioners and others. No. 11. Leonor Mahun, Irishwoman, widow of Thomas de Burgo; does not state where her husband served. Twenty florins. No. 16. Elena Carty, sister of Denis Carty, who was a pensioner in the army. Twenty florins. No. 24. Elena Crouly, widow of Maurus Suney, Irish gentleman; she does not state where he served. Twenty florins. No. 27. Elena [Barry], Leonor, Maria, and Brigida Geraldin, orphans of William Geraldine, pensioner in the army. Twenty florins. No. 28. Cecilia Barry, Irish widow of Daniel Barry, pensioner in the Irish



infantry. Twenty florins, No. 31. Cecilia Quely, orphan of Denis Quely, Irish pensioner; and she does not state where.

[c]. In the same general list, in the section entitled: Widows of different sergeants of all nations, occur the Irish names: No. 2. Catalina Baret, widow of Sergeant Nicholas Barry, formerly of the company of Gerald Barry, in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Fourteen florins. No. 3. Juana Barry, widow of Sergeant Thomas de Longueval, formerly of the same company. Fourteen florins. No. 6. Leonor Mahun, widow of Dermot Ruis, sergeant of the company of Captain Thadeus Carty, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Fourteen florins.

[d]. In the section entitled 'Widows of soldiers of different nations': No. 3. Susana, Agnes, and John Colman, children of John Colman, Irish soldier of the regiment of Tyrone; and it is not stated in what company he served. Twelve florins. No. 4. Ana Geraldin, widow of Denis O Quely, formerly soldier of the company of Captain Maurus Mahon, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. No. 22. Catalina ni Loughrian, widow of Bernard Slatenidy, deceased soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. No. 28. Maria Danon, widow of James de Estafor, soldier of the company of Captain Arturo Oneil, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. No. 48. Juan Carty, orphan of Charles Carty, soldier of Eugenio O Niel, of the regiment of Tyrone. Pension not stated.

[e]. In the same *liasse* is another, alphabetical list, containing the Irish names: No. 7. Ana de la Tour, widow of John de Monuilla, Irish soldier of the company of Captain Techvasar, of the regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Catalina ni Haghvien, widow of Thomas O Ceni, soldier of the company of Captain Barry, in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Catalina di Logan, widow of Obrun Oslatter, soldier of Edmond Mora, in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Doña Cecilia Carty, orphan of Denis Carty, pensioner of his Majesty with thirty reales. Twenty florins. She does not state where he served or in what regiment. Doña Cecilia de Villaviciosa, widow of Captain Richard de la Hoit, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twenty five florins. Elena ni Donel, widow of Walter Devrus, soldier of the company of Dermot Osuleban, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Elena ni Wahun, widow of Daniel Clanchi, soldier of Don Thadeus Osuleban, in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Eylina Barry, widow of Sergeant Eugenio Vildan, soldier of the company of Captain Gerard Barry, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Elisabeth Melen, widow of Manis mac ny Urchun, soldier of the company of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins.

[f]. Doña Elena Carti, daughter of the heir of the Earl of Clancarty, the brother of Thadeus Carti; to the account of her



brother's pay. Twenty five florins. Doña Juana y Maria Shaghiinishy, Irish orphans. Twenty florins. Juana ni Al, widow of Daniel Omeghan, soldier of the company of Captain Geraldo Barry, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Juan ni Soyin, orphan of Daniel Soyin, soldier of the company of Captain James Garland, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Juana ni Donel, widow of Dominick Vitte, soldier of Captain Maurus Mahon, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Juana Van de Velde, widow of William Halpun, soldier of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins.

[g]. Doña Isabel Barry, widow of William Geraldin, pensioner of the company of Captain William Barret, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twenty florins. Leonora Macsuyin, widow of Sergeant William Nachlen, soldier of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Morina Mahon, widow of Hugo Schaghinisch, pensioner in the Irish infantry; does not state in which company or regiment he served. Twenty florins. Crossed out, and added: Find out whence she receives her allowance.

[h]. Margarita Omor, orphan of Captain Edmond Omor, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twenty florins. Manish Massi, orphan of John Massi, formerly adjutant of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twenty florins. Onor Niteyge, widow of Mortagh Obely, soldier of Captain Constantine O Neill, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Peter Aya, orphan of the late adjutant Richard Aye, who held that commission in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Eighteen florins.

[i]. In a third list, with the preceding and probably of the same date: Daniel Galchor, orphan of Hugo Galcor, campaign-captain of the regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone. Fourteen florins. Elena ni Cosun, widow of Captain James Garland, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Juan Eva, daughter of the late John Eva, soldier of the company of Captain Thomas Preston, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Catalina, Onora, and Elena Carti, orphans of Denis Carti, soldier of the company of Captain Daniel Omahon, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Ana ni Considin, widow of Donah Helly, Irish soldier; does not state in which company or regiment her husband served. Twelve florins. With the annotation: This will be known when the payment is made.

[j]. Ana ni Vadin, widow of Ferdinand Mac Donogh; does not state in which company or regiment her husband served. This will be known when payment is made. Twelve florins. Juana Vicam, widow of Quadrix Omulrian, soldier of the company of Captain Thadeus Osuleban, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. The orphans of Cornelius Obruin, soldier of the company of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Leonora ni Niel,



orphan of Rodrigo O Niell; does not state the company in which her father served, or the regiment. This will be made known when payment is made. Twelve florins. Susana Oquely, widow of Cornelius Oquely; does not state where her husband served; this will be made known when payment is made. Twelve florins. Cecilia Quelly, daughter of Ana Madin, to the account of the pension of her mother on the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; the source will be made known when payment is made. Twelve florins. Juana and Catalina Geraldin, orphans of John Geraldin, captain in the regiment of Colonel Stanley. Twenty five florins.

[k]. Anthony Mark Onel, orphan of Mark Onel, Irish soldier; does not state where his father served; is greatly recommended by Father Bouet. Twelve florins. Maria ni Crah, orphan of Oliver Macraha, soldier of the company of Captain Gerald Barry, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Leonora Condon, orphan of William Condon, soldier of the company of Captain Gerald Barry, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Cicilia de la Hoyde, widow of Captain Richard de la Hoit, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. Twenty five florins. Eylin Nenevuin, widow of Molmory Macsone, soldier of the company of Captain Nielan Obuyle, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. Twelve florins. Thomas Holman, orphan of John Holman, soldier of the company of Captain Gerald Barry, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Elis and Leonora Manag, orphans of Walter Manag, soldier of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyde, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. Twelve florins. Leonora Molochan, widow of Ensign Daniel Greg, soldier of the company of Captain Nelan Obuil, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. Twelve florins. AJ., carton 1973, liasse 1974.

- 1344.** 1635. Jan. 18. The Earl of Tyrconnell to Don Ferdinand. Represents that Philip IV by letters of 24 Sept. 1624, June 1625, and January 1631, of which he encloses copies, was pleased to grant him a million maravedis, to be paid monthly in proportional amounts. Although the Marquis of Aytona had issued the necessary order, it had not so far been carried out, and consequently the Earl is deeply in debt, and is in the direst need. He prays that he may be paid the allowance every month, together with the 150 crowns which he receives from his regiment.\* EGC., reg. 212, fol. 425.
- 1345.** 1635. Feb. 15. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. He has received the letter of his Majesty in which he orders that on no account is the Irish regiment of Oneill to be disbanded as part of the general reduction of the forces being carried out at present. EGC., reg. 212, fol. 160.
- 1346.** 1635. Feb. 15. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. In a letter of 15 January last year your Majesty was pleased to send me a memorial concerning the designs of the French to get the Irish



who are serving in the army to abandon your Majesty's service and their attachment to the Crown; ordering me, upon receipt of that letter to see that steps were taken to avert the harm which could result from this, and to see that the Earl of Tyrone and the Earl of Tyrconnell enjoy all becoming esteem, and are afforded the greatest possible satisfaction, and that the attachment of the nation be made secure through them. The Earls do actually receive good attention here, and in future shall receive even greater. The courier should be sought out diligently, and it shall be known with whom he has spoken, so that whoever deserves punishment may receive it; and word will be had with the Earl of Tyrone, so that he may confirm them in devotion to your Majesty and to your service.<sup>1</sup> EGC., reg. 212, fol. 160.

1347.

1635. Mar. 5. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. Theobald Stapleton, an Irish priest who is at this Court, has told me how greatly he wishes to go over to England, with the intention of trying to get permission to say Mass there publicly, and wear ecclesiastical dress without being in any way persecuted; and in order that he may succeed in this purpose he has asked me to write to you to help him, and to take whatever steps seem to you necessary for this with the Queen and other people you may judge wise. To this I have willingly assented, and also to instruct you, as I hereby do, that as his request is so greatly to the service of God and the consolation of the Catholics of that Kingdom, you advance his purpose in every way possible, and further it by your efforts with those you think could facilitate it. EGC., reg. 369, fol. 75.

1348.

1635. Mar. 16. London. Juan de Nocolalde to Don Ferdinand. I was amused by the arrival of one of the ports of two servants of Count de Umanes, who wrote to me that they had been referred to me, and brought dispatches for me. They arrived four months after they had taken ship at San Sebastian, having wasted one month after they had landed at London, and had made great noise that they came to prepare house and the rest. They are two Irish Franciscan friars. It might have cost them dearly, for it is well known who they are, and they could have taken no better means of making themselves known to everyone within three days of their arrival. And all that these servants bring is to cause this anxious deception, in order to remain concealed. I see by it that Count de Umanes will be tardy. EGC., reg. 364, fol. 280.

1349.

1635. Mar. 16. London. Juan de Nocolalde to Martin de Arpe. There arrived here during these days an Irish Catholic gentleman, the Earl of Westmeath, who enjoys great authority in that kingdom. He came to see me, and showed himself greatly devoted to the service of our lord the King and of his Highness. He is on his way to fulfil a vow to our Lady of Loreto, on account



of his failing sight, which he hopes to recover by this act of devotion. He asked permission of the King to leave the kingdom, and told him of the pilgrimage on which he was going, and made no evasion; and though the King laughed at him, he gave him the permission, and I have given him letters of commendation for Milan, Rome, and Naples, as he wishes to go to all these places in the hope of what he will be able to see. He brought from Ireland two greyhounds, destined as a present for his Highness, to be sent from Calais, and he asked me what procedure he should observe in the presentation of them, and begged me to give him letters. It seemed to me better to excuse him from this trouble, and to accept the dogs here. He agreed to this, and sent them immediately, and I kept them until there was an opportunity of sending them to Dunkirk; and when a ship was leaving, I sent them to Inspector Alonso de Uribarri, with orders to forward them to you, as I was not able to write this letter at the time. I think it will be ready to go with the dogs, which are now on the way. The bigger one, with the black ear and eye, is accustomed to sleep in the anticamera and guard it, and lets no one in whom he does not know, I am sending with him from here a black dog for the Father confessor . . . Upon his return from Italy, the Earl will go to Flanders and visit his Highness, and present himself. He has with him a Jesuit priest, a religious man and of good parts. You will be informed of this in good time, on account of the honour of which this gentleman is deserving from his Highness by reason of his attachment to him. He told me moreover that he has an unusual kind of harp to present to his Highness, as he has heard that he likes music. He left instructions that it should be given to me after it had been put in order and tuned; so when they deliver it to me I will send it. And this is all I have to say in this letter, and may God keep you as I desire. EGC., reg. 364, fol. 281.

1350.

1635. Apr. 7. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. The Earl of Tyrconnell has represented that your Majesty has made him a grant of one million maravedis annually, and that he is to enjoy this grant notwithstanding any order to the contrary, and is to be paid from the secret funds. There are due to him 26,280 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, and he begs me that together with his pay of 150 crowns monthly he may be paid what is due to him from this grant, for which he has received various letters from your Majesty and from the late Archduchess my aunt. On account of the good and satisfactory service of the Earl, I have thought well to represent to your Majesty the amount due to him of the grants you made to him, that you may be pleased to order whatever you may deem proper; and in the meantime I have ordered that he is to be paid 300 crowns on account. EGC., reg. 212, fol. 423.

1351.

1635. Apr. 5. London. Juan de Neolalde to Don Ferdinand. Colonel Thomas Preston has just arrived from Ireland after



recruiting men for his regiment. He has received many favours from the Lord Deputy. He has asked me to write this letter that he may be rewarded by your Highness for his good services. He has disposed of the commissions he took with him, but since then he has met two men who are willing each to raise a company and bring it to Dunkirk; and he has promised them commissions, and begs his Highness to grant the favour to them.\* EGC., reg. 365, fol. 3.

**1352.** 1635. Apr. 13. London. Juan de Nocolalde to Don Ferdinand. Preston is now in Flanders with his recruits. The Irish Lord Deputy has been displeased to hear that some Irishmen are entering the service of France, and he has demanded that the Captains, and also the masters of the ships who take the men over to Flanders, should give a warrant that they would do this, and that they would not go to France or touch a French port. Nocolalde himself has not been able to make the Lord Deputy any fitting present in return for his friendship. On a former occasion he had represented to his Majesty that it would be fitting to present the Lord Deputy with a good tapestry, of the value of over 2,000 crowns, and two years ago his Majesty had written to the Infanta to send it at once; but she did not do so. Preston now reports that the Lord Deputy had told him that he would ask de Nocolalde to have tapestries of the value of two thousand crowns bought for him, whereas formerly for twice as many men he received only five thousand, "which I paid him; to the Major, Patrick Daniel, also to his Colonel, Eugenio O'Neill, four thousand were paid when he was here; and I believe Preston gave nothing to the major. And in this manner these colonels profit by this, and retain the money." EGC., reg. 365, fol. 9.

**1353.** 1635. Apr. 19. Brussels. Martin de Arpe de Juan de Nocolalde. James Nugent, an Irish gentleman, has offered to raise an Irish regiment at his own cost, and bring the men to Dunkirk. His Highness has ordered me to inform you, so that when Nugent shall have done as he promises, you may give him one of the commissions, and be of help to him in case his men are driven into an [English] port. EGC., reg. 265, fol. 19.

**1354.** 1635. June 29. London. Juan de Nocolalde to Martin de Arpe. A certain Gerald Barri, an Irish gentleman, has had recourse to his Highness about an Irish gentleman who was willing to raise a regiment of 2,000 men and land them at Dunkirk at his own expense. They spoke to me about it some time ago, and an Irish soldier has come here and told me that his Highness had answered him that the King of England had closed the ports, to prevent the recruiting of men from his kingdom. They say they were promised commissions when they would get permission for the regiment, and that they have transported the men. They asked my help, and I promised to report the matter to his Highness. You may put them off until next year, as the levy could not be



carried out for this year, and would be only a cause of great expenditure. The soldier told me that 400 men are ready to embark at Dunkirk. EGC., reg. 365, fol. 137.

1355.

1635. July 6. London. Juan de Nocolalde to de Arpe. In his last letter de Nocolalde had reported the efforts of Gerald Barry and others to secure a levy of 2,000 Irishmen. By this courier he has received a letter from Patrick Daniel, major of the regiment of Eugenio O'Neill, of the same nation, who is now in Flanders under the command of Count de la Fontana. He reports that he had been in Ireland during the last recruitings, which were carried out in accordance with the orders I gave him. He got on well, and recruited men at small cost. When he came back here, he proposed to me that he should take command of the first regiment which would be recruited in Ireland, and that it should be granted to him. Moreover he told me that he had heard of the proposals made by others about regiments, and if any proposal is to be accepted it should be his, as he has served for thirty five years in Flanders, beginning as an ordinary soldier, and being now a major. He has recently received letters from Ireland, from people he had engaged in the hope that they would recruit companies. There are fourteen of them, and their one hope is that this offer may be accepted of them, to enable recruiting to be carried out. I believe that to judge by the levies which this lieutenant-colonel has already arranged, it may be hoped that everything else will be alright; and I have thought it well to say this, as when there will be question again of a levy from this nation, either of a regiment or of recruits, no one will carry it out at such small cost as Don Patrick. EGC., reg. 365, fol. 152.

1356.

1635. July 28. Diest. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. In a letter of 2 June your Majesty commands me that to help affairs in Brazil I should secure the recruiting of at least 2,000 men in these countries, and make every effort to raise an even greater number, adding some Walloons and as many Irishmen as can be got, putting them along with the Walloons as can be best arranged. Letters were dispatched about this, and I advised your Majesty as to how these men could best be transported; that they would need some ships armed with artillery; of how many ships could be disposed of for this purpose; and of the time when they could arrive at Lisbon. At present the companies of Walloons are being recruited, that is to say those companies which I ordered should be recruited to meet these difficulties; but for want of money there is some delay, and the 2,000 men ordered by your Majesty will be sent off from here at the end of September, as also the Earl of Tyrone with his regiment, which can be reconstituted out there, and is made up of the best men of the nation. As regards the ships and the artillery, Councillor Gavilleros has been advised to send information of what he can do, and give an



account to your Majesty, enclosing his answer. EGC., reg. 213, fol. 29.

**1357.** 1635. Aug. 13. London. Juan de Neocolalde to Don Ferdinand. He has received a dispatch from his Majesty whereby he is ordered to procure a large levy of Irish soldiers for the fleet which is being prepared for the recovery of Pernambuco. His Majesty has ordered the necessary money to be sent to him from Portugal. It will be as easy for him to get the levy as to get the money from Portugal, for this will be never. When it is easy to get a levy there are no Irishmen to carry it through, men of military experience, or experience of the sea. It would be better to send an Irish regiment from Flanders to Spain, and recruit a new regiment for Flanders. Perhaps his Highness will accept the regiment of 2,000 men which has been offered, or allow Patrick Daniel to go to London, in order that he may be sent to Ireland. He hopes that the Lord Deputy, upon whom everything depends, will give his consent. If a new levy is to be carried out, money should be sent for it. All Brasil will be lost before the money comes from Portugal.\* Excerpt. EGC., reg. 365, fol. 194.

**1358.** 1635. Nov. 13. London. Juan de Neocolalde to Don Ferdinand. He wrote on 9 June last about the proposals for an Irish regiment to be raised for an Irish gentleman, John Barri of Lizcarul. He had always put them off, and had told them that it would be time enough at the beginning of winter, for the coming year. "Barri himself has now approached me, and has greatly insisted, and at his last visit he gave me a memorial, which I offered to send to you. If there is to be a levy of this nation, no one can carry it through better than he."

**1359.** Enclosed: The memorial of John Barri of Liscarul, Irish gentleman, for his Excellency the Spanish ambassador in which he begs him to do him the favour to write in his behalf for the speedy dispatch of his commission as colonel, in conformity with the following: He is actuated exclusively by zeal for his Majesty's service, as he has inherited sufficient property to be able to live honourably, as everyone is aware. Two of his brothers, lead by the same zeal, had embarked for Flanders, each with his own company, but they perished on the English coast, and he himself lost with them £400 sterling. In spite of these losses he has maintained his courage, and has sent two other relatives of his own to Flanders, with two companies, where they are still serving on the condition that they will be allowed to join his regiment, and they await his arrival expectantly. If this commission is granted to him, probably most of his countrymen who at present are serving in France and elsewhere will come to the service of his Majesty, as they only serve elsewhere for want of a colonel of their own province. For the last twelve months he has maintained five companies at great cost, while awaiting his commission. He has great facilities for getting fresh recruits from Ireland every



year, as his estate is in that part of Ireland which is near Spain and Flanders, and he is in good favour with those in power. EGC., reg. 365, fol. 290-92.

- 1360.** 1636. Jan. 2. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Commends to his Majesty's favour the Baron of Glenaomallun and Curchy, on whose behalf the Infanta Isabella wrote several letters; so far nothing has been done to assist him. EGC., reg. 214. fol. 3.
- 1361.** 1636. Jan. 25. Brussels. Martin de Arpe to Juan de Necolalde. His Highness has seen what you wrote on 29 June concerning John Barri, and also the enclosed memorial of 15 November, and he has accepted. He wishes that the captains chosen for the regiment should be men of valour and experience. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 49.
- 1362.** 1636. Feb. 22. London. Juan de Necolalde to Martin de Arpe. "Concerning the troops from Ireland, the concession which I found so difficult to negotiate was that the journey should be by the most direct route, without touching England. Two new regiments, and recruits for the others, a matter of 7,000 men, passed through in this manner, and some who were dismissed for their wantonness and barbarity, as they observed no discipline, and had come to England, were arrested and put to death, and were a cause of ill-feeling, as also were those who on account of storms and accidents at sea took refuge in English ports. It is well known that it would be wiser for them to pass through the Channel, but as the cost must be by agreement and order, it would be double if the men were to pass through England, from one end of the country to the other, with the tumult and many excesses which are usual on such journeys. The men are suffered here badly, and there is a great readiness to hang people, especially Irishmen, and more especially still those who are going to join our service. So you will represent the matter to his Highness, that the same methods may be followed as hitherto, and that in case these levies are to be negotiated for, a suitable person be sent to Ireland, and no money be given to the colonels or captains, as it would be badly used, and lost. I wish greatly to have the tapestry for the Lord Deputy, as the best way to recruit is to keep him in humour. I do not know how he stands at present, as we have failed him. We used to correspond frequently, both in a friendly way and in the ordinary course, but now he does not write at all. John Barri, who has dealt about the recruiting of a regiment, comes to no agreement; neither do I come to any agreement with him, for he would like to bite his thumbs and spend little or nothing. He is more deserving of this than of the honour of a regiment. What makes him changeable and presumptuous is that a certain Gerald Barry, who takes a share in the business here, has written to him that something like 14,000 crowns were paid for the recruiting of the four regiments. So they too are looking for



money, and when it is so scarce we must needs avoid in every way all possible waste of it." EGC., reg. 366, fol. 105.

- 1363.** 1636. Feb. 25. Brussels. Commission to John Barry, Irish gentleman, as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be newly recruited, and to consist of fifteen companies. EG., reg. 36, fol. 12v.
- 1364.** 1636. Feb. 27. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Denis Odriscol, for four months. EG., reg. 36, fol. 9v.
- 1365.** 1636. Feb. 27. Brussels. Commission to Captain Gerald Barry, of his Majesty's Council of War in Flanders, as major of the regiment of Colonel John Barri; has served his Majesty for thirty five years, the first four years in the royal fleet, and thirty one years in these States, as pensioner, ensign, and adjutant of a regiment of Irish infantry; has fought well on all occasions on land and at sea, and having been wounded, received a special grant of four crowns monthly. EG., reg. 36, fol. 13.
- 1366.** 1636. Mar. 1. Brussels. Fourteen blank commissions for companies of Irish infantry to be newly recruited. EG., reg. 36, fol. 13v.
- 1367.** 1636. Mar. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Oliver Geraldin, soldier of the company of Captain Gaspar Geraldine, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit for his company. EG., reg. 36, fol. 4.
- 1368.** 1636. Mar. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Sergeant Gelasius Moclan, of the company of Captain Maurice Macdonel, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 36, fol. 4.
- 1369.** 1636. Mar. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Captain Eugenio Omulrian, Ensign Daniel Omulrian, of the company of Captain Eugenio Omulrian, Captain Richard Bulter, Captain John Macdonille, Captain Daniel Odaly, Ensign Edmond Walsh of the company of Captain de la Hoyde, Captain Arturo Obruén, and Captain Hugh Obruén; all of the regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit men for their companies. EG., reg. 36, fol. 4v.
- 1370.** 1636. Mar. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business to his own advancement, to Florence Carthi, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 36, fol. 5v.
- 1371.** 1636. Mar. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Ensign John Russel, of the company of Captain James Pouer, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 36, fol. 5v.
- 1372.** 1636. Mar. 3. Brussels. Orders to confirm the nomination as ensign of James Geraldin, of the company of Captain Patrick Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; appointed by his captain.\* EG., reg. 36, fol. 9.
- 1373.** 1636. Mar. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Patrick Flamengo, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill: to recruit. EG., reg. 36, fol. 6v.



- 1374.** 1636. Mar. 7. Brussels. Commission to Adjutant Odaly, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, as captain of the vacant company of Captain Richard Nugent; has served in these parts for sixteen years, as ensign and adjutant, and distinguished himself at the siege of Berg-op-Zoom and at the siege of Breda. EG., reg. 36, fol. 63v.
- 1375.** 1636. Mar. 7. Brussels. Martin de Arpe to Juan de Necolalde. Ensign Sud Wel, of the company of Captain James Barri, has received licence to go to Ireland to recruit 120 men to serve with the said company, in the regiment of Colonel John Barry. He is to be sent a commission when he will have brought 120 men to Dunkirk. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 125.
- 1376.** 1636. Mar. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Ensign Maurice Roche, of the company of Captain James Preston, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; on business to his own advancement. EG., reg. 36, fol. 15v.
- 1377.** 1636. Mar. 9. Brussels. Grant of a place of the value of four crowns monthly, in the garrison of Notre Dame de Hal, to Eugenio Ferral, invalided soldier of the company of Captain Walter Dalton, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 36, fol. 20v.
- 1378.** 1636. Mar. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Captain Richard Plunquet, of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to recruit men for his company. EG., reg. 36, fol. 15.
- 1379.** 1636. Mar. 12. Brussels. Orders to confirm the nomination of Raymund de Burgo, by his captain, as ensign of the company of Lorraine infantry of Captain Henri Sair Baussan de Mores. EG., reg. 36, fol. 35.
- 1380.** 1636. Mar. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Ensign Cornelius Osullivan, of the company of Captain Dermot Osullivan, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; on business to his own advancement. EG., reg. 36, fol. 20v.
- 1381.** 1636. Mar. 14. Brussels. Martin de Arpe to Juan de Necolalde. Encloses thirteen commissions for the levy of the Irish regiment of Colonel John Barri, including the commission for the colonel himself, and for two other companies which have been recruited already and are serving in Flanders, and are to be drafted into another regiment as soon as this will have been recruited. There will be thirteen companies in all. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 138v.
- 1382.** 1636. Mar. 21. London. Juan de Necolalde to Martin de Arpe. Has received the commission for the Irish regiment of Colonel John Barri, with whom however there are difficulties caused by Gerald Barry. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 158v.
- 1383.** 1636. Mar. 28. London. Juan de Necolalde to Martin de Arpe. As regards the Irish levy, Major Thomas Preston has been sent to Ireland. The tapestries have come, and are at the customs-house. They will be brought here to morrow. Although the Irish captains who are coming over to recruit belong to other regiments,



they appear to be under the command of the lieutenant-colonel, to whom I have given instructions how to act, and 2,000 crowns in letters upon Dublin, paid on account from the 3,700 crowns and more allotted to his regiment out of the 15,000 crowns assigned for the four regiments. The negociations with John Barri have not been successful, owing to Gerald Barri. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 160.

- 1384.** 1636. Mar. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Doctor Maurice Ultano. EG., reg. 36, fol. 40.
- 1385.** 1636. Apr. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Thomas Plunqueto, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit men for his company. EG., reg. 36, fol. 31.
- 1386.** 1636. Apr. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Ensign Anthony Grugan, Ensign Henry Oneill, and Sergeant Francis Vos; to recruit men for their companies; and similar licences, dated 29 March and 30 March respectively, to Ensign Charles Huibeg and Captain Maurice Macdonell. EG., reg. 36, fol. 31.
- 1387.** 1636. Apr. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Nicholas de Schea, senior chaplain of the garrison of Dunkirk; certain special business requires his presence.\* EG., reg. 36, fol. 38v.
- 1388.** 1636. Apr. 1. Brussels. Orders to increase by one crown monthly the special grant made to John Bremigam, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these parts for 28 years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 43.
- 1389.** 1636. Apr. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for two months, to Ensign James Gefrey, of the company of Captain Lawrence Gefrey, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit men for his company; similar licence for three months to Captain Nelan Obuil, and for two months to Sergeant Daniel Obragan and Sergeant John Odugan, of the same regiment, for the same purpose. EG., reg. 36, fol. 46v.
- 1390.** 1636. Apr. 4. Brussels. Orders to increase by one crown monthly the special grant made to John Colan, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these parts for thirty years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 39.
- 1391.** 1636. Apr. 6. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to Robert O Curque, of the company of Captain Richard Butler, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these States for twenty nine years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 48.
- 1392.** 1636. Apr. 7. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Dermot Odriscol, of the company of Captain Hugo Obrin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; on business to his own advancement. EG., reg. 36, fol. 44.
- 1393.** 1636. Apr. 7. Commission to Captain Hugo Oneill as adjutant to the major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, with pay of 25 crowns monthly; has served in these States for fourteen years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 46v.



1394. 1636. Apr. 7. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly in the Spanish infantry to Captain Edward Eustace, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 35, fol. 20.
1395. 1636. Apr. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for two months, to Captain Robert Flaminghe, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit men for his company. EG., reg. 36, fol. 51.
1396. 1636. Apr. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for two months, to Captain Oliver Geraldino, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to recruit for his company. EG., reg. 36, fol. 51.
1397. 1636. Apr. 15. Brussels. Licence for two months to Alexander Macdonelle, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to recruit a company of Scots infantry for which he has been given the commission of captain. EG., reg. 36, fol. 51.
1398. 1636. Apr. 17. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pay of James Hallaghan and Bernard Doroghey from the company of Captain Eugenio Mulrian, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, to the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyde of the same regiment, in garrison at Ostend. EG., reg. 36, fol. 56.
1399. 1636. Apr. 20. Brussels. Licence for Germany to Captain James Cavanach, pensioner in the company of Captain Hugo Obrin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 36, fol. 65v.
1400. 1636. Apr. 22. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to John Barret, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these States for thirty years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 60.
1401. 1636. Apr. 22. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to William Juerez, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these parts for thirty years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 60.
1402. 1636. Apr. 24. Licence for Spain to Captain Oliver Dalton, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Francisco Zapata. EG., reg. 36, fol. 63v.
1403. 1636. April —. Request of Doña Isabella Barry, and her daughters Leonora, Maria and Brigida Geraldin, for the payment of the 250 florins of their pension which was due to them in November 1635. C.F., liasse 185.
1404. 1636. Apr. 29. Brussels. Commission to Ottavio Lemmens to be judge advocate of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Thomas Preston. CPE., carton 10.
1405. 1636. Apr. 30. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. The earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell serve your Majesty in the army here with two regiments of Irish infantry, with which, although what is necessary for recruiting is paid out to them every year, there can be at present only 800 men. As this is greatly to the prejudice of your Majesty's service, I represent that it would be better to accomodate these gentlemen with other posts, as may seem well to your Majesty, and to draft into those regiments, which are of old standing and have seen much service, the other



men of that nation. They have many good colonels, soldiers of fortune, who will see to their maintenance. EGC., reg. 214, fol. 275.

- 1406.** 1636. Apr. —. Petition of Isabella Barry and her daughters Leonora, Mary and Brigid Geraldine, for the 280 florins of their pension which were due to them in November 1635. CP., liasse 185.
- 1407.** 1636. May 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Daniel Oglissan, of the company of Captain John Flemine, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; lost his right arm at the fortress of Philipina, and is no longer able to serve. EG., reg. 36, fol. 69v.
- 1408.** 1636. May 21. Brussels. Commission to Neil Ogaulcur as quarter-master-sergeant of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 36, fol. 101v.
- 1409.** 1636. May 26. Brussels. Commission to Adjutant John Jordan as captain of the company of Irish infantry, pikemen, hitherto under the command of Captain Maurice Macdonielle in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; has served for forty years as sergeant, ensign, and adjutant. EG., reg. 36, fol. 90v.
- 1410.** 1636. May 26. London. Juan de Necolalde to Don Ferdinand. The arrival here of the Irish officers, in great numbers and with great noise, has caused the King to order the Lord Deputy of Ireland not to permit men to leave the kingdom. As de Necolalde was not aware of this, he had sent to Ireland Richard Plunquet, major to Colonel Preston, with letters to the Lord Deputy. Upon Plunquet's arrival the Lord Deputy had informed him of the impossibility of recruiting, but said that he himself would soon be coming to London, where he would inform Necolalde personally and try to obtain the required licence. As the Irish officers had been in need of help, Necolalde had given 400 crowns to Captain Nelant Oboill, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, who is acting as officer in command. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 266.
- 1411.** 1636. May 29. Juan de Necolalde to Francisco de Galarreta. There is no possibility of going forward with the Irish recruiting, on account of the King's orders that no recruits are to be allowed out of the country. Necolalde himself believes that the reason was the number of Irish officers who came over, and the stir they made, lead to this by Esteban de Gamarra, who assured them that they had only to come; "with what foundation I do not know, and when he acted in this manner, I warned Martin de Arpe not to permit those officers to come." EGC., reg. 366, fol. 274.
- 1412.** 1636. May 29. London. Juan de Necolalde to Don Ferdinand. Repeats verbally his letter of 26 May, and adds that he had given 240 crowns to Patrick Fitzgerald, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, as Fitzgerald was in command of the officers of that regiment and had charge of the money. EGC., reg. 366, fol. 276.



- 1413.** 1636. May 30. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant held by Dermot Omologan as a musketeer in the disbanded company of Captain Gaspar Geraldin, to the company commanded by the same captain at present. EG., reg. 36, fol. 100v.
- 1414.** 1636. June 4. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Julius Connryo; to serve as doctor to the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 36, fol. 102v.
- 1415.** 1636. June 4. Brussels. Orders to continue the payment of the pension of Captain Walter Dalton in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Francisco Zapata; suspended by the licence given him for Spain on 24 Apr. last. EG., reg. 36, fol. 104v.
- 1416.** 1636. June 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months to Ensign Robert Voludeston, of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 36, fol. 110.
- 1417.** 1636. June 19. Brussels. Commission to Walter Shea as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 36, fol. 132.
- 1418.** 1636. June 22. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Stephen de la Hoyd, of the company of his father Captain Walter de la Hoyd. EG., reg. 36, fol. 123v.
- 1419.** 1636. June 27. Brussels. Commission to Terence Ogalacur as captain of the company of the late Charles Odali, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; has served in these parts for fifteen years. EG., reg. 36, fol. 133.
- 1420.** 1636. June 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Edmond Oracthelli, of the company of Captain Daniel Odali, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; is wounded in both legs and unable for further service. EG., reg. 36, fol. 136v.
- 1421.** 1636. July 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Bernard Macdiermot, of a company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; is without pay, as his company has been disbanded; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 36, fol. 134v.
- 1422.** 1636. July 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Walter Cantor, captain of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 36, fol. 144.
- 1423.** 1636. July 5. Mons. Commission to Doctor René le Roux as judge-advocate of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 35, fol. 2.
- 1424.** 1636. July 24. Cambrai, Orders to continue the pay of Sergeant Daniel Obragan, of the company of Captain Nelan Obuil, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; suspended by a licence for Spain<sup>1</sup> granted to him on 1 April last. EG., reg. 35, fol. 12.
- 1425.** 1636. July 24. Cambrai. Orders to continue payment of the grant to Captain James Dillon in the company of Captain James

<sup>1</sup>But see no. 1389 above, where the licence is for Ireland.



- Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; payment suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 20 January last. EG., reg. 35, fol. 19.
- 1426.** 1636. July 25. Cambrai. Commission to Captain Raymond Geraldin as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be newly recruited; in consideration of his services in these parts for some years, and of his having formerly raised a regiment of Irish infantry, at his own cost. EG., reg. 35, fol. 20v.
- 1427.** 1636. July 31. Cambrai. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Ensign Peter Geraldin, now promoted to be adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston in the place of Michael Bathe, deceased. EG., reg. 35, fol. 12v.
- 1428.** 1636. July 31. Cambrai. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Bartholomew de San Lorenzo, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to serve with the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 35, fol. 13.
- 1429.** 1636. Aug. 10. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Constantine Duffy; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of German infantry of Colonel Octavio Guasco. EG., reg. 35, fol. 64v.
- 1430.** 1636. Aug. 10. Cambrai. Pay of twenty crowns monthly to Edmond Okenedy; to serve as head chaplain to the regiment of German infantry of Colonel Octavio Guasco. EG., reg. 35, fol. 65.
- 1431.** 1636. Aug. 15. Cambrai. Orders to confirm the appointment of Terence Maguier by his captain, Henry Oneill, as ensign of the company, which belongs to the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 36, fol. 146v.
- 1432.** 1636. Aug. 16. Cambrai. Commission to Charles Roque, ensign of the company of Captain Comerfort, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston, as adjutant to the major of the regiment, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 35, fol. 34.
- 1433.** 1636. Aug. 16. Cambrai. Commission to ensign Patrick Taylor as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; has served in these parts for ten years; vacancy due to the death of Captain Thomas Talbot; and orders on the same date for the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the newly raised company of Captain Remondo Gerardin, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 35, fol. 35v., 38.
- 1434.** 1636. Aug. 20. Cambrai. Commission to Bonaventure de la Vihe as captain of a company of Irish infantry, pikemen, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, vacant by the death of Captain Edmond Butler; has served in these parts for eleven years, the first six as official and commissary of the military musters, in the department of Finances, and the rest as adjutant to the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; and orders on the same date to resume the payment of Captain James Barry, which had been suspended by the licence he received on 16 February for three months, to recruit men for his company. EG., reg. 35, fol. 57v. and fol. 140v.



- 1435.** 1636. Aug. 25. Cambrai. Orders to deduct 1,600 florins from the pay due to the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniell, and to pay that amount to Livinus van de Male, living in the village of Destledonc in Flanders, in compensation for the burning of a house, farm, and stock and horses, during the year just past, by the soldiers of that regiment. As the delinquents have not been discovered after enquiry, the auditor-general of the army, by sentence of 4 March, has condemned the whole regiment to pay 1,600 florins. EG., reg. 35, fol. 45v.
- 1436.** 1636. Sept. 8. Cambrai. Commission to Edmond de Burgo as adjutant to the major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, in succession to Bonaventure de la Biche, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly; has served for twenty eight years in these parts, as sergeant and ensign.  
On the same date, commission to Arturo Macmureitz as drum-major of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, the last occupant of the post having died. EG., reg. 35, fol. 63v and 81v.
- 1437.** 1636. Sept. 8. Cambrai. Special grant of three crowns monthly to Christoval Flores; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 35, fol. 78v.
- 1438.** 1636. Sept. 10. Cambrai. Orders to resume payment of the place and special grant of Ensign Thomas Queligot, of the company of Captain Daniel Odaly, which had been suspended by the licence for Ireland for three months granted to him on 12 Feb. last. EG., reg. 35, fol. 83.
- 1439.** 1636. Oct. 6. Arras. Commission to Robert Pordi, soldier of the company of Captain Patrick Walecio, as quartermaster sergeant of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill.\* EG., reg. 35, fol. 96v.
- 1440.** 1636. Oct. 12. Arras. Commission to Ensign Carlos Oneill as captain of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone vacant by the death of Captain Antony Mulrian; has served in these parts for fifteen years, and distinguished himself at the siege and capture of Breda, at the fortification of Sanvliet, at the entry into the island of Veluwe, and at the capture and fortification of the island of Stevensweert. EG., reg. 35, fol. 117.
- 1441.** 1636. Oct. 23. Brussels. Orders to resume the payment of Ensign Maurice Roche, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain James Preston; payment had been suspended when he went to Ireland. EG., reg. 35, fol. 119v.
- 1442.** 1636. Oct. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for four months to Captain Bernard Oneill, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; has been ordered a change of air by the doctor, to enable him to recover from his illness. EG., reg. 35, fol. 118v.
- 1443.** 1636. Nov. 10. Arras. Orders to disband the company of Captain Thadeus Plunquet, and the company of Captain George Car, both of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, on account of the small number of their men. EG., reg. 35, fol. 134.



- 1444.** 1636. Nov. 15. Arras. Orders to disband the following senior officers and their companies belonging to the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston, on account of the small number of their men: The Colonel. Captain Christopher Dungan. Captain Gref Cavanacq. Captain Denis Dier. Captain Richard Plunquet. Captain Robert Carrero. Captain Peter Puer. Captain Thomas Netervel. The men to be sent to the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnel.\* EG., reg. 35, fol. 143v.
- 1445.** 1636. Nov. 21. Brussels. Orders to disband the companies of Captains John Geraldino and Peter Valecio, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniell, on account of the small number of the men; the men to be sent to the other companies of the same regiment. EG., reg. 35, fol. 150v.
- 1446.** 1636. Nov. 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Ensign Christopher Smit, of the company of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to arrange some family affairs. EG., reg. 35, fol. 152.
- 1447.** 1636. Dec. 5. From Essex. Juan de Necolalde to Francisco de Galaretta. I have seen the memorial of John Barri which his Highness ordered should be sent to me, and which is herewith returned. What I can say about it is that over there you cannot imagine the harm done by this Irishman and his agents, with his demands and offers, although I have often disillusioned them, and Barri himself has experienced the results of this, as the King of England has not wished to give us a licence to recruit, even for the old regiments, still less for the new one. The Irish Lord Deputy, who came here a few days ago and spoke with the King, disillusioned Barri, and those who supported him, and myself as well, about the levies, while at the same time approving of the many efforts I had made to obtain them. As for Barri saying he hopes that the King of England will give him permission to go to Flanders with a regiment of 3000 men, and that Barri himself will send some men and companies from England immediately, and that quarters should be assigned him, and that orders should be sent to the Marquis de Fuentes to receive and assist the said regiment, it can be seen what foundation there is for all this, and how tenacious are the efforts of the Irish.\*
- Enclosed: Memorial of Colonel John Barri to Don Ferdinand. Contents as indicated in the letter of de Necolalde. EGC., reg. 367, fol. 139-41.
- 1448.** 1636. Dec. 14. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Thadeus Ruarck, of the Order of St Dominic; to serve as a chaplain of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 15.
- 1449.** 1636. Dec. 16. Brussels. Licence for twenty days to Lieutenant-Colonel Arturo Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 9v.
- 1450.** 1636. Dec. 17. Brussels. Grant of an ordinary place of the value of four crowns monthly in the garrison at Ostend to Patrick Macquenar, of the company of Captain Nelan Obuil, regiment of



the Earl of Tyrconnell; had received a musket charge in the right thigh at the siege of Ostend. EG., reg. 37, fol. 16v.

- 1451.** 1636. Dec. 18. Brussels. Commission to Adjutant Daniel Carti, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, as captain of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone vacant by the death of Captain James Barri; has served his Majesty in these parts for twenty five years, and distinguished himself especially at the siege and capture of Breda, the fortification of the island of Santvliet and of its littoral, in the campaign of the Palatinate, the capture of the towns of Querbucq, Halsen, and Speier, and in all the other fighting which has taken place since. EG., reg. 37, fol. 45.
- 1452.** 1636. Dec. 20. Brussels. Orders to pay the Irish Dominicans at Louvain the forty crowns monthly granted them by his Majesty upon the Council of Finances; for two years only, to be reckoned from the date when they last received the said forty crowns. EG., reg. 37, fol. 14v.
- 1453.** 1636. Dec. 23. Brussels. Licence to Colonel the Earl of Tyrone for one month, to enable him to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 5.
- 1454.** 1636. Dec. 26. Brussels. Licence to Captain Denis Osullian Mor of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, for one month; has business to attend to at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 26.
- 1455.** 1636. Dec. 29. From Essex. Juan de Necolalde to Don Ferdinand. With regard to recruits for the four Irish regiments, 15,000 crowns have been sent for this purpose through merchants at Antwerp. de Necolalde had sent Major Plunquet, of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston, to Ireland, to recruit quietly and without commotion. Then more than sixty three officers of the other regiments arrived in London with much noise, so that the French and Dutch went to Cook, the Secretary of State, with their complaints, and as a result the King expressly excluded Ireland in the orders about recruiting. The Irish captains and officers were threatened with imprisonment, and were forbidden to leave England without express licence. de Necolalde had obtained permission for some of them to return to Flanders, and the others obtained the same permission for themselves. He had paid their debts. Plunquet came back unsuccessful and disconsolate, and looking for money. EGC., reg. 367, fol. 151.
- 1456.** 1636. Dec. 29. From Essex. Juan de Necolalde to Francisco de Galaretta. Commends to him Major Richard Plunquet, who has been in London since March about recruits for his regiment; "he is however a very good man, and I commend him to you, that you may show him favour and do him pleasure." EGC., reg. 367, fol. 154.
- 1457.** 1636. Dec. 30. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Edmond Butler, of the disbanded company of Captain



- Raymund Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 26v.
- 1458.** 1636. Dec. 31. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Denis Roque, of the disbanded company of Captain Raymund Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 30.
- 1459.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Francis Rossol, of the disbanded company of Captain Bartholomew de San Lorenzo, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51.
- 1460.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Ferdinand Conon, of the disbanded company of Captain Bernard Magderivote, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51.
- 1461.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Edward Quelly, of the disbanded company of Captain Richard de Burgo, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51v.
- 1462.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant John Bens, of the company of Captain James Foulon, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51v.
- 1463.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Lutere, of the company of Captain Bartholomew de St Lorenzo, disbanded regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51v.
- 1464.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign William Geraldin, of the disbanded company of Captain Foux, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51v.
- 1465.** 1637. Jan. 1. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Melas Eustas, of the disbanded company of Captain Edward Eustas, former regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 51v.
- 1466.** 1637. Jan. 3. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Walter Dalton, pensioner of the company of Spanish infantry of the Count de Fonclara; on business to his advancement. EG., reg. 37, fol. 35.
- 1467.** 1637. Jan. 4. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Francis Vos, of the disbanded company of Captain George Car, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 37, fol. 36.
- 1468.** 1637. Jan. 8. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant James Gar, of the disbanded company of Captain Thomas Plunquet, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 37, fol. 43v.
- 1469.** 1637. Jan. 9. Brussels. Revocation of the orders issued on 15 November last for the disbanding of the companies, among others, of Captains Christopher Dangan and Thomas Netevel, of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 46v.



- 1470.** 1637. Jan. 9. Brussels. Licence for one month to Captain John Bretingham, of a company of Lorraine infantry of Colonel Francisco de Brun; to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 46v.
- 1471.** 1637. Jan. 9. Brussels. Licence for one month to Captain Patrick Geraldin, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 46v.
- 1472.** 1637. Jan. 12. Brussels. Orders to admit the nomination of Edward Butler, of the company of Captain Patrick Valecio, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. as ensign of the company of Captain James Geraldin, for which post Captain Geraldin has nominated him. EG., reg. 37, fol. 50.
- 1473.** 1637. Jan. 12. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to John Maden; to serve as one of the ordinary chaplains of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 59.
- 1474.** 1637. Jan. 12. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to William Roche, of the company of the Earl of Tyrone; has served in these States for thirteen years. EG., reg. 37, fol. 67v.
- 1475.** 1637. Jan. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Captain Felix Obrin, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; on account of the death of his parents he is obliged to go to take over possession of the property he has inherited. EG., reg. 37, fol. 50.
- 1476.** 1637. Jan. 16. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pay and services of Cajetan Calingen, chaplain in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, to the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Pedro de Balcasar. EG., reg. 37, fol. 60v.
- 1477.** 1637. Jan. 21. Brussels. Grant of an ordinary place of the value of four crowns monthly, in the garrison at Termonde, to Stephen Thomas, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; is now infirm and unfit for further service. EG., reg. 37, fol. 116v.
- 1478.** 1637. Jan. 24. Brussels. Licence for twenty days to Ensign Cornelius Odriscol. of the company of Captain Walter de Laoyd, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 72v.
- 1479.** 1637. Jan. 28. Brussels. Licence for one month to Captain James Preston, captain of a company of Irish infantry; to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 79.
- 1480.** 1637. Brussels. The Secretary of Don Ferdinand to Count de Villa Mediana. On behalf of Fr Onofrio de Sant Iago, vicar-provincial of the disalced Carmelites of Ireland, the enclosed petition has been presented to his Highness, and as he waited before giving the letter of introduction, since he knows nothing either of the person concerned or of the things he wishes to speak of, His Highness has therefore ordered me to tell your Excellency to hear him, and send information of the matters he will discuss. An answer in this sense has been given to the person who presented the petition.



- 1481.** Enclosed: Fr Onofrio de Sant Iago, vicar-provincial of the discalced Carmelites of Ireland, to the Cardinal Infante. Beggings a letter to his Majesty's ambassador in England, that he may treat with him of matters of great importance for the service of God and the Spanish Crown. "He is a native of this country, born at St Omer, and by reason both of his zeal and his prudence, you may confide in him." EGC., reg. 380, ff. 216-7.
- 1482.** 1637. Feb. 5. Brussels. Licence for eight days to Ensign David Barri, of the company of Captain Henry Oneill; to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 85v.
- 1483.** 1637. Feb. 8. Brussels. Grant of sixty five crowns monthly to Major Plunquet, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 37, fol. 102v.
- 1484.** 1637. Feb. 11. Brussels. Orders to resume as from 15 November last the pay of Daniel Ocahan, captain of a company of the Earl of Tyrone; had been suspended from his pay and command in October last, but upon further enquiry is now reinstated. EG., reg. 37, fol. 108v.
- 1485.** 1637. Feb. 14. Orders to resume as from this date the pay of Thomas Netirvel, who belonged formerly to a company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston, and is now in the company of the Earl of Tyrconnell; the said pay having been suspended by the licence for Ireland granted on 26 Feb. 1636. EG., reg. 37, fol. 95v.
- 1486.** 1637. Feb. 17. Brussels. Orders to resume the pay, from this date, of John Comerfort, formerly of a company of the regiment of Colonel Preston, but now in the company of the Earl of Tyrconnell; the said pay having been suspended by the licence for Ireland granted on 28 Feb. 1636. EG., reg. 37, fol. 102.
- 1487.** 1637. Feb. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Walter Cative, pensioner in the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; has been ill for eight months, and is not able for further service. EG., reg. 37, fol. 105.
- 1488.** 1637. Feb. 21. Brussels. Orders to confirm the appointment of Gerald Brin as sergeant of the company of Captain James Preston, regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; has been nominated as sergeant by his captain. EG., reg. 37, fol. 106v.
- 1489.** 1637. Feb. 25. Brussels. Licence for one month to the Earl of Tyrone; to enable him to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 109.
- 1490.** 1637. Mar. 3. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain George Car, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 118v.
- 1491.** 1637. Mar. 5. Brussels. Grant of sixty five crowns monthly to Major Captain Richard Plunquet, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 37, fol. 123.



1492. 1637. Mar. 5. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign George Pores, of the disbanded company of Captain Richard de Burgo, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 123.
1493. 1637. Mar. 6. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Nicholas Comerford; to serve as chaplain to the company of infantry of the men of this country who are under the command of Captain Oswald Pleuren. EG., reg. 37, fol. 143.
1494. 1637. Mar. 9. Brussels. Orders to the Marquis Uzburgh to pay 15,612 florins due to the colonel and officers of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 131.
1495. 1637. Mar. 10. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Gelasius Govan; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 37, fol. 152v.
1496. 1637. Mar. 11. Brussels. Licence for one month to Ensign Oliver Geraldin, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell; to assist at the Court at Brussels. EG., reg. 37, fol. 137v.
1497. 1637. Mar. 11. Brussels. Commission to Christopher Duarse as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, vacant by the death of Mathias Obrin. EG., reg. 37, fol. 140v.
1498. 1637. Mar. 14. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Anthony Dier, of the disbanded company of Captain Denis Dier, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 143v.
1499. 1637. Mar. 15. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Bernard Molano; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 37, fol. 162.
1500. 1637. Mar. 17. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Adjutant Charles Roco, of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 37, fol. 149v.
1501. 1637. Mar. 20. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Denis Duil, of the company of Captain Richard Plunquet, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 152.
1502. 1637. Mar. 21. Brussels. Commission to Ensign George Orandoncq as adjutant to the major of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 37, fol. 156.
1503. 1637. Mar. 23. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign James Bremegan, of the disbanded company of Captain Robert Carew, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 157.
1504. 1637. Mar. 24. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Conoco Oconig, of the disbanded company of Captain Richard Plunquet, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 37, fol. 159.
1505. 1637. Mar. 25. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Charles Roco, adjutant of the disbanded regiment of Colonel



Thomas Preston; to serve in the castle at Gennep. EG., reg. 37, fol. 158v.

- 1506.** 1637. Apr. 5. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign James Nugencio, of the disbanded company of Captain Grifon Cavanach, regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston, EG., reg. 37, fol. 175v.
- 1507.** 1637. Apr. 7. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Peter Pouer, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; had received licence for Ireland, for three months, on 23 Feb. 1636. EG., reg. 37, fol. 180v.
- 1508.** 1637. Apr. 7. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Richard Plunquet; had received licence for Ireland, for three months, on 11 Mar. 1636. EG., reg. 37, fol. 180v.
- 1509.** 1637. Apr. 16. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Thomas Queligor as Captain of a company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone vacant by the death of Captain John Jordan; has served in these parts for twenty eight years. EG., reg. 37, fol. 201v.
- 1510.** 1637. Apr. 17. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Gerald Barry. EG., reg. 37, fol. 202v.
- 1511.** 1637. Apr. 19. Brussels. Licence for Spain, by order of Philip IV, to Captain Patrick Geraldino, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 37, fol. 202v.
- 1512.** 1637. Apr. 19. Brussels. Licence for Spain, by order of Philip IV, to Captain Dermot Osullivan, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone. EG., reg. 37, fol. 202v.
- 1513.** 1637. Apr. 19. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to John Bremenseyn, of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd; has served his Majesty in these parts for twenty seven years. EG., reg. 37, fol. 204.
- 1514.** 1637. Apr. 19. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to Walter Gentilman, of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyte; has served his Majesty in these parts for twenty five years. EG., reg. 37, fol. 201.
- 1515.** 1637. Apr. 29. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly and the place of an ordinary soldier, to Gerald Geraldin; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 37, fol. 201.
- 1516.** 1637. Apr. 30. Brussels. Captain Dermot Osullivan Moar and Captain Patrick Geraldin to Don Ferdinand. Represent that in conformity with the letter of his Majesty, his Highness has granted them licence for Spain, and as they must pass through London, they beg him to honour them with letters to Count Oñate, his Catholic Majesty's ambassador to the King of England, that he may help them on those occasions which may arise.
- Dorso: Brussels. 30 April 1637. Referred to Francisco Galarreta.
- Second endorsement: Let a letter be sent to them. 3 May 1637. EG., reg. 381, fol. 158.



- 1517.** 1637. May. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Count de Villamediana. By order of his Majesty letters of recommendation have been granted to Captain Dermot Osulliban Moar and Captain Patrick Geraldino, who have received licence for Spain for four months, with retention of the command of their companies. EGC., reg. 381, fol. 157.
- 1518.** 1637. May 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Greffin Cavanach, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Thomas Preston; to serve with the Irish infantry, as his licence for Ireland has expired. EG., reg. 37, fol. 214.
- 1519.** 1637. May 4. Brussels. Licence for twenty days to Major Arturo Oneill, for affairs at Court. EG., reg. 37, fol. 209v.
- 1520.** 1637. May 7. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pay and place of Bernard Oneil from the company of Irish infantry of Captain Constantine Oneil to the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 37, fol. 211.
- 1521.** 1637. May 7. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and pay of William de Len from the company of Captain Carlos Oneill to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 37, fol. 212.
- 1522.** 1637. May 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Gerald Hop, pensioner in the regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 37, fol. 219v.
- 1523.** 1637. May 10. Brussels. Special grant of one crown monthly to Robert Orurque, of the company of Captain Richard Butler; has served in these parts for thirty one years. EG., reg. 37, fol. 220v.
- 1524.** 1637. May 18. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for four months, with retention of his company, to Captain Patrick Geraldin; called there by a letter Philip IV of 13 Feb. of this year.\* EG., reg. 37, fol. 227.
- 1525.** 1637. May 18. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for four months, with retention of his company, to Captain Dermot Osullivan Moar; called there by a letter of Philip IV of 13 Feb. of this year. EG., reg. 37, fol. 227.
- 1526.** 1637. Oct. 19. Chelsea. Count de Villamediana to Francisco de Galaretta. Captain Felix Byrne, an Irishman, has served his Majesty in these States [Flanders] and is now returning there to continue his services. I am giving him this letter to enable him to obtain a passage. I am giving him also two books, which have been left behind here and are to be sent under cover to Miguel de Necolalde at San Sebastian.  
Dorso: Gravelines, 6th of 9th.\* EGC., reg. 382, fol. 80.
- 1527.** 1638. Feb. 26. Chelsea. de Villamediana to Don Ferdinand. Enquiries have shown that the Irish companies are more than 3,500 below strength. He requests that officers, with orders to recruit Irishmen, be sent immediately, so that the present favourable opportunity be not lost. The men could be of use during this Spring. If they who are to carry out the levy so wished they could, instead of 1,500 men get more than 3,000, as at present their



nation is oppressed, and there are many who are anxious to leave their country, and would do so to the great advantage of his Majesty's service. Different officers should be sent to recruit officers for Spain from those who recruit for the Low Countries.\* EGC., reg. 382, fol. 170v.

- 1528.** 1638. June 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Thomas Plunquet, of a disbanded company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; to serve with the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 38, fol. 44v.
- 1529.** 1638. July 24. Rome. The Marquis de Castel Rodrigo to Don Ferdinand. I have received the letter of your Highness of the 26th of June, concerning the filling of the post of commissary-general of the Order of St Francis in these provinces, and I received also the accompanying letter for the General of the Order, which I sent him at once. The affair had been considered here some days beforehand, and the General is to do nothing without instructions from your Highness. Barberini wanted to send Fr Lucas a San Francisco, an Irishman, who received the habit and was educated in Spain, and is superior of the Irish house here. Both he and the General sheltered themselves behind the fact that the consent of your Highness is necessary. I believe there is nothing new since, as otherwise the General would have reported it, and he will move now only as your Highness orders. EGC., reg. 427, fol. 224.
- 1530.** 1638. July 31. Antwerp. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. In answer to the report sent by Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca, in which it was said that the King of England had granted licence to recruit Irish soldiers, it would be well to levy between four and six thousand. EGC., reg. 368, fol. 97.
- 1531.** 1638. Aug. 8. Ghent. Orders to transfer the pension of Captain Bonaventure de la Biche from the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd to the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Matheo de Villagrana. EG., reg. 38, fol. 105v.
- 1532.** 1638. Aug. 12. Ghent. Commission to Captain Thomas Plunquet as captain of an unattached company, 200 strong, to be formed of the Irish, English and Scots captured from the enemy in these countries, and of others brought from Holland; likewise orders to pay five placas daily to the men thus newly recruited. Plunquet has served as captain of a company of Irish infantry, and as captain of a company of Horse in the regiment of Colonel La Grange. EG., reg. 38, fol. 106. Repeated at 106v.<sup>1</sup>
- 1533.** 1638. Aug. 26. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Ferdinand. On behalf of the rector and college of the Irish Dominicans at Louvain representations have been made to me that to collect the 1,200 crowns granted them for their support costs them more than half

<sup>1</sup>Omitted by inadvertence: 1638. Oct. 18. Estevenswerte. Orders for the payment of the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Captain Thomas Plunquet. EG., reg. 38, fol. 148.



the total of that amount. They have begged me to be pleased to order that the grant be assigned to them upon some fixed and secure source, where there would be no expense in collecting it, such as there is from the department of Finances, or from grants which are made from abbeys; or at least that they be paid from the same source which provides the alms for the college of St Francis in the same university. I direct you to give orders that this college be paid punctually the annual amount assigned to it, as this, besides being so greatly to the service of God and the consolation of the Catholics of that Kingdom, would also afford pleasure to me. EGC., reg. 219, fol. 567.

- 1534.** 1638. Aug. 27. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Ferdinand. You will give orders that as soon as possible the seven Irish companies which are in Flanders will come to Spain, one company of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, five of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell, and one newly recruited company. You will also give orders for the safe and immediate embarkation for Spain of the Irish who are there and are not in my service, and you will grant them two payments for the journey; for it has been agreed with the Earls there that they would send at their own expense reliable and trustworthy persons to assemble as many as possible of that nation in those States, and also Englishmen. Hence I have ordered that instructions in conformity with this be sent to Don Alonso de Cardenas. And that this may be done with so much the better results, you will have published a general pardon for all the soldiers of this nation who have absented themselves from their companies, and you will send such orders to Don Alonso as shall seem best to you for the expeditious execution of whatever may present itself in London. I am ordering him to give you an account of everything. EGC., reg. 219, fol. 577.
- 1535.** 1638. Sept. 15. Venloo. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Thomas Owens; to serve as chaplain of the company of Captain Thomas Plunquet. EG., reg. 38, fol. 151.
- 1536.** 1638. Sept. 18. Venloo. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. By war and disease the army has been greatly reduced during the past year, especially the Irish regiments, and the English. Hence these regiments must be strengthened at once, and licence must be obtained from the King of England and his Ministers to recruit at least 3,00 English, and as many Irish. EGC., reg. 368, fol. 141.
- 1537.** 1638. Oct. 16. Stevensweert. Orders to renew the special grant of Ensign Peter Taife in the company of Captain James Geraldin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneil; the grant was suspended by the licence for three months given on 8 January last, to enable him to go to Ireland and place in security a certain property of his. EG., reg. 38, fol. 148v.
- 1538.** 1638. Oct. 17. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. The seven companies of the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell which were here, and which your Majesty ordered should be sent to Spain,



along with the other men of that nation who were not in your service, were disbanded some days ago, and the seven companies were reduced to two, as they had only 100 men all told; and at present they number seventy, and are stationed in the castle of Gennep, where they render great service, as the governor is of the same nation. There are no Irish or English here who can be sent away, as is supposed, except those who are serving. For these reasons, and as I think that with the victory gained at Fuentarabia the need for any more fighting in Spain is over, I have thought it greatly to your Majesty's service to suspend the execution of this order, as for this reason, and on account of the scarcity of men here, and of the difficulty of procuring them, it would be very proper that the Irish who are in Spain should return here. EGC., reg. 220, fol. 273.

- 1539.** 1638. Oct. 19. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Has received the letter of his Highness, dated 18 September, concerning the levies of English and Irish soldiers, and will ask for an audience this week to urge the matter. He fears, however, that it will be difficult, as the King has heard with great anxiety of the Spanish victories, those in the Low Countries especially, and he desires nothing more earnestly than the prolongation of the war between France and Spain.\* EGC., reg. 368, fol. 172.
- 1540.** 1638. Nov. 4. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Sergeant Daniel Brite, soldier of the garrison of Termonde; desires to continue his services in the regiment of Irish infantry of the Earl of Tyrone which is now in Spain. EG., reg. 38, fol. 157v.
- 1541.** 1638. Nov. 5. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and special grant of Ensign Peter Taiff from the Irish infantry to the Spanish. EG., reg. 38, fol. 157.
- 1542.** 1638. Nov. 5. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and special grant of Ensign John Dixon from the company of Walter de la Hoyd, in garrison at Ostend, to the English infantry. EG., reg. 38, fol. 170v.
- 1543.** 1638. Nov. 6. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Thomas Neterwill, pensioner in the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd, in garrison at Ostend; to attend to some business. EG., reg. 38, fol. 159v.
- 1544.** 1638. Nov. 16. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to John Callaghan; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill.\* EG., reg. 38, fol. 172.
- 1545.** 1638. Nov. 17. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. He has spoken with several of the Ministers about the English and Irish levies, and recently he had audience with the King. His Majesty has given permission for the English, but will consider further the question of the Irish. EGC., reg. 368, fol. 191.
- 1546.** 1638. Nov. 30. Brussels. Instructions for the payment of the army. Mention of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill at Arras. The regiment is to be allowed two free places daily, their foragings,



and every forty days half their pay, when however the colonel, major, and chaplains are to be given full pay. EG., reg. 38, fol. 185.

- 1547.** 1638. Dec. 7. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Oliver Plunquet, of the company of Captain Marcus Dungan, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; is crippled, and unable for further service. EG., reg. 38, fol. 198.
- 1548.** 1638. Dec. 11. Brussels. Orders to confirm the appointment of Bernard Oneill, soldier of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Juan Perez de Peralta, regiment of Marquis de Velada, as ensign of the company of Captain Henry Oneill, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; has been nominated for the post by his captain. EG., reg. 38, fol. 197v.
- 1549.** 1638. Dec. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Patrick Barte, soldier of the garrison of Ostend; is maimed, and no longer able to serve. EG., reg. 38, fol. 204.
- 1550.** 1638. Dec. 16. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Owen Osheil, of the royal military hospital; to serve as doctor with the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 38, fol. 208.
- 1551.** 1638. Dec. 20. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Louis Philip de Guevara. You are aware that on 28 January 1636 a warrant was issued for 15,000 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to pay for recruiting for the regiments of Irish infantry under the command of Colonels Eugenio Oneill, the Earl of Tyrone, the Earl of Tyrconnell, and Thomas Preston, who are in his Majesty's service in this army; namely 3,750 crowns of of the said value were to be paid to each colonel for the recruiting in Ireland of 750 men for each regiment, and the paymaster-general Juan de Lira was ordered to remit the said 15,000 crowns to London, to Juan de Necolalde, member of his Majesty's Council and Minister in England. In accordance with this the said paymaster-general gave each of the said colonels an order upon the above mentioned Minister for payment to them in London, or to their representatives, of the said 3,750 crowns, discounting one per cent tax, and getting their receipts. But whereas this recruiting was not carried out, on account of certain events in England, and the said Minister, in accordance with his instructions, has spent the money, which amounted to 14,285 crowns and 36 placas, on other things relating to his Majesty's armies, and has given account of it, the said payment is to be cancelled in order to avoid any misunderstanding. EG., reg. 38, fol. 269.
- 1552.** 1638. Estimates for the army for the year 1639. Irish infantry: In order to give four payments to the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, three half-payments having been already received by payments made in the country: 16,284 crowns. To give seven half-payments to three companies of the Irish nation: 6,944 crowns. EGC., reg. 221, fol. 314.
- 1553.** 1639. Jan. 2. Brussels. Commission to Adjutant Denis Constantine, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, as captain



of the company of the same regiment vacant by the death of Captain Richard Terrel; has served in these parts for thirteen years, the first seven as soldier and ensign, and the other six years as adjutant. EG., reg. 38, fol. 237v.

- 1554.** 1639. Jan. 6. Brussels. Orders to receive to pay and service the company of Irish infantry recently recruited by Captain James Plonquet for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, notwithstanding that it does not number 100 men. EG., reg. 38, fol. 231v.
- 1555.** 1639. Jan. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Ensign Triell Oquenedy, of the company of Captain Denis Constantine, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; his father has died in Ireland and he must go there to place his property in safety. EG., reg. 38, fol. 242.
- 1556.** 1639. Jan. 11. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns monthly to the newly recruited company of Irish infantry of Captain James Blasvelt, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 38, fol. 237v.
- 1557.** 1639. Jan. 11. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the special grant made to Ensign Cornelius Machon of the company of Captain Henry Oneill, which was suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 20 December 1636. EG., reg. 38, fol. 241v.
- 1558.** 1639. Jan. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Captain Grefin Cavanach, pensioner in the company of Captain Edward Obrin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; his uncle has died in Ireland, and has left him all his property. EG., reg. 38, fol. 242.
- 1559.** 1639. Jan. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign John Dixon, of the English company of Colonel William Tresham; on account of the death of his grandmother in Ireland it is important that he should go there to ensure his property. EG., reg. 38, fol. 242.
- 1560.** 1639. Jan. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to David MasThomas, of the company of Captain Thomas Butler, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, to recruit for his company. EG., reg. 38, fol. 243v.
- 1561.** 1639. Jan. 18. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Malachy Omorra, pensioner in the company of Captain Denis Lalour, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; to continue his services in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 38, fol. 248v.
- 1562.** 1639. Jan. 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Taff, of the garrison of Termonde; was wounded in the right thigh by a musket charge at the siege of Corbie, and is unable for further service. EG., reg. 38, fol. 254.
- 1563.** 1639. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, to Captain Patrick Geraldin, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; is ill, and the doctors recommend a change of air.\* EG., reg. 38, fol. 257v.



1564. 1639. Jan. 22. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Edmond Quely, soldier of the company of Captain Carlos Oneill; to serve with the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell. EG., reg. 38, fol. 258v.
1565. 1639. Jan. 26. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Matthew Quellenano, of the company of Captain Henry Oneill; has an incurable illness. EG., reg. 38, fol. 261v.
1566. 1639. Jan. 31. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and pay of Loghlen Oquierigan, muskeeter, from the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 38, fol. 268.
1567. 1639. Feb. 3. Brussels. Grant of an ordinary place, of the value of four crowns monthly, in the garrison at Hal, to John Rierdan, of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone; is at present helpless. EG., reg. 38, fol. 272v.
1568. 1639. Feb. 4. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Maurice Ohoeyn as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly; has served in these parts for fifteen years. EG., reg. 38, fol. 272v.
1569. 1639. Feb. 22. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Edmond Quelli, of the company of Captain Carlos Oneill; up to the present was recovering from a musket charge which he had received in the leg, at Maubeuge, and was unable to follow the company when it went to Spain.\* EG., reg. 38, fol. 262v.
1570. 1639. Aug. 1. Ghent. Captain Patrick Geraldino to Don Ferdinand. Represents that he has received from Philip IV a commission as colonel, and licence to raise an Irish regiment of 1,000 men. Asks letters of recommendation to Don Alonso de Cardenas. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 35.
1571. 1639. Sept. 3. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. Letters in favour of Colonel John Butler, who is to raise an Irish regiment of 3,000 men in fifteen companies. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 73.
1572. 1639. Oct. 7. Dunkirk. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. By your letter of 17 August your Majesty informed me that in view of the little that is to be hoped for from the Emperor, it would be well to arrange, by means of a loan to the King of England, for a levy of 10,000 Irishmen, and so strengthen the trust and friendship between both sides, and secure the Channel. And your Majesty orders me to inform Don Alonso of my opinion. I have ordered him to take notice of your Majesty's wish, and have informed him of what seemed fitting for the management of the affair; and I will keep your Majesty informed of developments, since what your Majesty emphasises in your letter about the small help to be hoped for from the Emperor is certain, as appears from actual experience, especially from the business on which Lord Leslie has been sent over here by his Imperial Majesty, of which I give an account in a separate dispatch. EGC., reg. 223, fol. 185.
1573. 1639. Oct. 10. Dunkirk. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. In a letter of 17 August his Majesty has been pleased to declare



his intention of securing three objectives by means of a loan of money which he would make to the King of England, namely to strengthen his trust and friendship, to secure the Channel, and develop trade between these States and England, and to obtain a levy of 10,000 Irishmen, of whom 4,000 will be for Spain and 6,000 for this country. He has ordered me to inform you of my opinion about this. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 119.

**1574.** 1639. Oct. 10. Dunkirk. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. To secure the Channel and obtain a levy of 10,000 Irishmen, Cardenas is to offer 350,000 crowns, of which 50,000 crowns will be paid immediately, and the remaining 300,000 at the rate of 30,000 crowns monthly, from the beginning of the coming year. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 123.

**1575.** 1639. Nov. 4. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Colonel John Butler has presented his Highness's letter of 23 September. Patrick Geraldino likewise has presented the letter granted to him on 23 August. Cardenas does not wish to speak with the King about the proposed levies until Don Ferdinand has been informed of the altered circumstances, and of the difficulties of the matter. He has heard that the King does not intend to allow any recruiting except for the old regiments. It will become all the more difficult when it will have become known that the levying of recruits will be one of the conditions of the proposed loan. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 179.

**1576.** 1639. Nov. 12. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. You wish to be given further instructions before you ask the King in my name to permit levies for the regiments of John Butler and Patrick Geraldin, as, for the reasons you give, it is not opportune to make this effort . . . I approve of your not having given any engagements for the two Irish levies, both for the reasons you mention, and also because it was an absolute condition that the colonels were to obtain the licence before any confidence was placed in their assurances that they had some way of facilitating the levies. And nevertheless, for this reason I commission you to help them with all confidence from the time you feel that your services will be of effect, since you know the purpose in view, which is to retain the men of whom we are in need. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 203v.

**1577.** 1639. Nov. 25. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. By a letter of 10 October your Highness was pleased to have me informed that it is the intention of his Majesty, as he was pleased to make known to you by a letter of 10 August, that by means of a loan of money he would make to the King here he would obtain three things from him: to strengthen his trust and friendship; to secure the Channel, and commerce between the States of Flanders and England; and to obtain a levy of 10,000 Irishmen, of whom 4,000 would be for Spain, and 6,000 for Flanders. And your Highness orders me to give my opinion on this, and upon the



time and manner I would consider the most opportune for this purpose, and of the circumstances in which it would be best to approach the King about the loan. . . The levy of the 10,000 Irishmen remains thus the only condition which could be carried out, for although the number is great (which would draw the attention of France and Holland) and it will be difficult to recruit so many, as there are but few people in that country, and the King has need of them for the war in Scotland, which it is said will certainly start next spring: nevertheless, money is valued, and is so much here that it would surmount all obstacles. It is important to consider, should the cost of the levy equal the full sum of the loan, that it would be a great inconvenience that always in future, whenever it would be necessary to recruit for the regiments of this nation which serve in those states, and which may be formed from the 10,000 men mentioned, if they are granted, it will be necessary to pay for the levy. It could be considered whether it would not be more advantageous to his Majesty's service to try to obtain this levy by paying for each soldier levied a price which would not exceed 50,000 crowns for the 10,000 Irishmen, rather than to lend 350,000 crowns, which might be looked upon as little less than a gift on account of the difficulty there would be recovering them. And to avoid the inconvenience lest the payment for this levy might prejudice the concession of other levies in future, there would be plenty of ways, one of which would be to attach to the condition of the levy of the 10,000 a clause permitting the recruiting of 400 or 500 Irishmen every year; as this is not a great number, they would be able to grant it. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 238-241.

- 1578.** 1639. Dec. 2. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. John Butler is here at the Court, with little hope of obtaining a licence to recruit the 3,000 Irishmen. He comes to me every day, asking me to intercede with the King, but I have told him that I have no instructions to that end. He says that should your Highness wish that a certain German regiment be recruited, he will return to Flanders and undertake this, as he has much experience therein. He states, however, that should your Highness wish it, and grant him the money, he can get the Irish regiment. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 267.
- 1579.** 1639. Dec. 10. Brussels. Miguel de Salamanca to de Cardenas. As regards Butler's levy, his Highness instructs him to say that you are to find out from the colonel the means he has of obtaining a licence, and that if you are certain that it can be carried out successfully, you may make arrangements with him, as it would be unwise to lose the levy for the sake of a little money more or less. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 273.
- 1580.** 1639. Dec. 17. Ostend. Statement by Cajetan Callaghan, chaplain, that Catharina Dergane is the widow of Cornelius



Hallurane, an Irish soldier late of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyde. AJ., carton\* 1962-72, liasse 1969.

**1581.** 1639. Dec. 17. Ostend. Statement by Cajetan Callaghan, chaplain, that Margaret Duly is the widow of William Trassi, Irishman, late of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyde; that Unnualy Mulrian is the widow of Oliver Haquet, late of the same company; and that Isabella Tax is the widow of Raphael Hely, formerly of the Irish regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, and that she has three children to support. AJ., carton 1963-72, liasse 1968.

**1582.** 1639. Dec. 23. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. He has spoken with Colonel Butler about the means for raising the regiment. Butler has very great hopes, but "I have very little faith in him. He is in such extreme poverty that I have given him assistance, but nothing for this business, although he asked me for 2,000 crowns". Maurice MacDonnell, who offered to serve with 300 Irishmen, and whose offer Don Ferdinand had accepted, is trying to get a licence for the levy. With regard to the levy of 10,000 Irishmen, I have begun to act, and am awaiting an answer as to how things should proceed. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 293.

**1583.** 1639. Dec. 26. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. Whereas Colonel John Butler seeks licence from the King of England to recruit 2,000 Irishmen to serve his Majesty with them in the States of Flanders, according to the agreement made with the Inspector General of Finances in Flanders, by his Majesty's orders, in which transaction various expenses are entailed, I therefore undertake to pay, at the will of the aforesaid Colonel Butler, £500 sterling should the said licence be given, and when the levy shall have been carried out and the men have crossed over to Flanders; so that upon this warrant and the certificate of his Catholic Majesty's officers, whose duty it will be to review the said men to the number of 2,000 as agreed upon, I will pay the aforesaid sum of £500 sterling; and should the number of 2,000 men not be granted, or should the men not cross over to Dunkirk, I will pay, at the demand of the aforesaid colonel, in proportion to the number that goes over, at the rate of ten reales for each man; in such manner that if 2,000 Irishmen go over to Flanders, I will pay 2,000 crowns, which will be of the same value as the aforesaid £500 sterling; and if fewer men, as many ducats shall be paid as men cross over, after proof of this will have been given in due form.

Dorso: A copy of the warrant drawn up by Don Alonso de Cardenas in favour of Colonel Butler. To be sent to Don Miguel de Salamanca. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 40.

**1584.** 1639. Dec. 28. Brussels. Colonel Patrick Geraldin to Don Ferdinand. Represents that his Majesty has granted him the favour of a commission as colonel in order that he may raise



a regiment of Irish infantry for his royal service. He is now going to England and Ireland to carry out his purpose, and asks letters to his Majesty's Resident in England, such as were given to Colonel Butler.

Dorso: To Don Miguel de Salamanca. Letters of the same kind are to be given to him as were given to Colonel Butler. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 25.

- 1585.** 1639. Entries of payments of a yearly pension of fifty livres each to Jeanne and Catherine Geraldine, sisters of the late Peter Oconnell, former soldier of the company of Count de Hornes; in virtue of a letter of 10 August 1629. Payments begin in October 1630 and end in March 1639. It is stated that Catherine died in Brussels on 2 February 1639. CC., 45873, fol. 414-5.
- 1586.** 1640. Jan. 2. Genappe. Fr Nicholas Comerford S.J., head chaplain of the garrison at Genappe, to Fr Florence de Grauenbroeck S.J., head chaplain of the *missio castrensis*. Reports that there are only two widows of foreigners in that camp, one of the Irish adjutant, and the other of an Irish soldier named Gregory. AJ., carton 1963-73, liasse 1968.
- 1587.** 1640. Jan. 3. Brussels. Orders to Count d'Isenburg to arrange for the reception at St Omer of the Irish company which at present is being recruited for the regiment of Patrick Geraldin, and of the other two companies of the same regiment. EA., liasse 2112. 1.
- 1588.** 1640. Jan. 4. Brussels. Orders to the governor of Bourbourg to send to St Omer the Irish company recruited there for the regiment of Patrick Geraldin. EA., liasse 2097. 3.
- 1589.** 1640. Jan. 6. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. The bad weather continues, so that we have received no dispatches this week or last . . . In Scotland large levies are being raised for the Covenanters, and the Council has resolved to form an army of 25,000 infantry and 5,000 Horse . . . The levy of Irishmen meets with great difficulty on account of the war in Scotland, but he will make every effort to secure it. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 18.
- 1590.** 1640. Jan. 7. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. Letters commending to him Colonel Patrick Geraldin; as requested on 28 December 1639. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 24.
- 1591.** 1640. Jan. 7. Brussels. Colonel John Butler to Don Ferdinand. Begg his Highness to renew his letter to de Cardenas, instructing him to speak with the King of England and obtain licence for Butler to recruit a regiment in Ireland. EGC., reg. 370, fol. 73.
- 1592.** 1640. Jan. 10. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Count d'Isenbourg. Forwards a request made to Don Ferdinand by Colonel Eugenio Oneil, that a company of his regiment be stationed at Béthune. EA., liasse 2097. 3.
- 1593.** 1640. Jan. 10. Fr Nicholas Comerford S.J. to Fr Florence de Grauenbroeck S.J. Since he wrote his report on 2 January this year, he has learned that one of the widows has one son aged



eight, and one daughter aged twelve. Asks that they be included in the distributions which are being made, and that their portion be sent to Mr Talbot, president of the Irish seminary at Antwerp. A.J., carton 1963-72, liasse 1969.

**1594.** 1640. Jan. 14. Patrick Geraldin to Don Ferdinand. Begs that the Secretary be ordered to provide quarters for the Irish regiment which is to be recruited for his Majesty's service. EA., liasse 2071. 3.

**1595.** 1640. Jan. 18. Patrick Geraldin to Don Ferdinand. Makes the same request as in the preceding, and explains that the companies of the regiment cannot come in a body from France, Holland, and England and Ireland, but in small groups only. EA., liasse 2071. 3.

**1596.** 1640. Jan. 19. Brussels. Albert, Baron Gleanomalun, to Don Ferdinand. Albert Gleanomalun, only son of the Baron Gleanomalun and Quirchy, peer of the kingdom of Ireland, knight of the Order of Calatrava, gentleman of the Emperor's Chamber, and of the *Boca* of his Majesty, represents that it is well known to his Majesty and to your Highness that the Baron his father could have remained in possession of his estates in Ireland, as did other gentlemen who did not take up arms against the King of England; and if he had not lost his estates, he would have had no need to beg from his Majesty; but he relied upon various royal promises of fitting recompense for his losses, and upon letters of his Majesty of happy memory, as appears both from the annexed copy,<sup>1</sup> and also from the attestation which he presents, and from various letters of the most serene Infanta to his Majesty. Moreover, various supplies of information were sent by his father thirty years ago, concerning events in England and Ireland prejudicial to his Majesty's interests, and his father also caused many men to come from Ireland to these States; and upon different occasions he drew others of his nation in great numbers from Holland, by command of the Lady Infanta. In which activities he spent 20,000 florins, without any compensation. Nevertheless, the promises referred to have never been fulfilled, nor has any reward ever been made to anyone of his house. And as the suppliant has received information from the Court at Madrid, through religious persons, and from other persons well worthy of credit, that his Majesty made his father the gift of the office of Major-Domo of your Highness, before his death (which gift, however, could not be published, as his death was so unexpected) the suppliant begs your Highness to do him the favour to write again to his Majesty in commendation of him, as you were pleased to do on a former occasion.

Dorso: Brussels. 19 Jan. 1640. Referred to Miguel de Salamanca.

<sup>1</sup>Not in register.



- 1597.** Enclosed: Antwerp. 13 July 1638. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Recommends Albert Omalun, Baron of Querchy, who begs that the promises made to his father by the Marquis de la Hinojosa, when ambassador in England, may be fulfilled. EGC., reg. 225, ff. 43-4.
- 1598.** 1640. Jan. 22. Brussels. Letters to the authorities at Bergues-St-Winnoc, Furnes and Hlondeschoote, instructing them to receive three companies at Bergues, and two in the other towns, each company consisting of 200 men, which it has been thought well to have recruited by Colonel Patrick Geraldino, for his regiment. EA., carton 2087.
- 1599.** 1640. Jan. 30. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. A further recommendation of Albert Baron Gleanomalun, who has no patron, as he has lost his father. EGC., reg. 225, fol. 41.
- 1600.** 1640. Memorandum of the quarters in Flanders which the Cardinal Infante has ordered to be assigned for the raising of a new regiment by Patrick Geraldin; at St Omer, three companies; Bergues-St-Winnoc, four companies; Malines, two companies; Sanvliet, one company. EA., carton 2087.
- 1601.** 1640. Feb. 25. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Letter in favour of an Irish captain named William Butler, who has been put under arrest at the instance of his colonel, Don Eugenio Onell. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 135.
- 1602.** 1640. Apr. 5. Brussels. Miguel de Salamanca to the Secretary of the Audience. Captain Walter de la Hoyd and his company are to be transferred to Aire, from Ostend, and there to be incorporated in the regiment of Colonel Oneil. Captain William Butler is to be transferred from Aire to Ostend. EA., liasse 2083. 2.
- 1603.** 1640. Apr. 9. Brussels. Orders to Captain Walter de la Hoyd to proceed with his company of Irish infantry from Ostend to Aire; and orders to Captain William Butler to proceed with his company from Aire to Ostend. Orders to Count d'Isenburg to arrange for these changes. EA., liasse 2071. 3.
- 1604.** 1640. Apr. 18. Brussels. Orders cancelling the transfer of the company of Captain Walter de la Hoyd and Captain Butler. Should the transfer have been already carried out, the men are to return to their original stations. EA., liasse 2071. 3.
- 1605.** 1640. Apr. 28. Brussels. Miguel de Salamanca to Virgilio Malvezzi. The levy of the 5,000 or 6,000 Irishmen, especially if they are for service in the Low Countries, is of great importance. He wishes to be informed of the amount of money required, which he will provide either on his Majesty's credit or his own, so that the levy may not be deferred for want of money, or further levies which may be of advantage to his Majesty's service. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 277.
- 1606.** 1640. May 2. Brussels. Orders to Count d'Isenburg that he is at once to instruct Colonel Geraldin at St Omer to unite his



companies with the companies of Colonel Eugenio Oneil near Douai. EA., liasse 207I. 3.

- 1607.** 1640. May 3. A receipt given by Fr Nicholas Comerford S.J. for fifteen florins Brabant, allotted to three foreign widows at Gennep. A.J., carton 1965-72.
- 1608.** 1640. May 5. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Virgilio Malvezzi. Has already answered Malvezzi's dispatch reporting his Majesty's orders that provision should be made from the Low Countries for the recruiting of 6,000 Irishmen in the same way as for the other expenses of the embassy. Such provision could be made only with great difficulty, and the actual want of funds in the Low Countries makes it impossible. This must be kept in mind when there is any question of entering into engagements. Malvezzi must inform the King of Spain of this, and state that it would be well if he himself would provide the money. As regards the recruiting of 5,000 or 6,000 Irishmen, the possible attitude of the King of England must be considered, as owing to his present embarrassments he may not grant the licence. If anything can be done to obtain a levy for the Low Countries, it will be well to make sure of it. Should there be no inclination to permit the levy of the aforesaid number of Irishmen, other expenses may be suspended, and exact information should be sent of the way in which Don Ferdinand can help in the matter. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 277-78v.
- 1609.** 1640. May. Ghent. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Eugenio Oneill, colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry, has represented to me his services of thirty five years duration, and the fact that he has nothing for his maintenance except his pay as a colonel; on which account, and by reason of the many obligatios of his rank, his needs have increased in the proportion that his pay has been unpunctual. He has begged me to represent his needs to your Majesty, together with his services, that in consideration of this it may be your royal wish to order that he be paid every month, in the way payment is made to Colonel Ribaucourt. As his request seems just, as does also whatever attention may be had of his many services and of his rank, I have thought well to beg your Highness to grant him this favour, for which I hope with great confidence, and even that his request may be exceeded.
- 1610.** Enclosed: 1640. May 5. Colonel Oneill represents that he has been in his Majesty's service in these States for thirty five years, and has taken part in every campaign which has been fought in various places for his Majesty's service. As he has no other means of support than his pay as a colonel, which is issued to him so rarely that he cannot maintain himself as becomes his rank and position, he very humbly begs your Highness to write on his behalf to his Majesty, that he may be pleased that the said



pay be issued monthly, as is done in the case of Colonel de Ribaucourt. EGC., reg. 225, ff. 231-2.

- 1611.** 1640. May 6. Orders to Captain Maurus Suyne to proceed with his company of Irish infantry from Ionschote to St Georges near Gravelines. EA., liasse 2071. 3.
- 1612.** 1640. May 12. London. The Marquis de Velada to Don Ferdinand. Asks for information about Colonel Maurice Maksuini.
- 1613.** Enclosed: Colonel Maurice Maksuini, of the Irish nation, represents that he has followed the military profession for twenty five years, in the service of his Catholic Majesty in the States of Flanders, and of his Imperial Majesty in the wars in Germany, where he held various commands, such as that of lieutenant-colonel, and governor of Goettingen in Brunswick, under Count Tilly, as is well known, and about which information can be supplied; and this not including service under Colonel Onel. Before the declaration of war between the Crowns of France and Spain, he served with a German regiment; and when this was disbanded, and he was left without a post or pension (as a result of the evil service done to him by the men of his own nation of the province of Ulster, who will not permit any others, especially men of the province of Munster, to obtain any promotion in the army of our King, when he saw the great scorn which the Ulstermen showed to all of his province, and himself in particular, he was obliged to accept a regiment of his nation in the service of the King of France; for which Eugenio Onel was to blame (as also for the fact that there were five other Irish regiments in the French service) on account of his pride, and his envy of the promotion of others belonging to the province of the suppliant. And whereas the suppliant received no promotion in his Catholic Majesty's service, and on account of the false charges of Eugenio Onel was exiled from Flanders, when he had served for some time in France he left that country, under compulsion of his zeal and affection for Spain, not without danger to his life on account of the false accusations made against him by a man of his nation of the province of Ulster, who caused his arrest. He lost all the pay which was owing to him, which amounted to 50,000 florins, and all his belongings. And whereas he desires to return to his Majesty's service, and is the first of his nation who ever received a colonel's command in France, and the first to leave the French service in the hope of being received by his Highness, he begs your Excellency to do him the favour of writing to his Highness, that he may allow him to return to serve his Majesty in Flanders, and may honour him with a post corresponding to his services and his former commands, so that as a result of his example, all those of his nation who expect a like favour may likewise return; to which end he offers to help with all zeal, and also to render very special service against Holland, of which he is prepared to give an explanation to any one whom his Highness



may be pleased to designate. And in case his Highness should be of his humble will, it would be a proof of his great clemency were he to order that the suppliant be given some help for himself and his assistants who are here with him, as he is in great need on account of having spent all he had, and of having lost all his possessions in order to come and place himself under the protection of his Highness, and his Majesty may rest assured, as there can be no doubt about the petitioner's good faith, since he has a daughter in Brussels, and many relatives on his wife's side, as she was a native of Flanders. And may the petitioner receive in all things the favour he promises himself from your Excellency's greatness, EGC., reg. 374, fol. 197.

- 1614.** 1640. May 12. London. The Marquis de Velada to Don Ferdinand. Windebank, the secretary, and Antonio Porta, have told me, on behalf of the King, that his Majesty felt it very much that the Irish in Flanders have precedence over the English who conquered them. Velada had answered that precedence in the armies of the King of Spain, especially in Flanders, was a matter of many years standing, and that it would be very difficult to introduce any innovation. He answered, however, that this precisely was the grievance complained of. EGC., reg. 374, fol. 208.
- 1615.** 1640. May 12. Brussels. Miguel de Salamanca to Virgilio Malvezzi. The chief motive which moved him to ask Malvezzi to inform him of the amount of money required for the levy of 5,000 or 6,000 Irishmen was that his Majesty's service might not be impeded, especially in a matter subject to Malvezzi's jurisdiction. He encloses a bill of credit for 12,000 crowns, for the sole purpose of obtaining which from Antonio de Suarez he had been to Antwerp. He has noted Malvezzi's remark that he will return the 12,000 crowns when supplies for the expenses of the embassy arrive from Spain. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 287.
- 1616.** 1640. May 12. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Count d'Isenbourg. Encloses a petition [missing] of Christopher Plunquet, ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Nelan Oneill, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EA., liasse 2112. 1.
- 1617.** 1640. May 23. London. The Marquis de Velada to Philip IV. Marquis Virgilio Malvezzi had been instructed to ask for a levy of Irish recruits up to the number of 8,000, and Velada himself had received instructions to ask for 10,000 men. The Viceroy had assured him that "although there are not many Irishmen available, as the population was not as numerous as it usually was, nevertheless he would use diligent efforts with the King to grant us a regiment". To my answer that this was very little, and that we needed men both in Spain and in Flanders, and that there should be at least two regiments, he undertook to propose this to the King, but on condition (though he thought to have this accepted before, as a piece of advice for our good) that these



levies should not be put under the command of the Earl of Tyrone, or the Earl of Tyrconnell, or of Eugenio Oneill, as all three showed themselves badly affected towards the affairs of the King who is their natural sovereign. The Viceroy enlarged much upon this, and complained that in Spain ear is given frequently to proposals made by the Irish to the detriment of England. EGC., reg. 574, ff. 264-6.

**1618.** 1640. May 25. The statements made by the Viceroy of Ireland to the Marquis de Velada, the Marquis Virgilio Malvezzi, and Don Alonso de Cardenas. at their last conference on 25 May:

[a]. The King of England has decided to make an offensive and defensive alliance with the King of Spain, and to break with the Dutch as soon as the rebellion has been suppressed in Scotland, and that kingdom reduced to obedience to the King of England.

[b]. The King of England grants a levy of 3,000 Irishmen for the service of the King of Spain. The Viceroy offers to have the necessary orders for the levy dispatched immediately.

[c]. The King of England also grants a ship of his fleet to convey the Marchioness of Cerralvo and the Countess de Feria to Spain.

[d]. He also appointed Doctor Eton, doctor of civil law, to act with the judge of the admiralty at Dunkirk, and the Marquis de Velada has brought Doctor Eton over.

[e]. In the meantime the King will devote himself to the execution of the agreement; and as measures to be carried out during this present spring, he suggests that he shall convoy and escort the money and men who shall come from Spain to Flanders; that in case Dunkirk, or any other place on the coast of Flanders be attacked by the Dutch or any other enemies of Spain, the King of England will render aid, and will maintain freedom of commerce and navigation between the ports of England and the ports of Spain and Flanders. For this purpose the King of England will immediately add twenty ships more to those he already has at sea, to afford help in the Channel. and to be employed in accordance with the aforementioned agreement.

[f]. In consideration of all this, the Viceroy proposed in the name of the King his master that the King of Spain should grant him a loan of 1,200,000 crowns, 600,000 of which shall be delivered within one month, and the other 600,000 by St Michael's day.

[g]. It is understood that if a breach should come about with Holland, 100,000 crowns shall be discounted each month from the 1,200,000 in favour of the King of England, by reason of the said offensive and defensive alliance. Should the alliance not come into effect, he shall be obliged to repay the whole of the said sum of 1,200,000 crowns to the King of Spain. As security for this payment he offers to bind himself by a document sealed with the Great Seal of England, by which the King will bind himself in his own possessions and the possessions of his subjects.



[h]. Notice of all these proposals shall be given to the English ambassador at Madrid, that he may treat of them with the King of Spain and his Ministers, with the least delay, and make further agreements and modifications.

[i]. These same proposals shall also be sent in writing, in the hand of Secretary Windebank, to the Marquis de Velada, the Marquis Malvezzi, and Don Alonso de Cardenas, that they may the better understand their import, and send them on to the King of Spain; and the King of England will send them to his ambassador, as stated, with all possible clarifications, that time may be gained in reaching the desired agreement without the dispatch of fresh couriers. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 16.

- 1619.** 1640. May 25. Ghent. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Maurus Teleano, of the disbanded company of Captain Patrick Tailler. EG., reg. 39, fol. 4v.
- 1620.** 1640. May 28. Ghent. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Ensign Edward Gualek, of the disbanded company of Irish infantry of Captain Patrick Tailler, which was in garrison at Gennepe; to serve with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 39, fol. 4.
- 1621.** 1640. June 2. Brussels. Letter of Andrés Cantelmo, in which he mentions that Colonel Eugenio Oneil will march to Bapaume to assist in the defence of the town. EA., carton 2080.
- 1622.** 1640. June 4. London. A report of the result of the conference between the Ministers of the King of England and the Ministers of the King of Spain in the year 1640. The King of England has agreed to the levy of 3,000 Irishmen, and the Viceroy of Ireland has given immediate orders for the recruiting to be carried out. EGC., reg. 377, fol. 92-4.
- 1623.** 1640. June 5. From the camp. Commission to Ensign John Oneyl as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyl, vacant by the death of Captain Marcus Dongan; has served his Majesty in these parts for 21 years, and has distinguished himself on all occasions, as he continues to do at present in the town of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 53.
- 1624.** 1640. June 10. Ghent. Don Ferdinand to Marquis de Velada. The proposals made by the King of England do not at all conform to the end which the King of Spain had in view when he gave orders that the negociations should be undertaken. It is to be thought that they will not be accepted in Spain, as they engage his Majesty to afford such serious assistance, whereas he has been offered nothing in return. "You will inform me if the 3,000 men who have been granted are for service here, or in Spain, and whether they form part of the principal negociations. An answer must be awaited from his Majesty, but if they are granted independently of other conditions, and for service in Flanders, it will be well to inform me whether they can be had before the end of the campaign. If this is the case, the matter is to be taken in hand at once, for their service here, and arrangements



will be made to procure the costs of the levy. If, however, this cannot be done before the end of the campaign, the trouble and expense would be greater than the advantage." EGC., reg. 378, fol. 29.

- 1625.** 1640. June 14. Ghent. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns monthly to the newly formed company of Irish infantry of Captain James Geferi, for the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldino. EG., reg. 39, fol. 27v.
- 1626.** 1640. June 15. London. de Velada, de Malvezzi, and de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Although the levy of 3,000 men was offered independently of the principal agreement suggested, it is now to be feared that it will not be allowed apart from that agreement, though we have not been told this. Hence we have initiated the demand for the papers authorising the levy, as the orders are that we should treat of it with the Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, within whose jurisdiction it is to be carried out; and we wish to engage him in it, and put it under his patronage, since it was through him that the King granted it. We do not know how this step may succeed, but in any case it does not seem possible that the men would be ready to serve in the present campaign. Hence there will be time for his Majesty, who has been informed, to determine what is to be done, and make the necessary provision. EGC., reg. 377, fol. 14-15.
- 1627.** 1640. June 16. From the camp at Plancques. Appointment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill to be military governor of Arras. "Don Phelipe de Sylva, lieutenant-general of the whole Spanish cavalry which is under the command of Count the Duke of San Lucar, governor of the King's forces in France, and governor and commander of the Castle of Antwerp. Whereas the town of Arras is at present under siege, and it is necessary for the King's service that there should be therein a man of parts, experience and ability, to command and govern all the military, both infantry and cavalry, who are in the town at present and have been put there for its preservation and defence, and those who shall come there and be recruited in the said town; in whose power also shall be the distribution of all munitions and military supplies, artillery and whatsoever pertains thereto; and whereas all these qualities, and all others whatsoever, are to be found in the person of Colonel Eugenio Oneill: by virtue of the command of his Highness he is to be appointed to defend the said town and to have command over all the said military forces, and along with them, of the other reinforcements with which his Majesty orders all his councillors, magistrates, and the Baron de Termigny, to supply him on every occasion on which he may demand them; likewise as concerns the expenses which shall appear necessary for the preservation and defence of the said town, of all which he shall keep account so that a satisfactory return may be made to his Majesty; and all colonels of infantry, commanders of



cavalry, captains of horse, all other officers whatsoever of higher or lower rank, officers on war service who at present may be there, and those whose duty it is in the said town to raise regiments, and all others who may come to the said town are commanded to obey him and carry out his orders, both oral or written, for the service of his Majesty; for such is the will of his Highness. And the same shall be observed with respect to any other who shall act as his substitute and take his place in case the said Colonel Eugenio Oneill himself may not be able to act. To which end I order that this present be dispatched, signed with my name and sealed with the seal of my coat-of-arms, and countersigned by the undersigned secretary. Given in the camp at Planques, 16 June 1640. Don Felipe de Sylva. By order of John Felipe, my commander. Don Pedro Luya de Monteya.

Copy of the order sent by Don Felipe to Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 39, fol. 85.

1628.

1640. June 20. Ghent. Appointment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill to govern Arras. "Don Ferdinand by the grace of God Infante of Spain etc. Whereas the army of the most Christian King has taken up positions around the town of Arras in order to lay siege to it, and it is necessary for the service of my Lord the King to appoint a man of known valour and military experience to command the forces which are at present and in future may be in the said garrison; and whereas we esteem in such wise the merits found in your person, Eugenio Oneill, colonel of a regiment of infantry, and your great experience in war, along with the particular zeal you have always shown in the service of his Majesty; we have resolved that you shall govern the military who are, or in future may be in the said town, for such time as the enemy shall hold it besieged. And that you may do so in the manner necessary, we order and command all the military who are, or in future may be in the said garrison, and each and every officer of whatsoever birth, rank, nation, or condition, to have and to hold you as such governor, obeying, fulfilling, and executing such orders as you shall give, as though they were our own; and the council and magistrates of the said town, and the council of war which has been established there during the siege, are to afford you whatsoever help you may request and find necessary for the defence of the said town, as is fitting, and as we expect from the solicitude with which such faithful vassals of his Majesty should support his royal service in such conditions. Wherefore we order the despatch of these present, signed with our name, sealed with our seal, and countersigned by Don Miguel de Salamanca, knight of the Order of St James, supreme magistrate of Burgos, Steward of our Household, member of the Council of the Exchequer of his Majesty, and his Secretary of State about our person. Given at Ghent,



20 June 1640. The Cardinal Infante. By order of his Highness, Martin de Ivarra. EG., reg. 39, fol. 84.\*

**1629.** 1640. June 28. Brussels. Letter of Andrés Cantelmo. Mentions that Don Eugenio Oneil will march to Bapaume with his regiment to assist in the defence of that town. EA., liasse 2071. 3.

**1630.** 1640. June 29. London. de Cardenas, de Velada, and de Malvezzi to Don Ferdinand. The letters of 3 June from his Highness concerning the recruiting of 3,000 Irishmen have been received, and representations on the matter have been made to the King of England. EGC., reg. 377, fol. 18-19.

**1631.** 1640. June 29. London. de Velada to Virgilio de Malvezzi. He has seen by the letters of his Highness [Don Ferdinand] which he has received by this courier, that if the Irishmen are not able to serve in this campaign there is no great eagerness in Flanders about the negotiations. Nevertheless, he encloses an agreement which he has signed with a gentleman of birth, and of sufficient following to give hope that he can perform his promises. Asks for a decided answer, to enable him to come to an agreement with this man, and in any case, he wishes the return of the document.

Noted in a different hand: 1640. July 10. From the camp. It is the opinion of President Roose, and of Fr Juan de San Augustin, that answer should be sent to the Marquis that as these men could not serve in the present campaign, it is of no further advantage to negotiate for them. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 45-7v.

**1632.** 1640. July 2. Lille, Orders to transfer the place and pay of Cormac Ffyny, musketeer, from the company of Captain Bernard Oneyl, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyl, to the garrison at Nieuport. EG., reg. 39, fol. 39v.

**1633.** 1640. July 11. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Captain Richard de Burgo, an Irishman, has returned to Flanders, whence he had come to this country to raise a company of soldiers of his nation. He remained here for some months, during which time he laboured much and went to much expense, as he informed me, but has not been able to effect the levy, on account of the present troubles in England, and for other reasons, of which he will inform your Highness. I beg your Highness to do everything possible to help him, as on account of his person and birth, and the services of his father and uncles who died in his Majesty's service, he is deserving of this, and I myself shall be particularly well pleased by any favour which your Highness may bestow upon him.

In margin, in the hand of de Cardenas: I very sincerely beg your Highness to favour this gentleman's requests, as he shows himself greatly attached to his Majesty's service. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 274.

**1634.** 1640. July 15, From the camp near Arras. Commission to George Hovenden, adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyl, as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the



death of Captain James Furlong; has served his Majesty for twenty years in these States, and has distinguished himself on all occasions, especially at the siege and capture of Breda, at the fortifying of Sanvliet, the campaign of Veluwe, the siege and capture of Speier, the withdrawal from the Palatinate, the relief of St Omer, and the defence during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 53.

**1635.** 1640. Aug. 2. London. Alonso de Cardenas, de Velada, and de Malvezzi, to Don Ferdinand. de Cardenas has interviewed the Lord Deputy of Ireland about the recruiting of 3,000 Irishmen. The Lord Deputy said that the King of England was dissatisfied about those who hitherto had been in command of the Irish regiments, naming the Earl of Tyrone and the Earl of Tyrconnell, and Eugenio Oneill. He had named two or three others whom he would propose in their place, and so facilitate the grant of permission to recruit.\* EGC., reg. 377, fol. 38.

**1636.** 1640. Aug. 14. From the camp at Ognies. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Thadeus Barragan, of the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Juan Ladron de Guevara, regiment of the Count de Salazar; to serve in the castle at Ghent, as on account of his great age and his infirmities he is unable to serve in the field. EG., reg. 39, fol. 48.

**1637.** 1640. Aug. 17. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at La Bassée to receive Colonel Patrick Fitzgerald, with five companies of his regiment. EA., liasse 2090. 1.

**1638.** 1640. Aug. 26. From the camp at Ognies. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Ambrose Dalton, of the company of Captain Nicholas Dalton, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oniel; has served his Majesty for some time, after the example of the said Captain his father. EG., reg. 39, fol. 62v.

**1639.** 1640. Aug. 26. From the camp at Ognies, Special grant of one crown monthly to Terence Oneyll; recently, when the town of Arras was under siege by the enemy, he had entered a mine which had been made, and had returned with two prisoners, and all the tools which were in the mine. EG., reg. 39, fol. 65.

**1640.** 1640. Aug. 26. Ognies. Martin de Inarra to the Secretary of the Audience. Has received orders from the Cardinal Infante, Don Ferdinand, to instruct the Secretary to speak to the Cardinal about the enclosed petition<sup>1</sup> of Sarah Oneill. EA., liasse 2083. 2.

<sup>1</sup>Missing.

**1641.** 1640. Aug. 28. Brussels. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Querredi Mac Brien, soldier of the company of Captain Malachy Omorro, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; in the town of Arras during the siege he had been badly wounded in the first sally made against the trenches of the enemy. EG., reg. 39, fol. 65.

**1642.** 1640. Aug. 28. From the camp at Ognies. Special grant of one crown monthly to John Odoyre, of the company of Captain John



Oneyll, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; during the siege at Arras had twice entered into the enemy's mines, and had taken from them all the instruments and two miners, who were brought back to the town as prisoners. EG., reg. 39, fol. 72.

- 1643.** 1640. Aug. 29. From the camp at Ognies. The Secretary of the Audience to the Prelate of Dunes. The enclosed petition has been sent to the Cardinal by damoiselle Sarah de Oneill, and his Highness has commanded me to send it to you, and instruct you in his name to use your influence with the Abbess named therein, that this suppliant may be received as a nun. Besides the virtuous act which you and the Abbess will thereby have performed, his Highness will be very greatly pleased by the good duty you will have shown. EA., liasse 2102. 1.
- 1644.** 1640. Aug. 29. From the camp at Ognies. Passport for Philip Roche and John Coppinger, Irish gentlemen, to travel to France and Italy, with two servants and their baggage and belongings, upon presentation of this passport, which is valid for six months. EAP., 1630-55, fol. 45.
- 1645.** 1640. Aug. 30. From the camp at Ognies. Orders to confirm the appointment of Henry Oneyll, of the company of Captain Constantine Oneyll, as ensign of his company; has been nominated for the post by his captain. EG., reg. 39, fol. 66.
- 1646.** 1640. Sept. 1. From the camp at Ognies. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Walter de la Hoyd, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyll; has served his Majesty for forty years, the first four years during the wars in Ireland, and the others as captain, distinguishing himself on all occasions; and lastly during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 75v.
- 1647.** 1640. Sept. 3. From the camp at Ognies. Special grant of two crowns monthly to Holan MacCotoli, of the company of Captain Bernard Oneyll, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EG., reg. 39, fol. 73v.
- 1648.** 1640. Sept. 3. Ognies. Martin de Inarra to the Secretary of the Audience. Colonel Eugenio Oneill has represented to the Cardinal Infant Don Ferdinand that in the town of Bapaume there are many Irishmen, who have been captured or have surrendered, who could serve in his regiment, which is greatly reduced in numbers. The Cardinal orders that the Secretary is to write to the governor of Bapaume to hand over these men to the representative whom Don Eugenio shall send. EA., liasse 2083. 2.
- 1649.** 1640. Sept. 6. Ognies. Commission to Ensign Bernard Oneyll as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill which is vacant by the promotion of Captain Henry Oneill to a company of Horse; he has served his Majesty for some years, and has distinguished himself on all occasions, especially during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 76v.
- 1650.** 1640. Sept. 6. Ognies. Special grant of one crown monthly to Theobald Mac Edmondo, of the company of Captain George



Hovenden; was wounded in his right leg by a musket discharge during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 73v.

- 1651.** 1640. Sept. 7. From the camp at Ognies. Orders to the authorities at Nieuport to billet a company of 100 Irish infantry to be recruited in that town by Richard de Burgo. EA., liasse 2092.2.
- 1652.** 1640. Sept. 8. From the camp at Ognies. Orders to the mayor to hand over to the representative who will be sent by Colonel Eugenio Oneill the Irishmen who are in the town of Bapaume, both those who have been made prisoners and those who have surrendered. EA., liasse 2071. 2.
- 1653.** 1640. Sept. 8. Ognies. Commission to Ensign John Daniel as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, with pay of 25 crowns monthly. EG., reg. 39, fol. 76.
- 1654.** 1640. Sept. 18. From the camp at Reverat. Petition of Edward Butler, captain of one of the companies lately raised for the regiment being formed by Colonel Patrick Geraldin. Represents that whereas he has been charged in the accounts for thirty eight uniforms granted to him by an order of 28 July last, for the same number of Irish soldiers who had surrendered from the French army and had been assigned to his company he has been informed that such grant was never made. He asks therefore for the grant of the equivalent amount of money, namely six crowns for each man, to enable him to provide them with their uniforms, and supply their needs.  
His request is to be granted, and the money is to be issued from the pay due to the men. EG., reg. 39, fol. 93.
- 1655.** 1640. Sept. 22. From the camp at Reverat. Special grant of one crown monthly to Telac Odoyn, of the company of Captain Bernard Oneill. EG., reg. 39, fol. 86.
- 1656.** 1640. Sept. 23. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Richard Savoy, of the company of Captain Constantine Oneill. EG., reg. 39, fol. 87.
- 1657.** 1640. Sept. 23. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Egmondo Macra, of the company of Captain Denis la loyd, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyll. EG., reg. 39, fol. 87.
- 1658.** 1640. Sept. 23. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Richard Sancy, of the company of Captain Constantine Oneill. EG., reg. 39, fol. 88.
- 1659.** 1640. Sept. 23. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Thomas Maccoremocq, of the company of Captain Constantine Oneill; has served in these parts for many years, and especially during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 88.
- 1660.** 1640. Sept. 24. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Cahir Omolloy, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneyll. EG., reg. 39, fol. 87.



- 1661.** 1640. Sept. 24. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Deincio Confin, of the company of Captain Dermot Constantine. EG., reg. 39, fol. 88.
- 1662.** 1640. Sept. 24. From the camp at Reverat. Grant of one crown monthly to Thadeus Cornelis, of the company of Captain Richard Nugent, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill; has served for some years in these parts, especially during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 88.
- 1663.** 1640. Sept. 25. From the camp at Reverat. Licence for Ireland to Richard Wal, of the company of Captain Malachy Omorra; is wounded in the left hand and unable for further service. EG., reg. 39, fol. 89v.
- 1664.** 1640. Sept. 28. From the camp at Reverat. Grant to Captain Walter de la Hoyd. As under 1 Sept. 1640, with the addition: to serve in the Irish infantry with the company of Captain Thomas Staniers, regiment of the Earl of Tyrone.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 39, fol. 91v.
- 1665.** 1640. Sept. 28. From the camp at Reverat. Special grant of one crown monthly to Neil Omoris, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneyll; has served for some time in these parts, especially during the siege of Arras. EG., reg. 39, fol. 92.
- 1666.** 1640. Oct. 3. Brussels. The Chancellor and members of his Majesty's Council to Don Ferdinand. Enclose a petition of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, who wish to obtain the privilege of mortmain for a small house and garden adjoining their garden and cemetery. They enclose likewise the opinion of the Collector for the Domains of his Majesty, and of the magistrates, council, and other representatives of the said town, stating that the house and garden in question comprise altogether two roods of forty feet, more or less. It was bought for six hundred florins in one payment, and consequently is of little importance, but is absolutely necessary to the Irish Franciscans to enable them to free their church and house from the dirt and nuisances daily committed there by the children and people of low condition. For this reason the petition should be granted, and the Council finds no reason to the contrary except the very strict prohibition of his Majesty and of Don Ferdinand against granting the right to acquire immoveable property by those who enjoy the privilege of mortmain. The Chancellor and members of the Council hope that so pious a purpose will incline his Highness to grant the petition, and in view of the smallness of the property, to dispense from the said prohibition for this time only, and without prejudice. Passed by Boisshot. Signed: G. van Ghindertaelen. CP., carton 1168.
- 1667.** 1640. Oct. 12. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Diego de la Torre, secretary to Don Ferdinand. Colonel Eugenio Oneyll has complained that the governor of Nieuport has raised difficulties about quartering in that town the Irishmen whom

<sup>1</sup>Sic.



Richard de Burgo has brought over from England. EA., liasse 2083. 2.

1668.

1640. Oct. 26. Brussels. Fr Hugh de Burgo, O.F.M., to President Roose. Had wished to be able to offer him in person for his success the prayers of his poor religious and chaplains, of the college of St Anthony of Padua at Louvain, but the President's many duties are but little compatible with unnecessary verbal compliments. Assures him that remembrance of him holds the highest place in all the sacrifices and prayers of the said chaplains. A memorial has been sent recently to his Highness relating to a small house adjoining the college, which is of no use to his Majesty but is a hindrance to the peace and quiet of the religious, as will appear from the reports which have been already sent in. Encloses a second copy of the report, as there has been delay in answering the first, which was sent twenty days ago but may easily have gone astray, as his Highness is continually on the move in the country. Asks the President's friendly interest in the matter, and his cooperation in securing an early solution. CP., reg. 34. fol. 158.

1669.

1640. Oct. 26. London. de Velada, Virgilio de Malvezzi and Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. We have seen the royal dispatch of your Highness to the Marquis de Velada dated the 10th of this month, in which you are pleased to command that negotiations should be undertaken for these giments of this nation which are serving in the Low Countries, and at present are so badly undermanned. In answer, we have to report to your Highness that the difficulty shown here about granting levies of this nation is such that as his Majesty commanded us with all earnestness to procure them by every means possible, in order to send them to Spain, in execution of this command we made every possible effort during the past months, and obtained a levy of 3,000, which however has been impeded for the purpose of enforcing the loan which they wish for. In addition to this, the events of the war in Scotland have supervened, which obliged the King to go to York, accompanied by the Viceroy, and during his absence nothing can be done. The latest reports say that the King will return in ten or twelve days, which will facilitate the negotiations, and we shall take them in hand with the greatest diligence, as this is so greatly desired by your Highness, and is so greatly to the service of his Majesty. We ask your Highness to consider, in case we are granted the number of men for which you have ordered us to negotiate to send them to Spain (concerning which we are well aware of the great difficulty) whether your Highness would make known his wish whether they are to be sent to Spain or to Flanders.

Dorso: Brussels. 1 Nov. 1640. Concerning this, the great need has been represented in which we stand of these men, while we understand the difficulties to be overcome in England. However,



if it could be successfully carried through, it would be a great advantage to his Majesty's service, and the number of men could be divided, and half of them could be sent to Spain, as his Majesty has been so insistent in the matter, and has written to Don Miguel de Salamanca to ask for the levy. There is great anxiety to know whether his Majesty has given an answer about the loan, as no information has been received here. If the decision taken is satisfactory to the English, we could hope for the grant of the levy. EGC., reg. 377, fol. 207-209v.

- 1670.** 1640. Nov. 1. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Letters of recommendation of Captain James Geraldin, who had been sent to London by Patrick Geraldin, as his major, to assist in the recruiting of men. It has not been possible to carry out this recruiting on account of the circumstances in England, and Major Geraldin wishes to return to Flanders, where he served his Majesty previously for nine years. EGC., reg. 371, fol. 309.
- 1671.** 1640. Nov. 9. Brussels. Orders to Colonel Geraldin to proceed to Ypres with six companies of his regiment. EA., liasse 2071. 3.
- 1672.** 1640. Nov. 15. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Ypres that a company of Irish infantry is to be raised in that town by Captain Denis Mahon from the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EA., liasse 2092. 2.
- 1673.** 1640. Nov. 15. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Miguel de Salamanca. Don Ferdinand has instructed him to convey to de Salamanca that he is to dispatch a further order to Don Eugenio Oneil, that without further delay he is to leave the royal hospital at Douai for Valenciennes, in conformity with the orders his Highness has already given. EA., liasse 2083. 2.
- 1674.** 1640, Nov. 17. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Cajetan Callaghan; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry lately raised by Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 3v.
- 1675.** 1640. Nov. 17. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate John de Burgo; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of Colonel Patrick de Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 4.
- 1676.** 1640. Dec. 5. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Cornelius de Cleri, whose company has been disbanded. EG., reg. 40, fol. 3v.
- 1677.** 1640. Dec. 5. Brussels. Orders to pay for the billets of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin, so that the men may be given half-pay, like the men of the other regiments. EG., reg. 40, fol. 33.
- 1678.** 1640. Dec. 9. Brussels. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 4v.
- 1679.** 1640. Dec. 11. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Florence Carti, of the disbanded company of Captain



James Gefry, of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 3v.

- 1680.** 1640. Dec. 11. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to the Council of Brabant. In answer to their representations of 3 October last concerning the petition of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain for the privilege of mortmain for a property adjoining their house: in view of the express orders of his Majesty, and of the consequences which would follow from such a grant, their request cannot be granted, if only because it would dispose some of the other prelates to return to the public and free from mortmain a like amount of property which they have at their disposal.
- Read at the Council of Brabant in answer to their opinion on the petition of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain. CP., carton 1168.
- 1681.** 1640. Dec. 22. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain James Gefri, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 16.
- 1682.** 1640. Dec. 26. Brussels. Pay of ten crowns monthly to Licentiate Denis Cleri; to serve as a chaplain of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 36v.
- 1683.** 1641. Jan. 4. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Captain Mauro MacMahon, an Irish gentleman, has represented to me that he has served your Majesty in these parts for thirty one years, the first five years in the royal fleet, and the others in these States, where he has been present on all occasions which presented themselves, and as I am informed, behaved always to the greatest satisfaction of his commanding officers. He has certain reasons for going to the Court at Madrid, about which he has begged me to intercede with your Majesty, as I willingly do. I beg your Majesty in all earnestness to be pleased to show him honour and reward him, as this will be a fitting return for his valour and services, and for the satisfactory manner in which he continues to serve.\* EGC., reg. 227, fol. 1.
- 1684.** 1641. Jan. 11. Brussels. Miguel de Salamanca to the Secretary of the Audience. The regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin, which consists of about 300 men, is to embark for Spain at Dunkirk, The Cardinal Infante directs that orders are to be sent at once for the necessary transport from Ypres, where the regiment is at present, to Dunkirk. EA., liasse 2083. 3.
- 1685.** 1641. Jan. 15. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Ferdinand. On account of the great need there is to enlarge the army in Cantabria, and to increase the numbers of the men in the regiments of all nationalities above their actual strength, it has seemed proper that you should appoint some trustworthy and suitable men in Flanders, and arrange that in all ships coming to Spain (besides what has been asked for in my other letters) there be sent one hundred or eighty or fifty men, as shall be possible. This is to be arranged with the masters of the ships, who will land the men at one of the Spanish ports, if not in Portugal. And let whosoever



is charged with this be authorised to determine the amount of the pay to be given the men, as it is more convenient that they should receive a part of it there, and the remainder in Spain. It is to be arranged that they shall all land on the coast of Cantabria, on account of the need there for tried men and veterans, to ensure success. I also order that the ships which come from you are to send Irishmen and Walloons, even though in small numbers only, and that you continue to do this whenever any ship shall sail. EGC., reg. 227, fol. 74.

- 1686.** 1641. Jan. 17. Brussels. Orders to issue his present pay to Colonel Eugenio Oneyll every month, and punctually, until he is granted some other pay. EG., reg. 40, fol. 65.
- 1687.** 1641. Jan. 18. London. Alonso de Cardenas, de Velada and de Malvezzi to Don Ferdinand. As your Highness may be pleased to notice from another dispatch of this date, Cottington has informed us that if a few colonels were sent over here to arrange for the transport, it would be possible to raise a new levy from the Irish who were recruited by the King, and whom he has disbanded and left free to go away.\* In view of the great difficulties which have always been met with in this affair of recruits, and of the great need we have of them not only for Flanders but also for Spain, especially at present owing to the new trouble in Portugal, we have thought well to beg your Highness that from the subsidies you have informed us are held ready in the Low Countries, to help us in our negotiations, 50,000 crowns, or the largest sum possible, be sent to us with the least possible delay, and then that Francisco de Mello be sent over, as we have begged before. If your Highness should so order, the money can be returned, minus the cost of the levy, or the whole sum in case you should not need the men. Success in this depends for the most part on expedition, for if the occasion be allowed to pass, it will scarcely recur; and if France should hear of it, she will not neglect to get the men at any cost, in order to deprive us of them, whereby the service of his Majesty will suffer gravely. EGC., reg. 377, fol. 270-73v.
- 1688.** 1641. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for England, for two months, to Captain Constantine Oneyll, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyll; he has heard that his brother has been made prisoner or has died in the wars in Scotland, and it is important that he should go to England to secure his possessions. EG., reg. 40, fol. 75.
- 1689.** 1641. Jan. 22. Brussels. Special grant of thirty crowns to the company of Irish infantry lately raised by Captain Denis Mahuno for the regiment of Colonel Patricio Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 63.
- 1690.** 1641. Jan. 24. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. Letters of commendation for Baron Albert de Gleanomalun. The Baron had come to England with the intention of going to Spain, but was unable to continue his journey on



account of a long illness. He wishes now to return to Flanders to serve his Majesty, and he deserves favour on account of the services rendered by his father. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 14.

- 1691.** 1641. Jan. 24. London. de Velada to Miguel de Salamanca. Letters of commendation for the bearer, Albert Baron of Gleanomalun, only son of Baron Gleanomalun and Querchy, late peer and lord of the realm of the kingdom of Ireland, knight of the Order of Calatrava, and gentleman-in-waiting to his Majesty. He wishes to serve his Majesty in the army. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 252.
- 1692.** 1641. Jan. 28. London. Virgilio de Malvezzi to Miguel de Salamanca. Letters of commendation for Baron Gleanomalun. EGC., reg. 378, fol. 362.
- 1693.** 1641. Feb. 10. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Ferdinand. In a letter of 23 October of last year de Velada reports that the negotiations with an Irish gentleman for levies have produced no results, because the Council of Finances would give no security for the money asked for. On account of the need of this levy the Marquis de Velada is ordered to continue negotiations, if he is still in England. If he should have left, de Cardenas is ordered to negotiate. Let them both be told that Don Ferdinand will provide whatever is necessary.
- Note in the hand of Don Ferdinand: This letter is about the levy which the Marquis de Velada tried to arrange with an Irish gentleman. Let the receipt of it be acknowledged, and inform his Majesty of the levies which Don Cardenas is arranging. EGC., reg. 227, fol. 228.
- 1694.** 1641. Feb. 20. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Baron Cornelius Kenedi, on business to his own advancement. EG., reg. 40, fol. 119v.
- 1695.** 1641. Feb. 23. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pension and services of Captain John Comerfort from the Spanish infantry of the Duke of Albuquerque to the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 126.
- 1696.** 1641. Feb. 27. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Ensign Robert Oferol, of the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneil; is a soldier of the Earl of Tyrone, but was ill when the company went to Spain, and now wishes to rejoin it. EG., reg. 40, fol. 131v.
- 1697.** 1641. Mar. 1. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Stephen Elfort; to serve as chief surgeon of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., reg. 40, fol. 164v.
- 1698.** 1641. Mar. 2. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. Hugo Bruin, an Irishman, came here from Spain to get a licence from the King of England to recruit 2,000 Irishmen; but although he tried with all diligence and care, he has not been able to get the licence on account of the happenings in this country. As he wishes to go to the Court of Flanders, I have been pleased to give him this letter, to afford him an opportunity of kissing



your hands, and I beg you to favour him whenever an opportunity may arise on account of the zeal and affection he has shown for his Majesty's service, and on account of his birth and good parts.\* EGC., reg. 372, fol. 59.

1699.

1641. Mar. 4. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Ferdinand. After I had ordered that a hearing should be given to Fr William Geraldino, a friar, and brother of Patrick Geraldino, concerning the recruiting of Irishmen, which you suggested to me, and in consideration of the need of men we have everywhere, I have come to the conclusion that it will be well for Don Patrick to carry out the levy of 3,000 men, as he has offered. You will have the report of the religious examined there, and if Don Patrick is disposed to carry out this levy effectively and in the manner proposed, he may be given a further 4,000 crowns, for which he must give security as he did for the other 4,000 crowns delivered to him; and he may be given the five blank commissions enclosed. The commission for the head chaplain and the other officers you may give yourself, all on the supposition, as I have said, that he carries out his levy effectually.

In margin: Tournai. 11 July. Let these papers be kept carefully for the arrival of Patrick Geraldino.

1700.

Enclosed: Madrid. 28 Feb. 1641. [a]. By a letter dated the 3 of this month your Majesty was pleased to order the examination of the proposals made in a memorial by Fr William Geraldino, a friar, and that after I had heard him, I should give my opinion did this appear necessary. I have done as your Majesty commanded, and have heard all that the religious wished to say about the levy of the regiment of Patrick Geraldino his brother. He presented to me a report of Claudio de Leon, drawn up on 20 June this year, according to which there are fifty officers (at ten crowns each) in five companies, and 389 Irish soldiers, recruited by the said Patrick. He also presented an attestation of Andrea Cantelmo, dated 13 July of this year, according to which Cantelmo has been instructed to march to any place as he shall be ordered.

[b]. This is what he has to add to the report I made to your Majesty in August last year. I myself have to add that (considering that the dangers and the want of men in Flanders are so great, as they are known to be) if Don Patrick survive the siege of Arras, he should not neglect to complete the levy, since he has begun it, for in this way nothing would be lost; and if he could get the men he needs, and bring their number up to 1,000 as he promised, that nation would be the more surely won over altogether.

[c]. He has asked for money, as he says he has spent the four thousand crowns delivered to him, and as he has recruited 389 soldiers and 50 officers, each one comes to a little more than nine crowns. The only objection is that he undertakes to collect the men from those who are serving in France and Holland, and here



there is a perceptible difficulty. There will be a similar difficulty about recruiting in Ireland, as he has no licence for this from the King of England, and it is not likely that the Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand will allow Don Patrick to avail himself of the licence which the ambassadors have secured from the King to recruit 3,000 Irishmen, since this cost the skill and money of which your Majesty is aware. I sum up my opinion therefore by representing to your Majesty that information about all this should be given to Don Ferdinand, and to Miguel de Salamanca, and that they should be told that if Don Patrick should survive the siege of Arras, they should see if he is disposed to continue his recruiting of this regiment, and if so, they should give him a further 4,000 crowns, for which he will give security as he did for the other 4,000 crowns they gave him. Should he not be disposed, the five commissions should not be given to him. As is said in my report in August, I have no objection against sending the blank commissions to Flanders, or against sending word to the Cardinal Infante, that the commissions he asks for, for the head-chaplain and the officers of the regiment, be granted to him when the regiment will have been recruited.

Dorso: Copy of the consultation of Pedro de Arze concerning the levy to be made by Patrick Geraldin. To be sent to the Cardinal Infante. EGC., reg. 227, fol. 271ff.

- 1701.** 1641. Mar. 12. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and pay of Patrick Opecan from the company of Captain Malachy Omora to the garrison of Hal. EG., reg. 40, fol. 141.
- 1702.** 1641. Mar. 13. Brussels. Baron Cornelius Kenedy to Don Ferdinand. Represents that he has already received from his Highness licence for Spain, and he now asks of him letters of commendation to his Majesty the King of Spain, in view of the fact that all his property was confiscated, after he himself had suffered a long imprisonment for the Catholic faith.
- Referred to Miguel de Salamanca. Brussels, 13 March 1641. Let letters be granted to him. EGC., reg. 228, fol. 193.
- 1703.** 1641. Mar. 16. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Letters in commendation of Baron Cornelius Kenedy who, as will be seen by his papers, has suffered long imprisonment and confiscation of all his property for the Catholic faith. EGC., reg. 229, fol. 192.
- 1704.** 1641. Mar. 16. Brussels. Orders to renew payment of the grant of twenty five crowns monthly held by Adjutant John Kenedi, and suspended by the licence he had received from the Archduchess Isabella in the year 1631 for Frisia, to place in security a property held there by his wife; has served for fifty years, and is now in the company of Captain Maurice Geraldin, in garrison at Orssoy. The pension had been granted to him in view of the fact that he is a jubilarian. EG., reg. 40, fol. 158v.
- 1705.** 1641. Mar. 20. Brussels. Passport for Spain, to serve there with his company, to Captain Edward Butler of the regiment of



Colonel Patrick Geraldin; has represented that his colonel had entrusted him with some business at the Court of Brussels, and for this reason he was not able to be present when the regiment embarked. EG., reg. 40, fol. 164.

- 1706.** 1641. Mar. 20. Brussels. Orders to transfer the service and grant of Captain Lawrence Geffry from the company of Captain William Butler, in garrison at Ostend, to the garrison at Lierre. EG., reg. 40, fol. 199.
- 1707.** 1641. Mar. 22. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. An Irish gentleman named Moriarto Obrien has obtained a licence from the King of England to form a regiment of 1,500 Irishmen, and the conditions under which he has arranged this are contained in the accompanying memorial, in which are not included £500 which he had to pay the intermediary through whom he obtained the favour. He asks me to deposit this sum of £500, so that he may obtain the licence with the signature of the King of England. Be pleased to give an account of this to his Highness, and should he approve, inform me without delay, and see that £2,500 of this money is sent to me, that both levies may be paid off, if they are carried through.\* EGC., reg. 372, fol. 206.
- 1708.** 1641. Mar. 30. Brussels. Commission to James Geffry as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be recruited for the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin from the soldiers coming from France, Holland and England. EG., reg. 40, fol. 206.
- 1709.** 1641. March. Entries of payments of a pension of 200 livres yearly, in sum total, to Eleonora, Helena, Maria and Brigida Geraldin, daughters of the late William Geraldin, granted to them for life by letters of 4 Jan. 1628. Payments begin in Jan. 1629, and are made to all the four recipients until Feb. 1638, when they are made to Eleonora and Helena only, as Maria and Brigida were in England, In July 1640, all four daughters are again paid. In March 1641, only Helena and Brigida are mentioned, and this is the last entry. CC., reg. 45837, fol. 378 and 390.
- 1710.** 1641. Apr. 6. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Louis Odriscol, pensioner in the royal ocean fleet, to resume service with the fleet; has lately come from Holland. EG., reg. 40, fol. 189.
- 1711.** 1641. Apr. 6. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Henry Oneyll as captain of one of the two companies of Irish infantry to be raised from soldiers of that nation who are wandering lost about the country. EG., reg. 40, fol. 207v.
- 1712.** 1641. Apr. 6. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Gerald Geraldin as captain of one of the two companies of Irish infantry to be raised from soldiers of that nation who are wandering lost about the country. EG., reg. 40, fol. 208.
- 1713.** 1641. Apr. 15. Brussels. Colonel Hugo Obrin to Don Ferdinand. Represents that a commission, which he encloses, was given to him to raise a regiment of Irish infantry of 2,000 men, after an agreement had been made with him that he was to receive twenty



reales for each man. In order to carry this out, he went to England to seek licence there that the King of England would allow the men to leave; and although he used great diligence he was unable to accomplish this, as Marquis Virgilio Malvezzi and Don Alonso de Cardenas testify in the letters he presents, in which they also declare that during the time he was in England he showed the devotion and zeal he has for his Majesty's service. And before his departure for Spain, his Majesty ordered that 20,000 reales, which amounts to half the cost of the said levy, should be paid to Francesco Maria Piquenotti, who holds the sum in trust, to be able to pay it when the levy is finished. And whereas in England he had arranged with certain captains who are in the service of the King of France that 400 or 500 Irish soldiers should be sent to Flanders, for the carrying out of which he holds sufficient security; and whereas, on account of the great expenses he incurred in England, he has no ready money left for that transaction: he begs your Highness that he may be given from the funds of the army in Flanders, as an advance of what is due to him, the amount for the 2,000 men at the rate of six crowns, each of the value of ten reales, which was what he agreed upon with Marquis de Velada and Marquis de Malvezzi, and with Alonso de Cardenas, to enable him to have the said men come from France, and the rest of the 2,000 men come from England. He also begs that orders be given to have quarters provided at Mont Cassel for the men who are to come from England and Ireland and at Béthune and la Bassée for the men who have come from France, for the term of six weeks; and that the men be provided with rations until they are received into the pay and service of his Majesty; and that the first payment be made at the time of the first muster, as is customary; and hereby he will receive from your Highness the favour for which he hopes.

Dorso: Brussels. 15 April 1641. Colonel Hugo Obrin. To be sent to the Marquis de Velada for his opinion. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 198.

1714. 1641. Apr. 20. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. Constantine Oneill, Irish gentleman, and captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, has been with me, and has shown me the licence he has from his Highness to be absent for two months. He came to this kingdom thinking that a brother of his had died, but he has found that he is still living, and through him he has received permission from the King here to recruit 150 Irishmen to strengthen the regiment of Don Eugenio, of whom he tells me he is a relation. I have seen the licence, signed by the King of Great Britain, and issued with all formality. He has asked me to give him money, and arrange this recruiting with him, to enable him to get the men together immediately at Dunkirk. He has asked eight crowns for each soldier, and assures me that he will be able to recruit at least



as many more. As he is a relation of Don Eugenio, in Flanders, and is himself an active captain, I have persuaded him to try to arrange the price in Flanders, while the men are being recruited, and I have assured him that he will be treated as the rest are. In order not to waste time, and so that he may have some means with which to start these men off, whom he says he will recruit in this Court in fifteen days from now, I have offered to help with exactly the amount the men will need to travel to Dunkirk, upon his giving me a guarantee that he will secure this. I beg you to give an account of this to his Highness, and to have instructions sent to me at once as to whether the transactions may be arranged in this way, as I think there will be time to receive an answer before the men are sent over. In case his Highness should approve, it will be necessary to have orders sent at once to Dunkirk, to have the men received there and treated like the rest. As the courier has left, I am sending another after him, so as to gain a week, as the time is already far advanced.

Postscript by de Cardenas: I beg you to have the answer sent at once. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 172.

1715.

1641. Apr. 22. Brussels. Commission to Raymund Roche as captain of a company of Irish infantry. Had been sent to Ireland by Colonel Patrick Geraldin to recruit the company, and had sent twenty six men to Flanders just before Christmas last, but they had gone to Spain with Colonel Geraldin's regiment. He has now arrived at Dunkirk with a further nineteen Irishmen, and expects fifty others. He asks for his commission in order that the company may be formed at once and sent to Spain to serve. EG., reg. 40, fol. 226.

1716.

1641. Apr. 24. Brussels. de Velada to de la Torre. The arrangements made in Spain by Hugo Obrin will appear from his contract. I know that he has received licence in England for his levy, and I am aware that this was at a time when it might have appeared impossible. He made the offer that through an acquaintance of his 400 Irishmen would pass over from the French army to ours, and in order to enable him to send a confidant of his to arrange this, he was assisted by some money from Marquis Virgilio, who will keep an account of everything. If Obrin performs this service, as he offers, he should receive recognition, and the sum offered to him does not seem much. It would be well to communicate with an official at the French frontier, that he may arrange for the proper carrying out of the plan. It does not seem possible to get men from England or Ireland at present, so the request for quarters may be put aside, as the men who come from France will be either on active service or in garrison. This is my opinion. EGC., liasse 375. 7.

1717.

1641. Apr. 26. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pension of Captain Mauro Mahuno from the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneyll to the garrison at Nieuport. EG., reg. 40, fol. 238.



1718. 1641. Apr. 26. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pension of Edmond Comerfort from the company of Captain Malachy Omorra to the Spanish infantry of Colonel the Duke of Albuquerque. EG., reg. 40, fol. 270v.

1719. 1641. Apr. 28. Brussels. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Don Alonso de Cardenas has informed me that an Irish gentleman named Moriarto Obrien has obtained a licence from the King of England to recruit a regiment of 1,500 Irishmen. The conditions which Don Alonso has made are contained in the memorial enclosed, in which no mention is made of £500 which Obrien had to pay the intermediary through whom he obtained the favour. He asks Don Alonso to deposit this sum, so that he may be given the licence with the King's signature. Don Alonso also asks that £2,500 of the money be sent to him, and gives an assurance that as regards this levy and that of the Earl of Heriss (concerning which I write in a separate letter) he anticipates that he will procure it, with great confidence, and that this should be taken into consideration by the Ministers who assist me. de Cardenas has also written that although Anthony Morgan had licence from the King, and had much support from others, and it is now four months since he began to recruit, only 224 men have crossed over to Flanders, although his contract had been paid punctually and good quarters had been assigned. The difficulty seems to be due to the bad condition of things in England, and besides this, it is well known that Parliament presented a memorial to the King opposing the levy which Morgan was making; and de Cardenas thinks the same will be done in the case of the Earl of Heriss, and Moriarto Obrien. For this reason any decision about Obrien's levy has been suspended until de Cardenas has given his opinion:

1720. Enclosed: Articles and conditions proposed to Don Alonso de Cardenas, ambassador of his Catholic Majesty in England, by Moriarto Obrien, an Irish gentleman, upon which he offers to go to Spain and serve with a regiment of 1,500 Irishmen, for which he holds a licence from the King of England:

[a]. That in consideration of and for the cost of recruiting 1,500 soldiers, carrying them to Spain, to the port of Coruña, or to any other of the ports on the coast of Biscay as shall be determined, he shall be given £3,000 sterling, of which he shall receive £2,000 immediately upon the signing of the agreement, and the remaining £1,000 within eight days from the disembarkation of the troops at the port in Spain as aforesaid.

[b]. That the said Moriarty Obrien shall be given a commission as colonel, signed by his Catholic Majesty or by his Royal Highness the Cardinal Infante, with all the privileges, immunities, and prerogatives enjoyed by other colonels, and that in his regiment there shall be a head-chaplain, and the other chaplains necessary for the administration of the sacraments, as is customary.

[c]. That in like manner his Majesty, or his Highness, shall



send him commissions for a major and twelve captains, whom he himself shall name, and amongst whom the men of the said regiment shall be divided.

[d]. That if more than 1,500 soldiers be recruited, eight crowns shall be paid for each man, which is the price of the said 1,500 divided into the £3,000.

[e]. That when the said soldiers shall have disembarked at some Spanish port, some recompense shall be given to him for the long journey and the perils of the seas of Spain and Ireland.

[f]. That for the soldiers who shall be shipwrecked, or shall die before reaching Spain, or shall fall out for any reason, he shall be paid nothing, as everything is at the risk of the said Moriarty Obrien.

[g]. That within fifteen days of their arrival at the Spanish port, a muster of the men shall be held, and their destination assigned them, so that they may be placed upon the pay-roll; the ordinary assistance to be given them in the meantime.

[h]. That the equipment of the soldiers shall be at the account and expense of his Majesty.

[i]. That he shall be obliged to recruit these men within four months, to be reckoned from the day upon which he shall have received the £2,000 in advance, for which he offers the security of the richest gentleman of Holland at this Court.

[j]. That the regiment shall not be disbanded even though it shall come to have only 600 or 700 men, as he obliges himself to recruit for it, so that it shall always number 1,500; the cost of recruiting to be borne by his Majesty, at the rate of eight crowns for each soldier. EGC., reg. 228, fol. 390-92.

1721. 1641. May 4. Brussels. Diego de la Torre to Captain Rodolfo de Novara. The Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand has ordered that quarters are to be prepared at Audenarde for the Irish company of Captain Geffry. EA., liasse 2083. 3.

1722. 1641. May 6. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for four months to Ensign Dermot Carti, of the company of Captain Dermot Constantino, with continuation of his pay; has been appointed by Colonel Eugenio O'Neill to recruit 400 men, for whom the King of England has granted his licence. EG., reg. 40, fol. 318v.

1723. 1641. May 7. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Audenarde to receive and billet Captain Geffry, and the officers and men of the new company to be raised. EA., liasse 2092. 3.

1724. 1641. May 8. Brussels. Orders to confirm the appointment of John Goghan, of the company of Captain Dermot Constantino, as ensign of that company; nominated by his captain. EG., reg. 40, fol. 266v.

1725. 1641. May 8. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to the religious of the Irish college at Louvain as payment of a chaplain to serve the unattached company of Irish infantry of Captain William Butler; the chaplain to be named by the superior of the



college and appointed by the vicar-general of the army. The former chaplain had been promoted to serve as senior chaplain to the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin, which has now gone to Spain, and it is not possible to find a secular chaplain of the same nation. EG., reg. 40, fol. 276v.

1726.

1641. May 10. Brussels. Orders for the payment of 2,400 crowns, recruiting expenses, to Colonel Eugenio Oneyll, for the recruiting of Irish soldiers whom he will have brought over from England to strengthen the companies of his regiment; to do which he has bound himself in the following terms:

[a]. That he is to be paid six crowns, each crown of the value of ten reales, for each of the men who shall reach the town of Dunkirk (although hitherto it has not been usual to pay more than two crowns) on account of the scarcity of men, and the present difficulty of bringing them over from England.

[b]. That he shall be given beforehand as much money as will pay for 400 men, with the stipulation that until he will have brought over this number he shall be paid nothing more than this amount; and if he shall bring over a greater number than this, he shall be paid at the rate of six and one half crowns for each man.

[c]. That he shall be assigned quarters in the neighbourhood of Dunkirk for the term of one month, to be reckoned from the day of the arrival of the first batch of men; and when the men shall have reached the number of 150, they shall be admitted to pay, and shall be given arms, and their first payment, as is customary; whereupon they shall march away to their regiment. The same shall be done in like manner afterwards, the quarters to remain available.

[d]. That while the men are in these quarters they shall be paid seven placas daily, and be granted army rations; an officer of the regiment to be present with them, to keep account thereof.

[e]. That three captains, the same number of ensigns, and two sergeants, shall go to carry out the recruiting; and they shall be given the same amount of money for the journey as was given to the officers who were to have gone on the first occasion to recruit men for the four regiments which were then in these States. EG., reg. 40, fol. 272.

1727.

1641. May 14. Brussels. A list of chaplains who had served without any pay since the day of their appointment; among others, Licentiate Philip O'Neill, ordinary chaplain of the company of Colonel Eugenio O'Neill since 6 August 1640. EG., reg. 40, fol. 340v.

1728.

1641. May 16. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, with continuation of his pay, to Captain Bernard O'Neill\*; has been named by Colonel Eugenio O'Neill to recruit 400 men for the levy of whom the King of England has granted his licence. EG., reg. 40, fol. 298v.



- 1729.** 1641. May 16. Brussels. Grant of 150 crowns monthly, to be paid every month and regularly, to Colonel Edward Geraldin; to serve in the Irish infantry; has served his Majesty in Germany, Burgundy, and in these States. EG., reg. 40, fol. 316.
- 1730.** 1641. May 16. Brussels, Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Sergeant John Alerd, of the company of Captain Elano Oneill, with continuation of his pay; has been named by Colonel Eugenio Oneill to recruit 400 men for the levy of whom the King of England has given his licence. EG., reg. 40, fol. 318v.
- 1731.** 1641. May 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, with continuation of his pay, to Sergeant Patrick Clossen, of the company of Captain Constantine Oneill; has been named by Colonel Eugenio Oneill to recruit 400 men for whom the King of England has granted licence. EG., reg. 40, fol. 319v.
- 1732.** 1641. May 20. Brussels. Orders to the Count de Roelux to provide transport for the baggage of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio O Nel from Douai, where he has been in garrison during the last year, to the country of Hainault. EA., liasse 2107.
- 1733.** 1641. May 20. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Nieuport to billet there the Irish soldiers who shall come from England for the company to be raised by Raymond Roche. EA., liasse 2092. 3.
- 1734.** 1641. May 21. Brussels. Orders to transfer the service and pay of John Madden from the company of Colonel Eugenio Oneill to the company of Spanish infantry of Don Jorge de Castelve. EG., reg. 40, fol. 317.
- 1735.** 1641. May 27. Brussels. Commission to Maurice Macdonel as Captain of a company of Irish infantry, 300 strong, to be newly raised. EG., reg. 40, fol. 333v.
- 1736.** 1641. May [28?]. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Ensign Patrick Lalor, of the company of Captain Stephen de la Hoyd, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, with continuation of his pay; has been named by his colonel to recruit 400 men for the levy of whom the King of England has granted his licence. EG., reg. 40, fol. 336v.
- 1737.** 1641. May 28, Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Heyr, of the disbanded company of High German infantry of Baron de Geraldin; to serve in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 40, fol. 323v.
- 1738.** 1641. June 2. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. Since I answered you in the other letter which goes with this dispatch concerning the levy of Irishmen for Spain, your letters of the 14th of this month have been received, in which you urge greater haste in this business, and ask that three or four commissions for colonels be sent to you immediately, and commissions for majors and captains, and some money with which a start can be made. The commissions will be sent to you at once, and concerning the money you will let me know the amount you think necessary,



so that it may be sent to you; and as soon as it shall be necessary I authorise you to take out bills for twelve or fifteen thousand crowns, to be paid here, which will be done at once. EG., reg. 40, fol. 323v.

- 1739.** 1641. June 3. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. I am sending this dispatch in haste, to emphasise the request made to me by the King here, and to make the representations to his Highness which you will see in the dispatches to him . . . And on this occasion it has seemed well to me to beg of you to make sure that we do not lose so good an occasion as has presented itself for taking 6,00 or 7,000 Irishmen to Spain. It has been so difficult to obtain a licence to recruit men that when Marquis de Velada and Marquis Malvezzi were here we offered the King, through Secretary Windebank, eight crowns for every soldier he would permit us to get from Ireland, which for a large number entailed a considerable amount of money. But it was not possible to get them, and if this chance be missed the same will happen again. I have not settled the conditions, as this has been delayed until information arrives of what may be expected from there [Brussels], on which point I am awaiting an answer from you. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 269. Decoded.
- 1740.** Undated. [London]. This evening, at a meeting of the French Resident and some Irish and Scots representatives, the Resident negotiated for 4,000 Scots at four crowns for each soldier during the month of the muster. He asked the representatives to await the arrival of the French ambassador, who would be here within four days. It has been reported that the Spanish ambassador dealt for 7,000 Irishmen, but nothing was decided, as his Excellency had not the money, and bonds only could be offered. The Resident succeeded in obstructing it by offering more money than the Spanish ambassador did, and saying that the French ambassador would bring plenty of it. Dorso: Colonel Alost. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 291.
- 1741.** 1641. June 4. Brussels. A blank commission for a regiment of Irish infantry to be newly formed. EG., reg. 41, fol. 1.
- 1742.** 1641. June 4. Brussels. Blank commission for the major of an Irish regiment to be newly raised. EG., reg. 41, fol. 1.
- 1743.** 1641. June 4. Brussels. A note that thirteen blank commissions are to be issued for two more Irish regiments to be raised. EG., reg. 41, fol. 2.
- 1744.** 1641. June 4. Brussels. Issue of thirty two blank commissions for two other regiments of the Irish nation. EG., reg. 41, fol. 2.
- 1745.** 1641. June 6. Brussels. Orders to Captain James Gefrey to proceed with his company of Irish infantry from Oudenarde to la Bassée. EA., liasse 2077. 3.
- 1746.** 1641. June 8, Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Courtrai to receive and billet Captain Maurice Macdonel and the company of 300 Irishmen he is to recruit. EA., liasse 2092. 3.



- 1747.** 1641. June 10. Lille. Miguel de Salamanca to the Secretary of the Audience. Quarters for the Irishmen whom Colonel Hugo Obrien will collect from the French army will be provided at Béthune and St Omer, and orders to this effect are to be sent to the governors of those towns. EA., liasse 2083. 1.
- 1748.** 1641. June 10. Brussels. Orders to Count d'Isenburg to provide quarters at Béthune and St Omer for the Irish soldiers whom Don Hugo Obrien will collect from the army of the enemy. EA., liasse 2112. 2.
- 1749.** 1641. June 11. Brussels. Issue of three further blank commissions for colonels of the Irish regiments. EG., reg. 41, fol. 2.
- 1750.** 1641. June 11. Brussels. Issue of three further blank commissions for the three majors of the Irish regiments to be newly raised, and of forty two blank commissions for their captains, as altogether there will be six regiments, each regiment with fifteen companies. EG., reg. 41. fol. 2.
- 1751.** 1641. June 12. London. A memorial of the conditions upon which Don Alonso de Cardenas, ambassador of his Catholic Majesty in England, has combined and agreed that Colonel John Butler will go to serve in Spain with a regiment which he offers to raise, to consist of 1,000 Irishmen; for the raising of which regiment he has the licence, already granted, of his Majesty of Great Britain.

[a]. In the first place, that for each soldier put into Spain and disembarked there, or elsewhere on the coast of Biscay as shall be designated, he shall be given thirteen crowns, each of the value of ten reales in silver, two thirds of which shall be paid beforehand in this Court of London or in the city of Dublin, and the third part to be paid at the port in Spain where they shall land. The said ambassador shall give security that the money will be paid when they arrive; and in like manner the said Colonel John Butler shall give security to return the money he will have received if for some reason, foreseen or unforeseen, it shall not be possible to carry out the said levy and convey the men to Spain.

[b]. That the said regiment is not to be disbanded so long as the number of the men shall not fall below five hundred.

[c]. That should a greater number of men than the said one thousand be recruited, the Colonel shall be paid thirteen crowns for each such soldier; and the men shall come under the same terms of agreement, conditions, and pay as are declared concerning the one thousand men.

[d]. That upon their arrival at the port in Spain which shall have been designated, assistance shall be given to both the officers and men, and a muster of the men shall be held and one payment made, in the form and manner usual.

[e]. They when they arrive at the port of Spain agreed upon, without delay they shall be assigned good quarters, as and in the manner usual.



[f]. That should a considerable number of the men die in battle, engagement, encounter, or in any other manner in the service of his Majesty, the said Colonel shall be given time, licence, and money to enable him to recruit, and to reinforce the regiment.

[g]. That for the soldiers who may be shipwrecked or die before they reach Spain, or shall be lost in any other manner, nothing shall be paid, as this risk is to be to the account of the Colonel; and in case the agreement which is being treated of with some ship owners should be made, and they undertake the transport of these men, the risk shall be theirs, and not the Colonel's, who only undertakes to place the said one thousand men on board, and take a receipt before a notary from the ship owner, of the manner in which the Colonel handed the men over.

[h]. That he shall enjoy all the customary privileges and precedence of a colonel, and be on the same footing as the Spaniards, in the same form and manner as the other Irish regiments at present in the service of Spain.

[i]. And upon these conditions the said Don Alonso de Cardenas, ambassador of his Catholic Majesty, in the royal name, and Colonel John Butler, have agreed, concerted, and undertaken, each for his own part, to carry out whatever concerns him in their regard; and they have signed this with their own names and sealed it with their seals, at London, the 12th of June.

The following colonels have agreed upon the same conditions: Viscount Dillon. Viscount Taff. John Barri. Gerardo Barri. George Porter. Richard Plunquett. John Butler. Dermisio Obrien. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 303-4.

1752.

1641. June 13, Brussels. Miguel de Salamanca to the Secretary of the Audience. The Cardinal Infant Don Ferdinand has decided that Ensign Gerald Geraldin and Ensign Henry Oneill may be permitted to raise two companies from the Irishmen who are wandering about the country, and for this the necessary commissions are ready. Orders are to be sent to St Omer concerning the billeting of these men. EA., liasse 2083. 1.

1753.

1641. June 14. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. In my last dispatch I gave your Highness an account of the state of the levies of Irishmen. They are now arranged for, 10,000 men in eight regiments. It has been necessary to shorten the negotiations on account of the arrival here during the next eight days of a French ambassador, who, without any doubt, could greatly upset this business unless the levies were already agreed upon. The conditions of this agreement are the most favourable I could obtain. I send your Highness a copy of them. At present I am dealing with the sending off of these colonels, and for the employment by them of English ships to transport the men. The number of these is so great that I am afraid that if all of them were brought together, their dispatch would be made difficult, and could not be arranged in the short time proper. There would be delay in



bringing so many men together, and so many ships necessary for their transport; and there would be the difficulty of them all assembling in one port in Ireland; apart from the difficulty to be kept in mind, that the French and Dutch might enter with a fleet into the same port from which they would be leaving, and hinder their passage; or fight them when they came out, as happened at the Downes. For these reasons I think the transport of these men would be easier and safer if each regiment went separately, and left from different ports on the other side of St Gregorio's [George's] Channel, where it falls into the ocean. I beg your Highness to order that this be thought out, and advise me of what will be thought best for the safe transport of these Irishmen; and to inform me at once of the port in Spain to which they are to go, so that everything may be arranged with the greater certitude.

For sending off some of these colonels I have made use of the permission your Highness was pleased to grant me, taking out letters for 15,000 crowns, as there is no possibility of supplying any part of the expenses necessary for the levy, and if only the half of the money were advanced, it would not be possible to make the arrangement. I have offered them two parts in advance, without which it was not possible to get them to agree. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 301-302.

1754.

1641. June 15. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. Since I reported to your Majesty at the end of the month about the Irish levies, another letter has been received from Don Alonso de Cardenas, of which a copy is sent with this, in which, with ever greater emphasis he continues to insist that means be sent to him, to enable him to arrange the levies which could be sent to Spain, and that half the costs, amounting to 45,500 crowns, is necessary immediately. In my opinion this levy is not so absolutely certain as it should be, by reason of the facility with which Parliament could thwart it, and on account of the difficulties of Don Alonso about shipping the men, and of the small trust which he says he has in the colonels, to whom money must be paid in advance. However, in order not to fail on my part to procure help for Spain, so far as these steps are possible, I have decided that the levies of Irishmen shall not be impeded for want of anything that can be done here, and consequently, notwithstanding the scarcity of money under which we suffer, I have already written to Don Alonso that within two months he may take out letters for 45,000 crowns, as your Majesty will command to be seen more in particular from the enclosed copy of the letter by which I have answered him. EGC., reg. 229, fol. 6.

1755.

1641. June 23. From the camp at Rochefort. Don Ferdinand to Alonso de Cardenas. Your letters of 2 and 14 June have been received, in which, as I had directed, you answer about the Irish levies, and send a copy of the conditions. Of all this I approve,



and I send you my thanks. It is right, however, that you should foresee the difficulties which may arise from the opposition of Parliament, and from France and Holland, and make the levy of Irishmen impossible. All the conditions you have arranged appear to be good. I charge you only, and again order that you do not relax concerning any of the points to which I have drawn your attention regarding the bonds, which must be strictly on a business basis, and absolutely secure; and on no account are you to accept those of Irish gentlemen, who not only pay no regard to the contract, but help the colonels not to carry out what they have agreed upon. If they were under obligations to business men, they would be more careful about carrying out what his Majesty most wishes, instead of about not returning his money to him. If it cannot be returned, it must not be lost. This is what I cannot facilitate; for to do the contrary would be to increase the misfortunes of Spain, rather than to alleviate them. And I wish so much that you perform this service, that in case you cannot obtain a bond for everything on a business basis and in the form I have ordered you, I permit a trial, under the greatest security you can obtain, provided the number does not exceed 3,000 men; and below this you may make the best terms you can for the payment of the money; and these, together with the letters you send to be paid at Antwerp, will be honoured there. As for sending the men from the ports in Ireland to the ports in Spain, I approve of its being done in the way you mention; and as regards the ports of Spain I have already informed you that if it be Galicia or Cantabria, it would be alright. EGC., reg. 372, fol. 325-6v.

- 1756.** 1641. June 24. From the camp at Rochefort. Special grant of thirty crowns to the newly raised company of Irish infantry of Captain Richard de Burgo, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneyl. EG., reg. 41, fol. 6.
- 1757.** 1641. June 24. Westinne. Orders to Juan de Gavarelli, Superintendent of the Fleet, to grant relief to the newly raised company of Irish infantry of Captain Redmundo Roche. EG., reg. 41, fol. 10v.
- 1758.** 1641. June 27. St Omer. Passport for Ireland for Captain Anthony Pipard; has represented that he was captain of a company of Irish infantry in the army of the King of France which is stationed against the town of Aire, and that he has come with seven men to these States and desires to go to Ireland. EG., reg. 41, fol. 27v.
- 1759.** 1641. June 30. Morbeck. Licence for Ireland, for four months, with retention of his pay, to Captain Edward Obrin, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, who has appointed him to recruit the 400 men for whom licence has been granted by the King of England. EG., reg. 41, fol. 12v.



**1760.** 1641. July 5. London. Alonso de Cardenas to the secretary of Don Ferdinand. From the letter I have written to his Highness you will see what progress has been made with the levies in Ireland. I hope they will be obtained, if the means do not fail. The commissions which I have asked for, and about which I am writing to Don Miguel de Salamanca, are a long time coming. I beg you to have those sent to me which are ready, and that there be sufficient for three regiments, as I hope they will all be useful. The tardiness with which the officers receive their commissions is the cause of long delay. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 3.

**1761.** 1641. July 5. London. de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. In the last ordinary dispatch I gave your Highness an account of the situation concerning the levies of the Irishmen. They are making good progress, the reason for which is that the most convenient means that could be wished has been found for the transport of the men to Spain. And this is an Irish merchant of good credit, who came here with others as deputy of the Irish parliament on business of that Kingdom. He undertakes, and gives very wealthy and trustworthy merchants as securities, to provide comfortable and safe shipping for all the soldiers who shall sail from the port of Guatelort (of which he is a native) and Cork Quinzal, which are not far from the place where the greater part of the men will be. He is wealthy, and a Catholic, and knows those ports well, and has influence there, and he belongs to the Irish parliament. Moreover he has property in Spain, and correspondence with Bilbao. The cost of the transport is ten ducats of the money here for each man. The two colonels have agreed to this upon my intervention, and on my side, it remains to give him the money, which will be done by the Colonels, with a merchant as security for the remainder, according to the agreement. So that I am awaiting the sending over of the bills of credit which I asked of your Highness last week, with which I hold the levy for certain, unless some new accident occur, against which only the quick transport of the men can secure us. On this account I wrote to Don Diego de Salamanca for confirmation, and I have received no letters from the general pay-office, or upon merchants who will guarantee payment in Spain of what is owing. If this should fail, it will be necessary to have recourse to merchants in Antwerp. I beg your Highness, as this business is of such great importance, to be pleased to order that both these requirements be sent to me with the greatest haste. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 21.

**1762.** 1641. July 9. Morbeck. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Ensign Anthony Obrien, of the disbanded company of Captain George Obendon, regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill, "notwithstanding that by the sentence of Superintendant of Military Justice in these States he had been deprived, on 9 February last, of the flag of the company."\* EGC., reg. 41, fol. 19.



1763.

1641. July 12. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Your Highness was pleased to order by a letter of 7 of this month that I should be informed that the scarcity of means for obtaining levies of Irishmen was exceedingly great, but that nevertheless you had been pleased to order that my letters should be sent to Don Miguel de Salamanca, to enable him to see what could be arranged at Antwerp, where he happened to be. He was to send me an answer from there. It occurs to me to represent to your Highness that up to the present these levies are proceeding with great success; for I have sent off all the colonels, and have divided 18,000 crowns among them, and they have gone to assemble the men, who according to their obligations will number 10,000; and if they perform what they have promised by word of mouth (and in writing) the men will number more than 12,000. And as I have embarked upon this task in full reliance upon the sureties which your Highness ordered were to be sent to me, if these were now to fail, all the money which has been expended would be lost, and the men too; and this would entail a double loss, as the enemy would recruit them for his service; for they leave no stone unturned to thwart the levy, and the measures they have thought appropriate to this end are worthy of remark, for they have gone so far as to spy upon me, to see whom I deal with about the ships, in order to frighten the captains lest these ships be taken from them during the voyage, and to make them doubt whether they will be paid in Spain. And if I manage to get someone here to act as surety in this business, they have dealt with those merchants who have offered it, in order to prevent it. By such methods they hope to thwart the whole business. However I hope none of their efforts will be sufficient to stop the levy, as they have not been up to the present, I am awaiting an answer from Don Miguel de Salamanca, and news of what he has negotiated at Antwerp, upon which depends the whole success of this business and the consolation of these people. And so I am expecting the commissions which I asked for, which I beg your Highness to have sent to me immediately. Dorso: Brussels. 16 [July] 1641. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 27-28.

1764.

1641. July 14. Madrid. Philip IV to Miguel de Salamanca. The King of England has disbanded his army in Ireland, and has informed Alonso de Cardenas of his consent to the sending of two or three regiments of Irishmen to the Low Countries. Don Miguel is to enter into negotiations with Cardenas so that the necessary information may be supplied for his Majesty's service.<sup>1</sup> EGC., reg. 41, fol. 34v.

1765.

1641. July 17. Brussels. Issue of three further blank commissions, for three regiments of Irish infantry, each regiment to consist of 15 companies; a commission for a fourth regiment, issued on 22 July. EG., reg. 41, fol. 2.



1766.

1641. July 17. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. No letter has come from you this week, and I am always longing for one with very good news of your health. In a letter of 7 of this month his Highness was pleased to have word sent to me that he had ordered my letters dealing with the Irish levies to be sent to you at Antwerp, where you were, to enable you to see what could be done there about the means for these levies. He also directed that I should be informed of this, and consequently I am in great hope concerning the funds which you have offered me for this service which is so important, that they are certain. In reliance upon this assurance I have engaged myself to such a degree that I have dispatched all the colonels, and divided among them 18,000 crowns, and today the last of them has gone off, the others having taken their departure at the beginning of this month. This haste has been necessary for two reasons: in the first place, to make it possible for the navigation to be done in good time, as if it were delayed, the result would be a great dislocation in the transport of these men; in the second place, on account of the arrival of the French ambassador, and the well grounded fear lest he might win over some of these colonels by offering them better conditions, which has already been attempted on his behalf. If the resources should fail, besides losing the men, and not being able to get them again at any price that could be offered, the money already spent would also be lost, and it amounts to a large sum every day; for the financial arrangements are that they [the colonels] carry out their part and we carry out ours. And the loss would be doubled, as the enemy would carry off these men for his own service. And here, if the resources can be sent to me at present without inconvenience to the business men at Antwerp, I think it would be less difficult to obtain the amount of credit which is necessary. I asked his Highness to have sent to me one letter of credit to their agents here, to enable them to draw up letters for two purposes on the Antwerp people, and give me money, as in Spain where they are so anxious to have these men, they delay in sending the means to get them. The second would be a letter to these same agents authorising them to grant credit for seventy thousand ducats of the money here, the payment for these to be referred to Spain. I hope that in this they will run no risk, as it will be paid; and to secure this I am sending a servant to Spain in all haste. The levy seems every day more certain, and I hold without doubt that 12,000 Irishmen will arrive in Spain, if their colonels carry out in their recruiting what they have promised in addition to what they have already undertaken.

I also ask you to send the commissions which I asked for, for four regiments, as the colonels have left men here to take them over, and they are asking me for them. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 32-33.



1767.

1641. July. Dublin. George Porter to Alonso de Cardenas. As soon as I left London I used all diligence to reach here as soon as possible, and on the same night that I arrived at Chester I took a post and reached the port at midnight. With Colonels Plunquet and Bermisam I made arrangements to cross over to this city in a small ship, and we got here seven days ahead of any of the others.\* I hope to have a fine regiment in a very short time, and I beg your Excellency to order the ships to be at Waterford, and to have them equipped for the 10th and 15th of August, as by then I hope to have my regiment complete. In case the men are delayed for want of ships, or by any other passing accident, your Excellency will be pleased to order that some grant be made for their maintenance, as this would be very proper, and I would be greatly obliged to your Excellency, whom may God preserve for the years your servant desires. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 122.

1768.

1641. July 19. [Dublin]. Richard Plunquet to Alonso de Cardenas. I received to-day your Excellency's letter of 16 July, and the good news it brings has been a source of joy to all of us. Our affairs here, especially our personal affairs, are sailing along with the wind in their poop, and just as I would wish. The Lords Justices of this kingdom show me much favour and honour, and they have shown good will concerning the levy of men which I have in hand. The nobles and gentlemen of Parliament, who for the most part are relatives of mine, also help it ahead, so that already I have advanced things so much that within eight days I can send 1,500 men, in good condition, and fit for his Catholic Majesty's service, whom I myself am delighted to serve with so much ardour. I have fixed the 20th of next month for the captains and soldiers who have joined my regiment to put in their appearance, and in the meantime I beg your Excellency to send me all the necessary shipping, and in particular nine or ten commissions for captains, of which I have great need. There will then be no delay on my side, and with God's help I hope we shall speedily arrive at a safe port, where we shall be able to perform the services required of us. May Heaven keep your Excellency as I wish. Your Excellency's most humble servant, Richard Plunkett.

This is the third or fourth time I have the honour to be engaged in recruiting men for his Catholic Majesty, and never have I received greater favour and help than I receive now from everyone. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 124.

1769.

1641. July 20. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. In my last dispatches I gave your Highness an account of the levies of Irishmen, and to this may be added at present that seven of the colonels, as I am informed, have arrived in Ireland, and are engaged in assembling the men; and they ask that their embarcation be not delayed. The merchant who has undertaken to find the shipping to take over the greater part of the men, wrote to his representatives in Ireland fifteen days ago, to get



them to hasten the embarkation of the 4,000 soldiers; and today a contract has been signed here with two shipowners who undertake to transport over 1,000 men; and they have named merchants who will be securities for the money they have received in advance. And this will be done with all of them, in conformity with the orders your Highness gave in your letter of the 21st of this month. As shipping is to be had only with great difficulty, it is necessary not to lose the opportunities which present themselves to get them ready, and to allow them some time to put supplies aboard for the maintenance of the men who will be ready to sail with them. Hence the prompt provision of money is necessary, as the ten or twelve thousand crowns which your Highness is pleased to allow at present for certain requirements, are not enough to pay for this whole business, although this may not appear so in the straightened conditions which prevail over there [in the Low Countries].

*Dorso:* Don Alonso de Cardenas. At Béthune on the 31 of July 1641. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 64.

1770. 1641. July 28. Merbeck. The ordinary grant of thirty crowns to each of the newly recruited companies of Captain Gerald Geraldin and Captain Henry Oneyll. EG., reg. 41, fol. 29v.

1771. 1641. July 29. Béthune. To Don Ferdinand. The wives of the captains and officers of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill represent that Count de Reux makes difficulties about assigning them quarters before he has received orders from his Highness. They beg Don Ferdinand to order the Count to accomodate them in the same manner as the other women of the regiments of Pedro de Guriere, P. Leon, and Count de Gronendonck.

1772. Referred to the Secretary of the Audience. EA., liasse 2075. 2. 1641. Aug. 4. From the camp at Lillers. Don Ferdinand to Miguel de Salamanca. Whereas in conformity with the repeated requests of Don Alonso de Cardenas, his Majesty's ambassador at London, that the means necessary for the Irish levy which he has proposed to raise in that kingdom be transmitted to him from here, to permit the men to be sent to Spain, you have sent from here to the said Don Alonso for that purpose, in obedience to his Majesty's orders that the levy is to be assisted and facilitated, a bill of credit for £3,500 sterling; upon the receipt of which he wrote to you on the 9 July of this present year as follows: Don Diego de Texeyra's bill of credit which you sent me, for £3,500 sterling, has been of great importance for the advancement of the levy here. Of this amount, £1,300 have been received, for which a receipt has been given, and for the coming week Antonio Fernandes offers £2,150, the remainder of the assignment. I have given letters today for £1,500 sterling, in two separate amounts, upon the senior official of the paymaster's office, with the security that they will be paid when due, as otherwise no



one would take them. You will be pleased to have remitted to me a further £5,000, and a bill of credit for £4,500. With this, and the amount I have negotiated here, I hope the ships will be sent to Ireland for the transport of all the men, who are to be at the Irish ports on the 20th of August, according to the agreement. I have already sent off all the colonels, and although I have received no news of their arrival they have had sufficient time to get there.

Whereupon his Majesty was pleased that two letters should be sent to me, on the 14th and 16th of July respectively, directing me to help and facilitate the said levy of Irishmen, and he has sent two other letters to you, Don Miguel, of which the tenor of the first is as follows:

1773.

Don Miguel de Salamanca. Whereas the King of England has disbanded his army in Ireland\* and Don Alonso de Cardenas, as you know, has reported the good opportunity there would be of sending two or three regiments of that nation to Spain. I have sent him orders as in the enclosed copy of my letter, in conformity with which it seemed well to me to commission you to communicate with Don Alonso, and get these men into my service, so that they could be sent to Spain as soon as possible. By this you would do a great service, by securing the safety of everything here from the danger which threatens it. Madrid. 14 July 1641. Yo el Rey. Andres de Rojas.

1774.

The second letter is as follows: Don Miguel de Salamanca, member of my Council of State. Although in another dispatch which you will receive with this I charge you to help greatly and to hasten, for your part, the levy of the Irish which is being made in England, by corresponding with Don Alonso de Cardenas: having received his letter of 24 May last in which he mentions the good opportunity there is of carrying out these levies,\* I have thought well to order you once more to charge the person concerned that with the greatest foresight and consideration possible he does not leave this business out of his hands until he puts the men on board for Spain, without bargaining about details, as the need we have of them could not be greater. I trust very greatly in your attention to this, that you will carry out a matter which is of such importance with all your energy and attention. Madrid. 10 July 1641. Yo el Rey. Andrés de Rosas.

In conformity with this we order and command that you give the appropriate direction to Miguel de Olivares, that from the money and proceeds of his Majesty's revenue which are subject to his administration for reserved services, he shall in virtue of the receipt given by you at our order on 1 July of this year, give and pay to Diego Texeyra Sampayo, resident at Antwerp, the said £13,000 sterling at its proper value, since through the said Texeyra you arranged the transfer of that amount to London for the purpose specified, at the direction of Don Alonso de



Cardenas. And Miguel de Olivares shall take a receipt from Diego de Texeyra for the delivery of the said sum, and receipts from Don Alonso for the same amount, so that together with this order and the warrant you will send with them, these receipts may serve as the final discharge of the money placed at your disposal; for such is our will. The accountant Pedro de Equizia will audit the account. From the camp at Lillers, 4 Aug, 1641. No signature. EGC., reg. 41, fol. 33-35v.

1775. 1641. Aug. 9. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. The post from Flanders has not yet arrived, and consequently I cannot answer the dispatches it would bring. From the letter to his Highness you will be able to see the present state of the levies here, and the efforts which have been made to put them right. I have determined to do this on account of the orders given by his Majesty, that I may go as far as twenty crowns for each soldier, and 10,000 Irishmen at from thirteen to twenty crowns is approximately the amount I have offered, which is to be paid only when they have taken their departure, and not before. My Master the Count Duke writes to me that be the cost of the men what it may, I am to send the men I can get. The fact is that during the last two days this business has changed in aspect altogether, as during the four previous days I expected nothing from it, and now your Excellency will believe me when I say that with the trouble of mind and body it has given me, life was hardly worth living. It was well advanced, as you will see by the two letters which accompany this, which I have received from two colonels who are in Ireland carrying out their levies.

Postscript. At this moment, after I had written a letter to his Highness, I am informed that four gentlemen have been named by Parliament to come to see me to morrow, and treat with me about this business, wishing perhaps to settle it amicably. I will let you know the result. EGC., reg. 373, fol. 120.

1776. 1641. Aug. 9. Brussels. Issue of thirty two blank commissions for two more Irish regiments. EG., reg. 41, fol. 2.

1777. 1641. Aug. 10. At the camp. Miguel de Salamanca to the Secretary of the Audience. Conveys the wishes of Don Ferdinand that orders be sent to the two Irish companies at St Omer to join their regiment; the Irish company at Nieuport is to proceed to Waas. EA., liasse 2083. 3.

1778. 1641. Aug. 16. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Last week I gave your Highness an account of the obstacle which had risen in the way of the levies, and of the efforts I was making to overcome it. Since then I have continued my efforts and have omitted nothing. And as regards the Queen here, who impeded the business very much, at the instigation of the French ambassador, and for other reasons, I availed myself of the Ministers attached to the Queen Mother, that his Most Christian Majesty might get his daughter to help us in this affair, as is proper, and so



give this satisfaction to the King our Master and to your Highness. And after the Queen Mother had made most urgent efforts with her sons, the King here gave answer that for my part I should seek help from parliament, and that he on his side gave his word that he would do everything he could. Besides this, I had audience on Wednesday last, during which I urged the King greatly, and repeated all the reasons which I had presented to him orally and in writing. He answered that these reasons were so strong that if it were in his power he would give me satisfaction without question; but that parliament, which embarrassed him, would do everything it could. I answered that the questions in which parliament had opposed the will of his Majesty of Great Britain were very different from those here in question, as parliament could not reasonably oppose the levies, since his Majesty had engaged himself by granting them with the knowledge and good will of parliament. He answered me in these words, that I could believe on the honour of a gentleman that he wished to grant satisfaction; and he went on to ask if I would be satisfied if he himself dealt with parliament, that I should be able for the present to get 4,000 men. I granted the difficulty of the affair, and that to overcome it at present did not seem possible. I begged him that of the 10,000 men he would allow me to take at once 6,000, without revoking the licence for the remaining 4,000, but only suspending it for the present. He proceeded to show me that he did much for me from gratitude for my good offices in facilitating the journey of the Queen Mother to Flanders, and he added that he was certain that parliament would grant the 4,000 men, and that he would do his best to have 6,000, and that if he could not manage this, he would give me a secret order for Ireland, for them to permit me to have a further 2,000 men; and if the licence were once given, it would, if opposed, have all the moral security which could be hoped for. To-day they promised to give me the dispatches, and I think he will give them to-morrow, and send an urgent courier to Ireland to ask for the early sending off of the levies. I also asked him, supposing they notified from Ireland that orders had been sent from here to stop the departure of the men, and that parliament there opposed an obstacle; and I asked him to give an order that the levy could leave freely; and he offered to do this. And this is all I have to say to your Highness.\*

EGC., reg. 373, fol. 141-2.

1779.

1641. Aug. 16. At the camp near Aire. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. In two letters, of 14 and 16 of July last, your Majesty was pleased to command me to help and facilitate the levy of Irishmen which had been proposed by Don Alonso de Cardenas; and you observe that in the difficulties with which Spain is beset, no equally good way of obtaining foreigners presents itself, and that no nation is so well suited as the Irish, and that consequently you had commanded Don Alonso de Cardenas to get the men to



Spain as quickly as possible, and not to bother about trifles, or even about important considerations. In answer to this I must inform your Majesty that when these letters were received, on 30 July, Don Miguel had already carried out your Majesty's orders, and had sent the money required for the levy to Don Alonso, at whose house in the country the business is being arranged. He will advise your Majesty of the actual state of affairs, and of the arrangements he is making. It would be well if you would command that all necessary orders be sent at once to Don Miguel concerning the disbursements he is to make. EGC., reg. 230, fol. 80.

**1780.** 1641. Aug. 16. At the camp near Aire. Don Ferdinand to Philip IV. In a letter of 8 June your Majesty was pleased to note that by my letter of 28 April you had seen the reasons which moved me to instruct Don Alonso de Cardenas to defer giving any decision to Moriarto Obrien about the levy he was to make of 1,000 Irishmen, and that you had heard that he had not begun the levy. Little was lost, as the money had to be given under security and with bonds. As Don Alonso will give a clear account of this, I merely refer to it, and hope your Majesty will be pleased that as far as I am concerned its execution and fulfilment have been made secure.\* EGC., reg. 230, fol. 93.

**1781.** 1641. Aug. 30. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Miguel de Salamanca. In my previous letter I reported that the King here had made his journey through Scotland, under the circumstances I mentioned, and that Parliament had become suspicious that he had some understanding with the Scots. . . . The persons whom I requested for Ireland need not know English, as interpreters can supply for this. If it should be thought alright there [at Brussels] Geronimo de Sepuleda, chief official of the naval supply depot at Dunkirk would, I think, carry out very well whatever he would be instructed to do in this matter. I beg you may be pleased to give orders at once that he should come, as there are already some ships in the Downs waiting for the weather so as to be able to leave for Ireland, and I do not know if they have not already left.\* EGC., reg. 373, fol. 185.

**1782.** 1641. Sept. 28. From the camp at Robeck. Rodolfo de Novaro to the secretary of the Audience. Quarters are to be provided at Dunkirk for the men who are to come from Ireland, recruited there for the regiment of Colonel Eugenio O'Neill.

The Secretary of the Audience to Rudolfo de Novara. Is opposed to the suggested levy of men, on account of the lateness of the season. EA., liasse 2071. 1.

**1783.** 1641. Oct. 4. London. Alonso de Cardenas to Don Ferdinand. Your Highness is aware of the new turn in the affair of the levy of Irishmen which has come about in the Parliament here, which has opposed with all its power what it at first wanted. I have succeeded in penetrating into the principal motive for this change,



and I have just heard that it is the Puritan faction which intervenes in Parliament, persuaded by the Earl of Warwick, Baron Say and Baron Bruck in the House of Lords, and by one named John Pis in the Commons, and by others of the faction, which some days ago founded a company to manage a plantation of Providence Island in the Indies, and got a commission for this from the King, with a clause empowering them to carry on hostilities against all who impeded them. They have availed themselves of this to play the pirate on both sides of the line. They try to persuade the rest of Parliament that if the Palatinate be not restored to its original status, peace between England and Spain should be broken off; and they make use of this pretext to cover up their own designs and special purposes. They have made use of certain London merchants to present a memorial, which they have already done, in which they offer to found a company to obtain ports in the West Indies, and pay the costs of the ships which they are preparing for this expedition; and they put forward many reasons to persuade this etc.<sup>1</sup> EGC., reg. 373, fol. 241.

- 1784.** 1641. Dec. 12. Brussels. Orders to Colonel Eugenio Oneill to take up quarters with eleven companies of his regiment at Merville, where he will meet the cavalry company of Captain Henry Oneil.\* EA., carton 2094.
- 1785.** 1642. Jan. 8. Brussels. Licence to proceed to Brussels, to Denis de Caffé, of the garrison at Hal, of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill. EA., liasse 2083. 3.
- 1786.** 1642. Jan. 14. Accusations against Thomas Preston, formerly governor of Gennep, that he had betrayed the fortress to the Dutch. Sent to Don Francisco de Mello.\* EA., carton 2093.
- 1787.** 1642. Jan. 17. Brussels. Commission to Edmond Oqueley as drum-major of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill.\* EG., reg. 42, fol. 81.
- 1788.** 1642. Jan. 23. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate John Butlero; to serve as chaplain of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Edmond Roche. EG., reg. 42, fol. 24.
- 1789.** 1642. Jan. 27. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate John Maden; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel George de Castelevi. EG., reg. 42, fol. 141v.
- 1790.** 1642. Jan. 27. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Eugenio Haran; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of High German infantry of Colonel John Behr. EG., reg. 42, fol. 142.
- 1791.** 1642. Jan. 30. Rome, Fr Luke of St Francis [Wadding] to Francisco de Mello. The Lord Cardinal Albornoz received your Excellency's packet while I was with him, and he read to me with great delight the good news of your Excellency, and of the government of those States which his Majesty (may God preserve



him) has confided to you; upon which I congratulate your Excellency, and also the States upon their good fortune of being ruled by one who will understand so well how to promote their political and military welfare. May the Divine Majesty be pleased to grant your Excellency health and strength to support the labour and anxiety which this most exalted office carries with it at a time when all the fury and rage of the enemy seem to vent themselves. I myself, with all the religious here, will beg this of Him most earnestly, even as our obligations bind us.

I kiss your Excellency's hand for the favour and honour you have shown to Captain James Dillon, and beg they may be continued, and that you will take under your patronage the college at Louvain, as I also begged in my other letter, and honour its commissary, Fr Hugh de Burgo, who is a man of parts, and one whom your Excellency may employ in affairs of confidence.

Cardinal Bentivoglio, who, I hear, wrote to your Excellency yesterday, charged me, while doing me a favour here, to make known to your Excellency how highly he esteemed the good news of the governorship. Certainly he is a very good cardinal, an honourable gentleman, and a devoted servant of his Majesty and of your Excellency, whom may our Lord preserve with the good fortune I desire. From St. Isidore's. EGC., portefeuille 574.

- 1792.** 1642. Feb. 6. Brussels. Orders that the company of Irish infantry recently recruited by Captain Maurice Macdonel is to be incorporated in the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill.\* EG., reg. 42, fol. 85.
- 1793.** 1642. Feb. 6. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain John Comerfort, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of the Duke of Albuquerque; to serve in the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., 42, fol. 120v.
- 1794.** 1642. Feb. 12. Brussels. Orders to incorporate in the companies of Captains Constantine and Bernard Oneyl and of Colonel Eugenio Oneyl the thirty men brought from Ireland during the year 1641 by Captain James Ohagan, and at present attached to the company of Captain Raymond Roche, in garrison at Nieuport. EG., reg. 42, fol. 122.
- 1795.** 1642. Feb. 22. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Arnold Morphy, chaplain, from the regiment of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Count de Salazar to the regiment of the same nation commanded by Colonel O. de Cotera. EG., reg. 42, fol. 142.
- 1796.** 1642. Mar. 6. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Colonel Eugenio Oneil. Encloses for his opinion a complaint of Captain Walter Cahalan, of O'Neill's regiment: Captain Walter Cahalan represents that at the last assignment to quarters of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneil he was stationed at Béthune. At the last muster, on 15 February, the authorities had refused to provide him any longer with billets, and had said that he should



go to Merville, where the officers of his regiment were. The authorities at Merville had likewise refused him billets.\* EA., liasse 1072. 2.

1797. 1642. Mar. 11. From my house. Don Eugenio Oneill to the Audiencer, in reply to the memorial of Captain Walter Cahalan. Advises that the said officer be billeted at Béthune or Merville. EA., liasse 1072-2.
1798. 1642. Mar. 11. Brussels. An account of the half-yearly pension of 400 livres paid to Marie, Jeanne and Isabella, daughters of the late Baron Omalun, Isabella being a nun of the Order of St Benedict, at Arras.\* CF., liasse 185. 6.
1799. 1642. Mar. 12. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Merville to provide billets for Captain Walter Cahalan. EA., liasse 2092. 4.
1800. 1642. Apr. 10. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Ghisteltes. They are to receive and billet, together with the officers and men who will join him there, to the number of 100, Philip Osullivan Mor, who has been commissioned to recruit a regiment of Irish infantry 1,000 strong from Irishmen who are in Holland and France. EA., liasse 2092. 4.
1801. 1642. Apr. 10. Brussels. Diego de la Torre to the Secretary of the Audience. Philip Osullivan Mor has proposed to the King of Spain the recruiting of an Irish regiment 1000 strong, from Holland and France. Ghisteltes has been assigned as headquarters of the first 100 men, and orders are to be issued accordingly.\* EA., liasse 2083. 3.
1802. 1642. Apr. 13. Madrid. Philip IV to Francisco de Mello. Orders for the regular payment of the grant made to the college of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain at the time of its foundation. Referred to the Council of Finances. EGC., reg. 231, fol. 11.
1803. 1642. April ? Petition of John Hallenan, Irish soldier of the company of infantry of Captain Patrick Tayleur; his arm was carried away at the siege of Gennep, and he now asks licence to retire from the army, and for some assistance for his journey home.\* EA., liasse 2075. 3.
1804. 1642. June 26. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to — Smet, clerk of the department of accounts at Lille. Orders to grant six patars and a passport to John Henenan for the journey to Ireland.\* EA., liasse 2075, 3.
1805. 1642. Oct. 10. Brussels. Grant of 150 livres, each livre of the value of 40 Flemish *gros*, to the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, for once only; to be paid through the collector general of Brabant.
1806. Enclosed I. Petition of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, to the Treasurer of Finances, for the payment of the grant due to them, for which they had made application three months ago.
1807. Enclosed II. 1642. Sept. 15. The President of the Chamber of Accounts. In answer to the enquiry as to what provision of wood, in kind or in money, was usually granted to the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, chargeable upon the domains at Louvain, the said



him) has confided to you; upon which I congratulate your Excellency, and also the States upon their good fortune of being ruled by one who will understand so well how to promote their political and military welfare. May the Divine Majesty be pleased to grant your Excellency health and strength to support the labour and anxiety which this most exalted office carries with it at a time when all the fury and rage of the enemy seem to vent themselves. I myself, with all the religious here, will beg this of Him most earnestly, even as our obligations bind us.

I kiss your Excellency's hand for the favour and honour you have shown to Captain James Dillon, and beg they may be continued, and that you will take under your patronage the college at Louvain, as I also begged in my other letter, and honour its commissary, Fr Hugh de Burgo, who is a man of parts, and one whom your Excellency may employ in affairs of confidence.

Cardinal Bentivoglio, who, I hear, wrote to your Excellency yesterday, charged me, while doing me a favour here, to make known to your Excellency how highly he esteemed the good news of the governorship. Certainly he is a very good cardinal, an honourable gentleman, and a devoted servant of his Majesty and of your Excellency, whom may our Lord preserve with the good fortune I desire. From St. Isidore's. EGC., portefeuille 574.

- 1792.** 1642. Feb. 6. Brussels. Orders that the company of Irish infantry recently recruited by Captain Maurice Macdonel is to be incorporated in the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneill.\* EG., reg. 42, fol. 85.
- 1793.** 1642. Feb. 6. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain John Comerfort, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of the Duke of Albuquerque; to serve in the regiment of Colonel Patrick Geraldin. EG., 42, fol. 120v.
- 1794.** 1642. Feb. 12. Brussels. Orders to incorporate in the companies of Captains Constantine and Bernard Oneyl and of Colonel Eugenio Oneyl the thirty men brought from Ireland during the year 1641 by Captain James Ohagan, and at present attached to the company of Captain Raymond Roche, in garrison at Nieuport. EG., reg. 42, fol. 122.
- 1795.** 1642. Feb. 22. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Arnold Morphy, chaplain, from the regiment of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Count de Salazar to the regiment of the same nation commanded by Colonel O. de Cotera. EG., reg. 42, fol. 142.
- 1796.** 1642. Mar. 6. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Colonel Eugenio Oneil. Encloses for his opinion a complaint of Captain Walter Cahalan, of O'Neill's regiment: Captain Walter Cahalan represents that at the last assignment to quarters of the regiment of Colonel Eugenio Oneil he was stationed at Béthune. At the last muster, on 15 February, the authorities had refused to provide him any longer with billets, and had said that he should



- go to Merville, where the officers of his regiment were. The authorities at Merville had likewise refused him billets.\* EA., liasse 1072. 2.
- 1797.** 1642. Mar. 11. From my house. Don Eugenio Oneill to the Audiencer, in reply to the memorial of Captain Walter Cahalan. Advises that the said officer be billeted at Béthune or Merville. EA., liasse 1072-2.
- 1798.** 1642. Mar. 11. Brussels. An account of the half-yearly pension of 400 livres paid to Marie, Jeanne and Isabella, daughters of the late Baron Omalun, Isabella being a nun of the Order of St Benedict, at Arras.\* CF., liasse 185. 6.
- 1799.** 1642. Mar. 12. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Merville to provide billets for Captain Walter Cahalan. EA., liasse 2092. 4.
- 1800.** 1642. Apr. 10. Brussels. Orders to the authorities at Ghisteltes. They are to receive and billet, together with the officers and men who will join him there, to the number of 100, Philip Osullivan Mor, who has been commissioned to recruit a regiment of Irish infantry 1,000 strong from Irishmen who are in Holland and France. EA., liasse 2092. 4.
- 1801.** 1642. Apr. 10. Brussels. Diego de la Torre to the Secretary of the Audience. Philip Osullivan Mor has proposed to the King of Spain the recruiting of an Irish regiment 1000 strong, from Holland and France. Ghisteltes has been assigned as headquarters of the first 100 men, and orders are to be issued accordingly.\* EA., liasse 2083. 3.
- 1802.** 1642. Apr. 13. Madrid. Philip IV to Francisco de Mello. Orders for the regular payment of the grant made to the college of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain at the time of its foundation. Referred to the Council of Finances. EGC., reg. 231, fol. 11.
- 1803.** 1642. April ? Petition of John Hallenan, Irish soldier of the company of infantry of Captain Patrick Tayleur; his arm was carried away at the siege of Gennep, and he now asks licence to retire from the army, and for some assistance for his journey home.\* EA., liasse 2075. 3.
- 1804.** 1642. June 26. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to — Smet, clerk of the department of accounts at Lille. Orders to grant six patars and a passport to John Henenan for the journey to Ireland.\* EA., liasse 2075, 3.
- 1805.** 1642. Oct. 10. Brussels. Grant of 150 livres, each livre of the value of 40 Flemish *gros*, to the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, for once only; to be paid through the collector general of Brabant.
- 1806.** Enclosed I. Petition of the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, to the Treasurer of Finances, for the payment of the grant due to them, for which they had made application three months ago.
- 1807.** Enclosed II. 1642. Sept. 15. The President of the Chamber of Accounts. In answer to the enquiry as to what provision of wood, in kind or in money, was usually granted to the Irish Franciscans at Louvain, chargeable upon the domains at Louvain, the said



Fathers had no right to any such grant, but at the end of September 1638 an alms of 1,000 livres, of Artois, was made to them, for once only, and not to be taken as a precedent; this by letters patent of 23 December 1636.\* CF., liasse 25.

- 1808.** 1642. Dec. 16. Brussels. Orders to the Treasurer-General to pay fifty livres, her half-yearly pension, to Isabel Barri. CPE., liasse 185.
- 1809.** 1643. Jan. 15. Brussels. Orders from Francisco de Mello to the authorities at Béthune to receive and billet Richard Orirdan, soldier of the company of Captain Daniel Carti, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EA., liasse 2092.
- 1810.** 1643. Mar. 15. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Ignatius Taylor, soldier of the company of his father Captain Patrick Tayller. EG., reg. 43, fol. 152.
- 1811.** 1643. Apr. 10. Brussels. Orders to the Treasurer-General to pay fifty livres, her half-yearly pension, to Isabel Barri. CF., liasse 185.
- 1812.** 1643. July 2. Loochristi. Licence for Spain to Raymond Barri; when serving in Spain had been captured and brought to France, but had escaped; wishes to return to Spain and continue his services. EG., reg. 43, fol. 31.
- 1813.** 1643. July 2. Loochristi. Licence for Spain to Art Oquif, who had been made prisoner when serving in Spain, and brought to France, but had escaped; wishes to return to Spain to continue his services. EG., reg. 43, fol. 32v.
- 1814.** 1643. July 2. Loochristi. Licence for Spain to Gunes Oferil; when fighting in Spain had been captured and brought to France, but had escaped, and now wishes to return to Spain to continue his services. EG., reg. 43, fol. 32v.
- 1815.** 1643. July 5. Ghent. Licence for Ireland to Bartholomew Chain, who has come from the army in Holland. EG., reg. 43, fol. 33v.
- 1816.** 1643. July 8. Ghent. Licence for Spain to Patrick Cary; has come from the army in Holland and wishes to go to Spain to serve there with the Irish. EG., reg. 43, fol. 35v.
- 1817.** 1643. July 14. Ghent. Commission to Captain Philip Ohay as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, vacant by the departure of Captain Peter Taf for Ireland; has served his Majesty in these parts for twenty years, and distinguished himself on all those occasions which are mentioned in the captain's commission granted to him on 4 October last. EG., reg. 43, fol. 56.
- 1818.** 1643. July 22. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Irish infantry of Captain Maurice MacDonel; the men to be sent to the company of Captain Philip Ohay.\* EG., reg. 43, fol. 62v.
- 1819.** 1643. Aug. 1. Ghent. Passport for Ireland to William Cleri, who has come from France. EG., reg. 43, fol. 75v.



1820. 1643. Aug. 3. Passports for Ireland to Nicholas Cleri and James Lalor, who have come here from the army in France. EG., reg. 43, fol. 75v.
1821. 1643. Aug. 3. Orders to grant four payments to Elenora Goçen, widow of Captain Gaspar Geraldin, formerly pensioner in the company of Horse of Captain Carlos de Padilla. Captain Geraldin had held a pension of eighty crowns monthly before he was killed by the French in a cavalry skirmish in France on the occasion of the engagement at St Quentin. EG., reg. 43, fol. 153.
1822. 1643. Aug. 3. Douai. The governor of Douai to the Secretary of the Audience. The Irish prisoner who was here has now been handed over to Patrick Daniel. EA., carton 2102.
1823. 1643. Aug. 7. Brussels. The Marquis de Leede to Francisco de Mello. I have seen both the memorial and the letter of Fr Hugh de Burgos, which your Excellency thought well to send me, and which are returned herewith; and after having heard the opinion of the Admiralty about the pardon he asks for those of his Majesty's ships which were taken for the use of the Irish, it seems to me that for the reasons your Excellency mentions you might be pleased to grant a pardon so far as criminal proceedings are concerned, while reserving the rights of the parties concerned. EA., liasse 2115.
1824. 1643. Aug. 7. Brussels. Orders for the formation of a new regiment of German infantry to be under the command of Baron Geraldin. EG., reg. 43, fol. 80.
1825. 1643. Aug. 13. Namur. Francisco de Mello to the Marquis de Lede. Has seen the advice about the enclosed petition of Fr Hugh de Burgo, agent of the Confederate Catholics in Ireland, that it would be well to pardon all who have withdrawn from this country and taken service in Ireland. In conformity with this advice de Mello grants them pardon for this time, as they were not aware that such action was unlawful. The pardon is granted as regards criminal proceedings, but the civil rights of persons concerned are reserved. This decision may be communicated to the officers of the admiralty at Dunkirk, that they may act accordingly. EA., liasse 2115.
1826. 1643. Aug. 20. Namur. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Edmond de Burgo, of the disbanded company of Captain Maurice Macdonel. EG., reg. 43, fol. 94.
1827. 1643. Aug. 21. Namur. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Maurice Macdonel of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 43, fol. 94.
1828. 1643. Aug. 21. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Michael Cuerck, of the disbanded company of Captain Maurice Macdonel. EG., reg. 43, fol. 96v.
1829. 1643. Aug. 26. Namur. Orders to confirm the appointment of Cormac Macarru as ensign of the company of Captain Dermot



Carti, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel; has been nominated to that post by the said captain. EG., reg. 43, fol. 102.

1830. 1643. Sept. 15. Brussels. Orders to transfer the service and pay of Sergeant Thomas Rurque and Thadeus Ohigny from the unattached company of Irish infantry of Captain Patrick Tayller to a company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 43, fol. 147v.
1831. 1643. Sept. 18. Mons. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Maurice Croffit; to serve as chaplain to the unattached company of Irish infantry of Captain Andrew Wilz. EG., reg. 43, fol. 126.
1832. 1643. Sept. 20. Mons. Orders to all officials and governors of the King's ports, to all captains of merchantmen and vessels of war, and to all other officials, to allow free passage and favour in every way to a loaded vessel in which Geoffrey Barron, an Irishman, wishes to proceed from France to Ireland, and this although the vessel is French. EG., reg. 43, fol. 132v.
1833. 1643. Oct. 12. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Morgan Galgano; to serve as chaplain to the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Jorge de Castelevi. EG., reg. 43, fol. 152v.
1834. 1643. Oct. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Constantino Oqueny, who has come recently from Germany. EG., reg. 43, fol. 148v.
1835. 1643. Oct. 24. Brussels. Orders to incorporate in the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel the unattached company of Captain Patrick Tayller. EG., reg. 43, fol. 166v.
1836. 1643. Nov. 2. Mons. Count de Busquoy to the Secretary of the Audience. Complains that full powers over the Irish soldiers quartered at Quesnoy have not been given to Monterbaut, governor of the town. EA., liasse 2106. 2.
1837. 1643. Nov. 5. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Count de Busquoy. In answer to his letter of 2 Nov., the measures taken at Quesnoy are not an innovation, but ordinary war time precautions, that where there are colonels, the policing of the place is their right. The Irish colonel is to be instructed accordingly, but the governor also is to be instructed to treat the Irish in the best manner possible, "all the more so as their regiment will disband altogether if the governor treats them as the natives of this country are treated, who have relations here, know the language, and enjoy other advantages." EA., liasse 2106. 2.
1838. 1643. Nov. 12. Colonel Daniel to Count de Busquoy. Asks for supplies of bedding and clothing for his officers and men, and of fodder for his horses. EA., liasse 2106. 2.
1839. 1643. Nov. 14. Mons. Count de Busquoy to the Secretary of the Audience. Sends him the foregoing letter of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EA., liasse 2106. 2.
1840. 1643. Nov. 16. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Count de Busquoy. The same regulations hold for the command of the Irish as for other colonels. EA., liasse 2106. 2.



1841. 1643. Nov. 19. Mons. Count de Busquoy to the Secretary of the Audience. Requests bedding "for the poor Irish soldiers" at Quesnoy. EA., liasse 2106. 2.
1842. 1643. Nov. 26. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to John Terruano; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 43, fol. 194v.
1843. 1643. Nov. 27. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to the authorities at Quesnoy. Orders that the Irish soldiers are to be billeted in conformity with the regulations. EA., liasse 2094. 1.
1844. 1643. Dec. 5. Brussels. To be referred to his Excellency [de Mello]. That the widow of the late Gaspar Geraldin, captain of Horse, represents that her husband was killed in action near St Quentin in France, and as four instalments are due of his pay of eighty crowns monthly in the cavalry of Juan de Toledo, she begs for the special payment of this amount.
- The ordinary commissioner Amand de Hornes states as his opinion concerning this request that it is true that the four payments mentioned above are due, and that your Excellency could be advised to have them paid. When this had been considered by the Council of Finances, they were of the opinion, under very humble correction, that the petitioner could be satisfied with two payments for the full claim. But they leave this to the good pleasure of your Excellency. So advised at Brussels in the Council of Finances, 23 November 1643<sup>1</sup> H. Count de Noyelle. Jokim Scots. J. B. Maes.
- In the margin, in the hand of de Mello: I agree, if the payments are fixed, and if, as in the past, the companies were entitled to receive eight payments, and at present six, or if he received his pay monthly; as what is owing would be from the balance. CF., reg. 81, 9, fol. 62.
1845. 1643. Dec. 23. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Thomas Machail as captain of the company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Captain Patrick Garlon. EG., reg. 43, fol. 277.
1846. 1643. Dec. 24. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of Captain Maurice Macdonel from the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel to the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel Estevan de Gamarra. EG., reg. 43, fol. 223v.
1847. 1644. Jan. 2. Brussels. Licence for England from Dunkirk to Francisco de Foissot. EG., reg. 43, fol. 227v.
1848. 1644. Jan. 9. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Theobald Butler who has come here from Arras.\* EG., reg. 43, fol. 237v.
1849. 1644. Jan. 15. Brussels. Orders to grant pay to those soldiers of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel who had not presented themselves at the last muster of the regiment, which was held at Quesnoy on 11 Dec. 1643. EG., reg. 43, fol. 253.
1850. 1644. Jan. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Daniel Omulrian; to enable him to serve on such occasions as shall present themselves. While a soldier of the Spanish mounted



- lancers, of the guard of the Cardinal Infante, he had received licence for Ireland to recruit a company there, but had not been successful, and had returned to these States and had served without a place in the unattached Irish company of Captain Andrew White, in garrison at St Omer. EG., reg. 43, fol. 272.
- 1851.** 1644. Jan. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Philip Obro Sail, who has come here from France. EG., reg. 43, fol. 261v.
- 1852.** 1644. Jan. 27. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Florence Heyn, who has come here from France. EG., reg. 43, fol. 261v.
- 1853.** 1644. Feb. 4. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Richard Roche, of the company of Colonel Patrick Daniel; for change of air on account of illness. EG., reg. 43, fol. 288v.
- 1854.** 1644. Feb. 14. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Captain Terence Maguir, of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 43, fol. 298.
- 1855.** 1644. Feb. 23. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the place and special grant of Ensign Patrick Ocharula, of the company of Colonel Patrick Daniel, held by him before he went to Ireland with Colonel Eugenio O'Neill, although he had not obtained licence. EG., reg. 43, fol. 315.
- 1856.** 1644. Apr. 7. Antwerp. Commission to Captain Terence Ogalachur as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, vacant by the death of Captain Terence Maguir; has served his Majesty for twenty years in these parts as soldier, ensign, adjutant, and as captain of a company of the Irish infantry in Spain. EG., reg. 44, fol. 23v.
- 1857.** 1644. Apr. 7. Antwerp. Orders for the payment of those Irish soldiers who are at present wandering about the country, and whom Captain Terence Ogalachur will collect in order to raise his company to the number of sixty men. EG., reg. 44, fol. 32.
- 1858.** 1644. May 12. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of John Callaghan, chaplain, from the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel de Velandia to the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Roque Negrete, governor of the royal fortress of St Philip at Gravelines. EG., reg. 44, fol. 75.
- 1859.** 1644. May 12. Brussels. Appointment of Fr Juan Maria Tomasio of the Order of St Augustin to be preacher in Spanish to the garrison at Dunkirk, in place of a member of the Order of St Dominick, who was appointed by the late Infanta but has lately returned to Ireland. EG., reg. 44, fol. 82v.
- 1860.** 1644. June 4. Winnoc. Licence for Spain for Baron Gleanomallun, Captain of a company of Colonel Patrick Daniel; has business there to which he must attend. EG., reg. 44, fol. 94v.
- 1861.** 1644. Aug. 20. From the camp at Destledonck. Commission to Arturo Ocalan as adjutant in the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, in the place of Ensign Denis Odionsi who has become captain of a company; with pay of 25 crowns monthly. Has served his Majesty for 20 years.\* EG. reg. 44, fol. 171.



1862.

1645. Jan. Brussels. The Marquis de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. As your Majesty will have heard, Doctor Carlo Francesco Inverneti has come here on business concerning the kingdom of England, where his Holiness has kept him employed since the beginning of the wars there. He is a man of well known ability, equal to anyone in the service of your Majesty, to whom he shows himself greatly devoted, and he fulfils the obligations of a good subject. Of this he gave evidence lately, by taking up two grave and weighty matters, which his ability and dexterity have brought to a successful issue. He disposed and brought back the Duke of Lorraine to obedience to the decrees of his Holiness concerning the matrimonial separation, to which the Duke has entirely conformed. He has since settled the question about the admission of the bishop-elect of Ruremonde to that Church, to which there was always great opposition in Rome, as the bishop followed and defended the teaching of Jansenism. I am of opinion that he would be a very proper person to employ in important negotiations in your Majesty's service, in which his good success will be assured by his wide knowledge and experience, together with his understanding of the royal interests. So I propose him to your Majesty with no further motive, that you may be pleased to give him your orders, and communicate and deal with him, and see the good results which would be gained by employing him. As moreover he desires that your Majesty would do him the favour of nominating him for the first vacant canonry of the Scala at Milan, and that his brother Joseph be given one of the offices, ordinary or extraordinary, of the magistracy at Milan, with a guarantee of future succession, I beg your Majesty may be pleased to command that as regards both requests he be granted the favour and honour he must hope for on account of his good deportment, and under many other headings. I myself shall most highly esteem this by reason of the indebtedness I am under to his abilities, and on account of their promise, as in so short a time he has given those grounds which I have represented to your Majesty.

1863.

Enclosed: To his Excellency. On behalf of Carlo Francesco Invernity. Most illustrious and excellent Sir. Carlo Francesco Invernity, a Milanese gentleman, Doctor in Theology and in Law, Archpriest of Saint Ambrose the Greater at Milan, and employed by the Holy See and your Highness in the affairs of Ireland since the beginning of the wars there, most devoted servant of his Majesty, humbly begs you to grant him the favour of a letter of commendation to his Catholic Majesty, in which his Majesty be asked to honour him by nominating him for the first vacancy or dignity, even though it should be the highest, of the collegiate church of the Scala at Milan; and that his Majesty may also deign to honour Giuseppe Invernity, his only brother, a young man of good character, learning and intellect, with one



of the offices, ordinary or extraordinary, of the magistracy of Milan, his native city, by granting him a warrant for life, and future succession; for which favour petition has already been made to his Majesty by various cardinals, by the Marquis de Grana, Imperial ambassador, and Monsignor Rospigliosi, apostolic nuncio to his Catholic Majesty. The petitioner will receive this as a special favour from your Excellency. He also begs your Excellency to grant him the favour of a letter to the Supreme Council of Ireland, and another to Monsignor the Nuncio, in which you will be pleased to encourage them, and give them help, even though this may not be possible at present on account of the ill success of the last campaign, although your Excellency had thought to do so if a means were found, and the petitioner had done everything he could and should have done to procure it.\* EGC., reg. 235, fol. 15-17.

1864.

1645. Mar. 1. Brussels. The Marquis de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. Captain Macmahon, seigneur of Malemburg, an Irish gentleman, has served your Majesty for many years in the wars in these parts with great approval and valour, and is actually continuing his services with a company of infantry of his nation at Ostend, as his papers show in greater detail. And as certain causes (which he sets out in the memorial he will present to your Majesty) move him to desire that your Majesty, in reward for his services, may honour him with the habit of one of the three military Orders, I endorse his requests, at his instance, so that your Majesty, being assured of his merits, may be pleased to command that he be granted appropriate favour in this respect, as he petitions.

1865.

Enclosed: Excellency. Captain Maurus Macmahon, seigneur of Malambourg in these States of Flanders, an Irish gentleman, and at present on active service with his company in the garrison at Ostend, represents that he has served his Majesty for thirty five years, five years as a volunteer in the royal ocean fleet, and the other thirty years in these States, as ensign, adjutant to the lieutenant-colonel, and captain in the regiment of the Earl of Tyrone, as appears from the accompanying official testimony,<sup>1</sup> and from the fact that he married in these States, where he holds goods and seigneuries from his wife's side. As the Suppliant is Irish, and a stranger in this country, his wife's relations cast doubt upon his birth and lineage, and have obliged him to seek information from the most noble gentlemen of his country and the genealogists of his House in Ireland; which information, together with the official attestations of his services in these parts, and of the services of his ancestors in Ireland, he has preserved, at the request of his wife's relations, and has sent an authenticated copy of all of them to Spain, to his Catholic Majesty, together with a memorial in which he begs his Majesty to honour him with the habit of one of the three military Orders, for the preservation of

<sup>1</sup>Missing.



his honour, his house, his rank and the rank of his children. Wherefore, and with regard to the above, he very humbly begs your Excellency to be pleased to honour him, and grant him the favour of a recommendation to his Majesty for the purpose mentioned, in consideration of his long services, his birth, and the desire he has to continue to serve.

Dorso: Referred to Señor Francisco de Galaretta.

In a different hand: Let him be granted the letter he asks for. Brussels. 18 February 1645. EGC., reg. 232, fol. 298-300.

1866. 1645. Mar. 8. Alonso de Cardenas to the Marquis de Castel Rodrigo. He has done everything possible to obtain the Irish levies which are so urgently needed in Spain, and in Portugal on account of the insurrection, but circumstances are not favourable. EGC., reg. 226, fol. 245.

1867. 1645. Mar. 12. Joriza. Philip IV to the Marquis de Castel Rodrigo. Francisco Foyote (whom, as you will have heard, Don Francisco de Mello sent to Ireland to arrange for the levy of two regiments of Irishmen for Spain) has written to me by letters of 30 November and 1 December last year, of events there and of his own activities. I gave orders that he was to be answered as in the letter which accompanies this, the contents of which you will see by the copy sent also to you. In it, I order him to return to those States [Flanders] to give an account and render a statement of what passed through his hands. And I express to him the satisfaction I feel at the good work he has done in the affairs entrusted to him. None the less I wish to repeat this here, and to instruct you, as I hereby do, to thank him on my behalf for what he has accomplished in these affairs, and to reward him in whatever way may present itself there; for I shall regard with pleasure whatever you may do in this respect. Yo el Rey. Pedro Coloma.\* EGC., reg. 232, fol. 342.

1868. 1645. Mar. 12. Joriza. Philip IV to Francisco Foyote. Two of your letters, of 30 November and 1 December of last year, have been received, in which you send information of the coming to Spain of the first troops of the first regiment of Don Diego Preston, and of the efforts you have made to complete the number of men who had assembled, and secure embarcations to send them off; and you give a report on the state of the second regiment and the arrangements for it, and on the other points of the same subject. I have been informed of everything, and I approve of what you have carried out, for the diligence and zeal you have shown in these matters have been of great profit to my service. It will be well that I order you to return to Flanders, to render a statement and account of what has passed through your hands, as I am writing to the Marquis de Castel Rodrigo of the pleasure I feel at the good work you have accomplished in the matters entrusted to you, and I am instructing him to thank you and reward you in whatever may present itself there.



As to what you said of the person who offers a levy of 6,000 Scots, it would not seem that the proposal should be entertained, for the reasons you give, which oblige one to doubt of its accomplishment, and also because in this number of Scots, if there were any Catholics they would be very few, and to bring them to Spain would not suit.

Concerning the point that you have been instructed from Flanders to arrange that some men from Ireland should be sent there, although it is acknowledged that they are needed there, nevertheless this cannot be done without interfering with the levy which is to go to Spain, and for this reason, although it was intended that half of the two thousand men who were promised were for Flanders, it cannot be allowed.\* EGC., reg. 232, fol. 344.

- 1869.** 1645. June 1. Brussels. de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. He has received his Majesty's letter of 12 March relating to Foysole. The Marquis of Antrim, one of the chief Irish nobles, has offered to serve his Majesty by raising a regiment of 2,000 of his vassals, on the conditions enclosed.<sup>1</sup> He is married to the widow of Buckingham. A few days ago Fr Hugo de Burgo took his leave of Castel Rodrigo, saying that he had orders from the Supreme Council of Ireland to go to Spain to give a report on affairs in Ireland to his Majesty, and ask for help. de Castel Rodrigo has heard from a trustworthy Irishman that de Burgo has stayed in Paris under the pretext that he has a fever, and that he is there awaiting the nuncio, who is on his way to Ireland, and also the secretary of the Council, who is a friend of his, and but little affected towards his Majesty. The secretary is courted by Mazzarin "who served him in every possible manner when he was on his way home from Rome, and it is certain that in turn the secretary will not disappoint him." EGC., reg. 233, fol. 184.
- 1870.** 1645. June 1. Brussels. Commission to the Marquis of Antrim as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be recruited for service in these States. to consist of fifteen companies. EG., reg. 45, fol. 28.
- 1871.** 1645. June 1. Brussels. Blank commission for the major and a captain of the Irish regiment to be raised by the Marquis of Antrim. EG., reg. 45, fol. 28v-29.
- 1872.** 1645. June 1. Brussels. Licence for France to the Marquis of Antrim. EG., reg. 45, fol. 29v.
- 1873.** 1645. June 19. Brussels. Orders to pay Colonel Edward Geraldin of the German infantry the 400 crowns due to him as arrears from the grant of 150 crowns in the company of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 45, fol. 42.
- 1874.** 1645. June 21. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to James Stelling; has come over from the camp of the enemy. EG., reg. 45, fol. 45v.

<sup>1</sup>Not in register.



- 1875.** 1645. June 28. Ghent. Commission to Ensign Christopher Plunquet, of the company of Colonel Patrick Daniel, as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Captain Terence Galahour. EG., reg. 45, fol. 47.
- 1876.** 1645. June 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for one year, with retention of his pay, to Captain Maurice Magdonel, pensioner in the garrison at Nieuport; to help in the recruiting to be done by the Marquis of Antrim. EG., reg. 45, fol. 46v.
- 1877.** 1645. July 16. Saragossa. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. Orders concerning the next campaign in Catalonia:
- [a]. One thousand Walloon troops are to be sent from the Low Countries, in companies of 200, to reinforce the regiments of that nation.
- [b]. Negotiations are to be opened with Baron de Lamboy to provide at the lowest cost a regiment consisting of 1,500 or 2,000 men, in companies of 150, the men to be of the highest quality, with good officers.
- [c]. The Baron is to be informed that the King makes him a grant of the regiment, with the pay of a colonel on active service in Spain, on condition that he continues to recruit for the regiment.
- [d]. The Duke of Bavaria is to be induced to send a regiment of 1,500 men for the State of Milan, with a colonel, a major, and captains and officers of experience.
- [e]. There is a great lack of men in the Irish regiments serving in Spain. Negotiations must be undertaken for 3,000 men, in companies of 200. If these are divided in proportion among the afore-mentioned regiments, the captains who bring the men over will themselves have sufficient for their companies. The captains must be veterans, and capable of maintaining their companies.
- [f]. Negotiations may be opened up with the Elector of Cologne for 1,200 men, in companies of 200, to strengthen the regiments of the army in Catalonia, or other regiments.
- [g]. Similar negotiations are to be started with the Duke of Neubourg for the same number of men.
- [h]. More detailed instructions will be brought by Don Michael de Salamanca. It is desirable that the men should arrive in Spain by December. They will embark at Dunkirk, and information is to be sent at the time of their arrival in Spain. EGC., reg. 233, fol. 231.
- 1878.** 1645. July 27. Saragossa. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. Has seen Castel Rodrigo's report on the conditions upon which the Marquis of Antrim has offered to recruit 2,000 of his Scots vassals for those States, and that if the affairs of the King of England improve, he will have a further 6,000 men for Spain. As regard's de Castel Rodrigo's warning about the caution with which Fr Hugh de Burgo is to be treated, the King notes this information. Castel Rodrigo may do what he thinks best about



the recruitings. The Scots are new to the Spanish service, but have served for a long time in the service of France. They are moreover of a different religion. EGC., reg. 233, fol. 242.

**1879.** 1645. Aug. 6. Brussels. de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. His Majesty had informed him by his letter of 30 June that Diego de la Torre had not written since he had left San Sebastian for Ireland. Neither had he reported his arrival in Ireland, or his progress in the negotiations for the levies of men. Don Diego has written a few times to him, and he had thought that he had written at the same time to his Majesty; and consequently he himself had not reported the contents of de la Torre's letters. He sends the reports of what he had done, and of the little hope he has of success, as the French are doing everything to hinder him. EGC., reg. 233, fol. 249.

**1880.** 1645. Aug. 12. Saragossa. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. By my letter of this date I commend to you the French commissary who came with the Irish regiment recruited in that kingdom, and is now returning to Flanders. As it is not thought fitting that he should return to Ireland, in case anyone is to be sent there you are not to send him, or make use of him for any other commission. EGC., reg. 233, fol. 259.

**1881.** 1645. Sept. 14. Brussels. Orders to the Pay-Master General, Thomas Lopez de Viloa, Baron de Limala, to pay 31,000 crowns and 6 placas to the Purveyor Alonso de Uivarri, and to Jacques Gouverneur, this being the remainder of the amount due to them for the ships which they prepared and delivered to the Marquis of Antrim. "Whereas by an agreement of 16 May of this present year an agreement was made with the Marquis of Antrim for the recruiting of a regiment of Irish infantry of 2,000 men, of which he is to be the colonel, to serve with them in these States, and whereas among other things he has been offered on account two ships each of 160 tons, armed, gunned, and furnished with everything necessary, I ordered the Marquis de Lede, Captain-General of the fleet at Dunkirk, to purchase and make ready the said ships. This the Marquis put into effect, making an agreement on 19 May of this year with Jacques Vandevelde at the cost of 44,445 florins, each of the value of 20 placas, and six placas over; and as he received 13,000 florins in advance on account, through the Council of Finances, and for the remaining 31,445 florins it was stipulated that effective assignations should be given upon business men: I order and command by these present that the 31,445 be paid by an immediate assignation upon Leonel Bacq, among the monthly payments belonging to this past August and the present month of September, which are to be made for supplies for the army, as though they were part thereof. And of the said 31,445 florins, 15,947 florins and 9 placas belong to Jacques Gouverneur, merchant, of Dunkirk, to whom one of the ships belonged, and the remaining 15,497 florins and 17 placas



belong to Alonso de Uribari, knight of the Order of Calatrava, and purveyor of the fleet at Dunkirk, who for the better service of his Majesty was guarantor for the other ship with different ship owners and merchants, who have to be paid through him; for although the agreement was made through Jacques Vandeval, it could not be executed through him, as he has no share in the said ship."

Precautions are to be taken to enter all this clearly in the accounts, so that no one shall be blamed for delivering the sum on behalf of the Marquis of Antrim without his having given guarantees, even though he has not finished the levy. Guarantees could not be asked from him on account of his rank. EG., reg. 45, fol. 65-65v.

- 1882.** 1645. Oct. 15. Saragossa. Philip IV to the Marquis de Castel Rodrigo. Philip has ordered Don Diego de la Torre, his secretary, to go to Ireland and arrange with the Catholics of the Council of that nation for Irish recruits for service in Spain. Don Diego has been ordered to report to de Castel Rodrigo on the matter, and in order to maintain secrecy, a special code is to be used. Every effort must be made to have the men for the coming year, but all care is to be taken not to give any cause of complaint to the English Parliament. EGC., reg. 234, fol. 19.
- 1883.** 1645. Dec. 2. Brussels. Transfer of the place and pay of Philip Hugo Odhorty, musqueteer of the company of Captain John O'daniel, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, to the garrison of Hal, as he is infirm and unable for further service. EG., reg. 45, fol. 112.
- 1884.** 1645. Dec. 10. Brussels. de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. Has received his Majesty's orders contained in his letter of 15 October, along with the code. A beginning of the business referred to has already been made. EGC., reg. 234, fol. 236.
- 1885.** 1645. Dec. 14. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of forty crowns monthly held by Captain Walter de la Hoyd, from the company formerly commanded by Captain Steven de la Hoyd, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, to the garrison of Hal; in consideration of his great age and of his services. EG., reg. 45, fol. 124.
- 1886.** 1645. Dec. 14. Brussels. Orders to pay Captain and Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Pluncquet his grant for the period during which he served in these States until he absented himself, even though it is not evident that he had licence to go to Ireland; and this in consideration of the fact that he went to Ireland with his uncle Colonel Thomas Preston, to serve in the wars there. EG., reg. 45, fol. 124.
- 1887.** 1645. Dec. 23. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Michael de la Hoyd as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of his brother Stephen de la Hoid in the recovery of the fort of Mardick, after he had served here for more than six years. EG., reg. 45, fol. 127.



1888. 1646. Jan. 27. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Licentiate Maurice Croft, chaplain, of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, to the Spanish infantry of Colonel Pedro Roco de Velagitierra. EG., reg. 45, fol. 173v.
1889. 1646. Jan. 30. San Lorenzo al Real. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. He has received Rodrigo's dispatch of 10 Dec. last, and asks for uninterrupted information about the success of Diego de la Torre with the levies in Ireland. EGC., reg. 235, fol. 45.
1890. 1646. A list of the troops placed under the command of the Duke of Lorraine for the campaign against France in the year 1646. Amongst those mentioned, the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EGC., reg. 235, fol. 70.
1891. 1646. Feb. 15. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Nicholas Comerfort, senior chaplain, from the Spanish infantry of Colonel Gaspar Bonifaz to the regiment of German infantry of Colonel Baron Geraldin, with which he will serve as senior chaplain.\* EG., reg. 45, fol. 200.
1892. 1646. Feb. 16. Brussels. Orders to Juan de Necolalde to pay Martin Claysen van der Lipen 8,500 crowns which were borrowed from Antonio Nicholas van der Lipen and Adrian van Houtte, agents of the said Martin, by Francisco Foissot, who directed the levies in Ireland for the company of Captain James Preston. EG., reg. 45, fol. 160v.
1893. 1646. Feb. 27. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Plunquet, pensioner in the unattached company of Irish infantry of Captain Maurus MacMahon; has been chosen by the Duke of Lorraine to be colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be newly recruited.\* E.G, reg. 45, fol. 171v.
1894. 1646. May 9. Brussels. Grant to Andrew de Whyte of a duplicate of his commission as captain of a company of Irish infantry, as he has lost the original. EG., reg. 46, fol. 22v.
1895. 1646. May 10. Brussels. Orders to Juan de Necolalde to direct Thomas Lopez, paymaster-general, to pay 100 crowns from any money he may have under his charge, to Pedro Martinez de Paz, to be used by him upon certain secret services which it is not proper to divulge, in the interests of his Majesty. In margin: The said sum of 100 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, was given to the college of the Irish Dominicans.\* EG., reg. 46, fol. 61v.
1896. 1646. June 2. Brussels. Orders to pay 400 crowns as secret service money to Pedro Martinez, to be given to Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 46, fol. 61v.
1897. 1646. June 30. Saragossa. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. At the beginning of last December Secretary Don Diego de la Torre embarked at San Sebastian and set sail for Ireland, to render services there and to secure the levy and transport of a large number of men. As I have since informed you, he took with him, to begin this undertaking, the sum of 30,000 crowns. Up



to the present, so far as is known, he has not written or sent any information. In any case, no letters have been received from him and no news, except that given by an Irish religious, that de la Torre arrived after a few days, and was occupied in starting negociations. It has seemed well to tell you of this, and to instruct you, as I hereby do, to inform me of what you have heard; and if there is greater facility there for writing to Ireland, you will inform de la Torre of the surprise there is that no dispatches have been received from him after such a long time, and that no result has been shown of the business upon which he was sent.\* EGC., reg. 236, fol. 59.

- 1898.** 1646. Aug. 1. Saragossa. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. Since his last letter the King has received dispatches from de la Torre, along with copies of other dispatches which had not come through. de la Torre finds little inclination on the part of the authorities to favour the negociations for the levies, as the government is favourable to France. He has ordered de la Torre to return to Spain, but has sent Francisco Foysote to Ireland, as it is well to have someone there to counter the negociations of the French. EGC., reg. 236, fol. 101.
- 1899.** 1646. Aug. 12. Brussels. Orders to pay 640 crowns as secret funds to Martinez de la Paz, to be given to Colonel Preston. EG., reg. 46, fol. 102v.
- 1900.** 1646. Aug. 24. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Fraga, 9 July 1644) for the due payment of the sum owing to Doña Cecilia Carti, widow of John Cornelius Omahon, who wishes to retire to a convent. EG., reg. 46, fol. 104v.
- 1901.** 1646. Aug. 26. Brussels. Commission to Major Dermicio Osullivan Moar, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, as colonel of a regiment to be newly raised. EG., reg. 46, fol. 106v.
- 1902.** 1646. Aug. 26. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Thadeus Carti as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Dermicio Osullivan Moar, which is to be newly raised. EG., reg. 46, fol. 107.
- 1903.** 1646. Aug. 28. Saragossa. Philip IV to de Castel Rodrigo. The dispatches from Diego de la Torre contain what has been already rumoured, that he has no success whatever, and is returning. He is placing the money he had for the negociations at the disposal of Miguel de Salamanca. EGC., reg. 236, fol. 134.
- 1904.** 1646. Sept. 2. Brussels. Notification that Alonso de Cardenas, ambassador at London, has arranged with John Morfi for the formation of an Irish regiment to serve in the Low Countries, for which purpose Morfi has sent across 350 men, of whom 150 were in the fort at Mardick when it was taken by the French; the remaining 200 are to be formed into three companies. EG., reg. 46, fol. 112.
- 1905.** 1646. Sept. 2. Brussels. Commission to Peter Butler as captain of a company to be recruited by Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 46, fol. 112v.



- 1906.** 1646. Sept. 2. Brussels. Commissions to Dualto Mauricio, and Adam Roche as captains of companies of Irish infantry to be raised for the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 46, fol. 112v-13.
- 1907.** 1646. Sept. 8. Brussels. de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. Your Majesty was pleased to inform me by your letter of 1 August that whereas de la Torre, the secretary, had given it to be understood that there was but slight inclination on the part of the members of the Council of Ireland to grant the purpose for which he went to that kingdom, and that his presence there would be without result, your Majesty had instructed him to return to Spain, and that Francisco Foisot should take his place; but that as it might be convenient to have someone there to counter the negotiations of France, I should order what I consider best. There is no doubt that in the present state of things it is very useful that there should be someone in Ireland to represent your Majesty, especially as there are in that kingdom both the papal Nuncio and the French Resident; and if there be no one there to oppose their designs, many evil consequences might follow, to the detriment of your Majesty's service. I have therefore sent instructions to Francisco Foisot to remain there until your Majesty shall order otherwise.
- Dorso: To his Majesty, concerning the withdrawal of Don Diego de la Torre from Ireland. EGC., reg. 236, fol. 184-85v.
- 1908.** 1646. Sept. 23. Brussels. Commission to Adam Roch as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be raised by Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 46, fol. 112-13.
- 1909.** 1646. Sept. 23. Brussels. Commission to John Morfi as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry consisting of fifteen companies, to be newly raised. EG., reg. 48, fol. 130.
- 1910.** 1646. Dec. 24. Brussels. Orders to disband the regiment of Colonel Dermot Osullivan Moar, except the companies of Captains Dominic Meriman Torella, Walter Harisson, Martin Lalor, and Richard Fannin. EG., 46, fol. 242.
- 1911.** 1646. Dec. 24. Brussels. The remaining men of the regiment of Colonel Dermot Osullivan Moar to be transferred into the companies of Captains Dominic Meriman Torella, Walter Harisson, Martin Lalor, and Richard Fannin, which are then to be included in the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 46, fol. 242.
- 1912.** 1647. Jan. 10. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Irish infantry of Captain Andrew White, to whom licence for Ireland was granted on 8 Jan. EG., reg. 46, fol. 272.
- 1913.** 1647. Jan. 11. Brussels. Grants to the following officers of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Dermot Osullivan: Special grant of sixteen crowns monthly to Ensign Henry Dudal, of the company of the colonel. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Sergeant Hali, of the same company. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Philip Osullivan. Special grant of ten crowns monthly



to Ensign Machememoron, of the company of Captain Philip Osullivan. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant William Obrin, of the same company. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Thadeus Carti. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Patrick Dudal, of the same company. EG., reg. 46, fol. 273.

**1914.** 1647. Jan. 11. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel Dermot Osullivan; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 46, fol. 277v.

**1915.** 1647. Jan. 12. Brussels. Orders to reduce the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel John Morfi to the following twelve companies; the men of the other companies already formed, or to be formed, to be divided in proportion between these twelve, with their pay and grants: The company of the Colonel, and the companies of captains Dominic Meriman, Richard Fannin, Walter Arisson, Martin Lalor, Adam Roch, Theoblado de Burgo, David Rooch, Thadeus Morich, Charles Ocheale, Dudley Murry, and Matthew de la Hoyde. EG., reg. 46, fol. 275v.

**1916.** 1647. Jan. 12. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Sergeant Eugenio Conragan, of the disbanded company of Captain Thadeus Carti, regiment of Colonel Dermot Osullivan. EG., reg. 46, fol. 277.

**1917.** 1647. Jan. 29. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant John Figeralt, of the disbanded company of Captain Edmond Suini, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 47, fol. 158v.

**1918.** 1647. Jan. 30. Brussels. Orders to issue his pay without any intermission to Captain Mauro Macmaon, of an unattached company of Irish infantry in garrison at Ostend, as he has been employed as Lieutenant-colonel in the levy of the regiment newly formed by Colonel Dermicio Osullivan Moar. EG., reg. 74, fol. 39v.

**1919.** 1647. Feb. 3. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Daniel Odensi as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 45, fol. 256.

**1920.** 1647. Feb. 3. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Walter de Burgo, of the disbanded company of Irish infantry of Captain Henry Caus, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 74, fol. 39v.

**1921.** 1647. Feb. 3. Brussels. Orders to deliver to Pedro Martinez 7,920 crowns. each of the value of ten reales, to be used for secret service. In margin: They are for Captains Constantine, George Owedan, Philip Hay, Christopher Plonckett, Thomas Cohal, Michael de la Hid, Daniel Carti, Dermot Denpsy, and Maurice Ono. EG., reg. 74, fol. 40v.

**1922.** 1647. Feb. 7. Brussels. Orders to deliver 400 crowns to Pedro Martinez. In margin: For Colonel Dermot Osullivan Mor. EG., reg. 74, fol. 42.



- 1923.** 1647. Feb. 7. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Thomas Geraldin. EG., reg. 74, fol. 49.
- 1924.** 1647. Feb. 8. Brussels. Commission to Captain Henry Caus as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 74, fol. 52.
- 1925.** 1647. Feb. 12. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to James Geraldin, sergeant of the disbanded company of Captain Dermot Odensi, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 69.
- 1926.** 1647. Feb. 12. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to John Margredi, sergeant of the disbanded company of Captain Christopher Plunquet, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 69.
- 1927.** 1647. Feb. 13. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Bernard Omale, of the company of Captain Thomas Macail, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 65v.
- 1928.** 1647. Feb. 13. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to James Barri, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Michael de la Hoid, regiment of Colonel Patricio Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 66.
- 1929.** 1647. Feb. 14. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to John Lenan, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Michael de la Hoid, regiment of Colonel Patricio Daniel.\* EG., reg. 74, fol. 63v.
- 1930.** 1647. Feb. 15. Brussels. Orders to transfer the service and pay of Daniel Odonel, ordinary chaplain, from the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel to the company of Captain Mauro Mauno, of the same nation. EG., reg. 74, fol. 76v.
- 1931.** 1647. Feb. 15. Brussels. Orders to transfer the service and pay of John Leinsi and Bartholomew Planquet, chaplains, from the regiment of Captain Patrick Daniel to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 74, fol. 79.
- 1932.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to William Momiell, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Maurio Macro, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 68.
- 1933.** 1647. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Thomas Omale, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Thomas Macail, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 65v.
- 1934.** 1647. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Richard Quixig, sergeant of the disbanded company of Captain Philip Ohay, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 66v.
- 1935.** 1647. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to George Ohay, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Christopher Plunquet, regiment of Colonel Patrick [Daniel].<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 74, fol. 66v.

<sup>1</sup>Name omitted in register.



- 1936.** 1647. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Thomas Cul, sergeant of the company of Captain Mauricio Macro. EG., reg. 74, fol. 68.
- 1937.** 1647. Feb. 17. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Roger Deinsi, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Dermot Odensi, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 68.
- 1938.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Thomas Begle, sergeant of the disbanded unattached company of Captain Andrew de Witt. EG., reg. 74, fol. 67v.
- 1939.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Mathew Moriartax, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Andrew de Vite. EG., reg. 74, fol. 69v.
- 1940.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Mauro Nilian, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Nicholas Dalton, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 70v.
- 1941.** 1647. Feb. 18. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Denis Odensi, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 70v.
- 1942.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Daniel Carti, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 70v.
- 1943.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Thomas Macail, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 71.
- 1944.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Maurice Macro, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 71.
- 1945.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Michael de la Hoid, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 71v.
- 1946.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Philip Ohay, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 71v.
- 1947.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Christopher Plunquet, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 72.
- 1948.** 1647. Feb. 18. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Charles Macarti, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Dermot Carti, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 72v.
- 1949.** 1647. Feb. 19. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Bernard Ubrin, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Dermot Constantine, regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 60.
- 1950.** 1647. Feb. 20. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the companies of the regiment of Colonel John



Morfi, namely the company of the Colonel, and of Captains Adam Roch, Theobald de Burgo, Dominick Mersman Sorilla, Walter Harison, David Roch, Thadeus Moriche, Richard Faning, Charles Oscheale, Henry Caus, Matthew de la Hide, and Martin Laleur. EG., reg. 74, fol. 83.

**1951.** 1647. Feb. 21. Brussels. A report of the companies of infantry disbanded since November last to the present time. Of the Irish infantry: Of the regiment of Colonel Dermot Osulivan, three companies. Of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel, twelve companies. Of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, one company. EGC., reg. 237, fol. 214.

**1952.** 1647. Feb. 23. Doña Margarita de Namur, wife of Colonel Thomas Preston. Represents that she has presented a letter of Francisco Foissot who is in Ireland, in which he declares that he has received from Thomas Preston 1,200 crowns, each of the vale of ten reales, for ten months pay from 5 November 1645 to 5 September 1646, with the request that they be paid here to the said Marguerite de Namur, as appears more precisely from the letter itself, which will be presented with this. As she has heard at the army pay-office that by a decree of 28 January last difficulty is raised about the payment of the said 1,200 crowns, because as Diego de la Torre is in Ireland with money for payment of the levies in question, and for other things relating to his Majesty's service, there should be a certificate under his name that he has not already paid the said sum. She therefore requests the payment of the said money.

Orders that the money be paid, notwithstanding the statement of the military accountant as to money paid to Foissot and Michael Gallo, his associate in Ireland, for men recruited in Ireland and sent to Spain in January 1645.\* EG., reg. 74, fol. 87v.

**1953.** 1647. Mar. 1. Brussels. Orders to disband all the superior officers of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 74, fol. 103v.

**1954.** 1647. Mar. 7. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Dermot Odeinsi of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel; to serve in the Spanish infantry.\* EG., reg. 74, fol. 106v.

**1955.** 1647. Mar. 7. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Roger Odanse, ensign of the disbanded company of Colonel Patrick Daniel.\* EG., reg. 74, fol. 107v.

**1956.** 1647. Mar. 12. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Christopher Plunquet, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 74, fol. 114v.

**1957.** 1647. Mar. 27. Brussels. Orders for the due execution of his Majesty's command granting to Captain Patrick Geraldin the money which, as he had represented, was still due to him for the services of his father Patrick Geraldin, and for his own services. EG., reg. 74, fol. 165v.



1958. 1647. Entries of payments of fifty livres yearly from 1643-7 to Marie Fitzgerald. CC., reg. 45874, fol. 449.
1959. 1647. Apr. 1. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to William Husten, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Thomas Wisgeralt, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 74, fol. 155v.
1960. 1647. Apr. 15. Brussels. Commission to Dermot Osullivan as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be newly recruited.\* EG., reg. 74, Section 2, fol. 2-2v.
1961. 1647. June 12. Armentières. Don Leopold William to Colonel Maugre. He has charged Captain John Campbell to raise a company of Irish infantry, and to assemble the men in the town of Ypres. Orders him to receive at Ypres the men whom the captain shall send. EA., carton 2147.
1962. 1647. June 13. Armentières. Francisco de Calareta to the Secretary of the Audience. Don Leopold William has decided that billets are to be provided at Ypres for six weeks for Captain John Campbell who is raising a company of Irish infantry, and he has ordered that the secretary be informed of this, and in virtue of his office send the necessary order to the magistrates of Ypres. He also wishes the secretary to inform Colonel Maugre to admit to the fortress the men whom Captain Campbell shall send there. EA., carton 2147.\*
1963. 1647. June 13. Armentières. Don Leopold William to the authorities at Ypres. He has charged Captain John Campbell to recruit a company of Irish infantry. Orders the authorities at Ypres, in the name of his Majesty, to receive the officers and men of this company who shall arrive from time to time, and provide them with ordinary billets, during the period of six weeks to run from the date of the arrival of the first group.\* EA., carton 2147.
1964. 1647. Aug. 13. Brussels. Blank commission for a captain of the company of Irish infantry which has arrived from France. EG., reg. 74, fol. 112v.
1965. 1647. Aug. 20. Brussels. Commission to Walter Arizon as captain of a company of Irish infantry with which he has come to serve his Majesty; the company to be attached to the regiment of Dermot Ossullivan Mor which is to be newly recruited.\* EG., reg. 74, fol. 109v.
1966. 1647. Dec. 2. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Since my arrival in these States your Majesty's Ministers have informed me of the small advantage there is in keeping Francisco Foyso in Ireland since the arrival there of Don Diego de la Torre, on account of the bad understanding there is between them. As I have become more convinced every day from their dispatches that they spend their time denouncing each others doings, I have decided to recall Foyso, and I have sent orders to de la Torre to make him a grant of 200 crowns from the money at his disposal, to enable him to pay his debts (as it is two years since he was



given a salary) and the expenses of his journey. I report this to your Majesty that you may be pleased to keep him employed ; and when Foysothe arrives here, your Majesty will be informed, in case it may be thought well to employ him, or make any other decision about him. EGC., reg. 238, fol. 229.

**1967.** 1648. Jan. 21. Brussels. de Castel Rodrigo to Philip IV. The Marquis of Irmonte, formerly Lord Deputy of Ireland, now resident in London, has offered Don Alonso de Cardenas to recruit 4,000 Irishmen for service in Spain at the price and upon the conditions which his Majesty will see by the enclosed letters of Don Alonso. As he asks that he himself be made colonel-in-chief of the men, in the same manner as is the Baron de Gorkin, this petition cannot be granted, as it is contrary to his Majesty's interests ; de Cardenas however has been instructed to continue the negotiations, on account of the difficulty of finding men elsewhere, until his Majesty shall send a definite answer. EGC., reg. 239, fol. 52.

**1968.** 1648. Jan. Document entitled : Regiments which could be taken at the beginning of the campaign to form a corps, together with the recruits. Amongst the regiments named : The Irish regiment, 500 men.\* EGC., reg. 239, fol. 65v-66.

**1969.** 1648, Sept. 17. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. In the letters received from Don Diego de la Torre, who is taking part in Ireland in the negotiations for levies from that nation, he advises, as your Highness will see by the enclosed report, which for the most part is extracted from the letters telling of the state of things in that Kingdom, and of the efforts of the French to obtain an interest in the management of the government. And as it would be proper to keep these negotiations under observation, I have chosen a person to go and undertake them, and open them up. It would be well that Don Diego de la Torre and Foissot return. I earnestly recommend to your Highness to see that you are informed with the greatest possible exactness about these matters, and the precise condition of Ireland, and that your Highness may inform me of all that happens, and give me your opinion about it.

**1970.** Enclosed : A summary of nine letters of Secretary Don Diego de la Torre to his Majesty from Ireland between February 11th and June 14th 1648.

[a]. He mentions the increasing authority and forces of the Marquis of Ormonde, and his journey to France to ask for help.

[b]. There is no party in Ireland able to oppose Ormonde except the party of Eugenio O Neill, who has an army of 12,000 men, and is attached to the service of his Majesty, in whose army he served with approbation for many years. He has shown his attachment by the service he has rendered Don Diego when occasion has offered. Hence the secretary represents the great need of securing his attachment and of assisting him, to enable



him to maintain his position, and not be obliged to make use of the French, who would receive him readily, as this would enable them to do all they wish for, and plan an interest in that country, and make themselves masters of it. For this purpose they already make extraordinary efforts, with money and otherwise. As greater evidence of the affection and devotion of the said Don Eugenio O Neill to his Majesty's service, the secretary sends a document given to him by Don Eugenio, and signed by his hand, in which he offers to enter into communication, and deliver that kingdom to him as soon as he can arrange it. Don Diego also says that the Bishop of Clogher is an intimate friend of Don Diego, and directs his actions, and it would be well to make him some grant or present, in view of his needs and obligations.

[c]. The secretary gives an account of a general assembly held in that kingdom about its political and military government. At first it supported the French party, which strengthened its position by securing the absence of those who leaned to the service of his Majesty. Don Eugenio deferred his coming on account of his many enemies, but at his arrival he secured that his army should not be dispersed, and got permission to have 100 horsemen and 50 musketeers for his personal protection.

[d]. The secretary reports the disputes which took place in the general assembly. Protection was to be asked for, and almost all took sides with the French, whose machinations Don Eugenio cleverly thwarted. This question was greatly advanced by a question which Don Diego himself had drawn up and caused to be circulated throughout the whole Kingdom in Latin and English, so that the warnings against leaning to the French might be well understood. The outcome was that the nuncio and the ecclesiastics took steps to have delegates sent to Rome, France and Spain. To arrange this a committee of twenty four was set up, and it was decided that the Bishop of Ferns and Nicholas Plunket should go to Rome to beg the intervention of His Holiness with the Queen of England and the Princes, so that in the peace which was being treated of, those articles should be inserted which had been drawn up with the participation of the nuncio and the clergy. For the same purpose the Marquis of Antrim was named for France, and Viscount Muskerry and a gentleman of letters were to go to France on a special mission to the Queen. This Don Eugenio caused to be greatly modified, for he had arrived by then, with the result that the efforts in favour of the French were less important.

[e]. Don Diego reports the effects of a speech of his own concerning the fact that only one legate had been sent to Spain. He obliged them to give him satisfaction and much information, for he was told that they would always accept the protection of his (Spanish) Majesty in the first place ; and they named for Spain the Bishop of Ross, to be accompanied by Richard Blake, with the



suggestion that he should remain there in place of Fr Hugo de Burgo. The election of the Bishop of Ross was much disputed, as he is greatly devoted to the service of his Majesty, and is a great friend of Don Eugenio, on whose behalf he will exert himself in Spain. Of all this Don Diego has informed Count de Oñate.

[f]. In a letter of 23 June the secretary reports that of the forty eight members who constituted the last assembly a third of them were opposed to Don Eugenio, and they were determined to overthrow him, and even to make him prisoner. However, he discovered this and escaped, and betook himself to his army, and refused them obedience. Whereupon, as they were not able to offer him resistance, they joined with his enemies to force him to a cessation, which he found himself obliged to accept on account of the favourable conditions offered to him. But the Nuncio did not consent, and neither did the ecclesiastics. On the contrary, the Nuncio published censures against those who opposed him, and had them posted up at the churches. The members of the Council broke into these churches twice, the observance of the precepts of the Church having been reduced by them to a matter of opinion.

[g]. The secretary reports that the armies of both sides are within sight of each other, and that Don Eugenio has issued a manifesto declaring that he was for the King but in favour of the Church. Ill-feeling has risen to such a pitch that enemies are made on both sides, and Blake, who had been nominated as legate for Spain, was made prisoner by Don Eugenio.

[h]. Don Diego speaks of the great importance of giving help to Don Eugenio, both in order to maintain him in his present dispositions, or if these weaken, to maintain a hold on his men. Don Diego says a decision on this must be taken immediately, as the help given by the Nuncio cannot be kept up for long ; so that it would be well if the help given by his Majesty should arrive for September.

[i]. In a letter of the 25th the secretary reports the efforts made for the restitution of the nine boxes of gold sent to Flanders by the Marquis of Munster, and captured by two frigates. He sends four copies, the first, of a document presented to the Council of Ireland concerning the seizure of the gold ; the second, a protest he made against that injustice, warning the Council that reprisals would be taken in Spain against Irish shipping, which is what they fear most ; the third, a copy of the document which the Council wrote to Don Diego, sending him a copy of another document which they had received from the Nuncio, who suggested that the matter should be settled in Rome ; and the fourth, a copy of the answer of Don Diego to the Council, once more protesting to them against the seizure. He reports that the Nuncio is at disagreement with the government ; that the frigates were sequestered although there was only a small quantity of arms



in one of them ; and that recently the government had written to the Nuncio that he must prove his right within ten days, otherwise they would judge the case according to law. Don Diego considers it would be well to give the government to understand that if justice is not done in Ireland, it will be done by his Majesty in Spain. It would also be well to send a note declaring that although the gold went to Dover, it was destined for Flanders, and not for the English Parliament, as they wish to argue. He states the little chance there appears to be of recovering the money, and the reasons for releasing the frigates to the Marquis of Antrim ; and that could only be done in Flanders, by sending an order there to that effect, and keeping it secret until they arrive there.

[j]. The secretary sends the copy of a letter to the General of the Order of St Francis, informing him that the heretics wish to have a second provincial appointed, under the cloak of religion ; their real purpose is to divide the Order by appointing two heads.

Points from various letters of Secretary Don Diego de la Torre.\* EGC., reg. 24I, fol. 211-215.

1971.

1648. Sept. 24. Menin. Leopold William to Philip IV. In your letter of 24 August your Majesty told me that he was informed of what I wrote on 9 and 26 July about the reasons which obliged me to send Francisco de Galaretta to Spa, as also about the arrangement for some ships to go to the port of La Rochelle and the Isle of Rhé, and that one hundred thousand crowns which had been assigned for this purpose would come with the courier who brought this dispatch ; and your Majesty again enjoyed me that this affair should be so arranged as to be put into execution when the army of the enemy would begin its campaign next year, so as not to shut off the diversion they would make in that part. In view of the wishes of your Majesty about this arrangement, no effort will be stayed, so that without loss of time progress may be made in the necessary preparations, according as the means for this arrive. It has been taken into consideration that the English Parliament holds six thousand prisoners, Scotch, English, and Irish, and to be free of the expenses they entail, they have been seeking to offer them for money, and have offered them to Don Alonso de Cardenas. They could be used in this engagement ; but as the Parliament wishes to get rid of them at once, and we have not the money to take them, it is to be born in mind that they will go elsewhere, and we shall lose this good opportunity. Nevertheless word has been sent to Don Alonso that if he could consider the matter, he should do so in view of the purpose mentioned ; and if it should be brought off, he could send with these men the Marquis of Montrose, in whose favour the Duke of Terranuova has written so much to your Majesty, and for my part you could order me to inform Don Alonso of the qualities



and ability of this man, so that your Majesty could make use of him for your service. I find nothing else but this to offer the Marquis, since he is not a Catholic, and has the rank of Camp-Master General of the Emperor, and there is nothing else in the army to offer him unless he accepts a lower rank. EGC., reg. 241. fol. 289.

- 1972.** 1649. Feb. 15. Brussels. Commission to Edward Baron de Geraldin as Major-General. EG., reg. 47, fol. 8v.
- 1973.** 1649. Mar. 25. From the camp at Vadancourt. Commission to Michael de Whyte as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, vacant by the death of Captain Martin Lalor ; in consideration of his having served his Majesty in these parts for some years, always giving a good account of himself, and satisfaction in everything committed to his charge, and bearing himself as a brave and devoted soldier. EG., reg. 47, fol. 7.
- 1974.** 1649. Mar. 25. From the camp at Vadancourt. Commission to Captain Bonaventure de la Biche as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi vacant by the death of Captain Daniel Carty. EG., reg. 47, fol. 7.
- 1975.** 1649. Apr. 7. Bouchain. Orders that the companies of Irish infantry of Captain de la Biche and Captain Daniel Carty are to be treated as distinct from one another, in the same manner as are the other companies. EG., reg. 47, fol. 8.
- 1976.** 1649. June 16. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and special grant of Ensign Dominick Mayghe from the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thadeus Macgriles Patrice, regiment of Colonel John Morfi, to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 47, fol. 39.
- 1977.** 1649. July 13. Bouchain. Commission to Captain Philip Ohey as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi vacant by the death of Captain William Weston. EG., reg. 47, fol. 54.
- 1978.** 1649. July 13. Bouchain. Commission to Captain Thadeus Carty as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi vacant by the death of Captain John Odonel. EG., reg. 47, fol. 54.
- 1979.** 1649. July 13. Bouchain. Orders to Diego Giron to treat as distinct in his books the companies formerly commanded by Captain John Odonel and Captain William Weston. EG., reg. 47, fol. 57.
- 1980.** 1649. July 13. Bouchain. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to the Prior of the Irish Dominicans, with the obligation to assign one of his priests as chaplain to the unattached company of Irish infantry of Captain Maurus Omahon. EG., reg. 47, fol. 58.
- 1981.** 1649. Sept. 17. Baudon. Commission to Charles Omoledi as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Captain Bonaventure de la Biche. EG., reg. 47, fol. 82v.
- 1982.** 1649. Sept. Entries of payments of fifty livres yearly to Isabella Barri, from December 1642 to September 1649. CC., reg. 45874, fol. 432.



- 1983.** 1649. Oct. 1. From the camp. Orders to form into a company to be attached to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi the Irish soldiers recruited by Nicholas Bermingham, of whom a sufficient number are already at Courtrai. EG., reg. 47, fol. 90.
- 1984.** 1649. Oct. 1. From the camp at Queverayn. Commission to Nicholas Bermingham as captain of a company of infantry to be formed from soldiers brought by him from Ireland. EG., reg. 47, fol. 89v.
- 1985.** 1649. Oct. 7. From the camp at Queverayn. Orders to Diego Giron to recognise the captain's commission granted to Charles Omoledi, to which he had raised the objection that the said captain had not the required length of service. EG., reg. 47, fol. 91.
- 1986.** 1649. Dec. 24. Brussels. Petition to Don Leopold William from Baron Omalun, captain of a company of Irish infantry in the regiment of Colonel Patrick Daniel. He has obtained licence for Spain, and asks letters of commendation to his Majesty, similar to the letters he had received from the late Cardinal Infante. EGC., reg. 246, fol. 13.
- 1987.** 1649. Dec. Entries of payments made of fifty livres yearly to Leonora Geraldina, from June 1642 to December 1649. CC., reg. 45873.
- 1988.** 1649. Dec. Entries of payments of fifty livres yearly to Helena Geraldina, from June 1642 to December 1649. CC., reg. 45873, fol. 448.
- 1989.** 1650. Jan. 2. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Letters in favour of Baron Omallun. EGC., reg. 246, fol. 12.
- 1990.** 1650. Jan. 2. Brussels. Copy of a formal letter of commendation given to Baron Omallun by the late Cardinal Infante in 1641.<sup>1</sup> EGC., reg. 246, fol. 14.
- 1991.** 1650. Mar. 23. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. The Irish are exhausted by the prolonged war against the English. The ecclesiastics have sent one of their number to the King of England, with the offer to pay for 6,000 infantry and 2,000 Horse during the war, if their country be freed from the government of the Marquis of Ormonde, who is a heretic. They have proposed to Don Leopold himself to hand over to Philip IV the port of Duncannon, with the permission, they state, of the King of England, and to raise a considerable number of Irish infantry for service in Flanders, and will provide sureties for the money which will be delivered to them. EGC., reg. 246, fol. 281.
- 1992.** 1650. Mar. 24. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. In the name of Colonel Patrick Daniel representations have been made to me of his high birth, and of his long and special services, and among other things I have been requested to be pleased to honour him with two knightships, one for himself, and the other for his son ; also that some part be paid him on account, yearly,

<sup>1</sup>See above, reg. 225, fol. 41, where however the date is given as 1640.



of the money due to him. In view of what he has reported, and of the approval expressed by your Highness in a letter of November 29 last concerning the colonel's services and merits, when you recommended his requests, I have granted him the favour of a knighthood for himself, and your Highness may order this to be communicated to him. Moreover I trust to your Highness to help him yearly with as much as shall seem proper to you from the amount due to him, that he may remedy in part the need in which he says he finds himself. EGC., reg. 246, fol. 293.

**1993.** 1650. Mar. Brussels. Passport for Captain Antoine van de Zipe, to take arms to Ireland. Free. In margin: Deliver to Señor de Moledý, assistant chamberlain to his Highness, by order.\* EAP., vol. 1052, fol. 37.

**1994.** 1650. May 9. Brussels. Commission to Licentiate Thomas O Kearny as judge-advocate of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., 47, fol. 16v.

**1995.** 1650. June 9. Antwerp. Colonel Patrick Daniel to Don Leopold William. The person who is forwarding his interests in Spain has informed him that his Majesty has been pleased to grant him the habit of one of the three military Orders; also that he is to be paid something on account of what is due to him, and to receive full pay as Colonel every month regularly. As he has been ill unto death at Antwerp for the last six months, and unable to apply to his Highness for the order putting the grant into force, he begs the matter may be put into effect shortly, in consideration of his birth and faithful service.

Dorso: To be shown to his Highness when he arrives at the camp. EGC., reg. 576, fol. 62.\*

**1996.** 1651. Jan. 31. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. His Majesty's letter of 7 September had ordered that good relations were to be maintained with the ships of the King of England which should come to the ports of the Low Countries, and instructions were given to the authorities of the Admiralty to carry this out strictly. However, Henry de Vic, the English Minister in these States since the time of the late King of England, has petitioned to take out a ship laden with arms and munitions, and Viscount Taaffe, an Irishman, has asked to be allowed to do the same. In view of the small amount of munitions in the country, and of those which are made here, it would seem better to put off both of them, as they can purchase arms and munitions in Holland, whence usually they are brought to these provinces. In this manner nothing will be done contrary to the treaty with the King of England, and bad feeling with the Parliament will be avoided. EGC., reg. 249, fol. 112.

**1997.** 1651. Feb. 1. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Recruiting in Ireland had to be suspended last autumn, owing to the plague there. The conditions for recruits since offered by Diego O Neill through Anthony Brun were not acceptable. de



Cardenas now reports that one of the Secretaries of State has offered facilities to recruit 5,000 Englishmen, and as many Irishmen. EGC., reg. 249, fol. 125.

1998. 1651. Feb. 23. The widow of Major-General Baron de Geraldin to Don Leopold William. Represents that she wishes to make some requests in Spain, and for this reason asks for letters of commendation to his Majesty which will set out the good and long services rendered by her late husband. EGC., reg. 249, fol. 270.
1999. 1651. Mar. 8. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. The widow of Major-General Geraldin has asked me to represent to your Majesty her husband's services, and that he died last year after having been struck in the head by a cannon-ball. As the zeal and valour with which he served on all occasions are so well known, I have felt obliged to recall him to your Majesty's attention as one of the four major-generals you were pleased to approve, and I feel very certain that by his death a man has been lost who was fitted for the highest military commands. I do not doubt of your Majesty's supreme kindness, and that when you learn of those merits, you will hold them in consideration in favour of his wife's requests, and that she will receive from your royal magnanimity the rewards for which she hopes. EGC., reg. 249, fol. 268.
2000. 1651. Mar. 12. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Licentiate Nicholas Comerfort, as senior chaplain, from the regiment of High German infantry of Colonel Trebach to the regiment of Colonel Cobrant of the same nation. EG., reg. 49, fol. 13v.
2001. 1651. Mar. 20. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. Authorises him to do whatever he may think best about the recruiting of 5,000 English and the same number of Irish, as mentioned in his letter of 1 February 1651.\* EGC., reg. 249, fol. 322.
2002. 1651. Mar. 22. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to James Tobin. EG., reg. 49, fol. 22v.
2003. 1651. Mar. 22. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Patrick Lafan, Irishman. E.G., reg. 49, fol. 23.
2004. 1651. Mar. 24. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Campaign-Captain Walter Calan, of the disbanded company of Colonel Patrick Daniel. EG., reg. 49, fol. 24.
2005. 1651. Apr. 1. Brussels. [a]. Orders to accept and execute all orders relating to the conditions upon which Colonel Thomas Preston Viscount de Faragh, formerly governor of the town and castle of Gennep, has agreed to recruit 2,000 men in Ireland, to be divided into two regiments of 1,000 men, each regiment to consist of ten companies :
- [b]. He shall bring the said 2,000 men from Ireland to one of his Majesty's ports, either Ostend or Nieuport, within two months after he shall have received the money to be paid for them, unless



they be delayed by hazards of misfortune at sea which cannot be foreseen.

[c]. He shall be given eighteen crowns, each of the value of two reales, for every man he shall embark ; all the men who shall be lost at sea by shipwreck or other mishap to be at the cost and risk of his Majesty, as also the men who as certified by the masters of the vessels shall be shown to have died after they had embarked.

[d]. When the said regiments shall have reached these States, they shall be received into the pay and service of his Majesty, and be supplied at the King's costs with arms, and with the same maintenance as the rest of the men in the army.

[e]. If Colonel Preston shall have supplied more than two thousand men, he shall be paid for them at the same rate ; and if fewer, he shall return the extra money he will have received. Should the number be considerably lower than stipulated, it is agreed that instead of two regiments only one shall be formed ; and if there shall be over two thousand men they shall be admitted to service ; and the men who shall be lost at sea shall be counted as effectives.

[f]. Immediately and from now forwards Colonel Preston shall be granted a commission as major-general, with a declaration of the pay he shall receive ; and in the meantime he shall be shown great favour.

[g]. The blank commissions for the captains and other officers of higher or lower grade shall be given to Colonel Preston.

[h]. The thirty six thousand crowns for the levy, of the value agreed upon, shall be paid to him immediately, and for their receipt he shall give legal and trustworthy certificates, signed to the satisfaction of the Secretary of Finances of the Army. EG., reg. 49, fol. 28v.

**2006.** 1651. Apr. 1. Brussels. Blank commissions for the officers of the regiments of Irish infantry to be newly formed. EG., reg. 49, fol. 20-31v.

**2007.** 1651. Apr. 1. Brussels. Commission to Colonel Thomas Preston as Major-General of the regiments of Irish infantry to be newly raised. EG., reg. 49, fol. 31v.

**2008.** 1651. Apr. 1. Brussels. Orders to issue pay of 300 crowns monthly to Major-General Thomas Preston. EG., reg. 49, fol. 32.

**2009.** 1651. Apr. 29. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and pay of Maurice de Burgo from the company of Captain Theobald de Burgo, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 49, fol. 50v.

**2010.** 1651. May 1. Brussels. Grant of sixty crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Gaspar Butler, of the regiment of High German infantry of Colonel James Slebousch. EG., reg. 49, fol. 100v.

**2011.** 1651. May 23. Brussels. Special grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 23 Nov. 1648) of six crowns monthly to



- Sergeant Peter Oconor ; has served for some time in Flanders and Spain ; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 49, fol. 71.
- 2012.** 1651. June 3. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Colonel Plunquet ; is without any post in these States, and wishes to go to offer his services to his Majesty. EG., reg. 49, fol. 79.
- 2013.** 1651. June 5. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Colonel Thomas Plunket, an Irish gentleman, has served your Majesty in these States for some years, having raised a company of infantry in Ireland with which he served. He transferred afterwards to another company, with which he served until he was given command of a company of Horse in the regiment of Colonel la Grange, which was disbanded. He then became lieutenant-colonel of the High German regiment of Colonel Baron de Geraldin, with which he served for three years and a half. During the Irish war he went to Ireland and remained there for some time, and obtained licence to recruit 1200 men, whom he offered to bring to your Majesty's service at the time Castel Rodrigo was here.\* As this was not granted him, he arranged with the Duke of Lorraine to form an infantry regiment of 600 men, with which he served in these States along with the troops which the Duke furnished to join your Majesty's army. As he has now been disbanded, he wishes to go to Spain to serve your Majesty in the wars there; and I have granted him this letter at his request, while assuring your Majesty that he will deserve well of any favour you may confer upon him. EGC., reg. 250, fol. 172.
- 2014.** 1651. June 26. Brussels. Grant in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 15 Dec. 1650) of 116 crowns monthly to Colonel James Geraldin, which is the same as the pension he enjoyed in Catalonia. EG., reg. 49, fol. 92v.
- 2015.** 1651. Aug. Passport for the Bishop of Derry, an Englishman. four florins. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2016.** 1651. Dec. 9. Brussels. Orders to confirm the appointment of William Stegen, soldier of the company of Captain Adam Kock, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, as sergeant of the company of Captain Charles Creagh, of the same regiment ; to which post Captain Creagh had appointed him. EG., reg. 49, fol. 109.
- 2017.** 1651. Dec. 20. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. The Duke of Lorraine has sent an envoy to this Court to represent that he acknowledges the honours he has received from the time since he has devoted himself to my service, but he finds that he has received no mark of appreciation. He is to be informed, at such time as may seem most appropriate, of the value his Majesty places upon his friendship, and that his Majesty would wish to know his desires, so as to be able to carry them out. " The same envoy states that the Duke's intervention in favour of Ireland was for the sake of the Catholic religion, and under the impression that it could be of service to me ; and although I have ordered that he should be told I am at peace with the English Parliament,



I inform your Highness of this so that you may let me know your intentions."\* EGC., reg. 251, fol. 392.

2018. 1652. Jan. 25. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Letters commending Patrick Moledy, who hitherto has been a gentleman-in-waiting and is now proceeding to the Court at Madrid with paintings and other things which Count de Fuensaldana has entrusted to him to be delivered to his Majesty. He is a very worthy person, "and I have taken very great pains to secure him for this undertaking." EGC., reg. 252, fol. 23.
- In EGC., portefeuille 305, is a letter similarly worded commending Moledy to Don Luis de Haro.
2019. 1652. Jan. 30. Brussels. Passport for Patrick Moledi; is going to Spain by order of Don Leopold William with some cloths and other things for his Majesty's service.\* EG., reg. 49, fol. 141.
2020. 1652. Feb. 26. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Jerome Morfi, of the disbanded company of Captain James Hernan, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 49, fol. 164.
2021. 1652. Apr. 3. Brussels. Grant of thirty eight florins monthly to Ensign Ignatius Quelli, of the disbanded company of German armed cavalry of Captain Ernest Kerchem, regiment of Colonel the Count d'Este; to serve in the light Horse. EG., reg. 49, fol. 199.
2022. 1652. Apr. 23. Bourbourg. Orders to transfer the place and pension of Captain Philip Ohay from the Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi to the garrison at Nieuport. EG., reg. 50, fol. 2v.
2023. 1652. Apr. 23. Bourbourg. Conditions upon which Colonel Thomas Preston undertakes to raise 2,000 Irish soldiers to form two regiments, each regiment to have ten companies.\* As under 1 Apr. 1651. EG., reg. 50, fol. 4.
2024. 1652. Apr. 28. Bourbourg. Orders to transfer the place and grant of Captain Christopher Plunquet from the Irish infantry to the garrison at Nieuport.\* EG., reg. 50, fol. 7v.
2025. 1652. May 5. From the camp at Gravelines. Leave of absence for six months, with retention of his company, to Captain Michael Whyte, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 50, fol. 13.
2026. 1652. May —. From the camp at Gravelines. Commission to Ensign Walter de Val as captain of the company of the Irish infantry formerly commanded by Captain Nicholas Bremgham. EG., reg. 50, fol. 23v.
2027. 1652. June 10. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Mathew Muriarti as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, with pay of twenty crowns monthly; has served his Majesty in these parts for twenty years.\* EG., reg. 50, fol. 33v.



2028. 1652. Aug. 16. Valenciennes. Grant of 120 crowns monthly, the pay of an active colonel, to Thomas Preston Viscount Targ, although he is not on active service. EG., reg. 50, fol. 53v.
2029. 1652. Sept. 18. From the camp at Dunkirk. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Don Alonso de Cardenas has reported that he notices a disposition in the part of the English to open up trade with Bordeaux, and help the Prince to send there a number of Irish soldiers. If anything can be done from Brussels to develop the situation, it is important to foster the division.\* EGC., reg. 253, fol. 193.
2030. 1652. Oct. 25. Brussels. Orders to resume payment of the grant of Colonel Dermot Osullivan Mor in the company of Captain Thadeus Maquelpatrick, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; the grant to be drawn henceforward on the Spanish infantry, with which he will serve ; the grant had been suspended by the licence granted him for Spain on 15 Jan. 1648.
- Similar orders for the renewal of the place and special grant held on the regiment of Colonel Morfi by Ensign Henry Doudal, both which had been suspended by the licence for Ireland granted to him on 11 Feb. 1648. EG., reg. 50, fol. 66v.
2031. 1652. Dec. 8. Madrid. Geronimo de la Torre, secretary to Philip IV, to Augustino Navarro Burena, secretary to Don Leopold William. Letters in favour of Michael de White, an Irishman, "who has concluded the business which brought him to this Court, and is now going to Flanders, to serve, and has a letter from his Majesty to Don William Leopold. "I have given him this letter, to beg you to favour him in everything which may arise to his advantage, as his services are deserving of this, and also the services being rendered by his brother Richard White\* in recruiting Irishmen for Spain, of whom he has already brought over a number." EGC., portefeuille 305.
2032. 1652. Dec. 9. Brussels. Commission to Mauro Macmahun as major of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; the vacancy has been caused by the death of Captain Peter de Butler. EG., reg. 60, fol. 94.
2033. 1652. Dec. 22. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. Fr Francis de Fox, an Irish friar who has come to this Court on some business, has represented to me the loss which has followed from recruiting Irishmen for these kingdoms by contracts made in this Court with merchants and others. These losses have followed both from the point of view of religion, and as regards the insignificant results of the levies made, as the men have deserted through the fault of the contractors, who, to do business, purchased the greater number of the men from the heretics, and obliged them to embark by force. He begs me to be pleased, so as to avoid this, to send my representative to Ireland immediately, to live in the quarters of the parliamentary forces, and so be able to recruit the men he chooses more cheaply and quickly, without



weakening the forces of those who are fighting for religion. And as I have thought it might be well to carry out this proposal, seeing that a large number of Irish veterans would be useful for the war in Portugal, and that it would be well to free those oppressed Catholics in this manner, before force or despair constrains them to change their religion ; and as at the same time it has been reported to me that Juan Triquet would be the right man for this work, and that he has given a good account of any of the tasks entrusted to him ; I have placed in his hands, and for this purpose I have assigned him 300 crowns monthly, with 2,000 crowns expenses, to enable him to get ready and make the journey. I have thought it well to give an account of all this to your Highness, so that you may know the motive of this decision, and inform the said John Triquet, and have him instructed as to whom he is to apply for the consignment to be delivered to him, and for the expenses of his journey. Of all this your Highness will keep me informed, and also of the advice to be given to him in his instructions, that he may set out with becoming prudence. EGC., reg. 253, fol. 413.

**2034.** 1653. Jan. Brussels. Passport for Raymund Charon, priest of the Order of St Francis. Free. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.

**2035.** 1653. Jan. 3. Brussels. Commission to Charles Moledy as captain of the company of Irish infantry vacant by the promotion of Captain Maurice Macmahon.\* EG., reg. 51, fol. 1.

**2036.** 1653. Feb. 21. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. [a]. Your Majesty was pleased to write to me on 22 December of last year concerning the representations made by Fr Francis de Fox, who is an Irishman, about the state of Ireland and the sufferings of the people there, who are in arms. You were pleased to state that it would be well to recruit men for the war in Portugal, and so free these oppressed Catholics there, so that force may not be able to reduce them to despair, or to change their religion ; and your Majesty had decided to send for that purpose Juan Trichet, to carry out the recruiting in Ireland. Your Majesty ordered me also to report my opinion on the instructions to be given to Trichet.

[b]. The condition of Ireland is the same as it was before the beginning of the war, and not only are the people not in arms to regain their liberty, as they have informed your Majesty, but in the whole kingdom there is not any walled place which does not obey the English Parliament, which has deprived them of the free exercise of their religion, which consequently they are able to practise only in secret, as they did when the Kings of England ruled. So much as regards religion. As regards the levies, I beg leave to say to your Majesty that they are permitted by the Parliament, and as there are in Ireland men inured to war and accustomed to hardship, in large numbers, the English could not but expect a rising, if help were given by some foreign power.



For this reason, last year they permitted Colonel Preston to bring 4,000 or 5,000 out of Ireland, whom he offered to me; and he even signed an agreement for 2,000 men, which however he did not carry out, as there was not enough money for the levy.<sup>1</sup>

[c]. I have ordered that Juan Trichet be informed that he has been designated for the work which your Majesty commands, and that he should also be told that he must refer to your Majesty for the means, and for his instructions. I have ordered that Don Alonso [de Cardenas] be communicated with, that he may say whether Trichet would meet with any difficulty in Ireland, and send his own opinion about the instructions which Trichet is to be given.

[d]. On this occasion it has seemed to me opportune to inform your Majesty that during these days an Irish cleric has been here, in disguise, who said he came from Rome, and that His Holiness had given him hopes for Ireland. He brought a letter from the Emperor, charging me to show him favour. He proposed especially that in the treaty of peace and of mutual commerce which is at present being negotiated by the English, an article should be inserted in favour of the Catholic religion in Ireland, and that the liberation of Don Eugenio\* O'Neill should be asked for, in consideration of the fact that he served your Majesty for so many years in these States. He weighed the advantage which would ensue to your royal service from supporting the Irish, and begged that an account of his proposals should be presented to your Majesty. I shall await whatever decisions you may be pleased to take.<sup>3</sup> EGC., reg. 254, fol. 111.

2037. 1653. Mar. 7. Brussels. Supplement of the length of service required to become ensign granted to Maurus Huynne, of the company of Colonel Morfi; the said colonel has named him for the post in the company of the late Captain William Rossy. EG., reg. 51, fol. 34v.

2038. 1653. Mar. 10. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. The Irish Franciscan Peter Walsh has represented that he knows that certain persons, with good intentions, had informed his Majesty in the year 1652 that several Irish Franciscans who were serving as chaplains in the armies of the Low Countries enticed the soldiers to leave his Majesty's service. In consequence of these denunciations his Majesty had ordered Don Leopold to expel these friars. Walsh maintains that the accusations are false. The memorial of the plaintiff is enclosed, [missing] with orders that Don Leopold is to examine it. Conseil d'Etat, liasse 293.

2039. 1653. Mar. 18. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Patrick Hadser, to whom Patrick Moledy had entrusted some cloth to be delivered to Luis Mendez de Hero at Madrid. EG., reg. 51, fol. 43v.

2040. 1653. Apr. 6. Brussels. Commission to Sergeant Thadeus Ohay as quarter-master of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 51, fol. 62v.



- 2041.** 1653. Apr. 6. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. In the last ordinary dispatch I informed your Majesty of my opinion concerning Juan Triquet's journey to Ireland, and I waited for this dispatch to write with greater exactitude, after I had seen the answer of Don Alonso de Cardenas, to whom I had ordered that instructions should be sent to inform me of his opinion. He has answered as your Majesty will see by the copy of his letter enclosed in this,<sup>1</sup> and it merely remains for me to agree that the journey of John Triquet to Ireland in the present circumstances would be useless, and it would be well to avoid the ill-feeling of the Parliament of England, as it is possible to supply the levies of Irishmen by other means less dangerous. EGC., reg. 254, fol. 188.
- 2042.** 1653. Apr. 18. Brussels. Commission to Captain Philip Ohay as captain of the company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, vacant by the death of Captain Seneca Sauvage. EG., reg. 51, fol. 77v.
- 2043.** 1653. Apr. 18. Brussels. Commission to Captain Thadeus Morfi as captain of the company of a regiment of Colonel John Morfi which is vacant by the death of Captain Henry Oneil, of the same regiment. EG., reg. 51, fol. 85.
- 2044.** 1653. Apr. 23. Brussels. Orders to issue pay to Colonel James Geraldin, of the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Baltassar Mercedes, for the period of the year 1653 during which he was absent in England on business of his Majesty. EG., reg. 51, fol. 86v.
- 2045.** 1653. Apr. 28. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Maurice Durcan ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel Gaspar Bomfay. EG., reg. 51, fol. 93.
- 2046.** 1653. May 6. Brussels. Orders to accept and ratify the conditions upon which Dudleo de Castello\* has formed a regiment with 732 Irishmen he has brought here from Ireland ; and orders for the payment of the other 600 Irishmen he has offered to recruit.
- An agreement has been made with Dudleo de Castello that a regiment of infantry shall be formed of 632 Irishmen whom he has brought from Ireland to serve his Majesty, under the following conditions:
- [a]. First. He shall be given six crowns, each of the value of ten reales, for each of the 632 men he has brought to these States, and in like manner he shall be given fifteen crowns, each of the same value, for every one of the other 600 men, more or less in number, whom he offers to bring over, and who must be on service in his regiment by the end of the coming month of July this year ; and he shall be paid on account, or be paid at least the half of the whole of this sum, when he shall have presented legal and reliable bonds, signed to the satisfaction of those in charge of the finances of the army, for the security of the sum he shall have received.

<sup>1</sup>Missing.



[b]. When the said 600 men shall arrive in these States, they shall be given proper quarters.

[c]. He himself shall be given the commission of Colonel of the regiment, and also the other commissions in blank, namely the commission of the Major and of the fourteen captains, and those of the higher officers who shall be attached to the said regiment, in such sort that the regiment shall be upon the same footing as those others of the same nation which have been or are in these States.

[d]. Arms and clothing shall be provided for the men in the same manner as for the other soldiers of this army who serve at their own expense.

[e]. He shall be afforded the assistance of free places, as are the others, when on active service ; and as concerns the expenses he asks for himself and his officers when starting out on a campaign, he shall be treated with sollicitude and attention to his merits. This shall also hold as regards the regiment not being disbanded. EG., reg. 51, fol. 96.

2047. 1653. May 6. Brussels. Commission to Dudley Costello as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 51, fol. 112.

2048. 1653. May 7. Brussels. Conditions made with James Kannan for the formation of a regiment with the 274 men he has brought from Ireland and the other 250 whom he offers to bring :

[a]. An agreement has been made with James Kannan that a regiment of Irish infantry shall be formed of the 274 Irishmen he has brought from Ireland and 550 others whom he offers to bring, under the following conditions :

[b]. For each of the 274 men he has at present in these States he shall be paid twelve crowns, each crown of the value of ten reales, one half of this amount on account and the other half to be paid within two months.

[c]. They shall receive the same rations as the other soldiers quartered in the country.

[d]. The commission of colonel shall be sent to Thomas Haper ; also a blank commission for the major, fourteen captains, and the other superior officers, when the remaining 550 men whom he offers shall arrive here.

[e]. The said 550 men shall receive the same treatment as the others, and like pay.

[f]. They shall be supplied with arms and uniforms at the same time as the other soldiers who serve at their own cost, and shall have the same privileges which the Irish nation has enjoyed when serving in these States. EG., reg. 51, fol. 96v.

2049. 1653. May 9. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Helena Hoor, widow of Sergeant William Anglin. EG., reg. 51, fol. 102.

2050. 1653. May 20. Brussels. Appointment of Bernard Gubrinus to serve as chaplain with the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 51, fol. 113v.



2051. 1653. May 28. Brussels. Passport for Fr Peter Valescio,\* Franciscan. "Whereas a levy of 3,000 infantry of the Irish nation has been arranged with Lucas Lucie\* and Francis Owen,\* residents in the neighbourhood of London, to serve his Majesty in his most victorious army; and whereas it is proper to send a person of ability who may procure facilities for this; Fr Peter Valescio of the Order of St Francis has been suggested to us, and we have been petitioned to order that a passport be given to him."  
In margin: Passport for England and Ireland to Fr Peter Valescio. EG., reg. 51, fol. 117v.
2052. 1653. May 28. Brussels. Blank commission for the colonel, lieutenant colonel, and fourteen captains of the regiment of Irish infantry which is to be newly formed. EG., reg. 51, fol. 117v.
2053. 1653. May 28. Brussels. Commission to Patrick Macgenillonel as sergeant of the company of Captain Philip Ohay, of the regiment of Colonel Morfi. EG., reg. 51, fol. 119.
2054. 1653. May 30. Brussels. Blank commissions for two regiments of Irish infantry to be newly formed. EG., reg. 51, fol. 142.
2055. 1653. May 30. Brussels. Sixteen blank commissions for a further regiment of Irish infantry; to be left blank, and dated 10 June 1653. EG., reg. 51, fol. 142.
2056. 1653. June. Passport for 3,000 Irishmen. Service. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
2057. 1653. June. Four blank passports for those who are to lead some Irishmen of the troops of Prince de Condé. Service. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
2058. 1653. July 31. Brussels. Orders to Pedro Mendoza to supply one barrel of powder, and wick and ball, to the regiment of Irish infantry serving with the Duke of Lorraine.\* EG., reg. 51, fol. 154v.
2059. 1653. Aug. 6. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Dermot Osullivan Moar, pensioner in the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 51, fol. 158.
2060. Undated. (1653, August?) From the camp at Rocroy. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Colonel Cary d'illon, to enable him to recruit 1,000 men, according to his contract. EG., reg. 51, fol. 172v.
2061. Undated. (1653, August?) From the camp at Rocroi. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Viscount de Costello, to enable him to raise a regiment of 1,000 men, according to his contract. EG., reg. 51, fol. 172v.
2062. 1653. Sept. 14. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold William. Don Alonso de Cardenas has written to me that Hugh Oneill, who is Irish, is in England, and has come out of the prison he was in in London, Don Alonso having given himself as surety that he would not again take up arms against the Republic of England, which Oneill promised upon his oath and word. He is a man whom the Irish hold in respect and affection, and for this reason Don



Alonso thought that if Oneill were engaged in these States [*Flanders*] or in Spain, the flight of the Irish soldiers to France would be prevented. He even thinks it probable that Oneill would bring back those who are already there. For these and other reasons I have thought well to charge your Highness, as I hereby do, that immediately upon the receipt of this dispatch you are to send Oneill to Spain, ordering him to make the journey with all haste, and granting him for the purpose whatever your Highness may think proper.\* EGC., reg. 256, fol. 75.

2063. 1653. Nov. 18. Tournai. To Geronimo de la Torre. As regards Hugh Oneill, his Highness sends no answer, as Oneill has gone to Spain without there having been any need to send him, as his Majesty had ordered. He is looked upon as a gentleman of very good parts, and is held in esteem ; of which you will inform his Majesty, so that he may retain him as a pensioner.<sup>1</sup> EGC., portefeuille 305.

2064. 1653. Nov. 19. Tournai. Orders to disband certain regiments of Horse and of infantry, among them : the superior officers of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Charles Moledy, and the companies of Captains P. Barnaval, Hugh Daleo, and Francis Caglano ; the men of these companies to be sent to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi.

In the same regiment of Colonel Morfi are to be included the companies of Captains Edmond Bremigan, Francis Barnaval, and Terence Coglono ; the superior officers of the regiment of Colonel Charles Dillon,\* and the companies of Captains Christopher Dillon, Francis Bernard, and Fergus — ; of which companies the men are to be sent to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; and likewise the companies of Captains Gerard Dillon, Balaquias Flins, and Fergus Lisco.

The senior officers of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Cary Dillon, whose company, and the companies of Captains Valentine Barnabal, Hogel Halfiedt, and John Stalledt are to be disbanded, and the men to be sent to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi.

To be sent to the same regiment : the companies of Captains Ludovico Diano, Richard de la Heyde, and Gaspar Fuyt.

Of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi are to be disbanded : the companies of Captains Dermot Dempsy, Philip Ohay, Dominick Merseman, Theodore Carly, and Francis Dudal ; the men to be sent to the other companies of the same regiment. EGC., reg. 51, fol. 188v.

2065. 1653. Dec. 13. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Denis Egano as ordinary chaplain to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, with pay of twelve crowns monthly. EGC., reg. 51, fol. 198v.

2066. 1653. Dec. 15. Brussels. Orders for the payment of Francis Owen for eighty Irish soldiers who had been killed in action. EGC., reg. 52, fol. 1.



2067. 1653. Dec. 15. Brussels. Orders for the payment of Francis Owen ; has brought men to these States for the formation of three regiments. He is to be paid eighteen crowns, each of the value of ten reales, for each of the eighty men of the said contingent who died during the delay before their transfer. EG., reg. 51, fol. 198.
2068. 1653. Dec. 21. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Major Gilbert Talbot, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Cary Dillon. EG., reg. 52, fol. 4v.
2069. 1653. Dec. 22. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Daniel Quenendach, of the disbanded company of Captain Thadeus Carli, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 5v.
2070. 1653. Dec. 22. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign William Obrin, of the disbanded company of Captain Francis Dudal, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 3v.
2071. 1653. Dec. 24. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Arturo Macaglon and Licentiate Maccarig ; to serve as chaplains to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 6.
2072. 1653. Dec. 24. Brussels. Commission to Captain Francis Coestlan as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi vacant by the death of Captain Terence Coestlan ; had served with another company of the men of the same nation during the last campaign. EG., reg. 52, fol. 9v.
2073. 1653. Dec. 31. Brussels. Licence to Colonel Charles Dillon to withdraw from these States. EG., reg. 52, fol. 8v.
2074. 1654. Jan. 2. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Colonel James Geraldin,\* pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Colonel Balthazar Mercades. EG., reg. 52, fol. 8v.
2075. 1654. Jan. 7. Brussels. Major Guilbert Talbot to Don Leopold William. Represents that formerly he held the commission of major in the regiment of Colonel Carey Dillon, and that he spent 3,000 crowns in the recruiting of that regiment, which consisted of 1,000 Irishmen ; and he served through the whole of the last campaign without receiving either a post or any recompense. He therefore begs his Highness to grant him a letter of recommendation that his Majesty may grant him a company of Horse in Spain, in consideration of the money he spent in his Majesty's service for the said levy, not to mention other services. EGC., reg. 257, fol. 29.
2076. 1654. Jan. 7. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign James Obrin, of the disbanded company of Captain Philip Ohay, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 14.
2077. 1654. Jan. 8. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Bernard Obrin, of the disbanded company of Captain Dominick Bermans Lorilla, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 13v.



2078. 1654. Jan. 8. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Charles Moledy, to whom on 30. May 1653 had been issued a commission as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry with which he had served until the end of the last campaign, when it was disbanded. In margin : Did not take effect. EG., reg. 52, fol. 56v.
2079. 1654. Jan. 10. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Philip Ohay ; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 52, fol. 14v.
2080. 1654. Jan. 10. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. Letters in commendation of Major Talbot. EGC., reg. 257, fol. 28.
2081. 1654. Jan. 20. Brussels. Commission to Maurice Quenedi, of the company of Captain Adam Roche, as quarter-master of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; has served in these parts for thirteen years.\* EG., reg. 52, fol. 26.
2082. 1654. Jan. 27. Brussels. Commission to James Odoneil, son of Colonel Patrick Odoneill, as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi vacant by the death of Captain Manus Maccicle. EG., reg. 52, fol. 29v.
2083. 1654. Jan. 27. Brussels. Orders to admit the commission of James Odoneill as captain, notwithstanding that he has not the required length of service. EG., reg. 52, fol. 29v.
2084. 1654. Jan. 28. Brussels. Orders to admit the commission, notwithstanding that he had not previously served, granted to Mortiato Coghlan as captain of the company formerly commanded by Captain Theobald de Burgo, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 29v.
2085. 1654. Jan. 28. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Raymond de Burgo, senior chaplain of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Francisco de Meneses. EG., reg. 52, fol. 29.
2086. 1654. Jan. 29. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Roger Dempsi, of the disbanded company of Captain Dermot Dempsi, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 33.
2087. 1654. Jan. 29. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of eighty crowns monthly of Captain Peter Geraldin from the cavalry company of Captain Juan Bautista Lopella to the garrison at Ostend, where he will serve henceforward. EG., reg. 52, fol. 37.
2088. 1654. Feb. 9. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant John Dempsi, of the disbanded company of Captain Dermot Dempsi, regiment of Colonel John Morfi.\* EG., reg. 52, fol. 42v.
2089. 1654. Feb. 28. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Patrick Maquilcoel, of the disbanded company of Captain Philip Ohy, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 53v.
2090. 1654. Mar. 13. Brussels. Orders to transfer Gemes Ofaril from the company of Colonel John Morfi to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 52, fol. 61v.



- 2091.** 1654. Mar. 14. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Raymund de Burgo as chaplain of the company of armed Spanish Horse of Colonel Count de Castlemende. EG., reg. 52, fol. 62.
- 2092.** 1654. Mar. 21. Brussels. Appointment of Richard Barri as sergeant of the company of Captain Adam Roche, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 66v.
- 2093.** 1654, Mar. 21. Brussels. Appointment of Edward Nugent, soldier of the company of Captain Gaspar Duit, regiment of Colonel John Morfi, to be sergeant of the company of Captain Francis Bernaval. EG., reg. 52, fol. 68v.
- 2094.** 1654. Mar. 24. Brussels. Blank commission for an officer to lead 600 Irishmen, newly arrived from Ireland, from Dunkirk to Malines. EA., liasse 2131.\*
- 2095.** Undated. The authorities at Ypres to the Secretary of the Audience. Request instructions about the billeting of Irish soldiers in their town. EA., liasse 2147.
- 2096.** 1654. Apr. 3. Brussels. An account of the officers of the Spanish and of the Irish infantry who have lately come from Spain, according to the muster held on 31 March 1654. Irish officers in the company of Captain John Geraldin, seven ; men, thirty two. In the company of Captain Oliver de Fortel, officers six, men thirty five. In the company of Captain Matthew Muney, four officers, sixteen men. In the company of Captain Thadeus Oconor, two officers, seven men. EA., carton 2149.
- 2097.** 1654. Apr. 4. Brussels. To the Secretary of the Audience, Orders from Don Leopold William that letters are to be written to the authorities at Armentières\* instructing them to billet in the town the two companies of Irish infantry which have lately come to these States and are to be attached to the Irish regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EA., carton 2149.
- 2098.** 1654. Apr. 7. Brussels. Commission to Adjutant Daniel Deymse as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, vacant by the death of Captain Thadeus Machilpatrice. EG., reg. 52, fol. 77.
- 2099.** 1654. Apr. 12. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland to Captain John Chalet, soldier of the company of Captain Michael de Wid, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; the men of the company with which he came to these States in the year 1653 have been included in the said regiment, and he himself does not receive the pay of a disbanded captain, as he has not been received to the pay and service of his Majesty. EG., reg. 52, fol. 86.
- 2100.** 1654. Apr. 12. Brussels. Similar licence for the same reasons to Ensign Richard Brimigan, of the company of Captain Maurus Coxglan ; had come over to these States in the year 1653 to serve as an ensign. EG., reg. 52, fol. 86v.
- 2101.** 1654. Apr. 28. Brussels. Commission to Edmond Croak as ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Matthew Mony, which has lately arrived in these States. EG., reg. 52, fol. /105.



2102. 1654. May 15. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. His Majesty has ordered that the commissary-general of the Order of St Francis be communicated with and asked to remove from these States, quietly, those friars of his Order who are moving about amongst the armies here. This will be done, and "at the same time that I received your Majesty's letter of 20 March, I received similar information about one of the friars named Francis Dillon." EGC., reg. 257, fol 179.
2103. 1654. May 22. Brussels. Passport for Louis Barige, Irish priest, who has come to these States from Ireland and wishes to proceed to Rome; "of good stature, hair and beard chestnut, hair grey, and bald, aged sixty eight years.\* EG., reg. 52, fol. 108v.
2104. 1654. June 12. Brussels. Commission to Amiele MacDiermot as ensign of the company of Captain Charles Creagh, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 52, fol. 131v.
2105. 1654. June. Brussels. Passport to Bernard Oflaherty, Irish gentleman.\* Pro Deo. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 3v.
2106. 1654. Aug. 28. Condé. Don Leopold William to the Four Members of Flanders. Orders to give twenty days' assistance to the 1,000 Irishmen who are reported to have landed at one of the ports of Flanders, in the same manner that assistance was given to the last men of the same nation who arrived; the sum involved may be deducted from money supplied for other aids, and from subsidies already granted, or to be granted. EA., liasse 2137. 2.
2107. 1654. Sept. 3. Viscoigne. Orders from Don Leopold William to all concerned that they are to deliver to the Earl of Castlehaven, as soon as he shall require, and without dissimulation or favour, all those Irishmen from the troops of Condé who are reported to be disbanding, and to be withdrawing into the provinces and towns. EA., liasse 2131. 3.
2108. 1654. Sept. 24. Brussels. Instructions to an officer unnamed to conduct 500 men of the troops of Condé from Malines to Mons, halting at Meerbeek and Watermael, and crossing the river at Ruisbroeck, EA., liasse 2131. 3.
2109. 1654. Dec. 3. Brussels. Commission for an Irish officer, unnamed, to conduct 50 men of the troops of Condé, whom he has brought together in different towns in Flanders, to Brussels from Keuraing, and there to join the main body of the regiment; to billet first at Kester, and from there proceeding to Hainault. For the billets needed until he reaches Hainault he will apply to the Count de Busquoy.\* EA., liasse 2131. 3.
2110. 1655. Feb. 6. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. He has often represented to his Majesty the very miserable condition of these provinces, which are in a state of final ruin and despair. Things have lately become more evident for "to-night there came an Irishman, sent from Paris, and directed here by Don Alonso de Cardenas. He declared, generally speaking, that great questions are being treated of in these parts by Cardinal Mazarin against



the interests of your Majesty. The cities of Antwerp, Ghent, and Brussels, are those principally concerned, and they wish to form themselves into cantons, and free themselves, under the general protection of France, who promises to support them as free citizens, and to restore the fortresses which France holds in these States ; whereupon the rest of the country will easily follow the plausibility of this sweet mistress of liberty. The Irishman says this is being treated of through the Dutch and their ambassador in Paris, and that the Dutch offer the cities their help. However, he states that his principal, who sent him from Paris, will reveal further details only upon the deposit of a certain sum of money." EGC., reg. 289, fol. 58.

- 2111.** 1655. Feb. 12. Brussels. Don Leopold William to Philip IV. In our present condition everything excites alarm. An effort is being made to discover the authors of the trouble mentioned in the last letter. As the Irishman has persisted in his refusal to say anything about the intrigues and disturbances which are being plotted, a credit of 10,000 crowns is being looked for, to be remitted to Don Alonso de Cardenas, to be given as a reward for the information in the possession of the Irishman and his patron. EGC., reg. 258. fol. 88.
- 2112.** 1655. Mar. Passport for Fr Patrick Carny, Irish Dominican. Pro Deo. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2113.** 1655. Mar. Passport for Fr Raymond Charon, Irishman, of the Order of St Francis. Pro Deo. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2114.** 1655. Mar. Passports for Andrew Baret and Daniel Patricio, Irish pilgrims going to Galicia. By order of the President. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2115.** 1655. Apr. Passports for Nicholas Bodkine, who resides in Ireland. Four florins. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2116.** 1655. Apr. 7. Brussels. The Secretary of the Audience to Count de Montecuccoli. Acknowledges receipt of the news of the mutiny of the troops under the command of Philip Orelly at Armentières. The matter has been committed to the charge of Carlo Campi.\* EA., liasse 2126.
- 2117.** 1655. Apr. 17. Brussels. Don Leopold to Philip IV. The Irish who were in armed mutiny at Armentières have been brought to reason. EGC., reg. 258, fol. 217.
- 2118.** 1655. May 22. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Leopold. Rosa Odocharti, the widow, as she states, of Don Eugenio Oneil, has represented to me the services of her husband during thirty seven years in Flanders, and also that in Ireland he served as General for the Catholic Confederation, on which account he lost all his possessions. Also that a brother and a son of hers died in the same service, and that for these reasons I was pleased to order that she should be granted eighty crowns monthly on the embassy at Rome ; which grant was transferred afterwards to Brussels, as the result of which payment has not been made. In consideration



of this she begs me to order that she be paid the same amount with due regularity, or that she be given some grant that will enable her to pass the few remaining days of her life. In view of her representations, and of other reasons why she should be paid punctually, I have consented to charge your Highness (as I now do) to order that the grant which was assigned to her be paid in full. EGC., reg. 259, fol. 31.

- 2119.** 1655. May. Passport for James Darcy, junior, Irish Franciscan. Pro Deo. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2120.** 1655. June. Brussels. Passport for Fr Francis Patrick Carny, Irish Dominican. Free. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2121.** 1655. June. Brussels. Brussels. Passport for Susanne O Quinn, widow of Dermot Carti, Irishman. Pro Deo. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
- 2122.** 1656. Jan. 15. Brussels.\* Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Christopher Geraldin, of the disbanded company of Captain Malachy Ocalan, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3.
- 2123.** 1656. Jan. 15. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Conor Meloy, of the disbanded company of Captain Mortan McDormedy. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3.
- 2124.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Morirtach Orierte, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 2v.
- 2125.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Lawrence Ruerqui, of the disbanded company of Captain Mortan MacDermody, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3.
- 2126.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Remundo Chody, of the disbanded company of Captain Morirtach Ororti. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3.
- 2127.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Martin Ofay, of the disbanded company of Captain Maurus Quileanno, regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; to Sergeant Laurean, of the company of Captain Matthew Muyni ; and to Sergeant William Mocaredesi, of the disbanded company of Captain Moriarty Coghlan ; all of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3.
- 2128.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Maurus Quileano, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3v.
- 2129.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Marirut Macqsini, of the disbanded company of Captain Morirtach Oerti, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3v.
- 2130.** 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Mortan Macdormedy, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3v.



2131. 1656. Jan. 30. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Moriarte Coghlan, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3v.
2132. 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Malachias Ocalan, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3v.
2133. 1656. Jan. 20. Brussels. Grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign John de Burgo, of the disbanded company of Captain Mariart Coghlan. EG., reg. 53, fol. 3v.
2134. 1656. Jan. 21. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to Ensign Florence Carti, of the disbanded company of Captain Mortax Macdermody. EG., reg. 53, fol. 4v.
2135. 1656. Jan. 26. Brussels. Orders to confirm the appointment of Thadeus Faril, who has lately come from France with twelve men to serve here, as ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Fergieri Ofaril, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 7v.
2136. 1656. Jan. 30. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign John Mackerin, of the disbanded company of Captain Maurus Quileano, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 53, fol. 10.
2137. 1656. Feb. 3. Brussels. Orders to confirm the appointment of Hugo Orelly Castebran, of the company of Captain Charles Orelly Castebran, regiment of Colonel John Morfi, as ensign of the said company. EG., reg. 53, fol. 14v.
2138. 1656. Feb. 16. Brussels. Commission to Captain P. Geraldin as major of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; vacancy of the post caused by the defection of Maurus Macmahon. EG., reg. 53, fol. 24.
2139. 1656. Feb. 24. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Henry Doudal as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 53, fol. 32v.
2140. 1656. Mar. 9. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Dermicio Obrein, to whom a like grant had been made previously for the term of eight months, on the company of Irish infantry of Colonel Philip Orelly, to enable him to produce in the meantime a certificate of the disbanding of his company in Catalonia, whence he has come ; the eight months have passed without his having been able to produce the certificate, but in the meantime his Majesty has ordered that consideration is to be had of his person, birth and services ; to serve in the Irish infantry.\* EG., reg. 53, fol. 41v.
2141. 1656. Mar. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Dermot Obrein ; as under 9 March 1656, but with the order that he is to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 53, fol. 47v.
2142. 1656. June 8. Brussels. Orders to renew the grant of twenty crowns monthly formerly enjoyed by Thomas Geraldino ; " has



- represented to us that on account of the services of his father and his uncle, a maintenance grant was made to him in the year 1606 of twenty crowns monthly, which he enjoyed upon the Irish infantry, and later upon the castle of Cambrai, without obligation to serve, until, as the result of a reform, it was reduced by one third, and in the year 1611 lapsed altogether on account of the licence given him for Ireland, where he remained until lately. In order to preserve his Catholic faith in the general turmoil of the kingdom, he suffered expulsion and was forced to withdraw, after he had lost his children and property." Grant renewed, to help him in his old age and infirmities. EG., reg. 54. fol. 22v.
- 2143.** 1656. June 19. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Richard Fanin ; has represented that by order of his Majesty he had raised a company of Irish infantry and had sailed with it for Spain, but was captured by the French off the coast of Biscay ; had made his escape after a long time, and had come to these State ; to serve with the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 54. fol. 39v.
- 2144.** 1656. July 6. From the camp at Valenciennes. Commission to Captain Thomas Cavanagh, soldier of the company of Captain Adam Roche, as campaign-captain in the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; vacancy due to the fact that the previous holder of the commission had absented himself. EG., reg. 54. fol. 46.
- 2145.** 1656. July 6. From the camp at Famars, near Valenciennes. Commission to George Cusack as colonel ; had been colonel of an Irish regiment with the Duke of Lorraine, but had come to these States to serve his Majesty when Duke Francis went over to the French.\*
- Blank commission for the lieutenant-colonel and nine captains of the same regiment. EG., reg. 54, fol. 47.
- 2146.** 1656. July 10. From the camp at Famars. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel James de la Hoyd ; to serve with the Spanish infantry. Had been colonel of an Irish regiment with the troops of the Duke of Lorraine, but when Duke Francis went over to the French, he had left his regiment and baggage in order to come and serve in these States after the manner of his ancestors. EG., reg. 54, fol. 46 bis.
- 2147.** 1656. July 11. Madrid. Philip IV to Don John of Austria. He has learned by the letter of 3 June of Don John's talk with King Charles of England, and of Charles's insistance that the ships of Cromwell's party which desired to come over to him should be received in the ports of the Low Countries. By now Don John will have received the ratification of the treaty signed with Charles. News is awaited of subsequent events, in particular of what Charles may have done about the coming over of Cromwell's ships, and of his bringing over to the Spanish service the Irish who are fighting for the French, as he had written to Alonso de Cardenas. Both these points are of great importance for himself,



as neither force could then be used against him. EGC., reg. 261, fol. 185.

- 2148.** 1656. July 26. From the camp at Queurin. Orders for the transfer of Sergeant Dermot Ocasí from the company of Colonel John Morfi to the ordinary garrison at Termonde, as he is no longer able for active service. EG., reg. 54, fol. 53.
- 2149.** 1656. July 27. From the camp at Condé. Orders to admit to pay the regiment of Colonel George Cusack. EG., reg. 54, fol. 51.
- 2150.** 1656. July 28. From the camp at Condé. Orders to form into a company and admit to pay the thirty Irish soldiers whom Captain Mortagh Macdiermody Rie had gathered together at Lierre ; the company to be attached to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 54, fol. 54.
- 2151.** 1656. July 28. From the camp at Condé. Commission to Captain Mortagh Macdiermody Rie as captain of a company which he had assembled at Lierre. EG., reg. 54, fol. 54.
- 2152.** 1656. July 31. From the camp at Condé. Orders to transfer the pension of Captain Mauro Quileano from the company of Irish infantry of Captain Daniel Demsi to the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 54, fol. 53v.
- 2153.** 1656. Aug. 2. Points worthy of consideration in the question concerning the Irish, which Chancellor Hyde, on behalf of the King of England, wishes to have placed before his Highness by the ambassador Don Alonso de Cardenas.

[a]. Whereas the numbers of Irishmen serving in the armies of the King of France is considerable, and their attachment to the King of England is so well known (for one of the conditions they made when taking service with France was that they should be bound to serve only until their sovereign the King of England should call them to his service) it cannot be doubted that France is most watchful about that nation, especially as the French know that the mere residence of the King of England in these parts is sufficient to deprive France of their service. For this reason the French use every diligence and employ every kind of artifice to retain the Irish, binding their principal leaders under extraordinary promises, and making use of the different ecclesiastics of the nation to ensure that there will be no association between his Catholic Majesty and the King of England. As regards the States of Flanders, nothing is taken for granted by the French ever since the King of England has taken up his residence there ; and they consider that he is only allowed to remain here so that by this artifice Cromwell may be induced and lead on to make terms with Spain. They consider that the stay of the Duke of York in France, in command of the strongest Irish regiment there, is a certain sign that when the Irish leave their present service, it will be for the service of the King of England. The ecclesiastics hold various discourses on the present position of the King of



England, and use other arguments which they think may impress the simple minds of the people of that nation.

[b]. If there should be any question of negotiations for the purpose of inducing the Irish to abandon their post at any fortress before notice is given to the rest to do the same in the other fortresses, it is very probable that when their intention would be discovered, the French would use every means to prevent the harm which would probably follow from their action, not only by imprisoning all the officers of that nation, but by violently destroying and entirely exterminating the men who would countenance this intention not only of abandoning their service but also of increasing the power and forces of the enemies of France ; and as there could be no doubt that any action of this nature could only be for the purpose of affording some special service to his Catholic Majesty, the French would infer that it was carried out at the instance of the King of England, and care and attention would be necessary that the Duke of York should not be exposed to any danger from the feelings by which the French might be carried away in such circumstances. At least, no one should be able to say and suggest to his Royal Highness that the King his brother had no thought for him, as could with all reason be expected under circumstances of the kind, especially as the King of England had obliged the Duke not to engage himself this spring in the service of France, and had thus given him to understand that he would soon call him to keep him company in these parts.

[c]. No time is to be lost in considering the advantage which would accrue to both Kings from this affair if it be well managed. On the other hand, it may be considered whether it would not be better to advise the King of England to inform the Duke of York, his brother, to be ready when called, so as to come in all haste. And having thus considered and arranged the means by which the Irish are to be brought over from their present service to the service of his Catholic Majesty, it remains to put this into execution everywhere immediately. There can be no doubt that in this case every encouragement will be given to the men concerning their reception here, and that provision will be made for the rewards to be given to special persons in respect of what they will have deserved by abandoning the emoluments they enjoy in France.

[d]. As soon as the decision of his Highness is known about these matters, all possible steps will be taken to fulfill in every respect whatever he may think necessary in the common interest ; for his Majesty of Great Britain believes unreservedly that his interests are bound up with the interests of his Catholic Majesty, and he feels assured that all the secrecy and deliberations hitherto observed have no other purpose than to put all these plans into action, that they may bear fruit, to the advancement of the interests of both Kings.



To be sent to his Highness with the letter of 2 Aug. 1656. EGC., reg. 261, fol. 239.

2154. 1656. Aug. 3. From the camp at Condé. Commission to Philip Brady, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain John Orelly, regiment of Colonel Philip Orelly, as ensign of the said company. EG., reg. 54, fol. 58v.

2155. 1656. Aug. 3. From the camp at Condé. Passport for Spain to Thomas Geraldino, to enable him to procure his own advantage at the Court. EG., reg. 54, fol. 58v.

2156. 1656. Aug. 6. From the camp at Condé. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Theobald Butler; formerly captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Jacob Conor, but had come to these States when Duke Francis went over to the French. EG., reg. 54, fol. 58v.

2157. 1656. Aug. 14. At the camp at Condé. The answer to be given by order of Don Juan to the Marquis of Ormonde concerning the proposals he had presented to his Highness, and which Chancellor Hyde had also presented to Don Alonso de Cardenas at Brussels, to be presented to his Highness on behalf of the King of England.

After he had seen and considered the proposals presented by the Marquis of Ormonde in the name of the King of England, Don Juan decided to make the following answer:

[a]. His Highness agrees that the Duke or York pass over to these States.\* Wherefore he shall be given the necessary passports, and upon his arrival he shall be given some assistance every month.

[b]. He shall be permitted to arrange his departure from France without coming straight to these States, in order that he may avoid all suspicion in coming here, taking the round about way of Italy and Burgundy, in such manner as the King his brother shall judge best, giving information to the Irish who are serving in France before he leaves, and ordering that as soon as the King of England shall instruct them, those who are conveniently placed shall come to these States, and those elsewhere shall cross over to the armies of his Catholic Majesty in Italy and Catalonia. At the same time the King of England shall with prudence order the Irish officers who are in St Giullain to surrender, and hand over the fortress to his Catholic Majesty. The same might also be attempted in the other fortresses in which there are Irish soldiers, and other subjects of his Britannic Majesty. For those who shall pass over to these States in this manner, orders shall be issued to enable them to support themselves until an occasion be found to employ them in the service of his Britannic Majesty, or with his consent, in the army of his Catholic Majesty.

[c]. Concerning the proposal that the King of England shall no longer preserve his incognito in these States, his Highness is of the opinion that this would give rise to many inconveniences, which would affect the interests both of the King of England and



of his Catholic Majesty, as his incognito spares the King great expense and allows him greater liberty ; it also affords his Catholic Majesty an excuse, since he does not treat the King with the pomp and ceremonial due to him and shown to princes in Spain when they go to reside in the dominions of his Catholic Majesty, There are many other reasons which oblige his Highness not to decide this point without the knowledge and command of his Catholic Majesty.

[d]. Concerning the publication of the treaty, his Highness leaves this to the great prudence of his Majesty of England and to the discretion of his Ministers, in the belief that if they do make it known that a treaty exists, they will withhold all particulars, as it is in the common interest of both Kings that the contents of the articles remain secret. In order to give satisfaction to the King of England, and that friendship and understanding may exist with his Catholic Majesty, his Highness has just granted the King's ships access to the ports of Flanders, and also to any ships which may come to surrender to him, under those safeguards which were arranged with the Minister de Vic, and other safeguards which were left to the discretion of the governors of the said ports.

To be sent to the Secretary Don Martin de Galaretta, with the letter of 16 August. 1656. EGC., reg. 261, fol. 236.

**2158.** 1656. Aug. 16. From the camp at Condé. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Richard de Lalor, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Jacob Conor, but had come to these States when Duke Francis went over to the French. EG., reg. 54, fol. 64v.

**2159.** 1656. Aug. 17. From the camp at Condé. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Raymund Nugent ; formerly captain in Spain of a company now disbanded. EG., reg. 54, fol. 67v.

**2160.** 1656. Aug. 18. From the camp at Condé. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Hugo Hara ; has represented that he was captain of a company of Irish infantry which he had taken to Spain with the levy of Colonel George Gualters, and that when they reached Vernicosa the company was disbanded by order of his Majesty ; since then he has served in Catalonia with the regiment of Colonel Hugh O Neill, whence he has come to these States ; to serve with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 54, fol. 66v.

**2161.** 1656. Aug. 22. From the camp at Condé. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Oliver Dalton, formerly captain of a company in Spain which is now disbanded ; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 54, fol. 73v.

**2162.** 1656. Aug. 23. From the camp at Condé. Appointment of Licentiate Luke Garvi as senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel George Cusack, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly.\* EG., reg. 54, fol. 70v.

**2163.** 1656. Aug. 29. From the camp at Condé. Don John of Austria to Philip IV. In a letter of 7 August I informed your Majesty of



the receipt of the treaty made with Charles II of England, and of my opinion concerning his residence in these States, in view of the King's own opinion to remain here rather than to go to Cologne as your Majesty had suggested in your letter of 5 June. Since then Don Alonso de Cardenas has come over to the army,<sup>1</sup> having been called by me so that we could confer with greater accord concerning these questions. With him came the Marquis of Ormonde, Minister of the King of England, bringing papers of which copies go with this. It seemed well to answer him as in the paper given to him by Don Alonso, of which a copy goes with this, whereby your Majesty will learn the reasons given in the answers made to him, and also that orders were issued to grant him 7,500 crowns, of which 3,000 form the first instalment of the monthly pension assigned to the King by your Majesty, 500 are for the Marquis himself, and 4,000 are to bring the King's brother from France, the Duke of York, concerning whom Ormonde greatly insisted that he should return to where his master was. He also insisted that if the Duke of York were here, it would be possible to negotiate with greater secrecy the bringing over of the English and Irish who are serving in France, as anxiety for the Duke's person has called for cautious proceeding in this affair. This is all I have to report to your Majesty on this question at present, though the King of England has sent me orders directed to the Irish regiments which came out from Condé after the surrender, that they are to remain in your service. These orders have been sent in haste, but it is doubtful whether they will overtake the men on the march.\* EGC., reg. 261, fol. 234.

2164. 1656. Sept. 2. From the camp at Saucy Estre. Commission to Ensign Richard Russel as adjutant of the major of the regiment of Colonel George Cusack; with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 54, fol. 74v.
2165. 1656. Sept. 2. From the camp at Saucy Estre. Commission to Henry Donnelly, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Sartel, regiment of Colonel John Morfi, as adjutant of the major of the regiment of Colonel George Cusack. EG., reg. 54, fol. 74v.
2166. 1656. Sept. 10. From the camp at Evin. Orders to grant to Edmond Relly the supplement of service he requires to be sergeant in the company of Colonel Philip Relly.\* EG., reg. 54, fol. 72v.
2167. 1656. Sept. 11. From the camp at Evin. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Ulices de Burgo; was captain of a company of Irish infantry in Lorraine, but came to these States when Duke Francis went over to the French. EG., reg. 54, fol. 75.
2168. 1656. Sept. 21. From the camp at Boussu. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Major Terence Farello, by reason of his being a disbanded colonel; has represented that he was lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of Colonel Richard Farello,\* which in the year 1653, by order of his Majesty went to the province of Guienne



to assist Prince de Condé on the occasions which should offer there, and that he distinguished himself by his valour and by the approbation which he received, and was several times wounded during the assault on a fortress ; and after much suffering, when his wounds had healed he came to these States, where the Prince granted him the rank of a disbanded colonel, in which capacity he has served to the present. As he wishes to continue his services in the army after the example of his two brothers and other relatives who have died in his Majesty's service, he has begged us to be pleased to grant him the pay of a disbanded colonel. EG., reg. 54, fol. 77v.

- 2169.** 1656. Nov. 26. Brussels. Orders to grant Bernard Reli the supplement of service required to be sergeant in the company of Captain Philip Reli. EG., reg. 54, fol. 97.
- 2170.** 1656. Dec. 20. Brussels. Conditions under which the King of England permits the recruiting of 4,000 men to form two regiments of Irish, one of Scots, and one of English. Each regiment is to have sixteen companies. The company of the colonel is to consist of 200 men, and the other companies shall each have sixty men ; half the men shall be armed with muskets, and the other half with arquebuses and pikes, in equal numbers. The regiments are to be on the same footing as the regiments of the King of England which are serving in England, Holland and France. EG., reg. 54, fol. 114-115v.
- 2171.** 1656. Dec. 21. Brussels. Commission to Captain John Macragh as captain of a company of forty Irish infantry which he has raised from the Irish serving with the troops of the Marquis of Brandenburgh ; the company to be attached to the regiment of Colonel John Morfi.\* EG., reg. 54, fol. 115v.
- 2172.** 1657. Jan. 4. Brussels. Orders to grant Dermot Oquelly, soldier of the cavalry company of the Count de Fuenclara, the supplement of service he requires to become ensign, as nominated by Captain Baltazar Ibanez de Sepechia y Peralta. EG., reg. 54, fol. 122v.
- 2173.** 1657. Jan. 15. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pay and services of Captain James de Blancheville from the regiment of Spanish infantry of the Marquis de Larralvo to one of the Irish regiments of his own nation. EG., reg. 54, fol. 134v.
- 2174.** 1657. Feb. 14. Brussels. Appointment of Fr Paul Moloy, of the Order of St Francis, to be senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel the Marquis of Ormonde, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 54, fol. 163.
- 2175.** 1657. Feb. 19. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Donald Flin, ensign of the disbanded company of Irish infantry of Captain Malachy Flin, regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; and a similar grant to Sergeant Denis Obrien, of the same company. EG., reg. 55, fol. 1v.



2176. 1657. Feb. 19. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Richard Bodquin, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 55, fol. 1v.
2177. 1657. Feb. 19. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Richard Barri, ensign of the disbanded company of Captain Adam Rocq, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 55, fol. 1v.
2178. 1657. Feb. 23. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Oliver Brum, of the disbanded company of Captain Adam Rocq. EG., reg. 55, fol. 2.
2179. 1657. Feb. 23. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Adam Rocq. EG., reg. 55, fol. 2v.
2180. 1657. Feb. 22. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Malachy Flin. EG., reg. 55, fol. 2v.
2181. 1657. Feb. 28. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Dillon, Viscount de Caustelan. EG., reg. 55, fol. 3.
2182. 1657. Mar. 13. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Fr John Mac David, of the Order of St Augustin ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 55, fol. 17.
2183. 1657. Mar. 13. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Bartholomew Plunquet ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel George Cusack. EG., reg. 55, fol. 17.
2184. 1657. Mar. 14. Brussels. Orders to reestablish the company of Irish infantry of Captain Malachy Flin, with the same officers and men as previously ; to serve with the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; to disband instead the company of Captain Gerard Dillon of the same regiment. EG., reg. 55, fol. 15v.
2185. 1657. Mar. 29. Brussels. Orders for the formation of a regiment of Irish infantry, under the command of the Earl of Bristol, from the men who came out from St Guilain ; the regiment to consist of sixteen companies with the same standing as the High German infantry, and to be maintained in the same manner as the other regiments of the King of England. EG., reg. 55, fol. 20.
2186. 1657. Apr. 6. Brussels. Orders to draft into the regiment of Colonel Francisco de Meneses six Irish soldiers who had come out from St Guillain, namely Denis Nel, Gregory Angus, Raymund his son, John Layan, Hugh his son, and Raymund de Quintal.\* EG., reg. 55, fol. 21v.
2187. 1657. Apr. 8. St Omer. Donatus Mac Cassin, doctor of philosophy and medicine ; signs an attestation of the surgeon concerning the petition to be relieved from further military service made by Calis de Lev, sergeant in a German company serving in Flanders. EG., portefeuille 165.
2188. 1657. Apr. 12. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate George Quintin ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel John Midleton. EG., reg. 55, fol. 25v.



2189. 1657. Apr. 26. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Constantine Magenise, formerly captain of a company in Lorraine, but came to these States when Duke Francis went over to the French ; to serve with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 55, fol. 32v.
2190. 1657. Apr. 28. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Cornelius Ruerque, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 55, fol. 32.
2191. 1657. Apr. 28. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Bernard Rely, of the disbanded company of Captain Cornelius Rorque, EG., reg. 55, fol. 32.
2192. 1657. Apr. 28. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Thadeo Rorque, of the disbanded company of Captain Cornelius Ruerque. EG., reg. 55, fol. 32.
2193. 1657. May 1. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Mathew Devano ; to serve as preacher to the regiment of the Marquis of Ormonde. EG., reg. 55, fol. 44.
2194. 1657. May 1. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Licentiate John Haseo ; to serve as preacher to the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Masquerrie. EG., reg. 55, fol. 44.
2195. 1657. May 1. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Licentiate David Longanus ; to serve as preacher to the regiment of Viscount de Taaffe.\* EG., reg. 55, fol. 44.
2196. 1657. May 1. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Licentiate Alexius Falvius ; to serve as preacher to the regiment of the Earl of Bristol.\* EG., reg. 55, fol. 44.
2197. 1657. May 4. Brussels. Passport for Spain, on business, to Thomas Geraldino. EG., reg. 55, fol. 40.
2198. 1657. May 28. Madrid. Philip IV to Don Juan of Austria. Don Estevan de Gamarra has informed me that the Dutch have complained of the robberies and vexations which have been perpetrated at sea against subjects of their nations by Irish privateers, and the complaints are directed especially against those privateers which gather in the ports belonging to Spain. It has therefore seemed well to inform you, so that, as I consider it necessary that the Dutch be given full satisfaction, you may take, measures, as I hereby earnestly charge you, not only to see that they are secured a good passage, but also that if they are subjected to any vexatious treatment in those parts, of the kind mentioned, a remedy be applied, and those who are guilty be punished with full rigour.\* EGC., reg. 262, fol. 68.
2199. 1657. May 29. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Bernard Conaly, Irishman, to enable him to continue his studies there, as he has not the means to continue them at Louvain. EG., reg. 55, fol. 55v.
2200. 1657. May 29. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Nicholas Fahy, Irishman ; to enable him to continue his studies there, as he has not the means to continue them at Louvain. EG., reg. 55, fol. 55v.



2201. 1657. June 1. Brussels. Pay of fifty crowns monthly to Fr Thomas Talbot, of the Order of St Francis ; to serve as pro-vicar of the Irish troops in the service of the King of England. EG., reg. 55, fol. 57v.
2202. 1657. June 6. Valenciennes. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Fr Thomas Hugano ; to serve as senior chaplain of the Irish troops of the regiment of the Duke of York.\* EG., reg. 55, fol. 61v.
2203. 1657. June 11. Valenciennes. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 6 July 1656) of fourteen crowns monthly to Terence Orelly, who has served for some years in Catalonia as ensign of a company of Horse ; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 55, fol. 63v.
2204. 1657. June 17. Jumap. Orders to confirm the appointment of Nicholas Brady as captain of a company of Horse of which he has been lieutenant in the regiment of the Duke of Aerschot. EG., reg. 55, fol. 64v.
2205. 1657. June 21. From the camp at Merbe-le-Potrié. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Malachy Mach ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Rochester, of the troops of the King of England. EG., reg. 55, fol. 66.
2206. 1657. June 21. From the camp at Merbe-le-Potrié. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Haseo ; to serve as preacher to the regiment of Irish infantry of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 55, fol. 66.
2207. 1657. June 21. From the camp at Merbe-le-Potrié. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Fr John Hanegan, of the Order of St Augustine ; to serve as ordinary chaplain in the regiment of Irish infantry of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 55, fol. 66v.
2208. 1657. July 9. From the camp at Liers. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant James Dixon, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain James Goul, regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; is old and short sighted, and incapacitated by other infirmities. EG., reg. 55, fol. 69.
2209. 1657. July 19. From the camp at Savey estre. Appointment of Licentiate Hubert Cahil as senior chaplain to the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel the Earl of Bristol. EG., reg. 55, fol. 72.
2210. 1657. Aug. 8. From the camp at Maruelles. Passport for Brussels to Colonel Dermot Clanchi, Irishman. EG., reg. 55, fol. 73v.
2211. 1657. Sept. 6. From the camp at Steemwerde. Commission to Ambrose Brun, ensign, as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, vacant by the transfer of Captain Michael de Vithe to a company of cavalry ; has been adjutant in the said company. EG., reg. 55, fol. 81.
2212. 1657. Oct. 8. Dunkirk. Passport for Holland to Captain Denis Morfi. EG., reg. 55, fol. 81.



2213. 1657. Oct. 20. Dunkirk. Orders to transfer the grant of Colonel Maurus Macmahon\* from the company of Spanish infantry at Dunkirk to the company of the same nation at Ostend. EG., reg. 55, fol. 82.
2214. 1657. Nov. 5. Dunkirk. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Edmund Sinnot ; had been in command of a company with the troops of Lorraine, but had come to these States when Duke Francis went over to the French. EG., reg. 55, fol. 90.
2215. 1657. Nov. 10. Dunkirk. Orders to recognise and pay the Irish soldiers newly raised by Captain Melchior de Burgo and Captain Alexander Macdaniel, of the regiment of Walloon infantry of Colonel William van der Clussen ; provided that the said soldiers have not been drawn from other Irish regiments, but have come over from the enemy. EG., reg. 55, fol. 91.
2216. 1657. Nov. 12. Brussels. Orders to grant the supplement of service required to become sergeant, to Dermot Feral, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Dermot Feral, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 55, fol. 92.
2217. 1657. Nov. 12. Dunkirk. Commission to Terence Rely as adjutant of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Philip Rely, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly ; vacancy due to the death of John Reli. EG., reg. 55, fol. 94v.
2218. 1657. Dec. 22. Ghent. Passport for Germany to the Marquis of Ormonde, to enable him to meet Count de Penderanda. EG., reg. 55, fol. 103.
2219. 1657. Dec. 21. Ghent. Grant of fifty crowns monthly to Captain Ignatius Kelly ; had served with the Duke of Lorraine, but had not been able to withdraw before the siege of Montmédy. EG., reg. 55, fol. 105v.
2220. 1658. Jan. 23. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate John Mac Enrique to be senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; had served hitherto as ordinary chaplain with the same regiment.\* EG., reg. 55, fol. 121v.
2221. 1658. Jan. Brussels. Passport for Fr Anthony Daly, Irish Franciscan. Pro Deo. EAP., reg. 1052, fol. 37.
2222. 1658. Feb. 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Colonel Denis Clanchi, on business which requires his presence ; has served his Majesty in Catalonia, and served in these States as a volunteer during the last campaign. EG., reg. 55, fol. 131v.
2223. 1658. Feb. 14. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Cahire Ohaer, adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely, as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the same regiment vacant by the death of Captain John Mager. EG., reg. 55, fol. 134v.
2224. 1658. Feb. 20. Brussels. Orders to form an Irish company for Lieutenant-Colonel Walter Flps\* with the men he has brought from France ; the company to be attached to the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 55, fol. 136v.



2225. 1658. Feb. 25. Brussels. Orders to form a company of Irish infantry for Captain Dillon\* with the men he has brought from France ; the company to be attached to the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 55, fol. 149.
2226. 1658. Mar. 4. Brussels. Orders to grant the supplement of service required to become ensign of the company of Captain Mortagh Macdiermodi, regiment of Colonel John Morfi, to Thomas Flynn, soldier of the company of Captain Malachias Flynn, of the same regiment. EG., reg. 55, fol. 149v.
2227. 1658. Mar. 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Denis de Blangueville, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; is unable for further service. EG., reg. 55, fol. 151.
2228. 1658. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to John Bradi as adjutant to the major of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely, with pay of twenty five crowns monthly. EG., reg. 55, fol. 151.
2229. 1658. Mar. 14. Brussels. Grant of fifty crowns monthly to Captain Nicholas Brady, of the disbanded company of German cavalry of the regiment of the Duke of Aerschot. EG., reg. 55, fol. 162v.
2230. 1658. Mar. 22. Brussels. Grant to Luke MacGauran of the supplement of service required to be serjeant of the company of Captain Charles Rely, regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 55, fol. 157v.
2231. 1658. Mar. 25. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain John de Burgo, of a company of Irish infantry in the service of Lorraine ; has come to these States to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 55, fol. 159v.
2232. 1658. Mar. 28. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Dermot Odalani, of a company of Irish infantry in the service of Lorraine ; has come to these States to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 55, fol. 159v.
2233. 1658. Apr. 18. Brussels. Commission to Sergeant Edmond Rely as quarter-master of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 55, fol. 178.
2234. 1658. Apr. 24. Brussels. Commission to Edmund Rely as campaign-captain of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 55, fol. 183.
2235. 1658. Apr. 25. Brussels. Commission to Charles Callaghan as ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Florence Carty, regiment of Colonel van der Clussen, as it is known that he was ensign with the troops of Lorraine. EG., reg. 55, fol. 178v.
2236. 1658. May 3. Brussels. Orders to grant to Eugenio Rely the supplement of service required to become serjeant of the company of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 55, fol. 181v.
2237. 1658. May 8. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Eugenio Egan ; to serve as chaplain in the regiment of Colonel John Morfi in the place of Licentiate Gobrinos, promoted to be senior chaplain. EG., reg. 55, fol. 183v.



2238. 1658. May 9. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Patrick Duyt, of the disbanded company of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 55, fol. 184.
2239. 1658. July 24. Bruges. Commission to Ensign John Morfi as captain of a company of Irish infantry in the regiment of Colonel George Cusack; has been named for the commission by the Marquis de Lede, governor of Dunkirk, after the death from wounds of Captain Henry Morfi in defence of the citadel. EG., reg. 56, fol. 53.
2240. 1658. July 28. Bruges. Commission to Malachy Calahan as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, vacant by the death of Captain Oliver Sartel. EG., reg. 56, fol. 66.
2241. 1658. Aug. 17. Bruges. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Henry Rochfort; had served with the troops of the Duke of Lorraine until they went over to the French. EG., reg. 56, fol. 61v.
2242. 1658. Aug. 19. Bruges. Grant of sixty crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Oliver Hiquy; had served with the troops of the Duke of Lorraine until they went over to the French. EG., reg. 56, fol. 61v.
2243. 1658. Sept. 24. Tournai. Commission to Richard Laloer as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel George Cusack, vacant by the death of Captain Morgan Flarqui. EG., reg. 56, fol. 68v.
2244. 1658. Nov. 4. Brussels. Appointment of Henry Joyes, former rector of the collegiate church of Galway in Ireland, as pro-vicar of the Irish troops of the King of England. EG., reg. 56, fol. 84v.
2245. 1658. Nov. 5. Brussels. Appointment of Louis Farrol\* as colonel, Connel Farrol as lieutenant-colonel, and James Farrol as major, of the regiment of Irish infantry hitherto under the command of the Earl of Bristol; in conformity with the commissions they hold from the King of England. EG., reg. 56, fol. 85v.
2246. 1658. Nov. 12. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain William Odorgan, formerly of the regiment of Colonel George Cusaque in the service of the Duke of Lorraine, EG., reg. 56, fol. 93.
2247. 1658. Nov. 13. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Denis Quely, formerly with the troops of the Duke of Lorraine in the regiment of Colonel Coner. EG., reg. 56, fol. 92v.
2248. 1658. Nov. 13. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel Dedals de Castello, formerly in command of a regiment in Lorraine. EG., reg. 56, fol. 93.
2249. 1658. Nov. 13. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Constantine Oneil, formerly in command of a company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusaq, serving with the Duke of Lorraine. EG., reg. 56, fol. 96.



2250. 1658. Nov. 19. Brussels. Commission to Denis Olalar as quarter-master of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 56, fol. 99.
2251. 1658. Nov. 22. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Philip Rely, formerly in command of a company of the regiment of Colonel James de la Hoyde serving with the Duke of Lorraine. EG., reg. 56, fol. 100.
2252. 1658. Nov. 22. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate John Mac Henry ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi ; a vacancy caused by the death of Licentiate Arturo Machoglen. EG., reg. 56, fol. 107v.
2253. 1658. Nov. 25. Brussels. Commission to Richard Grace\* as colonel of the regiment formerly under the command of the Marquis of Ormonde ; and a commission to Charles Omolloy as lieutenant-colonel of the same regiment. EG., reg. 56, fol. 99v.
2254. 1658. Nov. 26. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Constantine Maguino, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Dudley Costello in Lorraine. EG., reg. 56, fol. 100.
2255. 1658. Nov. 29. Brussels. Orders to incorporate in a company of Horse under the command of Colonel Druot those Irish soldiers of the governor of Arras who had come to serve his Majesty, namely Farlox Oconnor, Connor Oconnor, Danor Oconnor, John Oconor, Richard Lott, John de Laghi, Dermot Omahouni, John Omolouni, Denis Otrashe, Owen Osullivan, and Flores Lealy. EG., reg. 56, fol. 102.
2256. 1658. Nov. 29. Brussels. Grant to Ensign William Morfi of the supplement of service required for him to become ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain James Nolan, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq ; "had formerly been ensign in Lorraine". EG., reg. 56, fol. 103v.
2257. 1658. Nov. 30. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Eugenio Egano ; to serve as ordinary chaplain in the regiment of Colonel John Morfi in the place of Licentiate John Machery, promoted to be senior chaplain. EG., reg. 56, fol. 107v.
2258. 1658. Dec. 2. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Edmond ô Mally, formerly in command of a company in Lorraine, but has come to these states to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 56, fol. 104.
2259. 1658. Dec. 3. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Roque Connor, formerly in command of a company of Lorraine, and compelled to serve with his men in France until an occasion presented itself of coming to these States. EG., reg. 56, fol. 105v.
2260. 1658. Dec. 3. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captains Lawrence Theodore, Balthasar Tresy, Bernard Connor, Leonard Blancheville, Richard Duyr, and Thimoly Lany, who had been captains of Irish companies in Lorraine. EG., reg. 56, fol. 105v.



2261. 1658. Dec. 5. Petition of Chevalier George Lane<sup>1</sup> for payment of the arrears of his grant which are due to him, to enable himself and his family to live. EG., portefeuille 165.
2262. 1658. Dec. 5. Similar request from Connell O Farrell, and his uncle Colonel Louis O Farrell.<sup>1</sup> EG., portefeuille 165.
2263. 1658. Dec. 6. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Bartholomew Flamminge; to serve as ordinary chaplain of the company of the Guard of the Duke of York, in place of the late Fr Flatisburgh. EG., reg. 56, fol. 107v.
2264. 1658. Dec. 7. Brussels. Orders to grant James Brady the supplement of service which he requires to be sergeant of the company of Captain Charles Rely,\*regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 56, fol. 106v.
2265. 1658. Dec. 9. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain William Bary oge, formerly of the troops of Lorraine, but had come here to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 56, fol. 117.
2266. 1656. Dec. 15. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Dermot Goeghan; formerly belonged to the troops of Lorraine, but had come here to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 56, fol. 118v.
2267. 1658. Dec. 18. Brussels. Orders to recognise the commissions granted by the King of England to Major Bulger and Captain Artur Molloy, regiment of Colonel Richard Grace. EG., reg. 56, fol. 119.
2268. 1658. Dec. 20. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Patrick Ohaodd; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely, in the place of Licentiate Thomas Bradi, who has withdrawn from the post. EG., reg. 56, fol. 138v.
2269. 1659. Jan. 4. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant held by Lieutenant-Colonel William Butler.\* EG., reg. 56, fol. 135.
2270. 1659. Jan. 20. Licence for Spain to Lieutenant-Colonel William Butler. EG., reg. 56, fol. 167v.
2271. 1659. Jan. 22. Brussels. Appointment of Anthony French as judge-advocate of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq; to administer justice as it is becoming. EG., reg. 56, fol. 160v.
2272. 1659. Feb. 19. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Adjutant Henry Du Dal, of the disbanded company of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 56, fol. 175v.
2273. 1659. Feb. 20. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign John Olemarr, of the disbanded company of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 56, fol. 175v.
2274. 1659. Feb. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Felix Carty, of the disbanded company of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 56, fol. 175v.
2275. 1659. Feb. 20. Brussels. Orders to continue the pay held by Thomas Cavan, granted to him when he became campaign-captain of the regiment, since disbanded, of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 56, fol. 175v.



2276. 1659. Feb. 21. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Adjutant Maurus Oquenedy, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 56, fol. 176v.
2277. 1659. Feb. 21. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel John Morfi, whose regiment has been disbanded.\* EG., reg. 56, fol. 176v.
2278. 1659. Feb. 22. Brussels. Orders to grant Philip Rely the supplement of service required to be sergeant of the company of Captain John Rely Macmilmor, regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 56, fol. 177.
2279. 1659. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Adjutant Doudal as captain of a company of Irish infantry, regiment of Colonel Cusacq; vacancy due to the death of Captain Malachy Flyn. EG., reg. 57, fol. 1.
2280. 1659. Mar. 20. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Hugh Brady, of a disbanded company of High German infantry, regiment of Colonel John de la Bateria. EG., reg. 57, fol. 3.
2281. 1659. Mar. 21. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Lieutenant James Simon, of the disbanded company of Captain Hugh Brady; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 57, fol. 3v.
2282. 1659. Mar. 24. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Captain Denis Morfeo, who had commanded an Irish company in Spain, and has come to these States with troops brought by Francesco de Menejes; had been attached to the troops of the Prince de Condé, and had served with him for some years, until on account of his desire to serve with the army here, he had abandoned the said company, and had accepted the place of a soldier in the company formerly commanded by Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 57, fol. 10.
2283. 1659. Mar. 25. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain William Costello; had been in command of a company in Lorraine, and has come to these States to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 57, fol. 5.
2284. 1659. Mar. 26. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Richard de Burgo; had served with the troops of Lorraine, and has come to these States to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 57, fol. 5.
2285. 1659. Mar. 26. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and pay of Captain Richard Fanin from the Spanish infantry to the Irish infantry, of his own nation. EG., reg. 57, fol. 6v.
2286. 1659. Mar. 30. Brussels. Orders to give his real name in future, that is, Theoblad Stapleton, to Ensign Blacq, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain filiz Patrice, regiment of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 57, fol. 10v.
2287. 1659. Mar. 30. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Colonel Philip Osulevan Moar; had come to these parts with an offer to recruit troops, but his proposals had not been accepted. EG., reg. 57, fol. 11v.



2288. 1659. Mar. 31. Brussels. Orders to recognise the commissions granted by the King of England to John Shaa and Gaspar Tuit as captains of the companies of Irish infantry formerly commanded by Major William Botler and Captain John Farello, of the regiment of the Earl of Bristol ; also the commissions of Garret Elmer and John Ogrady as captains of the companies of Irish infantry formerly commanded by the Marquis of Ormonde and Francis Digby ; now the regiments of Colonels Richard Grace and Louis Ofarelle. EG., reg. 57, fol. 7v.
2289. 1659. Apr. 7. Brussels. Grant of sixty crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Edmond Jordan ; had held that commission in Lorraine, and had come to these States to serve his Majesty ; to serve with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 57, fol. 15.
2290. 1659. Apr. 14. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Thomas Jordan ; had held that commission in Lorraine, and has come to these States to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 57, fol. 23v.
2292. 1659. Apr. 26. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain James Plonquet ; had served as captain in Lorraine and has now come to these States to serve his Majesty ; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 57, fol. 23.
2293. 1659. May 2. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel Thadeus Flaharti ; had served with his troops in Lorraine and has come to these States to serve his Majesty. EG., reg. 57, fol. 25v.
2294. 1659. May 7. Brussels. Orders to grant Oliver Lince the supplement of service he requires to become an ensign of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Daniel Olinan, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 27v.
2295. 1659. May 19. Brussels. Orders to reimburse the expense incurred by the authorities at Ath during the month of April this year by the provision of rations for the men of Colonel Luis Offarel. EG., reg. 57, fol. 38v.
2296. 1659. May 31. Brussels. Orders to admit to pay, and to form into a company to be commanded by David Danon, the twenty eight Irish soldiers who came from France to surrender ; the said company to be attached to the regiment of the Duke of York ; commission as captain given to David Danon by the King of England. EG., reg. 57, fol. 39.
2297. 1659. June 12. Brussels. Orders to continue the payment of the grant of Major William Butler, which has been suspended by the licence given to him on 20 Jan. last, of which however he had not availed himself, as he had not the means to make the journey. EG., reg. 57, fol. 43v.
2298. 1659. June 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Matthew Mury, formerly of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 57, fol. 46.



2299. 1659. June 26. Brussels. Commissions to Lieutenant-Colonel Fitzpatrick and Captain Owen Oconor as lieutenant-colonel and major respectively of the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester ; granted by the King of England. EG., reg. 57, fol. 53v.
2300. 1659. July 1. Brussels. Commission to Constantine O'Neill, in consideration of his birth etc., as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely ; vacancy due to the death of Captain Charles Criach. EG., reg. 57, fol. 57.
2301. 1659. July 14. Brussels. Licence for England, for two months, to Captain Francis Coglan, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 62.
2302. 1659. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence, in virtue of a commission granted by the King of England, to appoint Captain Walter Valois to command the company formerly commanded by Viscount Iveagh, in the regiment of Colonel Grace. EG., reg. 57, fol. 81.
2303. 1659. Sept. 2. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a commission granted by the King of England, to appoint Edward Schote to be major of the regiment of Irish infantry of the Duke of York ; to replace Sergeant [*sic*] Legg, who has become lieutenant-colonel of the same regiment. EG., reg. 57, fol. 90v.
2304. 1659. Sept. 11. Brussels. Orders to appoint Francis Hacquet to be captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Duke of York, in virtue of a letter from the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 57, fol. 93.
2305. 1659. Sept. 16. Brussels. Extension for three months of the licence granted to Captain Francis Coglan. EG., reg. 57, fol. 95.
2306. 1659. Sept. 23. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel Stephen Whyte\* ; was colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry in Spain, where it was disbanded ; he then came to these States wishing to continue his services here, but was captured at sea and taken to England, where he suffered great want, and his papers were taken from him ; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 57, fol. 100.
2307. 1659. Sept. 24. Brussels. Licence for Spain for six months to Colonel John Morfi, pensioner in the company of Colonel Philip Rely ; has represented that he has business there of great importance. EG., reg. 57, fol. 99v.
2308. 1659. Sept. 29. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to Captain Denis Morfeo, pensioner in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thadeus Morfl, regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 104.
2309. 1659. Oct. 22. From the castle at Antwerp. Appointment of Viscount Muscry\* to be colonel of the regiment of the Duke of York, in virtue of a commission from the King of England, EG., reg. 57, fol. 112.
2310. 1659. —. Petition from Thomas Olein that his company be not affected by the coming reduction ; has served his Majesty



on all occasions for thirty years, and for the last twelve years has been captain of an Irish company, the onely one of his nation. EG., portefeuille 165.

- 2311.** 1660. Jan. 9. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Patrick Guineo ; to serve as chaplain to one of the companies of the guard in the place of the late Licentiate Edmond de Burgo. EG., reg. 57, fol. 137.
- 2312.** 1660. Jan. 15. Brussels. Licence for four months, to enable him to bring his wife here, to Ensign John Rely, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Philip Orelly, regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 142.
- 2313.** 1660. Feb. 4. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Nolano, as quarter-master of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 154.
- 2314.** 1660. Feb. 9. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Daniel Macnamara, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Geraldin in the army of Condé ; had left his company rather than go over to the French. EG., reg. 57, fol. 154.
- 2315.** 1660. Feb. 15. Brussels. Commission to Theodore de Meara as colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry to be newly raised\* ; had served his Majesty and the Most August House both in the German wars and in these States, with the troops of the Duke of Lorraine and with Prince de Condé, and had been colonel, major-general, and field-marshal ; had distinguished himself on all occasions and had several times been wounded. EG., reg. 57, fol. 156.
- 2316.** 1660. Feb. 16. Brussels. Orders to form seventeen companies belonging to Colonel Theodore de Meara and six others belonging to Major de Geraldin, into a regiment of twenty companies, and admit them to pay. EG., reg. 57, fol. 185.
- 2317.** 1660. Feb. 16. Brussels. Commission to Lieutenant-Colonel Anthony Mulrian as Major of the regiment of Colonel de Meara. EG., reg. 57, fol. 183v.
- 2318.** 1660. Feb. 16. Brussels. Commission to Colonel Dempsey\* for a regiment of Irish infantry to be formed from the thirteen companies of Irish infantry which had come to these States at his expense. EG., reg. 57, fol. 185v.
- 2319.** 1660. Feb. 21. Brussels. Commission to Captain Theodore Obrian in the newly formed regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara.

Fourteen commissions for other officers of the same regiment : Captain Alexander Bryth, with date 26 February 1660. Captain Thomas d'Alard, with date 27 February 1660. Captain Nicholas Barri, with date 28 February 1660. Captain Philip Odwyer, with date 31 (*sic*) February 1660. Captain John Patricio, with date 1 March 1660. Captain Henry Ferrier, with date 2 March 1660. Captain Thomas Geraldin, with date 3 March 1660. Captain



Bernard Kevenagh, with date 4 March 1660. Captain Bernard Kenedy, with date 5 March 1660. Captain Charles Bern, with date 6 March 1660. Captain Patrick Bath, with date 7 March 1660. Captain Florence Macdonogh, with date 8 March 1660. Captain Charles Rian, with date 29 March 1660. Captain Emmanuel Magdonogh, with date 30 March 1660. Adjutant Henry Lewes, with date 10 March 1660 ; and Adjutant William Okwirk, with date 9 March 1660. Campaign-Captain John Oquian, with date 10 March 1660. Quartermaster John Odwier, with date 10 March 1660. Drum-Major Felix Macnemara, with date 10 March 1660. EG., reg. 57, fol. 204v.

- 2320.** 1660. Feb. 28. Brussels. Commission to Peter Chortal as captain of a company of the regiment to be newly formed, of which the colonel will be James Dempsey.

Eleven other commissions issued in the same form for captains of the same regiment : Captain James Dempsey, with date 1 March 1660. Captains Peter Bertin, Peter Butler, Edward Butler, Peter Pouzel, Roger Dempsey : all with date 3 March 1660. Captain John Cantol, with date 3 March 1660. Captain Bernard Geraldin, with date 4 March 1660. Captain Mortach Dempsey, with date 5 March 1660. Captain Cari Dempsey, with date 6 March 1660. Captain George Heydin, with date 7 March 1660. EG., reg. 57, fol. 203.

- 2321.** 1660. Feb. 22. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Gara ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel William Taff.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 57, fol. 161v.

- 2322.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to David de Burgo as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 57, fol. 203v.

- 2323.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Terence Rely as adjutant to the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 57, fol. 203v.

- 2324.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Edmond Rely as campaign-captain of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 57, fol. 203v.

- 2325.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Edmond Rely as quarter-master-sergeant of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 57, fol. 204.

- 2326.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Patrick Maguna as drum-major of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 57, fol. 204.

- 2327.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Moriarto O'Brien as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be formed from three companies of the Irish nation which are at Nieuport. EG., reg. 57, fol. 205v.

- 2328.** 1660. Mar. 10. Brussels. Commission to Major Denis Magullicudy as captain of a company of Irish infantry to be formed from the three companies of the Irish nation which are at Ostend. EG., reg. 57, fol. 206.



2329. 1660. Mar. 13. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Denis Obrin, of the disbanded company of Captain Henry Dudal, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 166.
2330. 1660. Mar. 13. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Daniel Lanan, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 157.
2331. 1660. Mar. 13. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Edward Vuteler, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 167.
2332. 1660. Mar. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Eugenio Carty, of the disbanded company of Captain Denis Carty, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 57, fol. 221v.
2333. 1660. Mar. 18. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Henry Dudal, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 171.
2334. 1660. Mar. 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Fergus Oferel, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 170.
2335. 1660. Mar. 20. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Charles Rely Castebrryn, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 171.
2336. 1660. Mar. 20. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel Philip Rely, whose regiment has been disbanded. EG., reg. 57, fol. 173.
2337. 1660. Mar. 20. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel John Morphie. EG., reg. 57, fol. 172v.
2338. 1660. Mar. 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Omultuli, of the disbanded company of Captain Edward Buteler, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 191.
2339. 1660. Mar. 21. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Irish infantry of Colonel Moriarto Obrian. EG., reg. 57, fol. 186v.
2340. 1660. Mar. 22. Brussels. Orders to transfer Licentiate Nicholas Commesfort, senior chaplain, from the regiment of High German infantry of Colonel Juan de Barros to the regiment of Colonel the Viscount Berlin of the same nation. EG., reg. 57, fol. 173v.
2341. 1660. Mar. 22. Brussels. Grant of sixty crowns monthly to Major Theodore Obrian, who formerly held that commission in the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Dempssy, in the army of Condé; the said regiment was formed into a tercio, and absorbed into the regiment, now disbanded, of Colonel Philip Rely, of which the lieutenant-colonel remained on service. Colonel Obrian is thus without a post, as to show his zeal for his Majesty's service he did not follow the troops of Condé. EG., reg. 57, fol. 183.



2342. 1660. Mar. 22. Brussels. Transfer of the grant of Colonel John Morfie from the disbanded regiment of Colonel Philip Rely to a Spanish regiment. EG., reg. 57, fol. 185v.
2343. 1660. Mar. 28. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Hugh Orelly, and of eight crowns monthly to Sergeant James Seredan, both of the disbanded company of Captain Charles Rely Castebryen. disbanded regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 186v.
2344. 1660. Mar. 29. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Adjutant John Bradi, of the disbanded company of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 187v.
2345. 1660. Mar. 29. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland to Ensign Morto Moriartagh ; had come to these States from Spain with the company of Irish infantry of Captain Richard Ferriter attached to the regiment of Francisco de Menjes of the army of Condé ; as he had not wished to follow the army of Condé into the French service, he is now without a post. EG., reg. 58, fol. 22v.
2346. 1660. Mar. 29. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Adjutant Terence Relly, of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 187v.
2347. 1660. Mar. 31. Brussels. Orders to pay 999 florins, each of the value of twenty placas, and twenty placas in addition, to Colonel Theodore de Meara, for the 15,000 loaves of bread he provided for his men. EG., reg. 57, fol. 194.
2348. 1660. Apr. 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Ensign Denis Ocquilli, of the disbanded company of Spanish armed cavalry of Captain Luis Ibanez de Peralta. EG., reg. 57, fol. 189.
2349. 1660. Apr. 1. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Constantine Oneil, of a disbanded company of Captain Colonel Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 189.
2350. 1660. Apr. 1. Brussels. Licence for Prague, for six months, to Captain Fergus Offarrelle. EG., reg. 57, fol. 198.
2351. 1660. Apr. 3. Brussels. Orders for the payment of the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to the company of Irish infantry of Major Macguilliendy, in garrison at Nieuport. EG., reg. 57, fol. 192v.
2352. 1660. Apr. 3. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Nicholas Nary, with his wife and one boy child. EG., reg. 57, fol. 193.
2353. 1660. Apr. 8. Brussels. Orders for payments as under to the captains and other officers of the five Irish companies which came from Chastelet and have since been disbanded : Captain William Harleo, maintenance grant of twenty five crowns monthly. Lieutenant Thomas Olechie, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Terence Obrien, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant John Mulrian, special grant of four crowns monthly. Captain — Lieutenant Malachy Ogaygui, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Roger Schaghmosy, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Theodore Macnamara, special grant of



- ten crowns monthly. Sergeant James Oberty, special grant of four crowns monthly. Captain Cornelius Macgulloody, grant of twenty five crowns monthly. Lieutenant Dermot Carty, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Florenzo Macgulloody, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Theodore Chay, special grant of four crowns monthly. Captain Moriarto Clancy, maintenance grant of twenty five crowns monthly. Lieutenant Bellaham Mac Cartie, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Daniel Osulevan, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant William Macnamara, special grant of four crowns monthly. Captain John Macnrigot, grant of twenty five crowns monthly. Ensign Robert Mauricio, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Mauricio Elligotte, special grant of four crowns monthly. EG., reg. 57, fol. 197v.
- 2354.** 1660. Apr. 8. Brussels. Orders to receive into service and pay, upon the representations of Colonel Theodore d'Omara, the men who would come from the service of Prince de Condé in France. EG., reg. 57, fol. 199v.
- 2355.** 1660. Apr. 10. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant William Lehagam, of the disbanded company of Irish infantry of Captain Charles Creggh, of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely. EG., reg. 57, fol. 199.
- 2356.** 1660. Apr. 10. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Anthony Butelar, of the disbanded company of Captain Edward Buteler, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 199v.
- 2357.** 1660. Apr. 13. Brussels. Grant of six crowns monthly, in addition to his ordinary pay, to Ensign Thadeus Conor, of the disbanded company of Walloon infantry of Captain Alexander Macdonel; to serve with the German infantry. EG., reg. 57, fol. 200v.
- 2358.** 1660. Apr. 13. Brussels. Licence to return to Spain, at his own request, to continue his service, to Adjutant Bernard Patricio, soldier of the company of Captain Anthony Patricio, regiment of Colonel Colan, in Spain; had been captured at the battle of Elvas, and taken to Lisbon, whence he escaped by sea and came to these States. EG., reg. 57, fol. 223.
- 2359.** 1660. Apr. 15. Brussels. Licence for Spain, to procure his own advancement, to Moriarto Oscanlon, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Major Denis Magulloody; had been lieutenant with the troops of Condé, but was not receiving competent pay. EG., reg. 57, fol. 223v.
- 2360.** 1660. Apr. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, his native land, to Sergeant Theodore Dinnagh, formerly sergeant of a company in the army of Prince de Condé. EG., reg. 57, fol. 224.
- 2361.** 1660. Apr. 14. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Roger Magrach, formerly of the company of Irish infantry of Major Denis Magulloody, which had the status of a



- regiment, but has now been reduced to its ordinary status. EG., reg. 57, fol. 205v.
- 2362.** 1660. Apr. 18. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to John Libridas, sergeant of the disbanded company of Captain Daniel Lelan, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 228,
- 2363.** 1660. Apr. 18. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign William Morsi, of the company of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 228.
- 2364.** 1660. Apr. 20. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Olover Linche, of the disbanded company of Irish infantry of Captain Daniel Lelan, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 235.
- 2365.** 1660. Apr. 21. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Edmond Brun, of the disbanded company of Captain James Nolan, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 229v.
- 2366.** 1660. Apr. 23. Brussels. Commission to Anthony French as judge-advocate of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 57, fol. 233.
- 2367.** 1660. Apr. 25. Brussels. Grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Benicio Hanly, of the disbanded company of Irish infantry of Captain Philip Odwyer, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 57, fol. 234.
- 2368.** 1660. Apr. 29. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to Lieutenants Hugh Hanly and Nil Ocasse, of the disbanded companies of High German infantry of Captains Thomas Bris and Alexander de Ville respectively, regiment of Colonel William Cascar. EG., reg. 57, fol. 235v.
- 2369.** 1660. Apr. 29. Brussels. Grants to officers of the disbanded regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara: to Captain John Fox, forty crowns monthly. Lieutenant Maurice Kanly, of the company of Captain John Fox, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Benicio Line, special grant of ten crowns monthly. To Sergeant Guillan Haning, special grant of six crowns monthly. Captain Philip Odwin, grant of forty crowns monthly. Ensign Lieutenant John Barry, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Benicio Kanely, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant William Butlero, special grant of six crowns monthly. Captain Edmond Faleter, grant of forty crowns monthly. Ensign Richard Prendergast, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Cornelius Obally, special grant of six crowns monthly. Captain John Fihely, grant of forty crowns monthly. Lieutenant Mortogh Odonogh, special grant of eight crowns monthly. Ensign Mortog Omoherlach, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Captain John Mulrian, grant of forty crowns monthly. Captain John Mulrian, grant of forty crowns monthly. Ensign Owen Mulrian, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Theodore Omoyne, special grant of six crowns monthly. EG., reg. 57, fol. 236.



2370. 1660. Apr. 30. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland to Denis Carty ; formerly belonged to a company of the army of Prince de Condé. EG., reg. 57, fol. 237v.
2371. 1660. May 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Edmond Butler, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Meara ; on business. EG., reg. 57, fol. 240.
2372. 1660. May 3. Brussels. Extension for four months of the licence for Ireland granted on 16 Jan. last to Ensign John Rely, of the company of Captain Philip Rely, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 57, fol. 241.
2373. 1660. May 3. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Eugenio Egan ; to serve as ordinary chaplain in the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. rv.
2374. 1660. May 7. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Charles Rian ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara. EG., reg. 58, fol. rv.
2375. 1660. May 14. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary grant of thirty crowns to each of the companies of the regiment of Colonel Dempsi : the company of the colonel, and the companies of Captains Peter Cortal, Peter Geraldin, John Cantol. George Heydin, Edward Butler, Cary Dempsy, Mortagh Dempsi, Philip Rely, Charles Rely Machiu, John Rely Macuyer, Miler Rely, John Rely Macmelmor, Cahier Ohart. EG., reg. 58, fol. 10.
2376. 1660. May 16. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Captain Francis de Withe, of the disbanded company of Captain P. Purzel, regiment of Colonel Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 8v.
2377. 1660. May 20. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant James O Haly, formerly of the company of Captain John Fihely, regiment of Colonel Theodore d'Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 12v.
2378. 1660. May 20. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Peter Dempsi ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 13.
2379. 1660. May 20. Brussels. Grants to the following officers of the regiment of Colonel Dempsi whose companies have been disbanded : Captain Roger Dempsy, grant of forty crowns monthly. Ensign Daniel Rely, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Patrick Carol, special grant of six crowns monthly. Captain Peter Butler, grant of forty crowns monthly. Ensign William Obrin, special grant of 10 crowns monthly. Sergeant Terence Oconel, special grant of six crowns monthly. EG., reg. 58, fol. 15.
2380. 1660. May 23. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Moriarto Hogan ; represents that he has served for some years as lieutenant of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Obrien in the army of Prince de Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 15v.



- 2381.** 1660. May 23. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns, in addition to their pay, to each of the undernamed, who all had been lieutenants in the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara, in the army of Condé, which regiment had been formed into a special regiment in these States, as officers and men did not wish to go over to the French ; these particular officers however had not been given their special grant as disbanded lieutenants : Lieutenants Charles Macdonogh, Charles MacCoghlan, Daniel O Kalechane, Gerard Ottea, Daniel O Kearnye, Philip Odwuys, James Surdane, Edmond Mulriane, Patrick Davine, William de Bourgh, Malachy Mac Roghe, John O Doyen, Martin Nagle, Daniel O Kervick, John O Carrole, and John Mac Donogo. EG., reg. 58, fol. 20v.
- 2382.** 1660. May 24. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Andrew Routh, secular priest, to be ordinary chaplain in the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 58, fol. 15v.
- 2383.** 1660. May 24. Brussels. Orders to pay Colonel Dempsey 940 florins each of the value of two placas, and two and a half placas in addition, making 940 florins two and a half placas in all, for 12,535 loaves supplied to him for his regiment from 1 February last to 7 March, when his regiment was formed into a tercio for his Majesty's service. EG., reg. 58, fol. 35.
- 2384.** 1660. May 28. Brussels. Licence to John Geraldin to return to Ireland ; has represented that he was ensign in a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara, one of the companies namely which served with Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 20.
- 2385.** 1660. May 28. Brussels. Licence to James Ferriter to return to Ireland ; had been ensign of the company of Captain Henry Ferriter, regiment of Colonel John Geraldin, in the army of Condé ; as he had not wished to follow the regiment when it passed over to the French, he is now without pay or post. EG., reg. 58, fol. 20.
- 2386.** 1660. June 1. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Lieutenant Mortagh Odonoghue, formerly of the company of Captain John Ofihily with the troops of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 24.
- 2387.** 1660. June 1. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months on business, to Michael Mahun, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry formerly under the command of Colonel Diego de Gony, EG., reg. 58, fol. 26v.
- 2388.** 1660. June 1. Brussels. Licence to Peter Omulrean to return to Ireland ; formerly captain of a company of Irish infantry with which he served with the army of Condé, but as his regiment had been reduced to a tercio, he is at present without pay. EG., reg. 58, fol. 26v.
- 2389.** 1660. June 5. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Captain and Major Thomas Olin, as the regiment of Irish cuirassiers with which he served has been disbanded. EG., reg. 58, fol. 25v.



2390. 1660. June 7, Brussels. Licence for two months to Major Mackguilligully, captain of a company of Irish infantry in garrison at Nieuport ; wishes to go to England to arrange for the safety of some of his property there. EG., reg. 58, fol. 31.
2391. 1660. June 7, Tervueren. Orders to transfer the grant of Captain Richard Fanin from the company of Irish infantry of Captain Louis Mulrian, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq, to the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Noboa. EG., reg. 58, fol. 31v.
2392. 1660. June 7, Brussels. Orders to pay a special grant of eight crowns monthly to the following, who had been lieutenants in the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara with the army of Condé, but had been left without any post when the regiment had been formed into a tercio : Maurice Rouly, formerly lieutenant of the company of Captain John Fox. John Barry, formerly lieutenant of the company of Captain Odroy. Cornelius Karroy, formerly lieutenant of the company of Captain James Langles. William Oquenin, formerly lieutenant of the company of Captain Alexander Brith. Mortogh —, formerly lieutenant of the company of Captain Fihely. Denis Hanely, formerly lieutenant of the company of Captain John Omulrian. EG., reg. 58, fol. 38.
2393. 1660. June 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business, for six months, to Adjutant John Brady, pensioner in the company of Captain Philip Hay, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq.\* EG., reg. 58, fol. 30.
2394. 1660. June 20. Brussels. Orders to issue pay of a captain of a company of Irish infantry to Major Theodore Obrian, instead of the half pay of sixty crowns monthly which he holds in a company of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 58, fol. 37v.
2395. 1660. June 20. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, as he is without a post, to Terence Obrien, formerly lieutenant of a company of Irish infantry in the regiment of Colonel Obrien of the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 48.
2396. 1660. June 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Captain Adam Roche, pensioner in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Louis del Reano, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 40v.
2397. 1660. June 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business *which concerns him*, to Lieutenant-Colonel Cassy, with his wife and sons, EG., reg. 58, fol. 40v.
2398. 1660. June 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Jacobs Galacher, soldier of the company of Lieutenant-Colonel Moscry, regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 40v.
2399. 1660. June 22, Brussels. Licence for Ireland, with his wife and children, to Daniel Oconel, soldier of the company of Captain Richard Ferriter, regiment of Colonel de Meara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 43v.



- 2400.** 1660. June 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Colonel Walter Butler, formerly colonel of a regiment in the army of Condé, but now without a post as the said troops have gone over to the French. EG., reg. 58, fol. 40v.
- 2401.** 1660. June 27. Brussels. Appointment of Hugh Cassidi to be chief surgeon of the regiment of Colonel Dempsy, with pay of fifteen crowns monthly; formerly surgeon of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely in Spain. EG., reg. 58, fol. 45.
- 2402.** 1660. June 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, on business, to Ensign Michael Macdonnogh, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore O Meara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 45.
- 2403.** 1660. June 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Lieutenant Daniel Carty, formerly of the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara in the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 45.
- 2404.** 1660. June 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain William Hurleo, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi; wishes to go there by way of England to procure the restitution of some property which belongs to him. EG., reg. 58, fol. 59v.
- 2405.** 1660. June 28. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain John Fox, pensioner in the company of Captain Charles Mulrian, regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara; it is necessary that he should go to Ireland by way of England in order to petition for some property which he left there. EG., reg. 58, fol. 59v.
- 2406.** 1660. June 29. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Edmond Macquiernan, formerly chaplain and preacher in the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Philip Rely, to be chaplain and preacher of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 55v.
- 2407.** 1660. June 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, his native country, to Simon Carme; formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry of Colonel du Vivier in the army of Lorraine, and had come from France with permission of the King of France. EG., reg. 58, fol. 46.
- 2408.** 1660. June 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Cornelius Dalluy, formerly of the company of Captain Henry Feriter; has important business there. EG., reg. 58, fol. 46.
- 2409.** 1660. July 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business of importance to Captain Morto Clancy, formerly of a company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 48v.
- 2410.** 1660. July 4. Brussels. Orders to grant to Henry Plunquet, soldier of the company of Horse of Captain Michael White, the supplement of service he requires to be ensign of the company of Horse of Captain Luis Ibanez. EG., reg. 58, fol. 54v.
- 2411.** 1660. July 4. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Philip IV (Madrid, 11 March 1658) of fifty crowns monthly to the Earl of Clancarr, Daniel Carti Macartimor; to serve in the Spanish infantry. "Whereas the Earl of Clancarry, Daniel Carti Macartimor, has represented to us that his family has maintained



its existence for two thousand years since it left Spain, where it was held in high esteem, and that at present he is in great straits on account of the troubles in his native land, which he has been forced to abandon ; and whereas he has begged me that as he desires to go to serve in the wars in Flanders, I might be pleased to command that he be supplied with means to enable him to serve about the person of my son Don John of Austria etc." EG., reg. 58, fol. 56.

- 2412.** 1660. July 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Colonel Thadeus Flaharty, pensioner in the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq ; wishes to go there to petition for the return of his estates. EG., reg. 58, fol. 54v.
- 2413.** 1660. July 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Cormac Maly, of the company of Irish infantry of Major Thadeus Obrian, regiment of Colonel Patrick Morcarto Obrian.\* EG., reg. 58, fol. 71.
- 2414.** 1660. July 9, Brussels. Licence for England, for one year, on business, to Captain Redmond Nugente, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel the Marquis de Zerralus. EG., reg. 58, fol. 74.
- 2415.** 1660. July 10. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for six months, on business, to Captain William Costello, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 65.
- 2416.** 1660. July 10. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for six months, on business, to Colonel Dudleo Costelo, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 65.
- 2417.** 1660. July 10. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for six months, on business, to Captain Cun Oneil, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 65v.
- 2418.** 1660. July 10. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for six months, on business, to Colonel Edmond Jordan, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsl. EG., reg. 58, fol. 65v.
- 2419.** 1660. July 10. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain James Nolano, of a disbanded company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 65v.
- 2420.** 1660. July 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Roderick Schiamussy pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 66v.
- 2421.** 1660. July 18. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Malachy Geagin, soldier of the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 66v.
- 2422.** 1660. July 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, on important business which requires his presence, to Edmond Rely, quarter-master-sergeant of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 69v.
- 2423.** 1660. July 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, in connection with certain claims, to Captain Richard Fanine, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Mobao, regiment of Colonel Diego de Gony. EG., reg. 58, fol. 74.



2424. 1660. July 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on important business to which he must attend, to Captain ô Cullan, pensioner in the company of Captain Thadeus Morfi, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 66v.
2425. 1660. July 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland by way of England, for six months, to Captain Hugo ô Hara, pensioner in the company of Captain Charles Art, regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 58, fol. 67.
2426. 1660. July 20. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for eight months, to Captain Cornelius Ruarque, pensioner in the company of Captain Rely, regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 58, fol. 67.
2427. 1660. July 20. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Dermot Carty now without a post, formerly lieutenant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Cornelius Mac gillo dye, regiment of Colonel Mortagh Obrian, in the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 72v.
2428. 1660. July 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Daniel Mac Carty, now without a post, formerly of the company of Captain George Hesdin, regiment of Colonel James Dempsey, in the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 72.
2429. 1660. July 23. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Captain Peter Butler, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Peter Schortall, regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 58, fol. 87v.
2430. 1660. July 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, where he has his family, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Adjutant Terence Rely, of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 58, fol. 74v.
2431. 1660. July 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Sergeant Eugenio Rely, of the company of Colonel James Dempsey. EG., reg. 58, fol. 74v.
2432. 1660. July 28. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Charles Creaghe. "Has represented that formerly he was captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely, and that after he had been made prisoner at the battle of the Dunes last year, 1658, and carried off to France, he was kept there until recently, when he returned here to continue his services. In the meantime, as it was thought that he was dead, his company had been given to Captain Constantine Oneil, and when it was disbanded on 7 March last, the grant of forty crowns due to the captain disbanded had been given to Captain Constantine. He begs that the same company may again be assigned to himself." Orders that the grant of forty crowns be withdrawn from Don Constantine and given to Captain Creaghe. EG., reg. 58, fol. 75v.
2433. 1660. July 28. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native country, to Sergeant Joorge Bedloe, formerly of the company of



- Captain Geraldin in the army of Condé ; he is without a post since these troops went over to the French. EG., reg. 58, fol. 78.
2434. 1660. Aug. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Lieutenant Edmond Hogan, soldier of the company of Captain Theodore Obrien, regiment of Colonel Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 78.
2435. 1660. Aug. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign John Caroll, of the company of Colonel Theodore Omeara ; wishes to place in security a property he has inherited by the death of his father. EG., reg. 58, fol. 78.
2436. 1660. Aug. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Roger Odonoghue, now without a post, formerly sergeant of the company of Captain Denis Carthy, regiment of Colonel Fitzgerald. EG., 58, fol. 79.
2437. 1660. Aug. 3. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign Hugh Rely, of the company of Captain Philip Rely ; has an estate there which he has inherited from his family and which is in danger of being lost. EG., reg. 58, fol. 80.
2438. 1660. Aug. 7. Madrid. Philip IV to the Marquis de Caracena. Representations have been made to me on behalf of the Irish nation that during the eighty years they have served in the army of Flanders some companies of Horse of their nation have always remained established in times of peace, and that at present there is one such company only, of which Michael de Hute is captain, and to which belong all the Irish Horsemen who hold no post and are exiled from their country. For these reasons they beg me to be pleased to order you to preserve and maintain the said company of Horse, and on no account to disband it. For these reasons I have thought well to say that if it be true that this company has remained established during the present disbandment, you have carried out my orders, and it is my will that you maintain it ; and if some special reason to disband it arise, you will do nothing without at first informing me and awaiting my orders. EG., reg. 266, fol. 278.
2439. 1660. Aug. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for eight months, to Ensign Philip Bradi, of the company of Captain John Rely, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi ; as his parents have died, it is necessary that he should go there to place in security the property he has inherited, and to arrange affairs with some of his relations. EG., reg. 58, fol. 81v.
2440. 1660. Aug. 9. Brussels, Licence for England, for three months, to Colonel Moriarto O Brien, captain of an unattached company of Irish infantry in garrison at Ostend ; " there are several matters in England which concern him, and he wishes to go there in the suite of the Prince de Ligne." EG., reg. 58, fol. 81v.
2441. 1660. Aug. 9. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Lieutenant Theodore Keogh, soldier of the company of Captain Theodore ô Brien, regiment of Colonel Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 81v.



- 2442.** 1660. Aug. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Edward Butler, captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsy ; has been called by his uncle, the Marquis of Ormonde, Viceroy of Ireland, on business which concerns him.  
Crossed out, and the note added : Registered above, as he wished to have it dated 29 March. EG., reg. 58, fol. 82v.
- 2443.** 1660. Mar. 14. Brussels. Passport for Ireland and England, on business, to Colonel Theobald de Burgo. EG., reg. 58, fol. 85.
- 2444.** 1660. Aug. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Licentiate Anthony French, judge advocate of the regiment of Colonel Cusacq ; his father, who is old, and suffers from many other infirmities, calls him to Ireland, to see him before he dies. EG., reg. 58, fol. 85.
- 2445.** 1660. Aug. 16. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Captain Peter Schortall, of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 87v.
- 2446.** 1660. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native country, to Thomas Leaghio, formerly lieutenant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain William Hurli, regiment of Colonel Morto O'Brien, of the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 87v.
- 2447.** 1660. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, his native country, to Calagane Carthy, formerly lieutenant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Moriarto Clancy, regiment of Colonel Moriarto O'Brien, of the army of Condé ; is at present without pay or post. EG., reg. 58, fol. 87v.
- 2448.** 1660. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Charles Creagh, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi ; has represented that he wishes to continue his service in active warfare.\* EG., reg. 58, fol. 88v.
- 2449.** 1660. Aug. 17. Brussels. Licence for England, on business, to Ensign Theobald Butler, formerly of the company of Captain John Shea, regiment of Colonel Farrell. EG., reg. 58, fol. 88v.
- 2450.** 1660. Aug. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for five months on business which requires his presence, to Sergeant James Syridan, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Philip ô Rely, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 88.
- 2451.** 1660. Aug. 19. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native land, to Ensign Florence Macgullucudy, of the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 88v.
- 2452.** 1660. Aug. 19. Brussels. Licence for England, on business, to Ensign Theodore Macnamara, of the company of Captain John Norel, regiment of Colonel Morto O'Brien. EG., reg. 58, fol. 89.
- 2453.** 1660. Aug. 19. Brussels. Licence for England to Captain John Magrach, " I mean Graius ", of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Grace ; " one of the men of the King of England who are in these States." EG., reg. 58, fol. 89.



2454. 1660. Aug. 19. Brussels. Licence, with retention of his post, to Doctor Patrick Gineo, chaplain of the companies of the Horse Guard, who has represented that the Prince de Ligne wishes to take him to England as chaplain of the embassy there, to which the Prince has been appointed. EG., reg. 58, fol. 89.
2455. 1660. Sept. 5. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Captain John Cantuel, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 99.
2456. 1660. Sept. 5. Brussels. Licence for England, for four months on business, to Captain Francis Coghlan, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 100v.
2457. 1660. Sept. 9. Brussels. Appointment of George Hamilton as captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of the Duke of York, in virtue of a commission which he holds from the King of England. EG., reg. 58, fol. 102v.
2458. 1660. Sept. 10. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, his native land, to Philip Dully, formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry in the army of Condé ; had not wished to follow when they went over to the French. EG., reg. 58, fol. 104v.
2459. 1660. Sept. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, his native land, to Peter Lassi, formerly lieutenant of a company of Irish infantry in the army of Condé, and now without a post. EG., reg. 58, fol. 104.
2460. 1660. Sept. 11. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, his native land, to Daniel Oscaulon, formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry in the army of Condé, but is now without a post. EG., reg. 58, fol. 104v.
2461. 1660. Sept. 11. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Thomas Kennedie ; to serve as senior chaplain of the regiment of Colonel Richard Grace. EG., reg. 58, fol. 106.
2462. 1660. Sept. 13. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on special business which requires his presence, to Licentiate Charles Tullius, ordinary chaplain in the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 106.<sup>1</sup>
2463. 1660. Sept. 13. Brussels. Passport to go to Ireland through England on special business which requires his presence, to Lucas Tullius. EG., reg. 58, fol. 106.
2464. 1660. Sept. 27. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Dierich Scholy ; had served for some years in the company of Horse of Marquis de la Roche in the army of Condé ; is at present without pay. EG., reg. 58, fol. 117.
2465. 1660. Sept. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months on important business which requires his presence, to Captain Christopher Dillon, pensioner in the company of Captain Philip Hey, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 119.
2466. 1660. Oct. 2. Brussels. The Privy Council to Don Juan of Austria.

<sup>1</sup>Entered again at fol. 109 under 20 Sept.



[a]. The Irish religious at Louvain<sup>1</sup> have, by a petition which has been referred to us, represented to your Excellency that after they had been driven out of their own country the Infanta Isabella, out of pity, had given them permission to reside as a community at Louvain, on condition that they would not be allowed to quest alms, as appears from the enclosed decree.<sup>2</sup> The permission was granted to enable them to instruct the young friars in theology, and prepare them to preach the Catholic faith in their own country. This they have carried out, and they have been able to send religious from time to time to Ireland, and since the year 1626 more than thirty of them have courageously and gloriously suffered martyrdom there. As up to the present the petitioners have lived in the house of Chevalier de Chantrain, which he has now withdrawn for his own use, they have begged to be allowed to take up residence in any other part of the town of Louvain, and acquire a property to enable them to build a convent, and church or chapel for their own use, with the privilege of mortmain up to the value of six thousand florins. The university and the magistrates have given their consent, subject to the good pleasure of his Majesty.

[b]. After due deliberation, and examination of the opinion of the university and the magistrates, and of the Council of Brabant, we find that the documents giving the consent of the university and the magistrates are altogether favourable to them, but the Council of Brabant is opposed. Their opinion however is based on the false supposition that the petitioners wish to establish a new convent in Louvain, and ask permission to build a new college.

It seems to us therefore that your Excellency in his Majesty's name could allow the petitioners to acquire property to the value of 6,000 florins in the town of Louvain, in whatever quarter the magistrates may allow, for the purpose of building a college for religious there, but not a conventual house, for their own use only, with a church or chapel, in view of the fact that the Infanta in her day gave the religious the right to form a community in Louvain, and this right included the virtual permission for the petitioners to acquire property, and buildings fit and sufficient to house the community and permit them to perform their religious exercises and functions. In addition to this is the fact that his Majesty endowed the community of the petitioners with 1200 florins yearly. We find therefore that the permission sought by the petitioners does not contravene any orders issued by his Majesty against the establishment of new monasteries and the acquisition of new property by any who enjoy the privilege of mortmain; and it seems to us that the petitioners are also deserving of special consideration, as they educate their young religious to teach, maintain and propagate the Catholic religion

<sup>1</sup>The reference is to the Irish Dominicans.

<sup>2</sup>Missing.



among the heretics in Ireland, while exposing themselves to the daily dangers of persecution and martyrdom.

In the hand of Don Juan : I agree. CPE., liasse 317.

2467. 1660. Oct. 11. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for four months to look after a property which is in danger of being lost, to Captain James Fanin, pensioner in the company of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 126.
2468. 1660. Oct. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Stephen Taluy, formerly captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Morto Brien in the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 127v.
2469. 1660. Oct. 16. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Florent de la Mar, soldier of the unattached company of Walloon infantry of Bartholomew de la Mar his father. EG., reg. 58, fol. 133v.
2470. 1660. Oct. 17. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Hugh Maghir, former sergeant of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Geraldin, of the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 129v.
2471. 1660. Oct. 20. Brussels. Orders to continue without intermission the payment of the grant of Captain Charles Creach in the company of Colonel James Dempsey, as he had not availed himself of the licence granted on 17 August for want of means. EG., reg. 58, fol. 131v.
2472. 1660. Oct. 24. Brussels. Orders to make two remittances of pay due to Captain Roderick Costello, who had served his Majesty with an unattached company of Irish infantry in the garrison of Roeremonde until the last disbandment, "without anything whatever of his pay having been given to him." EG., reg. 58, fol. 134v.
2473. 1660. Oct. 26. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pension of Captain Cornelius Macguillicudie from the company of Colonel James Dempsey to the company of Irish infantry of Captain Denis Macguillicudie of the garrison of Nieuport. EG., reg. 58, fol. 133v.
2474. 1660. Nov. 3. Brussels. Passport for Ireland, his native land, to Ensign Manus Daniel ; has served in the army of the Emperor of Germany. EG., reg. 58, fol. 142v.
2475. 1660. Nov. 7. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Eyman Riano, soldier of the company of Colonel Louis Offarel, and formerly captain of a company of the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 144.
2476. 1660. Nov. 9. Brussels. Passport for Ireland, his native land, to Patrick Collin, who is in a state of need. EG., reg. 58, fol. 142v.
2477. 1660. Nov. 12. Brussels. Grant of the dead place of a soldier, of the value of four crowns monthly, to Theodore Carti, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain John Morfi, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq ; while making grenades at the defence of Gravelines had been wounded in the hand and is unable for further service, EG., reg. 58, fol. 143v.



2478. 1660. Nov. 12. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Gerardo Geraldin, formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Gerardin in the army of Condé ; is at present without pay. EG., reg. 58, fol. 144.
2479. 1660. Nov. 12. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Philip Odaniel, formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Gerardin, in the army of Condé ; is at present without pay. EG., reg. 58, fol. 144.
2480. 1660. Nov. 12. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Daniel Ocahil, formerly sergeant of a company of the regiment of Colonel Gerardin with the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 144.
2481. 1660. Nov. 13. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Denis Carty, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Theodore Carty, regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 144.
2482. 1660. Nov. 13. Brussels. Extension for three months of the licence granted to Colonel Moriarto Obrien on 9 August last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 145v.
2483. 1660. Nov. 17. Brussels. Grant of the supplement of service required to be an ensign, to Charles Macdonoch, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Manuel Macdonogh, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara ; had served for seven years with the troops of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 147v.
2484. 1660. Nov. 17. Brussels. Licence for England, for twenty one days on business which requires his presence, to Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 152.
2485. 1660. Nov. 18. Brussels. Extension for three months to the licence granted to Captain Francis Coglan on 5 Sept. last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 156.
2486. 1660. Nov. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Theodore Patricio, formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry of Captain John Patricio, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara, in the army of Condé ; is at present without a post. EG., reg. 58, fol. 148v.
2487. 1660. Nov. 21. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Captain Thadeus Berneo, whose company has been disbanded. EG., reg. 58, fol. 148v.
2488. 1660. Nov. 23. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Ensign Thadeus Huerly ; has served in these parts for some years, but is now without post and pay. EG., reg. 58, fol. 149.
2489. 1660. Nov. 23. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Andrew Comine, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Gerardini, in the army of Condé ; has only the pay of a private soldier in the company of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 149v.
2490. 1660. Nov. 23. Brussels. Passport for Ireland, with his wife, to Hugo Madin, formerly sergeant of a company of infantry of the troops of Condé, with which he had gone to France, whence he had come here, wishing to go to Ireland. EG., reg. 58, fol. 151.



- 2491.** 1660. Nov. 23. Brussels. Passport for Ireland, with his wife, to Daniel Quessa, formerly sergeant of a company of infantry with the troops of Condé, with which he had gone to France, whence he had come here, wishing to go to Ireland. EG., reg. 58, fol. 151.
- 2492.** 1660. Nov. 24. Brussels. Passport for England, with a servant, on business, to Edmund Macsuinuy, captain of a company of Irish infantry, regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 155.
- 2493.** 1660. Nov. 24. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business which requires his presence, to Colonel Richard Gerardin, whose regiment is disbanded ; is serving at present in the regiment of Irish infantry of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 156.
- 2494.** 1660. Nov. 24. Brussels. Licence for England, on business which requires his presence, to Captain John de Rohite, of a company of the regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 156.
- 2495.** 1660. Nov. 25. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Constantine Oneill, hitherto held by him on the company of Irish infantry formerly commanded by Captain Philip Orelly, until the said Captain Constantine was given the company of Captain Charles Creagh, who was thought to have died in France ; the present grant to be held on one of the companies of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 152v.
- 2496.** 1660. Nov. 26. Brussels. Transfer of Licentiate William Quely, chaplain, from the company of Captain N. de Vinder to the company of Lieutenant-Colonel James Gile Hoefnagle, in garrison at the fort of Sainte-Marguerite. EG., reg. 58, fol. 151v.
- 2497.** 1660. Nov. 28. Brussels. Decision fixing the seniority of Captains Emanuel Macdonocq, Philip Dwier, and Charles Rian, in this order. EG., reg. 58, fol. 152.
- 2498.** 1660. Nov. 30. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Mark Grayo, formerly captain of a company of German infantry now disbanded ; wishes to go to Ireland to seek some means of support.\* EG., reg. 58, fol. 151.
- 2499.** 1660. Dec. 4. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to James Duly, with his wife and children ; formerly ensign of a company of Irish infantry in the army of Condé, but came to these States when the company went over to the French. EG., reg. 58, fol. 159.
- 2500.** 1660. Dec. 11. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of Ensign Bernard Olaverry from the cavalry company of Captain de Huarte to the company of Captain Antonio de Cordova. EG., reg. 58, fol. 153.
- 2501.** 1660. Dec. 12. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Ensign Gerard Oquin ; has served with the army of the Emperor of Germany. EG., reg. 58, fol. 154.
- 2502.** 1660. Dec. 12. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Bartholomew Stritch ; has represented that he is a merchant, and finding himself in these States, wishes to pass over to Ireland to search for his relatives. EG., reg. 58, fol. 155.



2503. 1660. Dec. 12. Passport for Ireland, for the same reason, to John Stritch, merchant. EG., reg. 58, fol. 155.
2504. 1660. Dec. 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for two months, to Lieutenant-Colonel Obrien, pensioner in the company of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 164.
2505. 1660. Dec. 15. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to William Mory, with his wife and children ; formerly sergeant of a company in the army of Condé, but had come to these States after the men went over to the French. EG., reg. 58, fol. 159v.
2506. 1660. Dec. 17. Brussels. Grant of a dead place of a soldier, of the value of four crowns monthly, in the garrison at Termonde, to Theodore Carthy, soldier of the regiment of Colonel Mortagh Obrien in the army of Condé ; was badly wounded at the siege of Arras, and is no longer able to serve. EG., reg. 58, fol. 158.
2507. 1660. Dec. 17. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months on business which requires his presence, to Colonel Dudleo Costello, pensioner in the company of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 159.
2508. 1660. Dec. 17. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months on business which requires his presence, to Lieutenant John Talbot, of the company of Irish infantry of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 159.
2509. 1660. Dec. 20. Brussels. Licence to John Poer, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Henry Feliter, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi, to enable him to go to Italy in fulfillment of a vow he has made to Our Lady of Loreto, whereby he hopes to recover from an illness. EG., reg. 59, fol. 157v.
2510. 1660. Dec. 24. Brussels. Licence for Italy to Denis Macnamara ; is in great need and suffers many infirmities in consequence of his wounds, and wishes to have recourse to his brother, who is at Our Lady of Loreto. EG., reg. 58, fol. 160.
2511. 1660. Dec. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business, to Ensign William Lanorgan, of the company of Captain Nicholas Barry, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 207.
2512. 1661. Jan. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland with her family and baggage to Brigida O'Neill, widow of Colonel Patrick O Donnel, who served his Majesty for many years with a regiment of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 58, fol. 161.
2513. 1661. Jan. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, on business which requires his presence, to disbanded Colonel Macarty Riegh, serving in the regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 162v.
2514. 1661. Jan. 13. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Daniel Oscaulen, formerly ensign of an Irish company of infantry in the army of Condé. EG., reg. 58, fol. 164.
2515. 1661. Jan. 15. Madrid. Philip IV to de Caracena. Colonel Philip Orelly has represented to me that a regiment of 1,200 men



was raised in Ireland and brought by him to Spain. He was sent to Flanders afterwards, where he served for some years, until on account of sinister reports he was arrested, and before his sentence was pronounced his regiment was disbanded, contrary to the agreement in the contract which was made at the time the regiment was raised. He begs me to order that the regiment be restored to him, together with the privileges and precedence of an active and perpetual colonel ; and he undertakes to recruit the regiment again. I thought well to order you, as I hereby do, to inform me of your opinion, that with such information I may make the decision which best becomes my service. EGC., reg. 268, fol. 21.

- 2516.** 1661. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for England, on business, to Captain Fugarty, pensioner in the company of Captain Stapleton, regiment of Colonel Grace. EG., reg. 58, fol. 168v.
- 2517.** 1661. Jan. 20. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Ensign James Rirden, formerly in the army of Condé, but now without a post ; to enable him to continue his service in the war. EG., reg. 58, fol. 167.
- 2518.** 1661. Jan. 20. Brussels. Licence for Italy for Cornelius Moran, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Brittin, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi ; is wounded, and has made a vow to visit Our Lady of Loreto. EG., reg. 58, fol. 168.
- 2519.** 1661. Jan. 21. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Hugh Flotiny ; to accompany the daughter of Colonel Grace. EG., reg. 58, fol. 172v.
- 2520.** 1661. Feb. 2. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant John Fahan, with his wife and children ; of the company of Irish infantry of Colonel, Grace, who is colonel of one of the regiments of the King of England. EG., reg. 58, fol. 175.
- 2521.** 1661. Feb. 8. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland with his family to Captain Denis Gorman, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 175v.
- 2522.** 1661. Feb. 9. Brussels. Extension for two months of the licence granted to Captain Christopher Dillon on 30 Sept. last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 177.
- 2523.** 1661. Feb. 11. Brussels. Extension for three months of the licence granted to Colonel Moriarto Obrien on 3 Nov. last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 178.
- 2524.** 1661. Feb. 11. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Ensign Thadeus Ohierly, formerly of the company of Colonel John Morfi ; to enable him to continue his services. EG., reg. 58, fol. 177.
- 2525.** 1661. Feb. 12. Brussels. Licence to be absent for four months, on business which requires his presence, to Captain Fergus Offarel, pensioner in the company of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 177v.
- 2526.** 1661. Feb. 14. Brussels. Extension for a further two months of the licence granted to Lieutenant-Colonel Theodore Obrien on 12 Dec. last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 178.



- 2527.** 1661. Feb. 14. Brussels. Licence for England, on business, to Captain Moelmurry O Hosity, pensioner in the company of Irish infantry of the Duke of York. EGC., reg. 58, fol. 178.
- 2528.** 1661. Feb. 23. Brussels. de Caracena to Philip IV. In a dispatch of 15 January your Majesty was pleased to order me to inform you of my opinion and of what I consider opportune concerning the request of Colonel Philip Orelly, that the regiment of Irish infantry, with which he served in these States, should be restored to him. In obedience to your royal command I have to state that this colonel was arrested on account of the depositions of another Irishman, his confidant, who declared that he held dealings with Cromwell through an Irish archbishop to whom he was related, who was a great enemy of your Majesty, as he was partly responsible for the fact that when the King of England came to these States, he was not followed by all the Irish in France. Moreover the said Irishman declared that the correspondance [with Cromwell] was carried on through a soldier of his [Orelly's] regiment, who came from France ; and he made known the day on which the soldier went from here, so that he was followed in order to secure his arrest. He was held up two leagues from this city, and when, in accordance with the orders given to the men who arrested him, his pockets had been searched, although they did this very quickly, he had already put his hand in and destroyed two open letters written in cypher, so that however much they tried, it was impossible to come to any very clear conclusion, except to conjecture, as the accuser had said, that O Reilly's purpose was that Cromwell should allow him to return to his own country and live there peacefully, and that he would take his regiment to France. However, as both the colonel and the soldier who carried the letters denied all this, it does not seem to the Superintendant that he could inflict any punishment. I myself judged, however, and especially in regard to this nation which has acted in the manner known, that it was not well to be at the whim of this man, especially as those who spoke on the colonel's behalf did not deny that it was his intention to return to Ireland, although they did not admit that it was in order to recruit for his regiment. Wherefore I disbanded the regiment, and divided the men amongst the other regiments. And this is what it appears to me opportune to reply to your Majesty's said dispatch.\* EGC., reg. 268, fol. 105.
- 2529.** 1661. Feb. 24. Madrid. Philip IV to de Caracena. Doctor Maurice Durcan has represented to me that he has served in Flanders for over ten years, as chaplain of the regiment of Colonel Gaspar Bonifaz, and in consideration of this he begs he may be given a certificate of the pay which is due to him. If the general order concerning pay which is overdue does not apply to chaplains, his account is to be settled, and he is to be informed of the amount which is due to him.\* EGC., reg. 268, fol. 118.



- 2530.** 1661. Feb. 24. Brussels. Licence for England, for three weeks, on business which requires his presence, to Major Macgullucudy, captain of an unattached company of Irish infantry. EG., reg. 58, fol. 184.
- 2531.** 1661. Feb. 24. Brussels. Blank commission for the captaincy of a company of Irish infantry to be newly raised for the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 184v.
- 2532.** 1661. Feb. 24. Brussels. Two further blank commissions for captains of the regiment of Colonel Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 184v.
- 2533.** 1661. Feb. 24. Brussels. Grant to Thomas Flanagan of the ordinary place of a soldier in the regiment of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Colonel Diego de Gony. EG., reg. 58, fol. 186v.
- 2534.** 1661. Mar. 3. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to James Butler ; has arrived here with the passport of the governor of Milan. EG., reg. 58, fol. 187.
- 2535.** 1661. Mar. 5. Brussels. Licence for Germany to Captain William Nolan, pensioner in the company of Colonel Theodore Omeara ; wishes to go to Prague on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 58, fol. 191v.
- 2536.** 1661. Mar. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland for Captain Melchior de Burgo, soldier of the company of Captain John Morfi, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 58, fol. 193.
- 2537.** 1661. Mar. 15. Brussels. Licence to Margaret Guerque, widow of Captain Fiacre Bradi, of the regiment of Colonel Philip Rely, to return to Ireland with her three sons and one daughter ; Captain Brady was killed at the relief of Valenciennes. EG., reg. 58, fol. 197v.
- 2538.** 1661. Mar. 15. Brussels. Three passports for Ireland, to return there with their mother, to Patrick Bradi, aged twenty one years, James Bradi, aged fourteen, Daniel Bradi aged nineteen years, and Rosa Bradi aged eighteen years. EG., reg. 58, fol. 197v.
- 2539.** 1661. Mar. 23. Brussels. Blank commission for the captain of the company to be newly raised for the regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara from the men of the Irish regiment of the King of England, who have remained in these States. EG., reg. 58, fol. 196v.
- 2540.** 1661. Mar. 29. Brussels. Licence to be absent for five months to Captain Edmond Butler, of a company of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi ; the Marquis of Ormonde, his uncle, and Viceroy, calls him, from England, on business which concerns him. EG., reg. 58, fol. 197v.
- 2541.** 1661. Apr. 1. Brussels. Extension for a further three years of the licence granted to Captain Francis Coghlan on 18 Nov. 1660 ; is detained by illness in England after he had finished his business in Ireland. EG., reg. 58, fol. 201v.



2542. 1661. Apr. 3. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland to Ensign John Duye, soldier of the company of Captain Therlagh Obrien, regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 200v.
2543. 1661. Apr. 10. Brussels. Extension for a further four months of the licence granted to Captain John Cantuel on 5 Sept. 1660. EG., reg. 58, fol. 212.
2544. 1661. Apr. 10. Brussels. Extension for two months of the licence already extended on 14 Feb. for Lieutenant-Colonel Theodore Obrien. EG., reg. 58, fol. 212.
2545. 1661. Apr. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Captain Philip O Rely, pensioner in the company of Captain Charles Rely, regiment of Colonel James Dempsy ; to enable him to place in security some of his property. EG., reg. 58, fol. 214.
2546. 1661. Apr. 27. Brussels. Licence for England, for four months, to Captain Denis Dempsy, of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsy ; on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 58, fol. 216v.
2547. 1661. Apr. 28. Brussels. Licence for six months to Adjutant Terence Rely, of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsy, to enable him to go to Ireland. where he has his family ; on business which requires his presence. EG., 58, fol. 214.
2548. 1661. Apr. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business which requires his presence to Sergeant Cornelius Leynsi, of the company of Colonel Theodore de Mara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 217.
2549. 1661. Apr. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland on business which requires his presence to Ensign Cornelius Obrien, soldier of the company of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 217.
2550. 1661. May 1. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland with his wife and son to Ensign Hugo Madaine of the company of Captain Dormey Carti, regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 58, fol. 217.
2551. 1661. May 3. Brussels. Extension for a further three months of the licence already extended on 11 Feb. for Colonel Moriarto Obrien. EG., reg. 58, fol. 217v.
2552. 1661. May 7. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Malachy Dovan.\* EG., reg. 58, fol. 220.
2553. 1661. May 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, on business, to Bernard Geraldin, captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel James Dempsi. EG., reg. 58, fol. 220.
2554. 1661. May 14. Brussels. Extension for a further two months of the licence granted to Major Denis Maghelgody on 24 Feb. last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 224v.
2555. 1661. May 14. Brussels. Extension for a further two months of the licence granted to Colonel Dudleo Costello on 17 Dec. last. EG., reg. 58, fol. 226.
2556. 1661. May 22. Brussels. Licence to Captain James Butler to retire to Ireland ; had been captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara in the army of the Duke or Lorraine,



and afterwards in the army of Condé, but had remained in these States when the company went over to the French ; has since served as an ordinary soldier in the company of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 58, fol. 228.

2557. 1661. June 3. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native land, to Captain Denis Onulan, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado de Mendosa. EG., reg. 58, fol. 235.
2558. 1661. June 3. Brussels. A further extension for three months of the licence granted to Captain Francis Cogan. EG., reg. 58, fol. 236v.
2559. 1661. June 3. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Lawrence Michan, who had come to these States in search of his son Auly Falvy and wishes now to return to Ireland, where he has means of support.<sup>1</sup> EG., reg. 58, fol. 237.
2560. 1661. Dec. 16. Brussels. Half pay grant of forty crowns monthly to James Onulan, captain of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Denis Dempsi. GS., reg. 168.
2561. 1661. Dec. 21. Madrid. Philip IV to de Caracena. Representations have been made to me in the name of Louis and Conel Ofarrell, Irishmen that although they have been given several warrants on the States of Hainault in satisfaction of the three years deficit of the awards I made them, namely to the first named a yearly grant of 3,000 florins, and to the second a yearly grant of 2,000 florins, in reward for the special services rendered at the recovery of St Julien, nevertheless they have received nothing ; and I have been begged to order the governor of Hainault to see that this debt is paid to them, and to command the Council of Finances to see that they are paid with first preference from the customs of Ghent, out of the taxes on the imports and exports of foreign goods. I avail myself of this occasion to inform you that repeated orders have been dispatched for the payment of these grants, and lately my son, Don Juan, when Governor of Flanders, wrote to me that as nothing had been paid to these soldiers, it would be better to assign the grant upon the Council of Finances. With regard to this I gave orders of 8 April 1659 that you were to be informed that although the reasons for this non-payment were understood, in view of the low state of the finances, nevertheless you should see in the meantime that these grants were paid as punctually as possible, and give satisfaction to these men for the reason stated. In view of the fact that the reasons which obliged me to grant this favour were of the nature aforesaid, I command you to see that the favour is carried out in the manner I have ordered, on account of the bad precedent which would be established in the case of others, who would be discouraged from rendering similar services.\* EGC., reg. 269, fol. 264.
2562. 1662. Mar. 8. Grant of 1,500 florins each of the value of twenty placas, to Colonel George Cusacq, of the regiment of Irish infantry,



- to help him in the straits he is in from his pay being overdue. GS., reg. 168.
- 2563.** 1662. Apr. 20. Grant of four patacones, each of the value of forty placas, to Leonora Jordane, widow of Lieutenant-Colonel Jordane, pensioner in the company of Colonel Dempsey. GS., reg. 168.
- 2564.** 1662. Apr. 20. Grant of 500 florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to Colonel Philip Rely, pensioner in the company of Irish infantry of Colonel Domars; to help him in his needs. GS., reg. 168.
- 2565.** 1662. Apr. 20. Grant of 100 florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to Anna de Licurez, widow of Captain Dermot Dempsey, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi; due to her from her husband's pay. GS., reg. 168.
- 2566.** 1662. May 14. Grant of 400 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to Colonel Bernard O'Neill, "which were given to him as a free gift in consideration of his birth, and of his present want of means due to the fact that he was made prisoner in Algiers; to enable him to go to Spain." GS., reg. 168.
- 2567.** 1662. May 29. Brussels. Licence for three months to Captain Theodore Carly, pensioner in the company of Captain Richard Russel, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq; to go to Spa to take the waters, on his doctor's orders, and from there to Aix-la-Chapelle for the baths. EG., reg. 59, fol. 2.
- 2568.** 1662. May 29. Brussels. Passport to James Conel, formerly captain of a company of the regiment of the Duke of York; must go to Vienna on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 59, fol. 7.
- 2569.** 1662. May 30. Brussels. Grant of 100 florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to Captain Melchior de Burgo, pensioner in the company of Captain Thaddeus O'Brien, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domeara. GS., reg. 168.
- 2570.** 1662. May 30. Brussels. Extension for a further four months of the licence granted to Captain Peter de Geraldin, pensioner in the garrison of Nieuport; has represented that on 5 Aug. 1660 he was allowed to supervise the business concerning property he has in Bourbourg, during the term of four months, and there is now other business in the same place concerning the same property, and it is necessary that he attend to it in person. EG., reg. 59, fol. 5v.
- 2571.** 1662. June 1. Brussels. Orders to transfer Ensign Theodore Conor from the company of High German infantry of Colonel Cuscar to the regiment of Colonel Theodore Domeara, with a special grant of eight crowns monthly. EG., reg. 59, fol. 3.
- 2572.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Lawrence Rurque, of the disbanded company of Captain Philip Hoya, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 6.



- 2573.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Sergeant David Hey, of the company of Captain Philip Hoya. EG., reg. 59, fol. 6.
- 2574.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Maclaer, of the disbanded company of Captain Richard Lalor, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 6.
- 2575.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Philip Hoya, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 8v.
- 2576.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Adjutant Nicholas Nolan, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 8v.
- 2577.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Quedar y Organ, of the disbanded company of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 8v.
- 2578.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Guilan Goyh, of the disbanded company of Captain Richard Lalor, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 8v.
- 2579.** 1662. June 4. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Patrick Oneill, of the disbanded company of Captain James Groghegan, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 8v.
- 2580.** 1662. June 8. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Dermot Morgan, of the disbanded company of Captain James Groghegan, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 6.
- 2581.** 1662. June 10. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Peter Cusacq, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 7.
- 2582.** 1662. June 21. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel George Cusacq, whose regiment has been disbanded. EG., reg. 59, fol. 10.
- 2583.** 1662. June 21. Brussels. Grant of sixty five crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Dominic de Roc, of the disbanded regiment of Colonel George Cusacq; to serve in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 59, fol. 10v.
- 2584.** 1662. June 21. Brussels. Special grant of four crowns monthly to Sergeant Philip Ofiin, formerly of the company [of Walloon infantry] of Captain Walter Gerard, [regiment of Count de Gratz]. EG., reg. 59, fol. 10v.
- 2585.** 1662. June 21. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland to Ensign Thomas Fox, formerly of the company of Captain Thomas Geraldin, regiment of Colonel James Dempsi; was ill at Ostend when his company went to Spain, and is now without a post. EG., reg. 59, fol. 15v.
- 2586.** 1662. June 21. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Roger Ruarque to be chaplain of the cavalry company of Colonel



Antonio Carillo, with pay of twelve crowns monthly ; formerly chaplain of the cavalry company of Colonel Philip de Mallea, recently disbanded. EG., reg. 59, fol. 16.

- 2587.** 1662. June 22. Brussels. Half pay grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain James Geoghagan, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 16.
- 2588.** 1662. June 23. Brussels. Grants as under to the officers of the disbanded companies of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara: Captain Bernard Kevvanagh, grant of forty crowns monthly. Ensign Denis Omeara of the company of Captain Bernard Kevvenagh, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Theodore Omulrian, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Captain Bernard Kenedi, grant of 40 crowns monthly. Ensign Denis Hanoly of the company of Captain Bernard Kenedi, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant John Suleman, special grant of six crowns monthly. Captain Charles Mulrian, grant of forty crowns monthly. His ensign Edmond Mulrian, special grant of ten crowns monthly. His sergeant John Rian, special grant of six crowns monthly. Captain Charles Obirren, grant of forty crowns monthly. His ensign James Obirren, special grant of ten crowns monthly. His sergeant Maurice Obirren, special grant of six crowns monthly. Ensign Remy Macnamara of the company of Captain Theodore Obrien, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara, special grant of ten crowns monthly. Sergeant Hugo Macruey of the same company, special grant of six crowns monthly. EG., reg. 59, fol. 15v.
- 2589.** 1662. June 28. Brussels. Licence for two months to Captain Edmond Sinote, pensioner in the company of Captain Thomas Doukart, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara ; to enable him to go to Aix-la-Chapelle for his health. EG., reg. 59, fol. 19.
- 2590.** 1662. July 4. Brussels. Orders to issue their pay to eight Irish soldiers of the company of Captain Maurice Macmahon, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omea, who were in hospital at the time of the last muster : Moriarty Comant, Gerard Stack, Eugenio Tige, William Mincane, Guillan Raynes, Guillan Guse, Mortan Namaha, Daniel Porigne. EG., reg. 59, fol. 39.
- 2591.** 1662. July 7 Brussels. Licence for Spain to rejoin his regiment to Ensign John Rely, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Cura Dempsi, regiment of Colonel Denis Dempsi ; in the fighting at the Dunes he had been wounded in the head, as a result of which he had to be trepanned, and in the meantime his regiment went to Spain to serve there in the war in Galicia. EG., reg. 59, fol. 24v.
- 2592.** 1662. July 7. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native land, to Lieutenant Donat Berin, soldier of the company of Colonel Denis Dempsi ; was an invalid when his regiment embarked for Spain, and is at present without pay. EG., reg. 59, fol. 28.



2593. 1662. July 11. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Cornelius Macgullucudy ; the unattached company of Irish infantry with which he served has been disbanded. EG., reg. 59, fol. 26v.
2594. 1662. July 11. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly to Ensign Denis Macgullucudy, of the company of Captain Cornelius Macgullucudy. EG., reg. 59, fol. 26v.
2595. 1662. July 11. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Anthony Carty, of the company of Captain Cornelius Macgullucudy, EG., reg. 59, fol. 26v.
2596. 1662. July 19. Brussels. Passport for Ireland with his family to Captain Theodore Mullineux ; had served for some years in Spain, in the regiment of Colonel Dorgan, and had then come to these States and had served with the troops of the King of England and the troops of Condé, but as he has received no grant he wishes to go to Ireland. EG., reg. 59, fol. 33.
2597. 1662. July 27. Brussels. Grant of an ordinary place of a soldier in the Spanish infantry, with pay of four crowns monthly, to Thomas Cusacq, aged 14 years, eldest son of Colonel George Cusacq ; in consideration of the services of his father. EG., reg. 59, fol. 25v.
2598. 1662. July 27. Brussels. Passport for Germany to Moriarto Hogan ; has come from England and has business in the Empire to attend to. EG., reg. 59, fol. 37.
2599. 1662. Aug. 1. Brussels. Orders to transfer the special grant of Ensign John Rely from the company of Captain Cura Dempsti to a company of the regiment of Colonel Omeara, until he shall find means to travel to Spain, as he is poor, and so far has not been able to do this. EG., reg. 59, fol. 36.
2600. 1662. Aug. 16. Brussels. Orders for the payment of twenty five crowns monthly to Marcos Tully ; to serve as senior chaplain to the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado. EG., reg. 59, fol. 43v.
2601. 1662. Aug. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland with his wife and family to John Comyn, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Patrick Bath, regiment of Colonel James Dempsti. EG., reg. 59, fol. 47v.
2602. 1662. Aug. Grant of 100 florins " to the widow of Captain Dualtach Machsuini, who died at Vicq in Catalonia fighting against the enemy ; in consideration of her having come to these States, infirm and poor, and with four children, in order to go to Ireland. GS., reg. 168.
2603. 1662. Sept. 2. Grant of forty florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to Adjutant Patrick Corolano, pensioner in the company of Irish infantry of Captain John Orelly, regiment of Colonel Denis Dempsti ; " granted to him to enable him to go to Spain, after his regiment." GS., reg. 168.



- 2604.** 1662. Sept. 3. Grant of twenty florins to Ensign Francis Coman, Irishman, as a free gift, to enable him to return to his country. GS., reg. 168.
- 2605.** 1662. Sept. 6. Brussels. Orders to retain for Captain James Butler the place of a soldier in the company of Colonel Theodore Omara which he held before he received licence for Ireland on 22 May 1661. EG., reg. 59, fol. 47v.
- 2606.** 1662. Sept. 12. Brussels. Licence for Spain, on business, to Licentiate John Callagan, senior chaplain of the royal hospital at Malines. EG., reg. 59, fol. 49.
- 2607.** 1662. Sept. 12. Brussels. Licence for two months to Captain Thomas de Meara, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara, to go to Spa to take the waters. EG., reg. 59, fol. 49.
- 2608.** 1662. Sept. 14. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months, to Lieutenant-Colonel Theodore Obrien, pensioner in the company of High German infantry of Lieutenant-Colonel Gelly, regiment of the Marquis de Monroy. EG., reg. 59, fol. 53.
- 2609.** 1662. Sept. 15. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland with his wife and family to Ensign Denis Linc, of the company of Captain John Patricio, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara ; in this country he is in a sore state of need. EG., reg. 59, fol. 52.
- 2610.** 1662. Sept. 15. Brussels. Licence to Ensign William Pouer, soldier of the company of Colonel Theodore de Meara, to return to Ireland, where he has an estate which he has lately inherited by the death of his father. EG., reg. 59, fol. 52.
- 2611.** 1662. Sept. 17. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Ensign James Valoes, of the company of Captain Florence Magdonoghe, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara ; wishes to place in security the property he has inherited by the death of his father. EG., reg. 59, fol. 52.
- 2612.** 1662. Sept. 21. Brussels. Licence for England, for three months, to Captain Adam Roche, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Juan de Toledo y Portugal. EG., reg. 59, fol. 53.
- 2613.** 1662. Sept. 21. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pension and service of Adjutant Nicholas Nolan from the company of Captain Robert Cusacq, regiment of Colonel Theodore d'Omara, to the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado. EG., reg. 59, fol. 54v.
- 2614.** 1662. Sept. 25. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Ensign Dermot Macgullucudy, soldier of the company of Captain Henry Ferriter, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara ; on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 59, fol. 55v.
- 2615.** 1662. Sept. 22. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to Captain Cornelius Magullucudy, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara ; on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 59, fol. 55v.



- 2616.** 1662. Sept. 30. Brussels. Passport for Germany, on business which requires his presence, to Captain Elgot, Irishman from Dunkirk. EG., reg. 59, fol. 56v.
- 2617.** 1662. Sept. 30. Brussels. Passport for Germany, on business which requires his presence, to Captain Arturo Aquife, Irishman, from Dunkirk. EG., reg. 59, fol. 56v.
- 2618.** 1662. Sept. 30. Brussels. Grant of twenty florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to William Lissane, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thomas Dohart, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara. GS., reg. 168.
- 2619.** 1662. Sept. 30. Grant of 100 florins to Marguerite Clansi. GS., reg. 168.
- 2620.** 1662. Oct. 14. Brussels. Passport for Germany to Henry Maccartane ; has represented that he was a soldier in the service of the Emperor, and went to Ireland to seek restitution of his property ; as he had not been successful, he wishes to return to Germany. EG., reg. 59, fol. 59v.
- 2621.** 1662. Oct. 14. Brussels. Passport for Germany to Lieutenant Theobald Butler, who has come from England. EG., reg. 59, fol. 60.
- 2622.** 1662. Oct. 18. Brussels. Grant of sixty crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Chevalier Offarel ; had been lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of Colonel Louis Offarel, one of the regiments which the King of England maintained in these States, and has represented his continuous service for ten years, first as captain in Spain, and later as lieutenant-colonel in these States, until the King of England withdrew his forces. He had remained in these States after the example of his uncle Colonel Terence Ofarel, who died in the battle of the Dunes, in the regiment of Colonel Gaspar Bonifaz, and after the example of his own brothers Captain John and Captain Gerard Ofarel ; also of Colonel Patrick Odonel, his wife's father, who died in these States after he had served the King of Spain here for forty seven years, and of his own brother Captain Richard Ofarel, who was captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Dongan, and was killed at the battle of Elvas. Upon these considerations, and because of the special service he rendered at the taking of St Guillain, he begs he may be granted the pay of a disbanded lieutenant-colonel. EG., reg. 59, fol. 60v.
- 2623.** 1662. Oct. 20. Brussels. Grant of eight crowns monthly to Colonel Charles Okely,\* for six months, to enable him in the meantime to obtain the approval of this by the King of Spain. " Colonel Charles Okely has represented to me that in accordance with the contract he made with Colonel Vatore y Mayo, with the consent of the King, he raised a regiment of 1,000 men in Ireland, and in the year 1653 placed them in San Sebastian and Coruna, where he became ill and was given up by the doctors. On this account the men were divided between the fleet and the army of



Catalonia and six hundred of them were captured by the enemy. Since his convalescence he had gone to France, with the passport of Baron de Bateville, and from France to Piedmont, in the train of his men, to bring them back to the King's service. To his misfortune, though the authorities were French they made him prisoner, and detained him for a year in the castle at Asti, and deprived him of his papers. After that he came to these States [*Flanders*] and here continued his services for the King of England. He now begs that he be granted the pay of a disbanded colonel in like manner as if he held the post." EG., reg. 59, fol. 64.

2624. 1662. Nov. 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for four months, to Colonel Charles Okely, pensioner in the company in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado de Mendosa ; his father is advanced in years, and he must go to Ireland on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 59, fol. 67v.
2625. 1662. Nov. 8. Brussels. Grant of 500 florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to Colonel Charles Okely, " for a service to his Majesty which it is not expedient to make known." GS., reg. 168.
2626. 1662. Nov. 10. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the Spanish infantry the pension of eighty crowns monthly held by Colonel Philip Rely in the company of Colonel Theodore Domara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 69.
2627. 1662. Nov. 14. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Sergeant Cornelius Leynsi, of the company of Colonel of Theodore Domara; on business which requires his presence. EG., reg. 59, fol. 74v.
2628. 1662. Nov. 19. Brussels. Passport for John Moor, who has come from Holland and wishes to go to Spain to serve his Majesty in the war against Portugal. EG., reg. 59, fol. 71v.
2629. 1662. Nov. 19. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Christopher Nugent, Irishman, who has come from France. EG., reg. 59, fol. 71v.
2630. 1662. Dec. 11. Brussels. Licence for six weeks to go to Cologne on business which requires his presence to Captain Omulrian, pensioner in the company of Captain Alexander Domeara, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara ; and a similar licence to John Hart, soldier of the same company. EG., reg. 59, fol. 78.
2631. 1662. Dec. 14. Brussels. Passport for Germany to Farell Ocahan, soldier of the regiment of the Duke of York, stationed at Dunkirk. EG., reg. 59, fol. 81.
2632. 1662. Dec. 14. Brussels. Passport for Germany to Peter Everardo and his family ; formerly soldier of the regiment of the Duke of York, stationed at Dunkirk. EG., reg. 59, fol. 81.
2633. 1662. Dec. 15. Brussels. Licence for England, for four months, to arrange his family affairs, to Lieutenant-Colonel Chevalier Offarell, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel de Laval. EG., reg. 59, fol. 79.
2634. 1663. Jan. 19. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Maurice Durcano, senior



chaplain of the regiment of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Colonel Gaspar Bonifaz. EG., reg. 59, fol. 91v.

2635. 1633. Jan. 24. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Richard Lalor, of a disbanded company of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 94v.
2636. 1662. Jan. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for three months, on business which requires his presence, to Captain James Geoghegane, pensioner in the company of Colonel Theodore Domeara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 96.
2637. 1663. Jan. 30. Brussels. Licence for one month, to go to Amsterdam on business which requires his presence, to Captain John Rian, pensioner in the company of Colonel Theodore Domeara ; and a similar licence to John Rely, soldier of the same company. EG., reg. 59, fol. 96.
2638. 1663. Jan. 21. Brussels. A renewal in favour of Captain Melchior de Burgo of the half pay grant of forty crowns monthly which he held in the company, now disbanded, of Captain Mark Flaharty, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq, until he became captain of an infantry company of Walloons of the regiment of Colonel William Renier van der Clausen, with which he served until it was disbanded ; the grant to be held henceforward in a company of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Domeara, in which at present Captain de Burgo holds the place of an ordinary soldier. EG., reg. 59, fol. 96v.
2639. 1663. Feb. 11. Brussels. Orders that the payment of the grant made to Captain Dermot O'Brien is to be upon the company of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Gaspar Bonifaz ; the order of 6 October 1661, by which the grant was to be held upon the governor of the fortress of Sainte Marguerite not having taken effect. EG., reg. 59, fol. 98v.
2640. 1663. Feb. 15. Brussels. Licence to go to Ireland on business, for six months, to Captain Dermot Geoghegane, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 103v.
2641. 1663. Feb. 19. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Ensign Dermot Osulevan, who had been ensign in Spain in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Arturo Cavanac,\* regiment of Colonel Walter Dongan, but had been made prisoner by the Portugese, had escaped to Holland, and had come to these States ; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 59, fol. 102v.
2642. 1663. Mar. 1. Brussels. Licence for Germany, to procure his advancement, to Captain Terence Swyen, soldier of the company of Captain John Patricio, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 104.
2643. 1663. Mar. 2. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and grant of twenty five crowns monthly held by Adjutant Henry Odonely, from the company of Captain Richard Rousel, regiment of Colonel Domara, to the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 59, fol. 106v.



- 2644.** 1663. Mar. 7. Brussels. de Caracena to Philip IV. Sends the petition of a person zealous for religion. A copy has been sent also to the Cardinal of Aragon. de Caracena will take no action until he learns his Majesty's decision.
- 2645.** Enclosed : 1663. Feb. 18. Excellency. I have nothing to add to the contents of my paper of the 18th of the month, except this very humble memorial, which I present to your Excellency that you may be pleased to have the same care of the Irish Church as of the Irish nobility. If there should be a schism in the Church, the State cannot be secure. We have always enjoyed the reputation of being good Catholics, but it is to be feared that if our shepherds are blind, or malicious, they will destroy the whole flock. The English Court has already sent young Bellings to Rome to petition in the name of the two kingdoms for the creation of nine bishops in Ireland, the candidates being men who openly defend errors already condemned by his Holiness. Moreover, they are all of the English race, and lean greatly towards the King of France, and the King of Portugal, rather than to Spain, and the welfare of the Catholic religion.
- It is certain that since the Kings of England unfortunately fell into heresy they have lost the right of patronage which they claimed within their dominions, and that since the rise of heresy no bishop has been created in Ireland except upon the presentation of the Earl of Tyrone and the Catholic nobility of the country. I beg your Excellency, therefore, to write about this to his Majesty's ambassador at Rome, and to their eminences the cardinals, to maintain the Spanish party and interest, and I beg you to send the names of the persons fit for such dignities in the opinion of the Lords and Catholic gentlemen who have the right to present them.
- The internuncio at Brussels is very susceptible of impressions favourable to the English Court. He will find, however, in the end, that the members of the service of his Holiness will be as greatly deceived concerning the intentions of the English as the ambassadors of the secular princes have been. I state this in all truth, and I leave to your Excellency's consideration how to prevent the great evils which threaten us by the creation of these new prelates etc. EGC., reg. 273, fol. 276.
- 2646.** 1663. Mar. 8. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native country, to Edmond Gegin, formerly ensign of a company of the regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 59, fol. 109.
- 2647.** 1663. Mar. 9. Brussels. Grant of the ordinary place of a soldier with pay of four crowns monthly, in the Spanish infantry, without obligation to serve or present himself at the musters, to Patrick Cusacque, aged thirteen years, in consideration of the services of his father Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 59, fol. 108.
- 2648.** 1663. Mar. 9. Brussels. Grant to Geronimo Tolmo y Felices, majordomo of the royal hospital at Malines, of twenty crowns



monthly, each crown of the value of ten reales, for the care of Ensign Daniel Ofen, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Min Macmody, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara. GS., reg. 168.

2649. 1663. Mar. 9. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Patrick Odonelly, aged 14 years, in consideration of his birth and of the services of his father, Colonel Patrick Odoneelly, deceased; without obligation to serve, or to be present at the musters, until he arrives at the age when the King of Spain will decide; the grant to be held in the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 59, fol. 108v.
2650. 1663. Mar. 9. Brussels. Grant worded in the same manner to Bernard Odonelly, aged 13 years. EG., reg. 59, fol. 108v.
2651. 1663. Mar. 9. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland, his native country, to Cornelius Hehir, formerly ensign of a company of the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., reg. 59, fol. 109.
2652. 1663. Mar. 9. Brussels. Licence for England and Ireland, for six months, to Colonel John Morfi, pensioner in the company of Colonel Antonio Hurtado. EG., reg. 59, fol. 109.
2653. 1663. Mar. 12. Brussels. Grant of eighty crowns monthly to Colonel Richard de Burgo,\* for six months, to enable him to obtain confirmation for it from the King. Has represented that he was colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry in Spain, and that after it was disbanded he was granted a pension of eighty crowns monthly by his Majesty. He held this pension until with licence from his Majesty he went over to Ireland to arrange some business of his own, and he has returned from there with his wife and sons, and now desires to continue his service. His petition is granted in view of this statement, and of the many good services he is known to have rendered in Catalonia and Portugal. EG., reg. 59, fol. 110v.
2654. 1663. Mar. 16. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Captain Christopher Nugent, Irishman, to enable him to serve in the war against Portugal. EG., reg. 59, fol. 111.
2655. 1663. Mar. 18. Brussels. Passport for Spain to Captain Theobald Gerardino, to enable him to serve in the war against Portugal; has come to these States from England. EG., reg. 59, fol. 111.
2656. 1663. Mar. 30. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, with his family, for six months, on business, to Captain Charles Obirren, pensioner in the company of Captain Alexander de Meara, regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 111v.
2657. 1663. Mar. 22. Brussels. Passport for England to Henry Nugent, formerly ensign of a company of the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester. EG., 59, fol. 112v.
2658. 1663. Mar. 27. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Richard de la Hoyde, on business concerning his estate. EG., reg. 59, fol. 113.



2659. 1663. Mar. 28. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Captain Richard de la Hoyde, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara, as the King has ordered that the regiment is not to have more than twelve companies. EG., reg. 59, fol. 114v.
2660. 1663, Mar. 31. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Hugo Morfi, formerly ensign of a company the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester, but had remained in these States when the regiment left Dunkirk, as he wished to go to Ireland, his native country. EG., reg. 59, fol. 114v.
2661. 1663. Apr. 2. Brussels. Renewal of the grant of forty crowns monthly formerly held by Captain Gerard Dillon,\* of the regiment formerly commanded by Colonel George Cusacq, until Dillon himself became captain of a company of the regiment of the Duke of Gloucester; the grant now to be held in the regiment of the Colonel Theodore Domeara, "whereas after the regiment left Dunkirk he remained in these States to continue his services, after the example of his ancestors." EG., reg. 59, fol. 114v.
2662. 1663. Apr. 2. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months on business which requires his presence, to Captain Florence Macarty, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado. EG., reg. 59, fol. 118v.
2663. 1663. Apr. 2. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Colonel Theodore Flaharty, pensioner in the company of Captain Henry Ferriter, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 116.
2664. 1663. Apr. 8. Brussels. Licence for three months, to go to Spa for the waters, to Captain Thomas de Meara, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore de Meara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 118v.
2665. 1663. Apr. 13. Brussels. Orders to continue payment of the grant of Colonel Charles Okely for a further six months, during which he is permitted to seek confirmation of the said grant from his Majesty. EG., reg. 59, fol. 122.
2666. 1663. Apr. 16. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Patrick Carbry, of the disbanded company of Captain Richard de la Hoyde. EG., reg. 59, fol. 119v.
2667. 1663. Apr. 16. Madrid. Philip IV to de Caracena. In one of his dispatches of March last de Caracena had sent various reports from England, and had given the information that upon the arrival of Patrick Moledy in Spain, some of those with whom de Caracena maintains correspondance had asked for an assurance, which he had given, that if his Majesty reached an agreement with the King of England, de Caracena would not make it known. His action meets with full approval. He is to proceed with great prudence, and not arouse suspicion, for in the present state of affairs it is important not to afford any motive for an open breach. EGC., reg. 273, fol. 334.
2668. 1663. Apr. 18. Madrid. Philip IV to de Caracena. In view of the representations made in your letter of 7 March and of the



contents of accompanying document relating to the provision of bishops for Ireland, I have ordered that a copy of it be sent to the Cardinal of Aragon, with instructions to represent to His Holiness with all earnestness the serious harm which would result to the Catholic religion if those who are named in the document and are suspect of erroneous doctrine, were to be promoted to the vacant bishopricks in Ireland. He is to prevent their presentation by every means possible, and to make sure that there will be no departure as regards these appointments from the style followed since the separation of England from the Catholic Church ; and that for the consolation and preservation of the Irish Catholics, they be left in possession of the privileges they have enjoyed of petitioning for prelates who are devoted to them, and give satisfaction, since none know such men better than they, or understand better when they are fitted to govern and support them in the exercise of the Catholic religion without risk of perversion. You will keep this in mind, and inform me of all developments, so that the zeal of the Catholics of that Island be furthered and sustained, and attention given to the presentation of religion among the inhabitants. EGC., reg. 273, fol. 318.

- 2669.** 1663. May 6. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant Constantine Corglen, of the disbanded company of Captain Francis Coglano, regiment of Colonel John Morfi. EG., reg. 59, fol. 129.
- 2670.** 1663. May 6. Brussels. Orders to renew the place and special grant of Michael Queting in the garrison at Hal, which he held there until he received licence for Ireland on 15 June 1661. EG., reg. 59, fol. 129v.
- 2671.** 1663. May 6. Brussels. Orders to pay the ordinary salary of Maurice Durcan, senior chaplain, without any intermission, as he had not availed himself of the licence granted to him on 19 Jan. 1663, but had carried out his duties as usual. EG., reg. 59, fol. 129v.
- 2672.** 1663. May 6. Brussels. Orders to renew payment of the grant made to Captain John Mulrian in the company of Captain Alexander Domara, which had been interrupted on account of the licence for Cologne for six weeks granted to him on 11 December 1662. EG., reg. 59, fol. 130.
- 2673.** 1663. May 10. Brussels. Orders to transfer Quartermaster Peter Schydy from the company of Captain Francis Withe, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara, to the English regiment, as he belongs to that nation. EG., reg. 59, fol. 138v.
- 2674.** 1663. May 11. Brussels. Grant of twenty crowns monthly to Adjutant Bernard Patricio ; served with the King of France for some time in Spain, where he was major of a regiment of Irish infantry under the command of Colonel Fiz Patricio, and afterwards of the regiment of Colonel P. Colan, until 22 November 1656, when that regiment was disbanded ; he had then continued



to serve with a grant of twenty crowns in the army of Estremadura, but was made prisoner, escaped to England, and has returned to these States. EG., reg. 59, fol. 136v.

2675. 1663. May 14. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Peter Butler, formerly lieutenant in the regiment of the Duke of York ; has come here from France. EG., reg. 59, fol. 132.
2676. 1663. May 14. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to John Burque, formerly ensign in the regiment of the Duke of York. EG., reg. 59, fol. 132.
2677. 1663. May 25. Brussels. Commission to Doctor Brady to examine the statements of François Vlemincx, rector of the seminary des Bons Pasteurs ; concerning the administration ; in place of Doctor Santvoort, who had been appointed in the first instance but had since died, CP., carton 1153.
2678. 1663. May. 26. Brussels. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Bernard Odoyne ; to serve as chaplain in the company of Horse of Captain Rodrigo de Hermosilla.\* EG., reg. 59, fol. 138.
2679. 1663. June 6. Brussels. Orders to pay the sum due to Colonel Philip Rely for rations provided for the men of his regiment, namely 34,920 rations in June 1655, and 146,590 rations in the last six months of the year 1657. EG., reg. 59, fol. 144.
2680. 1663. June 25. Brussels. Orders to disband the company of Captain Thomas Dolart, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara, as the regiment has many companies but few men. EG., reg. 59, fol. 154.
2681. 1663. June 27. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Philip Omehair ; had served in the regiment of the Duke of York, EG., reg. 59, fol. 153v.
2682. 1663. June 27. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Sergeant Edmond Hogan ; had served with the regiment of the Duke of York and had come to these States for his children, who are here. EG., reg. 59, fol. 153v.
2683. 1663. July 13. Brussels. Licence for England, for six months, on business, to Captain Theodore fix Morish, on half pay in the company of Captain Ambrose Brun, regiment of Colonel Theodore Omeara. EG., reg. 59, fol. 160v.
2684. 1663. July 20. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, in order that he may procure his own advancement, to Captain Dermot Obrien, pensioner in the company of Captain and Colonel Luis de Zuniga. EG., reg. 59, fol. 165v.
2685. 1663. July 23. Brussels. Passport for Ireland, his native land, to John Moullon ; has represented that he was an ensign in the regiment of Lord Inchiquin, and that he has come from France and wishes to go to Ireland. EG., reg. 59, fol. 167v.
2686. 1663. July 23. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Moriarto Conelan, formerly sergeant in the regiment of Lord Inchiquin ;\* has come here from France. EG., reg. 59, fol. 167v.



2687. 1663. July 29. Brussels. Passport to Dermot Hartacan, formerly sergeant in the regiment of Baron Inchiquin ; has come from France, and wishes to go to England. EG., reg. 59, fol. 178.

2688. 1663. July 29. Brussels. Passport to Denis O'Brien, formerly lieutenant in the regiment of Colonel Dillon ; has come here from France and wishes to go to Ireland. EG., reg. 59, fol. 178.

2689. 1663. Aug. 3. Brussels. Conditions upon which Bernard O'Neill undertakes to levy a regiment of Irish infantry.\* Don Antonio Mesia y Paz etc. With Colonel Don Bernard O'Neill an agreement has been arrived at for the levy of a regiment of Irish infantry for the service of his Majesty, in Spain, under the following conditions ;

[1]. First, that the said regiment shall consist of twenty companies, and each company shall consist of forty Irish soldiers, over and above the officers of first rank.

[2]. That for each soldier he shall be given ten crowns of the value of ten reales, together with rations as agreed upon with Marshal de Risbourg after the arrangements made for the levy of a regiment of Walloons.

[3]. That a representative shall be sent to the town of Bruges, to reside there, and receive the soldiers as they shall arrive, and give them cards for their rations, which shall be given to them until the day of their embarkation ; the same to be done at Dama, Ostend, or at the place which I shall designate.

[4]. That the captains shall be bound to maintain the soldiers, for which they shall be given the said twelve crowns together with their rations, until the day when the muster shall be held, upon which they shall be received to his Majesty's pay.

[5]. That permission shall be granted to beat the drum and publish the said levy in all the towns and places which the captains shall think proper.

[6]. That permission shall be granted to all those disbanded officers who are here to serve in the said regiment, and they shall be assigned their due pay, it being understood that they will have been disbanded while in the service of his Majesty.

[7]. That he shall give legal, full and guaranteed sureties, to the satisfaction of the Ministers in charge of the finances of the army.

[8]. That to facilitate the levy the men shall be provided with simple cover in convenient places.

[9]. That the levy shall be completed by the time of the embarkation of the regiments which are being newly formed by the Marquiss of Risbourg and Count Frederick de Hornes, and that they shall receive the same pay and be on the same footing as the Spaniards.

[10]. That if the captains present more soldiers than are covered by the money which shall be provided for them, they shall be paid



for them at the same rate of twelve crowns for each man, and the said men shall also be received to pay ; if they shall present fewer, the captains shall be obliged to make good the difference.

[11]. If some of the captains shall not have found the full number by the time of the muster, this shall be reported to me, so that I may act accordingly.

[12]. That the commissions of Colonel of the said regiment, and of the Lieutenant-Colonel, Captains and higher officers of the regiment shall be sent without the names, and that the officials shall be free to pay what is due.

[13]. That no pay shall be made here if asked for after the muster, but it may be asked for in Spain.

In conformity wherewith I order and command that everything which concerns the performance of the above shall be entered punctually in the books of your offices, as this befits the service of his Majesty. EG., reg. 59, fol. 173-5.

2690. 1663. Aug. 4. Brussels. Orders to transfer Colonel Thadeus Flaharty, who is a pensioner in the company of Captain Henry Ferriter, to the regiment to be newly formed under the command of Colonel Bernard Oneill. EG., reg. 59, fol. 186.

2691. 1663. Aug. 24. Brussels. Orders to resume the payment of the grant of Lieutenant-Colonel Chevalier Offarel in the company of Spanish infantry of Luis de Zuniga ; interrupted by the licence for England for four months granted to him on 17 December 1662. EG., reg. 59, fol. 182v.

2692. 1663. Aug. 24. Brussels. Orders to transfer Captain Constantine Oneil from the company of Captain Richard Cusacq, regiment of Colonel Theodore Domara, to the regiment to be newly formed under the command of Colonel Bernard Oneil. EG., gre. 59, fol. 186.

2693. 1663. Aug. 28. Brussels. Orders to issue payment of 9,862 florins to Colonel Theodore Domara for his regiment. EG., reg. 59, fol. 186.

2694. 1663. Sept. 8. To Fathers Solevo and Bonaventure de Brudin of the Order of St. Francis grant of thirty patacones, seventy two florins, as alms to enable them to dress in lay clothes and go to Ireland to assist the Catholics.<sup>1</sup> GS., reg. 168.

2695. 1663. Sept. 17. To Father Andreas de Salo of the Society of Jesus fifty crowns as an alms, to spend on books of our religion to be sent to the Catholics in Ireland : 125 florins. GS., reg. 168.

2696. 1663. Nov. 21. To Father William de Burgo of the Order of St Dominick and Provincial of Ireland, thirty patacones as help to dress as a layman and pass over to that Province : seventy two florins. GS., reg. 168.

2697. 1664. Feb. 16. Grant of 1,000 florins, each of the value of twenty placas, to Lieutenant-Colonel Antonio Omulrian, of the regiment of Colonel Theodore D'Omeara ; " to assist him in his passing needs, for which the like amount shall be deducted from his pay when due." GS., reg. 168.



2698.

1664. Mar. 19. Brussels. de Caracena to Philip IV. The owner of the fleet of ships which brought the last consignment of infantry [*to Spain*] complains bitterly of the Irishmen of the regiment of Colonel Bernard Oneil, on account of the bad treatment received by the captain of the ship. There were 100 men in excess of the usual number of recruite conveyed to Spain or back. The men took charge of the ship, and issued whatever orders they thought best. They cast anchor wherever they pleased, and went into any ports they liked, where they forced the captain to buy whatever provisions they wanted, both poultry and other things. They arrested the steward, and took over the kitchen and stores. They drank thirty casks of strong beer which the captain had put into the hold with other provisions for the next voyage. Moreover, they smashed and burnt all the cables and timber, and all the woodwork of the messrooms, and they left not a single splinter of anything in the ship. The disorder was preceded by incivility and effrontery on the part of the Colonel immediately after he had embarked his men at the port of Ostend ; for whereas a section of the men had still to be put aboard, and an adjutant was sent to ask him to take them upon his ship, where there was plenty of room and accomodation, he not only refused to receive them, but obliged the adjutant to withdraw under the threat that if he did not, he would have him fired upon by a group of musketeers. The man who spoke most insolently was the Major of the regiment, and his behaviour cannot be passed over in silence. Hence I have thought it proper to inform your Majesty, so that you may be aware of what happened, and if it be thought deserving of punishment, the men may be made an example of for the good of others. Brussels. 19 March 1664. To his Majesty, giving an account of the excesses and disorders committed by the Irishmen of the regiment of Colonel Bernard Oneil in the ship in which they went to Spain. EGC., reg. 276, fol. 117.

2699.

1664. Mar. 20. Grant of twenty crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to Enora Barry, wife of Captain Bernard Oneil, who has gone to Spain ; to enable her to follow her husband ; charge of the same amount to be made upon her husband's pay. GS., reg. 168.

2700.

1664. Mar. 25. Grant of twenty five crowns to Catalina Fruel, wife of Captain Mortagh MacDermody, to enable her to go to Spain, after her husband ; charge of the same amount to be made upon her husband's pay. GS., reg. 168.

2701.

1664. Apr. 2. Grant of 100 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to Colonel Philip Rely, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Don Juan de Toledo y Portugal ; to help him in a special need. GS., reg. 168.

2702.

1664. Apr. 9. Madrid. Philip IV to de Caracena. Luis Poderico has reported that Bernard Oneil, colonel of the Irish regiment which is serving with my army in Galicia, has given to him the



memorial of which a copy is enclosed, presented by various disbanded officers, who according to his statement held commissions as noted in each case. At present these officers are without pay, as they have lost their papers. The colonel bears witness that they lost their papers in Flanders, and as it is proper to know what commissions these men held, I order you to arrange that testimonials be provided, from the military department, of the services of all those mentioned in the memorial. You will transmit the information at once.

2703.

Enclosed : A report of the disbanded officers who have not received their pay or posts :

[a]. In the company of the colonel : Thadeus O Flahari, disbanded colonel. This colonel was granted licence to leave Flanders, with pay of twenty crowns. Captain Richard Oferoll. Ensign Brian Oferoll. Ensign Patrick Casni.

[b]. In the company of Captain Dermot Obryn : There is a disabled colonel who holds a grant of eighty crowns, of which payment is refused, and he has the place of an ordinary soldier only. He was given licence to leave Flanders with the said grant. Adjutant Bernard Patricio.

[c]. In the company of William Quirque : Ensign John Mac Merocheni, who holds a licence. Ensign Daniel Osulian.

[d]. In the company of Melchior de Burgo : Ensign John de Burgo, who throughout the whole regiment is known to be the ensign of his father, Captain Thadeus Baldo de Burgo, who died in the royal service. Ensign William Morphy, of the same company.

[e]. In the company of Florence Odonogheo : Adjutant Henry Cenis. Thadeus Cox (Fox?) disbanded ensign ; both with the pay of an ordinary soldier. The captain gives an assurance that both these men were ensigns in Flanders, with the respective pay.

[f]. In the company of Melchio Oreli : Adjutant Terence Oreli. Captain Denis Oqueli. Ensign James Simon. They have papers from the Marquis de Caracena, attesting that they held their respective pay in the Irish regiment in Flanders.

[g]. The company of Malla. Ensign Thadeus Oconor. Ensign Ariceno Donogh. They have been ensigns in Flanders, both on active service, and disbanded.

[h]. In the company of Bernard Quenedi : John Nohei, disbanded sergeant, who is known by all the captains to have been a sergeant on active service, and disbanded.

[i]. In the company of Constantine Magnus : Ensign Cornelius Juir, disbanded, now holding the place of an ordinary soldier. Ensign Cornelius Denicque. Ensign Eugene Maguir.

[j]. In the company of Daniel Olonar : he has a disbanded captain named Andrew Comin.

[k]. All the captains attest that the above named were officers, and held posts granted them in the regiment of their nation.



[i]. Copy of the document sent by Luis Poderico concerning the disbanded officers stated to be in the Irish regiment. To be sent to the Marquis de Caracena with the dispatch of 1 April 1664. EGC., reg. 276, fol. 155.

2704. 1664. May 15. To Captain William Barri, pensioner in the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Theodore Domara ; Captain Edmond Sinot, pensioner in the company of Captain Alexander de Meara, of the same regiment ; Sergeant Nicholas Ohein, soldier of the company of Captain Richard Cusacq, of the same regiment ; and William Machrodrigo, also a soldier of that company : a grant of seventeen crowns, of which twelve crowns are to be divided between the two captains, three are to be given to Sergeant Nicholas Ohein, and the remainder two crowns to the other sergeant. GS., reg. 168.
2705. 1664. July 24. To the Father Guardian of the convent of St Anthony of Padua at Louvain of the Order of St Francis, grant of a warrant for 5000 florins, " which he will present together with that of the Paymaster-General Don Antonio de Revilla, to whom you will deliver the said warrant in its due time so that I may make good the 500 florins ; and you will take a receipt from the said Father Guardian, of from the Vicar of that Convent." GS., reg. 168.
2706. 1664. Aug. 5. To Major Louis Riano, who formerly held that commission in the regiment of Colonel James Dempsey which went to Spain, a grant of forty patacones, each of the value of forty eight placas, to be given to him because he has returned lately with a licence to these States, with the intention of going to Ireland with his wife and sons ; the amount to be deducted from his pay. GS., reg. 168.
2707. 1664. Sept. 14. Grant of twenty four florins to two licentiates in theology of the Irish nation who are going to Rome to finish their studies. GS., reg. 168.
2708. 1664. Oct. 8. To Colonel John Morfy, grant of 500 florins, each of the value of twenty placas ; due to him from his pay. GS., reg. 168.
2709. 1664. Oct. 8. To Colonel Rely, grant of 500 florins, each of the value of twenty placas ; due to him from his pay.\* GS., reg. 168.
2710. 1666. Mar. 19. To Captain Theobald Geraldin, who has held the post of Head of the Canteen in these States, and wishes now to go to Spain to continue his services, a grant of ten crowns, each of the value of ten reales ; given to him for his embarcation, without obligation.\* GS., reg. 168.
2711. 1667. July 1. Grant of 220 patacones, each of the value of forty eight placas, to Colonel John Morfi, as a help to remedy his needs. GS., reg. 168.
2712. 1667. July 8. Of the money which shall come into your hands for secret services, you will give to the sixteen officers and men mentioned below, of the regiment of Colonel John Morfi, ninety



five crowns, each of the value of ten reales, in the following manner: Of the company of the said colonel : to James Caferlin, four crowns ; to Thadeus Logh, a further four crowns ; to Olly Ollery, four crowns ; to Terlach Obrin, four crowns.

Of the company of Captain John Patricio : to Captain William Dargan, twenty five crowns ; to James Dully, four crowns.

Of the company of Captain MacMahon : to Ensign John Quelly, fourteen crowns ; to Malmory Ohernan, four crowns ; to Daniel Macmahon, four crowns ; to Edmund Ohagan, four crowns.

Of the company of Captain Richard Rossel : to Eugenio Macogh, four crowns ; to Andrew Cusacq, four crowns.

Of the company of Captain Robert Cusacq : to Peter Prossel, four crowns ; to William Oneill, four crowns ; to Terence Obrenan, four crowns.

The said ninety crowns to be given to those mentioned to enable them to reinstate themselves, as they were made prisoners of war and robbed by the French who have taken the positions around Tournai ; the amount to be deducted from their pay, and payment to be made to them only upon production of this document and a receipt from them, or a receipt from one of them in the name of all. Of the men who have come from Furnes account will be taken later by order of the Marquis de Fresignies. GS., reg. 168.

- 2713.** 1667. Aug. 9. To Richard Cusacq, sergeant of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Robert Cusacq, regiment of Colonel John Morfy, a grant of eight crowns, each of the value of ten reales, to enable him to be healed of the wounds he received in the leg during the sortie he made against the French at Tournai ; to be deducted from his pay. GS., reg. 168.
- 2714.** 1667. Sept. 23. To John Ohoye, soldier of the company of Captain Robert Cusacq ; to Daniel Obressel, soldier of the company of Captain Rachel ; to German Koskier, of the company of Colonel John Morphie : twelve crowns, each of the value of ten reales ; four crowns to each of them in one payment, in consideration of their having been wounded at the siege of Tournai ; to be deducted from their pay. GS., reg. 168.
- 2715.** 1668. Mar. 6. To Francis Taffe, captain of a company of Horse, a grant of 1,000 florins, each of the value of ten placas ; to be deducted from his pay. GS., reg. 168.
- 2716.** 1668. Mar. 16. To the Baroness Butlerin, widow of Lieutenant-Colonel Baron Butler, formerly of the regiment of Baron de Jonghen, 100 patacones, each of the value of forty eight placas, to help her in her need ; to be deducted from pay due to her husband, and to be paid only upon production of this order, and a receipt from the said Baroness Butler. GS., reg. 168.
- 2717.** 1668. Mar. 21. To Patrick Plunquet, soldier of the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado de Mendoza, grant



of fifty crowns, each of the value of ten reales ; to be deducted from his pay. GS., reg. 168.

2718. 1668. Apr. 10. To the same, in the same terms, grant of thirty two patacones, each of the value of forty eight placas. GS., reg. 168.
2719. 1668. Apr. 17. To the same, in the same terms, grant of fifty crowns, each of the value of ten reales. GS., reg. 168.
2720. 1668. May 8. To the same, in the same terms, grant of 100 crowns, each of the value of ten reales, GS., reg. 168.
2721. 1668. Aug. 30. Grant of thirty patacones, each of the value of forty eight placas, to Patrick Plonquet, of the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado de Mendoza. GS., reg. 168.
2722. 1668. Sept. 24. To the same, grant of fifty patacones, each of the value of forty eight placas. GS., reg. 168.
2723. 1669. Nov. 16. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Denis O Berny, formerly major of the regiment of Colonel Bernard Oneill ; had previously served his Majesty in these States, and then had gone to Spain with the commission of lieutenant-colonel. Had there received from his Majesty a grant of forty crowns monthly in the company of Horse of Captain Francisco Marcos de Velasco, in the army in Galicia, until he received licence for Ireland on 16 June 1668 ; is now to serve in the company of Horse commanded by Commissary-General Francisco de Celasco. EG., reg. 60, fol. 3.
2724. 1669. Dec. 11. Brussels. Grant of forty crowns monthly to Captain Bernard Cavanach, of the regiment of Colonel John Morphy ; served with a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Theodore Domeara until it was disbanded, and then had been given a grant in the same regiment until he took service and pay as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel Bernard Oneill newly formed for service in Spain. Has recently returned to these States to continue his services. EG., reg. 60, fol. 16v.
2725. 1669. Dec. 16. Brussels. Representations made by John Morphy, colonel of an Irish regiment. During the government of the Marquis de Caracena many officers and men of the regiment were sent to serve in Spain. Since their return to these States they have continued to serve in the infantry and cavalry of this army, and others of them daily desert their companies, to go over to the Spanish companies, and consequently his own regiment will quickly be ruined. Orders are therefore issued to all the colonels and captains of both the infantry and cavalry to hand over all the Irish soldiers to those who demand them back, the officers to return to their place in the regiment of Colonel John Morphy. EG., reg. 60, fol. 22v.
2726. 1669. Dec. 18. Brussels. Commission to Denis Oberni as major of the regiment of Colonel John Morphie ; vacancy due to the death of Major Louis Riano. EG., reg. 60, fol. 22v.



2727. 1670. Jan. 10. Brussels. Orders to continue the place and special grant of Ensign John Rely in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Richard Rosel ; notwithstanding the report of his death which was current during his absence, as his identity has been established. EG., reg. 60, fol. 31v.
2728. 1670. Jan. 22. Brussels. Pay of twenty five crowns monthly to Licentiate Gerard Offarll, secular priest, as senior chaplain of the regiment formerly commanded by Colonel John Morphie, EG., reg. 60, fol. 34v.
2729. 1670. Jan. 23. Brussels. Commission to Captain Edward Butler as captain of a company of the regiment of Colonel John Morphie vacant by the retirement of Captain Robert Cusacq. EG., reg. 60, fol. 26v.
2730. 1670. Jan. 27. Brussels. Pay of fifteen crowns monthly to Licentiate John Odwier ; to serve as doctor of the regiment formerly commanded by Colonel John Morphy. EG., reg. 60, fol. 33v.
2731. 1670. Mar. 8. Brussels. Commission to Sergeant Richard Cusacq as quartermaster of the regiment formerly commanded by Colonel John Morfy ; vacancy due to the death of Solomon Sonny. EG., reg. 60, fol. 44v.
2732. 1670. Apr. 29. Brussels. Note of a blank commission dispatched on 25 April 1670 to the King of England for the regiment of Irish infantry with which Colonel Grace had served. EG., reg. 60, fol. 49.
2733. 1670. Aug. 1. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain William Oberny, of a disbanded company of Irish infantry in Spain. EG., reg. 60, fol. 102.
2734. 1670. Aug. 10. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Fr Bernard Orelly, of the Order of St Francis ; has represented to us that he has to go as a missionary to Ireland with his companion Fr Patrick Merli, and desires to take with him his parents Gelasius and Honora, both named Orelly, and aged eighty years. EG., reg. 60, fol. 112v.
2735. 1672. May 4. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Lawrence Coghlan, of the company of Captain Richard Russel, as adjutant of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Taff ; vacancy due to the death of Alexander Macdonel. EG., reg. 61, fol. 32v.
2736. 1672. May 10. Brussels. Commission to Charles Omeara, soldier of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Nicholas Taff, as quartermaster of the regiment. EG., reg. 61, fol. 45.
2737. 1672. May 29. Brussels. Grant of sixty crowns monthly to Lieutenant-Colonel Chevalier Conel Offarel, of the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Nicholas Count Taf. EG., reg. 61, fol. 53.
2738. 1672. June 2. Brussels. Orders to transfer Daniel MacGillary from the company of Irish infantry of Captain Holan, regiment of Colonel Count de Taf, to the garrison at Hal ; had been wounded



at the defence of Lille and is no longer able to serve. EG., reg. 61, fol. 54v.

- 2739.** 1672. June 10. Brussels. Grant of twenty five crowns monthly to Captain Quercy Deinan, of the Irish regiment of Count de Taf ; had served as pensioner in Spain, but the company had been disbanded. EG., reg. 61, fol. 71.
- 2740.** 1672. July 12. Brussels. Licence to Colonel Count de Taaffe to withdraw to his house in England ; has represented that he has reasons which oblige him, in consequence of the approval of the King of England, to relinquish command of the regiment and return there. EG., reg. 61, fol. 99.
- 2741.** 1672. Aug. 9. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the regiment of Colonel Thomas Taafe the grant of forty crowns monthly of Captain James Nolan in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Antonio Hurtado until 24 Nov. 1661, when he went to Spain. EG., reg. 61, fol. 133v.
- 2742.** 1672. Aug. 27. Brussels. Commission to Maurice Ivoir as chief surgeon of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Taafe, in succession to John Dwire, upon Dwire's representations, with pay of 15 crowns monthly. EG., reg. 61, fol. 155.
- 2743.** 1672. Sept. 1. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the garrison of Hal the place and pay of Edmond Ryano, soldier of the company of Captain Richard Ruschel, regiment of Colonel Thomas Taafe. EG., reg. 61, fol. 200v.
- 2744.** 1672. Sept. 1. Brussels. Orders to transfer to the garrison of Hal the place and pay of Henry Nugent, soldier of the company of Captain Daniel Dempsi, regiment of Colonel Thomas Taafe ; on account of his age. EG., reg. 61, fol. 201.
- 2745.** 1672. Sept. 6. Brussels. Grant to Captain Denis Maqnemara of a place in the garrison of invalids at Hal, and of a special grant of eight crowns monthly. EG., reg. 61, fol. 168.
- 2746.** 1672. Sept. 26. An entry of the sum of 3,000 livres paid to Chevalier Connel Offarel, the amount of his pension for one year, from 15 May 1661 to 14 May 1662 ; for which a receipt was given dated 26 Sept. 1672. CC., reg. 45877, fol. 187.
- On fol. 188 there is an entry with the same dates for the sum of 2,000 livres paid to Colonel Louis Offarel.
- 2747.** Undated. An entry that 100 ducats of the value of twelve reales to the ducat, and six patars to the real, had been paid to Leonora Geraldin in Spain, as arrears due to her. CC., reg. 45875, fol. 422.
- Similar undated entries concerning similar payments made to Helena, Mary and Brigid Geraldin. CC., reg. 45877, fol. 423, 424, 425.
- 2748.** 1672. Oct. 19. Brussels. Orders to transfer the services and grant of twenty five crowns monthly of Captain Theobald de Burgo, and the place and special grant of eight crowns monthly of Ensign Thomas de Burgo, from the company of Irish infantry



- of Colonel Thomas Taaffe to the Spanish infantry. EG., reg. 61, fol. 222v.
- 2749.** 1672. Nov. 10. Brussels. Orders to transfer James Odowine from the company of Irish infantry of Captain Daniel Dempsi, regiment of Colonel Thomas Taaf, to the garrison of Hal. EG., reg. 61, fol. 257.
- 2750.** 1672. Dec. 11. Brussels. Commission to Peter Archibold as judge-advocate of the regiment of Colonel Nicholas (sic) Taaffe. EG., reg. 61, fol. 288.
- 2751.** 1672. Dec. 13. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pension of Captain Bernard Cavanach from the company of Captain John Patrick, of the Irish regiment, to the garrison of Lierre ; on account of his infirmities. EG., reg. 61, fol. 288v.
- 2752.** 1672. Dec. 24. Brussels. Grant of place in the garrison at Hal to Simon Joye ; has served his Majesty for many years in the company of Colonel George Cusacq, and is unable for further service on account of his advanced age. EG., reg. 61, fol. 295.
- 2753.** 1673. Feb. 25. Brussels. Special grant of ten crowns monthly and of a place in the garrison at Hal to Ensign Odeoran, of the company of Captain Daniel Dempsi, regiment of Colonel Thomas Taafe ; in consideration of his advanced age and his infirmities as he has served his Majesty in these States since the year 1634. EG., reg. 62, fol. 17.
- 2754.** 1673. Mar. 28. Brussels. Passport for England to Captain Nicholas Carny, formerly in the army of the Emperor. EG., reg. 62, fol. 28v.
- 2755.** 1673. Mar. 30. Brussels. Passport for Nicholas Kearny, Irish gentleman ; has come here from Muenster, and wishes to go to his native country. EG., reg. 62, fol. 29v.
- 2756.** 1673. Apr. 7. Brussels. Licence for England, for four months, on business of importance, to Captain Bernard Cavanach, pensioner in the company of the governor of Lierre. EG., reg. 62, fol. 39v.
- 2757.** 1673. June 15. Brussels. Orders to transfer the pension of Captain John Geraldin y Cavanach from the company of Irish infantry of Captain John Patrick, regiment of Colonel Thomas Taafe, to the company of the governor of Lierre. EG., reg. 62, fol. 80v.
- 2758.** 1673. June 17. Brussels. Commission to Francis Geoghegan as quartermaster of the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Nicholas Taaf. EG., reg. 62, fol. 82v.
- 2759.** 1673. July 7. Brussels. Orders to transfer Ensign Thadeus Senexane from the company of Colonel Thomas Taffe to the garrison at Hal, as he is wounded in the thigh and no longer able to serve. EG., reg. 62, fol. 116.
- 2760.** 1673. Aug. 11. Brussels. Orders to transfer James Ferail, soldier of the company of Colonel Thomas Taffe, to the garrison at Hal, on account of his old age and infirmity. EG., reg. 62, fol. 116.



- 2761.** 1673. Aug. 12. Brussels. Licence to return to Spain to Friar Francis Gallieros, chaplain of the company of Irish infantry of Colonel Bernard Oneli in the army of Catalonia. EG., reg. 62, fol. 115v.
- 2762.** 1673. Oct. 13. Brussels. Commission to Denis Obery as colonel of the regiment of Irish infantry vacant by the death of Colonel Thomas Taaff. EG., reg. 62, fol. 164v.
- 2763.** 1673. Oct. 25. Brussels. Orders to transfer John Begly, soldier of the company of Captain Ruchelle, to the garrison of Hal ; was injured by falling wood when working. EG., reg. 62, fol. 162.
- 2764.** 1673. Oct. 25. Brussels. Orders to transfer Patrick Farel, of the company of Captain Patrick Ruerque, of the regiment of Colonel Thomas Taaff, to the garrison at Hal ; on account of infirmities and wounds. EG., reg. 62, fol. 162.
- 2765.** 1673. Nov. 5. Brussels. Orders to renew the place and special grant of Patrick Plonquet in the company and regiment of Colonel Antonio de Mendoza, held by him before his departure for Spain ; to be transferred to one of the companies of the regiment of Colonel Diego Gomez de Espinosa. EG., reg. 62, fol. 166v.
- 2766.** 1673. Nov. 20. Brussels. Commission to Captain Daniel Dempsi of a company of Irish infantry, to be major of the Irish regiment ; vacancy due to the appointment of Denis Obery to be colonel of the said regiment. EG., reg. 62, fol. 175.
- 2767.** 1673. Dec. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Anne of Austria, Queen-Regent (Madrid, 7 Nov. 1673) of the pay of a colonel, namely 116 crowns monthly, to Colonel Daniel Oneil, knight of the Order of Calatrava ; to be paid in the Low Countries. The knighthood and pay were conferred upon him by the late King in consideration of the services of his father Colonel Arturo Oneil, knight of the same Order ; to serve in one of the regiments of infantry. EG., reg. 62, fol. 181v.
- 2768.** 1674. Feb. 3. Brussels. Commission to John Taafe as captain of the company of Irish infantry vacant by the promotion of Captain Daniel Dempsi. EG., reg. 62, fol. 210.
- 2769.** 1674. Feb. 2. Brussels. Grant to John Taaf of the supplement of service required to become a captain. EG., reg. 62, fol. 210v.
- 2770.** 1674. Feb. 18. Brussels. Orders to pay to Richard Remricam the same grant which he says he enjoyed in Italy, where he was sergeant of a company of Irish infantry serving with the State of Milan ; has represented his services, and that when he was on his way here to continue them, he was made prisoner by the French, and imprisoned in Champagne, and was exchanged for other prisoners of war. EG., reg. 62, fol. 216.
- 2771.** 1674. Mar. 1. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Peter Glachlin, disbanded adjutant. EG., reg. 62, fol. 228.
- 2772.** 1674. Brussels. Mar. 1. Brussels. Licence for Ireland to Captain Terence Oneill ; has represented that he has some business



- concerning his property to which he must attend ; and that he holds no assigned place in any company. EG., reg. 62, fol. 228.
2773. 1674. Mar. 3. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Sergeant Onoro Hins. EG., reg. 62, fol. 228.
2774. 1674. Mar. 3. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Ensign Michael Ginelli. EG., reg. 62, fol. 228.
2775. 1674. Mar. 8. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for two months, to Eugenio Ohay, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Thadeus Ruerque, of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obreny. EG., reg. 62, fol. 228.
2776. 1674. Mar. 20. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Thomas de Burgo as captain of the company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Denis Oberni vacant by the death of Captain Thadeus Ourerch. EG., reg. 62, fol. 242v.
2777. 1674. May 21. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Gerard Teinlinge. EG., reg. 62, fol. 280.
2778. 1674. June 12. Brussels. Licence for Ireland, for six months, to enable him to bring here his wife and children, to Captain Bernard Cavanagh, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of the governor of Lierre. EG., reg. 62, fol. 315.
2779. 1674. Oct. 1. Brussels. Orders to transfer the place and special grant formerly held by Ensign Patrick Duict in the Irish infantry, to one of the Walloon companies in garrison at Vilvorde ; was " one of the officers of the Irish infantry who by orders went with others to continue their services in the province of Bourgogne, whence he returned with the others, and has since comported himself in a manner worthy of approval ; lost the fingers of his left hand at Besançon ; for which reason and on account of the great burden of his wounds he is no longer able to serve. EG., reg. 63, fol. 85.
2780. 1674. Oct. 6. Brussels. Passport for Francis Dunegan, Irishman ; wishes to go to the convent of the Capuchins of his nation at Charleville. EG., reg. 63, fol. 78v.
2781. 1674. Oct. 7. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of the Queen-Regent of Austria (Madrid, 21 Nov. 1673) of sixty five crowns monthly, the pay of a disbanded lieutenant-colonel, to Lieutenant-Colonel Dermot Omulrrean, Irishman, who has served for twenty two years in the fleets of Calicia, Estremadura and Catalonia ; to serve in one of the regiments of his nation in the Low Countries. EG., reg. 63, fol. 75.
2782. 1674. Oct. 30. Brussels. Licence for England, and from there to go to his own country, to Christopher Nugencio, pensioner in the company of Spanish infantry of Captain Julian de Rosas, regiment of Colonel Diego Gomez de Espinosa ; has been made a knight of the Order of Calatrava, and for the evidence necessary to support his claim he is obliged to go to England, and from there to the place of his birth. EG., reg. 63, fol. 109v.



- 2783.** 1674. Nov. 3. Brussels. Orders to transfer the grant of eighty crowns monthly of Colonel George Cusacq from the regiment of Irish infantry of Colonel Obery to the Spanish infantry of Colonel Joseph Manrique, so that he may be able to avail himself of the grant while he is in Brussels recovering from his infirmities. EG., reg. 63, fol. 141
- 2784.** 1674, Nov. 19. Brussels. Orders to transfer Maurice Fuilighan from the company of Captain Odwier, of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery, to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 63, fol. 124.
- 2785.** 1674. Dec. 29. Brussels. Orders to transfer the half pay grant of Captain James Geoghegan from the company and regiment of Colonel Denis Obery to the company of the governor of Lierre. EG., reg. 63, fol. 165.
- 2786.** 1675. Feb. 23. Brussels. Special grant of eight crowns monthly to Ensign Denis Omulrrean ; has served in Spain and has come to continue his services in these States ; to serve with the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 64, fol. 64.
- 2787.** 1675. Mar. 6. Brussels. Licence for Spain to Captain Theobald Louis de Burgo, on half pay in the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel Diego Gomez de Espinosa ; to enable him to continue his services there after the example of his father Colonel Richard de Burgo. EG., reg. 64, fol. 73.
- 2788.** 1675. Apr. 5. Brussels. Special grant of 6 crowns monthly to Sergeant James Mahon, of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Richard Russel, of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery. EG., reg. 64, fol. 113v.
- 2789.** 1675. May 1. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Charles Brenach as adjutant of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery ; with pay of 25 crowns monthly. EG., reg. 64, fol. 145.
- 2790.** 1675. May 2. Brussels. Commission to Captain Charles Omulrean as captain of a company of Irish infantry vacant by the promotion of Captain John Patricio to be lieutenant-colonel. EG., reg. 64, fol. 133v.
- 2791.** 1675. May 5. Brussels. Grant of the pay of a disbanded soldier to Sergeant Dermot O Falvy, of the company of Captain Nicholas Nolan, of the regiment Colonel Denis Obery; has represented that he has been disbanded in Spain and had received only the simple place of a soldier, but that while he was in Gueldres with the others of his nation who were ordered to go there to serve the King, he was acknowledged to be a disbanded sergeant, but had lost his papers ; the new grant to be valid for six months, to enable him to substantiate his claim. EG., reg. 64, fol. 136v.
- 2792.** 1675. May 17. Brussels. Grant of twelve crowns monthly to Lieutenant Donat Gravuoy, of a disbanded company of High German infantry of the regiment of Colonel the Baron de Jonghem; to serve with the Irish infantry, as he belongs to that nation. EG., reg. 64, fol. 146v.



2793. 1675. May 26. Brussels. Commission to Colonel George Cusacq for the regiment of Scottish infantry vacant by the retirement of Colonel Francis Schot. EG., reg. 64, fol. 156v.
2794. 1675. Sept. 22. From the camp. Grant to Henry Cusacq of the supplement of service required to become ensign of the Scottish company of infantry of Captain Bruce, regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 64, fol. 216v.
2795. 1675. Sept. 22. From the camp. Orders to reinstate William Oduir as sergeant of the company of Captain Edward Butler, regiment of Colonel Denis Obery. EG., reg. 64, fol. 219v.
2796. 1675. Oct. 15. From the camp. Pay of twelve crowns monthly to Licentiate Gregory Bodquin ; to serve as ordinary chaplain of the regiment of Spanish infantry of Colonel Diego de Colaruvias, in the place of Arnold Connally. EG., reg. 63, fol. 221.
2797. 1675. Nov. 22. Brussels. Licence for England, for three months, to Captain John Taaff, of a company of Irish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery ; has important business concerning his property to which he must attend. EG., reg. 64, fol. 241v.
2798. 1676, Jan. 20. Brussels. Conditions upon which Colonel Denis Obery undertakes to levy fifty six men to reinforce the companies of his regiment :
1. An agreement has been made with Colonel Denis Obery of the Irish infantry in this army to recruit fifty six soldiers, in order to strengthen the companies of the said regiment, which at present according to the list and muster made at Cambrai has 344 soldiers, including pensioners serving with it, and 63 officers of the first rank, with which the eight companies of the regiment will number 400 officers and men : under the following conditions :
    - [2]. In the first place he undertakes to bring from Ireland the said 56 soldiers by the middle of the coming month of . . . or before if it shall be possible . . . Ostend or Nieuport . . . That when they are presented . . . they shall be given rations, and time to refresh themselves . . . and be incorporated in the regiment. That for each one of them he shall be given 12 crowns immediately, for which sum he undertakes that all the men shall present themselves to be joined up with his regiment . . . and they shall serve in whatever place shall occur, at the expense of his Majesty. The Colonel undertakes to carry out all the preceding for himself . . . and to give full satisfaction.\* EG., reg. 65, fol. 36v-7.
2799. 1676. Feb. 18. Brussels. Licence for Spain, for six months, to Major Dermot Omulrean, pensioner in the company of Captain Charles Omulrean, regiment of Colonel Denis Obery. EG., reg. 65.\*
2800. 1676. Mar. 1. Brussels. Licence for Germany, on business, to Captain John Taaffe, of a company of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery. EG., reg. 65.



2801. 1676. Mar. 8. Brussels. Orders to transfer Dermot Horan from the company of Captain Nolan, regiment of Colonel Denis Obery, to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 65, fol. 97v.
2802. 1676. Mar. 14. Brussels. Commission to Luke Taaffe as captain of the company of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery vacant by the licence for Germany given to Captain John Taafe. EG., reg. 65, fol. 106v.
2803. 1676. Mar. 14. Brussels. Grant to Captain Luke Taafe of the supplement of service required to become captain. EG., reg. 65, fol. 126.
2804. 1676. June 6. At the camp near Alost. Grant of forty five florins to Lieutenant Hugo Nechten Relly, of the company of German armed Horse of Lieutenant-General the Duke of Olestin ; is unable for further service as his arm was broken in action. EG., reg. 65, fol. 184v.
2805. 1676. June 24. From the camp. Orders to transfer Lieutenant-Colonel Dermot Omulrean from the company of Captain Charles Omulrean to one of the companies of Spanish infantry which are on active service. EG., reg. 65, fol. 204v.
2806. 1676. Aug. 7. From the camp. Special grant of six crowns monthly to Sergeant William Faril, who had held a like grant in the company of Irish infantry of Captain Louis Varri, of the regiment of Colonel George Cusacq, which had been incorporated in the company of Captain James Demsi, and Sergeant Faril had gone with it to Spain ; he had returned to these States as an ordinary soldier in the company of Captain Nicolas de Alaba, of the regiment of Spanish infantry formerly commanded by Colonel Francisco Antonio de Agurto ; the grant to be paid by the castle of Antwerp. EG., reg. 65, fol. 247v.
2807. 1676, Sept. 21. From the camp. Licence to retire to his home in Ireland to Captain Charles Berni, pensioner in the company of Colonel Denis Obery ; has served his Majesty for many years with special merit and is now weighed down with years. EG., reg. 66, fol. 10v.
2808. 1676. Nov. 6. Brussels. Orders to transfer Captain James Onolan, pensioner of the company of Captain Nicholas Nolan, of the regiment of Colonel Denis Obery, to one of the companies of Spanish infantry in Flanders. EG., reg. 66, fol. 50v.
2809. 1676. Nov. 16. Brussels. Licence to return to Ireland to Anthony Munoz, of the Irish nation, soldier of the company of Spanish infantry of Colonel the Marquis de Belveder. EG., reg. 66, fol. 57.
2810. 1677. Jan. 22. Brussels. Orders to pay Adjutant Balthasar de Burgo the grant of twenty crowns monthly which he held in the company of Colonel Denis Obery until 30 December 1676, when he was erroneously certified as dead. EG., reg. 66, fol. 156.
2811. 1677, May 20. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Richard Cusacq as adjutant of the regiment of the lieutenant-colonel of the



- regiment of Scottish infantry of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 67, fol. 18.
- 2812.** 1677. May 25. Brussels. Orders to renew payment of the pension held by Theobald Louis de Burgo in the Spanish infantry of Colonel Diego Gomez de Espinosa before de Burgo left for Spain, whence he has recently returned ; to be transferred to the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 67, fol. 19v.
- 2813.** 1677. June 13. Brussels. Orders to transfer Lucas Martin from the company of Captain Rusell, regiment of Colonel Denis Oberni, to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 67, fol. 46v.
- 2814.** 1677. June 13. Brussels. Orders to transfer Lieutenant Michael Mulrian from the regiment of German infantry of Prince Charles of Lorraine to the garrison at Hal ; was wounded by a musket shot at the siege of Narden. EG., reg. 67, fol. 47.
- 2815.** 1677. July 2. Brussels. Commission to Ensign Francis Geoghegan as adjutant to the Scots regiment of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 67, fol. 60v.
- 2816.** 1677. July 18. Brussels. Licence for Milan, for six months, on business which requires his presence, to Captain Geraldin Cavanach, pensioner in the company of the governor of Lierre. EG., reg. 67, fol. 63.
- 2817.** 1677. July 20. Alost. Commission to Philip Oconor as quartermaster of the regiment of Colonel Denis Oberni. EG., reg. 67, fol. 75.
- 2818.** 1677. July 30. At the camp at Grammont. Orders to transfer Thomas Ohaye from the company of Colonel Denis Oberni to the garrison at Hal. EG., reg. 67, fol. 89v.
- 2819.** 1677. Aug. 2. From the camp. Grant to Richard de Burgo, soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Nicholas Holan, of the supplement of service he requires to become ensign of the company of Colonel Denis Oberni. EG., reg. 67, fol. 89.
- 2820.** 1677. Aug. 27. From the camp. Commission to Henry Gage, lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of English infantry, as colonel of the regiment of Scots infantry vacant by the death of Colonel George Cusacq. EG., reg. 67, fol. 100.
- 2821.** 1677. Dec. 17. Madrid. Charles II to the Duke de Villa Hermosa. The Earl of Clare has written to Don Juan, my brother, offering to raise in the kingdom of Ireland a regiment of 2,000 or 3,000 men to serve me in the Low Countries, in Catalonia, or in Sicily, the captains to be of such birth as to be able to raise the men from among their own vassals. The regiment is to remain for ever under the command of the said Earl and his sons, and he himself is to be provided with such means as shall seem reasonable. The regiment shall be upon the same footing as the Sycari, and a fixed sum shall be paid for each soldier. If the Earl be provided with the means, he will secure that no other Irish regiment or company shall remain in the service of France ; and if it should be desired to have 10,000 Irishmen in the Low Countries, there



will be nothing to prevent him from bringing them over to my service, if he be allowed, and given proper support. He is ready to produce as guarantors the principal gentlemen of those kingdoms. I have thought well to inform you, so that according to the means at your disposal and the advantages you see in this proposal, you may take whatever measures you may deem best, but you are by all means to retain the confidence and good will of the Earl, in view of the commendation of him given in the letter of the Marquis de Burgomaine. EGC., reg. 282, fol. 234.

- 2822.** 1678. Jan. 18. Brussels. Orders to issue payment to Peter Archbold, judge advocate of the regiment of Irish infantry, who is to remain in Brussels until the differences between him and the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment are settled. EG., reg. 67, fol. 178.
- 2823.** 1678. Mar. 4. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Ensign John Lameo. EG., reg. 67, fol. 196.
- 2824.** 1678. Mar. 4. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Ensign Owen Heius. EG., reg. 67, fol. 196.
- 2825.** 1678. Mar. 4. Brussels. Passport for Ireland to Captain Edmond Ohaye. EG., reg. 67, fol. 196.
- 2826.** 1678. Mar. 29. Brussels. Orders that Thomas Omulrian is to retain his place and pay as soldier of the company of Irish infantry of Captain Nicholas Nolan, regiment of Colonel Denis Oberni, without obligation to serve ; had been wounded in the left arm by a musket ball at the defence of Cambrai. EG., reg. 67, fol. 209.
- 2827.** 1678. Apr. 16. Brussels. Licence for three months, to go to the Court of the Duke of Florence, to Terence Oneli, ensign of the company of Captain Constantine Odonel, of the regiment of Colonel Henry Gage ; has represented that the Duke wishes to offer him accomodation, in consideration of his birth ; the post of ensign to be adjudged vacant if he should not return within the time allotted. EG., reg. 67, fol. 229.
- 2828.** 1679. June 30. Brussels. Orders to reinstate Richard de Burgo as ensign of the company of Scots infantry of Colonel Henry Gage ; the punishment he had incurred for the homicide of the sergeant of the said company having been remitted. EG., reg. 68, fol. 1.
- 2829.** 1679. Sept. 23. Brussels. Grant, in virtue of a letter of Charles II (Madrid, 7 Mar, 1679) of twenty crowns monthly to Maria Mauricia Geraldin, daughter of Captain Geralde Mauricio, who had served the King for twenty two years in the army of Flanders ; the said grant to be in consideration of his services. EG., reg. 68, fol. 30.
- 2830.** 1680. Sept. 27. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Charles II (Madrid, 27 June 1680) that Colonel Daniel Oneyl is to be paid in accordance with the instructions contained in the royal letter of 11 March 1675. EG., reg. 69, fol. 7v.



2831. 1680. Dec. 26. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Charles II (Madrid, 4 Oct. 1680) for the payment of twenty crowns monthly to Maria Mauricia Geraldin, as granted by the letter of his Majesty of 7 March 1679, notwithstanding the objections since raised. EG., reg. 69, fol. 51.
2832. 1681. Jan. 7. Brussels. Special grant of six crowns monthly to James Duan, formerly sergeant of a company of Spanish infantry of the regiment of Colonel Aniela de Gusman, of the army of Catalonia ; has now come here to continue his services ; to serve in the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 69, fol. 74v.
2833. 1681. Jan. 24. Madrid. Charles II to Alexander Farnese. In future, of the establishment of the army in the Low Countries the infantry is to consist of 6,000 Spaniards, 3,000 Walloons, 1,000 Irishmen, and 1,000 Scots. The Spaniards will form six regiments, each regiment of twenty companies and each company of fifty men. EGC., reg. 70, fol. 1.
2834. 1681. Feb. 4. Brussels. Commission to Erasmus Stumfort as captain of a company of Irish Horse belonging to the Light Horse of the regiment of Colonel Gabriel de Buendia, the said post being vacant by the death of Captain Francis de Whit. EG., reg. 69, fol. 97.
2835. 1681. Feb. 17. Brussels. Grant to Erasmus Estanfort of the supplement of service required to be captain of a company of armed Irish Horse. EG., reg. 69, fol. 115.
2836. 1681. Feb. 25. Brussels. Orders to disband the officers and the companies of the English, Scots, and Irish regiments. EG., reg. 70, fol. 15 v.
2837. 1681. May 27. Brussels. Orders that the Irish and Scots officers and men of the two companies at present existing are to be assigned to companies of their nation, and that the lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of Colonel Henry Gage is to be granted pay as though disbanded, and as he is an Irishman, he is to be attached to the Irish infantry. EG., reg. 70, fol. 65.
2838. 1681. May 28. Brussels. Conditions upon which Colonel Denis Oberni has agreed to raise 500 Irishmen to strengthen the regiment of his nation :
- [1]. He shall bring from Ireland to Ostend or Nieuport, within three months, 500 Irishmen clothed in coats of red cloth lined with blue, with breeches and stockings of the same material, and with boots and hats ; their arms shall be provided at the expense of his Majesty, namely swords, pikes, muskets, arquebuses, and their attachments.
- [2]. From the time of the arrival of the men at the ports above mentioned, each man shall receive five placas, without rations, and the officers shall receive the same as the other officers of the army, until a muster shall be held and they shall be admitted to pay, which shall be done as soon as their numbers shall have been completed. The men who may have deserted in the meantime



shall be at the charge of the colonel, and not at the charge of his Majesty. If more than 500 shall be presented, they shall be paid for at the same rate as the rest.

[3]. Eleven commissions shall be issued, without charge, to Colonel Denis Ouberni, namely his own commission, and that of the major, and those of the other staff-officers. The regiment is to consist of twelve companies including the company of the colonel, and shall be paid in conformity with the regulations, after it shall have passed muster and have been admitted to pay.

[4]. Sixteen patacones are to be paid for each man, certification of which shall be given to the pay-master of the army ; and the three months within which the levy shall be made are to be reckoned from the day upon which this money shall have been paid.

[5]. In case of any shipwreck in which some or all of the said men shall perish without any fault of the colonel, the men lost shall be accounted to his Majesty, as likewise if the ships shall be captured by any enemy or by pirates.

[6]. The said colonel, and the captians and officers whom he shall take with him to help with the levy, shall receive the same grants and pay as shall be paid to the army during the time of the levy, as though they were in his Majesty's service.

[7]. They shall be given letters to the King of England, to facilitate the levy of the said Irishmen. EG., reg. 70, fol. 69.

**2839.** 1681. May 31. Brussels. Orders to form a company of Irish infantry for Major John Patricio, from the men recently added to the company of Colonel Denis Ouberni. EG., reg. 70, fol. 44v.

**2840.** 1681. Aug. 15. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Charles II (Madrid, 30 may 1681) for the full payment to the college of St Anthony of the university of Louvain of the entire sum due of the grant made to the college on the castle of Antwerp ; that is to say, eight full payments of 1,000 crowns are to be made, divided into twelve, as the college is at present in gross need on account of the arrears of payment, and the persecution by the heretics in Ireland is intense. EG., reg. 70, fol. 17v.

**2841.** 1681. Sept. 12. Antwerp. Licence to Colonel Denis Ouberni for three months, with continuation of his pay, to enable him to go to Ireland to recruit for his regiment ; likewise licence to take with him for the same purpose Adjutant Richard Cusacq, Ensign Charles Cusacq, and John Quigo, pensioners and soldiers in the same regiment.

On the same day, licence for the same purpose to Captain Henry Platt, Quarter-Master Solomon Egant, Fernando Ohea, and Richard de Burgo, on half pay in the company of Colonel Ouberni. To captains Constantine Odonell and Lucas Taffe, Ensign Terence Oneill, and Adjutant Eugenio Ohea. Also to Captain Thomas de Burgo and Captain Louis de Burgo, and ensigns Richard de Burgo and John de Burgo ; all on half pay in the company of Colonel Ouberni.\* EG., reg. 71. fol. 46.



- 2842.** 1682. Feb. 10. The Marquis de Grana to Charles II. The claim of the Irish colonel Denis Obery, referred to in his Majesty's dispatch of 21 January concerning the stoppage of the value of thirty placas for the clothing of his regiment, is misinformed. The colonel is treated like the rest, and not differently, as he thinks, from the English and Scots. "Since I arrived here this deduction from the first payment issued to the regiment has been made because all the colonels had already provided uniforms for their men, and it is only when new uniforms are to be provided that whatever is then due is paid. What the colonel wishes to obtain is the payment made by your Majesty at the beginning of the year. If the present pay is well administered, it is sufficient for the clothing and food of the men." EGC., reg. 285, fol. IIIV-IIIIV.
- 2843.** 1686. Jan, 15. Madrid. Charles II to the Council of Finances. Orders to pay punctually and regularly the grant of 1,200 crowns enjoyed by the College of Holy Cross at Louvain, and to help that college in the best way possible by a grant from the funds for extraordinary affairs, to make up for the arrears which are due. EGC., reg. 627, fol. 1.
- 2844.** 1686. Aug. 1. Madrid. Charles II to the Marquis de Castañaga. He has seen the proposals made by James Porter, and forwarded by Castañaga on 26 June, that if he, the King, would maintain a body of 4,000 English, Scots and Irish, in the Low Countries, with pay of six placas daily, together with uniforms and rations, and give their officers the same pay as the rest of the army, the King of England would maintain 6,000 English infantry, with no other expense than that of their billets, and at his own cost. They would be always at the disposal of the Governor of Flanders, under the command of a general commissioned by the King, so as to be able to cooperate and serve on an equal footing with the other officers of the same rank. The 6,000 infantry were to be always at the command of the King of England whenever he might have need of their services in his realm.
- This grave matter is supported by the guarantee of Porter only, and after having given it due consideration, his Majesty has decided to leave it to Castañaga's own prudence to manoeuvre out of any engagement he may already have given. He himself does not wish to take any decided attitude, so as neither to alienate the King of England by rejecting the proposals, nor lose the good will of the English parliament. EGC., reg. 289, fol. 55.
- 2845.** 1686, Aug, 15, Madrid, Charles II to the Marquis de Castañaga. In a dispatch of 28 February I ordered you, as already in an earlier dispatch of 30 August 1685, to establish the Irish regiment with its officers, disbanded by the Marquis de Grana. The motives for this reestablishment were given in both dispatches, on behalf of Don Denis, colonel of the regiment, and the other officers, As so far you have not carried out these orders, I have thought well to tell you that you have not informed me of this though instructed



to do so. I therefore order you to put the command I have given you into full execution, and reestablish the regiment and the staff, together with the disbanded captains and other officers who are already present, and have not absented themselves ; and you will inform me that you have done this. EGC., reg. 289, fol. 71.

**2846.** 1686. Sept. 26. Madrid. Charles II to the Marquis de Castañaga. Repeats the orders given in a letter of 4 July 1686, that the Irish Franciscans at Louvain are to be paid some portion of their yearly grant. EGC., reg. 289, fol. 115.

**2847.** 1688. May 2. Brussels. Orders to Domingo Mendez to pay, from the monies which shall be at his disposal from the secret service, 116 crowns to Colonel Eugenio Onel, granted to him as one instalment of his pay.\* GS., reg. 169.

**2848.** 1688. Oct. 8. Brussels. Orders in virtue of a letter of Charles II (Buen Ritiro, 20 May 1685) that the grant due to the college of St Anthony in the university of Louvain is to be paid punctually; the 1,000 florins due to the college annually have not been paid for the last four years. EG., reg. 82, fol. 103.

**2849.** 1694. June 26. Brussels. Appointment of Licentiate Thomas Joyce, secular priest, to be ordinary chaplain of the garrison at Ostend. EG., reg. 82, fol. 137v.

**2850.** 1695. Mar. 28. Brussels. Orders, in virtue of a letter of Charles II (18 Aug. 1694) for payment to the College of St Anthony at Louvain of one full year, on account, of the amount due to the college on the castle at Antwerp. The friars have represented their great need to his Majesty, as 30,000 crowns are due to them from their yearly grant. EG., reg. 72, fol. 140v.

**2851.** 1700. Feb. 18. Brussels. Maximilian, Governor of the Spanish Low Countries, to the Privy Council. Informs them that he had received from his Majesty Charles II a letter (Madrid, 14 Jan. 1700) enclosing a memorial presented to him by the procurator-general of the Order of St Augustine in Ireland. When he has consulted the Council, he is to inform his Majesty of his opinion as to whether the Irish Augustinians should be permitted to establish themselves in the Low Countries. The Council will therefore inform him of their opinion, to enable him to advise his Majesty accordingly. CP., reg. 5, fol. 32.

**2852.** 1700. Dec. 16. Madrid. Charles II to the Council of Finances. Fr Ambrose Oconor, Irish provincial of the Order of St Dominic, has informed me that due to default in the payment of the annual grant of 1,000 crowns made to the College of Holy Cross, in the university of Louvain, for the maintenance of twelve missionaries to be sent to Ireland, the college is almost in a state of ruin. As he is on the eve of his departure for the Low Countries, he has begged me to order you to have special regard for him in what concerns the preservation of the college, and the payment both of the arrears and of the current amount of the said grant of 1,000 crowns annually ; also in whatsoever else concerns the welfare and advantage of his province. EGC., reg. 632, fol. 94v.







## APPENDIX<sup>1</sup>

### DOCUMENTS FROM OTHER ARCHIVES

1. 1593. A report on the grants held in the regiment of Colonel Stanley, which has ten companies.

The company of the colonel : William Wardet, forty crowns. Richard Estanihurst, thirty. Robert Diez, thirty. Thomas Vartington, twenty five. Walter Stanihurst, twenty five. Nicholas Langlin, twenty five. John Berington, twenty five. Richard Hesquet, twenty five. George Baret, twenty. Robert Darbisieris, twenty. John Es Mit, twenty. William Quere, twenty. Edmund Valentin, twenty. John Greni, twenty. John Tipen, twenty. Thomas Walpoul, twenty. George Solchier, twenty. Thomas Farel, twenty. Henry Jervis, fifteen. James Toulin, fifteen. Patrick Colin, fifteen. Edward Linghen, fifteen. John Paleyo, fifteen. William Chambris, fifteen. William Josip, fifteen. George Caudre, fifteen.

The company of the lieutenant-colonel : Richard Guiforde, thirty crowns, Edmund Fiszmoris, thirty. John Oharley, thirty. Francis Ttresame, thirty. Thomas Grene, twenty five. James Collin, twenty five. Thomas Grinffit, twenty five, Michael Mode, twenty five, John Camillo, twenty five. Declin Oberin, twenty. Clemente Troimorton, twenty. James Sehgan, twenty. Walter, Talbot, twenty. George Plonquet, twenty. Hugo Orelin twenty. Henry Grene, twenty. John Crolli, twenty. Richard William, twenty. Luis William, twenty. Edmund Aseley, twenty. Dimicio Harin, fifteen. Thiriloq Maseni, fifteen, Denis Macart, fifteen, John Can Bel, fifteen. John Triat, fifteen, Artus Simple, fifteen. Denis Roner, fifteen. William Mocadel, fifteen. Denis Ruley, twelve.

The company of Edward Estanley : Jorget Roc Morton, thirty five crowns. Nicholas Escorzam thirty. Walter Baquenau, twenty five. John Granger, twenty. John Dan Fort, fifteen.

The company of Robert Bostock : Eneas Mac Morgan, twenty crowns. Gerat Machu, twenty. Thomas Estanihurst, twenty. Thomas Pestocq, twenty. Henry Lloyd, thirty. Alexander Andre, twenty five. Patrick Cleyni, twenty five. James Leyde, fifteen. Andres Gips, twelve.

The company of Edward Vilieres : John Estanihurst, twenty crowns.

The company of Lawrence Fielan : Con Mac Ross, thirty five crowns. John Challener, twenty. James Done, twenty. Thomas Prenguel, twenty. John Bac, twelve. Edward Legh, twelve. Hugo Giles, twelve. William Doun, twelve.

---

<sup>1</sup>For full titles of books referred to see Introduction, 58-65.



The company of Edward Estanley : Richard Herel, twenty crowns. Richard Grini, twenty crowns.

The company of William Paton : A captain who serves in the company, forty crowns, as his pay. Alexander Paton, forty. Nicholas Coream thirty. Patrick Herrin, thirty. Thomas Francisqui, twenty.

The company of John de Marsela : James Paston, ensign of the company, fifteen crowns.

The company of Martin Meynart : Richard O Wen, fifteen crowns, Total : 1857 crowns. Simancas, Estado, Negociaciones de Flándes, legajo 599.

2. 1600. Nov. 2. Brussels. Thomas Stanyhurst to an unnamed friar. Reverent good freere. I have not a litill longed since my arryval in these parts to let *your paternity* understand thereof which (God be thanked) was upon St Franncis day, at which tyme I delevered my honourable good Lo. his letters unto the Archduke, and Ambassador, who vearie ioyfully received them, and perticullerly informed them silves of the affairs and prosedings of those warrs, beinge both vearie gladd to have so persinell a relacion, and so assurude as I made unto them, whereupon the Ambassador dispatched his Majesty letters with all delygence into Spaigne, whereof you shall (by the helpe of Almighty God) in shorte tyme receive benyfit.

I receive a reporte of vearie many English overthrowen nere Waterford since my departure thence. And letters cem to the Archduke thereof from Holand, yet the English here doth what they may to make yt nothinge. Wherefore I besech you that both as well of that (if any since be) as of what else shall hereafter happen informe the King's Embassador in perticular both of the nomber and quallity of men which will make much for you. I know you are incredulus (vous m'entendes bien) yet I assure you your opinion will within feaue monthes frustrat ad gloriam Dei.

I have not forgotten to accomplish my promise made unto you which came in tyme and was received thankfully. I solde the blacke nagg in Scotland for want of comodity to transporte him for 8 pounds and that harde against my will. I wished me a thousand tymes with you agayn, and do still.

And thus certifinge you that Mr Henry Onelle was graciously received of the kinge, and had given him upon his arryvall 1200 crowns, and 200 crowns amonth, and sent to Salamanca, do ende with my vearie humble and dutifull comendacions to my good Lo. your Protector, silf, gentle Mr Chamberlyn, Sr Nicholas and Mr Owen, do take leave, prainge you that at such time as you wryte thence to the Embassador that I may be recomendid. Bruxelles this 2 of November 1600. Yours ever to commande Tho. Stanyhurst. Public Record Office, London, S.P. 77/6, fol. 218.



3. 1607. June 16. Brussels. A deed drawn up before Liberto Melyn, notary, in the presence as witnesses of Bernardo Reli, pensioner attached to the company of Colonel Henry O'Neill, Gerald Reli, attached with a special grant to the same company, and Edmond Daniel, soldier of the same company. Philip Oreylli, Irishman, formerly soldier of the company of infantry of the same nation under the command of Colonel Henry Onel, gives full power to Cornelius Rely, likewise an Irishman, to receive from Martin de Unceta, paymaster-general of the army, or from any other his officials etc., the 120 crowns, each of the value of 10 reales and 40 placas, due to him as pay for his service to the day he received licence ; he acknowledges that he has received as much money from the said Don Cornelius in ready cash, whenever he had need of it. " I sign with the cross on account of not knowing how to write."

Brussels, 20 June 1616. Deed drawn up before Juan Sdroogen, notary, in the presence of Ensign James Nivel and John Bate, in virtue of which Cornelius Oreilly gives to the Irish Franciscans at Louvain the said 120 crowns, in the same form and manner as above. Spanish. Archives, Dun Mhuire, Killiney, J. 2.

4. 1607. Nov. 29. The Spanish Council of State to Philip III. The Archduke Albert, in a letter of the 9th of this month, which your Majesty has seen, reported the arrival there [*in Flanders*] of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, and the good reception which his Highness and the Lady Infanta gave both of them, and to all the others who arrived with them ; and he referred to the financial help given them by the Marquis Spinola. He adds that the earls had decided to come to Spain, making the journey by way of Italy ; and he sends a list of the people whom they both brought with them, namely twenty gentlemen, including sons and followers, and twelve servants ; also a list of those who are remaining in Flanders with the Countess of Tyrone, and some of his sons. Altogether, including the servants, their number amounts to forty seven. For all these his Highness says he will make all the provision he can. In a letter of the same date the Marquis Spinola repeats what has been said, and adds that having seen these gentlemen in such hard circumstances, and as they are zealous for the service of God and your Majesty, and are away from their own country, and in great need, it seemed wrong to his Highness to abandon them, and he therefore gave them twelve thousand crowns, five thousand to each of the earls, and two thousand to the Countess of Tyrone, and their relatives who stayed here. It has seemed proper to the Marquis to give an account of all this to your Majesty, in the belief that you will approve of the action he has taken with regard to the earls. He also adds that the ambassador of Great Britain resident there asked his Highness to arrest the Earls, and send them to the King ; and his Highness ordered that he should be given answer that his country was



free to all, and that consequently he could not do as the ambassador asked, all the more so as there was no evidence that the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell had done anything which called for their arrest.

Dorso : Council of State, 29 Nov. 1607. Concernig letters of his Highness and the Marquis of Spinola with information of the arrival of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell in Flanders. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 625, fol. 48.

5. 1608. Jan. 10. Brussels. Captain W. Delahoyd to Salisbury. Right honorable. My verry good Lord, emboldinge my self on your Lps honorabl favor I do presume if it shall pleas your Lp to accept in redressing my grifes wch is thus. It is so that I am trubled in mynde to sarov under eny prence but my naturall king, for it was not ever my desire so to do, and God willinge my desertes heer after will show the same ; for ther is no service that consisteth in my pouer but I will do it to my kinge and to your Lp, in whom is my onely hope under God ; findinge man heere one Gefery Tavers and imagenninge he was adictid to my king I did make my mone unto him of my greefes and did make him sworn to be true unto my, he is the messinger to whom I delivert this letter. If it shall your Lp I will beginge to break our Irish regement which is to send captains and great pensioners many gentl and many poor soldiers to ther contry accordinge as your Lp will direct mee. I will nott fail my self to goe to your Lp when it shall pleas you thought but ten shillings in my pursh, and I will resinge my company to the Cardinall, but I hope they shall nott stay long under his comaunde. Your Lp shall understande that I am a yonger brother and I have no meanes to liv but my company ; but I do not dubte of your Lps honorable bounty to consider of my to bestow meanes on my whereby I myght live. I could bring som soldiers with mee on my own chardges but not many for wante of meanens. If it shall pleas your Lp to accept of this offers I will venter life and leme to do your Lp any service that consisteth in my abilitie. I will trust much of mee busnes to this berer Gefery Tavers, to relate by word of mothe, which is tedious to write. If I do writ eny thinge amisse to your Lp I crav pardon for the same, for I do write the best I can. The said Gefery Tavers knoweth my mynd, and I do think your Lp may make him an actor as concerning thes busnes, Thus with my humble duty to your Lp I rest ever at your Lps commaunde, W. Delahoyde.<sup>1</sup> Brussels this 10 of January 1608. Public Record Office, London, S. P. 77/9, fol. 203.

<sup>1</sup>In the Record Office S.P. 77/11 (Extracts) ff. 351-352, is a document dated Brussels, 20 June 1613 *stylo veteri* and signed: your assured loveing freind W. Trumbull. It is entitled: "A memoriall contayinge instructions for Captaine Walter de la Hoyde, of such points concerning the business he knoweth of as hee is to treat with the King's Maiestie." It contains instructions for de la Hoyde's journey to London, for an interview with the King in order to uncover to him a plot discovered in the Low Countries: "To give his Maiestie a taste of this business, you may acquaint him that the substance of this plott (as you are informed)



6. November 1613. Advertisements and Offers of service, presented to his Majestie by Captaine John Rathe.

First, it hath been consulted before the E. of Tyrone should attempte any action, that he should demande of his Majestie his lands, with certayne other conditions, and for his better assurance, that his Majestie should passe his royall woord to forrayne Prince, for maynteyninge the condicions agreed on. And if Tyrone's said attempte should fayle, then, that he might manifest to the world that he was forced to pretend warre.

Then to employ Captain John Rathe to sea, with such men of quality of the Irishe Regiment, as should be thought fitting, with order to take the spoile of Englishe, and Hollanders; to receive into protection all pyrates who are abroad, and to joyne with them; and when they should be able to make 4000 or 5000 men, to lande in some parte of Irlande, most convenyent for their purpose, upon the sea coste, and to fortifie; and then to supley certaine principall men of each Province, to begin a tumulte; and their shipping to be despatched to sea againe, to follow their former courses. In the meane tyme, Tyrone with forraine forces doth pretend to succour them.

Hee will certifie what pension Tyrone and Tyreconnell had before their departing out of Ireland; which was the greatest motyve of their flight, fearing they were discovered.

Hee will certifie what marchante in Ireland have given certaine intelligence.

Hee doth presuppose, by all likelyhood, that if it please his Majestie to receive Tyrone to grace, upon good termes, he will submitt himself. And the reason of that persuasion is, in regarde that Captain R, hath labored these four yeares to drawe him thereunto. If his Majestie thinke fit to employ Captain Rathe in that business, he must goe to Rome, and speake with Tyrone himself because there are certaine persons which would persuade him to the contrary. If in Tyrone's return there shalbe founde any difficulty, the said Captain will endeavor to procure the Collonell to submit himself to his Majestie, his intencion being thereunto well inclyned. After haveing him, the said Captain will by all meanes procure to bring over the E. of Tyreconnell; whereby those that desyer to succour them will withdrawe thyer affection; and that will also be a meanes to disperse the Irishe Regiment.

Hee will certifie what knoweldge Cormock o Neale brother to Tyrone, had of his said brothers departure out of Ireland. And hee will also give his Majestie notice of the marchante name that lately brought John Oneale, sonne of the said Cormac, out of Ireland, into these Provinces.

---

is to betraye and retayne porte of his kingdomes to the Spanyard; and then, to assaile his sacred person, and the person of the most hopefull Prince his heire apparent." In a partly smudged out passage on p. 352, it is mentioned that measures are to be taken "for the safety of your brother Captaine George de la Hoyde."



Hee will lay open unto the King of Spaine what false relations Father Florence and F. Hugh Cauell have given of certaine persons ; whereby their future relations shall loose all esteeme with the said King.

Of Eveir Mac Calero, and of Mac Gennis his mother, he can say some what.

These doe pretend that Cone O Niale sonne to Tyrone, shall be schor<sup>t</sup>ly brought over the seas.

He will procure his uncle John Bathe to submitt himself. And they two will acquainte those of the English race wich are in Ireland, and abroade, with the mallice and hatred borne against them by the meere Irish ; and their will to doe harme if they had power ; which may be a meanes that those of the English race shall not have any desyer to joyne with the others.

He will not be tyed to some of the above written condicions, more then lyes in his power, but will employ himself in them with as great zeale and fidellitye as any other servant his Majestie hath.

This is the substance of Captain Rath's advertisement and conjectures ; which I have seene written with his own hande ; and have made this copie out of the original, almost verbatim. W. Trumbull. Public Record Office, London, S. P. 77/10, fol. 364.

7. 1616. September 29. An account of the alms which the company of Captain James Garnon, of the regiment of Colonel the Earl of Tyrone, has given absolutely as help for the building of the convent and chapel which the friars of their nation of the Order of St Francis in the University of Louvain have undertaken to build. 27 September 1616.

160 crowns. The captain himself contributes for the said building [in] four payments. Signed : James Gernon. 60 crowns. Ensign Don Carlos O Neill, four payments. 8 crowns, Sergeant Robert Hodson, one payment. 6 crowns, Drummer Juan Haruy, one payment. 6 crowns, Martin mc Ardre, drummer, one payment. 6 crowns, Carlos Friermont, one payment.

Soldiers : 7, Bernard Slaton, one payment, 5, Dionisio Quely, one payment. 6, Tadeo mac Ruory, one payment. 6, Edmundo Comin, one payment. [Total] : 270.

[Page 2]. 270. 6 crowns, Guillermo mac Teig, one payment. 6 crowns, Juan Gafny, one payment. 12 crowns, Hugo O Morgan, two payments. 10 crowns, Dermittio Grin, two payments. 6 crowns, Pedro Caral, one payment. 5 crowns, Pilipe Smit, one payment. 6 crowns, David Burc, one payment. 5 crowns, Donogh mac Creas, one payment. 6 crowns, James O Feral, one payment. 7 crowns, Valter Mabe, one payment. 6 crowns, Patrisio Conuuy, one payment. 5 crowns, Guillermo O Hiqiy, one payment. 6 crowns, Guillermo Banc, one payment. 6 crowns, Davit Hubart, one payment. 6 crowns, Guilermo Deverus, one payment. 5 crowns, Juan Pursel, one payment. 6 crowns, Ricardo Doudal,



one payment. 5 crowns, Patrisio Quarol, one payment. 6 crowns, Henry Drumgul, one payment. 6 crowns, Laurent Taf, one payment. [Total] : 302.

[Page 3]. 302. 7 crowns, Simon Gernon, one payment. 7 crowns, Laurens Gefry, one payment. 4 crowns, Juan Quen, one payment. 4 crowns, Tomas Harbart, one payment. 16 crowns, Juan Siera, two payments. 7 crowns, Morogh ma Quinn, two payments, 6 crowns, Diego O Daly, one payment. five crowns, Diego O Brin, one payment. 6 crowns, Guillermo Squin, one payment. 5 crowns, Edmondo Quely, two payments. 4 crowns, Juan ma Quort, one payment. 6 crowns, Donel mac Brien, one payment. 6 crowns, Diego Terel, one payment. 5 crowns, Richard Goldinn, one payment. 6 crowns, Hugo O Naghten, one payment. 6 crowns, Donogh O Quire, one payment. 4 crowns, Tomas O Maquy, one payment. 4 crowns, Jhon Brenan, one payment. 8 crowns, Valentin Brun, two payments, 4 crowns, Domingo Ponsy, one payment. [Total] : 420.

[Page 4]. 10 crowns, Sargento Martin O Donelan, one payment. 8 crowns, Edmondo O Dea, one payment. 10 crowns, Donogh O Hay, one payment. 40 crowns, Carlos Maguir, four payments. 4 crowns, Antonio Tulio, one payment. 4 crowns, Melaglen Quely, one payment. 7 crowns, Mortagh Begly, one payment, 6 crowns, David Barry, one payment. 7 crowns, Terlough O Morgu, one payment. 6 crowns, Patrisio Laules, one payment. 6 crowns, Edmondo mac Suinne, one payment. 6 crowns, Donogh O Chey, one payment. 4 crowns, James Roche, one payment. 6 crowns, Diego O Morgu, one payment. David Murtagh [name crossed out], nothing. 6 crowns, Quenedy O Hogab, one payment. 6 crowns, Jhuan O Fogerty, one payment. 4 crowns, McLaglin O Molinn, one payment. 6 crowns, Conor O Tiernan, one payment. 4 crowns, Redmond Gras, one payment. [Total] : 578.

[Page 5]. 578. 8 crowns, Terensio O Neill, two payments. 12 crowns, Pilipe Roche, three payments, 6 crowns, Dualtagh Quely, one payment. 6 crowns, Morogh O Melaghlen, one payment. 6 crowns, David Moriagh, one payment. 6 crowns, Donogh O Quelehan, one payment. 12 crowns, Morog O Quennedy, two payments, 6 crowns, Juan Sinnan, one payment. 12 crowns, Nicholas Barry [name crossed out], nothing. [crossed out]. 4 crowns, Juan Barry, one payment. 4 crowns, Geraldo Condon, one payment, 5 crowns, Alexander Quely, one payment. 6 crowns, Pilipe ma Gibon, one payment. 8 crowns, David Barry. Signature : David Barry. Two payments. 8 crowns, Donel O Hogan, two payments. 4 crowns, Francisco Carty, one payment. 4 crowns Dermot O Huolehan, one payment. 10 crowns, Thomas Barot, one payment. 4 crowns, Conor O Morly, one payment. 6 crowns, Andru Lainag, one payment. 4 crowns, Davit O Maquy, one payment. 8 crowns, Donogh Albonagh, one payment. [Total] : 715.



[Page 6]. 715. 4 crowns, Brian Quely, one payment. 4 crowns, Henry Doudal, one payment. 4 crowns, Eduard Poole, one payment. 4 crowns, Laurenso Doudal, one payment. 4 crowns, Pedro Cantuel, one payment. 4 crowns, Alexander Garnon, one payment, 12 crowns, Guillermo Audly, one [crossed out] three, 3, payments. 12 crowns, Roberto Audly, three payments. 6 crowns, Teig Lois, one payment. 7 crowns, Flahartag O Dea, one payment. 4 crowns, Juan Bedlon, one payment, 6 crowns, Eugenio Hiquy, one payment. 4 crowns, Valter Morly, one payment. 4 crowns, Guillermo O Dolan . . . 8 crowns, Roberto Gray, two payments, 4 crowns, Ouen Macxy, one payment. 4 crowns, Roland Seis [name crossed out] nothing [crossed out]. 8 crowns, Juan O Morise, two payments [repeated]. 4 crowns, Patrick O Moluony, [Name crossed] out). Nothing [crossed out]. 4 crowns, Patricio O Quirre, one payment. 4 crowns, Juan Rely, one payment.

[Page 7], 822. 30 crowns, the Chief-Surgeon Eugenio O Chiely, two payments. [Full total] : 850.

I Captain James Garnon affirm that it is true that the above mentioned soldiers of my company and likewise the chief surgeon have contributed the alms and grants as they are written above, of their own free will, for the said pious work. And in witness to the truth thereof I sign this with my name at Ostend the 29 of September 1616. James Gernon.

I scrivener and public notary residing in the town of Ostend, state that the above mentioned soldiers of the company of Captain James Gernon have contributed the alms and grants as they are here written down, of their own free will, for the pious work, and likewise I (bear witness) to the account of Fr Hugo Cabellus, lector of the said convent, and of the officers of the said company, and having examined the other soldiers as to the truth of the contents, at their request I have signed this present with my ordinary and accustomed signature. Given in the town of Oostende, the first of October one thousand six hundred and ten and six years. Van der Hage, notary.

In the presence of me Aegidio Dhannis, public scrivener of the town of Dcma, Huan Triagul, campaign captain of the regiment of Don Juan O Nel, Earl of Tyrone, together with his four men, Juan Vallu, Luys de Marne, Bartolomé Fogil and Henrique Vanninoven, have given for the said pious work, of their own free will, seven payments of the total of their pay due to them from his Catholic Majesty, and hence at the request of the above mentioned, as also of Friar Hugo Cavello, lector of the said convent, to whom the alms is given, I have signed the present with my signature and with the ordinary and usual seal. Given in the town of Dama on the second of October of 1616. G. d'Hannis. Seal. Spanish. Archives, Dun Mhuire, Killiney, J. 2.

8. 1621. Mar. 22. Brussels. A statement concerning Captain Daniel Odonel. Copy. By the pay books of the army of his



Majesty in the States of Flanders it appears that Captain Don Daniel Odonel, son of the same, native of Tirepan, served his Majesty here from 22 February one thousand six hundred and five as soldier in the company of Irish infantry of Colonel Don Henry Oneil, until the twelfth of November following, of the same year, when he passed to the company of Captain John Rat of the same regiment, and [served] in it until the eight of July one thousand six hundred and nine, when as that company was disbanded he passed to the company of Thomas Preston ; whereupon his Highness by his order of 8 February one thousand six hundred and eleven made him a special grant of six crowns in addition to the ordinary pay ; and by commission of his Highness of the third of September one thousand six hundred and ten he passed on to become captain of the company which had belonged to Don Cornelio Odriscol, in the regiment of Colonel Don John Oneil, with which he served until the muster of the eleventh of September one thousand six hundred and twenty, when he was reported dead ; and it does not appear that within the said time there has been anything else in these States to report ; and to certify this I have given this document on 22 March of the year 1621.

This is a copy of the original, to which I bear witness, the notary of their Highnesses, whose signature is attached, resident in Brussels. Juan Sdroogen, public notary. Archives, Dún Mhuire, Killiney, C. 11. Spanish.

9. 1632. Mar. 20. Brussels. The marriage agreement between Albert Hugh O'Donel, Earl of Tyrconnel, and Madame Alexandrine de Gaure, Comtesse Douairiere de Boussu, concerning his marriage with Anne Margheritte de Boussu.

Copie. Comparurent en propres personnes hault et puissant Prince Messire Albert Hughe Odonel Comte de Tyrconnel chevalier de l'Ordre de Alcantara, Colonel et Maistre de Camp d'un tertio d'infanterie hirlandoise pour la service de sa Majesté Catholicque ex., d'une parte, et haulte et puissante dame Madame Alexandrine de Gaure Comtessa Douairiere de Boussu vefue et douairiere de feu Messire Don Loys de Velasco Comte de Salazar, chevalier de l'Ordre de la Toison d'or, capitaine general de la cavallerie au Pays Bas, aussy de haulte et puissante damme Madame Helene de Boussu vefue et douairerie de feu Messire Don Innego de Borgia, chevalier de l'ordre de S. Iago, cappitaine general de l'artillerie de sa Majeste et gouverneur de la ville et chasteau d'Anvers, et de la noble damoiselle Mademoiselle Claude de Boussu Baronne de Haussy, dame d'Idevoorde ex., en presence du Seigneur Marcquis Baulde, seigneur de Cantraine, Bailly de la terre et Comté de Boussu, et de Seigneur Gaspar de Haen, licentié es loix et Bailly de la terre et baronnie de Liedekerck, d'autre part, pour l'absence de hault et puissant seigneur Messire, Albert Comte de Boussu, Marquis de la Vere,



Baron de Liedekerck et Dendreleuwe, Viscomte de Lombeck, Seigneur de Boenury Chocques Fosse Saily la Bourse Bleaugies Soombeke Vyghendom Vrenbodeghen, Welle Iderghen Erteralphen, Chefz de quarante hommes d'armes et Capitaine d'une compaignye de cavallerie au service de sa Maiesté, filz aisne de la ditte Damme comparante, comme aussy pour l'absence de hault et puissant seigneur Messire Piere Ernest de Gaure Comte de Frezin, gouverneur de Quesnoy, maistre de camp d'un regiment d'infanterie Walonne, frere aisné de la ditte Damme comparante, lesquelz seigneurs sont presentement pour le service de sa ditte Maiesté en expedition militaire hors de ceste province de Brabant ; et recougneurent les dis seigneur et Damme comparans, que pour parvenir au traicté et alliance de mariaige meu et pourparlé et quy a plaisir et honneur de Dieu et de nostre mere Sainte Eglise se par achepvera entre le dit seigneur comparant et damoiselle Anne Margheritte de Boussu fille aisnée de la ditte damme comparante delaissée par feu messire Maximilien Comte de Boussu chevalier de l'ordre de la Toison d'or ecx., cy presente et consentante, et paravant aulcunes promesses et lyen de mariaige, ont estez faictes, traictées, et declarées les debuises et condition que sen suyvent.

Premier. Le dit seigneur comparant declare qu'en qualité de filz unique et heritier universel de feu tres hault et tres illustre Prince Messieur Roderigo Odonel, Comte de Tyrconnel, Baron de l'esser, Seigneur de Slyga, de la baisse Connassie ecx., il luy compete et appartient et par cestes il porte presentement en ce mariaige toutes les dittes parties de terres comtez baronnies et seigneuries avec tel droict de haulteur souveraineté et revenus y appartenans quy pouvent porter et revenir annuellement a la somme de six cens mille florins ores que depossedé qu'ant a present par le Roy de la Grande Bretagne, pour par son feu seigneur pere navoir voulu adherer a l'heresie, ainsi perseveré a la religion Catholicque appostolicque et Romaine, pour la quelle il a esté expatrié comme est a present le dit seigneur Comte comparant, en respect de quoy sa Maiesté Catholicque luy donne dentretenelement annuel la somme de mille huict cens escus que le dit seigneur comparant port en ce mariaige avec le revenu d'aultres trois mille escus par an quil prouffict et joy annuellement adcause du susdit ordre d'Alcantara, comme aussy les gaiges et traictemens quil at de sa ditte Maiesté en sa ditte qualité de maistre de camp, et qu'ant a tous aultres biens meubles et immeubles joyaulx et cattelz il en at donné plaine satisfaction a lappaisement des parties. Et de la parte de la ditte dame comparante sa mere que par disposition testamentaire de feu le dit Messire Maximilien Comte de Boussu son pere luy compete et appartient conjointement avec les aultres freres et soeurs puisnez la tierce part de toutes les terres baronnies viscomtez et seigneuries que sont delaissées par feu son dit seigneur pere, en la province de Flandre,



et dont les aultres deux tierces appartiennent au dit Messire Albert Comte de Boussu, et signantement de la terre et baronnie de Liedekerck et Dendreleuwe viscomte de Lombec, seigneurie de Zoombeke Eyghebden, Andenacker, Boncellaer, escouterie et mairie hereditaires de Locheren Waesmunsteren ecx. Et come pour la minorité des dis freres et soeurs le partage des dittes parties nat jusques a present poeu estre fait, maditte damme comparante promet de donner en attendant l'effect d'iceluy partage annuellement a sa ditte fille souzb le bon plaisir neantmoins du dit messire Albert Comte du dit Boussu son frere aîné, la somme de mille florins a prendre cours doit le jour da la consummation du dit mariaige, et ce des deniers provenas des avant dittes parties, comme de mesme a la ditte damoiselle compete et appartient la propriété de dix journaulx de terre gisantes souzb la baronnie de Dendreleuwe appellees de Biest, et ce par don et transport volontaire que luy en a fait la susnomée Mademoiselle Claude de Boussu sa tante. Item la ditte damme promet et donne en advancement d'hoirie et de mariaige a sa ditte fille telz quarante deux ghemeten de terre et pasture qu'elle at a elle appartenant de son chezb au village de l'Amprenesse district de Dixmude en Flandre, pouvant porter annuellement huict a noeuft cens florins une fois quil a pleu a son Altesse serenissime luy accorder en don et mercede au respect des services de feu son dit seigneur pere, comme dot ordinaire des ses dammes en congratulation et advancement de ce mariaige, et qu'ant aux aultres biens meubles bagues joyaulx et cattelz de la ditte damoiselle, le dit Seigneur Comte de Tyrconnell declare en estre appaisé et content. En oultre at esté debuisé entre les dittes parties comparantes que le dernier vivant des dits futurs conjointcs demereura en tout bien meubles actions et credicts payant debtes services et funerailles soit qu'il y ayt generation, ou non, ou bien le pouvoir renuncher aus dis meubles, et se contenter du douaire a declairer cy apres selon leur choix et plaisir. Et en cas que l'un des dits futurs conjointcs viendroit a mourir sans laisser hoir et generation du futur mariaige ou mesme que les enfans d'iceulx decedassent sans delaisser hoir legitime, les susdits biens et partiies immeubles retourneront du lez et costelz dont ils procedent, et quant aux acquestz que les dits conjointcs futurs pourront faire durant leur conjunction at esté devisé que le survivant d'iceulx conjointcs enjoyra sa vie durant, pour apres son trepas la moictié des dis biens appartenir en propriété aux heritiers du dit seigneur Comte de Tyrconnel, et l'autre moictié aux heritiers de la ditte damoiselle soit qu'iceulx acquestz soient faits en fiefz, alloetz, mainfermes, cotteries ou autrement, de quelle nature et condition quilz soient, ou bien la valeur et extimation d'iceulx en cas quilz ne fussent partageables, et pout douaire conventionnel en tout cas soit quil y ayt enfant du futur mariaige ou non. ou que la ditte damoiselle renunce a la maison



mortuaire des meubles et debtes de son futur seigneur mary ou y demeure cest effect a toutes coustumes droix et privileges aulcunement contraires au contenu des presentes, et en corroboration dequoy onst signé cestes avec les dits dammes parentes, et denommez cydevant. Faict a Bruxelles le vingtiesme de Mars, l'an de grace seize cens trente deux. Tep. Et ainsy signé : Albert Comte de Tirconelle. Alexandrine de Gaure. Anne Marguerite de Boussu. Dona Anna de Velasco y Boussu. Dona Helena de Borgia y Boussu. Claude de Boussu. M. Baulde et G. de Hanen, avecq leur paraphes.

Collation faict a l'original qu' a esté mis en mains de moy soubsigné Bailly de Boussu pour le mectre et depositer en la Tresorie dudit Boussu avec plusieurs aultres sembles titres et escriptz d'importance de ceulx de cette maison, Et a iceluy trouvé concorder, Tep. M. Baulde. See No. 10, note.

**10.** 1633. March 22. Brussels. The act of naturalisation of Albert Odonel Earl of Tyrconnel,

Philippes, par la grace de Dieu roy de Castille, de Leon, d'Arragon, des deux Sicilles, de Hierusalem, de Portugal, de Navarre, de Grenade, de Toledo, de Valence, de Galice, des Maillorcques, de Seville, de Sardania, de Cordube, de Corsicque, de Murcia, de Jane, des Algarbes, d'Algezire, de Grebalter, des Isles de Canarie, et des Indes tant Orientales qu'Occidentales, des Isles et terre ferme de la mer Oceane, Archducq d'Austrier, Ducq de Bourgogne, de Lothier, de Brabant, de Lembourg, de Luxembourg, de Gueldres, et de Milan, Conte de Hahsbourg, de Flandres, d'Arthoie, de Bourgogne, Palatin de Tirol et de Haynnau, de Hollande, De Zelande, de Namur et de Zutphen, Prince de Zeland, Marquis du St Empire de Rome, seigneur de Frinze, de Salins, de Malines, des cite, villes et pays d'Utrecht, d'Overyssel, et de Groennige, et dominateur en Asie et en Afrique.

A tous ceux qui ces presentes verront salut. Receu avons l'humble supplication et requete d'Albert Odonel Conte de Tirconel, de nostre Conseil de Guerre, chevalier de l'ordre de Alcantara, et maitre de camp d'un terce d'infanterie Irlandoise, contenant, que le Comte de Tirconel son pere auroit soustenu guerre contre le Roy d'Angleterre, tenant le party de la Sainte Eglise, et le notre, jusques a ce que les herectiques demeurans maitres, il fut constraint avec ses parens, et alliez, de quitter sa patrie, biens, et commoditez, qui furent aussytot confisquees, et estant le suppliant alors seulement d'age de deux ans, auroit este mesne en ces pays, ou il auroit passe le cours des escolles et puis apres servy de Menin a Madame la serenissime Infante ma tres chere et tres amee bonne Tante, et ayant attainct de pouvoir porter les armes auroit eu une compagnie de Chevaux et servi avec icelle jusques a mois de Febrier mil six cent trente deux, que l'aurions pourveu dudit terce, qu'il auroit leve a ses propres despens, et mesne d'Irlande pardeca avec grand travail, s'estant



depuis allie avec la fille du Conte de Bossu, a intention de vivre et mourir en notre service en ces pays, suppliant qu'en ceste consideration il nous pleust le naturaliser, pour pouvoir jouyr des mesmes privileges et immunitiez, dont sont accoustumez de jouyr nos propres et naturels suietz.

Scavoir faisons que nous ayants considere, inclinans favorablement a la supplication et requete dudit Conte de Tirconel, suppliant, l'avons admis. et receu, admettons et recevons de notre autorite souveraine et grace espediale par ces presentes au nombre de nos bons et fidels suisjectz, lui octroyant, et permettant, que non obstant qu'il est originaire et natif d'Irlande, il puisse, et pourra continuer sa demeure et residence es pays de nostre obeyasance seurement et paisiblement, tout ainsy que faire il pourroit s'il en estoit originairement natif, et comme tel y jouyr des mesmes droicts, privileges, franchises et immunitiez, dont jouyssent et sont accoustumez de jouyr noz propres et naturels suiets, et aussi acquerir licitement, et posseder des biens meubles, ou immeubles, mesmes y tenir, et deservir tous les estats et offices que luy pourront cy apres estre conferez selon sa qualite et profession. Auquel effect l'avons habilite et naturalise, habitons et naturalisons par ces presentes, Pourveu qu'il se contienne, et conduise en tout et par tout comme nostre bon et fidel suiet, sans choisir a l'advenir autre party que le nostre, ny jamais faire, dire, ou procurer directement, ny indirectement aucune chose prejudiciable a nous, nos pays, seigneuries et bons suiets.

Surquoy il sera tenu faire le serment de fidelite en tel cas requis, et accoustume, es mains de nostre tres cher et feal Messieurs Pierre Roose, chevalier de nostre Conseil d'Estat, et Chef President de nostre Conseil Prive, que commettons a ce, et luy mandons que le dit serment fait, il, et tous autres nos Justiciers, Officiers, et suiets que ce regardera, facent, souffrent, et laissent le dit Impetrant, de nostre presente grace, permission, et octroy de naturalisation, plainement y paisiblement jouyr, et user, selon et en maniere dite, sans luy faire, mettre, ou donner, ny souffrir estre fait, mis, ou donne, ores, ny a l'avenir, aucun trouble, destourbier, ou empeschement au contraire. Car ainsy plaist il. En temoignage de ce, nous avons fait mettre nostre scel a cest presentes, donnees en nostre ville de Bruselles le vingt deuxiesme jour du mois de Mars, l'an de grace mil six cent trentetrois, et de nos regnes le tresiesme. Roose vidit. Par le Roy en son Conseil. Prats.

Dorso : Au jourdhuy deuxiesme de Mars 1634 Messieurs Albert Odonel Comte de Tirconel, denomme au blancg de ceste a fait le serment dont il est charge par ledit blancg en notres mains de Messieurs Pierre Roose chevalier, du Conseil d'Estat du Roy, et Chef Pesident du Conseil prive de Sa Maieste prenome. Donoy present. Holonia.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>This document, with the preceding one, was transcribed when it was in the archives at Merchants' Quay, Dublin, and it should now be in the archives at Killiney. It has not so far been located there.



11. 1634. Aug. 25. Westkapelle. A copie of an Irish letter translated to English being sent by Oen Oneill. I have written lately unto you and have noe newes but that we are like to have warre with Fraunce. A nother thinge I would lett you understand, Preston of Gormanston his sonne is goeing over instantly after getting his patent from Prince Thomas. Knowe you what good he would doe you or me ; yf he could doe us good, doe you what you can with ye Deputy, that noe body that did promise either to you or me, shall goe with him. And Knowe you it is uppon the licence I gott that he meanes to bringe over his men. I doe desire you of all kindness to doe all these things that I have written to you as neere as you can, make your selfe what hast you can to come over for indeed I am mightiely troubled and have fewe to assist me and many that gett things here ought not to gett them more then you ought. And these people that getts profitts here you shall gett it as soone as they, and tell to all our freinds what that man would have done to either our selves or cuntry. I doe heare that Sr Peirce Crosby is bringing over a regiment and that he has every thinge ready from the people. I could wish he had written to me. I doe assure you what I would doe for you or to my brother I would have done for him to gett him good quarters, and all things for his good I would doe it for him ; moreover for Donnogh O'Duire I doe desire you to doe him what good possible you can for I have a good opinion that he will bring a good company wth him. And if you have ever a patent left give it him. I doe marvaile that the Deputy doeth wth ye patents he hath. And if he have noe busines wth it, gett it of him if you can, and give it to Donagh. Remember my love to my cossen. Your owne freind till death Don Eug<sup>o</sup> Oneill. From West Capple this 25th of August 1634. Central Library Sheffield, Strafford letters 14 (162).

12. 1635. May 7. Diest. An attestation in favour of Don Melchior de Burgo, by Albert Hugh O'Donnell, Earl of Tyrconnell. I Albert Hugo O'Donnell, Earl of Tyrconnell, Baron of Leffir, Lord of Sligeach, and of Lower Connaught, Gentleman of his Majesty's Chamber, of the Order of Alcantara, Colonel of a regiment of Irish infantry for his Majesty in these States, testify that both by the report of persons worthy of belief, as by the particular acquaintance I have of Don Melchior de Burgo, disbanded ensign, I know that his father, uncles, his grandfather and his family, being of the most noble and powerful Lords of the province of Connaught, served first in Ireland in the war along with my father and uncles, which was carried on there for the Catholic cause, and afterwards served his Catholic Majesty in these parts, at great cost to their lives and estates, and as regards those who have served in these States, they did so in important posts and with grants from his Majesty ; and that the said Don



Melchior has served his Majesty valiantly and faithfully these twenty six years, to the particular satisfaction of his superiors, as his testimonials show, having been present at the most notable engagements which have taken place in all Upper and Lower Germany, in the regiment of Don Guillermo Verdugo, in which he took part in the general engagement at Prague, the invasion of Moravia, the rout of Brunswick, in the fighting near Frankfort, the relief of Presburg, the battle of Floru with Mansfelt and Brunswick, the siege of Bergues-op-Zoom, and later at Breda, Aloseyn, and Speier, and in many other places, both in the said regiment and in others, until he passed over to my regiment in the year 1632 as ensign of a company of his brother Don Juan de Burgo, who at present is lieutenant-colonel at Treves; and lately the said Don Melchior, weighed down with years and wounds, and unable to take part in any campaign, has gone over to the regiment of Tyrone and the garrison at Ostend. By reason of all which, he merits the favour which his Majesty and his most serene Highness shall be pleased to show him; and in testimony thereof, at his request, I give him this present, signed by my hand and sealed with the seal of my arms. Dated at Diest the 7 May 1635. Seal. Alberto Conde de Tyrconnell. Spanish. Archives Dún Mhuire, Louvain Papers, J. 2.

13. 1635. July 6. Louvain. Colonel Thomas Preston to Wentworth. Right honourable. my very good Lord. I have deferred writing any news to your Lordship since the dismal overthrow of Prince Thomaso by the French army above Namur, in hope I should be able to relate some other good news, advantageous to the King of Spain's service, which since that time happened, wherein your Lordship's servant was interested. That unfortunate meeting of Prince Thomaso with the French cannot deserve the name of a battle, it was carried in that confusion, and to this hour we scarce know how it begun or ended, howsoever our folkes were beaten and lost the field, baggage and artillery, our Horse after the first charge fled and forsook our Foot, the number of men killed and wounded did not exceed fifteen hundred. Had the battle been delayed some three or four hours longer, I with my fresh men had been there, having my order to that effect; but God hath I hope preserved me for a more fortunate enterprise. The French after this marched to Maestricht, and united they were to the Prince of Orange his army, which being thus joined they marched into Brabant and came to the town of Tilmont, which they took up in an assault, motion of accord being a foot. What cruelty, outrage, and impiety was there committed is beyond expression. They have taken in Arschot and Diest without resistance. Some days after this great army attempted to march towards Brussels, with strong confidence to conquer the whole country, but the bulk of our army marching sideling to it, diverted



this brave and bold enterprise, then it retired back and lodged itself upon the 23d of June near the city of Louvain, where by order of his Altesse, I was sent and three other regiments for the defence of that vast and ill fortified town. The enemy laid siege upon it on the 24th, they were in number hard upon three score thousand, and we were not above four thousand five hundred soldiers. The siege was very hot, valour appearing of either side. It fell to my lot to have the charge of the two ports, against which the trenches and batteries were erected. My poor endeavours were not wanting to advance the King's service, and to purchase myself and my nation honour. I will not inforce my own merits in this occasion, but refer it to the relation of others. This hot play continued for eleven days to the great loss of the besiegers. I have not lost of my whole regiment, hurt and killed, above three score and ten, though we made several bloody sallies. The two brave armies were forced to raise the siege and marched towards Arschot north of Louvain, where as yet they lye in no small danger, the Prince Cardinal's well reinforced army, and thirty thousand Horse and Foot from Germany under the conduct of Picollomini every way endeavouring to intrap them. What will be the end of this tragedy time will discover ; my opinion is that few of the French will ever escape. What further news will happen I will not fail to notify your Lordship.

I cannot forbear to acquaint your Lordship of the ill usage of old Captain Tyrell's son, whose bonds your Honour at my entreaty was pleased to have cancelled, having been formerly himself and his father prisoner for some misdemeanour ; the Father and son have promised to bring here a company for my regiment, to which effect your Lordship gave a warrant for transporting of his men ; he is now gone to Oneill's regiment, by which proceeding I cannot collect my just dealing or fidelity in their behaviour which I leave to your Lordship's consideration to redress. As for the other captains, which did not comply with their obligations and bonds, I beseech your Lordship to do me the favour as that I may have the benefit thereof, so far forth as your Honour shall think to be due. Knowler, *Stafford's letters and dispatches*, I, p. 440.

14. 1635. Oct. 1. Dublin. Wentworth to Preston. Sir. I am both glad you came short of that unfortunate incounter betwixt ye French and Prince Tomaso, and that you had so great a share in your honour regained upon them againe before Louvayn. For I have it from all hands acknowledged that yourself and regiment served there gallantly and with great success . . . I will send for Captain Tirrell and acquaint him how badly his son hath dealt with you, and let him know that if hee doe not soe deale with his sonn as to doe your right, both hee and his sonn shall smart for it, if it lye in my power, as perhaps I am able to show him how it



will. The other captaines that perform not contract with you, if you send over your papers, and that some may be intructed to follow your business, beleeve me you shall have justice speedly and effectually, or any other respect whereby I may show you how truly I am, your faithful freind, Wentworth.<sup>1</sup> Central Library, Sheffield, Strafford letters 8 (283).

**15.** 1637. Mar. 29. St Omer. Don Patricio Daniel to Wentworth. Right honourable and my honourable good Lord. I muste acknowledge my selfe thancesfully and much obliged to your honor for your Lordships love and kindness extended and shoven to me at my laste beinge in Irelande, which I doubt not of your honours performance to be manifestly declarede as any of my actions shall desire. And now haveing a desire to retire my selfe into my native countru onely and absolutely during your honours government not withstandinge of my long continuance in this countryes of Fflanders and the Low Countries this 32 yeares servinge from a mere soldier to a sergeant, from a sergeant to an insigne, and from an insigne to a captain, from a captaine to a leutennante collonell or sergeant major, and in expectation of better advancement, dignity and degree, yet not withstandinge all which I purposely intend to set on occations, and retire myself into his Majestys dominions or kingdom of Ireland, and noe less desire for your honours sake and during your gouernment there to whose care I would willingly conduct and reserve myself wholly as an honourable freind, though I came out of Ireland with the admission and leave of my gracious Kinge, Kinge James, and sithence served here as aforesaid, which wilbe redde to yelde your honour an account of all my travayyles sithence on my arrival there with your honours favour to be extended. And now right honourable understandinge of some plantacion to goe forwarde and made in Ireland this summer and especially in the land of Managhane, I shall desire your honors favour therein and soe set downe some alotement of portion of the same to be reserved for me as so your honour shall thincke fitt and convenyent for me to live uppon, to whose tuition and the hopeful expectation of his request to be granted, I rest and ever will remayne your honours most assured ffriend and obedient servant to command Signed : Don Patricio Daniel. St Omer, 29 March 1637.

<sup>1</sup>a. 1635. Oct. 5. Dublin. Wentworth to Juan de Neocolalde. "I am passing glad Colonel Preston and that new Irish regiment have carried themselves so gallantly. Nothing can more content me than that the subjects of either Crown may reciprocally serve each other faithfully and affectionately." Knowler, *Strafford's letters and dispatches*, p. 471

b. Undated. (1635). Juan de Neocolalde to Wentworth. "As for their [the French] presumption and temerity in approaching so near the gates of Brussels, and besieging Louvain, they have well paid for it by their so infamous retreat, which they were forced unto by his Highness; and here I must needs tell your Excellence, that Colonel Preston with soldiers you gave him, though but inexperienced, showed great valour and did singular service in defence of one of the gates of Louvain, beating back the French two several times, and killing some hundreds of them, without any loss to the Irish, who remain very glorious for it." *Ibid.* 469.



Post-script : Fffor newes the Emperour is deade and his sonne king of the Romaniech verry sickly. The Hollanders and the Frenche making of great preparacions for wars the next sumer. Central Library Sheffield, Strafford letters.

16. 1637. Dec. 10. Aire. The will of Captain Patrick Fleming. In the name of the Father, the Sone, and the Holy Ghost. I under written Patrick Fleming, Capten. and sone to Christopher Fleming, Lord Baron of Slaine and brother to William Fleming Lord of Slaine, being sicke of body, yeatt being of perfect censes and memorie doe make me will and testament as followed and for the exequeter of this me sequent will I doe ordain me me (*sic*) brother Thomas and me uncle William Sarsfield.

First I left on the hands of me oncle Mr Nicolas Bernewall the sum of five hondred punde sterling and of that same five hondred itt is me will that me debts be first payd, and first to Father Geillis tree score pound wich he as me brother Thomas can testify has lent me in Brussells.

Ittem that me debts be al payd in Arass, Lovaine, and Quisnoy, as me brother Thomas and Fr Geills wil ordain me brothers, and that me broother Thomas and Fr Geills if they feind that I am bound in conseinte, make me broothers pay Geratt Cusak and Patrick Carvillan the monys they chalanche me broother Thomas with ; also that if thear be anie of me sholdiers that chalences me with right that me broothers give them satisfaction, and if it be the will of almighty God to call me outte of this world I leave me body if itt can be conveniently transported to be buried in Lovain in the monasterie of St Antoin de Padua ; if nott lett me be buried at the English nuns, or in the great church of Aier, me brother James, and Laurence being obliged to pay for all the charges of me buriall ; and after all this be done me will is that me brother James and Laurence gett all the rest of the above-mentioned some of five hundred pound to them selves only that they shall be obliged to pay Fether Geills ten pound yearly during his leiff and after his death that these ten pounds shall be given outte for some good use ; also that of the next monys that come to me from the King ten pound be given to me foster broother James Duff and twealve patacons to William Hapiny ; and that in case muster will come bfor sholdiers be payd, I leave me wagon and the rest of my goods to pay James Duff and William Hapiny ; as for the hondred pound which lieth on my uncle James his hands I leave them alsoe to me broother James and Laurence conditionally that they give ten pound to me broother Thomas, and me broother William. This was dome and writtin I being of good memorie, in the presence of the under-named persons, and me pastor he being called to itt.

This was written in Aier in Artois the tentt of December 1637. P. Fle. Present at date of this. Dn Rich. Nugent. Gelasius Govan, proprius pastor. Present att the writing heer of. James Duff.



Dorso : Testamentum Capitanei Patricii Fleming, 1637. Archives, Dún Mhuire, Killiney, D.I., pp. 189-91.

17. 1639. Jan. 20. Arras. Don Patricio Daniel to Wentworth. Right honorable. I have received your honours letters wherein your honor expresses himself most nobly in all respectes, which I cannot but allwaies acknowledge my self much obliged to your honor in all poincts wherein I may doe your honor any service to the uttermoste of my power. And with all and as well have undertaken my selfe to observe your honors directions and commande. Your honor knoweth well that his Majesty of England and the Counsell at my laste beinge in Ireland the allowance and toleracion of his Majesty was for the levinge of men there for the supplinge and straighthen of the towe regements that have been made upp allready heere in Flanders. Soe it is right honorable that his excellency the Prince Cardinall hath been pleased to grante me a pattente for the makinge upp of a regemente which makes me to intimate you honor thereof, not doubting but that your honor will extende me all favors in the furtherance of my said affaires and proceedinges herein as to your honor shall thincke convenynte levinge to my owne particular. The manadging of all which I refferr to your honors better considerance and care of him that is and ever wilbe your honors most faithful frend and servant to command Don Patricio Daniel. Central Library, Sheffield, 18/168+r.

18. 1640. Dec. 18. Ostend. Mauricio Geraldin, formerly lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of the Earl of Tyrconnell for his Majesty etc. I hereby certifie, as I am informed by persons worthv of credence, and by his superiors, that I know that Don Melchior de Burgo, who is a disbanded ensign of the company of Captain John de Burgo, served his Majesty for the term of twenty six years in these parts in many different places, as in Italy, Bohemia, the whole of Upper Germany, and in these States, and was present at all the engagements which took place in those parts during the time mentioned, as his papers bear witness. And as the company of the said John de Burgo was disbanded, and he was unable to serve or march on campaign on account of his age and infirmity, he came to my company, I being captain in this garrison of Ostend until my company was handed over to my son Captain Gaspar Geraldin; and also since Captain de la Hoyd succeeded to it, and afterwsrds Captain Don William Butler, this being the company which he commands at present; wherein the said Don Melchior has continued his services, always a much honoured and greatly distinguished soldier, with great precision . . . and has rendered a very good account of everything entrusted to him, on all occasions which have presented themselves; for which reason he has deserved the favour which his Majesty may be pleased to show him; and at his request I have given him this present attestation, signed by my hand and sealed



with the seal of my arms, in the town and port of Ostend, this 18 of the month of December of the year one thousand six hundred and forty. Signed : Mauricio Geraldin. Seal. Spanish, Archives, Dún Mhuire, Killiney, Louvain Papers, J. 2.

19. The House of Commons and recruiting in Ireland for Spain. Veneris, 30 die Julii, 1641. Reasons for the stay of the sixteen thousand men intended to be sent into Spain.

Some of the reasons that induce the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled to desire the stay of the sixteen thousand men intended to be here levied for the King of Spain's service.

1. That information hath been made to his Majesty to the disadvantage of this kingdom, that there were not enough men therein to maintain agriculture and manufacture, and that divers disaffected persons have divulged the same in foreign parts, the opinion whereof will be much advanced if this kingdom shall be disfurnished of such a considerable number of able men, whereby occasion may be given to the enemies of our quiet to invade, where they shall expect no resistance.

2. That the King of Spain, though now in amity with his Majesty, yet is descended of a grandfather that had an aim at the conquest of this kingdom, which he discovered by several hostile invasions by him made into the same, and by his continual fomenting and supporting of rebellions here ; and upon interruption of friendship, if that kingdom revive that quarrel, he might fight against us with our own forces.

3. The King of Spain entertains already all the persons attainted by the Parliament here, *undecimo* of his late Majesty King James his reign ; upon divers of whom he usually confers the command of the Irish that repair to his service ; and takes upon him likewise the liberty to give titles of honour here of places within this realm, as Prince of Ulster, Marquess of Mayo, Earl of Desmond, Earl of Beerhaven, and the like ; the power of conferring which is a prerogative and flower of the Imperial Crown of this kingdom, solely belonging to his Majesty King Charles, and his successors ; and therefore it is considerable how fit it will be to disarm ourselves, and to arm him.

4. Though the colonels and captains now intended to command the soldiers laboured to be here levied be men of known merit, loyalty, and integrity, yet they may be moved by the chance of war, whereunto they will be daily exposed, and then the command of the common soldiers may be conferred upon some of the said attainted septs, who in hope to recover their justly forfeited inheritance, are apt to draw the needy unsettled soldier to embrace any motive to return home to their native country, to divide the spoils of it among them ; and if such a mischance do happen, they in their return may be so many spies and guides.

5. The interests of the House of Austria are known to be interwoven : his Majesty now declares his resolutions in reinvest-



ing his nephew the Prince Elector in his hereditary rights by arms, if the treaty now on foot take not the wished effect ; if the King of Spain be not now assisted from hence, Portugal, Catalonia, and his other engagements will hold him imployed, and divert his forces from assisting the Emperor and Duke of Bavaria against the Prince Elector, and the supplies to be sent with him ; if this army be suffered to go to Spain, his designs against Portugal, Catalonia, and other his enemies, will be at least much favoured and facilitated ; and means shall be given him with our men to oppose our King's own forces.

6. The subsidies lately granted to his Majesty were all expended in training eight thousand of the said men ; and experience teaches us that upon conclusion of a general peace the soldiers, not used to rest and quiet, and diffident of further maintenance, have many times had recourse to settle themselves where they may expect easiest entertainment, and whether our dispeopling may not give them occasion to bend towards us is much to be feared and suspected.

7. The said forces may be employed against Holland, with whom we are in amity, and consequently weaken the Prince of Holland, to whose son and heir apparent the Lady Mary, his Majesty's eldest daughter, is lately married.

8. That these forces being to be employed against Portugal, if they shall meet with that success that in probability they are like to do, then shall the King of Spain his power at sea be much increased, by the accession of the naval strength of Portugal to that of Castile; whereby their Indian fleet shall be secured, to the prejudice of the Hollanders, and advancement of the Imperial and Bavarian designs. *The Journals of the House of Commons of the Kingdom of Ireland etc.*, Dublin, 1796, Vol. I, pp. 276-7.

20. 1641. August 24 to September 9. Old Style. Proceedings in the House of Commons.

1641. August 24. The Lords desire a conference, by a committee of both Houses, so soon as may stand with the conveniency of this House; and 'tis to impart unto them a letter which came by Mr Nicholas as expressing the King's desires concerning the levying of soldiers in Ireland. *Journal House of Commons*, 1641, p. 269.

The House agreed to " Give a present meeting " and on the day following Wednesday, it was decided by the Commons that the report of this conference should be considered on " to-morrow morning at eight of clock." *Ibid.* p. 271, and see p. 274b.

1641. Aug. 28. Resolved, upon the Question, That this House holds it not fit, that there should be any levies of men in Ireland, for the service of the King of Spain. Resolved, upon the Question, That this House holds it fit, that there be a sudden stop made of the ships contracted for the Spanish ambassador, for the transporting of soldiers out of Ireland. Resolved, upon the Question, that this House holds it not fit, nor gives assent, that there should



be any levies of men, for the French King's service, within any of his Majesty's dominions. *Ibid.* p. 274a, and see 275b.

1641. Sept. 8. "And a letter was delivered in from Lord Howard . . . and then said: That the Lord Privy Seal did acquaint us, that the House was very sensible of a complaint made to the King, of both Houses, of stopping the ships to transport these soldiers, which they could not but resent: And said, that what the Spanish ambassador had done, concerning those soldiers, was done without consent of either House to any such thing. And said further, My Lord Newport would acquaint us of a further particular. Who said: that a corporal of his troop, that is lately come out of the North, was spoken unto by the Spanish ambassador, to conduct horsemen to Plimouth, and to have about three pounds a man for it; which he wished us to take notice of, that the Spanish ambassador should take upon him to levy men, here in England, without consent of Parliament . . . Ordered that the committee appointed for the levies shall take into consideration, to make a stop of transporting any horse or foot to Plymouth, Dover, or any other port; And likewise to take into consideration, some way to declare them enemies of the State, that receive entertainment from any foreign ambassador, without consent of the King and Parliament: That there may be a stop made of any soldiers, or Horse, to pass out of any ports of Ireland: and they have power to send for parties that may inform them of the particulars referred unto them.

Ordered. That Sir Jo. Colepeper, Mr Waller, Sir A. Vane, and the Lord Falkland, do forthwith repair two of them to the Spanish ambassador, and two to the French, to know of them by what authority they treat with officers concerning the levies of men and Horse from England . . .

Sir. Jo. Colepeper reports the answer from the Spanish ambassador: That they had spoken with him; and delivered into him, what he, and the other gentlemen joined with him, had in command from the House: His answer was, that, as the condition of the King now stood, he had so much entertainment for soldiers, that he would be glad to entertain soldiers, either English, Irish, or Scotch; That about seven months since, a Colonel came unto him (whose name he knows not) and offered his service for some English soldiers, and said, he hoped the King would grant him a commission: But the Spanish ambassador answered the Colonel, that, till the King had given commission, he would not treat with him." We asked him whether he had treated for any English officers, Horse or Foot, for the supply of the King of Spain? He answered positively, and negatively (after some postures of admiration at the question) that he did not treat with any whatsoever". He did, by his interpreter, desire to speak something himself; but we made a doubt, whether we had commission to hear him, not knowing what subject-matter he might fall upon: yet we conceived we might hear what he said further, so it were



pertinent to the thing in charge. So he proceeded, and said, that he understood the French ambassador desired of the King and Parliament a supply of English soldiers, and that he had made no desire of any; but was so confirmed by the many promises of his Majesty, that he conceived he was in possession of the Irish soldiers; and if they were taken away from him, that that which he had was taken from him." He did use us with a great deal of courtesy and did express all the respect that could be unto this House."

Ordered: That the merchants that are parties to the Charter-party, and the Masters and Owners of the ships, that were appointed to transport Irish soldiers into the King of Spain's dominions, shall be set at liberty to trade with their ships, provided that they give ten thousand pounds security, by their bonds, for every ship, to the Judge of the Admiralty, not to transport any of his Majesty's subjects, as soldiers, out of England, Ireland, or any other part of his Majesty's dominions, to any foreign State, for the service of the King of Spain, or the French King, without his Majesty's consent, by the advice of Parliament. And further ordered, that the customs shall not clear any of those ships, till the Masters or Owners of such ships do bring a certificate under the hand of the Judge of the Admiralty, that they have given in the same security." *Ibid.*

1641. Sept. 9. Lord Falkland reports the answer of the French ambassador . . . When his Majesty was pleased to acquaint both Houses of the desire of the French and Spanish ambassadors to transport forces out of England and Ireland, his Majesty did withal express his gracious resolution, not to consent to those desires without the consent of the Parliament . . . And this being the state of the matter of fact, the Parliament doth no less wonder, and conceives it a high injury to them, that the Spanish ambassador should offer a complaint of them to his Majesty, for the doing of that, which (his Majesty having referred the consideration of the ambassador's desires to Parliament) they could not but do, without manifest breach of their duties, as Counsellors in this to his Majesty's great Council of Parliament, for the reasons following:

1. That the want in which foreign States stand of men is such that great use may be made of them by his Majesty.

2. That the breeding of Irish Papists in a foreign war, may beget danger to that kingdom, and troubles to this; especially serving under the King of Spaine; there being already in his dominions, and in his armies, principal fugitives of that nation, and that in great commands, over a militia of the same. *Ibid.*

The question of the Palatinate and Protestant interests abroad was also raised; and after further discussion both Houses passed resolutions embodying the sentiments expressed above, "This ordinance to continue and be in force, but to the first of November next." *Ibid.*, pp. 284-6.



21. 1642. Apr. 2. Louvain. Fr John Colgan O.F.M. to Fr Luke Wadding O.F.M. Since the beginning of the troubles at home I have already written two or three times to your paternity, and sent the more reliable news about them. In the meantime however I have received no answer. I have not ceased on this account from writing to you occasionally, especially the news I have heard from others, in particular from Fr. Hugh de Burgo, our commissary. I now send you the news which seems more reliable, as I think Fr. Hugh is not in Brussels, or in any other place from which he can write to you conveniently. And in the first place I send you the laws and regulations made by the principal men of the kingdom concerning this war for the faith, or rather for the administration of the kingdom while the war lasts. These laws are indeed most necessary, and in my opinion, most prudent and useful; for if they are observed I do not doubt but that this very difficult war, of which the outcome would be otherwise very doubtful, will be brought to a successful issue. They were printed in the first instance at London, which may surprise you; but this was done lest the people might be excited against the King, as being favourable to the Irish enterprise. They have been printed again at Louvain, in a Latin translation, with the omission of some things which would not have sounded well to foreigners. I enclose a copy of each edition. For the rest, the affairs of the country proceed rather favourably, as can be inferred especially from these laws; for all the leading Catholics of the country, with the exception of a few whose heirs or nearest relations are held prisoners in England, and all the Catholic nobles, are firmly united, and are determined to die for the faith and its free exercise. They actually occupy all the cities, towns, castles, forts and other strong places of the kingdom, except Dublin, Londonderry, Coleraine and Knockfergus, and a few other strong places which are in the hands of the heretics. The rumour has often gone around that these too have been occupied; but it is certain that up to 20 March Dublin had not been occupied or even formally besieged, as this is stated in letters from there of a Belgian merchant from Antwerp. Lots of other news is circulated from home, but it is in great part doubtful. The Catholic Army has reached eighty, or as some say one hundred thousand, and they suffer from want of arms, powder, guns and similar munitions necessary for a war of the kind. If a sufficient supply of these could be had, everyone thinks the war would soon be over. Even the English in many letters and newspapers think there is no hope of subduing the Irish except by making an agreement, and peace; against this the Irish should be well on their guard. Everything in England is in a state of great confusion, owing to the differences and dissensions between the King and Parliament, as is borne out by the papers which are being sent to you, and to which I refer for the rest of the news, while commending myself to your prayers. Latin. Original in the archives, Dún



Mhuire, Killiney D. IV, p. 235; published by Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* I, part II, pp. 407-8, with facsimile.

22. 1642. May 18. Brussels. Owen O'Neill to Fr Luke Wadding. Very Reverend Father. I received your paternity's letters, which bear witness to your zeal, already manifest from so many proofs, for the welfare of our country. Would that to be able to help and to wish to do so were one and the same thing, that the result might correspond to the good will. Time is slipping by. Our afflicted country groans and is prostrate, not from her efforts, which she is ready to maintain until death, but from the protracted hope and expectation of help from outside, the timely arrival of which she did not doubt, but sees no sign of its coming. For she did not doubt that if all the other Catholic princes refused their assistance in this affair, nevertheless, the Holy See, from its devotion to religion, would give a helping hand in Ireland's arduous undertaking in defense of the Catholic religion and of justice. For Ireland is aware that not only is it incumbent on the Apostolic See, the official Mistress and propagator of the Catholic religion, to nourish that faith and save it from extinction; but she also by no means forgets that the same Holy See has been the occasion that for many years Ireland has been dependent, both as regards the Catholic religion and also public administration, upon that Power from which, whatever about the State and public administration, she sees not only no assistance, but from day to day nothing but plotting and planning for the final extermination of the Catholic religion. Hence she looks forward every hour to the friendly help of the same Holy See, and doubts not that it will be given, though, groaning as she is under so heavy a burden, she wonders at the delay and bemoans it.

From the letter of Fr Hugh [de Burgo] I have understood that some pious help or subsidy has been sent to France. I would prefer it were sent here, where it could be better spent for the common advantage of our country; for business of this kind could be very well entrusted to Fr Hugh himself to look after. His zeal and prudence would not allow it to be laid out otherwise than the common good would require, and as the donors themselves would wish. But this, and the other things I have mentioned, I leave to the zeal and prudence of your paternity, from whom in such matters I await nothing but what you judge will best promote the common welfare of our country and the glory of God." Latin. Signature only by Owen O'Neill, and the letter itself in the hand of Fr John Colgan. For Latin text, and facsimile, see Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* etc. I, part II, p. 449. The original is in the archives, Dun Mhuire, Killiney, D. IV, p. 395.

23. 1642. June 7. Brussels. Owen O'Neill to Fr Luke Wadding. Very Reverend Father. After having tried many ways, partly in vain, in which there seemed to be some hope of helping our afflicted country, and after greater delay in this than I had



otherwise expected, I have now decided to delay no longer, and not to deprive my country, which I cannot serve in any other way, of my presence. Hence I have made up my mind to commit myself to the dangers of land and sea, that so far as I may, my personal presence may not seem to be wanting. I am now equipped for the boat, along with some gentlemen of my own nation. I wish your paternity farewell, and I express my great thanks to you for your zeal for our country, and for your regard for me personally. I have not thought it proper greatly to urge your reverence to continue to promote her affairs with the Holy See, lest I might seem to question your zeal, to which so many proofs bear witness. All the letters from England, France and Holland, and from Ireland itself, proclaim that everything is going well with the Catholics, and that if they did not labour under the scarcity of powder and the munitions of war, they would already be in possession of the whole country. Oh if His holiness only knew how harassing and fatal this powder would be to heresy and its promoters. There can be no doubt of his anxiety quickly to remedy the want of it. But this we leave to the prudence and zeal of your reverence, and with all devotion we humbly commend ourselves and the condition of our afflicted country to the prayers and sacrifices of yourself and of those subject to you. Brussels, this 7th day of June 1642.

One of the most important things to be recommended, I beg your paternity may be pleased to present to His Holiness the enclosed letters, by which I beg His blessing for myself, and for the others who are fighting for the faith. Latin. Archives, Dún Mhuire, Killiney, D. IV., fol. 479.

24. 1642. August 24. Louvain. Madame Preston to (Fr Hugh de Burgo). Reverend pere. Depuis ma dernier escript jay entendu que *votre Reverence* ce port for mal ce qui maflige fort et me met grandement en peigne a cause des lettre que Monsieur de Preston mon mary vous at envoie pour son *excellence* lesperance que iavois de *votre* retour et cause que iay tan difere decriver *votre reverence* ce que monsieur ma comande de faire touchant la lettre de son *excellence* qui est de vous prier tres humblement de prendre la peigne si *votre* sante le permet daler trouver son *excellence* et luy presenter en person la lettre de *Monsieur* et apres enavoir eux reponce presenter luy sil vous plait une requet de sa part au nom de monsieur afin quil plaise a don *Francisco* denvoier tout se charges pour sen pouvior descharger de tout ce que lon accuse car il ny at rien en sceulx quil ne prouverat estre faulce et il import grandement que le tout soit bien represente car son honneur en depens; ie shuis mary que *votre* absence at este cause que cela na pas este fait plusto et voiant que le temps cepasse sans rein faire de cet afair et que ie nay pas seulement de vos nouvelle iay pris resolution denvoier le porteur de cet pour savoir come *votre Reverence* ce porte et ossy savoir sil vous plairat de prendre la



peugne de porter les dits lettres sil est posible ie vous en suplie tres humblement et ie fero y doner l'argent quil faudra pour *vo*tre voiage; si la sante ne vous le permet point ie vous prier de donner les lettre de *Monsieur* a lalfair Bremeghen pour les porter luy mesme a don Francisco car datendre plus lon temps ie ne puis; le temps ce passe, ce pendant rien ne ce fait de mes affair monsieur cet du tout fie en *vo*tre *Reverence* et ma dit vous masistrie en tout chose, ce que ie vous prie de tou mon coeur en consideration de lafection que monsieur at pour *vo*tre servisse et ossy par charite en mon endrois afin de pouvoir bien to avoir acheve tous mes affair pour aller tan plus trouver mon cher mary, lequel ie vous recomande en vous prier et moy qui suis, reverend pere *vo*tre tres humble servante Marguerite de Namur. de Louvain le 24 August 1642. Archives, Dún Mhuire, Killiney, Louvain Papers, J. 2.

The letter appears certainly to have been written to Fr Hugh de Burgo, but the outer sheet which bore the address is missing.

25. 1642. 16-26 Sept. Owen O'Neill to [Fr Hugh de Burgo]. Your paternity will be surprised, and I do not wonder, that you have not already received letters from me since I left that country [Flanders] but when the reasons are known you will readily see that this was not due to carelessness on my part, but to the fact that it could not be helped. After the many hardships and sufferings usually endured by those who travel by sea, especially in these northern parts, I arrived in this kingdom, in a port of Tyrconnell which is called Lough Coyte, expecting to find rest and quiet there after the fatigue of the sea. But the opposite was the case, for the country not only looks like a desert, but like hell, if there could be a hell upon earth; for besides the sterility, destruction, and bad condition it is in, the people are so rough and barbarous and miserable that many of them are little better in their ways than the most remote Indians. I found myself in great danger there, until after much delay my cousin Don Felim came with some others to take me from there, and I came to these parts, where the difference in the country from what we were told in Flanders is such that unless I saw it I would not believe it; for on both sides there is nothing but burning, robbery in cold blood, and cruelties such as are not usual even among the Moors and Arabs; all the buildings thrown down to the ground; no obedience among the soldiers, if one call men soldiers who behave nothing better than the animals; powder and arms are wanting, so that if I had not come with the little help I brought, this province would already have succumbed; for they are so disheartened and are in such a state of disagreement (not being able since to collect a thousand pounds of powder in the whole kingdom) that they all fled together through the mountains to Connaught, in which province there is the same danger and fate awaiting them all. But with my arrival they recovered somewhat the hope they had lost. I am



killing myself bringing them to some order and discipline, so as to be able to withstand the enemy, who are in possession of the strongest and best fortresses of this province, in which also they have five armies, the greater part of which General Lesly is assembling so as to put an end to everything. God send us help and succour, otherwise we are lost, and it is to this that we must attribute the fact that we have been able to hold out up to the present. Immediately after my arrival I wanted to go to Kilkenny, but all the clergy together with the nobility insisted so much that I should take over the government of this province, which for the reasons already mentioned, and on account of the bad government introduced by Don Felis, more through ignorance than malice, is in danger of not being restored.

I sent your letters, with one of my own, along with the Bull, to the person to whom they were directed. Of Connaught the same can be said as of this province, for the English are most powerful there, all the more so since up to the present the Earl of Clanricard has not declared for our side. According to the report current here he is persuaded to act in this way by your paternity's brothers; and this notwithstanding the fact that by general agreement of all the archbishops, bishops, and other prelates of the whole kingdom he has been excommunicated, along with the Bishop of Meath, and others who say that our war is unjust and unlawful. I am told that Colonel Preston reached Munster, where all the arms, munitions and help which reach this country are taken, and where they remain with the gentlemen there, and only what is over is sent to us here, or to those in Connaught; and this, as your paternity can surmise, is not much. Hence I beg of you that the help you send may be directed to one of these two provinces, taking good care of the port they come to, as the greater number of the ports are in the hands of the enemy. And I know that Colonel Preston will be sorry for this, as I am so minded that if God does not send us help soon, I am determined to return there [Flanders] and leave everything here to him. Let your paternity keep to himself everything that has been said, and make nothing known, except to learn yourself how everything is proceeding; for if everything were to be said fully, three days would not suffice me. In Munster, with the help of some pieces which ours got possession of during the fighting, they gained thirty castles in a short time, so that they hold the enemy surrounded there in their strongholds; and with the help of God I would not only do the same speedily in these two provinces, but I dare to say that within three months I would drive out all the English and Scotts who are here, if only I had two large pieces of artillery to batter them down, and four or five field pieces, with sufficient munitions. For the love of God and your country I beg your paternity, with all the earnestness I can, and which absolute necessity demands, to send me these, along with some engineers, at least six mining engineers, and some



petardeers; for with these, and arms for the men who are here, we would put this province in good condition, whereas at present there are only javelins, skeans, and five hundred muskets if as many. In Connaught there is still less, and the whole counties of Sligo and Leitrim are completely laid waste, by the mere passage of cavalry in every place. The enemy, feeble as he is, does not hesitate to make raids, as he knows we have no arms. Moreover, if the town of Galway did not hold out against the fort and the Earl, there is no other force of any importance in those parts. And thus once more I beg your paternity, as before, to have pity on this affliction and misery, and send us the help we wish for, without which nothing is to be expected but own ruin. It would move the most hard hearted to compassion to see the poor gentlemen of Fingall and Meath, driven out of their country into these parts, amongst the mountains and woods, in poor hovels and cabins, where they have all they can do to find a meagre maintenance for their children and wives. So that, as I have said, they all rejoiced at my coming, and they place all their hopes in me, as I myself place all my hope in your paternity for the help I expect you to send me. I most earnestly beg your paternity to inform Don Francisco de Mello of everything, to see if there be any remedy by which to help us, or from His Holiness, that he may favour us, as Father of our afflicted country; for I again assure you that if the help we hope for does not come quickly, you will soon see me there in person; for it is not right that I should seek to ruin myself, and the reputation I have won by the services I have rendered during my whole life. Let your paternity commend me to God, and may He keep you as I desire, Oneillan, 16 September 1642 old style. Signed: Don Eugenio Oneill. Spanish. Archives of St Isidore's College, Rome, W.2.8.

**26.** 1652. July 7-17. London. Propositions of the Spanish ambassador to the Council of State. Don Alonso de Cardenas, of his Catholic Majesty's Council of State and his ambassador to the Parliament of the Republic of England states that on the 7-17 June last he wrote to the honourable Council of State, asking the Council to be pleased to grant his Catholic Majesty the number of Irishmen the Council thought appropriate, and to name some gentleman of the Council with whom he could confer about the details of the levy, and the transportation of the said men to the dominions of his master the King. And whereas you have been named for this purpose, he proposes and desires, first that he may have licence to raise in Ireland and transport to the dominions of the King his master that number of Irishmen which the honourable Council of States judges appropriate, which the greater it is the greater will be his Majesty's obligation. The said ambassador likewise desires and requests the Council to do him the favour of granting freedom to Major-General Don Hugo Oneill, at present a prisoner in the Tower of London, in considera-



tion of the fact that he was born in Flanders and is his Majesty's subject (and as the said ambassador is informed and believes) had no part in the early doings of the insurrection in Ireland, or in the excesses then committed, and whereas he will be very useful in facilitating the said levy should he be given charge of a section of it, as he will be should the Council grant him the said favour, since on account of his experience during the war and his relationship with many of that nation, it is thought that he will be able to procure a large number of those people; and should the ambassador receive this favour, he offers to give his word that neither the said Major-General O'Neill nor the Irishmen who shall be levied and transported to the dominions of the King his master will take up arms against the Republic of England. *Thurloe Papers* I, p. 212. Spanish.

27. 1660. Nov. 30. His Majesty's gracious declaration for the settlement of his kingdom of Ireland, and satisfaction of the several interests of Adventurers, Souldiers, and other his subjects there.

XXV. And whereas divers persons, for most of whom a provision is made by this our declaration, have for reasons known unto us, in an especial manner merited our grace and favours; particularly the earl of Clanricard, the earl of Westmeath, the earl of Fingal, the earl of Clancartie, the lord viscount Gormans-town, the lord viscount Mountgarret, the lord viscount Dillon, the lord Viscount Taaffe, the lord viscount Ikerryn, the lord viscount Nettervil, the lord viscount Galmoy, the lord viscount Mayo, the lord baron of Dunboyne, the lord baron of Trimlestown, the lord baron of Dunsany, the lord baron of Upper Ossory, the lord Bermingham, baron of Athunry, the lord baron of Strabane, Colonel Richard Butter, Sir George Hamilton, knight and baronet; Sir Richard Barnewel, baronet; Sir Redmund Everard, baronet, Sir Valentine Brown, knight; Sir Thomas Sherlock, knight; Sir Dermot O Shaghmussey, knight; Sir Daniel O Bryon, knight; Colonel Christopher O Bryan, Mr Richard Belling, son to Sir Henry Belling, knight; Righard Lane of Tulske, esquire; Mr Edmund Fitzgerald of Balymalo, Mr Thomas Butler of Kilconel, Mr — Macnamara of Creevagh, Mr David Powre of Kilbolane, Mr Donnogh O Calaghane of Clonmeen, Mr James Copinger of Cloghane in the county of Cork, Mr George Fitzgerald of Ticrohane, Mr Barnard Talbot of Rathdown and Conly Geoghegan of Donore, We do hereby declare that they and every one of them, without being put to any further proof, shall be restored to their former estates, according to the rules and directions in the last foregoing clause of this our declaration, concerning such as continued with us or served faithfully under our ensigns beyond the seas, many of whose names hereafter follow *viz.*

The lord viscount Muskry, colonel; lieutenant colonel Legg; serjeant major Edward Scott.



Captain John O Neile of Carrick, in the county of Tipperary; Captain Terence Bryan, of Palace Greeny, in the county of Limerick; Captain Teige Mac Carty, for mortgage only in the county of Cork; Captain Daniel Boy O Donovane of Killcellman, in the said county; Captain Edmund O Murriane of Dulish Murrian, in the county of Tipperary; Captain John White of Loyhall, in the county of Limerick; Captain Daniel O Keef of Drumagh, in the barony of Dullhally, and county of Cork; Captain Philip Barry of Dunbagy, in the said county; Captain Thomas Broun of the baronies of Bear and Bantry, in the counties of Cork and Kerry; Captain Francis Hacket of Dully, in the county of Tipperary; Captain Charles O Shiell, in the county of Antrim; Captain Daire Dannan of Davanstown, in the barony of Fermoy and county of Cork; Captain Dermot O Brien of Carrickeouquis, in the county of Clare; lieutenant Pierce Walsh; lieutenant Richard Barry of Robertstown, in the barony of Barrimore and county of Cork; lieutenant Dermot O Murraine of the county of Tipperary; lieutenant Edward Mandeville of Ballyyne, in the county of Tipperary; lieutenant Daniel O Driscoll of Carbury, in the county of Cork; lieutenant Tieve O Cullaine, *alias* Totave in the county of Cork; ensign Morris Fitzgerald of Ballynemart, in the said county; ensign George Cumerton of the county of Kilkenny. ensign Walter Butler of Shan-bally-duff, in the county of Tipperary; ensign Pierce Quirk, and William Quirk of the said county; ensign John Mac Teige, *alias* Mac Teige of Carbury; ensign Pierce Duff Butler in the county of Tipperary; ensign Butler of Barnane, in the said county; ensign Miles Roach of the county of Cork, and barony of Fermoy; ensign Philip Hogan of Holly in the county of Tipperary; ensign Turlagy O her of Balline, in the county of Clare; Owen Oge Mac Egan of the county of Cork, adjutant.

XXVI. The lord Castle Connell of the county of Limerick; Colonel Charles Mac Carty Rieagh of Kilbretan, in the county of Cork; Colonel Richard Fitzgerald of Balenamartery, in the said county. Colonel Cornelius O Driscoll of Donesaide, in the said county; lieutenant-colonel William Butler of Ballisoqui; captain William Barry of Ringquaran, in the county of Cork; captain Piers Nagle of Monaneme, in the said county; captain Arthur O Kinife of Glanifriacan, in the said county; captain Owen Mac Carty, of Gloccere, in the said county; captain Edmond Cuiny of Massanglashy, in the said county; captain Charles Mac Carty of Cloncalaih, in the said county; captain Dermot O Shinan of the county of Limrick; captain Edmund Power of Intch in the county of Cork; captain John Fox of Baligaden, in the county of Limerick; captain Michael Morisey of the county of Clare; captain Dermot O Sullivan of Kilmalac, in the county of Kerry; lieutenant Derm. O Sullivan of Fermoyle, in the said county; lieutenant Richard Stapleton of Lynestowne, in the county of Tipperary; lieutenant



James Purcel of Knockinroe, in the said county; lieutenant Henry Wies of —, in the county of Waterford; lieutenant Garret Fitzgarret of Lickfour, in the county of Kerry; ensign George Shaie of Kilkenny; ensign Philip Hogane of Aylehie, in the county of Tipperary; ensign Moilmory O Holy of the county of Armagh; ensign Daniel O Donman of Forneise, in the county of Cork; ensign Donee O Culan of Baly Coursy, in the said county; ensign Florence O Driscoll of Ballyhan, in the said county; captain — Gorman; David Bourk of Harmanlahie, in the county of Tipperary.

XXVII. Captain Stephen Butler; ensign Alexander Berne of the county of Roscommon. Colonel William Taaffe; lieutenant Bryan MacDonough of the county of Sleigo; ensign Edward Dillon of the county of Westmeath; lieutenant-colonel James Fitzpatrick; lieutenant John Cassin; ensign Edmund Brenane; major Owen O Conner of Ballynagare, in the county of Roscomon; lieutenant Walter Costelloe of the county of Mayo; Ensign Daniel O Conner of the same county; captain Walter Hope of Molingare; lieutenant Terlogh MacDonogh of the county of Sleigo; ensign Christopher MacDonnogh of the same; captain Gerald Ferall; lieutenant Charles Mac Donnel; ensign Richard Farral; captain Charles O Molloy; lieutenant Edmund O Molloy; ensign Alexander MacDonnel; captain Edward Sarsfield; lieutenant James Enis; ensign Phellem Dempsey; captain Brian Fitz-Patrick; lieutenant Jeffrey Fitz-Patrick; lieutenant Myles Bermingham; ensign Connor Mac Gwier; Captain Hugh O Conner Dun of Balin-Tober; lieutenant Robert Misset; ensign John Ferral; the lord Viscount Iveragh; lieutenant Henry Tute; ensign Phellim Curtaine; captain Walter Phillips of Clunmore; ensign Hugh O Conner; captain Gerald Dillon of Portlech; lieutenant John Dillon; ensign Robert Dillon; captain Mathew Mooney; lieutenant John Flanelly; ensign Owen Sullivane; adjutant Roger Brenane; adjutant John Dillon; Anthony French, judge advocate; Sir Ullick Bourk, knight and baronet of Glinsk, in the county of Galway; captain Fra. Berne of Rodin in the county of Roscommon; captain Hugh Oneile of the province of Ulster; Captain Phelim MacGenid, of the said province; captain Hugh Omiagnine; captain Theobald Dillon of Bracklon in the county of Roscommon; Captain Mortagh Clancy of Castlekeale, in the county of Clare; captain Cun O Neile of Ardgonel in the county of Armagh; lieutenant William Bourke of Turlagh, in the county of Mayo; lieutenant John Mac Donagh of Cusca, in the county of Sleigo; captain John Casey; lieutenant Brian MacGenis of the province of Ulster; ensign Brian MacGenis of the said province; ensign Lowys Mac Dowel of the county of Roscommon; ensign Thomas Birne of the said county; ensign William Talbot of Hagertown, in the county of Lowth ensign; Roger O Malreanin of Tully Mulreanin in the county of Roscommon; ensign Owen O Keny of Clanboren in the county of Galway; lieutenant Patrick Clenton of the county of Lowth;



lieutenant Michael Mac Donagh of Coloony, in the county of Sleigo; Charles; O Flyne of Celtabar, in the county of Roscommon; Nicholas Walsh, esquire, of Traly, in the county of Kerry; Francis Coghlane of Belclare in the King's county; Henry Birne of Dangan, in the county of Roscomon. Patrick Mac Gwire of Balykilyun, in the county of Ineskilyn; John Brady of the county of Cavan; colonel Richard Grace; lieutenant-colonel Charles Molloy; col. Wil. Bourk; captain Stephen Molloy; captain John Caroll; captain Neal Morris; captain William Dulany; captain Edmund Bourke; captain Owen Flattery; captain Walter Walsh; captain Walter Butler; captain Teige Carol; Captain Gerrot Aylmer; captain William Mac Redmund Bourk; captain Theobald Butler; captain William Stapleton; captain Philip Kennedy; captain James Devin; captain Art Molloy; lieutenant Patrick Dallachanty; lieutenant John Molloy; lieutenant Brian Flattery; lieutenant Alexander Dalton; lieutenant John Mac Gerrot Molloy; lieutenant Symon Coghlane; lieutenant Daniel Kennedy; lieutenant Edward Molloy; lieutenant Nicholas Sweetman; lieutenant James Hynane; lieutenant Oliver Grace; lieutenant James Cummerford; lieutenant Thurlogh Carrol; lieut. John Molloy, lieutenant William Fogurthy; ensign Anthony Goffe; ensign Fannagh Molloy; ensign William Tute; ensign Christopher Russel; ensign Owen Gilmer; ensign Richard Cuddy; ensign Daniel Higgin; ensign William Carrol; ensign John Fitz Patrick; ensign Eneas Reardon; ensign — Kelly; ensign Piers Walle; ensign John Pyndergast; ensign Teige Carrol; ensign Thomas Butler; Col. Hoyle Walsh of Arderry in the barony of Iverke, in the county of Kilkinny. Col. William Brown of Ballrankan in the county of Wexford; major Oliver Fitzharryes in the county of Limrick; captain Robert Walsh of Borredstown in the baronie of Knocktofer in the countie of Kilkeny; captain Therlagh Molloy in the barony of Balyboy in the King's County; Captain Nicholas Plunket of Dunsoghly; lieutenant John Meagher of Grange in the barony of Ikerin, in the county of Tipperary; Henry Rochford of Kilbred in the county of Kildare; Colonel Lewis O Farrol; Sir Connel Farol of Tirliekin in the county of Longford, knight; lieutenant-colonel captain Terence Feral, of the county of Longford; captain Faghna Feral, of the said county; captain Charles Kelly, of Skyrne, in the county of Roscommon; captain John Mac Rory Farel of the county of Longford; Charles Farel of the said county; captain Jasper Tute, of the county of Westmeath; lieutenant Fariagh O Hanly of Slewbane, in the county of Roscommon; lieutenant Morogh O Flaherty of Uman, in the barony of Balenehenzez, in the county of Galway; captain Bryan Lennan, of Fale, in the county of Antrim; lieutenant Con Mac Gennis, of Iveagh, in the county of Down; ensign Andrew Fallon of Miltown, in the county of Roscommon; captain Teige O Flaherty; Colonel George Cusack; Colonel Piers Lacy of the Broof, in the county of Limrick; Captain



James Waldon; lieutenant John Talbot of Belgard in the county of Dublin; Master Christopher Russel of Seaton, in the same county; Mr William Talbot of Haggerstown, in the county of Lowth; Mr Thomas Cusack of Carick in the county of Kildare; Mr Harold of Kilnekeuge, in the county of Dublin; Captain William Skelton; Terence Molloy of Gortachutrey, in the King's county; James Eustace of Culadin, in the county of Wexford; Arthur Linch, of — in the county of Meath; Roger Duygin of Corr, in the King's county; Lawrence Bellew of — in the county of Lowth. *The Statutes at Large passed in the Parliaments held in Ireland* (1310-1785) Dublin 1786, II, pp. 245 and 256-60.



## NOTES

*These notes do not specifically refer to the matter contained in the same document, but supply further information of practically the same date.*

8. The early section of these papers relates to the regiment of Colonel William Stanley. The following notes concern the history of the formation of the regiment, and the first months of service with the English forces in the Low Countries.

a. 1585. Aug. 10. Elizabeth I decided to send assistance under the command of the Earl of Leicester to the Northern States of the Netherlands in their war against Spain.

b. 1585. Sept. 10. Perrot, Lord Deputy of Ireland, to the Lords of the Council: "If soldiers are wanted for Flanders, he can choose 1,500 [native Irish] to be sent hence, that might do good service there, and be well spared here [in Ireland], 400 good shot." The Perrot Papers', ed. Charles McNeill, in *Analecta Hibernica* (Irish MSS Commission) XII, 1943, p. 28.

c. 1585-6. Perrot to Leicester. Offers to send him 1,000 or 1,500 Irish soldiers, "manie propre shott and the rest hable men for pikes and short weapons, fitt to take pain, swim, live hardlie, and to travell for sodaine attempts. If your Lordship can procure warrant for these men I will send them over." *Ibid.* p. 51.

d. 1586. Dec. 15. Leicester to Mr Secretary Walsyngham. Prays him "to get her Majesty's favour that I may have six hundred or a thousand of Irish idle men, such as be not only in her Majesty's pay, but be very meet to be out of the country. The cause of my desire to have them is for that they are hard, and will abide more pains than our men till they have been well trained with hardness as they have." *Correspondence of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leycester*, ed. John Bruce (London, for the Camden Society, 1848) p. 26.

e. 1585-6. Feb. 7. Leicester disappointed that "her Majesty would not allow the Irish soldiers to come hither; her Majesty should not have been at a penny charge for them." *Analecta Hibernica* No. 12, 'Perrot Papers', p. 50.

f. 1586. Mar. 20. Secretary Walsyngham to Leicester. "I find her [the Queen] disposed to like that certain cashed bands in Ireland, upon doubt that they will put her to some charge there, shall be translated to the Low Countries, so it may be done without her burden." *Dudley correspondence*, p. 179.

g. 1586. Mar. 21. Sir Thomas Shirley to Leicester. "Her Majesty is pleased that your Lordship shall have one thousand men, and perhaps more, out of Ireland." *Ibid.* p. 180. Arrangements for recruiting and transporting the men out of Ireland were left to Leicester. *Ibid.* p. 180.



h. Leicester had already chosen the officers in December, and early in April Stanley had returned to Ireland from the Low Countries, and recruiting appears to have begun at once. *S. P. Foreign* 1585-6, p. 498, Leicester to Burghley, Utrecht, 29 March 1587. See Leicester to Walsyngham, 5 April 1586. *Dudley correspondence*, p. 219.

i. For the costs of recruiting see *ibid.* pp. 219, 237, 250, 278. The final settlement appears to have been: "Sir William Stanley shall have about xxxs., if it can it shall be xls., for every man he brings out of Ireland, and if you help him with vcli besides that you have imprestid him, it shall also be paid here as you shall appoint." Leicester to Walsyngham, 3 May 1586. *Ibid.* p. 257.

j. 1586. July 11. Leicester to Walsyngham. "Sir William Stanley, as the Lord Deputy and Secretary doe advertyse me, have been greatly hyndered and crossed by dyvers malytyowse and sedytyows brutes geven out in that realme, in the levye of the 1,000 men, as though there were an intent and meaning to bring them to the butchery. Were yt not that the Deputye doth assyse him to the uttermost of his power he should not, as I am informed, be able to raise halfe the numbre. I hope the westerly wynd will bryng him and his troopes unto your Lordship." *Ibid.* p. 344.

k. 1586. May 8. Hooton. Stanley to Burleigh. "Since my arrival I have travailed to make provision for victuals to be sent to Waterford in Ireland for the thousand men there to be sent by sea to Flushing. Victuals here are very dear, yet far 'better cheap' than in Ireland." *S. P. Foreign* 1585-86, pp. 618-9.

l. 1586. July 12. Chester. Thomas Lynall to Walsyngham. "Sir William Stanley and his soldiers have made sail towards Flanders, with a merry wind. I trust to God they are on the coast by this time. I used all the intelligence therein I could to get hence both victual and shipping for sending of the soldiers away." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1586-8, p. 104.

m. 1586. July 21. Burghley to Leicester. "At the writing hereof Sir William Stanley was come hither, and meaneth with haste to repair to your Lordship, judging that his men are before this time at Flushing." *Dudley correspondence*, p. 360.

n. 1586. Aug. 2. Antwerp. "With their supporters they [the English] made an attack against Gravelines, where the government had an arrangement with the English captain, Lord Stanley, to hand him over the town for a sum of money. Now, when the English captain with six hundred English soldiers arrived before the town last Saturday, and sent in his lieutenant with some men, as he himself was suspicious, the inhabitants of the town killed these soldiers, about fifty in number. So the English captain moved back to Dixmude, where his plans likewise failed." *The Fugger News-letters* 1568-1605. Second series. Ed. Victor von Klarwill, translated by L. S. R. Byrne. London, no date, p. 115.



o. 1586. Sept. 15. Cologne. "These Irishmen are almost all naked and have their bows and arrows with them. They are quick runners, and there are also some hundreds of them who go on stilts the height of a man. They are to walk through the moats surrounding the towns and climb the walls." *Ibid.* p. 116. In a letter from Cologne, 15 Sept., it is stated that the Irishmen numbered 1500. *Ibid.* p. 118.

p. 1586. Oct. 9. Cologne. At the battle of Zutphen "the English lost many of their own troops and others. Amongst them were thirty wild Irish, who looked so strange that the devil himself would fear them. They at once begged to be killed, and not to be taken before the Prince of Parma. So when his Highness had heard this, he proceeded forthwith in person to see and examine them; but they refused to answer his Highness, and as they were found to be ill of the plague, he immediately had them killed like dogs. There are four or five hundred of these Irish over here. Probably now the winter is coming they will go back home, for they are naked savages." *Ibid.* p. 120.

q. "Erant hi Angli plerique [Leicester's troops] ac Scoti, quibus se addiderant, ductore Hiberniae pro-rege, Hiberni mille ac quadringenti, a silvestri omnes genere atque ferino, medio tantum corpore subter umbilicum velati, cetera nudi, gralis seu perticis, quarum usus in trajiciendis amnibus, alte impositi, longe aliis superabant, acubus ac sagittis minaces." *Strada*, De bello Gallico, p. 120.

r. 1586. Oct. 20. Stanley occupies the town of Deventer. See letter of Henry Archer from Deventer, 23 Oct. 1586. *Dudley correspondence*, p. 478.

s. 1587. Jan. 19. Stanley and Captain York hand over Deventer and the fort of Zutphen to the Spaniards, and go over to the Spanish service with ninety officers and 717 men. See Matthews, *Celtic peoples and renaissance Europe*, p. 84.

t. Stanley's men and York's were united to a third group of 200 Catholics, refugee English gentlemen, and a few Scots, making altogether 1,200 officers and men, under the command of Stanley, and became known as Stanley's, or the Irish regiment. See Jennings, 'Irish swordsmen in Flanders,' *Studies*, Dublin, Dec. 1947, pp. 406 ff. For the surrender of Deventer see Simancas, Estado, legajo 292.

u. 1587. Jan. 30. The Privy Council to the Lord Deputy. "We have very lately received advertisement from the Low Countries that Sir William Stanley and Rowland York, the one appointed by my Lord of Leicester to the government of the town of Deventer, a place of great importance upon the Ijssil, the other the commanding of the fort before Zutphen recovered this summer by his lordship, have about the 19th of this present most disloyally and treacherously delivered over the places committed to their several charges into the hands of the enemy, and withal not onely



for their own persons made a most shameful and traitorous revolt and defection, but also seduced and drawn after them divers others of her Majesty's subjects, and namely those Irish bands serving under the said Stanley, to do the like, to the great dishonour and slander of the nation." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1586-88, p. 250.

v. 1587, Mar. 15-25. An award of two shillings current money daily to John Bennyon, who after service in Ireland had served in the Low Countries under Stanley and had become a lieutenant, but had refused to follow him when he revolted. Likewise a yearly pension of 4 shillings Irish a day to Randall Brearton, who had served in the wars in Ireland, and lastly as a captain under Stanley, but "remained a faithful servant unto us". *Patent and Close Rolls Ire.* II, pp. 121f.

w. 1588. Apr. 29. At the muster held on this date of the seven companies of the regiment of Colonel William Stanley, the men numbered 918, and their pay amounted to 78,614 crowns monthly. Simancas, Estado, Negociaciones de Flándes, legajo 594, year 1588, *Relación de lo que monte un mes de sueldo de toda la gente deste exercito etc.*

x. (After 1588). "Eight Englishmen of Stanley's regiment minded to come to England: Sergeant Daire, Father Haddocke, Rowland Smyth, William Harris, Jhon Jhonson, — Matthews, Robert Daniell, Minshewe." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS XIII*, p. 398.

y. 1589. June 1. The Privy Council to the Lord Deputy. Sir William Stanley was outlawed on 1 June last. *C.S.P. Ire.* 1588-9, no. 73.

z. 1591. Oct. 2. Reference to the son of Edward Pentenay, who had served under Stanley but forsook him when he revolted. *C.S.P. Ire.* 1590-2, p. 424. At p. 481, 1592, Apr. 24, mention occurs of "George Cowell, one of the soldiers from Ireland who accompanied Stanley on his expedition abroad, and a priest now in Ireland," stated to be spies.

32. 1. 1590. July 28. Names of such as served in Sir William Stanley's regiment and that are returned home, and are pardoned by her Majesty: Captain Guyn, O. Salisbury, P. Wyn, R. Bellingsle, Lieutenant Matthew Hart, and pensioners T. Reynolds and W. Haynes. *C.S.P. Ire.* 1582-92, p. 358.

33. 1. 1591. Feb. 10-20. From Rome. "Sir William Stanley is here and his regiment still in Flanders, which they say shall be increased with Wallons." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS IV.*, p. 180.

46. a. 1591. Jan. 19-20. Second examination of Christopher Roche. "Being further asked about what other of his countrymen he hath seen in the Duke of Parma's Court, he sayeth that there are few in the Court, but remayn all in the regiment, which is of 5. or 600 men. He sayeth he saw Sir William Stanley at Valenciennes, newly come out of Spain by land and going to the Court." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1592-6, p. 456.



b. 1591. An account made of my life from my first going out of Ireland into France unto this day unto the Right Honourable my Lord Burghley, by me Thomas Finglas. A detailed account by Finglas, married to the daughter of Sir Christopher Barnewall, of his attempts to bring back the soldiers of Stanley to the English allegiance. Went to France "pretending thence into the service of her Majesty in Flanders" under Norris. Was persuaded to stay in Paris, and served under Henri III. Met 17 Irishmen in the camp of the Duke de Mayenne, and sent two of them into Flanders to "break and draw towards me those soldiers of my nation serving under Sir William Stanley." In small groups of two, six, or more "there came in the end to me 300 at least." Found haven for them at Newhaven (havre de Grace) hoping to win over the whole regiment. Trouble arose with the French, and his 300 men were attacked by thirty companies of de Mayenne's. Lost four men in the fray, but of the enemy 40 were slain and many wounded. Jaques (Francisco) came down from the Duke of Parma to claim Stanley's men, and persuaded them to return to Flanders. Finglas followed them to Brussels, where "my wife lay", and was soon able to send 100 men again to France under Ferdinand Toole, "whom he followed with assured hope to have all the rest." Was made prisoner near Crecy for "somewhat long" and his soldiers dispersed; made an agreement with Viscount Tavannes, and promised to bring his men to security. Returns to Brussels and conspires with Captain Eustace "how to draw all the gentlemen and soldiers of our nation." Through Eustace, draws Edmond Wesley into the plot. The Irish regiment then at Waas, near Antwerp. Wesley deals with Con M'Ros, John Garret, "base son of the last Earl of Kildare", and Dowlin O'Byrne, but his comings and goings to the regiment suspected by Stanley. Is arrested, racked, and confesses, and accuses Eustace and Finglas. Finglas confronted with Wesley, and escapes, "by the providence I had used beforehand in causing the matter to be declared unto the said Wesley by the mouth of his own cousin-german Captain Eustace." Wesley "confessed several times and lost his head publicly in Brussels. "Your honour may perceive how at three several times I have broken that unfortunate regiment, which of 700 I have brought to 300." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1592-96, pp. 63-7.

c. In a Relation of Thomas Finglas of all the Irish priests he knows in the Low Countries, dated by Burghley 4 Feb. 1593-4, mention occurs of "one Father Nicholas, in Sir William Stanley's regiment, a man of 60 years old". *Ibid.* p. 206.

47. a. 1593? May. Roger Walton to Sir Robert Cecil. "Sir William Stanley departed Antwerp with his regiment of English and Scotch, the 15th of this May to camp in Brabant, being not above 800 strong." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS IV*, p. 325.

b. 1593. Dec. 8. By the Queen. "Whereas divers of the soldiers who followed Stanley, the traitor, since the time of his



declaring himself a malicious rebel, have now, of late, upon notice given to our servant Sir Francis Veere, of their penitent minds, received passports from him, wherewith they are come into England, most humbly craving pardon for their grievous offences, and have been since examined by certain Justices of Peace, to whom they have particularly declared the place of their birth and condition of their friends, from whom they expect relief towards their maintenance . . . yet for these eleven poor men, whose names are hereunder written, we authorise you, with the advice of our Council, upon further examination of their course of life, before giving them our pardon for the offence of adhering to Stanley, and bearing arms since the giving up of Deventre in the service of the King of Spain until this day . . . wherefore we signify our pleasure by this our hand, requiring you, if you know any other cause why we should not afford them our grace, that you certify us of the occasion . . . and as they seem to be able to find some friends of theirs, being our own good subjects, who will give testimony, or rather assurance of their good behaviour hereafter, you shall therein secure as good caution as you can . . . Robert Jones, Garret Byrne, Thomas Carrall, David Bourke, Wm M'Edmond, Turlogh M'Kegne, Tybott Bourke, Ennis O'Neale, Patrick Morchoe, William Jordan, Griffin Cavanole. *Patent and Close Rolls Ire.* II, pp. 255-6.

c. 1593. Simancas, Estado, Negociaciones de Flándes, legajo 599. year 1593. A report on the grants held in the regiment of Colonel Stanley, which has ten companies:

The company of the Colonel: William Wardet, 40 crowns. Richard Estanihurst, 30. Robert Diez, 30. Thomas Vartington, 25. Walter Stanihurst, 25. Nicholas Langlin, 25. John Berington, 25. Richard Hesquet, 25. George Baret, 20. Robert Barbisieris, 20. John Es Mit, 20. William Quere, 20. Edmund Valentin, 20. John Greni, 20. John Tipen, 20. Thomas Walpoul, 20. Edmund Solchier, 20. Thomas Farel, 20. Henry Jervis, 15. James Touin, 15. Patrick Colin, 15. Edward Linghen, 15. John Paleyo, 15. William Chambris, 15. William Josip, 15. George Caudre, 15.

48. a. 1594. Mar. 30. Lieutenant Jacques at Brussels; Fanning his sergeant hanged. *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS IV*, 497.

b. 1594. Apr. 2. Stanley and his regiment going to France. *Ibid.* p. 500.

c. 1594. July 21. Captain Dautry to Sir William Cecil. "Let not the example of Sir William Stanley make the Privy Council doubt the loyal and good service of the Irishmen in any country out of Ireland, so long as they may have pay of her Majesty, and honest and skilful captains to command them. The fault was not the soldiers, but the colonel's and captains of the regiment." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS IV*, p. 567.

52. 1. "The old English and Irish soldiers being worne out, Sir Wm Stanley was fain to fill up his regiment with Wallons and



Dutchmen, appointing new captains over them and making one Jaques Francesco his lieutenant-colonell, one born in Antwerp of Italian parents, but from infancy brought up in England, and in many duties tied both to the nation, and to sundry gentlemen of the same . . . Jaques is stated to have behaved well in Ireland and to have been trusted, promoted, and largely rewarded, and ingaged with these courtesies, which for ever wold have tied a thankful minde, he was suffered to depart the realm; all which notwithstanding it is reported that there is not enie beyond the seas that doth not run a more violent and unreverent course against the person of her Majesty than he doth." Allen, *Defence of Sir William Stanley's surrender* etc. p. xxxvii.

2. a. 1594. In a report of the army for this year it is stated that in the Irish infantry under the command of Stanley there were ten companies seven of which were in the Spanish Low Countries and the other three in Frisia. The companies in the Low Countries consist of 334 men and 79 officers. No report of the numbers in Frisia could be given, as no report from there had been received. Simancas, Estado, legajo 608. 193.

b. In a report on the reductions of army expenses made in the year 1593, it is stated that nothing had been done about the Irish regiment, as the men were so few; advice will be asked of Colonel Stanley of what should be done about the reduction of the companies, or the increase of the numbers, as, if this could be done, the men are reliable and serve well. *Ibid.* no. 183.

55. a. 1594-5. Mar. 6-16. Ostend. Captain Oliver Lambert to the Earl of Leicester. "It is now a month since I arrived here from Holland where I have spent some time, partly about my business, and partly retained by his Excellency and the States to see the coming over of the Irish; whom they thought then, as well as for the service of her Majesty as good of the country, to make one company, and give me the charge, as one whom they have known long and her Majesty no cause to dislike of their choice. But finding the revolt of the Irish doubtful, I prepared for Ostend." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS V*, p. 132.

b. 1595. Intelligence given by Mr Danyell of George Harbert, now prisoner. "10. He could not but know the Earl of Tyrone sending of the brother of Hew Booy to the Spanish regiment into the Low Countries to bring over Hugh Booy about Christmas last to the Earl of Tyrone, Hew Booy being as proper a soldier as is in Christendom of the Irish race, and many ways singular." *Ibid.* p. 515.

c. 1595. Sept. 27. The Earl of Tyrone, and O'Donnell, to the King of Spain. "Our only hope of reestablishing the Catholic religion rests on your assistance. Now or never our Church must be succoured. By the timidity or negligence of the messengers, our former letters have not reached you. We therefore again beseech you to send us 2,000 or 3,000 soldiers with money and



arms, before the feast of St Philip and St James. With such aid we hope to restore the faith of our Church, and to secure you a kingdom. 5 cal. Octobris. Signed: O Neill. Hugh O Donnell. Intercepted and received the 29th Sept. 1595, from the hands of Poers O'Cullen. Copy, Latin. *H.M.C. Carew MSS* 1589-1600. p. 122.

56. The Archduke Albert became governor on the Low Countries on 29 January 1596. The mutiny referred to here was originated principally by the Italian troops, and lasted from 1594 to 1596. Some of their companies, serving under Gaston Spinola, had received no pay for six years. Only relatively small bodies of other foreign troops were associated with them. See Bentivoglio, *Della guerra di Fiandra* III, libro I, pp. 26-8; and Van der Essen, *Les Italiens en Flandre au XVIe et au XVIIe siècle*.

60. 1. Undated. Memorandum on the safety of Ireland, which gives an account of many Irishmen who had grown to be expert soldiers on the continent; mentioned in the first place "Don Ricardo Bucke [*Burke*] being of the Earl of Clanrickard's kindred, is a man more experienced in martial affairs, and much esteemed for his judgment in the Mathematics and a good Ingeneire. He served many years under the Spanish in Naples. From thence he was employed to the West Indies, and returned to Spain. Afterwards with supply of new authority he was sent to the Low Countries and was highly respected by the Archduchess. He was called to the emperor and was appointed Lieutenant-General, but the Emperor refrained that intended expedition. The Duke of Florence hearing of his sufficiency sent for him and made him Governor of Lygorne where he hath lived in great esteeme." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1582-92, pp. 158ff.

65. 1. a. 1597. May 28. John Danyell to Sir Robert Cecil. "I hear say that one Peter Nangle, "a frere" of my country whom I know, is taken prisoner; I cannot think but that he can largely declare of the practices of her Majesty's enemies beyond the sea, for at my being there, he was great with the Primate of Armagh, killed in Connaught, with the Archbishop of Tuam who died in Antwerp, Sir William Stanley, Jacques, Richard Stanihurst, and all the others the bad rulers of this country that were there, and, being in remote places, had continual conference by letters with them, and others out of Rome and Spain and other parts; which course I suppose he held since my coming hither. It may be that he was sent for Ireland to persuade many of the best sort of the English Pale and thereabouts to enter into bad actions, for he was born there. He is greatly allied and is near of kin to divers of them, and is well beloved of many." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS* VIII, p. 137.

b. 1597. Oct. 30. "Advices concerning the Spanish fleet, sent by Sir Walter Raleigh". "Of Irish there was one company". *Ibid.* VII, p. 456.



c. 1597. Nov. 19. Examination of Francis Godoy, a Spanish captain. "These galleys came to Ferroll in July, and thence went to Brittany, carrying with them 1,000 soldiers of Biscoigne . . . Some few Italians, one company of Irish." *Ibid.* 487.

d. 1597, Dec. 8. John Danyell to Sir Robert Cecil. "I hear that O'Connor's brother and one Richard Fullam alias Phelan, who served with the foreign enemy, are come over with Sir Arthur Savadge, and that others of their country and consort are come to the French King's camp, desiring to come hither to go to their own country. Phelan is a tall soldier that served continually under Sir William Stanley since his going into the Low Countries." *Ibid.* p. 506.

67. 1. a. 1600. Aug 14 Dublin. The Lord Chancellor Loftus to Sir Robert Cecil. "This morning I received this enclosed letter from a man of good credit which . . . I thought very meet to send to you. Two of the parties named in it are men of good account. I mean Stanihurst, the learned physician who is with Nugent, brother to the Earl of Delvin, which Richard by his mother shall be a good inheriter in the Pale. The other, named Shelton, is he of whom Sir Robert Gardener and myself heretofore write to your Highness in Lapley's cause. One of his brothers was executed with Lapley, and this young man hath been a good while in Tyrone with this treacherous uncle Friar Nangle. I have made the more haste to let your Honour understand hereof, for that they departing so lately and going wholly through Scotland (where I doubt not they will think themselves very secure) there may be some good means used to have them apprehended there." Endorsed: Received at Nonsuch the 21st [August].

b. Enclosed: Stephen Duff to the Lord Chancellor Loftus. "Having heard certainly by one that my Lord Chancellor did licence to go to the north for taking up of some debts due to him, that there came to Tyrone an eight or nine days ago one Mr Stanihurst of Corduff from the Prince Cardinal in embassage to Tyrone, and is gone back again in the way he came, which was through Scotland, and there is gone with him back William Nugent his son and heir, and one Shelton," thought it his duty to inform his Honour. Drogheda, 1600, Aug. 11. Endorsed: Received the 14th in the morning. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1600, p. 354.

c. Loftus sent the letter immediately to Cecil. *Ibid.* p. 72; but the travellers arrived safely in the Low Countries, as appears from documents in these registers. For the subsequent career of Shelton, here mentioned, see 'Thomas Shelton, translator of *Don Quixote*' by Edwin B. Knowles, in *Studies in the Renaissance* vol. V. pp. 160-75., in Publications of the Renaissance Society of America, New York, 1958. Later on in life Shelton appears to have become an agent for the English representatives in Brussels, as is evident from Downshire MSS *passim*. His identification by Professor Knowles with the Thomas Shelton who in November 1629 was a Franciscan novice in Dublin seems much too impossible.



71. 1599. June 20. Bois-le-Duc. Ottavio Frangipani, nuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Pietro Aldobrandini. Richard Stanihurst, a learned grave man, and an exile from Ireland because of his religion, is mentioned as suitable to conduct negotiations at the Spanish Court in the interests of the English and Irish Catholics; he is well known at Madrid, having conducted negotiations there before, and is well informed concerning the points at issue; he knows for certain too that the English and Irish Catholics intend to send deputies to the Pope to discuss the question of the re-establishment of the Catholic religion in their respective countries, if the Spanish Court will not provide the help which these Catholics are waiting for." *Collectanea Hibernica* I, Dublin, 1958, pp. 54-5.

72. 1. a. 1598. Aug. 12. John Danyell to Sir Robert Cecil. "Caffoyr was lieutenant to Captain Eustace in the Low Countries, in Sir William Stanley's regiment. I know him to be a thickless humoured man." *C.S.P. Salisbury MSS VIII*, p. 302.

b. 1598. "The Curate and echevins of Sichein affirme assuredly that in the year 1598 at what time the Irish of the regiment of Sir William Stanley, Coronel, were lodged there, many of them were wont to use no other phisik or remedy for their diseases, but to make their prayers at the foresaid place of Montague, amongst whome many were healed, in such sorte that Father Walter Talbot an Irish priest, one of the societie of Jesus (who at that time was their preacher and ghostlie father) was want oftentimes to say with great admiration that this place was in very singular manner chosen by God there [for] his Mother's honour, for which cause he was moved to go thither sometymes devoutly in procession accompanied with the said Irish and the townsmen of Sichein. Whereof he wrote to Father Thomas Salius, who was the superior of the fathers of the societie which attended upon the Catholik king's army in the Low Countries." Chambers, Robert, *Historie of the miracles wrought by the intercession of our Blessed Ladie, at a place called Montague*. 1600? *No place*.

80. a. 1599. Sept. 27. Dunganan. Hugh O'Neill to the Archduke Albert. Informs him that he has made a temporary cessation with the English, for six weeks, and earnestly asks him to grant licence to all the Irish soldiers in the Low Countries to return to Ireland to assist against the English; if they come at the one time and as a body, it would be of great service to him, and to the Archduke. See *Archivium Hibernicum*, Maynooth, III, p. 235.

b. 1600. Apr. 26. Sir George Carey to Sir Robert Cecil. "The names of the pledges mentioned in the letter are these, viz. Henry O'Neill, Tyrone's second son. McDonnell Gorme his son. Henry Oveton's [Hovendon's] son, McDonnells son. These four pledges are from Tyrone. O'Donnell sent two others, viz. O'Doughty's son and O'Gallochowse's [O'Gallacher's] son. Maguire sent his brother. These seven pledges were put aboard Spanish



ships the 19 of the present, and departed from Lough Foyle the day following." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1600-01, p. 122.

c. 1600. June 23-July 21. Stanley and his regiment are engaged in the battle of Nieuport, in which the Spanish forces suffered a severe defeat. Stanley was incorrectly reported wounded, and Captain Bostock was killed. Salisbury MSS X, pp. 193ff., 212. Pirenne, *Histoire de Belgique*, Brussels, 1919, IV, pp. 232ff.

d. 1600. Nov. 2. Sir George Carew to the Privy Council. "The pledge I demanded of Florence McCarthy was his eldest son, which by reason of his indisposition of health he could not bring with him, but in the meantime hath left me his base brother, who is dearly esteemed by him, having for these ten years past spent his time in the wars of the Low Countries, France and Hungary; and a foster brother of his by him no less respected." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1600-01, p. 4.

e. 1600. Nov. 23. The Master of Gray to (? Sir Robert Cecil). "And at my return to Flanders I shall deal with Colonel Jaco, who hath with him two Irish captains, who I know will do anything for good "deid". The plurality shall not impeach, for the discovery although it chance, shall extend the diffidence to those of that nation who shall be first discovered." *H.M.C. Salisbury MSS* 389f. X, pp. 269f.

f. 1600. Dec. 26. Corunna. Friar "Matheu de la Caria" to Hugh, Earl of Tyrone. "Tyrone's son, Henry, is well in Salamanca." *C.S.P.Ire.*, 1600-01, p. 107.

g. (1601). June 11-21. Richard Golborne to the Lord Chancellor Loftus. "Also, your Lordship shall wete, he said Tyrone's son is gone into a monastery of Grey Friars, and hath taken habit. Wherefore the King is greatly displeased, and saith he will have him thence to go into Ireland with the fleet. But the friars say he is vowed to God, and as yet refuse to deliver him." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1600-01, p. 416. Golborne is reporting a conversation he had at Bordeaux on June 16 with a Scottish friar named Father Browne, come from the Court of Spain.

For more precise information see Micheline Walsh, *The O'Neills in Spain*, [Dublin 1960] p. 5.

81. 1600-01. Mar. 22. Derry. Captain Humphrey Covert to Sir Robert Cecil. "And under your Honour's correction, I fear as much this Hugh Boy who for many years hath been a most powerful rebel against her Majesty, the only plotter to have betrayed the fort at Culmore, bred in the Spanish war with Sir William Stanley, chief friend and counsellor to O'Donnell (who now for a mask may be disservered) no man in Ireland of such employment to the Pope and King of Spain as himself. He is of person tall and comely, of years young and active, as bold of countenance as subtle practised in stratagem etc." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1600-01, p. 235.



85. 1601. May 1. The Lord Deputy Mountjoy to the Privy Council. Dublin Castle. "It may please your Lordships to give me leave to wage some of these Irish by agreement and for a certain time, as they use among themselves, whereby by them I should consume many of the rebels, and by the rebels consume many of them, and both for the good of the service. For I dare assure your Lordships there rests little now to settle this kingdom, but some way to be devised to rid the remnant of the idle swordsmen of both sides; and that the English owners would or were able to inhabit their lands. For the first, I find the Irishry at this time much to affect some journey into the Low Countries, or to the Indies, or to be led to any other place of service. Unto which if it be objected that they will return more able soldiers and more dangerously affected, I can assure your Lordships there is no experience can better the knowledge already they have attained unto, both for the use of their weapons, and taking the advantage of such ground wherein they fight; and it hath ever been seen that more than three parts of four of their countrymen never return, being once engaged in any such voyage." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1601-3. p. 305.

87. Not a post in the Irish regiment, as in Knowles. See no. 67, note c. And the date is 27 June, not as in Knowles, 7 June.

94. 1602. July. Memorandum on help from the Low Countries for the Spanish forces preparing for Ireland. "The following things were done, or men sent, in the enterprize of sending into Spain from the Low Countries to go for Ireland. The "Conte of Teron" sent the following as names of those the most fit for that action, and they are "consented by the King of Spain(s) ambassador, the Archduke, and his Council. First, Jacques Francisco, the Italian lieutenant-colonel that was to Sir William Stanley and a very excellent "enjeneur man", which goeth for the chiefest. Next, Captain Oliver "Yeustas" (Eustace) elected to have a regiment. Captain Edward "fyegarot" (Fitzgerald) also to have a company. Captain Harry Wyelch and Thomas Roche, Lieutenant Bremyegem (Birmingham). Ensign Thomas Stayms, Thomas Macraffe (Magrath), John Smyght (Smith), Garland, Garate Byern, and Daniell, Mr Thomas Barry and John Dunn. All these and divers to the number of 38 were enrolled and went through Paris in several companies about four weeks ago, to go for Spain and there to be employed for Ireland. Ten or twelve places have been mentioned for that landing, but they will probably only land at two. Captain Isambere, one of the chiefest men of the Duke's artillery, and who commanded the eight pieces on the Dyke on Albert's side; and his son who is esteemed as great a man as his father or greater. These are Frenchmen; the father married at St. Thomeyere (St Omer?). Other engineers came, and the King had requested the Archduke to assist them with all things that these gentlemen and engineers shall think necessary for their



service, and that he should send the King a list and the King would pay for all." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1601-3. pp. 460-1.

108. Petition of William Shagnes and James his brother to the Pope. "Being come in the habite of pilgrims to visit the most hollye house of Loretto and the holy Church of Rome, doe desire to kisse the most hollye feete of your Blessednes and to receive your holy benediction . . . that for as much as they are deprived of their goods and country for the defence of the Holy Catholic Faith and have for the space of seventeen yeares served against the heretiques in Flanders . . . and that the Queen of England six years since did cause their father and four sonnes together with 150 persons to be beheaded for confessing the Bishop of Rome to be the Head of the Church . . . they petition now that the wars in Flanders are over to be taken into His Holliness's service." Trinity College, Dublin, MS. 567, E. 3. 15. The document is a translation, but the original language is not stated.

III. I. a. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 622. Copies of two letters from Ireland to the Archduke Albert and Isabella; not signed, but evidently from Hugh O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone. One of the letters seems to refer to the Dempsey mentioned in no. III:

Serenissimi Principes. Salutem impertimur. Nobilem hunc Dermittium O Demsy ad proprias possessiones mittere decrevimus in primo eius appulsu ad hanc patriam; tunc enim bellum in meliorem eventum inclinavit; sed cum subsidium neque Catholicae Maiestatis neque vestrum accepimus, non potuimus illi auxiliari. Itaque eum ad vestras Celsitudines iterum remisimus, rogantes, ut illi benefacere dignemini; testes enim sumus eum esse nobilibus parentibus ortum, et ad opimas possessiones natum, licet per nostrorum inimicorum tyrannidem iniuste expulsum. Glanconkeine, vigesimo quarto Decembris, millesimo sexcentesimo secundo.

b. The other letter refers to Captain Eustace in the Low Countries, but unfortunately his baptismal name is not mentioned:

Sincerissimi Principes. Salutem impertimur; nobili illi Capitaneo Eustachio qui apud vos commoratur rogamus ut bene faciatis, optimo enim et nobilissimo sanguine in Hibernia natus est. Et si contigerit aliquem exercitum hunc mitti, nobis gratissimum esset eum etiam mitti; dum etiam illic apud vos haeserit, obsecramus ut eum benigne tractetis, Commisimus illi negotia nostra et necessitates in memoriam vestram revocare, Glanconkeine, vigesimo quarto Decembris milesimo sexcentesimo secundo.

The reference may be to Alexander Eustace, whose company is mentioned under 20 Feb. 1605.

126. a. The platform mentioned had been especially built in the year 1602 by the Spanish Colonel Rivas, near the fort of St Albert, to facilitate the bombardment of the old quarter of Ostend. Bentivoglio, *Della guerra di Fiandra* III, book VII, p. 162.



b. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 622, year 1603, in a list of pensioners are named John Bal, 22 crowns, and Robert Dier, Irishmen, forty crowns.

c. *Ibid.* In a list of the officers and soldiers taking part in the siege of Ostend: one company of Irish, with 13 officers and 144 men. For one payment, 1,852 crowns.

127. 1605. Jan. 6. Dublin. Sir John Davys to Viscount Cranbourne. "The Earl of Tyrone was here last week . . . He hath lately sent unto Spain to recall his second son, who was sent thither during the rebellion. He understands his father's country is laid waste and poor, and therefore he desires to spend a year or two more abroad, and purposes to pass out of Spain into the Low Countries, to serve in the wars there against the States. The Earl seems to be troubled at this, being doubtful lest the State of England should interpret it amiss, and says he has written to him that if he will not immediately return hither, he will never give him one foot of land. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1603-6. p. 245.

131. John Mertran, John Baes, Thomas Hacht, Walter Vitsum, Thomas Adams, Henre Arembe, Thomas Tullenan, Jenne Men, Henry Botfin, and John Hin. *Ibid.*

143. "Nous avons esté tout l'après-disner en communication sur la levée à fer pour leurs Altesses de 2000 Anglais, 1500 Ecossois, et 500 Irlandais." Mémoires du Baron de Hoboken, 30 April 1605, Archives générales du Royaume, Brussels, Papiers d'État et de l'Audience, registre 365, f. 13v. quoted by L. Willaert S.J., 'L'Angleterre et les Pays-Bas Catholiques,' in *Revue d'Histoire ecclésiastique*, Louvain, VII, p. 594. An effort to find this *registre* was not successful.

150. 1605. June 28. Madrid. The Council of State concerning the journey of Don Henry O'Neill to Flanders. Don Henry O'Neill begged your Majesty to be pleased to grant him licence to go to serve in Flanders, while retaining the grant which he enjoys here; and your Majesty approved. Since then he has asked that he may be granted the title of colonel of a regiment of Irishmen which could be formed from the men who are here and those serving in Flanders. And whereas the Council recommended that this appeared to be expedient, and that it would be well if he were to embark for this purpose with the companies of that nation which it was decided were to go to Flanders, your Majesty was pleased to approve of this, and to order that for the journey he should be given the amount due to him from his grant. This however was not carried out, as it was learned that the rebels have a large number of ships in the English Channel on the look out for the general departure from here. Don Henry also asked that the title of colonel of the men of his nation who are in Flanders should be given to him, with authority to bring the regiment up to strength; for if it were known in Ireland that he is there, there are many who will come there to serve. And if this should not



be done, your Majesty can order that he be paid his grant, to enable him to support himself. The Council is of the opinion that this gentleman will be better in Flanders, and to enable him to go, he can be paid the amount due to him from his grant. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 624, Spanish.

156. 1605. Oct. 1. Reported that on this date four score and ten men of the company of Captain William Darcy, under the command of Lieutenant Tirrel, put into Southampton (coming from St Ives Cornwall) and there expected to find a bark previously promised them for their conveyance to Flushing. Their petition to the mayor for their "victualling and diettes" in Southampton for three of four days was rejected, but "it was rather ordered by the Howse to ridd them out of the towne and to bestow upon them in monie fortie shillings, which was by the consent of the Howse presentlie given them by Mr Maior, together with a passport for there travell to London." *H.M.C., Southampton MSS*, report XI, appendix, part III.

184. 1606. List of Irish officers and pensioners in the service of Spain.

Captains and officers of Irish pay with the King of Spain attending the Archduke in the Low Countries, and others that be pensioners of the same nation, without command.

Henry Neile, alias Lo. Henry, cornell. Capt. James Fitz Morris Gerald, of the house of Kildare, Capt. Thomas Stanyhurst of Dublin. Capt. James Gerald. Capt. Thomas Preston. Capt. William Walsh of Gallwaye. Capt. Alexander Eustace. Capt. William Barrett. Capt. Teig M'Donnell, ne countye Cartye. Capt. Conoghor O'Dryshall (O'Driscoll). Capt. Morris Fitz-Gerald, alias Capt. Gerald. Capt. Art Oge M'Art Mc Baron. Capt. Owen m'Art, his brother. Capt. Robert Daniell of Waterford.

In margin: These be captains in pay and employment, and have pensions also.

Captains that be eased and have their pay nevertheless, known by the name of Reformados: Capt. St. Lawrence. Capt. Henry O'Gerig. Captain Thomas Barrye. Capt. Fitshymons.

Corporals of the field. Waterford. John McChehice, the son of Manus Fyrr. Meath. John Kivett of Meath.

Inferior officers of the Irish in the Spanish army, as Alferos and Sergeants. Of the North: Patrick O'Donnell, foster brother to Lo. Henry. Ensigne. Garret Darcy, ensign to Captain Darcy, deceased, and kksps the captain's command. Donogh O'Nolan, ensign to Capt. Preston.

Counties. Desmond. Teig O'Sowlywaine (O'Sullivan) the son of Owen O'Sowlywaine, ensign to Conoghor O'Dryshall.

Cork. Donnogh M'Cartye, a base son of M'Cartye Riogh, ensign to Tieg M'Donnell, ne countye Cartye. John Oge Barry, brother to Barry Oge, ensign to Capt. Barrett.



Louth. James Bedlewe, ensign to Captain Garland.  
 Galloway. John Ralfe, ensign to Capt. Owens.  
 Kildare. Richard Nangle, ensign to Capt. Eustace.  
 Meath. Thomas Goodman, ensign to Capt. Walsh.  
 Leix. Thomas Walter Reogh, ensign to Capt. Morris Fitz Rychard.

Desmond; Rory M'Swyne, ensign to Capt. Danyell.

Ulster. Rory M'Swyne, ensign to Capt. Danyell, Donogh O'Grenane, ensign to Capt. Art Oge. Ensign Kelly, late alferoe to Neale m'Milaghlen, who was killed, and as yet commands his company.

Sergeants of companies in the Spanish army. Walter Ossett, alias Hussey, serjeant to the Colonel.

Cork. Mortagh O'Donowaine, serjeant to Capt. Barete. John O'Donowaine, serjeant to Conogher O'Dryshall.

Dublin. Thomas Tuite, serjeant to Capt. Danyell.

Limerick. Morrogh m'Shehiee, serjeant to Capt. Preston.

Cork. William M'Morris, serjeant of Capt. Gerald.

Ulster. Owen Gromie, serjeant reformado.

Tipperary. Andrew Lynaugh, of Clonemell, to Capt. Barrett.

Cork. William M'Awlyffe, of Muskerry, serjeant to Teig M'Donnell, ne county Cartye.

Gentlemen pensioners in the army having no command. Kerry. Morrice M'Ruddery, the Knight of Kerry's brother, 20. Cork. Gullassne O'Sowlywaine, son to Sir Owen, 20. Conoghor O'Sowlwaine, Sir Owen's son, 20. John M'Awly, m'Awlye's son, 20.

Pensions by the month. Kerry. O'Donoghnan Moore, 30. Edmund Lettuce, 20. William Pettit, 15. Christopher Talbott, 15. Leix. Edmund M'Kery Oge O'Murrey, 30. Cork. Donogh Moell M'Cartye, 15. Kerry. Conogher M'Owhny of Desmond, 12. Redmond Dalton, 10. Nicolas Dalton, 10. Thomas Dalton, 10. Brethren. Cork. Tieg ne Bally O'Mahowny, 20. Donnel O'Mahowny, 20. Edmond Pownel, of Cork, 8. Tipperary. Walter Butler, Dunboyne's son, 20. Connaught. Richard Bourche, 60. David Bourche, 60. Brethren. Art O'Conogher, 40. Wexford. Richard Deverox, 40. James Preston, 60. Dermod M'Shane, 40. Limerick. Stephen Myagh, of Killmalloch, 12. Fynyne M'Bryan of Colley, 15. Conoghor O'Mahowny, 20. Kerry. Thomas Eleyott, 20. Cork. Dermod M'Awly of Can Awyle, 20. Desmond. Owen M'Swynie, 15. Connaught. Bryan O'Kelly, 30. Daniel O'Kelly, 30. Limerick. Manus M'Shehiee, 20. Waterford. Richard White of Waterford, 10 vantage. Galloway. Nicholas Lynch, of Galloway, 15. Cork. Richard Fitz David Barry, 15. Stephen Myagh fitz James, 8 vantage. Ulluck (Ulick) Lynch, 10. 755 crowns.

Endd. A list of the Irish that be commanders, pensioners, or officers. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1603-6, pp. 396-8.



he [Chichester] advertised the late Lord Lieutenant, by reason they were gone before he heard it." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1603-6, pp. 562-6.

b. 1606. Sept. 14. Dublin. Sir Jeffrey Fenton to the Earl of Salisbury. "They [the Irish] repose much in the Earl of Tyrone's second son and his regiment of Irishmen now serving under the Archduke, who it is to be wished were called home before any breach grow, for they are of opinion that he is the man that must be thrust over hither upon the first commodity, and to serve that turn it may be thought that he is nourished with the Spaniards in the Low Countries." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1603-6, pp. 871-2.

c. 1606. Sept. 27. Dublin. Thomas Jones, Archbishop of Dublin, to Salisbury. "Hath lately had some reference with one Evers, a young man born in Meath, near to his late dwelling at Arbrachan, who hath served under the Archduke, and is recently returned, having procured a passport by reason of his sickness. Knew the young man well before his going, and takes him to be of an honest and dutiful disposition, as are the rest of the family. Questioned him therefore touching the carriage and disposition of such gentlemen of this country as serve the Archduke, and especially as such were born in the Pale, naming unto him the Lord of Gormanston, his brother, William Darcie, one Cusacke, Delahid, and others. He answered that they all serve in a regiment under Henry, the Earl of Tyrone's son, and that he discovered amongst them all that they carry most malicious hearts to this State, and live there in daily expectation of some stirs in Ireland that they might come hither to second them; that when it was reported here that M'Guyre and M'Mahon were entered into rebellion, they conceived great joy, and made means to the Archduke that they might be sent over to assist them; and that those who were born in the Pale do carry as hateful a mind to the King of this State as the mere Irish do, to bring it under Spanish government." *Ibid.* pp. 579-80.

272. 1607. July 22. The report of D. M., son to R. M., of C. "Went out of Ireland into the Low Countries to recover certain debts owing to him by sundry gentlemen of Munster that now serve under the Archduke." Refers to certain Irish Franciscans whom he met and for whom he acted in money matters, "because by their order they may not handle money. Doctor Chamberlayn, by command of Henry O'Neale, Tiron's son, also gave them £6., which this examine likewise received." Observed that Henry O'Neale and Sir Christopher St. Lawrence were very familiar and inward friends, and were oftentimes bedfellows, and when St. Lawrence came last for England, O'Neale brought him seven miles upon his journey."

To the Report is attached: The names of the Irish captains that have companies in the Archduke's army: Henry O'Neale, colonel of the regiment. Captain Fitsgeralt, a kinsman to an Earl of Kildare; he is serjeant-major. Captain Garhard, a gentleman of



195. Simancas. Estado, Flándes, legajo 624, year 1605-6. In an account of the men to be recruited for the army; "The Colonel of the Irishmen has brought together 1,000 men, and has been given licence to recruit a further 2,000".

240. On 28 May 1606 the Irish regiment was reported to be 1,100 or 1,200 strong, and together with the Scots regiment, which contained only 400, to "be very galland and full of lusty men". They were then marching out of Flanders under Bucquoy to join up with the Spinola. See *Downshire MSS II*, p. 10.

245. The execution about this time of a lieutenant-colonel and of a captain, together with the ensign of the company of Colonel Henry O'Neill, for some reason not explicitly mentioned, caused much ill feeling among the Spanish forces. J. Beaulieu to William Trumbull, *Downshire MSS II*, p. 9.

265. a. Redmond Burke is stated to have sailed from Ireland in December with Red Hugh O'Donnell and Hugh Mostian, along with Pedro Zubiari, commander of the Spanish fleet which came to Kinsale. Zubiari landed at Castlehaven, but left immediately after hearing of the defeat of O'Neill's army. [Stafford, Thomas], *Pacata Hibernia*, p. 424.

b. de Burgo appears to have associated too closely with the English in the Low Countries, as is mentioned in a warning given to another Irishman in a letter from Madrid, 30 June 1613. See *Downshire MSS IV*, p. 150. His name is coupled with that of Edward Eaistais [Eustace] who also was associated closely with the English ambassador at Brussels. *Ibid.* and see index.

271. a. 1606. Sept. 12. Dublin Castle. Sir Arthur Chichester to Salisbury. "Upon the first advertisement of the Earl of Tirconnel's and Couconagh Maguire's intention to ship themselves secretly . . . he forthwith imagined that they have had some purposes in hand which they feared had been discovered, otherwise they would not have departed at such a time when we came to give every man his right. Is not certain whether the Earl would go or no. Is sure Couconagh would, if he had gotten convenient passage . . . They convey sundry messages to the Archduke, and those of their trustiest friends; the Earl of Tyrone by pretence of his son's being there, making a show that he studies to withdraw him, but giving it out that he is in great favour with that prince, and hath command of many men of his nation, which he [Chichester] knows to be true, and written to his brother to send him more. Is informed that most of the Lords and principal gentlemen of the Pale have either a son or a near kinsman with the Archdukes, who are kindly entertained; which agrees with a speech (said to be delivered) by some of those who by the Lord's letters were permitted to carry men hence about this time twelve months; viz., that they had good pledges from other parts of the kingdom; and now they would carry as good of the Pale, of which



the Pale. Captain Stanihurst, a Dublin man, and brother to Richard Stanihurst, the great physician. Captain Delahide, son to Lawrence Delahide, of Moyglare, in the county of Kildare. Captain Cornelius O'Driscoll, son of Sir Finin O'Driscoll, of Baltimore, in Munster. Captain Preston, son to Viscount Gormanston. Captain Teg (*sic*) M'Cartie, son to Donell M'Cartie and cousin-germain to Cormack M'Desmond. Captain William Barret, lord of Barret's country in Munster. Captain Owen O'Neale, son to Art M'Baron, and nephew to Tirone. Captain Art O'Neale, brother to Owen aforementioned. Captain Fitzgarrett, of the county of Kildare. Captain Eustace, of Castel Mountain (*Martin*). Captain Wellshe, a Pale man. Captain Daniell, a Waterford man." The three last marked as "lately cashiered."

"He thinketh that in the Irish regiment there is 400 of them that have pensions over and above their ordinary wages, and that now the regiment is 1,400 strong, whereof there is of Munster men about 200. There is with Tyrone's son one called Doctor Chamberlain, a divine; he is a man of great wit, and Henry O'Neale is guided by him; his right name is Edward Arthur, a Connaught man. There came lately out of Spain Matthew Oge, a Connaught man; he was secretary to O'Donnell; he hath now a good pension of the King, and accompanied M'Guire to the Court of Spain; he is a dangerous man, and of stirring wit. There is also one called Doctor M'Mahone, a divine; he is still with Tirone's son; he is an Ulster man, and greatly esteemed of for his wisdom. The chief chaplain to the Irish regiment is Father Hugh M'Angell, a Franciscan friar. The President of all the Irish colleges in Brabant and Flanders is one called Father Cusacke; his father was Sir Thomas Cusacke, who had been Lord Justice of Ireland; the Irish colleges are five, at Douay, Tournay, Lisle, Antwerpe, and one other at Lovayne." *Cal. S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 227-230.

282. Thomas Stanihurst had previously served as a trusted messenger between the Archduke Albert and Hugh O'Neill. See 'The Archduke to O'Neill,' 15 June 1600, *Arch. Hib.*, III, p. 237: "Reliqua omnia plenius et clarius vobiscum communicabit harum litterarum tabellarius Thomas Stonihurst, quem uti virum perspectae fidei ad vos dedita opera adlegamus, per quem etiam de integro rerum vestrarum statu accuratissime certiores fieri quamprimum cupimus."

286. 1607. Oct. 3-13. The examination of Fr Fitzgerald taken on the 3rd of Oct. 1607, at the Castle of Dublin. "He saith further, that Owen Groome Magrath told him that the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell had sent one John Bath into Spain five or six months since, to pray the King of Spain's favour and assistance, they being fearful of being taken or sent for into England, from whence and the Low Countries they received several answers and intelligences soon after, one by a priest named Rory Albanagh, another by an officer of one of the Irish regiments, either an ensign



or a sergeant, whose name he knows not, nor of what company he was . . . The said Owen told him further that the ship was a Frenchman, and that she came out of Brittany; that she was met withal and stayed by a Scottishman betwixt the lands of Ireland and Scotland, and being released she came and anchored at Lough Swilly about the 25th of August, and gave out that she was come to the fishing, having good store of salt and nets aboard. She remained there nine days. John Bath was master, and in her came over Cucconnaught Maguire, Matthew Tully, and Donough O'Brien. Upon their first coming to Lough Swilly this Donough O'Brien landed by night, and went to the Earl of Tyrconnell to acquaint him with the arrival of the ship . . . Brought no letters, but the sum of £1,500., to bear their charges." *C.S.P.Ire.*, 1606-8, p. 298. Fr Thomas Fitzgerald was a member of the Franciscan Order, and Fr Owen Groome Magrath was vicar-provincial (for Fr Florence Conry) of the Irish province of the Order.

290. a. 1607. Oct. 7. Brussels. Sir Thomas Edmondès to Salisbury. "It is affirmed that M'Guire after his departure from hence went not into Spain, but has been ever since in Britain [Brittany] to make provisions under cover of a merchant for Tyrone's retreat out of Ireland". *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 626.

b. 1607. Oct. 21. Brussels. Edmondès to Salisbury. "The fact stated in his [Edmond's] letter is true, that M'Guire passed into Britain, and there, disguising himself as a merchant, bought some wines and salts, and hired a ship at Nantes, wherein he landed his merchandise, together with a provision of fishing nets, to give colour to his going to fish upon the coast of Ireland, and brought that company away from thence." *Ibid.* pp. 627-8.

c. On October 28 Edmondès informs Salisbury that one Fr Florence [Conry] a Franciscan friar who came out of Spain . . . "has now gone in the company of M'Guire into Ireland." *Ibid.* p. 629. But see Ó Cianáin, *Flight of the Earls*, p. 37., where it is stated that the Earls were met at Douai by Flaithri O'Maolconaire, Irish provincial of the Friars Minor, and Doctor Robert Mac Arthur, "having come from Flanders".

303. a. 1607. Oct. 14-24. Brussels. Sir Thomas Edmondès to Salisbury. Mentions that the Irish regiment of Henry O'Neill was then at Bruges. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 626.

b. 1607. Oct. 27, Brussels. Bentivoglio, nuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Barberini, papal secretary of State. Reports the flight of the Earls, their arrival in France, and their change of direction to Flanders. *Arch. Hib.* IV, pp. 339-40.

c. 1607. Nov. 3. The same to the same. Announces the arrival of the Earls at Tournai. *Ibid.* pp. 240-41.

304. a. For reports from the English side concerning the flight of the Earls, see Reports from British ambassadors and agents abroad regarding the fugitive Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 623-70. Appendix. On the Irish



side see Ó Cianáin, *The Flight of the Earls*; and *Annals of the Four Masters*. A list of the more important fugitives is given in 'Extract from a letter from England, 18 Dec. 1607,' in *Arch. Hib.* IV, p. 247. 'A Noble Shipload,' ed. Canice Mooney O.F.M. in *Irish Sword* II, pp. 195ff., giving lists of those who intended to go with the Earls to Spain, and those who remained in Flanders. It is quite possible that the priests and clerics mentioned in the list on p. 201 had come to Flanders in the ordinary way for their studies, but were glad to avail themselves of the Earls' patronage. See also *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 435.

b. The Earls sailed from Rathmelton on Lough Swilly on Friday 12 Sept. 1607, and landed at Quilleboeuf at the mouth of the Seine on 4 Oct. After passing through Rouen and Amiens, they entered Spanish territory at Arras on Thursday, 18 October, and proceeded by Tournai and Ath to Hal near Brussels, where they arrived on Wednesday, 31 October, and were met by Henry O'Neill, son of the Earl and colonel of the recently established regiment of Irish infantry in the Spanish service.

c. The embarrassed position in which the Irish nobles found themselves appears from the documents referred to above, from others contained in this present collection, and from the letters of the apostolic nuncio at Brussels, Guido Bentivoglio, to the papal secretary of State Cardinal Barberini. See *Arch. Hib.* III, pp. 268-9; IV, pp. 239-55; and *Collectanea Hibernica* I, pp. 55-6.

d. Their first reception was cordial, but under English pressure the Archduke Albert soon became anxious to have them leave the Spanish Low Countries with the least possible delay. Philip III made it clear that he did not want them in Spain; and the apostolic nuncio, in accordance with his instructions, used all the arts of persuasion to divert them from going to Rome.

e. The immediate sequence of events was as follows: On Saturday November 3, two days after their arrival, Spinola, who was in command of the army, came from Brussels to Hal to meet them, and on the same day the Archduke's secretary arrived there with an invitation to proceed to Mariemont (Binche) where he and the Infanta were for the time in residence. Coaches and horses for the journey were sent on Sunday morning by Spinola, and after Mass the Earls set out for Binche by way of Nivelles, where they spent the night. With them were Hugh O'Neill, baron of Dungannon, eldest son of Tyrone; Maguire, cousin of the Earls; Carlos Donel, brother of the Earl of Tyrconnell; Arturo O'Neill, nephew of Tyrone; Dionisio O Brian, cousin of the Earl of Thomond (Tumun) and of the Earl of Clanrickard; and Henry Ovington, of Gleancoy. They were met at Nivelles on Monday by the Archduke's secretary and his major-domo, and proceeded to Binche where they were received by Albert and Isabella, who spent some time in conversation with them and showed them kindness and great courtesy, and entertained them with many



other illustrious noblemen to dinner. The party returned to Nivelles that night, and on the day following went to Brussels, where two days later, on Wednesday November 9, they were entertained by the Marquis Spinola, the apostolic nuncio and other personages being present. On Friday they went to Louvain, where they resided until Sunday November 25, when they set out, on their first journey, for Spain, from which they were recalled on Monday November 26, when they had reached Namur. See Ó Cianáin, pp. 43-57. *Irish Sword* II, no. 7, p. 200.

305. a. News of the formation of this company and of the commission to Rathe (Bath) was sent by Edmondés to Salisbury on 4-14 Nov. 1607, and he mentions it again in a letter of 28 Jan. 1607-8. In the first of these letters Edmonds also reports: "young St Leger . . . says also that Henry Ovington has also in like manner protested to him that he had no manner of knowledge of this resolution of the Earls, till the night before his departure, being surprised by that warning and precipitated into the journey, whereof he now repents; and that he would be glad to return if he hoped he might recover his means and the favour of the State. Others have also reported how he has in like manner bemoaned himself unto them." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 632.

In a letter to Salisbury, 2 Dec. 1607, Edmondés encloses one from "Henry Hovenden, whereby it appears how glad he would be to regain his country." *Ibid.* p. 641, and see p. 642.

On 30 December Edmonds reports again to Salisbury; "Henry Hovenden was of late with me to renew his suite for obtaining leave and to be restored to his state in Ireland, and he would fain receive some answer before he embark himself further with Tyrone in his journey. He says there are many other gentlemen, whom he declares as innocent as himself of partaking in any of Tyrone's councils, who have the like desire to return. The discontent is great among them etc." *Ibid.* p. 642.

b. Edmondés was well informed by, amongst others, two agents sent over to him by Salisbury, one Jasper Travers and the other James Rathe, both Anglo-Irish. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 632-3. Travers was soon dropped, upon information given against him by Rathe of "discovering how he is employed by his Lordship (Salisbury) to give information against him (Tyrone) and that he has promised therein to serve Tyrone's turn as well as his Lordship's." *Ibid.* pp. 633-5. "Rathe says that the Munstermen, of which country Travers is, are noted to be always as false as the Devil. Prays God that he (Rathe) may better acquit himself. He is admitted by Tyrone to go with him on his journey, and hopes to work himself into good opinion with him." *Ibid.*

In a letter to Salisbury, 6 Nov, 1607, Rathe mentions an uncle and a brother who were in very close contact with Tyrone. *Ibid.* p. 638; and in a letter of 7 Jan. 1608, to the same, he says explicitly that "his brother has a company." *Ibid.* p. 643. He thus identifies



him with the John Rathe mentioned in no. 305. James Rathe or Bath, had in the previous August carried a message, hidden in a cudgel, to Sir Cormac O'Neill. *Ibid.* p. 424.

306. a. 1607. Nov. 4-14. Brussels. Edmonds to Salisbury. "After the Earl of Tyrone had been at the Court at Beins, where it is said he was very favourably used by the Archduke, and was allowed the grace of personages of the highest rank to speak with the Archduke covered, he came one day hither from Notre Dame de Hal, accompanied by the Earl of Tyrconnel and M'Guire, and the principal persons of their company, and was feasted by the Marquis Spinola, there being also present the Nuncio, and sundry others of the best quality there. He made no longer stay in the town, but only to come to receive that entertainment, and after dinner he returned back to Hal, from whence he is since removed to Louvain." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 631-2.

b. 1607. Nov, 4-14. Brussels. The same to the same. "Tyrone's second son, the colonel of the Irish regiment, came lately to visit him [Edmonds] according to his accustomed manner, professing he grieved his father had such cause given him by the dealing of his Majesty's Ministers. Asked him what his father's grievances were, he said they were many, but that he was not instructed in the particulars of them. Told him that he heard say it was intended to set them forth in print. He said it was true his father had set them down in writing, but he thought it was rather to send them to his Majesty." *Ibid.* pp. 631-2.

c. 1607. Nov. 11-21. Brussels. Edmonds to Salisbury. Tyrone was again in this town two days since, and lay a night at his son's lodging here. He went to visit the Marquis Spinola, and afterwards repaired to the Nuncio, with whom he had a long private conference. The Marquis has now furnished him with money for his journey, so that he is to depart within a day or two at the farthest; and he is said to take with him to the number of forty persons, that by the show of greatness he may make himself the better respected in the places where he goes." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 635.

d. 1607. Nov. 24. Brussels. Bentivoglio, nuncio at Brussels. to Cardinal Barberini. Encloses a letter from Tyrone who arrived a few days ago. The Earls intended to go first to Rome and from thence to Spain. Their purpose in going to Rome is to gain the favour of the Holy Father and through him the favour of the other Catholic Princes, and especially of Spain. Bentivoglio asks Barberini's special intervention with Borghese. The Earl of Tyrone is at Louvain with his people. His age could be fifty or more, and the age of Tyrconnell about forty. *Arch. Hib.*, IV, pp. 241-2.

e. A very inaccurate account of the events at this time is given in James Loache's examination, *ibid.* pp. 358-9. James was from "the Lord Roach's country" (*ibid.* p. 418) and Roache was



probably his own name. He had served as cook under Stanley, and later with "Grave Maurice," "where receiving some disgrace of a Dutchman, he killed him in fight, which made him run away to the Archduke's army". p. 358. He had later returned to London.

307. a. 1607. Nov. 18-28. Brussels. Edmondes to Salisbury. "The Spanish ambassador here expresses an extraordinary desire to maintain amity between his Majesty and the King his master; and after he had speech with him of this matter of Tyrone, he counselled him to speak plainly to the Archduke to make him sensible of that which passed amissed therein, viz. by the entertaining and honouring of the exiles, saying that he would have opposed himself against that which was done if he had been before informed of these particulars which had been related to him since his return from Binche. He prayed him to transfer the performance of these good offices to the King his master, to whom they will be no less needful, which he promised to do. It seems that these speeches have made them better bethink themselves for the taking of a new resolution in some things, as two days since there was a post sent after Tyrone, who was advanced by a day's journey on his way, to call back Fr Florence the friar, with whom after conference there had, he was immediately despatched to Tyrone". *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 638-9.

b. 1607, Nov. 25-Dec. 5. Brussels. Edmondes to Salisbury. Reports orders newly come from Spain to the [Spanish] ambassador here for the staying of Tyrone, that he should not pass into Spain, to avoid giving discontent to his Majesty; whereupon he was immediately called back, being then no further advanced than Namur, and he made his return to Louvaine, from whence he has not stirred." *Ibid.* p. 639.

c. 1607. Dec. 8. Brussels. Bentivoglio to Barberini. Reports Tyrone's intention of going to Rome, and visiting Rome before going to Spain. The Earl had visited him recently, but Bentivoglio was not in a position to put before him the wishes of the Holy See, as at the time he had not received the instructions sent to him on 17 November. After the Earl had begun his journey, a courier arrived from Spain with orders that he was to be made stay in Flanders, and make known his wishes to the King of Spain by letter. The Earl is now in Louvain, and cannot depart without new orders from the King. Bentivoglio will convey to him the wishes of the Holy See. *Arch. Hib.* IV, pp. 242-3.

d. 1607, Dec. 2-12. Brussels. Edmondes to Salisbury. "Supposes that the Archduke will rid his hands of Tyrone as soon as he can, and that he will be shifted from hence to Italy." *Ibid.* p. 639.

e. 1607. Dec. 2-12. Brussels. Bentivoglio to Barberini. Has had the great needs and difficulties of the Holy See conveyed to Tyrone, and has made known to him that all hope must be placed



in the King of Spain. Letters from the Irish archbishop [Lombard] have given the Earl great hope of help from the Holy See. *Ibid.* p. 244.

f. In a postscript Bentivoglio reports a visit to him of an Irish Franciscan [Florence Conry] from Louvain, upon whom he impressed the necessity of reliance upon Spain, for reasons which the Franciscan thought well founded. But he asked where else than in Rome could the Earl find refuge if the King of Spain did not want him either here or in Spain. *Arch. Hib.* IV, pp. 244-6.

g. 1607. Dec. 22. Brussels. Bentivoglio to Barberini. The Archduke wants the Earl to leave the Low Countries. The Franciscan had paid another visit and said he did not know where the Earl could go except to Rome. Bentivoglio had shown him that such a decision, which the Spaniards wanted, would rid them of all future responsibility, and cast it upon the Pope. The Franciscan agreed, and said that this was also the Earl's opinion; and that if the Earl did go to Italy, he would not go to Rome. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, pp. 55-6.

308. a. James Fitzgerald "the Tower Earl" or the Queen's Earl of Desmond. Died in the Tower in 1601. James fits Thomas Fitzgerald "the Sungan Earl" died in the Tower in 1608.

b. 1607. Dec. 9-19. Brussels. Edmondès to Salisbury. "Tyrone has not stirred out of Louvain since he was stayed of his journey, neither does he [Edmondès] hear that he has since been in any great life . . . His son, the colonel, came to visit him [Edmondès] a few days ago, and to request that though it has fallen out so unhappily that his father had incurred his Majesty's displeasure, he [Edmondès] would nevertheless be a means that himself should be no worse thought of, considering that he had no part in his father's fault, but that his friends were to bare the burthen of their own offences." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 641-2.

c. 1607. Dec. 29. Brussels. Bentivoglio to Barberini. Tyrone has not yet left. The Archduke wants him to leave but will not drive him out, and will dissimulate if the departure does not take place at once. The Earl is in a state of doubt about everything, and his purpose seems to be to stay here until the decision comes from Spain, which he expects. *Arch. Hib.* IV, p. 252.

d. 1607. Dec. 23-1608 Jan. 1. Edmondès to Salisbury. "The President Richardot told him that he had signified to the Marquis Spinola, and likewise to the Spanish ambassador, that the Archduke desired they would take order for the ridding of Tyrone out of these parts; but as they are not now in a state here to furnish him with much money for his journey, so he will be as unwilling to dislodge, if he can avoid it, in this uncomfortable time of the year, and to go to a place where he can promise himself no other relief than what may be derived from bulls and benedictions, seeing that Spain disclaims to undertake protection of him. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 642.



313. a. 1607-8. Dec. 30-Jan. 8. Brussels. Edmondés to Salisbury. Reports the decision of Travers to return to London, as he is "held in such suspicion by Tyrone that he dares not make any longer stay here . . . He told me before his departure he had made insinuations with one of the captains of the Irish regiment, called De la Hyde, who, being discontented with his usage here is willing to leave this place and to employ himself for the breaking of the regiment. He (Edmondés) said he would speak with the said captain to know what other service he could do his Majesty; and if he finds him a person of trust, intends to deal with him that he may rather continue the holding of his company, in order that he may the better discover such practices as may hereafter be broached to those who serve in the same regiment." *Ibid.* pp. 642-3.

b. 1608. Jan. 9. Brussels. James Rathe to Salisbury. Understands that within 20 days the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell are to depart towards Rome . . . Tyrone is extremely discontented in regard he has not the Archduke's favour as much as he has had at his first arrival. Has understood that they are determined very shortly to answer the proclamation lately published in England of their disloyalness . . . Priests and friars are the doers of all this; all those that are come with them have, for the most part, a thousand times wished themselves back again. His brother has a company and has procured with Tyrone and their colonel that he (Rathe) should be his ancient. He declined it, fearing it should hinder him of going along with them . . . The regiment is not above 1,000 strong; five companies mustered six days past, and made 500 men, the other nine companies are not so strong as these five; many gentlemen of the English Pale in Ireland are procuring their licences to go home, as Captain Gerald's brother, Sir Edward Fitzgerald's brother, the justice Diloine that was his son, and the Lord Baron of Dunboyne's son, and many else besides." *Ibid.* p. 643.

320. a. 1607. Oct. 21-31. Edmondés reported to Salisbury that he had "repaired to the President Richardot last night . . . and prayed in his Majesty's name that they [the Earls] might not be relieved here . . . but that order might be given for staying them till they should further hear from his Majesty." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 626-7.

b. On 28 Oct.-9 Nov. 1607, Edmondés again reports to Salisbury that yesterday morning he had gone to the President to receive the answer of the Archduke. "It was to the effect that it did not appear that he [Edmondés] had any commission from his Majesty for this demand; and further, that he had no reason to press the Archduke in a matter of such dishonour as no other Princes would yield to, to make himself an instrument for the delivering up, to undergo the rigour of the laws [of England] persons whom for aught they could understand, had offended in



nothing else only in flying from the danger they had apprehended to be intended towards them etc." *Ibid.* pp. 628-30.

The President confessed that the Marquis Spinola intended to invite Tyrone to dinner, and had sent his coach to Tyrone to take him to the Court at Binche, Richardot maintained that the cause of the Earls was one for sympathy rather than accusation; and concluded the interview by asking Edmondes "whether he would not be content if he also were invited to dine with the Marquis Spinola, at such time as Tyrone would be there, to hear what he could alledge for himself." *Ibid.*

c. 1607. Nov. 4-14. Edmondes reports the visit of the Earls to Binche "where it is said he [O'Neill] was very favourably used by the Archduke, and was allowed the grace of personages of the highest rank to speak with the Archduke covered." *Ibid.* pp. 631-2. On this he had been misinformed.

325. 1607. Oct. 7. Information of James Bathe. The information of James Bathe of Drogheda in Ireland, aged 25 years, or thereabouts, brother of Captain John Bathe, captain of the ship of four score tons, furnished with 16 cast pieces of ordnance and three score soldiers, which M'gwyer carried from Dunkirke into Ireland for Tirone. That Father Florence, provincial of the Franciscans, chief adviser of Spain in Irish affairs, came to Spain from Brussels about Christmas last, accompanied by David and Richard Bourke, brothers of M'William's house in Connaught, and Matthew Tuly, secretary to the Earl of Tyrconnell, who went with M'Gwyer in the said ship into Ireland, all three pensioners of Spain. That Matthew Tully went into Spain about Christmas twelve months, and had great favour and access to the Marquis de Caracena, vice-roy and captain-general of Galicia; and reported that he was driven to run away out of England in great danger from the Earl of Salisbury; and soon after his arrival in Spain, he went with the said Marquiss's letters of favour to the Court of Spain, where he was formerly with O'Donell, and had 25 crowns a month pension given unto him, and the arrears thereof, being 180*l.*, was paid to him. That Father Florence has access to the Archduke, who together with the said Bourke, is yet resident at Brussels, Rowrie Albanagh, of the county of Tirone, priest, and steward to Henry O'Neale, Tirone's second son, colonel of the Irish regiment under the Archduke, went from the Low Countries into Ireland about Easter last, and is returned into the Low Countries about a month ago. Nicholas Linche, of Galway, in Ireland, servant to Tirconnell, who served O'Donnell that died in Spain, went from the Low Countries into Ireland about ten weeks past, and is returned back again into the Low Countries. The said Father Florence, Rowrie Albanagh, Matthew Tuly, and Nicholas Linch, were conversant and very great with the said Henry O'Neale, Tirone's son, and were the instruments used in the plot of Tirone and Tirconnell's going out of Ireland. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 301-2.



326. a. 1608. Feb. 14. Sir Arthur Chichester to Salisbury. "Has considered the means that must be used to break the Irish regiment in Flanders, and had had sundry conferences with such as have resorted hither from thence, since the receipt of his Lordship's letters importing this business. Gathers that they would disband of themselves if the fugitive Earls had not come amongst them and dealt with the Archduke for their stay and better usage. There can be no other course now than that the King should entertain and employ them for a time. Thinks they would serve very fitly for the service intended upon the isles of Scotland; and afterwards some of them could be settled there, and others reserved for the plantation and re-peopling of Ulster, where the principal men may be provided for in lands or by entertainment of a longer time, and the common sort will soon vanish or settle themselves. Sends the names of the captains, and is informed that Preston, who is brother to the Viscount Gormanston, and St Lawrence, brother of the baron of Howth, are men of the best esteem among them, and of most power, who will be drawn away upon reasonable conditions, there being, he is informed, some difference between Henry O'Neale the colonel and them, which grew from a speech of Preston's upon Henry's discourse tending to make war and raise troubles within this kingdom; to which he answered, it was not lawful, neither would he ever bear arms against his sovereign; at which Henry, like a true child of his father, took offence. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 414-5.

b. 1608. Feb. 16. Brussels. Bentivoglio to Barberini. The Archduke and the ambassador of Spain continue as much as possible to urge the Earl to go to Rome. The ambassador has asked Bentivoglio whether the Pope would be pleased at this. He answers ambiguously; has explained the position of the Holy See, and has pointed out that Spain received the services and should repay them. The ambassador thinks it is necessary to do away with all suspicion on the part of the King of England, and Bentivoglio is of opinion that the Spaniards will do everything possible to send the Earl to Rome. He will see the Franciscan, and will oppose this as much as possible. Suggests that it would be well to persuade the Archbishop of Armagh of this, that he might persuade the Earl, and especially the Franciscan Father. *Arch. Hib.* IV p. 255.

c. 1608. Feb. 16. Brussels. The same to the same. Owing to the importunities of the English ambassador, and his own great fear lest any hindrance impede the peace [with Holland] the Archduke has ordered the Earl to leave Flanders with his wife and children, without delay. Nothing delays his departure except to have the money which has been promised him. He will travel to Genoa, and halt there until the King shall have made a further decision about him. The Spanish ambassador to Genoa has been ordered by his Majesty to see that he wants for nothing. It has



been reported from Rome that he is to make a hurried visit to the City and return to Genoa. The Franciscan has been to see Bentivoglio again, who will arrange to see him once more. *Ibid.* p. 254.

327. a. According to Ó Cianáin, p. 73, the Earls left Louvain for Rome on Thursday 28 of February, and his subsequent narrative seems to show that he was correct. Edmonds to Salisbury, 18–28 Feb. 1607–8, states that “the Earl of Tyrone departed yesterday from Louvayne, and so puts the date one day earlier. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606–8, p. 649.

b. James Rathe the spy had succeeded in his determination to be in the Earl’s train, as is clear from the State Papers, *loco. cit.* 645–6, Minute of Salisbury to Henry Richardson, under which name Rathe had been instructed to conduct his correspondence through Thomas Young at Florence for John Browne in London, for Mr James Brokesby, and “style of his letters being carried as from one Catholic to another”, which explains the pious tone of the letter from Rome announcing the sending of 40 *Agnus Deis* by Fr Mitford, and a picture of St Francesca Romana. *Ibid.* 655–6.

c. Very soon after, in June, Sir Henry Wootton to Salisbury, announces: “From Rome the party whom he employed particularly to observe the steps of Tyrone is within these four days returned hither in great fear.” *Ibid.* p. 664. And in September Edmonds 1608 is thus able to state that James Rathe “upon whom his Lordship bestowed so much money, went not to Rome with Tyrone, but remained ever since amongst the Irish at Herenthals, and that for bragging there of the correspondance which he had held with his Lordship, he was of late put out of the town by the governor.” *Ibid.* p. 669.

d. 1608–9. Feb. 18–28. Sir Oliver St John to Salisbury. “There has arrived here from among the fugitive traitors in the Low Countries, one Bath, son of the widow of Sir William Waren, dwelling near this place, where Tyrone, at the time of his resort hither, much frequented, who is one of the most ill-disposed people hereabouts. This Bath hath spread many rumours of the estate of the two Earls, and their followers, and seems to have taken notice of their private intentions. Amongst other things he hath reported that Tyrone his Lordship with being an enemy to him, and procuring others to be so too; and that by his direction Dr Chamberlain has in hand a book which is purposed to be published ere long concerning his own apology, and attacking the State for the wrongs done unto him, wherein are many passages slanderous to his Lordship.” *Ibid.* pp. 418–9.

For ‘The Earl of Tyrconnel to the King’, consisting of 44 articles, not dated (1608?) see *C.S.P.Ire.*, 1606–8, pp. 364–74; and for ‘The Earl of Tyrone’s articles’ (18 articles) see *ibid.* pp. 374–63.



328. a. 1608. Jan. 12. Brussels. Edmondes to the Duke of Lorraine. sends a letter to him in French, and encloses a French translation of the proclamation of James I against the Earls. States that the Earls boast their assurance of receiving not only a free passage from his Highness, but also all courtesy and favour. Edmonds is of the opinion that it would not be the will of the Duke if he knew that these people are fugitives and rebels, declared such by the King of England, and having had the door to Spain closed against them by the King, out of regard for the friendship between him and the King of England. For these same reasons the Princes here obliged them to depart. Represents this to the Duke lest by inadvertence something might be done contrary to his intention, of which these fugitives might take advantage in their bad cause to have it serve as a justification with other Princes to whom they may wish to address themselves. Copy. *Cal.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 644-5.

b. 1608. Mar. 30. Brussels. Edmondes to Salisbury. Sends a letter which the Duke of Lorraine has written to him, after the Earl of Tyrone's passage through his country in answer to his [Edmondes'] letter to his Highness; by the conclusion his Lordship may perceive how much Tyrone's insinuations have wrought upon him. *Ibid.* p. 650.

c. For the reception given to the Earls by the Duke when they arrived at his capital city of Nancy, see Ó Cianáin, pp. 77-9.

d. The proclamation against the Earls referred to in note *a* above was published at Westminster by James I on 15-25 October 1607. See *Arch. Hib.* IV, pp. 248-51. A copy was sent by the Nuncio at Brussels, Bentivoglio, to be read by Cardinal Barberini and the Pope. *Ibid.* For another proclamation against the Earls sent by the Nuncio at Brussels, Bentivoglio, on 22 December 1607, see *Arch. Hib.* III, pp. 265-7.

333. a. 1608. April 2. O'Neill and O'Donnell to Peter Lombard. Have received his letter of 22 March, They will not go to Rome until they receive the orders of the Spanish King, lest he abandon them and leave them to the providence of the Pope only. They feel certain that the King will not abandon them, but will treat them most honourably, whether in Milan or in Rome. They beg Lombard to kiss the feet of His Holiness in their name, as they have the greatest confidence in him. *Arch. Hib.* III, pp. 268-9.

b. The Earls arrived in Milan on Saturday, 23 March, and left there for Rome on Saturday April 12, where they arrived on Tuesday April 29. Ó Cianáin, pp. 170ff.

c. 1607-8. March 23-Apr. 3. Brussels. Edmondes to Salisbury. Has been informed that one Shelton an Irishman, is in hand at Louvayne to set forth an apology for the Earl of Tyrone, whereof he had some speech with the Archduke in his last audience etc. *C S P.Ire.* 1606-8, p. 649.



338. 1608. April 1. Brussels. Sir Henry Wotton to Salisbury. "On Saturday last, the 17th of this inst, there came to him one Bowlocke, sometime a soldier in the wars of Ireland under the charge of Sir Charles Wilmot, by whose passport he was licensed to go into France, and from there came into these countries, where he is entertained as a sutler to the Irish regiment. He told him that there had been a general collection lately made among the captains and soldiers of the said regiment for the charge of one Thomas M'Crofte, a friar, who is appointed to go into Ireland to the White Knight and some others, to invite them to take arms against his Majesty, and to be ready to assist the Earl of Tyrone when he should come hither with his forces, which he intends to raise this summer by the help of the Pope and the King of Spain. They are destined (so he says it is commonly spoke among the Irish) to land both in Feagh M'Hue's and M'Guennis's countries. He said, moreover, that the friar was to take shipping either at Ostend or Calais, to pass through England, and to land at Cork or some other port of Munster, and so go to the Abbey of Kilcreaghe, about which place he was born. He described the friar to be a tall, handsome man, of a black complexion, and black hair, somewhat long, and to be of the age of 30 years or thereabout . . . He affirmed that one Connor, who was heretofore *alferez* to the colonel, and five or six others, were ready to go after Tyrone into Italy to procure commissions for the raising of new companies; and that one Captain Symondes and some others were appointed to go into France to make a collection of all the Irish beggars who are there, and to reduce them into companies." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 652-3.

340. a. 1608. May 18. Brussels. Edmondess to Salisbury. "The Irish colonel has taken order for dismissing out of the regiment all the English which served here, as he holds them all for suspected. Divers of the Irish wish to withdraw themselves from hence; but the colonel hinders by all means he can the granting of their passports. The mouths of the priests are full of the report of new troubles, which slanders they try still to publish, though there be no ground for the same. They make to sound high the news of that which is lately fallen out in Ireland." *Ibid.* pp. 656-7.

b. 1608. May 18. Sir Thomas Edmondess to William Trumbull. "What you hear that so great a number of the Irish regiment should disband from hence to pass secretly into Ireland is not true, for contrariwise the Colonel seeketh to hinder the going away of many from hence that have sought to procure their passports. The Colonel has of late dismissed all the English that served amongs them. Of their employing often some instruments from hence to their confederates in Ireland I make no doubt, The ports should be well looked into." *Downshire MSS* II. p. 59.

c. 1608. May 18. Brussels. J. Beaulieu to William Trumbull (at London). "Your Irish news is very strange, and the fact



reputed as foolish and rash as it is wicked and cruel, for those traitors are not likely to have their rebellion seconded by any great succour if they have no other means for it than their Earl of Tyrone . . . Besides the good usage he received at Milan the Count of Fuentes gave him 6,000 cr. and an assignment of 800cr. monthly upon the kingdom of Naples. His son here hath dismissed all the English out of his regiment as suspected unto him". *Ibid.* p. 59f.

344. 1608. May 25. Brussels. Edmondes to Salisbury. Reports of information given by the confidant of Baldwin, amongst the rest: "That they are here in hand to send Fitz-simons, the Jesuit, and two other priests presently into Ireland to give assurance to their partisans there of the coming of succour, and to hold them in courage. Fitz-Simons is allied to many of the principal houses of Ireland, and in the late Queen's time was as he [Edmondes'] remembers, prisoner in the Castle of Dublin. He says it is also in deliberation among them, if they cannot get leave to transport the Irish regiment into Ireland, to procure the discharging of the same under colour of the truce or peace, and to send them afterwards dispersedly into Ireland; but he finds as yet little possibility hereof, howsoever they may discourse of such projects." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1606-8, pp. 660-1.

348. 1608. June 8, Brussels. J. Beaulieu to William Trumbull (in London). The Pope hath bestowed on Tyrone 100 cr. a month and an allowance of bread and wine for 10 persons. *Downshire MSS II* p. 63.

354. 1608. July 5. Brief of Pope Paul V to the Archduke Albert, commending to his favour Henry O'Neill, and also the Irish regiment, which he asks should not be disbanded during the truce with Holand. 'Barberini Latin' 5919. pp. 392-3, in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 92, and IV, pp. 260-1.

358. 1608. Aug. 23. Bentivoglio to Cardinal Barberini. Has received the Cardinal's letter enclosing the brief of his Holiness which commends Henry O'Neill, and the Irish regiment, to the Archduke. When he presents the brief he will do all he can to promote this matter, and the interests of the Earl.

Adds in a postscript that he had already carried out the commission with the Archduke, who assured him that he has always been well disposed to the Irish nation, as the Irish render good service to the army here; but in future he will be even better disposed, so as to conform to the wishes of the Holy Father. *Arch. Hib.* IV, p. 261.

361. 1608. Sept. Certain notes of remembrance touching the plantation and settlement of the escheated lands of Ulster. "You must report to the LL. [Lords of the Council] that we have a son of the Erle of Tyrone of some 7 or 8 years old and an other of Caffar O'Donell, brother of the Erle of Tyreconill. I have committed them to the charge of two of the captains of Ulster. I



would gladly receive directions to dispose of them, and in my opinion the best course would be to send them to some remote parts of England or Scotland to be kept from the knowledge of friends or acquaintance." Rawlinson A.237, fol. 117, in *Arch. Hib.* I, p. 73.

365. 1608. Oct, 21. Bentivoglio to Cardinal Barberini. He has found the Archduke so well disposed on the question of not delivering the son of the Earl of Tyrone to the King of England that he found it unnecessary to use any strong persuasion with him. He found his Highness so fully determined never to permit such a thing, that he did not think it expedient to propose that the youth should be sent to Liège; neither did he think it any more necessary to suggest this to the Archduchess. Should any need arise to ask this, he will do everything he can to see that his Highness remains of the same determination. *Arch. Hib.* IV, pp. 261-2.

370. In register, dated 1609, by error.

372. Documents 372-6, 379-82, 430-36, 439-44, 447-51, which all refer to the care of Hugh O'Donnell by the Augustinian Canonesses, formerly constituted a distinct bundle in carton 1937 of Papiers d'Etat et de l'Audience. They have been rearranged recently, and distributed amongst various *liasses*, as here indicated.

The child was Hugh O'Donnell, mentioned in the list of those who arrived at Brussels with the Earl of Tyrone at the time of the Flight: "The Baron of Donegal, boy heir of the said Earl (Tyrconnell) with the noblewomen who afford him milk, and his two maids, and two gentlemen, husbands of the same women, tutors of the child, who are called Edmund David, of Qulyn, and Hugh Gallchoir, with their two man servants". *Irish Sword* II, 1955, p. 200.

384. 1609. Mar. 1. Brussels. Henry O'Neill to Philip III. Recalls the services of his father, O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone, and of his uncles the O'Donnells, Earls of Tyrconnel, who fought against England for thirty years, until they were obliged to withdraw to the continent and betake themselves to Rome. The Earl of Tyrconnel died in that city as also a brother of the suppliant. As for O'Donnell the Earl, he had died six years ago, at Simancas, whither he had gone to ask the help of his Majesty against the English. Another of the suppliant's uncles perished in a combat in Ireland; so that his father lost his estate and his uncles their lives in the service of Spain. As for the suppliant himself, he had received a pension of 200 crowns, which had enabled him to follow the courses at the university of Salamanca during six years. Afterwards his Majesty had granted him a regiment of his nation in the Low Countries, which he has commanded for the last four years. He wishes to become a knight of the Order of St Iago, as this distinction would be a great encouragement to his fellow countrymen. In margin: Sent to the Privy Council. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 2291.



397. 1609. July 25. The Earl of Salisbury to Sir Thomas Edmondson, from Whitehall. "It hath been strange to me to understand that the Baron of Hoboque doth pretend to have some commission from hence to deal with the Marquis Spinola about the breaking of the Irish regiment, though his Majesty might have just cause to observe it as an argument of no great amity. For I do easily believe that by the colour of dismissing of that regiment upon this conjuncture, all this intention (of an invasion of Ireland by Tyrone) may be covered and executed, so as I should think, that this may now be done of purpose to licentiate them to pass into Ireland to support the party. And therefore you shall do all in that kind, to hinder any such matter, rather than approve it; for they cannot be better than where they are, though you need not say so, as if you had any such direction; for that were to move him to do it, or by not doing what they intend not, to value it as an obligation". Thomas Birch, *Historical view*, p. 305.

403. a. John Rathe received a pardon from James I in 1613, at the instance of William Trumbull, the English agent at Brussels. *Downshire MSS IV*, p. 232 and p. 354; and see index.

b. By an act XI of James I, 1624, the following were attainted, most of whose names appear in these papers: Hugh, late Earl of Tirone; Rory, late earle of Tyreconnel; Hugh Oneyle, late Baron of Dungannon, the eldest sonne of the said earle of Tyrone; Henry Oneyle, second soone of the said earle of Tyrone; Sir Cahir Odogherty, late of Birtecastle in the county of Dunnegall, knight; Conconnaught Maguyre, late of Inniskelling in the county of Fermanagh, esquire; Oghy Oge Ohanlun, eldest sonne of Sir Oghy Ohanlon. esquire; Caffer Odonnell, brother of the late earl of Tirconnell, late of Caffersconse in the said county of Dunnegall, esquire; Donnell Oge Odonnell, late of Dunnegall in the said county of Dunnegall, esquire; Brian oge Mac Mahowne, alias Brian ne Sawagh Mac Mahon, late of Clonleege in the Uppertrough, in the county of Moneghan, gentleman; Art Oge Mac Cormocke Oneyle, late of Clogher in the county of Tyrone, esquire; Henry Hovenden, late of Dungannon in the county of Tyrone, gentleman; Mortagh Oquyn, late of the same, gentleman; Richard Weston, late of Dundalke in the county of Louthe, merchant; John Bathe, late of Donalonge in the said countie of Tyrone, merchant; Christopher Pluncket, late of Dungannon in the said county of Tyrone, gentleman; John Opanty Ohagan, late of the same, gentleman; John Rathe, late of Drogheda, merchant; Hugh Mac Donell Ogallachor, late of Dunnigall, in the said county of Dunnagall, gentleman; Terrelagh Garragh Ogallochar, late of the same, gentleman; Phelim Reagh Mac David, late of the same, gentleman; Edmond Grome Mac David; late of the same, gentleman; Matthew Oge Omultally, late of Dunnegall in the said county of Cunnagall, gent.; Donough Mac Mahowne Obrian, late of Rathmulin in the said county of Dunnegall, gentleman; Teige



Ohennan, late of the same, gentleman; Henry Ohagan, late of Dungannon in the said county of Tyrone, gentleman; Teige Ohagan, late of the same, gentleman; and Teige Modder Oquine, late of the same, gentleman. *Statutes at Large* I, pp. 438f.

406. Cornelius O'Mulrian, Bishop of Killaloe, appointed in 1576; died at Lisbon in 1616. Brady, *Episcopal succession* II, p. 119.

415. Entered again under 2 Sept. at fol. 445v.

416. 1. Perhaps the Tobin mentioned by Edward Eustace in his letter from Paris to William Trumble, ambassador at Brussels, 6 Oct. 1613. *Downshire MSS* IV, p. 213.

2. 1609. Aug. 30. Brussels. Sir Thomas Edmondson to the Archduke Albert. Mentions the great and extraordinary advantages granted to the Irish regiment and to individuals of that nation, and wishes to have an assurance from the Archduke that the regiment will do no disservice to the King of England. Affirms that O'Neill's son, the colonel of the regiment, who had left for Spain, had before his departure endeavoured to dispose some of the principal members of the regiment for an enterprise in Ireland. *Downshire MSS* II, pp. 118f.

419. 1609. Sept. 13. Brussels. William Trumbull to Sir Thomas Edmondson. Gives an account of an interview he had "when I was ready to close this letter" with an Irish Franciscan friar, "tutor to the late Earl of Tyrconnel's son". The friar reported that "Florence Mac Carty the titular bishop of Twince in Ireland" [by whom he must have meant Florence Conry, archbishop of Tuam] had in mind to withdraw the child to Spain. The friar himself thought it would be better for the child and for his Majesty's service if he were sent to his mother and other friends in England. Trumbull agreed to report the matter to Edmondson. *Downshire MSS* II, p. 114f. For the answer of Sir Thomas Edmondson see *ibid.* p. 144. "I think it will be your best course to answer to all such motions that you have been advised from hence to forbear the propounding of them to the State in this time of great jealousy and suspicion."

429. a. 1609. Sept. 20. William Trumbull to Sir Thomas Edmondson. Reports division within the Irish regiment, and is of the opinion that if this is fomented in some underhand way, the regiment cannot long stand. The Irish religious are greatly discontented with the promotion of Florence Mac Carty [Conry] and there is almost a deadly feud between the Old Irish and the Anglo-Irish laymen. *Downshire MSS* II, p. 132.

b. 1609. Sept. 25. William Trumbull to the same. The two Irish companies of Captain Driscoll and Captain Gerard, recently moved from Rynberck, have been ordered to proceed to Dunkirk, to embark there in the fleet. The other Irish regiments are stationed in the coast towns of Hulst, Damme and Ostend, from which they can easily be transported to any destination in



Christendom; except one company, which is in Herendall. He thinks there is some purpose in this. *Ibid.* p. 135.

c. 1609. Oct. 11 and 12. Trumbull to the same. Questions whether it would be wise to reduce all the Irish serving in Flanders to despair for want of some reasonable contentment. Would it not be wiser to maintain a party in the regiment which would make known any malicious practices in hand, and counterbalance those who are passionately devoted to the Colonel and his part? *Ibid.* p. 151.

d. 1609. Oct. 12. Brussels. Trumbull to the same. Reports that Henry O'Neill has written [from Spain] that the King there is displeased with the Archduke Albert for his ill usage of the Irish regiment, of which his Majesty has a special care. O'Neill hopes to return soon from Spain with orders to give his captains full satisfaction. However, letters from Madrid report that O'Neill is there "full of grief and discontent". *Ibid.* p. 153.

435. 1609-10. Mar. 8-18. London. Sir Thomas Edmondson to William Trumbull. "For that which you wish to be thought of concerning the breaking of the Irish regiment, I must tell you that it is vain to make such propositions here, for that our State is of opinion that it is better those men should live in any sort there than to have any of them to return into Ireland, and there is very little care taken here of dangers which do not nearer press us." *Downshire MSS II*, p. 258.

446. 1610. Sept. 19. Brussels. William Trumbull to Robert Earl of Salisbury. Reports that the apprehending of Baldwin has been followed by the death of the Irish colonel [Henry O'Neill] and of Jacomo Francisco, "a professed enemy of our state and of the other's practices, who died at Maestricht last Thursday, "some say of poison and others of witchcraft". *Downshire MSS II*, p. 363; and see p. 379.

451. 1610. Dec. 15. Examination of Francis Magner, sailor of Ratcliffe, near London. His meeting with Fr Patrick, who tried to persuade him to join some troops to be sent to the King of Spain to persuade the Irish to rebel. Plots to seize Dublin Castle and to send the Irish regiment from Flanders. Met the Earl of Tyrone and Sir William Stanley at the Spanish Court. *C.S.P.Dom. James I*, 1603-10, p. 652.

459. 1611. Trumbull to Sir J. Digbye. "Our Irish, having added some experience to their valour, thinke all the world is not comparable to themselves for the warrs. And to the end they may keepe their troopes on foote, to make use of any opportunity which our negligence may offer them, they have, by ye Councill and approbation of Spain, sent one Conor-og-Orelli to command their troopes in Poland, and to keepe them together until they do us a mischief in Ireland. Yt is bruited heere that the King of Poland, having gotten Muscov and Smolenske, may in shorte time become master of the whole Kingdom of Muscovie and Russland.



Heere is the Lady Florence Mac-Cary, very diligent in negotiating with these princes for some evill purpose, as some thinke, and as others conceive, for meanes to carry her into Spaine." *H.M.C., Wingfield Digby MSS* p. 529.

460. Bath later applied to James I for a pardon, but was refused. *Downshire MSS* IV, p. 320, John Packer to William Trumbull.

466. Ichingham is mentioned as one of those who stayed to serve in Flanders after the departure of the Earls: Don Cormaco Oneill, Don Ferdinando Oneill, Don Hugo Oneill Bernardi, nephew of the said Earl, Jorge Igingham, gentleman, Dionisio Hagan, gentleman; Jorge Moor, gentleman; Don Hugo Oneill Enrici, Estevan Batheo, gentlemen; Pedro Preston, gentleman, Patricio Oquine, gentleman; Patricio Ratheo. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 1749. See *Irish Sword*, II, no. 7, p. 201.

472. 1611. Sept. 12-22. W. Trumbull to Sir J. Digby. "The Irish regiment serving here is much increased. All comers are received, and none allowed to leave. The Friars (who rule the roste here) have sent one Conor Ogorelle to be colonel of those troops which serve under the King of Poland. They brag that Tyrone will come into Spain. and Owen with him. If the one be likely, the other is not improbable, for they are both ye favourites of Secretary Mancicidor, especially ye powder traytour," *H.M.C., Wingfield Digby MSS* p. 535.

481. a. 1611. Pay of six companies of Irish infantry in the province of Flanders, 2,390 crowns. To the friars of the Order of St Francis, of the Irish Province, 91  $\frac{2}{3}$  crowns. To the seminary of the Irish students at Douai, 166  $\frac{2}{3}$  crowns. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 626, year 1611.

b. 1611. Dec. 21. "The late earl of Tyrconnell's sister [*Nuala O'Donnel*] is returned hither from Rome with a pension of 60 crowns by the month, having brought hither the titular Archbishop of Dublin her companie. She is to have ye care of educating her nephew in Louvain; and he is authorised (as I understand) to quench ye fire of dissension, which burneth in ye Irish regiment." Turnbull to Sir J. Digby, *H.M.C., Wingfield Digby MSS* p. 550.

485. On 25 January 1612 Don Dionisio McCarty requested Trumbull to send him a passport by the bearer, so that he might set out for England, *Downshire MSS* III, p. 220.

487. 1611-12. Feb. 13-23. Brussels. William Trumbull to the Secretary of State. Reports that some of the Irish who pretend to be loyal to his Majesty, especially Thomas Shelton and Captain Rathfert, have asked him very earnestly to approach his Excellency with a view to a reconciliation with his Majesty of the Earl of Tyrone, by whom they have been authorised. A grievance between his Majesty and the King of Spain would mean that the Earl would be sent over to Ireland to destroy the new plantations and kindle another rebellion there. The Irish regiment can furnish



400 able commanders, and they have many friends and allies in Ireland. The Earl himself "never had reason to know the Pope and the Spaniards so well by relation of others as now he hath by his own experience." He will accept reasonable conditions at his Majesty's hands. *Downshire MSS III*, pp. 236f.

522. Very probably the Richard Morres of Templemore who informed Salisbury that "he saw one of the books among the Irish soldiers, and set forth by the friars at Louvaine, confirming their own religion, and to the contrary infirming and refusing that of the Protestants, in such sort that infinite hearers and readers of the Irish will presently believe the contents thereof to be true." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1611-14, pp. 184-5.

Morres continues the statement: "finally the said Richard affirmeth according to the information of the soldiers in Flanders that know Oge O'Reilly, pensioner of 50 crowns a month, that he went with the King of Spain's letters into Holland, accompanied by a couple of friars in the habit of soldiers, hoping to draw the Irish soldiers at Denmark and Sweden into Holland, and himself to be a colonel bearing dominion over them. But God cutt off all their contrary intentions therein, and preserve, maintain, exalt and augment the King and the Privy Council of England." *Ibid.*

526. a. 1612. Sept. 3. Brussels. William Trumbull to James I. Reports that on last Thursday the son of the late Earl of Tyrconnell was confirmed by the titular Bishop of Dublin [Eugene Matthews] at the English convent at Brussels. The Archduke was his godfather, and he was given the name Albert. The Irish regiment is certainly maintained for no other purpose than to invade England in case of any trouble between the King of England and the King of Spain. *Downshire MSS III*, p. 361.

b. For the convent of the English nuns, founded in 1598 in the "street called Hietegatt" see *The [Edinburgh] Catholic Magazine, new series, vol. II, no. XIX, August 1838*, pp. 487ff.

537. a. 1612. Nov. 29. Rome. Cardinal Barberini to Bentivoglio, nuncio at Brussels. William Gibene, an Irish heretic, who has fought for the last ten years in Holland against the Catholic religion, under Count Maurice, but has been converted at Rome of his own free will, wishes to fight for the true faith as much and more than he fought formerly for the opposing side. Wishes to be commended to the colonel of the Irish regiment, that he may be granted as soon as possible the place of a soldier, with the means of honest maintenance. *Arch. Hib.* IV, p. 267.

b. 1612. Dec. 3. William Trumbull to King James I. Reports information given by an unnamed Irishman, but probably Fergus Donnel, son of Hugh Donnel of Tene Kelly, concerning a confederacy between the King of Spain and the Pope to send 6,000 men into the realm of Ireland. *Downshire MSS III*, pp. 425ff.

c. Shortly after, Fergus Donnell was granted a pension by James I for his services. *Ibid.* III, 449, where it is stated: "For



breaking the whole Irish regiment, it is impossible, their conditions there being so good, and so little to be promised at home. Therefore never deal upon the whole body, but find out some particular men amongst them discontented of the reasons of their fortunes, and work upon such to discover the designs of the rest."

549. 1613. Apr. 6. Cardinal Barberini to Spinola. Captain Robert Daniel, an Irish gentleman has asked the Cardinal's good services with the Marquis. He has represented that he had served the Catholic King in Flanders for twenty years, and as he is now old, and is afflicted by gout, and unable for further service, he wishes to be allowed to serve in future in the castle at Antwerp with the same grant as he enjoys at present. *Arch. Hib.* IV, p. 283-4.

553. 1613. Apr. 26-May 5. William Trumbull to James I. "The Irish regiment is not without very great perplexity and strong apprehensions that the severity of the incumbent reformation specified in my precedent letters will extend itself as well to some of their companies, as to their extraordinary pensions and entertainments, which for the greater part are conferred upon the more rude and barbarous men of that nation, and such as are of least power to do the King of Spain services." *Downshire MSS* IV, p. 96.

571. a. 1613. Oct. 14. In a report of the strength of the Spanish armies in the Low Countries, under this date, the Irish regiment is stated to have 84 officers, 1,020 men, 8 pensioners, and one dead place. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 628.

b. 1613. Oct. 22. Examination of Shane M'Phelemy O'Donnelly (taken before Sir Toby Caulfield). Shane M'Phelemy O'Donnelly saith that about the end of May last he was at Mass upon a Sunday in a glen in Brian M'Guire's country, between Fermanagh and Tyrone, when Tyrologh M'Croddyn (a friar lately come from beyond the seas) said the Mass and was preaching most of the day. Said that he was come from the Pope to persuade them not to change their religion, but rather to go into rebellion . . . Bade them be of good courage, for Tyrone was coming at the head of 18,000 men sent by the King of Spain." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1611-14, p. 431.

c. 1613. Oct. 22. Viscount Rochester to William Trumbull. "My meaning to write concerning Tyrone's petition made me conceive I had already done it and so it was forgotten. The king's answer then was that his petition and the terms of your conference with the friar were very different; the former so high and arrogant that it was unfit for H.M. to grant. You may pretend to the friar that the one to whom you directed it thought it were not fit to present to H.M. lest it should work a greater distaste towards him. From your letter I remember he proposed to quit his estate in Ireland and live in England, receiving a yearly pension and his son remaining a hostage. If this were moved submissively as his



own suit you may let him know that it might possibly be entertained." *Downshire MSS IV*, p. 233.

In a note the name of the friar is said to have been Hugh MacAgnan, prefect of the Irish Franciscans in Flanders, and reference is given to *C.S.P. Flanders*, vol. X, ff. 283-312. This is no doubt an error for MacAingéal, better known as MacCaughwell.

d. The negotiations here referred to were brought to an end by instructions sent to Trumbull by Robert, Earl of Somerset, from Whitehall, on 3 July 1614. "It is his Majesty's pleasure that you forbear from further treaty with the friar or any other touching Tyrone, in expectation of being received to H.M.'s grace upon those terms of restitution to his dignity and lands in Ireland, because that would disjoint the whole course which H.M. hath been so careful to settle in that country." *Downshire MSS IV*, 449. It was required that O'Neill should submit altogether to the King's mercy, and place himself and his wife and children in the King's hands, and accept the conditions of entertainment in England which the King would think fit or otherwise to offer on his own conditions.

574. 1614. A discourse of the present estate of Ireland, 1614. Per. G. C. "Secondly, the mere Irish, by their travel abroad, are civilised, grown to be disciplined soldiers, scholars, politicians, and further instructed in the points of religion than accustomed, whereby the ancient dislike and contempt is laid aside." *Calendar of Carew MSS*, 1603-24, p. 305.

575. a. 1614. Apr. 4-14. Venice. Sir Dudley Carleton to William Trumbull. Has heard that Tyrone will soon leave Rome and spreads the rumour that he intends to go and settle in Brussels. His real purpose is to go by way of Brussels to Ireland, and take the Irish companies from the Low Countries to Ireland and start a rebellion. *Downshire MSS IV*, p. 348; and see *ibid.* 386, 1614, April 22. Whitehall, Sir Raphe Windwood to Trumbull, reporting from Rome that Tyrone is treating with the Pope for a supply of money and has asked for a safe conduct, refused, from the French ambassador de Breves.

b. A similar rumour from Rome had reached George Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury, who reports it to Trumbull from Lambeth on 20 April 1614. *Ibid.* pp. 378-9. He has heard that the Archduke has been approached to arrange that the Irish regiment may go to Ireland; and that a nobleman of Rome has actually sold his estate in order to facilitate the Earl's return to his own country. "If it be so, the pope, who is miserable enough and unwilling to part with money, doth underhand give him some assistance." The archbishop himself is rather incredulous of all this, and adds, of Tyrone: "He is grown old and drunken, and his friends O'Donnell, Terconnell and Maguire are dead; so are two of his sons, and he is somewhat neglected by the Spaniards, so that whereas he was wont to ride in Rome in the coach of the



*Spanish ambassador* Franciscus de Castro, he now goes on foot or keeps within doors, and his Spanish pension of 400 cr. a month is ill paid, so that the old fox, in my opinion, if he be not desperate, will make show of coming to Ireland twice before he come once."

c. 1614. May 26. Whitehall. Robert Earl of Somerset to Trumbull. Instructs him: "In the meantime you are to omit no means that may nourish distaste and distractions among the Irish there." *Ibid.* p. 412.

576. a. For a report of the Irish regiment at this time see *C.S.P. Ire.* 1611-14, p. 485, June 8, 1614: State of the Irish regiment now serving the King of Spain in the Netherlands: The Colonel's company, 140 men; Captain Preston's, 150; Captain Fitzgerald's, 140; Captain Cartyess, 100; Captain Art O'Neale's, 90; Captain Driscoll's, 120; Captain Garland's, 130. Scottish company and the rest of the English company now commanded by Captain Paul Raddock (Vadock?) 180. Total: 1,050.

This is the true state of the Irish regiment within 20 or 30. The last muster they were but 1,040 men; but since, it is thought that number is increased.

b. (June 8, 1614). State of the Irish regiment and new levies. State of the Irish regiment now taken out of the King of Spain's book, and of the new levies made by the Archduke, Maestro de Campo, officials 7, soldiers 103.; Captain O'Driscoll, 8; 104; Captain Garland, 10; 151; Captain Don Arturo O'Neale, 7; 110; Captain Paul Reduc (Vaddock) 10; 134; Captain Don Thadeus Carty, 9; 111; Captain Geraldus (Fitzgerald) 10; 118; Captain Preston, 9; 15. Total: 70; 981. 90 entretenidos: 90. Total: 160; 981. *Ibid.*

c. It is not improbable that this very accurate account of the Irish regiment was sent in answer to a request made by Sir Raphe Windwood to William Trumbull, ambassador at Brussels, in his letter of 23 May 1614. See *Downshire MSS IV*, p. 408. Two months later Trumbull reports that the regiment has increased by 200 men, but that the accomodation for them was not sufficient. *Ibid.* 451. Winwood was of the opinion that the money paid to the Irish merchants for the levying of soldiers for the Low Countries was possibly used in Ireland, to strengthen disloyalty there. *Ibid.* 455. 1614. July 9. Whitehall. Sir Ralph Winwood to Trumbull.

579. a. 1614. Dec. 20. Sir Humphrey May to the Lord Deputy. Requests that Owny ny Shyle, who fled with the Countess of Tyrone, be allowed to return to her husband. Enclosing: The humble petition of Nicholas Hollywood of Tartayne, co. Dublin, gent., to the King, that his wife, Owny ny Shyle, may have licence to return and live with him. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1611-14, p. 536.

b. 1615. Oct. 7. [Sir R. Winwood] to the Lord Deputy. By letters out of Italy, one Nicholas Holliwood, of the Holliwoods by Dublin, has been with Tyrone at Rome, and made large reports to him of the affairs of Ireland and of the secretest things that



are handled there by his Lordship and the rest; whereof they that are beyond boast that they have often notice by such as are in near place about the Lord Deputy. How true this is he (the Deputy) will be best able to judge, Doubts not that he will be careful to look into a business of so great importance as this. Hears this Holliwod married Tyrone's wife's foster sister, and is returned into that kingdom with her." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1615-25, p. 91.

581. For rumours that Tyrone is about to leave Rome and return to the Low Countries, see *Downshire MSS.* IV, pp. 378f. and 452.

585. 1615, Oct. 3. Sir R. Winwood to the Lord Deputy. Writes in behalf of the bearer, Captain Preston, brother of Viscount Gormanston, at the suit of Mr Trumbull, his Majesty's agent with the Archduke. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1615, p. 91.

588. 1616. Feb. 9. Madrid. Philip III to Francisco de Castro, Spanish ambassador at Rome. Has seen his two letters of December 8 and 9 respectively, and care is being given to see to the preservation of the Irish regiment serving in Flanders, as you note. de Castro may inform the Earl of Tyrone of this, and care will be taken to provide for Don Juan his nephew [*sobrino*] as is proper, from the first pensions vacant of those which are granted to the gentlemen of his nation. Archives of the Spanish embassy to the Holy See, Rome, legajo 56, fol. 214. Copy. The original is in the same bundle, fol. 215, but is badly injured by fire. *Nephew* is apparently an error for *son*.

599. While Tryone was in Mounster, a disastrous action hapned, upon the . . . day of February, Tyrone with his Hellhounds being not farre from Corke, Sir Warham St Ledger and Sir Henry Power (who after the death of Sir Thomas Norris, Lord President of Mounster in the vacancie of a President had been established Commissioners for the government of the Province) riding out of the Cittie for recreation to take the aire, accompanied with sundry Captaines and Gentlemen with a few Horse for their Guard, and not dreaming of an enemy neere at hand, carelessly riding every one as he thought good, within a mile of the towne or little more, Sir Warham St Leger and one of his servants a little stragling from his companies, was in a narrow way suddenly charged by Mac Guire, who with some horse (likewise dispersed) had spread a good circuit of ground, in hope either to get some bootie, or to have the killing of some subjects, they charged each other. Sir Warham discharged his pistoll, and shot the traytor; and hee was strucken with the others horsemans staffe in the head, of which wounds either of them dyed; but none else on either side was slaine." *Strafford, Pacata Hibernia*, pp. 39f.

606 a Documents 605, 606 and 607 were placed at the disposal of the late T. M. Healy, who published them in *The Planters' Progress*, Dublin, 1921, pp. 67-8, with due acknowledgement to the present editor, but without the references.



b. In *État et Audience*, liasse 1913, there is a document, with no indication of place or date, and headed: A petition of the English Agent: "Gentlemen. We have seen and examined the request (which we send inclosed) presented by the Agent of his Majesty of Great Britain, complaining of the special suffering and loss inflicted by certain Irish pirates now detained in this town; and by Robert Alexander, vassal of the said King, with the object of obtaining restitution and indemnification for his said loss . . . by the criminal process before us . . . of this town, and the said prisoners, who number twenty, by order of the Archdukes, it has been ascertained that the said Robert and his ship were [taken] at sea by the said prisoners . . ." The document is incomplete and partly illegible, due to damage.

610. For the transportation of Arte Oge O'Hanlon and others see *C.S.P. Ire. 1611-1614*, introduction, pp. xxviiiiff., where a summary of the whole proceeding is given with references; "And Chichester in 1614 enumerates among his public services, that he had sent away 6,000 to the wars in Sweden . . . The Irish not affecting the Swedish service, Chichester twice urged the Privy Council that they might be employed in the service of Russia rather than that of Sweden . . . but it does not appear that his course was adopted." Chichester sent an interesting list of the principal Ulstermen bound for Sweden "for high treason" with their histories and characters annexed: Arte oge O'Neale: is nearly allied in blood to the Earl of Tyrone; was a special leader with O'Dogherty . . . Ogy oge O'Hanlon: is nephew to the Earl of Tyrone; heir to Sir Ogy O'Hanlon, lord of a great country; has forfeited his inheritance by entering into action of Rebellion with O'Dogherty; of mutinous disposition, and without doubt a traitor in his heart and will be ready to undertake any mischief . . . Before the 31st October the "Sea Flower" of London and her two consorts sailed from Derry with 800 men under Sir Robert Stewart. A further ship sailed with men, from Carlingford, was cast on the Isle of Man, and nearly wrecked, but was carried into Scotland. The men were there transferred to a new ship, which however was driven into Newcastle, where "a body of these Irish escaped with Hugh Boy O'Neile, a son of Sir Tirlough M'Henry O'Neale's . . . a branch of an ill tree, who had a hand from first to last in all their villanies, and was a chief man in running away of those that were gone."

613. On August 16, 1617, Brian O'Neill, son of Hugh the Earl, was murdered in the royal Court at Brussels, where he was page to the Infanta Isabella. The most detailed account of this is the one given by Fr Donogh Mooney, published in *Analecta Hibernica* VI, pp. 127-30. Meehan's account, though often referred to as a translation of Mooney, is somewhat fanciful. See his *Rise and fall of the Franciscan monasteries*, 5th edit. Dublin, 1877. pp. 15-17. A brief reference is found in a letter of Lord George Carew to



Sir Thomas Roe, *Cal.S.P.Dom.* 1611-18, p. 515. "Sept. (1617). The Earl of Tyrone's younger son Brian, at Brussels, found hanged with his hands tied behind him, but the murderer unknown." A further reference is made in a letter of the nuncio at Brussels, Lucio Morra, to Cardinal Barberini, 7 Oct. 1617, in which however, the name Philip is used instead of Brian: "Many of the [Irish] Franciscans have told me that it is clear that the death of Don Philippo ONel, the Irishman, was brought about by others through intermediaries, but they had not made known their names. One of these religious has left for Rome, and he told me he would speak of it to your Eminence. Others say that Don Philip himself was the author, and some persons of standing say they hold this to be certain, and in particular Spinola, by whose orders two serving men (*staffieri vassoni*) one of whom waited upon the deceased and the other, Don Ugo Onel, his cousin, have been placed under arrest; likewise Ensign Onel has been imprisoned, who also is related to the deceased and is brother of the lieutenant-colonel of the Irish regiment. It is well said that nothing relevant is proved against them, and consequently it is believed they will be released." *Arch. Hib.*, IV, pp. 300-301.

614. 1612. Sept. 23. Names of the prisoners in the Tower. "The Lady Arabella . . . Mr Patrick Rewthan, Sir Cormac O'Neale, brother to Tyrone, Sir Donal O'Cane, Sir Neale Garvey . . . Mr Nactan O'Donnel son of Sir Neale Garvey, William Baldwin, Jesuite. *C.S.P.Dom.*, 1616-18, p. 148.

747. a. 1621. Mar. 24. London. Chamberlain to Carleton. "The Polish ambassador has had an audience, and requests men to resist the Turk. The King promises well. It is thought he will have leave to raise Scotch or Irish troops, there being 3,000 Scotch families in Poland. The Venetian ambassador is allowed to raise and transport 3,000 men". *C.S.P.Dom.*, 1619-23, p. 237.

b. 1621. April 23. Locke to Carleton. "The Polish ambassador is allowed to levy 8,000 volunteers, and Sir Art. Aston is to be their leader." *Ibid.* p. 249.

c. 1621. July 14. Chamberlain to Carleton. "The Polish ambassador has £12,000 lent towards conveying his Irish regiment." *Ibid.* p. 276.

777. Carte, *Life of Ormonde*, I, p. 46, gives some account of the recruiting done at this time by Captain Delahoid and others who were granted commissions: "There were in the remote parts of the Kingdom and especially in the late plantations, great numbers of idle, young and active fellows, who being unprovided for a livelihood, and not caring to earn it at the sweat of their brow, were full of complaints, eager after alterations, and fit for a rebellion, whenever the least opportunity should offer. King James imagined that it would be a service to the country, and a means of preserving it in peace, to drain it of these fellows, and



therefore had given leave for their entering into foreign service: either not considering the danger to which he exposed his Government, as well by their getting together in great bodies before they embarked, as by their learning the art of war whilst they served abroad, from whence they might return upon occasion to practise it at home; or else sacrificing his apprehensions to the passion he had of gratifying the Court of Spain, at a time when he was treating of his son's match with the Infanta. Some Irish captains came over early in the summer to make these levies, and though there was no want of men, they yet thought fit to proceed slowly, and lingered away the time till the approach of winter, when they advanced with their men in different bodies to Dublin, though they had provided no shipping wherein to transport them. The Lord Falkland was then Deputy, and the Council saw their danger, and therefore hastened the embarkation as much as possible, giving all the assistance to it that was in their power. It was with some difficulty that they got Captain Fiz-Garret off with two hundred men; but Captain Delahyde with three hundred more, made a longer stay in the neighbourhood of the city, laying his soldiers all the while upon the country, which was shamefully burthened and harassed by them. The other captains were all followers of Tyrone's heir, and particularly Macgwire (the eldest son of Coconaght was slain, and his estate forfeited in the rebellion, and a man of very malicious spirit himself) loytered away their time in Ulster; and neglecting the orders and limits prescribed them by the late Lords Justices (in whose time they arrived) allowed their men, who were for the most part dangerous persons, and formerly distinguished by their seditious and turbulent behaviour, to range up and down the country in great troops, committing frequent spoils, and robberies, to the great grievance of many, and the terror of all his Majesty's good subjects. Macgwire, if he had been so disposed, might have long before dispatched what he came for, made his levies, and sent away greater numbers than he wanted to transport; but he chose rather to employ his time in spying the country, travelling over Fermanagh, Monaghan, Donegal and other Counties, curiously observing all parts and places, making himself acquainted with all the principal and dangerous persons in those parts, and enticing away the children from twelve years of age and upwards, to be conveyed for their education into foreign countries."

780. Probably the same as the Ensign Patrick Donnelly mentioned under 16 April 1621. In the examination on 14 Mar. 1627 B. O'Hogan alias O'Hagan, states that "in Thomond last May he had met Captain Patrick O'Donnelly disguised as a scholar, who had been sent by Tyrone to inspect all the sea-coast forts in Ireland. He had landed in Wexford, and had seen Dublin, Newry, Down, Knockfergus, Coleraine, Derry, Ballyshannon, and Limerick. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 217.



848. For documents from the Brussels archives relating to Thomas MacMoris, see *Arch. Hib.* XII, pp. 121-5. For documents from the Vatican archives, see *Collectanea Hibernica* I, pp. 57-9.

859. 1623. June 17. Brussels. Giovanni Francesco Guido del Bagno, nuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Ludovico Ludovisi. The earls of Tyrone petition the Pope that on the occasion of the marriage of the Prince of Wales liberty of conscience be sought for Ireland; request also that they may be commended to the King of Spain. 'Barberini Latini' 6813, fol. 28, in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 103.

Urban VIII wrote to the king of Spain on 3 Feb. 1624, asking his intercession with England for Tyrone and Tyrconnell; and again to the King of Spain on 27 July 1624 in favour of the same earls. On the same date he wrote to Tyrone and Tyrconnell themselves, *Ibid.* 2193, ff. 221v-222r.; 2196, fol. 183r., and 183v-184, *Arch. Hib.*, XVIII, p. 76.

866. Archibald Campbell, seventh Earl of Argyle, who is said to have fled to Flanders from his debtors in 1619, and to have been attainted on account of being in the Spanish service. See *Dictionary of National Biography*.

873. a. For movements in Ireland at this time see *C.S.P.Ire.* 1615-25.

b. Sir Francis Annesley to Sir Edward Conway, Dublin, 27 Mar. 1624. "There is a whispering here that the Irish regiment in the Low Countries is discharged, and that they are coming over into this Kingdom with no good purpose." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1615-25, pp. 473-4.

c. An extract out of the advertisement received 21 April 1624, from a creditable person and a native. "All this last year the Spaniard has been taking up an extraordinary army, as well for the sea as for the land, pretending to be beforehand with the King of England; and sent directions to Naples and the Low Countries for the like provision, and to the Indies, also gathers as many Irish as he can, and had the regiment of the Irish in the Low Countries enforced double to that which they were in the beginning of March, and endeavours to add more daily to them." *Ibid.* p. 486.

d. 1624. May 18. Abstract from a letter from Sir Charles Coote on the 18th May. "One Connor M'Iward, a Franciscan friar, is a native of the county Tirconnell from whence he is gone to Gallway. He lay one night in a friend's house of his (Sir Charles Coote's) to whom he revealed as a great secret, that he and five priests and friars were to go to Scotland to endeavour to gain some of the nobility or chief gentlemen of that kingdom to their religion and party, and to promise any such as should come to them all countenance, favour and support from the King of Spain and the Pope." *Ibid.* p. 492.

e. — to Conway, relating to the Franciscan friar. *Ibid.* 9, 497.



f. Extract of a letter to the Irish Lord Deputy from a loyal-hearted Papist. Endorsed as received on 17 June 1624. "A servant of his who had been these two years past in the Low Countries, and served under the command of Tyrone, and has now come home, and tells him that the [Spanish] match is broken, to the great joy of the fugitives, in expectation of their sending for Ireland by the Spaniard with the strong assistance of an army . . . As for the Palatinate, that the King of Spain's last answer to the King of England was that he would not restore the Palatinate, and that if the King did set for the restoring of it, that he (the King of Spain) would restore the fugitives to their possessions . . . That in the Low Countries they make no question but that Tyrone, with the rest of the fugitives, assisted with a great army, will be sent for this kingdom, and that all their shipping and other necessaries are ready to come upon a sudden, and that they expect a general insurrection in this unhappy kingdom (Ireland) for their assistance." He reports that the Irish regiment has but sixteen companies, and that their strength is about 2,500, and that they were to entertain all the Irish beyond the seas, excepting those of Poland." *Ibid.* p. 504.

g. June 1624. Propositions touching Ireland on the report of the invasion of Ireland by the Spaniards. That the Spaniard will speedily invade Ireland is not unlikely, and that his invasion will be made principally by the Irish lying in his dominions is as likely. Then it is most probable they will make their descent where their title and their kinsmen and ancient followers shall induce them, and where there is already built places of strength for establishing their footing, so as the north is the place most to be feared, where the countries of Tyrone and Tyrconnell bordering upon Londonderry is most affected by their chiefs, which places, with the rest of the escheated counties and the county of Antrim, should be well provided with armed and trained soldiers to resist them." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1615-25. p. 510.

h. July 1624. Council of War for Ireland to the Privy Council. "Have considered the best means for the securing of Ireland . . . suggest that the titular popish priests, prelates, and Jesuits . . . be proceeded withal according to the laws of that kingdom, and that of the 21st Jan. 1623 for banishing them out of that kingdom be forthwith revived, proclaimed, and put in strict execution." *Ibid.* p. 511.

i. 1624, Oct. 23. Falkland to Conway. Forwards the enclosed which came to his hands last night. "For first the letter out of Spain, which is the ground of all, is of late date, and the time set down for the army pretended to be designed for this kingdom is suggested to be the very depth of winter, before which time most of their men will be wearied or worn out in the siege of Breda, or otherwise be interrupted by the activity of those forces employed under the Count Maunsfeyld," *Ibid.* p. 533.



j. Enclosed: Sir Thomas Roper to the Lord Deputy of Ireland. Bantry, 8 Oct. 1624. Received 22 Oct. 1624. "Lest letters should miscarry, sends him the bearer, who can acquaint him with the whole state of a business of great import to him . . . as for the friar, that wicked instrument who is employed in these mischievous intentions, the bearer informed him that he is now at Berehaven, and bound for Spain . . . The gentleman now sent can relate their project, and will bring along with him the man who has discovered the whole plot, with such letters as have been written to him out of Spain." *Ibid.*

k. 1624. Oct. 17. The Earl of Cork to the Lord Deputy. "Even now as he alighted from holding the provincial sitting at Clonmel, Peregrere Banister and Harbert Nicholas brought him the enclosed letters from Sir Thomas Roper, and the friar Florence M'Donnell Carthie's letter to himself, and the Spanish letters enclosed. This Florence the friar is guardian of the Abbey of Timolagg, and superior of all the Franciscans in Munster, and suggests to make his discovery to him to prevent the ruin of his country, and kindred, and Banister, who is a follower and tenant of his [Lord Cork] and also a nephew unto Sir William Stanley, whom the friar knew when he was in his uncle's house in the Low Countries, and when Mr Banister was page to Marquis Spinola, is the instrument chosen by the friar between him and the Lord Cork . . . the friar who has discovered to him that friar Strong arrived at Waterford in the beginning of May last, being employed from beyond seas to prepare the chieftain's hands, and consents to join with the Pope and King of Spain's army that are to be shipped in the Low Countries, and to arrive in Ireland about December next." *Ibid.* p. 535.

l. There follows an account of the progress of Friar Strong through the country in the train of Lord Falkland, and "all the way observed the strength of the cities and towns, and returned to Waterford in his (Falkland's) troop." Strong is then said to have taken his journey "towards Beerhaven to get a passage over with his letters. "Friar Carthy seems to be the fearfullest man to be discovered." Is secretly advertised that Florence M'Carthy is to steal out of England disguised, and to be ready in the western parts of Munster to raise a powerful combination." "The Lord of Kerry, with his brother-in-law O'Sullewane More, and one Owen Elogie M'Swiney (who has been long in Spain and speaks and writes the language) has received command lately to repair into Flanders, with assurance to be confessor to the titular Count of Berehaven, and preacher to the expected army that is to arrive here, and that with a large pension; and in November he is required to be there." *Ibid.*

m. Enclosed: 1. Ardkill. 11 Oct. 1624. Florence Carthy to the Earl of Cork. Has imparted his mind to the bearer, Mr Banister . . . He (Lord Corke) may give credit to what he relates



on his behalf. Is ready to do his Majesty and the State any service lying in him and becoming his profession." *Ibid.*

n. Enclosed: 2. Friar Cornelius O'Driscoll to Florence M'Dermot M'Carthy. "Has ended his studies more than a year, and all that detains him there from going home into his country are certain causes that the disinherited gentlemen pretend in this Court and in that of Flanders that they may go with some succours unto those parts, for they had rather die with arms in their proper country than remain ever dispossessed strangers . . . The Counts of Tyrconnell and Beerhaven are here much respected by the King and his Council of State. The Count of Tyrone is in like manner with the Infanta in Flanders, and many principal gentlemen and pensioners of that nation in his regiment, observing and expecting his time of voyage . . . The Marquis of Spinola has about 120,000 men foot and horse, in camp and garrison, etc. Madrid, 26 July 1624. *Ibid.*

o. 1624. Nov. 13. Savoy. Lord Clare to the Duke of Buckingham. Sends letters he had received that morning, "the one to himself (Carew) the other to the Lord Deputy, both from the Earl of Cork and both dated 17 October last, one from Cornelius O'Driscoll, a friar, to Friar Florence M'Carthy, and the other from the said Friar Florence to the Earl of Corke. Entreats that both the Earl's and the friar's intelligencer may be concealed. *Ibid.* p. 546.

878. a. 1625. Feb. 8. Edw. Eustace to Secretary Conway. Had long been interpreter between the chief Irish at the Court of Spain and the Spanish Council, but becoming suspected, was banished, after cruel imprisonment. Has tried to break up the Irish regiment, on which Spaniards much rely, and is willing for this object to neglect his private interests, and go to Flanders for a few weeks, the danger being imminent. *C.S.P.Ire., Dom.* 1623-5, p. 469.

b. In *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 73, dated 1625, and unsigned, is a statement which also may be by Eustace: "It is necessary to draw away from the army in Flanders those Irishmen who say they are heads of families in Ireland. This can be done by promising them the same rank in the King's service as they have abroad. This will bring all back whose lands are in the occupation of others. Those who have, however, deliberately joined Spain in the hopes of returning with armed malice must be differently treated. Captains Preston, Delahoyde and Fitzgerald are principally to be respected, and their example and persuasion will be helpful with the others. The two Bourkes, known as Mac William jechter and the Earl of Mayo, will probably not give in except with some further idea of malice . . . The mere Irish will be harder to win, because they have more hope of Spanish help. Tyrconnel's son may probably be won over by Captain Preston."

c. In *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. dated in the year 1625, is a Memorandum of Edward Eustace of Clongowes Wood on the



Spanish policy, in which he states his belief that all the Irishmen in the service of Spain, with the exception of O'Neill and O'Donnell, and their kindred, may be brought home by giving them some means to live upon. They love their country; few of them have money abroad; they have no property there; O'Neill keeps his posts in the Irish service for his men; and the last reduction of pensions "did breed a general hatred between all the reformed captains and the pensioners of that nation and the Spaniards." The Spaniards have treated the Irish better than they have ever treated any nation, and if the Irish leave them now it will form a perpetual hatred between Spain and Ireland. . . . If these Irish come home, they will influence public opinion against the Spaniards, and tell the poor Irish something different "to that which the Jesuits and freers do make the poor people believe every day." Eustace wishes to bring them all away, and employ them all, and has a scheme which will do it "without public expense, and gain 50000*l*. for the King in 30 years."

As the Memorandum refers to O'Neill as "now old and decaying" it would seem to have been written not in 1626, as calendered, but before 20 July 1616 when O'Neill died.

d. *In C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32 p. 50 are abstracts of four letters of Lord Falkland, unsigned, dated 2 Mar, 24 Mar. 16 Apr. 26 Apr. 1625. The first letter contains the following information said to come from a reliable source: Owen O'Cullinan, made bishop of Raphoe by the Pope, is endeavouring to induce the Court of Madrid to attempt an invasion of Ireland, by the Irish regiments in the Low Countries. He is about to return to Ireland, and last year sent books to Ireland. Bishop Cullinan's brother is soliciting the same invasion at the Court of the Archduchess. Glasny O'Cullinan, their cousin, is influencing the Irish population, and is to find out what is the best place of landing. The second letter, 24 Mar, says: "The communicator of this news will continue to collect information. He affirms the truth of what he has said before." The third letter, Apr. 16, from the same person. Gives further information on the Spanish plot. "The Catholic Archbishop of Dublin is to influence the part of the country between Dublin and Drogheda, and the bishops of Kilkenny and Elfin are also to league with O'Cullinan. Forces are now ready at Dunkirk." The fourth letter, Apr. 16, gives further news, and announces the arrest of Glasny O'Cullinan, and of one of his accomplices, "a priest named John McBrady of Thomond."

884. 1625. June 2. The deposition of John Gardiner of Russen in Mayo, regarding Hugh Kelly, lately page in Spain to one Bourke, styled there the Marquis of Mayo. Being in a room with Tyrconnel's son, and O'Sullivan, he heard the plan that one of them should visit Ireland in disguise to take a view of the country. They had consulted on the landing-places and mentioned Killybegs and Broadhaven. The preparations had been proceeding



for two years, and Tyrconnel's son had a commission from the King of Spain to levy 1,500 men, and went last winter with it into the Low Countries. Kelly had been ordered to keep these things secret, but had told them to his foster-brother in Ireland. Signed: John Gardiner. Underwritten: Copia vera. Falkland. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 16.

945. For Information of the present estates of Lord Glanomalun who desires his Majesty's favour before he returns to Ireland see *C.S.P.Ire.* 1647-60, Addenda 1625-60, pp. 101f. And see *C.S.P.Ire.* 1615-25, no. 947; and *C.S.P.Ire.* 1633-47, p. 59. where in The manner of proceeding to the Parliament holden in Dublin, July 14, 1634, "Dermot O'Malune Baron of Glenmalune and Queechy" is placed fifth in the order of barons.

948. Mentioned as Donnell in the Examination of Brian McDonnogh, Braddaugh O'Haggan, alias Hogan, taken before the Chief Justice, 1627, Feb. 14. *C.S.P.Ire.*, 1625-32, p. 209. O'Haggan declares that he became a soldier in the Low Countries under the Earl of Tyrone. Hoped to get a pardon and his lands back when the Prince of Wales went to Spain, but the breaking of the Spanish match turned their joy to sadness. Then wished to return home and live peacefully among his friends . . . Afterwards Shane O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone. "tried to get him to carry letters to his friends in Ireland, but examine refused, fearing he would be searched at Dover. The examine had other letters addressed to Cormack Mc Turlough Mc Henry O'Neale and his brother Phelim, and another from Donnell Baleagh Mc Manus O'Cahan to his father Manus O'Cahan, dwelling within two miles of Londonderry, and his brother Brian Mc Manus. These letters were quilted in the belly-pieces of examine's doublet. In one of them Tyrone held out hopes to his friends that after the breaking of the Spanish match the King of Spain would send him with an army to Ireland, and this was written in English. Others were written in Irish, and had caused great rejoicing when delivered to Hugh Buoy Mc Tirlough and others . . . Brian O'Cahan afterwards went away to England, and, he believes, to the Low Countries."

For further examinations of O'Hogan alias O'Hagan, on 2 Mar. 10 Mar. and 14 Mar. 1627, see *ibid.* pp. 216, 217. He states that he met with a good reception in Clare, and that people wished Tyrone well, and hoped he would come over and deliver them from plantations and intrusions. p. 216. He also states that he was present when Tyrone dictated to his secretary the letters which he (O'Hogan) had brought to Ireland, and would answer for them. *Ibid.* p. 217.

958. a. Copy of the petition to Lord Conway, Secretary of State, of Phelim O'Neale, son of Henry MacShane O'Neale, showing that: Three years ago last Christmas petitioner and other Irish soldiers went to the Low Countries to serve the Archduchess with Captain Patrick O'Donnell. He has served ever since under



him, and John O'Neale, son of the Earl of Tyrone the Corronel of the Irish regiment. Hearing of the King's proclamation that those serving abroad should return, and finding Colonel O'Neale hostile (petitioner's grandfather had killed the Colonel's grandfather) petitioner feigned sickness and got leave from the Archduchess to return home. Prays for employment in the cavalry of Ireland. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1647-60, p. 102.

b. John O'Neill, colonel of the regiment, was son of Hugh O'Neill the Earl, and grandson of Feardorcha the Baron who was slain at the instance of Sean an Diomais his brother. The Phelim O'Neill here in question was thus a nephew of Hugh the Earl and cousin of John the Colonel. See P. Walsh, *Will and family of Hugh O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone*, Dublin, 1930, p. 53.

969. a. 1626. Oct. 24. Brussels. di Bagno, nuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Barberini. The Archbishop of Tuam [Florence Conry] is going to Spain to treat of some business there in the name of the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, who are excellent Catholics but have little experience. de Meester, *Correspondance du Nonce Giovanni-Francesco Guidi di Bagno*, Rome-Brussels, 1938, II, p. 784. See *Collectanea Hibernica* I, pp. 61, 63.

b. In a footnote to this are mentioned: a petition of Tyrconnell to Pope, Urban VIII, 16 May 1626, asking him to intervene with the King of Spain on his behalf, that he may grant him some post which will enable him to live as becomes his rank. Archives of Propaganda Fide, Rome, Scrittura referite 101, fol. 227. On 23 Oct, 1626, Bagno recommends to Cardinal Spada the Archbishop of Tuam who will pass through Paris; reference to Vatican Archives, Rome, Nuuziatura di Fiandra 15, 21A, f. 440. On 27 June 1626, Urban VIII to the King of Spain, asking him to grant financial aid to the Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, ending with the words: "Nuntius noster apostolicus et venerabilis frater archiepiscopus Tuamensis negotium hoc etiam disserent cum Majestate tua." On the same day, two briefs of Urban VIII to the Earls, notifying them of his intervention with the King of Spain. Vatican Archives, Epistulae ad Principes, 40, f 228v.-89, 290.

970. Sir Brian-na-Murtha, declared O'Rourke in 1564; knighted and allowed to regain possession of Leitrim in 1578; rebelled in 1580 and invaded Connaught; protected Spanish refugees in 1588; driven out by Sir Richard Bingham in 1589; fled to Scotland; handed over to the English by James VI; executed in 1591. Was succeeded by his son Brian oge or Brian-na-Samthach, who died in 1604. *Dictionary of National Biography*.

978. Petition of seventeen poor Irishmen, soldiers, prisoners at Canterbury, to the Council: having been in the service of the Archduchess, they have returned to England in obedience to his Majesty's proclamation; on arrival at Dover they had been thrown into gaol, where they had continued many months, but lately had been removed to Canterbury; they pray that they may be



released, and allowed to enter the King's service in this country. *C.S.P. Dom.* 1626-6, p. 516.

987. 1. Sister of Aodh Ruadh O'Donnell, married Neale Garbh O'Donnell, but left him when he went over to the English. Ó Cianáin, *Flight of the Earls*, p. 17 note.

2. Mary O'Donnell. For her flight to the Low Countries see MacGeoghegan, James, *Histoire de l'Irlande ancienne et moderne*, English translation, pp. 556-7. di Bagno, nuncio at Brussels, gives what is possibly an authentic account in a letter to Cardinal Spada from Brussels, 23 Jan. 1627. "A sister of the Earl of Tyrconnell, a young girl of seventeen of very pleasing appearance, has come to Brussels. While living with her maternal grandmother in London, she refused to marry a heretic, in spite of the anger and threats of the King of England. She disguised herself as a man, and fled with two other young girls and a male relation. She hid herself for some time until the King had lost hope and given up the search, She afterwards embarked in Ireland, whence the ship was driven by the winds to Cadiz. She again took to sea, but was forced by a storm to put into La Rochelle. She continued her journey to Brussels by land, where she was given an enthusiastic reception at Court." de Meester, VI, 2, p. 816, no. 1723.

On 6 Mar, 1627 di Bagno suggested to Cardinal Barberini, papal secretary of State, that the Pope send a letter of consolation to Mary Stuart O'Donnell, sister of Tyrconnell and cousin of Tyrone, praising her and them for their fidelity to the Catholic faith. *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 93, no. 6140, fol. 13rv. See *ibid.* no. 6207. fol. 7rv. where however the date is earlier, 1 Feb. 1627, and seems to fit in better with a similar suggestion made by di Bagno; *ibid.* p. 103, no. 6813, ff. 2909, 292v. A letter of Urban VIII to Mary Stuart is listed *ibid.* p. 76, no. 2197, fol. 23v., under 6 Feb. 1627; and on 13 March 1627 di Bagno writes to Barberini that he has delivered the Pope's letter to Mary Stuart O'Donnell in the presence of Tyrone and Tyrconnell; *ibid.* p. 103. no. 1813, ff. 296r., 301v.; and see *ibid.* p. 93, no. 6140, ff. 13v. to 14r. In de Meester VI, 2, p. 825, no. 1744n. the date of the Pope's brief is given as 13 Feb. 1627, and the brief itself is said to be in the Vatican archives, *Epistulae ad Principes*, 41, fol. 50v.

Mary O'Donnell was the daughter of Rudraighe, Earl of Tyrconnell, and his wife Brigid Fitzgerald, daughter of Henry, Earl of Kildare, At the time of the Flight of the Earls, on 14 Sept. 1607, the mother, and the daughter as yet unborn, were left in Ireland. Ó Cianáin, p. 4, note 4.

988. 1627, Feb. 17. Examination of Brian McDonnoghoe Braddaugh O'Haggan, alias Hogan, taken before the Chief Justice. Became a soldier in the Low Countries under the Earl of Tyrone. *C.S.P. Ire.* 1625-32, p. 209f., and see p. 225.

996. 1627, Apr. 30. Report of Lord Grandison and Mr Chancellor of the Duchy to the Council on Irish business for its



next meeting. O Hogan was a soldier of the Archduke's army in Flanders, and says that he brought over several letters from Shane O'Neale calling himself Earl of Tyrone, to various Irishmen. But as the people he mentions are living as good citizens, and as his charge deals with things that happened, and so he himself is to be tried for his life for crimes committed in Ireland ("which is observed in Ireland for the people of that country to make accusations to save their lives") we think his evidence not strong enough to act upon. We think Lord Caulfield should be told to watch the accused gentlemen, and to tell them that they have been charged with these things, but that the State wishes to exercise clemency towards them. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 225.

1002. 1626, early in. Information concerning the relations between the Irish and the Spanish. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1647-60 *Addenda* 1625-60, p. 67. pp. 67-69: "That he wondered Sir John Bathe should be employed from the State into Ireland, sith the time was when O'Sullivan lent him 300 crowns to go from Spain into that kingdom to work the Irish nobility for the Spaniard."

1031. a. 1628. Apr. 12. Madrid. Intercepted letter from one Tuoam in Spain to his sister Grainne ny nowen Field at Timoleague in co. Cork. My commendations. Deliver the enclosed to my brother Owen. I hope to hear from you soon, and to send you a token of regard by bearer, which I trust will reach you. To my very loving sister Mrs Grainne Ny Owen Field, at Timolegg, in the co. of Cork, give these. Enclosing:

b. (1628). Apr. 10. Madrid. Translation of a letter written from Madrid to a Franciscan friar named Eugene Field, in the monastery of Timoleague in Ireland: The King and Council here are well satisfied with your information and chiefly we assure ourselves of the constancy of Don Carlos McCarthy, Lord of "Musgry", and of his allies and others, and their resolutions, but have less hope of his son. We hope much that the Bishop of Cork will be able to bring round Lord Sarsfield who allows his son to be a Catholic. We would wish for more supporters, but, no doubt, if we can once invade successfully we shall find them. You might try and win over El Senor Boile, who is so great a person in your country and is now old. We hear he is well affected to us. I would be glad if something were done to shorten the lives of such young traitors as the son of Florentio and Lord "Kiery". We are satisfied about the major part of the gentry, and as I told you, are going to do as you wish by "going on with the journey". An armada was granted us after your news came and all things will be ready by the appointed time. I work for it with the Marquis of Mayo, the Count of Berehaven, and the Agents of the Courts of Tyrone and Tyrconnell. Send your letters to Brussels, where I hear we shall shortly be. God save our persecuted kingdom." *C.S.P.Ire.*, 1625-32, p. 323. The word *Courts* of Tyrone and Tyrconnell is obviously a misreading for *Counts*.



For other letters of the same nature, of 29 March and 18 June 1639, see *Wadding Papers*, ed. Brendan Jennings, Dublin 1953; and see index of the same volume under Field, Fr Owen, and Hualahyn, Fr Philip; and *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 535.

1070. a. 1629, Dec. 31. The Lords Justices and Council to Lord Falkland concerning Captain Patrick Barnewall. We have reason to think that when Colonel Dowda was ordered with a regiment to join the King of Sweden he formed a plan of taking the spoil of Londonderry, and then carrying off his regiment to join the King of Spain. We wish to examine Captain Patrick Barnewall, who is in England, on this matter, for though Colonel Dowda is still at large, we think the truth should be found out. We send you our information on the matter. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 501.

b. 1630. Feb. 3. Captain Patrick Barnewall's declaration concerning Colonel Dowda. Declaring that Colonel Dowda had unfolded to him the design of surprising the town of Derry and carrying off his soldiers to serve the King of Spain. Barnewall had refused to fall in with this plan, and had made it known to Sir John Vaughan, thus securing the arrest of Colonel Dowda. *Ibid.* p. 514.

1087. 1630. Mar. 8. "The Irish regiment and the regiment of Count Mansfelt have been posted at Nieuport, Dunkirk and Ostend, where some of them were already." Brussels MS 161, 49, *Cartas del Marques de Aytona*, fol. 8v.

1129. 1630. Nov. 2. Daniel MacCarthy to Lord Chichester. Praying that something may be done to enable him to return to England and repay his debts, and offering to serve the King of France and win the Irish troops from serving in the Spanish army, if only he can get an introduction to the French King for a company. If he is employed in France he can act as a spy on the Irish and Spaniards. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1625-32, p. 583.

1131. 1630. Dec. 18. Brussels. The Marqués de Aytona to Philip IV. "The disbandings have begun to be carried out, as the Marquis de Leganes will inform your Majesty, and although they are necessary, they are not without causing some inconvenience, as certain captains and officers among those disbanded are going over to the enemy, and taking after them some of the men who have a good knowledge of these countries and their strong places. If your Majesty is to go on with the war, it is impossible for your Majesty's provinces to afford so much blood as will be spilt in it, unless use is made of foreign nations, and especially of the Germans, as the English, Irish and Scots, although good men, are not numerous . . . Of the other three nations which are not vassals, the English, Scots and Irish, there are few of them in these States, and there can never be many; and they cost your Majesty as much as do the Spaniards, as they are upon the same footing. Of Irishmen there is one regiment, the Earl of Tyrone's, and some



free companies, making in all a thousand men. They are good people, and attached to the Spaniards, but their captains do not treat them well, and defraud them of their pay; for as with people who do not know the language, they cheat them easily, and as a consequence they are all in need. It would be possible to maintain the regiment at very full strength, by means of their pay. With peace once made with England, although there are some who offer to recruit other regiments of that nation, this should not be done unless this regiment, which is already established, be increased to the greatest number possible." Brussels MSS 16149. *Cartas del Marqués de Aytona*, ff. 42-3v.

1163. a. 1621. June 18. Dover. Commissioners of the passage at Dover to Lord Zouch. They detain in custody Owen Shell, who obstinately refuses the oath of allegiance. Inclose examination of Owen Shell, of Westmeath, Ireland. Has studied medicine three years at Douay. Has always been a Catholic. Will not take the oath of allegiance. Dover, June 12. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1619-23, p. 266.

b. 1621. July 18. Dover. Mayor of Dover to Lord Zouch. Contradicts a false report that a young man of Kinsale has been stayed at Dover. Owen Shell, an Irish physician, landed at Margate, and was stayed for refusing to take the oath of allegiance, but is now liberated by his Lordship's order. *Ibid.* p. 277.

c. For an account of Owen Shiell, "Doctor of phisicke, and son to James O'Shiell, a native of the barony of Moycachell, in the countie of Westmeath, who was married to old Captain Tyrrell's daughter, by name Cate", see Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery*, II, pp. 89-91, which however as regards Shiell's career abroad and in Dublin is not in agreement with the information contained in these documents.

1188. 1632. Nov. 14. The Lords Justices and Council to the English Privy Council. Here is a serious question on which we hasten to consult you. The unconformed natives here have already departed in large numbers to foreign countries secretly, in small parties, without leave or licence, leaving from remote harbours. They leave their homes usually for England, whence they take passage to the territories of the Archduchess of Flanders. What is the reason of this? Last year a Captain Preston, an Irishman, arrived from abroad, where he has long served in the Archduchess' army. His ostensible cause was a visit to his nephew Viscount Gormanstown, but without giving notice of his intention he secretly enlisted many people to serve abroad. Then one Plunket, a younger son of Sir Christopher Plunket, begged us for a warrant to raise and export men. He said that Captain Preston had your letter for such a warrant and that it would shortly reach our hands. We refused, but parties of young men have immediately been embarked, and with such stealth that the matter has only recently come under our notice. We have had occasion to reprove severely



one Scourlock, a native of Wexford. His design was to bring a whole company of men to Dunkirk, where, he was assured by Captain Preston, they would be taken into entertainment by the Archduchess, and he appointed to command them. We dispersed the men whom he had collected, and, as he was a very young man, we dismissed him with a caution. This did not restrain the presumption of others. Captain Richard Terrell, who during the recent disorders was in open rebellion, and who, under Tyrone, became a bloody instrument of many spoils and great mischief against the subjects, raised about 100 men, unconformed natives of various parts. He assembled them to various parts about this city, chartered and victualled a ship for them, and proposed to send them to Dunkirk (ostensibly to Calais) under the command of his son Richard, whose mother was the sister (of) Owny Mac Rory, the famous rebel that took prisoner Thomas Earl of Ormond. We summoned the two Terrells before us and found that they were acting under a contract with Preston, and intended to bring their men to Dunkirk and enlist them in the Archduchess' service. We hear that the Archduchess is enlisting a new regiment, and we hold very strongly that it should receive no encouragement from here. If it does receive such encouragement a great additional strength will have been given to the very section of the Irish from which, according to the best opinion, we have most to fear. We have accordingly dismissed the assembled bands to their homes and await your instructions. We detain Terrell till we hear from your Lordships. He has been shown mercy in the past, and leniency is apparently not the policy to put a stop to these dangerous proceedings. Our warrant has gone out to all ports and creeks enjoining upon the local authorities the duty of hindering the embarkation." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1626-32, p. 676.

A reference to a Captain Sherlock, probably the same as mentioned above, is made in a letter of Wentworth, London, July 25, 1636, apparently also in connection with recruiting: "If Captain Sherlock took not the time, while the time served, the fault was his own; but now you are to tell him, that neither he nor any other is to be admitted to transport any men, without further order from his Majesty." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter II.

1231. 1633. Sept. 10. London. de Necolalde to Wentworth. I will not believe that your Excellence can forget yonder in your kingdom your servants here, since your memory is not overcharged when you are fullest of business and affairs; yet I will refresh it with these lines, that I may express unto you how solitary we are here without your Excellence's company, I and my business especially feeling the want of it, and acknowledging a great obligation to you for the favours I found at your hands before your departure, which I understand by the Sergeant Major Patrick Daniel you are pleased to continue still in large and noble manner, not only by what comes from yourself, but also by the



concurring of other officers, especially of my Lord Chancellor's readiness to oblige us in that business, being all engagements to me to owe them wholly to your Excellence . . . and I hope we shall conclude the year not ill, and that the Irish which your Excellence affords us will arrive in good time, though such as by cross weather are forced to take the English shore are ill entertained, even with rigour, and yet it might suffice to hinder their passage to Dunkirk, with which I am very well contented, and am the first to obey and keep his Majesty's orders for that purpose; howsoever, the Hollanders privately go against it; and that there be men daily sent to France: for a Scottish colonel, who having licence to raise soldiers in his own country to carry thither, hath found some here, even the very same Irish which were hindered of their passage to Dunkirk." Knowler, William, *The Earl of Strafford's letters and dispatches* I, p. 112.

1249. 1634. Jan. 31. London. de Necolalde to Wentworth. I have acquainted your Lordship's secretary with the answer I have had lately from Spain touching the propositions of having provision for the fleets out of Ireland, which they liked well, and promise to send me the particular relations of all for the more clear understanding of the business, which they have commanded to be made by the officers to whom it belongs; when I receive them I shall not fail to give you an account. Knowler, I, p. 182.

1297. Carte, *Ormonde* I, p. 367. "Colonel Thomas Preston . . . was a brother of Lord Gormanston . . . coming over to Ireland in 1634 had carried thence a regiment of 2,400 men for the service of the King of Spain . . . had distinguished himself at the siege of Louvain, when it was besieged by the Dutch. He was governor of Genep in 1640, and held it out longer than could be expected, against Henry Frederick, Prince of Orange. The Dutch lost abundance of men before the place, and the governor, after the walls were sapped, and having stood the storm of a breach that allowed fifteen men to enter abreast, surrendered it at the end of July upon honourable terms with no little glory to himself and with great applause from the enemy."

For the siege of Louvain in 1635 and the part played by Preston's men see Puteanus, Erycius, *Historiae Belgicae. Liber singularis de obsidione Lovaniensi*. MCXXXV. Antwerp, 1636. Piot, Guillaume Joseph Charles, *Histoire de Louvain depuis son origine jusq'aujourd'hui. Partie I, Histoire de la ville, Louvain*, 1839. *Relation raisonnée du siège de Louvain ainsi que de la défense et de la délivrance miraculeuse de cette ville en 1635*. Louvain, 1835. These sources have been reliably used by the unnamed editor of *The Historical works of the Right Rev. Nicholas French etc.*, Dublin, 1846. A. O'Flanders, in his *Erin*, published at Nieuport, 1922, states that Louvain presented Colonel Preston with a gift of the value of 300 crowns; and he refers for this to the *Resolutieboek van 't Magistraat van Loven*, 1634, p. 217. At my request Fr



Edmond Dougan, Guardian of the Irish Franciscan College at Louvain, a reliable scholar, with the assistance of Fr Angelinus O.F.M., a Flemish palaeographer, very carefully searched the *Resolutiebook*, but could find no mention either of Preston or of a presentation.

1342. 1634. Dec. 16. Stravio, internuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Barberini. Irish troops in the service of Prince Thomas are suffering for lack of pay. Giblin, 6819, fol. 31v., in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 104.

1344. 1634-5. Jan. 21-31. Whitehall. Mr Secretary Coke to Strafford. "For the [*Catholic*] laity, their attempts are more open and more considerable. Your Lordship hath last year permitted, upon good ground, divers numbers of Irish soldiers to transport themselves to Flanders, which the French forbear not to make known. Of these some whole companies landing here, suffered themselves to be debauched by the French ambassador, and now serve under French colours. Here is one Colonel Sweny, and another Colonel O'Rely is daily expected, who has sent before him James Noland, one of his captains. All these have their addresses to the French ambassador, and Noland hath brought with him three commissions under the French King's hand and seal, one for himself, another for his brother, and a third for Mr Anthony Garned, son of Sir Christopher Garney, a man of great note in Connaught. With these commissions he brought letters to the King and Queen, and hath thereby obtained no licence for his levies, yet he will try nevertheless to raise his number in that kingdom, by means of his friends underhand. This Noland and these colonels served long under the Spaniard, and have quit them to serve France for more pay. In which regard Noland saith, that four hundred of his countrymen had forsaken that side before his coming over, and were joined to the French, and as many more were on the way, And further to encourage them, the French King (as he saith) doth covenant with them not to put them to any service against any of their own religion, except only such as shall invade his dominions; yet this clause is not expressed in their commissions. Thus your Lordship seeth how Irish priests and Irish soldiers multiply no less on the French than the Spanish side; and it cannot be doubted that when either part is ready to assail us in Ireland, all will join together to replant themselves at home." Knowler I, pp. 364-5.

1351. For the relations between the Lord Deputy and de Neocolalde at this time see Knowler, I, pp. 394-8. In an undated letter written apparently shortly after 21 March 1635, *Ibid.* pp. 394-6, Wentworth rejects complaints which Windebank reports had been made against him by de Neocolalde, and refers among other things to the Irish levies: "Being returned back to London, and in some discourse betwixt your Lordship and myself, you seeming to be ill satisfied your levies of men in this kingdom had



been so often promised, and yet not dispatched, I besought your papers to try whether I could further your designs therein, which your Lordship condescended unto. I got them dispatched in a few days, to your contentment, notwithstanding a great opposition made against the giving way thereunto . . . For the levies of men by your Sergeant Major, as I did at least expedite that business there, so have I since fully accomplished it here, giving all possible assistance to the speeding of it, as I was assured Sergeant Major Donell will witness with me. The other levy of Colonel Preston I have upon your Lordship's recommendation furthered all that is possible, he hath not wanted one quarter of an hour any thing that was by me to be done therein. And well doth he deserve to be respected, seeming to me one of the civilest gentlemen of his nation."

b. 1635. Mar. 31. London. de Neocolalde to Wentworth. "I received your Excellency's last letter . . . and verily I was a little ashamed at the reading of it, and troubled that your Excellence should have had any occasion as you say for to write it . . . when your noble offices go so far beyond all expectations. Among which I must needs express particular thanks for what you have done in our levies, both here and there, and the honour you have shewed to our officers, which have been sent thither for that purpose." *Ibid.* pp. 397-8.

1357. 1635. Oct, 13. Madrid. The Duke of Olivares to the Cardinal Infante, Don Ferdinand. "I beg of your Highness that which has been asked for for the army, and the ships with Walloons and Irishmen; for I promise your Highness by December, if I am alive, without fail, 3,000 Spanish infantry men, and not one less." Codex Monacensis Hispanicus 22, fol. 1. State Library, Munich.

1372. 1641-2. Feb. 12-22. The examination of Henry Cartan, taken before Sir Gerard Lowther etc. Opens with the statement: Whoe being sworne and examined saith that about nine years since, hee this examine left the kingdom of Ireland and went into Flanders, under the command of James Fitzgerald of Ballisonan, in the county of Kildare, and at his said captain's landing in Flanders, hee and his company were putt into the regiment of Owen O'Neile, collonell under the cardinall, where this examine served for about two yeares of the said time under the said Captain Fitzgerald, and then was transferred under the command of Captain Con O Neile in the same regiment; and afterwards was preferred by the said Collonell Owen O Neale to be his Major Domo, which office is of the nature of steward of his house; and after was by the same Owen made Quarter-Master of his regiment, in which imployment hee this examine remained untill he was sent into this kingdome by the said Collonell O'Neale etc. Gilbert, *Aphorismical Discovery* I, part I, pp. 396-400, from the archives of the House of Lords, London.

As James Fitzgerald was not even an ensign before the date of 3 March 1636, Cartan's first statement may need verification.



1387. a. 1642. Feb. 21. Brussels. Antonio Bichi, internuncio at Brussels, to the papal secretariate of State. Hugh de Burgo, Franciscan, and Nicholas Shea, secular priest, have presented credential letters to Bichi, and have informed him of the needs of their country; they have asked him to recommend them to the bishops in Flanders, that they may the more easily seek alms from them for Ireland. *Collectanea Hibernica*, I, p. 64.

b. 1643. Feb. 19. Nicholas Shea to Cardinal Barberini. Had come from Ireland last month, where he had been with Owen O'Neill; was sent by the Supreme Council along with Hugh de Burgo to look after their country's interests, and to send boats, and the help provided by Barberini, from Dunkirk, where Shea had spent seventeen years as chaplain, *Ibid.*

1439. a. 1636. Sept. 12. Dispatch from Brussels. The Catholic army in France lately reinforced by the arrival of three regiments of Walloons and one of Irish. Barberini Latin 1819, ff. 293r., in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 104.

b. 1636. Oct. Madrid. The Duke de Olivares to the Cardinal Infante Don Ferdinand. "By the last post, which left here with the letters of 1 October, I wrote to your Highness of the efforts in progress. Let your Highness send us ships, and some good Walloons and Irishmen, for we are making such preparations that with the help of God I hope to pass over Neapolitans". Codex Monacensis Hispanicus 22, fol. 36v.

1444. 1636. Nov. 11. A regiment of Irish soldiers at Arras. Barberini Latin 6819, fol. 339v., *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 104.

1447. 1636. Dec. 7. Madrid. The Duke de Olivares to the Cardinal Infante. "Of your Highness 4,000 veterans are requested, from the two nations, Walloons and Irish, and 1,000 cavalry." Codex Monacensis Hispanicus 22, fol. 38v.

1524. 1637. Aug. 15-25. Clonmel. The Lord Deputy to Mr Secretary Coke. Reports the state of the Horse Troops and of the Foot in his new army. "The officers of both are, I assure you, a company of galand gentlemen . . . Besides this drawing them together gives a mighty assurance to the well, and equal apprehension to the ill-affected subject. Nay, I hear, hath some operation upon those Irish that nest themselves in Flanders, and as I have discovered of late (howbeit not brought to that ripeness to be as yet advertised over to you) hold intelligence and correspondance with their countrymen in Ulster, and continually plot their return by arms." Knowler, *Strafford's letters* II, p. 92.

1526. 1637. Oct. 28. The Duke of Olivares to the Cardinal Infante Ferdinand. They are prepared to send Spaniards and Italians from Spain to the Low Countries, but only in exchange for Walloons and Irishmen. Codex Monacensis Hispanicus 22, fol. 56, State Library, Munich.

1527. a. 1638. Jan. 25. Brussels. Richard Paul Stravius, inter-nuncio at Brussels, to Monsignor Beness, secretary of the



apostolic legation at Cologne. Reports that Tyrone's regiment and a regiment of Walloons have been ordered to march to Dunkirk, where there are thirty ships to convey them to Spain. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, pp. 63-4.

b. 1638. Jan. 20. Dispatch from Brussels. Irish troops withdrawn from Aire are going to Spain under the Earl of Tyrconnell. Barberini Latin 6820, fol. 214v., in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 104.

c. 1638. Feb. 6. Dispatch from France. Irish regiment embarks at Dunkirk for Spain. *Ibid.* 6820, fol. 217r.

d. 1638. Apr. 3. Dispatch from Brussels. Irish troops going from England to Flanders. *Ibid.*, fol. 237v.

e. 1638. May 27. (Madrid). de Olivares to Don Ferdinand. We await the Irish, to send them to Catalonia. Codex Monacensis Hispanicus 22, fol. 72v. Munich, State Library.

f. *Commentarius Rinuccinianus* I, pp. 333-4. Mentions a report that before the beginning of the war in Ireland Richelieu tried through secret channels to entice the Earls of Tyrone and of Tyrconnell from their service with the Spaniards in the Low Countries to use them in Ireland and so embarrass Charles I, who was friendly with Spain. It is suggested that the earls were sent to Spain to put them at a safe distance from Richelieu's advances. The evidence from the Brussels archives would seem not to support this rumour. The same author reports that the earls reached Spain on 12 April 1638, and that Tyrone was mortally wounded at San Flue at 11 a.m. on 27 Jan. 1641, and died at about 10 p.m. on the same day, aged forty two. Tyrconnell perished in a naval engagement with the French at the time of the beginning of the war in Ireland.

Micheline Walsh, *The O'Neills in Spain*, Dublin, National University (1960) states that John O'Neill was killed when leading his regiment on an attack against the fortress on the hill of Montjuich overlooking the city of Barcelona, on the morning of 29 January 1641.

1539. 1638. Oct. 17-27. Dublin. Wentworth to the King. It "is given to us upon this side that some of the Clandonalds had a design upon [the Lord of Lorne's] country, and intended to bring in upon him Tyrone with his regiment of Irish in Flanders". Knowler II, p. 225.

1544. 1638. Nov. 14-24. Madrid. Sir Arthur Hopton to Wentworth. "The Irish here in the service at Fuentarabia have gotten much reputation, and with very good reason, for they have served very well. I perceive that they here would be sorry to be without them in their armies, and I shall not be against it, as long as it may be done to the honour of his Majesty and his crown; but I must acquaint your Lordship that the two colonels that are here, Tyrone and Tyrconnell, would make them believe that all the Irish that serve them come for love of them, and without his



Majesty's leave, which I conceive to be prejudiciall to his Majesty's service, both in regard of honour of his sovereignty and depriving him of the gratitude that is due unto him from this King, as I could wish there were a watchful eye had, that no soldiers be suffered to pass out of that kingdom but by his Majesty's order. Here they would esteem them in any kind, for it is the nation that hath their good opinion and not the colonels, who have done no service at all". Knowler II, p. 243.

1563. 1638-9. Jan. 10-20. Dublin. Wentworth to Sir Arthur Hopton. "For the two Irish colonels and their regiments, I like that employment best that carries them farthest hence; their affections are altogether Irish, and by habit it is now their belief that they are more subjects to the Spaniard than to our Master; yet by their favour, where they say that their recruits come from love of them without his Majesty's licence, in that they magnify themselves beyond reason; for without his Majesty's leave they would not have had many hundreds, which have past since my coming hither by my warrant pursuing his Majesty's direction to me in that behalf, which were fit the Ministers of that Kingdom knew; for upon my faith that is very truth, and without my special diligence therein, they could not have been either."

In this same letter Wentworth refers to the Earl of Tyrconnell: "Two of your letters are upon my hands unanswered . . . Your first mentions the expression of Tyrconnell's willingness to return, and replant himself in his native soil. A treaty which hath been long in motion betwixt my Lady his mother, here among us, and himself, as some letters which were made to pass betwixt them sufficiently show; but it is much better he were as he is, for he looks for mighty conditions, such as might render him little less than a Prince in Ulster . . . and consequently would be set up again to these natives, as the altar whereon to lay and sacrifice all. So as in my judgment, giving a civil hearing unto him, in conclusion it will be the best to put him off to sollicit his restitution by other friends, than for you to interest yourself in his business." Knowler II, p. 269.

1569. a. 1638-9. Feb. 15-25. Wentworth to Mr Secretary Windebank. "Upon an advertisement . . . which I had likewise from Sir Arthur Hopton, I writ, some six weeks since, certifying unto him that it were fit the State there were rightly informed of the vanity of those two Irish fugitives which assumed the power of levying men here for the service of that State where in truth it hath been hitherto done by his Majesty's special favour and leave, and the particular assistance and good inclination of his Ministers here to that Crown. And that therefore his Lordship might do well to represent the state of that business rightly to that King, that the two fugitive Lords had neither credit nor estimation here, and that no supplies were hence to be expected, unless we have his Majesty's directions for it, and that his Majesty also derive the



intire obligation and thanks thereof to himself. Now that I understand that they are to raise new companies amongst us, I shall so watch them, I trust, as either to force the King of Spain to seek to his Majesty for the favour, or put them besides their expectation. And in case they sue to his Majesty, and it be thought fit to grant it, then my humble advice is, that the men to be raised new be not disposed to either of these fugitives, but put under the command of Colonel Preston, Governor of Ginnip, a gentleman of English race, well affected to the King, and in great emulation with these other two, who being native Irish, and the sons of rebels, acknowledge as no other king but the King of Spain. And this I seriously recommend to be considered on there, as a tacit means, by little, to gain some reverence for those regiments to their natural sovereign, and that they may be taught they consequently owe to the Crown, negative to all the world besides; which point happily gained and settled in their minds, the more of them there were abroad the better; whereas now they ought not to be looked on without great circumspection by us all, as of all other, the aptest and ablest persons to set in to support and bestead this people in their former rebellions." Knowler II, p. 269.

b. 1639. May 18-28. Wentworth to Mr Secretary Coke. "The French levies already promised shall go on according as I am directed, but I trust his Majesty will not be engaged for any more, the many of like nature heretofore granted have brought things to such a pass that the Earl of Barrimore, as I am informed, out of Munster cannot make up the thousand he is to raise there for his Majesty's own immediate service." *Ibid.* p. 34.

1580. In the same carton, liasse 1959, Ordinationes missionis castrensis, fol. 3. P. Jacobus Archerus is mentioned amongst those members of the Society of Jesus who have served in the mission since the year 1587. At fol. 5 there is mention of the death of P. Walterus Talbotus, with the query: "an sit Richardus?". In the same carton, no. 1971, entitled *missio castrensis*, is the dairy of Father Henricus Jamblonne S.J., in which there is mention of Fr. Peter Carthy S.J., chaplain in 1636.

1628. 1640. Aug. 18. Stravius to the papal secretary of State. The people of Arras, dissatisfied at having soldiers quartered upon them for the past four years, have decided to surrender to the French on certain conditions. Colonel O'Neill, commander of the town, is taking no part in such a move. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 64.

1635. a. Articles for the surrender of Arras were agreed upon by the Generals of Louis XIII and Colonel Owen O'Neill, commander of the town, for Philip IV of Spain, and were signed on 9 Aug. 1640. Article I reads: "Que ledit Mestre de Camp Don Eugenio Oneil, et autres Mestres de Camp. gouverneurs, Capitaines tant de cavallerie que d'infanterie, officiers, soldats, et tous gens de guerre, et tous ceux qui sont á la solde de sa Majesté Catholique,



tant ecclésiastique que séculiers, sortiront ce soir dans les dehors de la ville. Et pourront les officiers demeurer dans les maisons; et seront tous demain conduits à Douay par le plus court chemin, avec quatre canons et un mortier: Scavoir: deux pieces de 16 livres de bale, et deux de six; bale en bouche, tambour batant, mesche allumée et enseigne déployée, comme ils sont accoutumé de marcher a la guerre."

Article II provides: "Que les dits gens de guerre seront conduits en toute sûreté par deux cents chevaux, François naturels, jusques à la ditte ville de Douay, en deux jours ou en un s'il se peut; et on commetra quelque officier pour la garde de la personne dudit Mestre de Camp, en donnant ostages pour la sureté du convoi." For the full agreement see Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery*, I, pp.353-4.

b. 1641. Mar. 9. Stravio to Cardinal Barberini. Mentions the arrest of O'Neill, who commanded during the siege of Arras. Barberini Latin 6822, fol. 23, in Arch. Hib. XVIII, p. 104.

1683. 1641. Jan. 5. Stravio to Cardinal Barberini. French troops try to take Lens. O'Neill, who commanded at Douai, ordered to move to Lens. *Ibid.* fol. 2r.

1687. a. Carte, Ormonde I, p. 93. "The Earl of Strafford [Lord Lieutenant] went for Ireland, where a new Parliament had been called to meet the 16th. He landed the 18th of that month [March, 1640 o.s.] at Dublin; and the Parliament meeting two days afterward he . . . recommended to them the granting of his Majesty a supply answerable to his occasions, and sufficient to enable him to levy eight thousand foot and a thousand horse to his Irish subjects, whose faith and courage he so much depended on that he proposed to employ them in reducing the Scots to their due obedience."

b. *Ibid.* p. 97. "The Lord Lieutenant made a very short stay in Ireland . . . The care of ordering matters for the raising and regulating of the new army was committed chiefly to the Earl of Ormonde."

c. *Ibid.* p. 98. "The old army was composed entirely of Protestants, great care having been used not to allow any Papist to serve in it, even as a common soldier; and the draught now made out of it amounted to one thousand men, who being vested with authority, were in a state of superiority over the rest of the new army, and had it absolutely under their power; and it was of little or no consequence, what religion the other private sentinels which composed it, professed. The rendezvous for each province was fixed for May 18, and on the 25th the forces were to begin their march from thence to the general rendezvous at Carrickfergus."

d. *Ibid.* p. 105. "The Irish army . . . was, without ever had any orders sent them to embark, dispersed at the latter end of September, without doing or attempting anything at all . . . four thousand of them were immediately cashiered by order of the Lord Lieutenant."



e. Towards the end of April and the beginning of May 1641, pressure was brought by the Commons and the Lords to force the King to disband the remaining four thousand men, and he sent instruction to this effect; 1641. May 8-18. The King to the Earl of Ormonde: "Whereas we have for sundry considerations thought fit to disband our new army under your command in our Kingdom of Ireland; and that to prevent the disorders which the soldiers thereof might hereafter commit, to the disturbance of the peace and quietness of our subjects there, we have given leave unto certain officers to transport out of that our Kingdom, for the service of any Prince or State in amity with us, eight thousand foot of that said army, we do hereby will and require you to take notice of this our pleasure . . . that so our said army may be forthwith disbanded and disposed of according etc." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter XIX; and see letters XXIII and XXIV, *ibid.*

f. As the King had no money to pay the men, he signed warrants on May 13 for Colonels Theobald Taaffe, John Barry, John Butler, Richard Plunket, George Porter, Christopher Beling and Garret Barry, authorising each of them to transport one thousand of the disbanded men out of Ireland for foreign service; and on May 31 Colonel Thomas Butler was authorised to transport a further five hundred. Carte, *Ormonde* I, p. 133. For later developments see notes under 4 Aug. 1641.

1698. 1641, August? Petition of Colonel Hugh O'Brien to the Earl of Leicester, Lieutenant of Ireland. Praying that as the army is now quite disbanded he may be allowed to raise men. The prohibition applies only against raising men "out of the army to be disbanded". *C.S.P.Ire.* 1633-47, p. 340.

1707. 1640-41. Mar. 16-26. Whitehall. Sir Henry Vane to the Lords Justices of Ireland. "His Majesty has ordered me to acquaint your Lordships with the advice given him from abroad, and confirmed by his Ministers in Spain and elsewhere, which in this distempered time, and conjuncture of affairs deserves to be seriously considered, and an especial care and watchfulness to be had therein; which is, that of late there have passed from Spain (and the like may well have been from other parts) an unspeakable number of Irish churchmen for England and Ireland, and some good old soldiers, under pretext of seeking leave to raise men for the King of Spain; where it is observed, among the Irish friars there, a whisper runs as if they expected a rebellion in Ireland, and particularly in Connaught." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter XVIII.

1728. a. On October 11-21. 1641 Sir William Cole reported to the Lords Justices of Ireland that "Mr Henry O'Neill, a captain which came from Flanders about May last, hath since that time had the chiefest part of his residence in Tyrone, at or near Sir Phelim Ree O'Neal's house, to which place, it hath been observed, there hath been more than an ordinary or former usual resort of peoples; so frequent, that it hath bred some suspicion of evil



intendments in the minds of sundry men of honest inclinations etc." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter XXIX. The remainder of the letter is of interest for the pre-history of the Rising in 1641.

b. Some information on the part taken by Captain Bernard (Brian) O'Neill and other officers in the Spanish service at the beginning of the Rising in 1641 will be found in 'The Relation of the Lord Maguire' etc., *Aphorismical Discovery* I, part II, pp. 501-11; and 'The Examination of Connor Lord Maguire' etc., *Ibid.* pp. 497-8. Concerning Owen O'Neill, Maguire is stated to have said: *Ibid.* p. 498: "And this Examinee further saith, that about May last, he, this Examinee, Roger Moore, Philip O'Rely, Roger Macguire, this Examinee's brother, dispatched a priest, one Toole O'Conley, who liveth in Leinster, unto Owen Oneale, into Flanders, to acquaint him with the business concerning the general rebellion then in preparation, which said priest returned about a month before the time appointed for the execution thereof. And the answer which the said priest brought from the said Owen Oneal was, that he would (within 15 days after the people were up) be with them, with his best assistance and arms." See also the examination of Henry Cartan, *Ibid.* pp. 394-400, where Owen O'Neill is said to have expressed similar intentions in case of a rising.

1737. 1641. May 31. Carlo Rosetti to Cardinal Barberini. The Spanish ambassador at London wants Irish soldiers for the King of Spain. It is said that Spain will get 6,000 and France 3,000. Barberini Latin 8649, ff. 531v-532, in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 190.

1762. 1641. July 8. From the Camp. Owen O'Neill to [Fr Hugh de Burgo]. Very Reverend Father. I received your Reverence's letter yesterday, the 7th of this month, late in the evening, with great sorrow, as I understood from it the lack of consideration shown by our nation in disarming itself at this particular time without thinking of the evil and damage which may result to them; for I look upon it as certain that it will be the extirpation and total ruin of that poor country, unless God in His divine mercy, and through the intervention of certain people who are versed in these affairs, puts it into their hearts to come to an agreement amongst themselves, and think of the great tempest which will come down upon them certainly, and deprive them of their faith and possessions; and those of them who survive will live in perpetual slavery, without ever having any hope of freeing themselves except by a sheer miracle of God; which at the least I fear will not be during our time.

I consider very proper and practical the brave and noble resolution which your very reverend paternity has taken of running the risk in order to see if you can give any hand, by remedying this state of things, and their difficulties and dangers, and I hope in God, as this concerns Him, that you will overcome them; and with regard to the means for the journey, they will not



fail your very reverend paternity even if I have to sell all my horses. But I call to your attention that great secrecy is necessary in this business, and that as few people as possible should know of it, even in that house [St. Anthony's, Louvain] although I look upon them all as good and holy; for as all the world is aware of the opinion and esteem in which you are held in all these kingdoms, and as you are a public figure, it is to be feared that some would think, if they knew of it, that you would not *depart* at this time unless upon business of importance. It is true that *there will be* persecution, but up to the present they have not laid hands on any Irishman; nor do I know that they will do so, as I think the thoughtless negligence of our countrymen will give them the opportunity of doing what they like with them.

It is certainly of great importance that we see one another for a short time before this journey is undertaken, and perhaps your very reverend paternity could write to me and tell me the day on which you think of coming to Lille, and give the letter to my wife, to whom I am writing that she send it to me by express beforehand, so that I may be there on the same day, if possible; or if not, owing to the fact that we are so near the enemy, that I may have time to inform your very reverend paternity of the nearest place where we could meet. I am always accustomed to put up at the Red Horse at Lille, but I will not go there this time, as it so well known to the Irish, and everyone puts up there. I will go to The Three Kings; hoping for a very early answer from your very reverend paternity on these matters.

The news from here is not very good, as we are looking upon the unhappy spectacle of loosing this town, miserably, owing to past neglect. It has been very hard pressed, as the enemy has two other batteries almost on the edge of its trenches, and unless help arrives, I fear it may be lost sooner than is thought. We on our side are established upon a hill facing the enemy. There is a marsh between us; our sentinels and those of the enemy are very near us. With all this we give no help to the poor people who are suffering inside, and we have no other hope except in the Duke of Lorraine. One day he is our friend and is coming, and the next, he is our enemy and is dealing with France. Up to the present we have no certain news of his Highness, who is expecting letters from Count Garcia whom he has sent to treat. With him, however, if he came with the men he is said to have, and the others whom his Highness has sent for, not only would the fortress be succoured, but the enemy would be lost; at least this could be hoped for.

The nephew of your reverend paternity was with us for four or five days at la Bassé, and has gone to Lille. You may be sure that in everything in which I can help him I will do so with all my heart.

An English Jesuit Father came here yesterday from St Omer, and says that they received letters in the last post from England,



in which they write that the Irish do not intend to disarm, and that they answered the King and Parliament, that if they are mad, they themselves do not intend to be, nor just as little to lay down their arms, until they see that things are greatly to their satisfaction. I dont know whether this is true or not, but this Father told it to us as certain. May God keep your very reverend paternity many years, as I hope. From the Camp. 8 July 1641. Most affectionate servant of your very reverend paternity, whose hands I kiss. Signed: Don Eug<sup>o</sup> Oneill. Address missing. Archives, Dun Mhuire, D. I, pp. 409-11.

1767. "News out of England to Dublin, that the army raised in Ireland should be disbanded, and conveyed into Scotland. And presently several colonels and captains landed, with directions to carry away the men; amongst them Colonel Plunkett, Colonel Burne, and Captain Bryan Oneale came, but did not all come together; for Plunkett landed before my coming out of town, and the other two after, wherein a great fear of suppressing of religion was conceived, and especially by the gentry of the Pale, and it was very common amongst them, that it would be very inconvenient now to suffer so many men to be conveyed out of the kingdom." 'The Relation of the Lord Maguire.' in Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* I, part II, p. 503, from *Carte Papers* LXIV.

The narrative states later (p. 504): They prevailed or rather forced me to come to Dublin to confer with these colonels (and that was last August twelvemonth). Coming to Town I met Sir James Dillon . . . who was one of these colonels . . . Then he likewise began to lay down what a danger it would be to suffer so many able men as was to go with them, to depart the kingdom in such a time: "Neither (said he) do the other gentlemen that were colonels and myself affect our own private profit, so as to prefer it before the general good of the kingdom . . . I will let you know the resolution of those other gentlemen, and mine, which is, that we are ready to raise our men, and after to seize on the Castle".

1773. *Carte, Ormonde* I, p. 134. Gives the following account of the situation: "This body of eight thousand foot was entirely dissolved before the middle of June without any inconvenience or disorder in the nation at this time. Nor could any have happened afterwards, had the King been allowed to pursue his intentions, and send the disbanded men into foreign service. The House of Lords approved of the method, but it was not agreeable to the inclination, or did not suit the scheme of the Irish Agents. They solicited against it at Court; they engaged their friends and allies of the faction that governed in the House of Commons in England to oppose it; and the Irish Commons then sitting, where the Roman Catholic and Puritan parties had a great majority, declared against the transporting of such a number of soldiers out of the nation etc. "This opposition put a stop to the execution of the design until the month of August; when the Irish Parliament being adjourned



to November, and the English appearing satisfied to allow of such a number, the King recalled his other warrants, and allowed only Colonels Taaffe, Porter, John and Garret Barry, to levy and transport four thousand men out of Ireland for the King of Spain's service. The Spanish ambassador had furnished the officers with money for levying and subsisting the men, and had spent several thousands of pounds in hiring and providing ships, victuals, and other necessaries for their transportation." Reference to Borlase, *History*, p. 8. *Journal of the House of Commons*, July 30, 1641, Nelson II, p. 426 and A. 263.

b. *Carte Ormonde* II, p. 166, states that under the pretence of raising men for the King of Spain it was suspected that there was a design to raise a rebellion in Ireland, and that on this account the King had taken particular care to give warrants of leave for transporting them to none but such officers as were of English blood, and whose characters were unexceptionable.

1774. a. 1641. Aug. 4. Petition of Theobald Taaffe, James Dillon, John Barry, John Bermingham, Gerat Barry, John Butler, Richard Plunkett and George Porter, colonels in Ireland, to the King, shewing that: They have been prevented from taking troops to Spain from Ireland. They had contracted with the Spanish ambassador to take them there, and have, according to contract, each spent at least £1,000 in getting them ready. The Irish Parliament has recently ordered that all these troops shall be stayed. They pray that their orders may be sent to Council and Parliament, ordering that petitioners may embark their men. Underwritten (on back): Referred by the King to the Houses of Parliament. He is anxious to grant the petition. 8 August. Whitehall. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1633-47, p. 330.

b. 1641. 28 July-6 August. *Journals of the House of Commons Anno 1641.* P. 227a. "My Lord Privy Seal said: "He was to acquaint us with a letter sent from the Spanish ambassador to the King; and that the Lords thought fair no answer should be given, till the House was made acquainted therewith, and three points cleared: What number of men were to go; the time when; and the manner how; and to be satisfied when the contract was made, and how it standeth with the House, Here the letter itself was read."

c. 1641. 6-16 Aug. "My Lord Privy Seal then spake concerning the Spanish ambassador, and said, that the twelve thousand men, which the Spanish ambassador did desire, was an army, and that the King was now content he should accept of three or four thousand pounds, if the Parliament did so advise him. The Lords have assented to it, and desire the advice of the House."

My Lord Bristoll said further that when the Spanish ambassador disbursed the money, it was an acceptable work to this kingdom; and therefore it was a great consideration to move the House unto



it; and considering how many thousand pounds he hath dispersed about the same." *Ibid.* p. 242b. And see Appendix, 20.

d. 1641. Aug. 21. Madrid. Reference in a dispatch: The levy of 10,000 Irish for Spanish service brings joy to the Spanish Court. Barberini Latin 846, ff. 32r-33v.; and see *ibid.* ff. 35r.-38r., for reference to Irish troops in Portugal. *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 117.

e. 1641. Aug. 28. Fachinetti, nuncio at Madrid, to Barberini. Announces that 10,000 Irishmen are coming to serve the King of Spain; they have been allotted by the English Parliament, as it was feared they might side with the King against the Parliament. *Ibid.* 8475, ff. 123rv.-124r., in *Arch. Hib. ibid.*

1778. a. 1641. Aug. 20-30. Edinburgh. Sir Henry Vane to Ormonde. "His Majestie, and the interposition of the Parliament of England and Ireland, will not give leave but for four thousand men to be transported, and these were disposed to the two Barryes, Porter and Taffe, before I received your Lordship's command." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter XXV.

b. 1641. Aug. 11-21. Ordered: That the propositions delivered from the Lords at a conference concerning a levy of English and Irish soldiers for the service of the French King and the King of Spain shall be taken into debate on Friday morning at nine of Clock." *Journals of the House of Commons* A. 1641.

c. 1641. Aug. 13-23. A message from the House of Lords . . . The Lords desire a free conference, in the Painted Chamber, presently, if it may stand with the convenience of this House, concerning some soldiers that are desired by the French King and the King of Spain. Answer returned by the same messengers: that this House has considered of the message, and will give a present hearing as desired. *Ibid.* p. 254.

1779. 1641-2. Feb. 12-22. The examination of Henry Cartan. "And soone after, at the camp of Ayre, there came unto the said Owen [*O'Neill*] an Irish fryer, one of the O'Neales, disguised, who after much private conference with the said Collonell for about six daies, the fryer departed thence for England, together with Captain Edward Birne, and Captain Brian O'Neale, a kinsman of the said Collonells and a captain of his regiment and now in Ireland amongst the rebells; and at the said Captain Brians departure form the Collonell, he, the said Collonell, presented him with a case of pistols. And shortlie after the aforementioned Captain Con O'Neale was again sent into England etc." Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* I, part I, pp. 396-400.

1780. a. 1641. Aug. 24. Carlo Rosetti, papal agent at London, to Cardinal Barberini. Reports that four thousand Irish troops are allowed to enter the service of Spain. Barberini Latin 8650, part I, fol. 176r. in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 130.

b. 1641. Aug. 24.-Sept. 3. The Lords Justices and Council to Secretary Vane. "We are carrying out the King's orders,



permitting 4,000 soldiers to be exported hence for the service of foreign princes." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1633-47, p. 338.

c. 1641. Aug. 24-Sept. 3. The same to the same. "The bearer John Butler came over here as one of the captains licensed to export 1,000 soldiers out of the country, but as the King has since countermanded the order, he has conformed himself to it. He had spent large sums to enable him to fulfill his contract with the Spanish ambassador for these men. As the King has dispensed with the counter orders in some places, he wishes to be allowed to take up 1,000 men. We do not know how foreign affairs and foreign policy stand, but this gentleman is brother of Lord Mountgarret, and ancient Peer of this kingdom, and served at Rhe and Rochelle. He is a fit man to get the benefit of the King's favour in such a way." *Ibid.* p. 339.

d. 1641. Aug. 26-Sept. 5. The same to the same. Asking whether the bearer, Colonel John Butler, may export 1,000 men out of Ireland, in the event of Captain Thomas Butler being allowed to do so. *Ibid.* p. 339

e. 1641. Aug. 27-Sept. 5. The same to the same. Forwards the petition of John Bermingham, representing that he is one of the officers who have suffered by the suspension of licence for exporting soldiers from Ireland to foreign parts. "His licence to raise men applied only to voluntaries, not to men of the disbanded Irish army who alone were within the restriction imposed by the King." *Ibid.* pp. 399-40.

1781. 1641. Oct. 27. a. Eveden Mac Swyne, a justice of the peace for the county of Donegl to —? "A score of men have been raised at Glanfinn. One of them is one of the Gallaghers, just returned from the Low Countries." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1633-47, p. 344.

b. 1641. Nov. 22. London. Unsigned letter. "This revolt [in Ireland] has been greatly accelerated by the revolt of a levy that was made for Spain for more than 12,000 soldiers, who for despite do mischief." *H.M.C., Franciscan MSS* p. 109.

c. 1641. Nov. "There remained at this time embarked within the harbour of Dublin, four hundred Irish soldiers, ready, as was pretended, to sail for Spain, under the command of Colonel John Barry, who with some other Irish gentlemen had procured leave from his Majesty to levy certain numbers of volunteers to be transported over for the service of King of Spain. And those levied in other parts, as well as in Dublin, were brought together just at the very time design'd for the execution of the said plot. The pretence was specious, but certainly their intentions how finely soever covered, were to have those men in a readiness together, at the very time appointed for the breaking out of those unnatural troubles. And as for these men which lay within the harbour of Dublin, they were so great a terrour to all the Protestant inhabitants of the city, as it exceedingly perplexed the Lords how



to dispose of them as might prevent the mischief fully feared in case of their landing. Their commanders had so handsomely ordered the matter, as though they were designed for a long voyage, yet stay on ship-board any longer they could not, be reason they had no victuals, not even enough to carry them out of the harbour, and no man had orders in the absence of Colonel Barry, who retired himself some few miles out of the town, the very evening before the Castle should have been taken, to provide for the further supplying of them. To suffer them to land was to add so many instruments of mischief to those already gathered within and about the city. Therefore it was resolved that the Captain of the King's Pinnace, then in the harbour, should by force keep them from landing, which he did severall days together, till it was apparent they would inevitably starve, if a course were not suddenly taken to afford them some relief. Whereupon the Lords having no means to victual them aboard, gave them leave to land, having first taken order they should not come into the city." Temple, *The Irish rebellion*, p. 49.

d. 1641. Dec. 29. Unsigned letter from Ireland to Hugh de Burgo. "They talk . . . of a defeat they have inflicted upon the Scots in Ulster, and of another which the insurgents in Leinster (among whom are Hugh Bruin and Liseach Dempsy) have given the English in Leyse. *Ibid.* p. 112.

1784. In his examination taken on 12-22 Feb. 1641-2, Henry Cartan states "that the principal commaunders and captains of the Irish in Flaunders are those whose names are underwritten, vizt. Owen O Neale, Collonell; Patrick Donnelle, serieant maior, Conn O'Neale, capten. Brian O Neale. capten; which Conn and Brian are now in Ireland, commanders with the rebels. The rest of the captens that are now in the Low Countries of the said Collonell Owen O Neales regiment are these (vizt): Melaughlin O Moore, Griffin Cavanagh, Donnogh Lalor, James Dillon, Stephen Delahoide, Nicholas Dalton. George Hovendon, Richard Bourke, Gerrald Fitz-Gerald, Dermott Conseden, Neale O Neale, John O Neale, Henry O Neale, Con McNeale O Neale, Brian Roe O Neale, John Donnelle, adjutant, Maurice O Hoan, adjutant, Henry Neale, sone of the said Collonell Owen, captain of a troope of horse, David Browne, cornett of the said capten, Edmond Loughran, auditor in the said regiment, Captens of particular companies not of any regiment, vizt. Collonell Preston, William Butler, Maurice Mc Donnell, James Geffry, and one Capten Taylor." Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* I, part I, p. 400. Cartan had left the Low Countries just before Christmas 1641. *Ibid.*

1786. See the letter of Madame Preston to Fr Hugh de Burgo, appendix, no. 24; and no. 1803 note d. "There befell him [Preston] that which enabled me to commend the voyage to him." The fact that after the war in Ireland Preston was so well received



again in the Low Countries establishes his innocence of the charges. See for instance under 1 Apr. 1651.

1787. 1642. Jan. 18. Brussels. Fr Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "The day before yesterday Don Francisco de Mello made his solemn entry here as governor of this country. They say that his government will be brief, for that the advent of the Archduke Leopold is expected. I am vexed that your paternity did not send me the letter for this governor which I craved, for we have much need of his favour, and his confessor does not seem to me to be well disposed to our affairs." *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 114.

1792. a. 1642. Feb. 1. Wadding to Barberini. Encloses draft of a letter which the cardinal may send to those soldiers in Flanders who wish to go to Ireland. Barberini Latin 6485, fol. 11r. in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 95.

b. 1642. Wadding to Barberini. Reports that Con O'Neill has departed from Rochelle with sixty soldiers. *Ibid.* fol. 22r.

c. 1642. Feb. 15. Barberini to Fachinetti, nuncio at Madrid. "Stravio, nuncio at Brussels, pleaded with de Mello to allow Preston and O'Neill to go to Ireland. de Mello wished to know if Stravio had been instructed by the Pope to do so." Barberini Latin 8457, fol. 46r., in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 117.

d. 1641-42. Feb. 12-22. The examination of Henry Cartan. Cartan claims to have been major domo of Owen O'Neill and quarter-master of his regiment, and to give in his examination a detailed account of the dealings between O'Neill and other prominent promoters of the insurrection of 1641. Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* I, part I, pp. 396ff.

e. A similar document is the Relation of the Lord Maguire written with his own hands in the Tower; of which however Maguire denied the authorship. *Ibid.* I, part II, pp. 501-11.

1796. a. 1642. Mar. 2. Brussels. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "I returned yesterday from the journey that by order of the Archbishop of Malines and Maestricht I made for the purpose of solliciting contributions from the bishops of Flanders to the cost of a frigate of Dunkerque, which might be of service to our country in this emergency for carrying advices too and fro . . . The good bishops one and all made excuse except the archbishop, who would have shown himself liberal and generous, if the rest concurred, for he will contribute £500 sterling for the purpose; a frigate well equipped costs £2,000 sterling." *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 123.

b. 1642. Mar. 8. Cardinal Barberini to Stravio. Sends him a rough draft of instructions as to how he should negotiate with de Mello for the release of Preston and O'Neill from the Spanish service for service in Ireland. Barberini Latin 6822, fol. 236Arv., in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 105.

1798. a. 1642. Mar. 15. Stravio, nuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Barberini. "Is doing all he can to get help for the Irish.



Preston and O'Neill deserve support, but the authorities in Flanders are hesitant, as England has threatened to break off relations with Spain if help is given to Ireland. Stravio hopes to send 12,000 muskets secretly to Ireland. O'Neill visits him frequently and asks him to use his influence with de Mello to allow him to go to Ireland." Barberini Latin 7822, ff. 248-9, in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 105.

b. 1642. Mar. 22. Wadding to Hugh de Burgo. "Secondly I told your paternity that I sent you 10,000 crowns, to be laid out with the advice and concurrence of Don Eugenio and Preston in artillery and munitions . . . Thirdly I represented to your paternity that there was grave cause to misdoubt Don Eugenio's going to Ireland, because some fear that there may be jealousies and strifes between him and Felix O'Neill, and that the latter will not give way to Don Eugenio, or Don Eugenio be content to serve under Don Felix, so that his going there might do more harm than good . . . Wherefore your paternity should find some clever way to prevent it, and send Preston to the front." *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 127-9.

c. 1642. Mar. 22. Brussels. de Burgo to Wadding. "Nothing is to be hoped for from Spain, not even the least favour. By order of Don Francisco de Mello there was found last week a proclamation published with the beat of drum, that it was unlawful for any to succour the Irish under the most severe penalties, the foulest and most scandalous deed that Christendom has witnessed in these parts. I speak with feeling . . . Don Eugenio will write to your paternity today. He is eating his heart out here that he cannot procure the means to go over to our country. For the love of God contrive to raise a loan there, that Don Eugenio, Colonel Preston and Don Juan de Burgo may be able to depart hence, being as they are the soldiers on whom by reason of their long experience the hopes of the patriots are set. *Ibid.* p. 127.

1801. a. 1642. Apr. 12. Brussels. Fr Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "As to what you write touching Don Eugenio, I apprehend no such danger; he is not disposed to claim more than his father enjoyed, for he acknowledges that all the immediate right to the earldom of Tyrone belongs to Don Constantine, who is in Spain. So long as he lives, Don Eugenio can claim nothing, as he publicly acknowledges, offering to serve no matter whom, Don Felim or another, in the common cause of religion and the realm, and that he goes not thither to command, but to receive what they may be minded to lay upon him, and that if the realm should deem Don Felim to be the Earl of Tyrone, he would be the first to obey." *Ibid.* p. 132.

b. 1642, May 30, Brussels. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "As to what your paternity writes touching Owen and Preston, the former is much more to our purpose, for he is of great prudence



and conduct, very adroit and crafty in the handling of great matters; the latter is very brave, but not a man of much prudence; true it is that he is more popular than the other; but there is absolutely no comparison between the two talents for our purposes. Both will be very necessary, and I know not whether Preston be definitely resolved to quit the service. He is very haughty and I find much more to lack in him than in the other. *Ibid.* p. 145.

c. Three letters of Sir Henry de Vic to Lord Falkland, from Brussels, 6-16 March, 1642, 22 March-1 April, and 21-32 May, give an account of the English agent at Brussels with regard to Ireland and Don Eugenio O'Neill. See Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* II, p. 461, and 521-3, where the letters are published from Clarendon Papers no. 1564. In his letter of 22 March de Vic writes: "I am tolde from a good hande, which hath it from the Irish themselves, that the governour (in conformity with what he profest of his intentions for the punctuall observation of his parte of his treaties between the two crowns) hath sent Don Diego de la Torre to O'Neale, to forbid him goinge to Ireland. Which the Irish take extremely to hearte, and give out that the Spaniards are more their enemies than the English." In his letter of 21 May: "It is again confirmed unto me that Done Eugenio O Neale is in so much disfavour with the government, as neither he nor his sonne (who is with him in this towne) purpose to return any more to their charges. Whither it be real or feigned it is, there must be some great cause of his absence, in this active time, from the army. And I am tolde (I knowe not how true it is) that one Teniente Roche, a Spaniard borne, but of Irish extraction, is to have the regiment. Besides it is certain O Neale leaves his house, and I cannot learn where, or whither he hath taken another . . . Upon a more exact enquiry of his person (I meane O'Neales) I was informed that hee is not balde onely hath something of a high forehead, and weares his haire longer than ordinary. The rest agrees with the description I have already sent of him to your honour."

1803. a. 1642. June 13. Brussels. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "Don Eugenio was to depart with his frigate, and the son of Lord Roche, on 10th of this month. I gave him 10,000 florins." *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 149.

b. 1642. June 18. Owen O'Neill to Hugh de Burgo. At sea, aboard the frigate St Francis. "Your paternity, I suppose, already deems me in Ireland, judging by the time of my taking leave of you. I doubt not it had been so but that I embarked four days after we should have put to sea, by reason that all was not so well made ready as had been promised me, and as it had meanwhile appeared. On the day before I went aboard, which was Holy Trinity eve, thirty Dutch ships formed a line blocking the passages all along the coast from the offing of Gravelines to Ostend in such sort that, as it was impossible for me to put out with my



frigate I (not to lose time) resolved, and twice attempted, to put out in a small bark with two small pieces of ordnance, fifteen soldiers, and some munitions, and would have put out again to-night, but the officers would not suffer it without more armament than the aforesaid; and so my nephew Don Bernard goes with the captain of the ship and some munitions, to announce my coming and animate them till I arrive. I hope to get out hence with the frigate about the 5th or 26th, when the moon will be on the wane, the nights dark, and the tide higher, And may be the King's frigate will put out at the same time and secure the passage." *Ibid.* p. 150-1; and see de Burgo to Wadding, *ibid.* p. 154, and p. 156.

c. 1642. June 20 (?). Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "Preston departed for the campaign by this way; I spoke to him frankly and with feeling, considering the terms on which he has been with me, who have worked and travailed for him on divers occasions in very sure hope that he would be the first to go to work as soon as opportunity should present itself." *Ibid.* p. 154.

d. 1642. July 18. Brussels. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "The part I must needs take in speeding Colonel Preston's departure for Ireland causes me the greatest anxiety. There befell him that which enabled me to commend the voyage to him." *Ibid.* p. 164.

e. Preston arrived in Paris, "on Monday last" the 28 July 1642, and later left for Ireland with Geoffrey Baron. *Ibid.* p. 167 and 177.

Carte, *Ormonde I*, p. 367, states that Preston "came from Dunkerke in a ship that carried thirty pieces of canon, attended by two frigates, each of four guns, and five or six other vessels laden with ordnance for battery, field-pieces, and a vast quantity of arms and ammunition. He brought with him Colonels Cullen, Synnot, Pluncket, and Bourke, a good master of engineers, and 600 other officers, that had been long employed in foreign service."

1804 a. 1642. July 5. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "To the 20th of last month Don Eugenio had not been able to put to sea, the Dutch with (it is suspected) some English among them, keeping him blockaded in the port of Mardyck. He then went ashore, and having ordered the two frigates to hug the land to Ostend, eight leagues from where he was, he showed himself at Dunkirk, and gave all in those parts to understand that not being able to put to sea, he was on the way back to his regiment, and the army; but the frigates being arrived at Ostend, and the wind becoming rather favourable, at midnight he hoisted sail, and God speeding, got off with two hundred veterans from the regiment, among them not a few officers, six being captains, stout fellows all of them." *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 159.

b. 1642. Sept. 16. Louvain. Rose O'Docharty to an unnamed priest. Most honoured Father. I received your letter, for which I am very grateful, and also very joyful at hearing that the Camp-



Master Owen reached Erin safely. Nevertheless, your letter is so short that I do not gather much from it, beyond that one point which refers to his going to Erin. I beseech you (if you can) to procure every small particular that concerns the province of Ulster, and to communicate it to me; and (to let me know) which of its nobles are alive or dead, and how Tir Conaill stands, and where Owen left the munitions he had with him; for it is not possible that he could have passed through the entire length of Tir Conaill, if Saxons or Scots were in it; and therefore, in our opinion, he did not carry his stores out of the country. But in whatsoever way you may understand this, send us an account. As to my son Henri, I should like him and myself to be in Erin, if proper means could be provided for us; and we would require about a month or six weeks to make all our arrangements. I think I may not allude to these things anymore. At Louvain, 16 September 1642. I suppose you have heard of the death of the Earl of Tyrconnell. *Signed*: Doña Rosa Odocharty. The original, preserved in the archives at Dun Mhuire, Killiney, is in Irish and in the hand of Fr John Colgan. English translation in *Aphorismical discovery* I, part II, p. 523.

c. For the return of Henry, son of Owen O'Neill, see no. 1807, note b. Rosa O'Docharty returned to Ireland towards the end of March 1648 on a Belgian ship which fell in with English pirates. She feigned that she was the wife of a certain Captain Darcy, an Irishman not held in bad report by the Parliamentarians. She was robbed of everything, but was allowed to go free, and was landed in the most southern parts of Munster; but finally she reached Galway by way of Limerick. While in residence there with her daughter-in-law, her grandson, Hugh O'Neill, son of Henry, was kidnapped by one of the Blakes whose husband had been made a prisoner by the forces of Owen Roe, but was soon released. She was in Limerick in 1650, as appears from a letter of Major Hugh O'Neill to Ormonde, Limerick, 9 September, in which he states: "I received an other letter in answeare to one I sent to Ireton to procure a pass for my aunt, General O'Neill's lady". *Commentarius* III, p. 462; *Aphorismical discovery* III, p. I, pp. 180-1.

1807. a. Nov. 19. 1642. Brussels. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "I am here on business and to speed the departure of Don Eugenio O'Neill's son and Sergeant Ferall, a gentleman of whom much is hoped, who at his own charges has brought from Germany three officers and veterans of the nation." *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* pp. 200, 202, 221.

b. The son of Don Eugenio here referred to was Henry, who announced his safe arrival in Ireland in the following hitherto unpublished letter Archives, Killiney, D.I. p. 407. Ros. 6 March 1642-3. This goes to your reverend paternity with good wishes for your health, which for my part I desire and deem necessary.



I reached Ireland safely, thank God. My father, as I understand, is in good health. Things here are going very well. My father wrote here the other day about the artillery which your very reverend paternity has, and he is eagerly waiting for it. I do not wish to tire your paternity about things in particular, about which in any case I have no information beyond what the bearer of this will tell you. When I get to Ulster of Connaught I will inform your paternity about everything; and hoping that you will remember me in your prayers and keep me in your friendship, I remain, very reverend Father, your devoted servant. Signed: Don Henry Oneill. Written at Ros, 6 March 1642.

Your very reverend paternity will do me the favour of accomodating this poor religious at Louvain, without having him running about from one place to another. This will be doing me a special favour.

The address is missing, but the letter was evidently written to Fr Hugh de Burgo.

The names of others who returned to Ireland about this time, as given in *Aphorismical discovery* I, p. 6, are Con Oneyll, Brian Roe Oneyll, Daniel O'Kahan, Brian McPhelim Birne, Owen O'Dochardie, Gerald Fitz Geralde, and severall others of courageous repute."

On 29 August 1642 Matthew Hartigan S.J. writes to Fr Luke Wadding from Paris that he was doing his best to induce one Captain John O'Daniel, a Limerician, that has served Spain these many years in the frigates of Dunkirk, to go and serve his country. *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 183.

c. 1642, Nov. 19. Brussels. Hugh de Burgo to Wadding. "Mrs Preston departed the 5th of this month two days before the departure of the frigate for the country." *Ibid.* p. 221.

1818. a. 1642. Extracts from relations of Francis Sacheverell, 1642. "This Owen O'Neale brought over with him seven score souldiers, and three score of them he brought to Charlemount, and presently after were eight of them killed by Captain St John's troupe, for which Owen O'Neale was very worried, and cursed the Irish because they ran away and left them; and severall of the rest died of the bloodie flux; also he brought thither with him ten barrells of powder, foare horse loades of petternalls, and twentie carbines . . . they reported that he had lefte four score and tenne barrells of powder with other armes at Castledoe. There is at Charlemont . . . the captaine of the ship that brought the said Owen from Dunkirke." MS, Trinity College, Dublin, F. 3. 7, in Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* vol. I, part II, p. 547.

b. On 15 Jan. 1643, at Brussels, Fr Hugh de Burgo, "Agent and Resident in the Low Countries for the Kingdom of Ireland and the league thereof" issued a *laissez-passer* to Captain William Odeoran, admitted to the service of the said Kingdom and League, to command a frigate named the St Francis of 100 *astes*



and 25 pieces, newly bought for the same Kingdom and League. A note added to the document in a different hand reads: "Twelve hundred muskets, one hundred pair of pistols, one hundred carbines, two mortars, an assignment *pièce* of wick, twelve petards, three hundred sabres, four thousand pounds of powder, and some other ammunitions of war." Archives, Dun Mhuire, Killiney, D.I, p. 407.

1848. a. 1644. Jan. 9. Antonio Bichi, Internuncio at Brussels, to Cardinal Barberini. Reports that the King of Spain is to send two deputies to Ireland. Barberini Latin 1827, ff. 5r-6r, in *Arch. Hib.* XVIII, p. 106.

b. 1643-44. Jan. 19-29. The Marquis of Ormonde to Lord Digby. "I am newly informed by Colonel Barry from Kilkenny, where those who manage their part of the Irish affairs sit, that among some ships lately arrived at Waterford and Wexford with good store of armes and ammunition, there were two come to Waterford, and one out of France, the other out of Spain, and in either of them a person from each of those kingdoms in the nature of ambassador to the Irish; who directed their stay there till it were well, and at a full Council debate in what manner to receive them. What affair they came for he had not certainly learnt, the great guideres of their affairs having him in suspicion, and keeping at a wary distance with him; but he says that one of the brothers (for so he calls his informers) told him that he confidently believes they came to procure aide of men from them, or at least to hinder each other from prevailing therein. And though I cannot see what great advantage it will be to either of these Princes to have the bare bodies of men at such a rate, as they will cost them, before they can come to where they will be of use to them, yet I cannot imagine for what other reason such men should be addressed to those, that are in nothing else considerable as to them. Whatever their business is, I fear their coming will exalt the Irish, and make them higher in their treaty, and perhaps be some hindrance to Lord Taafe." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter CCXX I. See *ibid.* letter CCXXXII, Digby to Ormonde, Feb. 8-18, 1643-44. "Touching the Agents from Spain and France, employed to the Irish, I conceive your Lordship makes a right judgment of them, viz. that they are employed thither about raising of men. For the French, I am sure this is his errand; for Pr Harcourt hath obtained a commission here to rayse three thousand foot, and your Excellence will receive a letter from the King to that effect. It is a thing which, as it is present to us, could not be denyed; but I doubt not your Lordship will have skill enough, without showing an unwillingness to the thing, to protract matters so that they shall not reape such fruits of that permission as may be to the hindrance of his Majestie's levies. As for the Spanish Agent, I do not know what secret designs he may have with the Jesuited party there; but I believe his principal errand is to hinder the other."



c. In vol. I, Book IV, p. 475, Carte states that the Agent sent by the French Court in 1643 was M. de Moinery, and that the Agent sent by Don Francisco de Mello to represent Spain was Francisco de Fosset. He mentions that "his Catholic Majesty had about the Easter before remitted to them a free gift of 20,000 crowns, which they had laid out in arms and ammunition; and their agents at Madrid, in return for such a kindness, had offered to send a body out of Ireland into Spain for his service. They had directed their agent at Paris to make a like offer to the King of France, from whom they had likewise received supplies; but that Court had afterwards stopped the payment of 2,000 crowns, part of the money formerly ordered for their assistance. This had cooled their affection for the latter Court etc." He proceeds to state, however, that "they gave positive assurance to both the agents that after the next June 25 they should each of them be allowed to raise 2,000 foot with their officers upon such capitulations as should be agreed and to transport them into France and Spain for the service of their respective masters."

d. *Commentarius* I, p. 478 states that de la Monnerie arrived at Waterford on 13 June 1644, and went to Kilkenny, where on the first day he hunted with Lord Castlehaven and others of the followers of Ormonde, whom he gained over without much trouble. But *The Letter Book of the Council of Kilkenny* p. 77, bears out the date given by Ormonde, Digby and Carte, above, when it records the unanimous decision of the Council, given on 18 Feb. 1643-4, "that Monsieur de Moinery should receive answer that "we will be the fore and twentyeth of June next give licence that two thousand foot and their officers shall be levied in this kingdom and transported from hence etc."; and "that in case a peace shall be concluded we have already given instructions to our commissioners to press that the said two thousand men be rayseed in the like manner for his Christian Majestie his service."

1861. a. 1644. Nov. 15. de Cardenas to both Houses of Parliament. Represents that over three years ago an agreement was made with certain colonels and officers, at present in Ireland, that they would go to Spain and Flanders with men of that nation. This, however, on account of certain obstacles, did not take effect, and at present some of the same officers again offer to take men to Spain and Flanders if Parliament will grant them security and a passport for their ships. Irish MSS Commission, *Tanner Letters*, McNeill, Charles ed. p. 179.

b. 1644. Dec. 21. Galway. Fr Valentine Browne, Franciscan, to Fr Hugh de Burgo. "There goeth a thousand soldiers from this harbour to Fraunce, my L. of Iveagh being Coronel and James Fleming is lieutenant-colonel; my L. of Ossory's brother sergeant-major; there goeth Captain Laurence Fleming, Captain Peeter Blake, and many other captains of Leinster and Meath. Fa. Thomas Talbot goeth with them and pretends to be their capellan



major, but I think my L. is engaged to another. I commended to my L. and to the commanders that som good Father of the province might be their capellan major, hoping that might be an entrie for ours to have a place in Fraunce. I have propounded it to some of the Council, and they would be willing to yeald to it. If your paternitie think it fitting you may write to the coronel and the commanders, especially to Jeames and Laurence Fleming, and to the sergeant-major, who are our devout friends. I think that Fa. Patricke Connor should be the fittest man for the employment, he being long in Fraunce and well acquainted. God direct us, Your nephews are not yet in Waterford, and the rest of the regiment is gone for Spaigne and arrived there safely." Archives, Dún Mhuire, D.I. 825-27.

c. Carte, *Ormonde* I, p. 529, refers to the same men under the command of Lord Iveagh: "Belling . . . set sail from Gallway the last day of the foregoing year (1644). There went with him from that port several ships bound for France, having on board a regiment of 1,000 foot under the command of Arthur Magenis Viscount Iveagh, and a company of 100 more, commanded by Edward Pluncket, son to the Earl of Fingal. These were part of the 2,000 men which they had allowed to be levied in Ireland for the service of France. They had given a like permission to the Spanish Agent, but I do not find any mention made of their embarcation; nor indeed of the rest intended for the French service; except of 3,000 which they directed to be transported in the privatest manner possible. The reason of their enjoying this secrecy was, that they might with the better grace deny their own Sovereign, making the like request."

1863. a. Invernizzi had already been in Ireland with Scarampi, by whom he had been sent back to Rome to report. Rinuccini attached him to his own suite when he in turn was leaving for Ireland, intending to send him to Ireland in advance when they both should have reached Paris. He changed his mind, however, and from Paris sent Invernizzi to Belgium, to purchase or hire three or four frigates at Dunkirk. Invernizzi spent eight months there, largely occupied, it appears, with the ambition of getting himself appointed internuncio at Brussels, though he also obtained munitions and supplies for Ireland from Charles Duke of Lorraine, and from Castel Rodrigo, governor of the Spanish Low Countries. For the expenses he would incur in purchasing the frigates and for his journey he received from Rinuccini 29,000 crowns. He sailed out from Dunkirk with three frigates on 9 April 1645, but was forced to put into Ostend shortly after and change ship. After he set out the second time, nothing more was ever heard of him, or of the frigates, or of the sailors. See *Commentarius* II, pp. 259f.

b. Rinuccini refers to the disappearance of Invernizzi in two letters from Limerick on 3 June 1646, one to the Internuncio in Flanders and the other to Cardinal Pamphili at Rome. In the



second letter he mentions that news had arrived at Waterford in a message of a merchant, Everard, to his uncle, dated 18 April, that Invernizzi had returned to Ostend in the large ship with arms and munitions, because a leak had sprung in the hold. He had then set out again, on 9 April, in a smaller vessel, from which time nothing had been heard of him, and it could only be concluded that he had been shipwrecked or made prisoner. Aiazzi, *Nunziatura*, pp. 124-5.

1867. a. 1645. Mar. 12. Kilkenny. Owen O'Neill to Daniel O'Neill. "You desire that I should not be so conversant with the Spanish Agent. I assure you he is my old acquaintance, and one that I have seen Secretary of Warrs and State, and I hope he shall be a meanes to recover me the payment due to me upon his Majesty, and that it is that makes me confer with him nowe and then, and no other end and design." Carte Papers XVI, p. 407, in Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* I, part II, p. 666.

b. 1647. Dec. Rinuccini to Cardinal Panzirolo. "I am aware that the Spanish Agent secretly promised Don Eugenio good help, even in money." Aiazzi, *Nunziatura*, p. 277.

1868. 1644-5. 25 Mar-3 Apr. Secretary Nicholas to Ormonde. From Oxford. "I have advertisement from foreign parts, that both France and Spain are labouring who shall gaine most from Irelande. It must be your Excellencie's care to prevent them both in their designes, for whatever interest or engagement either of these Kings may have, the King our master will lose by it. My private opinion is, that if the King shall leave to either of these kings to levy men in Ireland, that it were much better that such leave were granted to the French than to the Spaniard; and that if there were 5,000 of the Catholicques of Ireland lent to the French King, it would I believe secure that Kingdom." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter CCLII.

1891. 1646, Jan. 6. Cardinal Mazzarin to Rinuccini. Presents du Moulin, the French Agent, whose commission is to see that the levy be carried out for France, which had already been promised by the Council of the Confederates, and that even a larger levy be granted. *Commentarius* II, p. 162.

1893. a. 1646. May 29. Limerick. Rinuccini to the Inter-nuncio at Brussels. The request which Mr Plunchet has made to be allowed to form his regiment of Irish infantry has met with so many difficulties that in spite of all my efforts I have not been able to overcome them. The Agent of his Most Catholic Majesty is here, and constantly renews his requests for the soldiers he wishes to have, and here it is thought not right to refuse the one and grant his request to the other. Moreover the present needs of this kingdom are so great in the different provinces, as I can assure your Excellency, that they would find it necessary not only to keep their own men, but to have others from outside." Aiazzi, *Nunziatura*, p. 132.



b. 1646. May 29. Limerick. Rinuccini to the Duke of Lorraine. He would wish that the letter brought to him from the Duke would have afforded an equal opportunity to serve him. The needs of the country do not permit that troops be sent elsewhere, and due regards must be had also to the requests of others. *Ibid.* pp. 132f.

1895. a. 1646. May 26. Brussels. Reported that Irish troops are in villages near Dunkirk. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 72.

b. 1646. May 29. Limerick. Rinuccini to Thomas Plunket. He has not only approached the Supreme Council but has spoken to each of its members personally in the interest of the levy desired by Plunket. All agree that they can see no way in which it can be granted. Besides the request made by both Crowns [France and Spain] there is extreme need in Ireland for enterprises which have been initiated but cannot be brought to a successful issue solely for the want of soldiers. He has not wished to delay in sending an answer to the Duke of Lorraine, and hopes that under the circumstances he will be satisfied, and will not fail, on this account, to show favour to Ireland. Aiazzi, *Nunziatura*, p. 133.

c. These letters of Rinuccini reflect his general attitude to the foreign powers, France and Spain, who were trying to get men from Ireland. See Aiazzi, pp. 207, 210, 217f., 221, 359.

d. 1646. June 30. Westminster. Further orders of the Committee of both Houses on Irish affairs. The House to be informed that the raising and transporting for France and Flanders men who have not served against the Parliament in the late wars is stopped for a time, "in regards it is a hindrance for the raising of men for Ireland, greater efforts being made for such as will serve in France or Flanders as can be well given for Ireland." The propositions of Colonels Butler and Sandys, and Captain Fisher's recommendation from Sir Thomas Fairfax are to be referred to the sub-committee for propositions. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1633-47, p. 466.

1897. 1646. July 2. Dublin Castle. Ormonde to Sir Piers Crosby. "As to the transport of men for the service of the King of Spain from the port of Wicklow, his answer can be given, that since the demolishing of his Majesty's fort there, and the murder of those that had charge of it, the port is no longer under the Lord Lieutenant's power. It is not for him therefore to make orders in the matter. No licence has been given to Col. Plunkett. *Carte Papers* XVIII, p. 5, no. 3.

1929. 1647. Feb. 14. Paris. Cardinal Mazzarin to Rinuccini. Complains that the Spaniards have been permitted to recruit in Ireland, whereas preference should have been given to the French. Rejects the explanation that the grant made to the Spaniards was due to a previous promise, as a similar promise had been made to France, and she had sent ships at great expense



and inconvenience to transport the men. He hopes the matter will soon be remedied. de la Monnerie will soon be in Ireland, and will be able to give all the information. He hopes a favourable hearing will be given to Tallon, de la Monnerie, and du Moulin, who will present this letter. *Commentarius* II, pp. 564-5.

In letters to Mazzarin from Kilkenny, 23 March and 27 April 1647, Rinuccini explains that licence had been given by the Catholic Confederates at Kilkenny both to the French and the Spaniards to raise a regiment. *Ibid.* p. 565.

A decision had been taken by the Confederates on 16 March 1647 to allow [Diego de la Torre] agent of his Catholic Majesty, to raise a regiment of infantry, under ten captains. *Ibid.* p. 563.

1952. Madame Marguerite de Namur, wife of Thomas Preston, was daughter of Charles van der Eychen, seigneur of Saint-George. Reference to the money here in question is made in a letter of Madame Preston to Colonel Preston, from Brussels, 20 Feb. 1647. "For the money which you lent to M. Poisot, the Marquis Castel Rodrigo has promised me satisfaction." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1633-47, pp. 603-4. And *Ibid.* pp. 604-5 in a letter from Brussels, 2 March 1647: "I have not yet got the money which you lent to M. Foisot (Foisette) and shall make a fresh request to the secretary ordered to sign my 'livrance' (order of payment) of 600 crowns, but have not yet been able to get the cheque."

A List of the children of General and Madame Preston, with dates of their births is given *ibid.* p. 613: Antoine, born at Rinsberg, 20 June 1618. Diego, born at Rinsberg, 8 Oct. 1618 [*sic*], Thomas Marie, born 7 Jan. 1620. His wife their mother died at Horst, near Gueldres, 28 Oct. 1621. Louise, born at Louvain, 8 Oct. 1624. Marie born at Beets, 20 Nov. 1625. Je (an) George, born at Beets, 27 May 1627. Anne Marie, born at Beets, 10 Nov. 1628. Clara, born 19 Dec. 1629. Cathrine, born at Beets, 31 Jan. 1632-3.

Beets was the Preston family residence near Louvain, for which, when Madame Preston endeavoured to sell it, "nobody offered more than 30,000 francs, though it was worthy 40,000." *Ibid.* p. 613.

1954. a. 1646-47. Feb. 27-Mar. 9. Ross. Digby to Ormonde. "Since my speaking with Mr Du Moulin, who is here with me at Ross, I have received some satisfaction concerning the proceedings of France in relation to the business of this kingdom . . . and I understood from Mr Du Moulin that there is a proportion of ships ready at Rochelle sufficient to transport 5,000 men; so that if I can settle conditions for you to my mind, it is probable that all things will fall out very seasonably. I like very well of your letter to Mr Du Moulin who will send you a copy of your engagement and mine, which it behoves me to perform. But I continue still in the opinion that you ought not to send over the regiment as your own till you hear from me out of France . . . which will be very suddenly." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter DXXXVI.



b. 1647. Mar. 16-26. From the Island near Waterford. Digby to Ormonde. "This morning there came into Passage Mr de la Moniere and Mr du Talon, a person of much consideration and employment, with three frigates of war, and two of burthen, able to transport near a thousand men apiece. Their pretence to carry over men, which they expect from the Confederate Catholics; but their real and prime errand was to me, upon the business of B., and to you for the thousand men; for which you are engaged to the French Agent. For the first, I will give them good satisfaction in it; and for the other, since they are come so seasonable, I doubt not but you will, in case it shall upon further discourse be insisted upon. But I have so filled and possessed them with the proposition of so much greater a service in the 5,000 men which I have power to conclude for you, that I believe, if we can settle it, they will be willing to let the other engagement be swallowed with the greater. They assure me that they have both money and powers to go through with whatever I shall undertake to them; and the Cardinal hath written unto me very full credentials." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter DXLII.

c. *Commentarius* II, p. 162, puts the arrival of the French Agent Du Moulin whose mission seems to have been of general importance, on 18 Feb. 1646.

1956. 1647. Mar. 20-30. Ormonde to Digby, "I conceive the manner of sending the 1,000 men never be so well resolved on by letter as by discourse, therefore I wish one of the French agents would come hither, and that speedily, Monsieur de Moulin if it may be. I also conceive it will be much safest if your Lordship forbear engaging yourself and me in the meantime, till you hear from me; unless those you deal with should undertake to procure the licence from Parliament." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter DXLIX, postscript.

In the body of the letter Ormonde writes: "To my proposition of having leave to transport men, I had no return; but to my Lord of Roscommon I have renewed the motion, and made it directly to the Parliament, giving him power (if need be) to abate of the money I am to receive, the sum I write you of. By this your Lordship may judge of the certainty or uncertainty of my transporting men with their leave, and of the impossibility of doing it without their leave; unless I will betray my hostages. For the 1,000 undertaken for by your Lordship and me, I will do all that lies in my power to help them; and am sure to succeed, if they will send me but half the levy money they give to others; which I will stand to repay them, if you cannot save it me; and in case they have leave from the Parliament (for without that, it is a question whether they will be suffered to pass, there being here three Parliament ships, and more daily to be looked for) or if they can get leave from the Irish, that the men of what part of condition soever, may march through their quarters, and imbarke where the



ships are; and lastly, if they send before these places be given up." *Ibid.*

1960. a. 1647. May 19. Waterford. Don Francisco Foisotte to General Preston. You will have heard that your son Don Diego has already sailed, on Sunday, with his two shiploads of men, in spite of the French frigates which had come down the passage and placed themselves out of range of the fort of Duncannon. The three frigates and two of the other French ships shortly after followed Don Diego, who, as he had left in calm weather, and with the tide adverse, had not got further than Credenhead, so that they were able to overtake him before he got to the mouth of the river . . . There is no news as to the result, but I fear the worse . . . But as soon as I saw the ships allowing the two French ships to pass, and giving them a salvo, I knew that your son had been sold, either by foreigners or by his own people . . . We are about to embark Colonel Barnewall's regiment." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1633-47, pp. 628-9.

b. 1647. June 8. Kilkenny. Foisotte to General Preston. "Misfortune never comes simply. That which befel your son was only a precursor of the news that more than 800 men of our regiment for Spain have disbanded, after having been kept for eight weeks, at incredible cost. Certain people think the loss of the two ships has been the cause of this, or else, in the second place, treason. The Marquis of Antrim's sailors all ran away when the wind began to be favourable, and it has not since been possible to get the frigate to make the voyage. The captain protested that the people [soldiers] had been kept on board too long . . . At last Diego de la Torre and "le Sieur Colonel Barnewall" by offering four times the price got the frigate *St Mary* ready to go to the war . . . Mr Barnewall and his two brothers went with them . . . I hear that in spite of the *Cantadors* . . . she [Madame Preston] has received a bill for 1,200 crowns, but that the money has not yet been received." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1633-47, p. 695. *Cantadors* should no doubt read *contadores*, accountants.

c. A letter of Philip IV to the Marqués de Aytona, Madrid, 16 September 1647, may possibly imply that at that time Colonel James Preston was in Spain with his regiment. Aytona had proposed to give the vacant post of lieutenant-colonel of the regiment to Don Eduardo Plunguet, first captain of the said regiment. *Coleccion de documentos ineditos para la historia de España, por el Marqués de la Fuensanta del Valle, Don Jose Sancho Rayon y Don Francisco de Zabáburu*, Madrid, 1890, vol. XCVII p.8.

Another letter of Philip IV to the same Marqués, Madrid, 23 September 1647, refers to the men of Patrick Barnaval: "As we have been informed, one hundred and fifty Irish men, whom Don Patricio Barnaval brought at his own expense, part of the levies arranged in Ireland by Don Diego de la Torre, have been quartered in the province of Rioja". *Ibid.* p. 12.



1962. 1647. July 17-27. Digby to Ormonde. "Just now I received advertisement from La Moinerie that Mr Talon was ready to set sail with sixteen ships . . . Certainly he would not come with such a fleet if he did not bring our conditions certainly out of England of the Parliament's allowance. I suppose that upon this your Excellency will treat with the commissioners of your accomodation for your going through with the business, wherein not only your honour and fortunes are so much concerned, but their interest also, in facilitating the restitution of Ireland to the Crown of England by such a weakening of the rebels' fortunes as that would be . . . But if it is possible to get a faith in them of my sincerity . . . in the business of Ireland . . . and that I may have liberty to negotiate in the Irish quarters towards our end of the levies, and transportation of men from the rebels army and quarters . . . I am not more confident than I am of anything that in a month's time the Irish shall be more broken and weakened by art, than they can hope to do with twelve months war." Carte, *Ormonde III*, letter DLIX, p. 559.

1663. a. 1647. July 28. Kilkenny. Foisotte to Preston. "I wrote lately to you on the failure of the levy which Don Diego de la Torre raised for Spain. I thank you for the letters from the Maitre de Campo your son . . . whose liberty I have done my best to secure." *C.S.P. Ire.* 1633-47, p. 704.

b. 1647. July 28. Kilkenny. Preston to Foisotte. "Don Diego [de la Torre] was negligent or prodigal in spending at the wrong time money which he should have used for transporting soldiers for the Spanish services. No blame can attach to you in this matter. I hear Don Diego de la Torre has spread a strange report about my son Diego, and that he will insist on satisfaction, and leave the King of Spain's service rather than not obtain it." *Ibid.* p. 704.

1965. 1647. Sept. 19-29. Caen. Digby to Ormonde. Digby refers to "my negotiations with Preston's army, upon that score of foreign employment which you know hath been the ground of all my traffick with any of the army . . . Thus things stood when the battle [Dangan Hill, 8 Aug. 1647] was given, I profess to my great grief, having so great a part of Preston's army sure for foreign employment; which I was confident, they would afterwards, upon my representation of the reasons, find it so much to their advantage, that they would yield upon it." Carte *Ormonde III*, letter DLXVI.

For Digby's manoeuvres for drawing off soldiers from Preston, and others, for service with the French, see *Commentarius II*, pp. 703-6.

1968. 1648. May 1. Waterford. Ludovic Earl of Craford to Don Alonso de Cardenas. Stating that he has raised troops according to the agreement between the King of Spain and himself, and had them ready for embarcation, but that in consequence of



the ships of the Parliament on that coast it was impossible to sail, and requesting him to procure orders from the Parliament that their ships on the coast should not hinder the passage of the said troops; and likewise a passport for himself. *H.M.C. The Portland MSS*, part I, p. 451.

1970. a. De la Torre had received orders to go to Ireland to recruit shortly before 15 Oct. 1645 (see under this date above) and had embarked at San Sebastiano at the beginning of December following (see letter of 20 June 1646). According to *Commentarius* II, p. 161, he arrived at Waterford on 10 Dec. and went to Kilkenny on 3 Jan. 1646, where he saw Rinuccini on 4 Jan, and appears to have brought him a present of 24,000 crowns. On 16 Mar. the General Council of the Confederates passed a resolution licensing him to recruit a full regiment for the King of Spain. *Ibid.* p. 562f. but owing to circumstances he was only able to put the resolution into execution about November following. *Ibid.* p. 564. According to the same authority, he embarked his regiment in two ships, with James Preston as their colonel, but they were both captured at sea by the French Agent, Tallon, and carried off to France. *Ibid.* p. 638. See note 1960.

b. On 27 Nov. 1647, Digby to Ormonde from Paris: "I can give you no hopes of anything but good wishes from this Court. As for present assistance in consideration of levies. the abundance of men offered at so cheap rates in England hath quite destroyed our treaty with the Venetians; and for France, although the disorders are appearingly composed, yet the indigence continues still the same. The truth is, they have not a groat, nor are likely to have, till the beginning of January. Then I believe they will be engaged in disbursing a considerable sum for levies, since I find the Prince of Condé very fond this year of framing a considerable body of strangers. I do therefore desire your Excellence to let me know punctually, whether, if towards the month of February or March, I shall be able to send you over four thousand pistoles, you will be able to deliver for the service of France two thousand men at waterside at some port in Munster; for I believe I shall be able to obtaine the rate of two pistoles a man, which is about what they have hitherto given." Carte, *Ormonde* III, letter DCXIII. In letter DC from Kilkenny on 22 Jan-1 Feb. 1648-9, Ormonde remarks "I find the French offers for men very mean."

1993. 1650. Apr. 29. The Duke of Lorraine to Ormonde. "Monsieur. Envoiant le Sieur Oliver Synot, colonel de mes troupes, en Irland pour y faire quelques recrues et levées de soldats pour mon service, je luy ay commandé de saluer votre Excellence de ma part, lassuerant de mon affection, et prier de vouloir favoriser son intention de votre autorité et pouvoir. Cest pourquoi je vous prie d'ajouter foy à ce quil vous dira de ma part, avec assurance qu'en autre occasion où je pourray je



temoigneray que je suis monsieur . . . Charles Lorraine. Received 4 June 1650. Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* II, part 2, p. 399. 1995. 1650. Oct. 12. The Hague. Daniel O'Neill to the Marchioness of Ormonde. "At my being with Ireton, I made propositions to him for liberty to levy men for the King of Spaine, or the States of Holland. He granted leave to transport five thousand men for the King of Spain or the States services; but denied for France. Upon my arrival here I offered my service to the States, who intend to make war upon Portugall. Finding some difficulty in that, I made my application to the Spanish ambassador, from whom yet I have no answer. The apprehension I have that my Lord Lieutenant will not long stay in Ireland, makes me presume it will not be disadvantageous to him to owen these levyes, therefore I resolve to loose all the advantage of them and to propound them in his name. Some from Brussels discourages my design, because the Irish clergy has made him blacke on that side; yet I am resolved not to serve where hee may not finde his advantage. I have writt to my Lord Digby, that if he can make the same conditions for my Lord, which were offered to him by the Cardinal heretofore, that I'll give over these levies for the Spaniards." *Aphorismical discovery* II, part I, pp. 492-3, where also is given, pp. 494-5, "An abstract of my propositions [Daniel O'Neill's] to the Spaniard," enclosed in a letter to the Marchioness of Ormonde, 9 Nov. 1650.

2001. 1651. Mar. 4. The wife of General Preston arrived at Brussels last Thursday [2 March]; she came from Paris. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 78.

2013. a. After his unsuccessful effort to recruit men for the service of Charles III Duke of Lorraine (see under 27 Feb. 1646) Plunket appears to have remained in Ireland. He was one of the officers captured at the battle of Dangan's Hill (Cnoc Leis) on 8 August. 1647. *Commentarius* V, p. 676.

2017. 1651. Dec. 26. Kilkenny. The Commissioners of the Army to the Council of State. Report that the number of the enemy now in arms appears to be not less than 30,000, besides the people ready to join with them upon any occasion; "yet many of them incline to come in and accept conditions, for the most part insisting upon licence to go beyond sea for the King of Spain's service, and therein to continue in command of such regiments or companies as they can carry over with them . . . and if the admitting of any to come in, upon the conditions aforesaid, be conceived to be of public advantage, we humbly offer that merchants may be employed to treat with the Spanish ambassadors concerning the charge of their transportation, and securing unto them the best of conditions," Dunlop, *Commonwealth* I, p. 113.

2019. a. 1652. March. "In Ireland the rebels were so pressed by our forces in all parts that they began to think it necessary to treat about conditions of submission, and many of them



obtained permission to be transported into foreign service, where-with commissioners of Parliament assisted them with ships, so that the Irish officers were in many places deserted by their own soldiers. Colonel Fitzpatrick was the first who submitted on conditions to be transported with his regiment to the service of the King of Spain, which was a great blow to the Irish Confederacy, who were very desirous to treat in conjunction . . . and the Irish clergy excommunicated him and all who joined with him. Notwithstanding all which Colonel Odwyer, commander in chief of the Irish forces in the counties of Waterford and Tipperary, followed his example and proposed a treaty with Colonel Sanky." Ludlow, *Memoirs* I, p. 403.

b. For the articles of agreement concluded on 7 Mar. 1651-2 at Streamstown, Westmeath, between Commissary Reynolds and Fitzpatrick, see Dunlop, *Commonwealth* I, pp. 151-4. Fitzpatrick's whole force, horse and foot, amounted to 5,284, and the Commissioners considered that "It will be a considerable service to have such a party of the enemy (or many of them) to be transported out of Ireland, and this may be leading also to other officers in the Irish army to carry out their parts accordingly." *Ibid.* pp. 154 and 155.

c. For the agreement signed on 23 March 1651-2 at Cahir Castle by Colonel Edmond O'Dwyer, commander-in-chief of the Irish brigade in Tipperary and Waterford, and by Colonels Walter Butler and Donogh O'Dwyer, see Dunlop, I, pp. 169; and Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* III, pp. 248-96.

2023. The report in *Commentarius* V, p. 102, that after the war in Ireland Preston went into the French service with very high pay, and in Catalonia tried to bring over the Irish regiments in the Spanish armies to service with the French, is possibly mistaken.

2024. 1652. May 4. Considerations to be offered by Mr Weaver to the Council of State. "To consider with the Spanish agent of a course to be taken for conveying the Irish for his Majesty's service, and to take care that such Irish as are raised may continue under their respective commanders with them." *H.M.C. Portland MSS* I, p. 647.

2025. On 6 May 1652 the Commissioners reported to Parliament from Kilkenny: "There is one Captain White that hath contracted with Fitzpatrick for (the transport) of 2,000 men, and we hope 1,000 of them will be shipped next week, and by this means you will have a good riddance of these troublesome guests, there being visibly ready to be transported (but we had shipping ready) of Fitzpatrick's men 2,000, of Dwyer's party about 1,000 (who are come in and arms already brought to us) of Murtagh O'Brien's and in Clare 2,000 whereof 1,200 are already come in and laid down their arms; and of those in the north . . . there may be 2,000 more, besides many that (of late) have submitted." Dunlop I,



p. 183f, Colonel Mortogh O'Brien had signed articles of agreement at Limerick on 21 April 1652, with Major-General Sir H. Waller. *Ibid.* pp. 183ff.

*Ludlow*, *Memoirs*, II, p. 368, mentions a "Lieutenant-Colonel White, who had served the enemy, and now had a commission to raise forces for the King of Spain." The King himself explains that "When I sent White, my agent there, to raise men for my service here, he promised me he would not bring over any that were in arms, but only distressed persons." *Thurloe Papers* I, p. 221.

2027. a. 1652. June 22. Reported from Brussels that 3,000 soldiers levied by Colonel Plunkett in Ireland are expected to reach the Low Countries shortly, and that last week Plunkett himself arrived in Flanders from Madrid. Some think these soldiers will be employed in the siege of Dunkirk, and others that they may be sent to Spain. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 84.

b. 1652. June 29. Reported from Brussels that the 3,000 Irish soldiers mentioned above were not levied by Plunkett, but had been offered to the authorities in Flanders for service by Preston, who has come to make an arrangement about them. The troops, said to number 5,000, are stated to be waiting somewhere on the Irish coast until terms are agreed upon. *Ibid.* pp. 84-5.

c. 1652. Aug. 23-Sept. 2. London. "I Don Alonso de Cardenas, of the Council of State of his Catholic Majesty, and his ambassador to the Republic of England, give bond by these present on behalf of his Majesty to the honourable Council of State assembled by authority of parliament of the said Republic, that the three thousand Irishmen whom Colonel Thomas Plunquet shall take to Spain, will not be allowed to leave the Spanish dominion to return to the dominions of the Republic, and will not be employed to the prejudice of the Republic." Spanish. *Thurloe Papers* I, p. 214.

d. The three thousand Irishmen levied by Plunket were transported direct to Spain by sea, in accordance with the contract made by Plunket and his lieutenant-colonel Jorge Walters, with Joseph Dobbins, merchant, and others, on 20 Nov. 1652. When however the men arrived at San Sebastian they were prevented from landing by the Captain-General and the Inspector; the ships were placed under arrest, and their captains were imprisoned because they refused to convey the men immediately to Bordeaux. The claims for losses thus incurred were lodged by Dobbins with the Council at London, and were handed to the Spanish ambassador on 12 March 1652-3, who replied to them on 18 March following. He represents that as the agreement for the transport of the men had been made by his Spanish Majesty with Plunket at Madrid, and payment made immediately, no case for subsequent developments could be brought against him or his ministers, but only against Plunket and Jorge Walters. As regards the arrest



of the ships and the imprisonment of their masters, and the consequent damages claimed, and the reasons the Captain-General and the Inspector had for their action, to get this information will require much time. *Thurloe Papers* I, p. 232. A paper of the Spanish ambassador.

The death of Plunkett was reported at Brussels on 22 Feb. 1653: "in Ireland after a few days illness." *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 89.

2029. a. 1652. Oct. 14, Kilkenny. The Commissioners of Ireland to the Parliament: "There are already gone out of the nation, of such of the Irish as have been in arms, about 7,000 of the parties of Fitzpatrick, O'Dwyer, the Lord of Muskerry, Murtagh O'Brien, and Fitzgerald, and at present there is preparation for the carrying over of many others by Sir William Dangan, the Lord of Westmeath and several other officers of the Irish party" Dunlop, *Commonwealth* II, p. 240.

b. 1652, Oct. 16-16. Ordered that licence be given Con McCormac O'Neill to transport 1,000 Irish from Drogheda. *Ibid.* II, p. 287.

c. "Near this place (Aghur) lay the Creaght of Lieutenant-General O'Neal, son to that O'Neal who after several years imprisonment in the Tower of London died there: he came over from the King of Spain to be Lieutenant-General of the army of Owen Roe O'Neal, but upon some jealousy or particular discontent, was laid aside. His man with his wife, who he said was neice to the Duchess of Artois, and some children, removed, as the Irish do generally in those parts." Ludlow, *Memoirs* I, p. 424.

d. This appears without doubt to be the "Don Constantino who is in Spain" to whom belonged the immediate right to the earldom. See Hugh de Burgo to Wadding, 12 April 1642, *H.M.C. Franciscan MSS* p. 132; and who was reported to be at Bordeaux and Rochelle, with men and munitions, on his way to Ireland. *Ibid.* pp. 179, 183. His wife, while at Rochelle, claimed to have been at the funeral of Tyrconnell [*in Spain*]. *Ibid.* p. 196.

e. There is some possibility of confusion with Con O'Neill who surrendered with the Ulster leaders on 28 April 1653, (Dunlop II, p. 336) and had taken an active part in preparations for the war of 1641.

2031. a. The Commissioners to Oliver Cromwell. 1652. July 28. Waterford. "Colonel Fitzpatrick . . . hath already sent over a considerable number of Irish into Spain, and is himself resolved to go there to serve the King, and hath therefore made it his request to us that we should desire your Excellency to recommend him to the ambassador of Spain, that by his mediation with the ministers of State there, all the conditions made between him and Don Richard, their agent here, may be made good to him." Dunlop, *Commonwealth* I, p. 240.



b. Richard is most probably the Captain White referred to in the letter of the Commissioners of Parliament, Kilkenny, 6 May 1652: "But that, that much distracts your affairs, concerning these persons, that are by engegement to be transported, is, that they must lie in our quarters till shipping be provided for them. But while we are in some straits about this, there is one Captain White that hath contracted with Fitzpatrick for 2,000 men, and we hope 1,000 of them will be shipped nextweek." *Ibid.* I, p. 183.

2035. 1653. Jan. 15. The Commissioners report to the Council of State: "There are gone from Ireland to the service of the King of Spain since April last about 13,000, and most of those who have been in arms against you would be persuaded to follow if any persons of ability and credit were employed to give conditions and carry them away. Col. Plunkett having contracted for the carrying away of many and having sent them away, others on shipboard and many on their march to the waterside, died last week (some conceive of grief because he had neither money nor credit to make good his contract) which will cause the disbanding of many desperate rogues, who knew not how to live except by robbing and stealing out of bogs and fastnesses." *Ibid.* II, p. 310.

2036. a. An error for Hugh O'Neill, major-general, nephew of Owen O'Neill. Imprisoned after his defence of Limerick against Ireton. See J. G. Simms, 'Hugh Dubh O'Neill's defence of Limerick, 1650-51,' in *Irish Sword* III, no. 11, 1957.

b. 1653. The Commissioners to the Council of State. "Having intelligence therefore that the Spanish ambassador desires licence for Major-General O'Neill to transport from hence 5,000 men, that to this purpose he hath already moved your Lordships, that likewise 4,000 more are desired by Col. O'Dwyer, we did the rather conceive it our duty to represent to you the probable security it may prove to the country, and conveniency to your affairs here, to give encouragement for the shipping away as many as is possible of those who have acted in war as soldiers against us." Dunlop II, pp. 323f.

c. 1653. Aug. 24. Ordered that Lord Eniskillen and Lt.-Colonel O'Neill be authorised to raise 1,200 Irish to be transported to Spain. *Ibid.* p. 371.

2046. a. Lieutenant-Colonel Dudley Costello, with Colonel Richard Bourke and others signed articles with Commissary-General Reynolds, on behalf of themselves and Colonel George Cusack governor of Inishboffin, on 14 Feb. 1652-3. Article 5 agreed "that Commissary-General Reynolds undertake to transport Colonel Cusack, Lt.-Colonel Costello, or either of them with 1,000 men or as many of them as they can produce by the time hereafter limited, from Clare Island to Bilbao, Sebastian, or any other convenient port in Biscay, within 21 days from the date hereof, and upon their shipping shall receive for each man 12 shillings, and there being landed shall receive the benefit of as



good conditions as was made with any that have made any contract with the Spanish agents here . . . and that from 7th March next both officers and soldiers respectively shall be provided for with shipping and provision until they be landed in Biscay, and that at the Commissary-General's charge." Dunlop II. p. 335.

b. 1653. Apr. 26. Reported from Brussels that Colonel Cusack had landed a few days before with more than 1,000 men from Inishbofin. Cusaack had come to Brussels to discuss with the authorities there the employment of his men in their service, but was arrested by the Duke of Lorraine, who claimed that the troops belonged to him, as he was protector of Ireland. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, pp. 89-90.

2051. 1. a. 1652. Sept. 11. Licence for Peter Walsh, who is about to be transported, to live in the Parliament's quarters for twenty eight days. Dunlop I, p. 275, no. 263.

b. 1653. May 26. Orders that Peter Walsh, a priest now in Flanders, with money from Spain for transporting 4,000 of the Irish natives for the King of Spain, be allowed to land in Ireland to fulfill his errand. *Ibid.* p. 343.

2. Mr Lucas Lucie had been paid £320 on 24 Dec. 1651 by the Treasurers-at-War. *Ibid.* p. 136.

3. a. 1653. Brussels. "Colonel Duir is gone from hence to transport thither for the Earl of Castlehaven 3,000 from Ireland, which Mr Owens a merchant of London, undertakes for by a private contract." *Thurloe Papers* I. p. 245.

b. 1653. June 7, Brussels. "Here is a certain merchant in London, one Owens, who seems now to follow the wars, and quit merchandising. He has agreed to transport 3,000 men hither for the Prince of Condé. One Colonel Dwuir would be partner with him, according to some contract made; but Owens receding, the Colonel gave him a box on the ear, and kicked him. It seems Owens was loathe to fight and contrived his arrest to save his life more than his honour." *Thurloe Papers* I, p. 262.

c. 1653. June 7. Paris. "All the Irish do quit the Spaniard, by reason he does not perform with them, as I writ before. The Duke of York will have enough of them. Preston has not yet gotten his monies, neither has his son parted for Portugal for want of the monies promised to both, which they cannot receive for the Court here." Postscript to an unsigned letter. *Thurloe Papers* I, 261-2.

2058. a. 1653. June 25-July 3. "I hear 700 men from Ireland are upon the coast of Dunkirk." *Ibid.* p. 318.

b. "One Cusack that has been governor of Ennisbuffin may soon be there, or some other from the Duke of Lorraine to the Lord General Cromwell, with some propositions "that Lorraine should attack Holland by land, and let the English attack them by sea." *Ibid.* Shortly before this it was reported that Lorraine "keeps Cusack prisoner as formerly." *Ibid.* p. 245.



It is stated in *Commentarius V*, p. 73, that Cusack was restored to his regiment through the influence of Cromwell and the Commonwealth.

c. 1653. July 9. An intercepted letter from Paris translated out of the French. "I saw a letter from Madrid which doth testify the ill usage that the Irish receive there; and those that were once wholly Spaniolized are now not at all of that inclination. I believe that their weakness is the cause of it, and the Irish will cause the ruin of Spain. I wonder they should play the traitors, being they are well paid in Guienne. Mons. de Vendosme writes to the Court that the night he writt his letter the Irish were to surrender their fort, having capitulated with the Governor." *Thurloe Papers I*. p. 323; and see p. 337, and p. 362. On 27 Sept. 1653, in a letter to Secretary Thurloe, the writer reports: "Besides what you have enclosed, I have from Paris that 3,000 Irish, with their colonells, officers, and armes in a bodie marched in Catalonia to the French from the Spaniard; and that, as they say, by command of the Scottish Kinge, who will employ them and others to recover his and their interests." *Ibid.* I, p. 514.

2062. a. 1653. Nov. 4. "Whereas Colonel Edmund O'Dwyer has been licensed by the Commissioners to raise and transport 3,500 Irish, for the service of Prince de Condé, it is thought fit and ordered that he be permitted to transport such priests, Jesuits and other persons in Popish orders who are still in Ireland." Dunlop II, p. 376, no. 434.

b. 1654. Mar. 21. Such Irish as are raised by Colonel O'Dwyer to be sent to Spike Island, and to be sent away with all speed. *Ibid.* p. 411.

c. O'Dwyer's men for the Caribees. *Ibid.* p. 507.

2064. a. Eldest son of Viscount Dillon. Had gone to the Low Countries to serve the Spaniards, but was reported suspect by some Spaniards on account of the action of Sir James Dillon, who handed over Ormont to the French. See no. 2224, note 2. Charles Dillon consequently resigned his regiment, which was given to John Morphy. *Commentarius V*. p. 105.

b. 1653. Nov. 29. Brussels. "The greatest reformation of the army under the archduke is now perfected, as I have written to you in my former letters. There are no English or Scottish regiments, but four Irish have been in the Archduke's army, besides those of the prince of Condé's and the Duke of Lorraine's; of the four, three regiments are reformed belonging to the two Dillons and O Mulrie, and put into the regiment of Co. Murfie, being the ancientest colonel." *Thurloe Papers I*. p. 604.

2074. 1652. Oct. 11-21. London. Alonso de Cardenas to the Council of State. Has heard that for some time past Colonel Diego Geraldin, who is an Irishman, has been under arrest and a prisoner at Chester, by the Council's order, on suspicion. As the Colonel has served the Spanish King for more than twenty years in his



armies here, and de Cardenas is certain that he had never returned to Ireland during all this time, he asks the Council to permit the Colonel to continue his journey to Ireland to carry out the levy there for the King's service; and if this cannot be done, to release him, and enable him to return and continue his services, and give him back his papers and the other things taken from him. Cardenas gives his word and promise that the Colonel will do nothing to the prejudice of the Republic. *Thurloe Papers I*, p. 215.

2081. 1653-54. Jan. 15-25. The Commissioners to the Parliament. "There have been sent out of this nation since June last above 12,000 officers and soldiers of the Irish part; all of them stout and able fighting men, and more willing and ready to go than had we means to effect the same." Dunlop II, p. 313.

2088. a. 1653-54. Feb. 4-14. The Commissioners to the Council of State. "Apprehending for our service here to transport beyond the sea as many of the Irish as we could find a conveniency for, especially such as were like to disturb the peace of the country, and presuming it to be agreeable to your Lordship's sense to encourage those that should undertake the same, especially officers and others here of the English nation, we have therefore taken the boldness to present their case to you, who alledge that, notwithstanding they have performed their contracts on their parts in shipping away and delivering into Spain several thousand men, yet have they not received answerably the performance of the contract with them on the part of the King of Spain, which because it depends chiefly upon his Ministers or ambassador here in England, to whom it is alledged that the full money due to them is remitted by bills of exchange by the order of the said King, they have therefore earnestly moved us to recommend their humble petition to your Lordships for a redress on their behalf therein." Dunlop II, p. 317.

b. 1653-4. Feb. Whitehall. Cromwell to the Commissioners in Ireland, for raising a regiment of Irish forces. Gentlemen. There hath been an address made to us, on behalf of the bearer hereof [name omitted] who hath a regiment of Irish foot in Flanders desiring that he may have liberty to raise some men in Ireland, and transport them into the service of foreign princes, not to enemies to this commonwealth; which request we have thought fit to grant etc." *Thurloe Papers II*, pp. 63-4.

2094. 1654. Mar. 23. Colonel Daniel Tresweel recommended for licence to transport of 3,000 of the native Irish out of Ireland into Flanders. Dunlop II, p. 412.

2097. 1654. Feb. 14. "The plot you hear of giving up Armentières to the French by some Irish that are garrisoned there, is found to be false; and so the captain, released with honour; and they have formed a process against the accuser, one Colonel Murphy." *Thurloe Papers II*, p. 70, Letter from Brussels.



2103. 1654. June 15. The Commissioners in Ireland inform Colonel Phaire that "we find it impossible to transport the men raised on O'Dwyer's account; but men are wanted for the Barbadoes and others for Caribbee islands." Dunlop II, p. 433f.

2105. a. On 3 July 1654 Turenne commenced operations against Stenay, near Sedan. The Spaniards under de Guadagna were forced to surrender early in August. Three Irish regiments fought on the side of the French, under Colonel Cormac MacCarthy, eldest son of Viscount Muskerry, Colonel Richard Grace, who had recently come from Spain with his Irish troops, and an English colonel respectively. On the other hand, among those defending the town for Spain under de Guadagna was the regiment of Irish troops commanded by Colonel Murtough O'Brien, son of Sir Daniel O'Brien, and grandson of the 3rd Earl of Thomond. After the surrender of Stenay O'Brien and his regiment went over to the French, and joined up with the troops of Colonel Cormac MacCarthy, alledging that they had been sent to Belgium and the Spaniards against their will. *Commentarius V*, pp. 204-5.

b. After their capture of Stenay the French moved on to the relief of Arras, which was under siege by the Spaniards with an army of 25,000 men under the Archduke Leopold of Austria, Condé and the Duke of Lorraine. The Spaniards were obliged to abandon the siege on August 28th, with the loss of 3,000 prisoners, of whom many belonged to the Irish regiments in their army. A large number of Irish troops had gone over to the French, in small groups, even before Turenne broke through the Spanish lines on August 25th, and had joined the regiment of Colonel Cormac MacCarthy. Together with an Irish regiment in the French service commanded by the Duke of York, they had distinguished themselves during the fighting at Arras. It seems that the Irish troops who had gone to France were those who belonged to the Ormonde party in Ireland, and cherished the hope of returning to Ireland with Charles and James to fight again for their estates. On the Spanish side Condé dismissed some of the Irish colonels of this party, and sent the remnants of their regiments to the Irish companies serving under Moriarty O'Brien and James Dempsy. *Commentarius V*, p. 205.

2109. a. 1655. Jan. 5-15. Paris. Sir George Radcliffe to Ormonde. "On Saturday last Andrew White and a brother of his [Nicholas White; see *Nicholas Papers* II, p. 256] newly come from Spain, after a long discourse with Cardinal Mazarin was committed to the Bastille. Andrew being sent for and examined by the Cardinal on Sunday, confessed all as the Duke of York told me. What his fault is I know not. Some say that he had agreed to carry all the Irish who serve in France into the King of Spain's service, upon security to have sixpence a day duly paid to every foot soldier. He is sent back to the Bastille and I believe his



fifteen pistols a month, which he had from the Cardinal, is at an end." *H.M.C. Ormonde MSS I*, p. 314.

b. On 27 Jan. 1653 permission had been given to Mr Andrew White to transport 2,000 Irish foot soldiers to Bilbao, San Sebastian, or any other port in Spain. *Dunlop II*, p. 315, no. 336.

2116. a. 1653. Apr. 27. Colonel Philip O'Reilly signed articles with Colonel Theophilus Jones in the behalf of himself and his party, and the Lord of Eniskillen, Colonel Miles Reilly, Colonel MacMahon, Colonel Hugh Maguire, Colonel Con O'Neill, Colonel Dan O'Cahan, and such others of the Ulster party, as shall accept thereof by the 18th of May next or before. They were given liberty of transportation, and of any arrangement which they can make with the Spanish agent. *Dunlop II*, p. 336. *Commentarius V*, 97-8 states that O'Reilly took his regiment to Spain; and in 1654 transferred the men to Belgium. *Ibid.* pp. 205-6.

b. *Ibid.* p. 99. The same writer states that under Viscount Dillon Philip O'Reilly, Myles O'Reilly, John de Burgo, and Taaffe the brother of Viscount Taaffe, about 5,000 Irishmen went to Spain about the end of August 1653, but that not a few of these perished of hunger and thirst on the shore of Galicia, as they were not allowed to land, and were refused bread and water, as a reprisal for the action of Colonel Richard Grace, who had gone over to the French with his Irish regiment, when the Spanish and French armies were in proximity to one another on the frontiers of Catalonia. There was talk at the time of expelling all the Irish from Spain, as they were more devoted to the French than to the Spaniards; but the situation was retrieved by the bravery of the Irish in the Gironde, against the Swiss and the French, and friendly relations were reestablished in the autumn of 1653.

2122. a. 1655. Nov. 2-12. A letter of intelligence from Cologne. "The Lord Dillon, one Mac Thomas, Kelley, and Fitzgerald are employed about the Irish in Flanders, and severall fryers, and amongst them Talbot's brother." *Thurloe Papers IV*, p. 102.

b. 1655. Nov. 2-12. A letter of intelligence. Amsterdam. "Ormond's commission and instructions are ready, and he and O'Neill are preparing for their journey to Spain on their first certain news of war. They will offer the bringing of the Duke of York, Inchiquin, Digby, Dives &c., and the body of the Irish that now serve in France, which will much weaken them. They will undertake, with the assistance of Prince Rupert, to compleat a body of 15,000 men before the spring." *Ibid.* p. 102.

2140. a. 1656. Apr. 29. Antwerp. Luis Males to Francisco Giaverina, Venetian Resident. "I am informed that 7,000 Irish are to be at the service of France for some time, upon condition to serve no longer, after such time as King Charles shall want them." *Thurloe Papers IV*, fol. 47v.



b. 1656. May 20. To the Venetian Agent, from Antwerp. "It is certainly believed that the Duke of York will come away as soon as he is sent for, and with him will come good score of Irish." *Ibid.* V, p. 8.

2145. a. 1654. June 27. Brussels. "Orders came from the King of Spain some eight days since, to remove from the castle of Antwerp and the Low Countries Duke Charles of Lorraine, and to convey him to Spain with due security and respect. In obedience whereunto the said duke is sent to Dunkirk, where now he is, expecting the first wind for Spain. Five vessels of war are there to receive and convey him. When he comes to Spain, it shall appear to him what he is committed for. His brother Francis decided to see him at his being in Antwerp, but it was not permitted by the guards, who had orders to the contrary." *Thurloe Papers* II, p. 358, A letter of intelligence.

b. Cusack, according to *Commentarius*, V, p. 73f. abandoned the French service after a few months, "leaving his regiment behind, but not the money." He gave as the explanation that the Duke Francis had gone over to the French without consulting him, and that he would rather loose his regiment than fail in the promise he had given to the Spaniards originally, when serving with Lorraine. He claimed that he had done no injury to the French, as they had deprived him arbitrarily of his regiment. See 2056, note b. 1.

2157. a. The Duke of York "had served as lieutenant-general for four years with great reputation in the French armies, and was strongly inclined to continue in that service, The articles of the late Treaty [Westminster, 1655] with Cromwell obliged the French to expel him and all the royal family, and adherents to the King of England, out of their dominions; but Mazarine, fearing the duke's quitting the service would make all the Irish do the like, interceded with Cromwell for leave to keep him in their troops, and employ him in the wars of Catalonia or Italy. Cromwell consented that he might serve in Italy, and his royal Highness liked the service; but the King's command (Charles II) overruled his inclinations, so that having received them, and disposed some of the chief Irish officers to follow him, he waited on his Majesty at Bruges about the end of September. In a short time five or six regiments were formed out of such of the King's subjects as were either found in the Spanish service or were tempted out of the French. Those of the latter sort were much more numerous, and were generally Irish, who left very good conditions which they enjoyed in France. The marquis of Ormonde had one of those regiments." *Carte, Ormonde* V, pp. 654ff.

b. 1656. Sept. 23. Paris. The Duke of York is gone for Flanders; he parted hence on Thursday last." *Thurloe Papers* V, p. 412. An intercepted letter.



c. 1656. Sept. 29. Bridges (*Bruges*). "The Duke of York is come accompanied with 120 horse, and three coaches, as they say, and special order was given in all places for the reception, as if the King of Spaine (foresooth) had bin there in person." *Ibid.* p. 431. A letter of intelligence to secretary Thurloe.

2162. a. 1656. Aug. 17-27. Clermont. William Lockhart to Secretary Thurloe. "Charles Stewart hath appointed a rendezvous in Flanders for all those of his partie that was scattered abroad in France, Germanie and Holland. To justify this, besyds what I see in the generall intelligence I see the original letter sent by my Lord Ormond to one Coll. Muscarrie, an Irishman, who hath a regiment in France, wherein Ormond says he hath received orders from his king to reqywer him to march with his regiment to such a place in Flanders as his next should make knowen to him, when he should receive him into a good quarter, and should pay him half a month's pay for all the officers and soldiers he should bring along with him; and required him not to faile therein, as he should not be declared a traytor to his king and country, and abandoned as an unworthy person by all his old frends, who had formerly esteemed him to be a man of honor." *Thurloe Papers* V, pp. 319-20.

b. A little later, *ibid.* pp. 388-9, Lockhart reports to Thurloe: Colonell Muskerry (who I told your honor formerly had received an order from Charles Stewart to march with his regiment into Flanders) hath been this last week at Court, and hath sollicitated his discharge from the French service, which the cardinall hath refused him. He has gone to Paris to receive the duk's orders concerning his further carryadge, and givs it out, if the cardinall continue to refuse him his passe, he will goe without it, having by demanding it don all that he conceives to be the duty of a man of honor. Charles Stewart's emissarys are very busy in debauching all the Irish soldiers; and there is no doubt he will have them all and that . . . Sir, you may assure your self, the army that Cha. Stewart pretends to gather in Flanders will consist of such trowps as I beleeve cannot be matched in all the world besyd, and I am confident all Englishmen (that can but pretend to the lowest principles of common honesty) will abhor a conjunction with so barbarous a crew as they will be."

2163. 1. 1656. Oct. 23. Thurloe to Henry Cromwell. "Don Alonso desired to take his leave, being, as he sayd, commanded away by his master. His Highness [Oliver Cromwell] refused to see him, but sent him a pass; after which he makeinge some delay, he is commanded by his Highness and the Council to depart this Commonwealth within four days. *Thurloe Papers* IV, p. 107.

2. Carte, *Ormonde* V, pp. 653-4 states that there were two Irish regiments in Condé at the time of the siege, one under the command of Cormac MacCarthy, eldest son of Viscout Muskerry ("who had gained a great reputation with the French") and the



other under Sir James Darcy, and they may have been the first to receive orders from Ormonde to join the King in the Low Countries. Darcy remained permanently in the French service, and was made colonel of the regiment formerly commanded by the Duke of York. MacCarthy went over to the King after he had first satisfied his obligations of honour by obtaining a permit from Cardinal Mazarin. *Commentarius* V. pp. 316-7. Carte affirms that he was followed by his regiment to a man, and that under the Spaniards it was formed into a regiment called the regiment of the Duke of York, of which the Duke remained colonel, and Muskerry (MacCarthy) became lieutenant-colonel. This is probably correct. On the other hand *Commentarius, ibid.*, states that comparatively few of his men followed MacCarthy, but that later on, when he was in the Low Countries, a far greater number, especially of the gentlemen of Munster, flocked to him. For Ormonde's account, see his letter to Oliver Darcy, Bishop of Kilmore, Sept. 1656, in Carte, *Ormonde* VIII, appendix, letter XXXIII. Besides Darcy's regiment two others, Inchiquin's and James Preston's, remained with the French, and to put an end to this change of allegiance they were removed from any proximity to the Belgian frontier and sent down to serve against Italy. *Commentarius* V, p. 316.

2166. Sept. 9. Brussels. de Vecchii to Rospiglioso. Reports that Ormonde is trying to arrange for quarters in Flanders for the regiments which the King of England intends to form, one Scottish under Middleton, one English, and two Irish under the King and the Duke of Gloucester, with Taaffe as lieutenant-colonel. *Collectanea Hibernica* I. p. 98. But see no. 2171 note a.

2168. General of the army in Connaught in 1648, and later lieutenant-general of the Ulster army. Surrendered to the Parliamentarians in 1652, and after he had been tried on a charge of murder and found innocent, went to Spain in 1653 with his regiment, made up largely of his relatives and others who were in straights similar to his own. Ceased to hold the command when the regiment was sent to Aquitaine to assist Condé and the Gascons against the French government. *Commentarius* V. pp. 76, 96f. For the articles of agreement signed on behalf of Lieutenant-General Farrell with Reynolds and others, see Dunlop, I, pp. 28off. Article 2 permits the officers included in the agreement to transport beyond the seas 2,000 men to serve any foreign State in amity with the Commonwealth.

2171. a. 1656. Dec. 26. Bruges. Charles II. Our Will and pleasure is that all our subjects of the Irish nation who are returned to the quarters near Courtrai, with resolution to serve us, be forthwith divided in three equal parts, to be distributed into regiments under the command of our most dear brothers, the Dukes of Yorke and Gloucester, and our right and entirely beloved cosen and counsellor the Marquis of Ormonde, our Lieutenant of



Ireland, in which division our intention is that such of them as served under our said brother, the Duke of Yorke, and Colonel Muskry, during the last campania, shall continue under their command, so they exceed not the third part of the whole number, and that those who were of Colonel Grace's regiment serve now in that of the Marquis of Ormonde. It is our further pleasure that the men so divided be distributed by thirty in company to such captaines as can appeare they were actually in command at their departure out of France with regard to their seniority, which rule is likewise to be observed towards lieutenants and ensigns. And we will that such officers as cannot be present to be put in the head of companys, for want of full number of thirty men, be provided for and half captains until their companys be completed. The like provision to be made proportionately for lieutenants and ensigns. To our trusty and well beloved Sir Edward Walker, Knight. *H.M.C., Ormonde MSS I*, p. 17, no. 35.

b. On 2 December previously de Vecchi to Rospiglioso reported that the King was said to have got quarters for 7,000 soldiers in the town of Furnes. *Collectanea Hibernica I*, p. 99.

2186. a. 1656. Feb. 19. A letter of Inteligence from Paris. "The governor of St Ghillain hath given an account to the Court in his last letters how that the Spaniards had designed to have surprised that place, having to that end bribed the man that kept the ammunition with ten thousand ecus to have blown it up, but the business being dicovered their enterprise did not take effect." *Thurloe Papers*, IV, p. 521. In a letter from Paris 1656, Mar. 4, Borcel, the Dutch ambassador reports that one of the magazines was blown up, but that the plot was then discovered. *Ibid.* pp. 553-4.

b. Carte, *Ormonde V*, p. 657: The King's [Charles] recalling his subjects out of the French service brought great advantages to the Spaniards, and occasioned in the beginning of the year 1657 the surrender of St Ghislain, a place of great consequence in the neighbourhood of Brussels, and held by a French garrison, which infested all the country thereabouts, and caused such clamors against the Court, that the Spaniards could not open the campaign but by the reduction of that place, which had been attacked in vain, and was strong enough to baffle a second attempt. Half of the garrison were Irish, and several of the officers being allied to Sir George Lane, secretary of the marquis of Ormond, wrote to him to know if the giving up of that place would be of service to the King; and if it would, they were ready to undertake it. The marquis sent his secretary to Court with this account, who by Don Juan's directions carried on a treaty with the officers; some of which were arrested by the governor of the place, who discovered the conspiracy. This however did not hinder the common soldiers, who were upon guard in some outposts, from declaring themselves and receiving the Spaniards; which obliged the



governor to surrender St. Ghislain, upon condition that he might march away with the rest of the garrison."

c. De Vechii, internuncio at Brussels, reports the surrender, but puts the number of the English and Irish troops at about three hundred only. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 99.

2195. a. Theobald, second son of Viscount Taaffe and first Earl of Carlingford. Left Ireland for France on 29 June 1650, and on 12 August was in Paris. *Commentarius* IV, pp. 409-10. Deputed by Ormonde to negotiate with Charles III, Duke of Lorraine, for assistance for Ireland. *Ibid.* pp. 460 and 480.

b. In *Thurloe Papers* VI, p. 363, A letter of intelligence from Col. Bamfylde; no date, but in margin, 1567. "The Duke of York commands his brother's forces, which they say are about 6,000 men, in six regiments; his owne commanded by Collonell Muskerry; the Duke of Gloster's commanded by Lord Taaffe; the Marquis of Ormond's, the Earl of Bristol's, and Lord Willmot's and Lieutenant-General Middleton's, whoe is absent, and his regiment commanded by the Lord Newburgh. The Duke of York has a company of 50 horse rayed by the Spaniard, in very good equipage, for his guard; they allow him £200 *per mensem* during the campaign, for his table. His brother, upon their small reconciliation, has made him captayne-generall under himselfe of all his pretended dominions."

2196. George Digby, second Earl of Bristol, 1612-1677. After service with the Royalists in England, retired to France and took part in the Fronde, in 1649. Lieutenant-General in the French army, 1651. Detected in an intrigue against Mazarin, and forced to leave France. Reappointed Secretary of State to Charles II, then in the Low Countries, 1657. *Dictionary of National biography*.

2198. 1657, May 16. Brussels. Charles R. Our will and pleasure is that you forthwith cause a perfect list of all the officers in the regiment under your command to be delivered to our trustworthy and wellbeloved servant, Sir Ed. Walter, knight, our Secretary at War, to the end their names and qualities may be inserted in our commission. The which our further pleasure is that you do also cause to bee received from him and delivered, the severall officers, and that likewise out of the money to be payd upon the second and third liberances that you cause to be deducted and payd unto him 120 patacons, beinge the halfe of such fees as were established at a Council of War, the tenth of January past, for preparing the said commissions. And further that out of the 4th and 5th liberances that shall be paid for your regiment that you cause the other halfe to bee deducted and payde unto him by two equal parts. To our trustworthy and welbeloved Colonel Charles MacCarthy, Colonel of the regiment of our most deare and entirely beloved brother, James Duke of Yorke.

There follows a list of the fees to be paid for the commissions: For the Secretary at War: for every colonel's commission, 20



patacons. For his clarke, 48 styvers. For every Lieutenant Colonel's, 10 patacons; for the clarke, 24 styvers. For every captains, 6 patacons; for the clarke, 20 styvers. For every ensign's, 3 patacons; for the clarke, 12 styvers. For every adjutant, chirurgien, and quarter-master, 3 patacons; for the clarke, 12 styvers.

The total for each regiment, consisting of 16 companies, amounts unto 240 patacons; for the clarke, 20 styvers. The halfe whereof is ordered to be payd upon the receipt of the second and third liberancies is 120 patacons; for the clarke, 10. Endorsed: "His Majesty's orders to Collonel Muskry concerning commis-sions". The editor notes that a patacon was worth about 4s. 8d. *H.M.C. Ormonde MSS I.* p. 18, no. 37.

2201. a. Brother of Sir Robert Talbot. Always referred to by the author of *Commentarius* in most uncomplimentary terms. Massari, secretary to Rinuccini, and later Secretary of Propaganda Fide, Rome, who never spoke flatteringly of those who differed from him, links his name with those of Castlehaven and Richard Butler, and dubs them all "*daemones incarnati.*" *Commentarius II,* pp. 723-4.

b. 1658. Aug. 16. [*London*] A letter of information to Secretary Thurloe. My Lord, here is one come hither, which goes in a darke stuffe shute, with small black lase, black trimming, black silke carmons, a black hatt, portly, of 40 yeares or thereabouts, noe beard. Under what name he goes, I know not; but I know him to well. He is a Franciscan fryar; his name is Thomas Talbott, brother to Sir Robert Talbott, and to the Jesuit Peter Talbott, that solicits for Charles Stuart in Rome. He is in almost all places solliciting for him. He is very dangerous, and I conceive he is come to acquaint the great ones, that were in the last plott, that Charles Stewart will bring forrayne power and monyes enough. and that they should persevere in their good-wills and that he will from hence to Scotland and Ireland. My cozen Johnson mett him accidentally yesternight in King-street." Signed: Henry Moore. I write Henry Moore; but my name is Henry Blackwell. *Thurloe Papers VIII,* p. 338.

2202. a. 1657. June 9, News from Brussels. The Duke of York is on the march with 3,000 Irish troops enlisted by the King of England during last winter. *Collectanea Hibernica I,* p. 100.

b. 1657. June 23. Brussels. de Vechii to Rospigliosi (?). 10,000 cavalry and 10,000 infantry, including Irish troops, are at Busciera near the Samber river, under the Duke of York. *Ibid.*

2213. "Le 19 Juillet 1657, les Clarisses acquèrèrent devant le bourgmestre les eschevins et ceurgeurs de la ville et de la chatellenie de Bourbourg, de don Mauro MacMahon, maréchal-de-camp, entretenu au service du Roi d'Espagne, les parts indivises qu'il possédait dans la ferme du Malembourg, située à Bourbourg, de la contenance de 82 mesures et demi de terre courantes, en labour



et en pré, située dans l'annexion de Saint-Georges, dépendants de la chatelanerie de Bourbourg. Le 30 Juin 1662, don Pedro Gerardin, sergent-major réformé d'un regiment au service du Roi d'Espagne et demoiselle Marie Mac Mahon sa femme céderent aux Clarisses les portions restantes de la ferme mentionnée plus haut." Raymond de Bertrand, *Histoire du couvent des Pauvres Clarisses de Gravelines*, Dunkirk, 1857, pp. 71-2.

The author notes that "82 mesures de terre" are equal to 11 ares, 23 centiares; and "27 mesures et demi" are equal to 11 hectares, 89 ares, 08 centiares.

2220. 1657-8. Jan. 18-28. Bruges. Charles R. Whereas we have found it necessary for our service that some fair person be employed in the Court of Brussels to agitate with the Ministers there both about the payment of our respective regiments quartered in Hainault and Flanders, and for other matters relating thereunto, wherein such person shall be obliged both to expence and trouble, we have therefore thought fit, both for our service and the advantage of all the officers and soldiers of each regiment, to command our trusty and welbeloved servant Sir Henry de Vic, knight and Barronet, our Resident there, to employ himself therein, and doe thereupon hereby signify our pleasure that every Collonel of each regiment should pay and allow him, the said Sir Henry Vic, towards his expense in the doing thereof, either out of the Estat Major or otherwise, five rations per diem to beginne unto him from the time each regiment shall enter into pay; hereunto we doubt not but you will readily agree. By his Majesty's command, Ed. Walker. To our right trusty and right entirely beloved cozen and councillor James, Marquess of Ormond, Lieutenant of our kingdome of Ireland. *H.M.C., Ormonde MSS I*, p. 19, no. 38.

2224. Major Walter Philips was included in the articles signed between Colonel Richard Bourke and Commissary-General Reynolds on 8 April 1652, for the surrender of the garrison of Drumruske. Article 2 stipulates: "That Colonel Richard Bourke, the officers and soldiers shall have quarter of life etc . . . and that all others of his company together with the said Collonel Bourke, shall have liberty to march to the county of Gallway in order to their transportation, where they are to remain dureing the space of two months . . . and if before the expiration thereof, agreement be not made for their entertainment into the service of the King of Spaine, or some forraigne Prince, that they then shall lay down armes etc." Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery*, III, part II, pp. 306-8. Article 7 stipulates: "That Major Walter Philips with his company be included within the same articles with Col. Bourke, and out of the creaghts in the barony of Casteloe [Costello, co. Mayo] he is allowed to raise two months maintenance, for which charge consideration shall be made unto them in their future contributions". *Ibid.* and Dunlop I. p. 174.



2225. 1653. June 21. A letter of intelligence from Paris. "Sir James Dillon having surrendered the fort of Ormont to the Duke of Vendosme to Condé's prejudice, has received in hand from the said duke a hundred pistoles for every captain, two hundred pistoles for the major, and so proportionately to every low officer; and to every soldier four pistoles in hand, and then marched to the said duke, where every captain has a hundred livres a day well paid, the soldiers eight solls, with their ammunition bread. They are marching to the siege of Bourges, and Digby's regiment are in garison in the fort of Ormont." *Thurloe Papers* I, p. 286. Sir James Dillon was son of Theobald Viscount Dillon, and brother of the Franciscan Fr George Dillon. *Commentarius* V. p. 101.

2245. Captain Louis Farrel, and others, signed articles of agreement for the Ulster Irish armies on 21 Sept. 1652, and Captain Con Farrell signed similar articles for the surrender of the Connaught forces on 14 July 1652. Both agreements allow the officers to transport 5,000 men beyond the seas to serve any foreign State in amity with the Commonwealth of England. Dunlop, I. p. 280 note, and p. 236 note.

2253. a. Richard Grace, younger son of Robert Grace, Baron of Courtown, co. Kilkenny, served with the Royalists in England, but returned to Ireland in 1646, raised a regiment, and served in the war there. Signed articles with Colonel Hierome Sankey "at the leaguer before Inchloger" on 14 August. 1652. Dunlop I, p. 258 and *passim*. It is stated by Ludlow, *Memoirs* I. p. 489 that he himself [Cromwell] restored Colonel Grace, a notorious rebel to his estate." Was allowed to transport himself and his regiment to Spain but went over to the French in Catalonia. See no. 2116 note b. Later his regiment, and the Irish regiment of Colonel Cormac MacCarthy, fought on the French side at the siege of Stenay in 1654. On the other hand, the Irish in the Spanish forces took a notable part in the defence of the town. *Commentarius* V, p. 204.

b. Colonel Charles O'Molloy with about fifty of his men was in command of an island in Loughaman, a stronghold of Colonel Grace, which he surrendered to Sanchy. Dunlop I, p. 204.

2261. Sir George Lane, Ormonde's secretary.

2262. "Two Irish regiments here call for special mention, and the manner in which they went over to the English from the French, into Belgium. One regiment was made up for the most part of O'Farrells and their clients and followers, and had been sent from Spain into Aquitaine some years previously, and there went over to the French, as we have stated already. The King of England, who was then in Belgium, through secret messengers ordered the two chief officers of this regiment, which formed the garrison of a certain town which belonged to the French, near the Flemish frontier, to come over to him with the regiment and hand over the town to the Spaniards. This was told me personally.



They did not fail to carry out his orders so far as they were able, though there are some who think that they had little to do with the handing over of the town, as it was already so hard pressed by the Spaniards that it could hardly have held out. Of these two Irish leaders the King made Conald O'Ferrall a knight; he was the nephew of Richard O'Ferrall and son of Richard's eldest brother; and Richard himself had been lieutenant-general of the Irish forces in Ulster during the war in Ireland, and commander-in-chief in Connaught. The King of England made another uncle of Conald, namely Lisach O'Ferrall, a captain of the regiment when its numbers were increased in Belgium, and made Conald himself a lieutenant." *Commentarius* V, pp. 314-5.

2264. Perhaps the same Charles Reilly who served as hostage for the articles signed at Cloughoughter between Colonel Philip O'Reilly and Colonel Theophilus Jones, 27 April 1653. *Dunlop* II, p. 236f.

2269. Perhaps the William Butler who signed articles for the surrender of Clare Castel to Lieutenant-General Ludlow on 4 August. 1651. *Dunlop* I, pp. 93-4.

2277. Colonel Morphy was given command of another Irish regiment by the Marquis de Castel Rodrigo, appointed Governor of the Low Countries in September 1664, as appears from a letter of Lord Castlehaven and Audley, Brussels, 4 Feb. 1665. "Your Excellency may be pleased to remember what instructions the King gave you in my presence concerning the old English regiments here, soon after Sir Henry Benett wrought unto you by the King's command to demand the old regiment here, the colonel dieing, of which notice was given to the Marquis of Caracena, that he ought not dispose . . . On the coming of the Marquis of Castleroderigo hither he gives the Irish regiment to Coll. Murfie, and the King sending to know the cause, he excused himself, saying that he knew nothing of the King's pretension, or any promise made to his ambassador in Spain. And that which troubled us most was that the Marquis de Caracena put off all pretenders by showing an order that he had from Spain requiring him not to dispose of the Irish regiment, for that the disposal of it was demanded by the King of England's ambassador for the King, and that the King of Spain had granted it to him. Besides, the King of Spain's resident at London to the last assured us that it should be at the King's disposal." *Tanner Letters*, p. 411.

2306. Included in the articles for the surrender of Clare Castle on 4 November 1651. *Dunlop* I, p. 93.

2309. Cormac MacCarthy, eldest son of Donough and of Helena Butler sister of Ormonde. Sent to Paris when about thirteen years of age, as colonel of the Irish regiment raised for the French service. Spent some years in Paris for his education. Fought for the French, but later went over to Charles II in the Low Countries, and returned with him to England in 1660. Had



been with the French at the siege of Stenay in 1654. *Commentarius* II, p. 638; V, p. 204.

2315. The regiment of Colonel Theodore O'Meara was one of the several Irish regiments which served against France under Charles, Duke of Lorraine. After Charles was arrested by orders of the King of Spain, in Feb. 1654, his brother Francis, in 1655, went over to the French, and took some of the Irish with him. O'Meara however stayed with the Spaniards and served under Condé, and it is stated that his men were joined with those of O'Driscoll and Daniel MacCarthy, with O'Driscoll as lieutenant-colonel of the regiment thus formed. *Commentarius* V, p. 206.

2318. James Dempsy or O'Diomsa had been lieutenant-colonel of one of the Irish regiments which had remained faithful to the Spaniards, and had been rewarded by Condé. *Ibid.* V, pp. 102, 205, where it is also stated that he had been major of an Irish regiment sent from Spain to Aquitaine.

2321. Lieutenant-Colonel William Taaffe with his company was included in the articles signed by Colonel Richard Grace with Commissary-General Reynolds on 8 April 1652: "Article 6. That Lt-Col. Wm Taaffe, with his company, shall be admitted to the benefit of these articles upon the surrender of Ballinafad etc." Dunlop, *Commonwealth* I, p. 174 note.

2393. 1660. June 19. Brussels. de Vecchi to the papal secretariate of State. The English and Irish troops who served the King [of England] are as yet in the same quarters in Flanders; they are expected to retire to Dunkirk. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 103.

2413. a. Signed articles with Major-General Sir Hardress Waller and other representatives of the Commonwealth, at Limerick on 21 April 1652, but took advantage of the terms of the articles, and joined Muskerry in Munster and fought under him until he surrendered at Ross Castle. With Colonel Donnell O'Sullivan Beare of Berehaven and Lt.-Colonel Cornelius O'Driscoll, who also belonged to Muskerry's forces, continued the fight in Kerry until some time after 15 April 1653, when all three escaped to the Continent. O'Brien recovered his estates after the Restoration, when he returned to Ireland. Dunlop I, p. 46, note, and index.

b. *Commentarius* V, pp. 172 ff. states that an agreement for the transportation of Irish troops to Flanders had been reached by Condé, then in the Spanish service, and Cromwell, with Edmund O'Dwyer acting as agent. Condé divided the men received into different regiments, and placed them under different Irish colonels, especially Moriarty O'Brien, Edmund O'Dwyer, O'Driscoll, Edmund Fitzgerald, son of the seneschal of Imokilly, and Peter Walsh. In addition to these was the Earl of Castlehaven, who served in the army of Condé during the French civil troubles, and had followed him to the Low Countries. The division caused



much dissension amongst the Irish, and Murough O'Brien contended that all those who had chosen to fight during the last six years of the wars against England should be put under his command, subject to Condé. On the other hand, Daniel MacCarthy, Daniel O'Sullivan eldest son of O'Sullivan Mor, O'Driscoll, MacGillicuddy, MacEligot and others claimed that they were members of the most noble families in Munster, and were under no compliment to O'Brien, and consequently he should be given command in the Low Countries of those men only who in 1653 had followed him to South Munster from his native Thomond, and that they themselves should be given the command of their own clansmen and followers.

2448. This licence was crossed out, as it was not used.

2498. On this date was published *His Majestie's gracious declaration for the settlement of his kingdome of Ireland etc.* See Appendix 27.

2528. For an account of this episode and its significance see Pádraig de Bhulbh, 'Notes from the Roman archives: A hunted Prelate', in *Catholic Bulletin*, Dublin, Jan. 1921. The writer appears to establish, from the correspondance in the Vatican archives, that Colonel O'Reilly, and his cousin the Archbishop of Armagh, were altogether innocent, and that the accusations against them were made for the purpose of estranging Charles II from the Irish Catholics, and so prevent the restoration of their estates, confiscated by the Cromwellians and given to the recent English settlers in Ireland. Referring to the Colonel, the internuncio at Brussels reports amongst other things on 10 July 1660 (Vatican Archives, Nuntiatura di Francia 311): "It was said that to procure the protection of the French and of Cromwell, he (the Archbishop) would solicit the many Irishmen who serve here to pass over to France or England, as some of them did; and as a matter of fact, letters of his were intercepted by the Marquis de Caracena, in which he exhorted his cousin, Colonel O'Reilly, to go over with his regiment to Dunkirk (then in the hands of the English Parliamentarians). This Colonel was imprisoned here and afterwards dismissed." *Ibid.* p. 51.

2529. a. 1661. Feb. 26. Brussels. de Vechii, internuncio at Brussels, to the papal secretariate of State. Muskerry has been sent to Flanders by the King [of England] to bring to Dunkirk the six regiments of English and Irish troops left in the country by his Majesty. He has the necessary permission from de Caracena for the march. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 114.

b. 1661. Mar. 12. News from Brussels. The Irish troops serving the King of England have reached Dunkirk under the command of the Earl of Muskerry. *Ibid.*, p. 115.

2552. a. 1661. June 7. Copies of a further petition to the King by Walter Hope, captain of the late Duke of Gloucester's regiment. Protests the loyalty of his father, Alexander Hope,



of Molingare (Mullingar) in the time of the rebellion in Ireland. His father was forced on pain of death to repair to Connaught. The father sent the children abroad with such men as he could raise, to serve under the King's ensign there; and they with the petitioner, who is their elder brother, are in actual service in Flanders. The elder brother has been out of Ireland since his infancy. He served with the Duke of York while he was in France, and when his Majesty came to Flanders, was one of the first to quit his French employment and offer his services to his Majesty. He is now first captain in the Duke of Gloucester's regiment. Petitioner prays that he, who is nominated especially in the Declaration, and his father, may be restored to their estates. *C.S.P.Ire.* 1663-5, p. 486.

b. 1661. June ? Copy of petition of Colonel Pierce Walsh to the King. "He was among the first to present himself in Flanders, when the King's forces gathered there, and till the Restoration, served in the Duke of Ormonde's regiment. *Ibid.*, 486.

2561. 1662. Jan. 7. Brussels. de Vecchi to the papal secretariate of State. A regiment of Irish Catholic soldiers is reported to have entered Dunkirk on Christmas eve under Muskerry. *Collectanea Hibernica* I, p. 116.

2563. 1652. June 30. Articles between Reynolds and Major Charles Kelly, agreed on by Captain Henry Sankey and Captain William Kelly on behalf of Major Charles Kelly, for the surrender of Roscommon. Art. 4. "That the said major and the said captains by his appointment shall be allowed to transport, for the service of any foreign prince or State in amity with the Commonwealth of England a regiment of foote consisting of a thousand men of the said persons laying down their armes, and such other of the family of Kelly and their friends as shall go with them, the said regiment to be transported within three months, or sooner if it may bee, for which purpose it shall be lawful for them to employ a messenger into Spaine (if they cannot agree with the Spanish agent here) and if they cannot effect the same within the three months aforesaid upon application to the commissioners of Parliament or others in cheife command, a competent enlargement of time such as they shall thinke fit is to be given them etc." Gilbert, *Aphorismical discovery* II, part II, pp. 335-6.

2641. 1652. Aug. 20. Dr Henry Jones to the Commissioners. "Art Cavanagh had lately preyed before Carlow. He is the remaining considerable (if I may say considerable) enemy hereabouts." Dunlop II, p. 259.

2653. After his services during the war in Ireland, Colonel Richard Bourke signed articles of agreement with the Commissary-General, Reynolds, on 8 April 1653, for the surrender of Drumrusk, now Carrick-on-Shannon. Article 2 of the agreement provided that Colonel Richard Bourke, the officers and soldiers, shall have



quarter of life and liberty, to march forth, with their arms etc. . . and that all others of his company, together with the said Col. Rich. Bourke, shall have liberty to march in the County of Galway in order to their transportation, where they are to remain for two months, and to receive maintenance for that time out of their former quarters, assigned unto them by the Irish party, in the half-barony of Athenry &c. Dunlop II, p. 173 note.

2661. The Spanish name in the register is *Gerardo* which may be the nearest translation of Garret. Orders for the arrest of "Mr Garret Dillon, John Dillon's son in the county Roscommon" along with several others, were issued on 6 August 1659. Dunlop II, pp. 702f.

2678. 1663. May 31. Madrid. Don Patrick Moledy, when in this Court, presented to the Council, together with other papers, a memorial in which he set forth that Chevalier O'Farel has served your Majesty for ten continuous years, as captain of infantry in Spain, and as lieutenant-colonel in the States of Flanders with the regiment of Colonel Luis O'Farel, which was one of the regiments held by the King of England; and that in order to continue his services, after the example of his ancestors, he remained in those States after the said King had recalled his men. He begs your Majesty may be pleased, in consideration of his desire to be employed in the royal service, to do him the favour to order the Marquis de Caracena that the necessary dispatches be sent for him to form a regiment of 1,000 men, or thereabouts, from those whom the King of England recently released from service; allowing him five months in which to do this, and granting him ten crowns for each man; whereupon he undertakes to give the necessary certified bonds, and to go to serve with the regiment against Portugal.

After this had been considered in the Council, at which were present the Duke of San Lucar, the Marquis de Velada, and the Duke of Alva, it seemed well, should your Majesty be pleased, to have orders sent to the Marquis de Caracena to grant immediately a commission as colonel to the said Lieutenant-Colonel Chevalier O'Farel to collect the men he has in mind and form a regiment, which would be of great service, and most opportune, and to help with the means necessary for the carrying out of the levy. Simancas, Estado, Flándes, legajo 561.

2686. Murrough O'Brien, first Earl of Thomond, and sixth Baron Inchiquin. Went to France with Ormonde in 1650. Colonel of an Irish regiment there, with which he campaigned for France in France, Catalonia, and Italy. Was deprived of his regiment after the agreement between Cromwell and Mazarin against Spain, but the command was given to his eldest son, William. For his subsequent career see *Commentarius V.*, pp. 408f.

2698. 1663. June 23. News from Brussels. Bernard O'Neill has arrived in Brussels from the Spanish Court, to raise a regiment of Irish to fight against Portugal. *Collectanea Hibernica I*, p. 121.



2694. Nos 2694, 2695, and 2696 are included in an account of funds distributed by Don Antonio Feysso, beginning in August 1663, and of which he sent an explanation.

2709. a. 1665. Dec. 4. Memorandum entitled Mr Archer's information. "While thus speaking my informant was called away . . . I at once sought out Colonel Cusack, and after having for some time played cautiously upon him, I at last struck home (*après lui avoit donné mil Cricole à la fin je lui ai touché sur la grose corde*) to see if he could explain what I had just heard. He said: "As you know about the matter have you not ascertained that we refused to listen to any proposals made to us by the King of France." In the end he frankly avowed that he and others in Flanders had had offer made to them, and he will be ready to give you some particulars at your leisure. There is no danger in speaking to him about it." *C.S.P.Ire.* 1663-5, p. 68, where it is noted that the memorandum is in indifferent French, signed by Archer.

b. 1665. Dec. (4). *Ibid.* p. 681, is a further memorandum by Archer in which reference is made to the coming of the Chevalier and his men from the French service, by places near the frontier, named by the Court in Brussels, for their reception. At page 682 the memorandum suggests: "Moreover if the King thinks it useful for his service to increase the aforesaid troops for his service to considerable numbers, his Majesty may allow some trusted person to treat secretly with the Spanish ambassador to raise some regiments in Spain for transit to Flanders, where they can all be kept as Spanish troops, and as soon as the King finds it convenient he can direct them to march altogether wherever he wishes. Mr Cusack is the only man to levy these troops. Having this corps formed, our monarch will be the astonishment of Europe and the terror of his enemies at home and abroad, on seas and on land. He will be credited with the power of raising an army of 50,000 men like those aforesaid."

2710. 1666. April 29. Brussels, Miles O'Reilly to Ormonde. The undeserved aspersions cast on me have occasioned my retirement out of Ireland into the King of Spain's dominions for the safety of my person; and, my Lord, it lies in the power of your Grace to use a preservative cause for your Lordship's faithful field officers, which by this is begged of your Honour." Received 20th May 1666. *H.M.C. Ormonde MSS new series* III, p. 219.

2798. The whole of register 65 is badly damaged by damp, and there is no pagination until fol. 97.

2800. The day of the month is obliterated by damp.

2841. a. 1681. Dec. 18. Dublin. (Colonel) Dionisio O'Berne to Ormonde. Asks for a loan of £100, "for I find that what money myselfe and officers have brought into this kingdom is near exhausted, haveing had 450 men here at great expence much longer than I thought of, by meanes of my correspondance being



obstructed, that when I cannot longer supply them with those necessaries that have hitherto kept them together, 'twill be impossible for me to hinder them from dispersing and marring further progress in my leuyes, which will not only frustrate my Generall's great expectations, but also be an evident breach of mine and the other gentlemens concerned credit and fortune." *Ormonde MSS, appendix to 7th report*, pp. 750-1.

b. 1682. July 31. Windsor. Permission from Charles II to Sir Thomas Nugent, baronet, to raise in Ireland by beat of drum, four hundred volunteers for completing the Irish regiment in the service of the King of Spain in the Low Countries, and to transport them from any port. *Ibid.* I. p. 34.

2857. This register of the *Gastos Secretos* covers the entries from 12 April 1686—18 April 1690. As Colonel Eugenio O'Neill died on 8 November 1649, there is here obviously a mistake. Under 17 September 1680 there is mention of Colonel Daniel O'Neill, who may be concerned in this payment.

2852. The Spanish coins referred to in the documents are the following, with their English equivalents, as given in *A new Dictionary, Spanish and English and English and Spanish*, by Captain John Stevens, London, 1726: *Placa*, worth about a penny. *Real*, worth sixpence. *Patacon*, worth eight reales, or four shillings. *Real de a ocho*, a piece of eight, worth 8 reales. *Escudo de oro*, a crown in gold worth 5s. 8d.

Of the *Maravedi* Stevens comments: "A word used in reckoning money, and yet it signifies no particular coin, nor has there been any piece called a *maravedi*. They have been taken for several values in several ages. In the year 1401 it appears that a *maravedi* was the third part of a royal. Under King Alonso XIth, a *maravedi* was worth seventeen times as much as now. Under King Henry II, ten times the value that now . . . At present four *maravedis* make a *quarto*, and 8 *quartos* a royal brass; so that it is the 32d part of a groat, or half a farthing."

The financial situation in the Spanish Low Countries was very unsatisfactory. There were crises in 1575, 1596, 1611, and 1617; and in 1623 the Infanta Isabella wrote to Philip IV that the payment of 157712 crowns through the Antwerp bankers had been refused. In 1646 a combination of eleven Antwerp bankers undertook to furnish Alexander Palavicini, Superintendent of the Army, with 210,000 to 220,000 crowns, and to supply from 50,000 to 80,000 crowns monthly, at a monthly interest of one and a half to one and three quarters. Van Terlan, J. Eggen, *Graf Ernst von Isenburg und sein Jahrhundert* (no place or date) p. 96.



## **INDEXES**

**I. PERSONS AND PLACES**

**II. MISCELLANEOUS REFERENCES**



Mr. John MacLellan had corrected the first proof of the index of persons and places as far as the letter F prior to his sudden death in February 1963. The correction of the proofs has been completed by his daughter, Mrs. Joan Kennedy.

Reference is to the document as numbered in this edition, and to subdivisions of the document where necessary, e.g. 52 [b].

Where the document number is followed by '(n)' the reference is to one of the 'Notes from other Sources' (i.e. the notes printed in pp. 515-628).

#### ABBREVIATIONS

A: Appendix.  
Abp: Archbishop.  
Adj: Adjutant.  
Archdn: Archdeacon.  
Capt: Captain.  
*Cal. S.P.Ire.: Calendar of State Papers (Ireland).*  
co: company.  
co: county, where meaning is obvious.  
Col: Colonel.  
commd: commissioned.  
dau: daughter.  
disb: disbanded.  
En: Ensign.  
Fr: Father.  
gt: grant  
lce: licence.  
Lt: Lieutenant.  
Lt-Col: Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Lte: Licentiate.  
(n): note.  
pn: pension.  
ppt: passport.  
Sgt: Sergeant.  
trsf: transferred.  
Qr master: Quartermaster.  
Visct: Viscount.



## A

- ABBOT, George, Abp of Canterbury:  
 letter to Sir William Trumbull,  
 575 (n) b.
- ADAMS, Thomas: Ice, England, 131,  
 131 (n).
- ADRIAN IV, Pope: 618 [e].
- AERSCHOT, Duke of: 1058-9, 2204,  
 2229.
- Aerschot: 828, 831, A 13.
- AGHUR: 2029 (n) c.
- AGURTO, Col. Francisco Antonio de,  
*afwds* Marquis de Castañaga, Govern-  
 or of the Low Countries (1685-92):  
 2806; letters from CHARLES II  
 (Spain), 2844-6.
- Aire (Aier): 1527 (n) b, 1602-3, 1758,  
 1779, 1779 (n), 1780, A 16.
- Aix-la-Chapelle: 359, 462, 1142, 2567,  
 2589.
- AL, Juana ni, widow of Daniel  
 Omeghan: pn, 1343 [f].
- ALABA, Capt'n Nicholas de: 2806.
- ALARD (Alerd):  
 John (Sgt): Ice, to recruit in Ireland,  
 1730.  
 Thomas (Capt'n): 2319.
- ALBANAGH (Albonagh):  
 Donogh: A 7.  
 Rory (Fr): 286 (n), 325 (n).
- ALBERT of Austria (1559-1621), Arch-  
 duke, Prince of the Southern Nether-  
 lands 1596-1621: pardons mutinous  
 troops, 56, 56 (n), 57; sees Thomas  
 Stanilhurst, A 2; receives Earls of  
 Tyrone and Tyrconnel, A 4; wishes  
 Earls to leave Low Countries,  
 304 (n) d, 308 (n) c-e, 313 (n) b;  
 overtures for peace with England,  
 320; well disposed to Irish nation,  
 359 (n); will not deliver Earl of  
 Tyrone's son to English, 365 (n);  
 King of Spain displeased with his  
 treatment of Irish regt, 429 (n) d;  
 godfather of Hugh O Donnell,  
 526 (n) a, 677.
- Other mentions: 94 (n), 125, 170,  
 180, 184 (n), 271 (n) a, c, 272 (n),  
 320 (n) b, c, 326 (n) a, 333 (n) c,  
 355 [a], [b].
- Letters to Abbess of Avesnes,  
 649-50; to Emile de Biche, 395; to  
 Capt'n Deste, 445; to Baron of  
 Hoboken, 322; to Duke of Lerma,  
 613, 620, 632-3; to Philip Maes,  
 500, 527; to Philip III, 579, 581,  
 586, 588, 590-1, 593, 596, 598, 602,  
 607-9, 611-2, 614-5, 619, 623, 631,  
 633, 640, 668, 680, 687, 713-4; to  
 Philip IV, 719, 723, 735; to Jean  
 Richardot, 304; to Earl of Tyrone,  
 282 (n); to Prioress of the White  
 Ladies, 447.
- Letters from Abp of Cashel, 454;  
 from Christopher Cusack (petition),  
 453; from Sir Thomas Edmonds,  
 416 (n); from Sebastian Hanedouche,  
 452, 576; from Baron of Hoboken,  
 307, 313, 317, 321, 327, 336, 343-4,  
 347, 350, 352; from John de Lay,  
 556; from Fr Hugh Mac Caughwell,  
 656-7; from Philip Maes, 497, 515,  
 532, 534; from John Maguire, 599;  
 from Dermot Omallun, 406, 648;  
 from Col Henry O Neill, 394; from  
 Pope Paul V (Papal Brief), 354 (n);  
 from Philip III, 572-3, 585, 589,  
 595, 597, 600, 603-5, 616, 646, 703,  
 718; from Secretary Prats, 251, 328;  
 from Fr Paul Ragetto, 617-8; from  
 Eugenio Riordan (petition), 688;  
 from Earl of Tyrone, 80 (n) a,  
 111 (n) a, b; from Prioress of the  
 White Ladies, 372, 450.
- Army matters: orders to Count  
 d'Egmont, 578; to Count de  
 Genappes, 583; to Governor of Hulst,  
 577, 584 to Prince de Ligne, 582, 727.
- ALBORNOZ, Cardinal: 1791.
- ALBUQUERQUE, Duke of: 1695, 1718, 1793
- ALDEGONDE, Count de, *see* Sr.  
 ALDEGONDE.
- ALDOBRANDINI, Cardinal Pietro: letter  
 from Ottavio Frangipani, 71 (n).
- ALEM, Capt'n James: 1275; pn, 1279;  
 1280-1.
- ALEXANDER, Robert: 606 (n) b.
- ALGEGORS, Terence: 1119.
- Algiers: 2566.
- See also* Algezire, Index II.
- ALIAG, Stephen: gt, 164.
- ALORA, Redmund: gt, 159.
- ALOST, Col —: 1740.
- Alost: 3, 1014-6, 1019, 1021-2, 2804,  
 2817.
- Alseyn: A 12.
- ALVA, Duke of: 2679 (n).
- Amiens: 69, 70, 304 (n) b.
- AMONT, George: gt, 48.
- Ampudia: 219, 222-3, 241.
- Amsterdam: 2122 (n) b, 2637.
- Anchin: 658.
- ANDRE, Alexander: gt, A 1.
- ANGLIN (Angle, Angles, Angloin,  
 Anglois):  
 Cornelius: Ice, 565.  
 Daniel: Ice, 555.  
 Richard: gt, 326 [d].  
 William (Sgt): 1119; *see also* HOOR,  
 Helena.
- ANGUS:  
 Gregory: 2186.  
 Raymond: *ibid.*
- ANNE of AUSTRIA, Queen-Regent of  
 Spain: 2767, 2781.
- ANNESLEY, Sir Francis: letter to Sir  
 Edward Conway, 873 (n) b.



- ANTRIM, Earl of, Marquis of, *see* MACDONNELL.
- Antrim: 873 (n) *g*, A 27 *passim*.
- ANTUNEZ, Col. Simon: 697.
- Antwerp (Anvers): 8 (n) *n, q*, 46 (n) *b*, 47 (n) *a*, 52 [b] (n), 104, 119, 121, 147, 272 (n), 308, 333, 483, 549 (n), 678-9, 685-6, 695, 698, 704, 771, 883, 894, 901, 919, 957, 1014, 1016-7, 1019-22, 1160, 1289, 1455, 1530, 1593, 1615, 1627, 1755, 1761, 1763, 1766, 1774, 1856-7, 1995, 2110, 2140 (n) *a, b*, 2145 (n) *a*, 2309, 2806, 2840-1, 2850, 2852 (n), A 9, A 21.
- AQUELY, *see* KELLY.
- AQUIFE, *see* O KEEF.
- Aquitaine: 2168 (n), 2262 (n), 2318 (n).
- Araganda: 580.
- Aragon: 946, A 10. *See also* Index II.
- Arandia: 451.
- Aranjuez: 642, 705, 889.
- ARCHBOLD (Archibold), Peter, judge-advocate: 2750, 2822.
- ARCHER (Archerus):  
Henry: 8 (n) *v*.  
P. Jacobus, S.J.: 1580 (n).  
Patrick: instructions from Viscount Muskerry, 2016 (n) *a*; letter to Ormonde, 2016 (n) *b*; 2709 (n) *a, b*.
- Ardraccan: 271.
- ARDEN, Thomas: *gt*, 47.
- Arderry: A 27.
- Ardkill: 873 (n) *m*.
- AREMBE, Henry: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).
- ARGUELO, Antonio de Suarez de: letter *from* Envoy in London, 747.
- ARGYLE, Duke of, *see* CAMPBELL, Col Archibald.
- ARISSON, Arizon, *see* HARISON.
- ARMAGH, Abp of: 326 (n) *b*, 689. *See also* LOFTUS, Adam; LOMBARD, Peter; MAC SAMRAGAN, Edmond; O REILLY, Edmund; TALBOT, John.
- Armagh: A 27 *passim*.
- Armentières: 1961-3, 2097, 2097 (n), 2116-7.
- ARPE, Martin de: letters *from* Juan de Neocolalde, 1308, 1349, 1354-5, 1362, 1382-3; letters *to* Juan de Neocolalde, 1353, 1361, 1375, 1381; 1411.
- Arques, Comte de: 1070.
- Arras (Arass): 251, 304, 304 (n) *b*, 582-3, 648, 1439-40, 1443-4, 1444 (n), 1546, 1623, 1627-8, 1628 (n), 1634, 1635 (n) *a, b*, 1639, 1641-2, 1646, 1649-50, 1659, 1662, 1665, 1700 [b] [c], 1798, 1848, 2105 (n) *b*, 2255, 2506, A 16, A 17.
- ART, Captain Charles, *see* O HART.
- Artane, *see* Tartayne.
- ARTHUR, *see* MAC ARTHUR.
- ARTOIS, Duchess of: 2029 (n) *c*.
- Artois: 727, 791, 1056, 1059, 1072-3, 1076, 1078, 1079 [c], 1080, 1139, 1807, A 16.  
*See also* Index II.
- ARUNDEL, Earl (Thomas) of: 186, 842.
- ARZE, Pedro de: 1700.
- ASELEY, Edmund: *gt*, A1.
- ASILERS, Robert de, judge-advocate: 249.
- ASSUMAR, Comte de, *see* MELLO, Francisco de.
- Asti: 2623.
- ASTON, Sir Art: 747 (n) *b*.
- Ath: 304 (n) *b*, 2295.
- ATHENRY, Baron of: A 27.
- Athenry, half-barony of: 2653 (n).
- Audenaerde, *see* Oudenarde.
- AUDIENGE, Secretary of the: order as to rations of co of Irish infantry, 1112; as to quarters for officers' wives, 1771.  
Letters *to* Count de Busquoy, 1837, 1840; *to* Fr Florence Conry, 964; *to* Kinschot, 1102; *to* Diego de la Torre, 1667; *to* Count de Montecuccoli, 2116; *to* Rodolfo de Novaro, 1782; *to* Col Hugh O Donnell, 1095; *to* Col Eugenio O Neill, 1105, 1796; *to* the authorities at Quesnoy, 1843; *to* Count de St. Aldegonde, 1100; *to* Miguel de Salamanca, 1673; *to* Pedro de San Juan, 1074, 1107; *to* — Smet, accounts clerk, 1804; *to* Treasurer-General, 1068.  
Letters *from* Count de Busquoy, 1836, 1839, 1841; *from* the Governor of Douai, 1822; *from* Francisco de Galareta, 1962; *from* Count d'Isenbourg, 1592; *from* Martin d'Ivarra, 1640, 1648; *from* Diego de la Torre, 1801; *from* J. D. Lessena, 1084; *from* Rodolfo de Novaro, 1781; *from* Col Eugenio O Neill, 1101, 1797; *from* Col John O Neill, 851; *from* Miguel de Salamanca, 1602, 1684, 1747, 1752, 1777; *from* the authorities at Ypres, 2095.
- AUDLY:  
Guillermo: A 7.  
Roberto: *ibid*.
- AURACHE, Marroc: *gt*, 47.
- AUSTRIA, Archduke of, *see* ALBERT; ERNEST; LEOPOLD.  
*See also* Austria, Index II.
- AVER, Richard: *gt*, 52 [d].
- AVESNES, Abbess of: 648; letters *from* Archduke Albert, 649-50.
- Avesnes, *see* Evin.
- AYA, Aye, Ayo, *see* O HAY.
- AYLMER:  
Anthony (En): *gt*, 832; lce, 1278, 1301.  
Gerrot (Capt): A 27.  
Robert, chaplain: pay, 1315.



AYTONA, Marquis de: 1099, 1230, 1344; letter to Philip IV, 1131 (n); letter from Philip IV, 1289.  
 AXTEL, Col —: 2641 (n).

## B

B. (*sic*): 1954 (n) *b*.

BAC (Bacq):

John: gt, A 1.  
 Leonel: 1881.

BAES, John: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).  
 BAGNO, Cardinal Guido di, Nuncio: letters to Cardinal Barberini, 969 (n) *a, b*, 987 (n) *b*; to Cardinal Ludovico Ludovisi, 859 (n); to Cardinal Spada, 987 (n) *b*.

BAL, John: gt, 45, 74, 844; pn, 126 (n) *b*; 623.

BALAGE, Patrick: gt, 326 [f].

BALCASAR, Capt'n Pedro de: 1476.

BALDWIN, Fr William: 307 [a], 344 (n), 446 (n); in Tower, 614 (n).

Balenehenzez [Ballynahinch], barony of, A 27.

Balenamartery: A 27.

Baligaden: A 27.

Balin-Tober: A 27.

Ballinafad: 2321 (n).

Balline, co. Clare: A 27.

Ballisonan: 1372 (n).

Ballisoqui: A 27.

Ballrankan: A 27.

Ballyhan: A 27.

Ballynagare: A 27.

Ballynahinch, *see* Balenehenzez.

Ballynanean: 587.

Ballynemart: A 27.

Ballyshannon: 780 (n).

Ballyyne, co. Tipperary: A 27.

Baltimore: 272 (n).

BALTON, Henry: gt, 191.

Balyboy, barony of: A 27.

Baly Coursy: A 27.

Balykilcluney: A 27.

Balymalo: A 27.

BAMFYLDE, Col —: 2195 (n) *b*.

BANISTER, Peregrine: 873 (n) *k, m*.

BANC, Guillermo: A 7.

Bantry: A 27.

Bapaume: 1629, 1648, 1652.

BAQUENAN, Walter: gt, A 1.

Barbadoes: 2103 (n).

BARBERINI (Berberini), Cardinal Francesco, Papal Secretary of State: 304 (n) *c*, 328 (n) *d*, 1529.

Letters to Cardinal Bentivoglio, 537 (n) *a*; to Cardinal Fachinetti, 1792 (n) *c*; to Marquis Spinola, 549 (n); to Richard Stravius, 1796 (n) *b*.

Letters from Cardinal di Bagno, 969 (n) *a*, 987 (n) *b*; from Cardinal Bentivoglio, 303 (n) *b, c*, 306 (n) *d*,

307 (n) *e-g*, 308 (n) *c*, 326 (n) *b, c*, 359 (n), 365 (n); from Antonio Bichi, 1848 (n) *a*; from Cardinal Fachinetti, 1774 (n) *e*; from Lucio Morra, 613 (n); from Carlo Rosetti, 1738 (n), 1780 (n) *a*; from Fr Nicholas Shea, 1387 (n) *b*; from Richard Stravius, 1342 (n), 1635 (n) *b*, 1683 (n), 1798 (n) *a*; from Fr Luke Wadding, 1792 (n) *a, b*.

Barcelona, (n) *f*.

BARDEO, *see* WARD.

BARIGE, Louis, Irish priest: ppt, 2103.

BARLAYMONT, Count de: 96, 121.

Barnane: A 27.

BARNEWALL (Barnabal, Barnaval, Barnebal, Barneval, Barnewel, Barnuels, Barraval, Berneval, Bernewall):

Sir Christopher: 46 (n) *b*

Edward: lce, 798.

Francis (Capt'n): 2064, 2093.

George (Capt'n): 98-162 *passim*; dead, 220.

John: gt, 326 [b].

Lawrence (Capt'n): 127, 130-1, 133, 137, 142.

Michael: gt, 326 [b].

Nicholas, uncle of Capt'n Patrick Fleming, A 16.

Patrick (Capt'n): 1070 (n) *a, b*, 2064.

Richard (Col): recruiting, 1960 (n) *a, b*; A 27.

Rosa: gt, 871.

Thomas: gt, 48, 80; lce, Aix-la-Chapelle, 462.

Valentine (Capt'n): 2064.

BARON (Barron), Geoffrey: 1803 (n) *e*, 1832.

BARRAGAN, De, *see* BRADAGAN.

BARRAVAL, *see* BARNEWALL.

BARRET (Baret, Barot, Barrett):

Andrew: ppt, 2114.

Catalina, widow of Sgt Nicholas

Barry: pn, 1343 [c].

George (En): gt, 52 [a], A 1.

John: gt, 234, 1400.

Riequird: gt, 326 [a].

Robert Poer Geraldo: arrears, 1160.

Thomas: gt, 545; A 7.

William (Capt'n): 184 (n), 272 (n); co, 250, 326 [e], 337, 359, 361, 393, 401, 414, 416, 423, 427, 467-8, 501, 507, 529, 553, 557-8, 569, 1343 [g].

BARRIMORE, Earl of: 1569 (n) *b*.

Barrimore: A 27.

BARROS, Col Juan de: 2340.

BARRY (Bareye, Barri):

Cecilia, widow of Daniel: pn, 1343 [b].

Daniel (En): gt, 1341.

David (En): gt, 326 [e], 330; lce, 571; lce, Brussels, 1482; A 7 (*bis*).



- Enora, wife of Col Bernard O'Neill: gt, 2699.
- Eylina, widow of Sgt Eugenio Vildan: pn, 1343 [e].
- Gerald (Capt'n, *afwuds* Major): lce, 216; gt, 326 [d], 861, 1223; commd adjt, 861; 1136, 1167, 1343 [c] [e] [k], 1213; Counsellor of War, 1225; efforts to obtain Irish recruits, 1354-5, 1362; lce, Spain, 1510; authorised by Charles I to bring 1000 Irish recruits to Continent, 1687 (n) f; agreement with Alonso de Cardenas as to conditions on which recruits are to be supplied, 1751; 1773 (n) a; petition to Charles I as to stoppage of recruiting, 1774 (n) a; 1778 (n) a, 1848 (n) b.
- Isabella (Inez), widow of William Fitzgerald: 907; pn, 1343 [g], 1403, 1406, 1808, 1811, 1982.
- James (Capt'n): 1375; gt, 1434; dead, 1451.
- James (En): gt, 1928.
- John Oge (En, Capt'n), brother to Barry Oge: 184 (n).
- John (Lt): gt, 2369, 2392.
- John (Col): offers to raise regt, 1358-9; 1361-3, 1365-6, 1375, 1381-3; memorial to Don Ferdinand as to recruiting, 1447; Charles I authorises him to bring 1000 Irish recruits to Continent, 1687 (n) f; agreement with Alonso de Cardenas as to conditions for recruiting, 1751; 1773 (n) a; petition to Charles I as to stoppage of recruiting, 1774 (n) a; 1778 (n) a, 1782 (n) c, A 7.
- Juana, widow of Sgt Thomas de Longueval: pn, 1343 [c].
- Nicholas (Sgt), *see* BARRER, Catalina.
- Nicholas (Capt'n): 2319, 2511, A 7.
- Philip (Capt'n), of Dunbagy: A 27.
- Raymund: lce, Spain, 1812.
- Redmund: lce, 298.
- , *Reformado*: 184 (n).
- Richard FitzDavid: pn, 184 (n).
- Richard (En, *afwuds* Lt): 2092; gt, 2177; A 27.
- Thomas (Capt'n): gt, 70, 78, 121, 184 (n), 242; lce, 96; lce, Aix-la-Chapelle, 359; lce, Spain, 361; 94 (n).
- William, chaplain: pay, 176; lce, Loreto, 231.
- William (Capt'n): gt, 2265, 2704; A 27.
- BARTE, Patrick: lce, 1549.
- BATE, *see* BATHE.
- BATEVILLE, Baron de: 2623.
- BATHE (Bate, Bath, Batheo, Batth, Beth, Ract, Raat, Rat, Rath, Rathe, Ratheo, Ratt):
- Denis (En): gt, 172; lce, Loreto, 547.
- James: message in cudgel to Sir Cormac O'Neill, 305 (n) b; in correspondence with Earl of Salisbury, 305 (n) b, 313 (n) b, 327 (n) b; 325 (n) b—d; gt, 396.
- John (Capt'n), bro of James, *v.s.*: 286 (n); commd, 305, 305 (n) a, b; gt, 238, 396, 460; 325 (n), 363, 392; lce, Spain, 403; attained, 403 (n) a, b; refused pardon, 460 (n); A 3; offer of services to James I in 1613, A 6; A 8.
- Sir John: 1002, 1002 (n).
- Michael (En): lce, to recruit, 1299; dead, 1427.
- Patrick: 466 (n); lce, 492, 548.
- Patrick (Capt'n): commd, 2319; 2601.
- Robert: gt, 301.
- Stephen: lce, 423; 466 (n).
- BAUDON: 1981.
- BAULDE, Marcq, Sieur (Chevalier) de Cantraine: A 9, 2466 [a].
- BAVARIA, Duke of: 686, 1030 [t], 1877 [d], A 19 (5).
- Bavaria: A 19 (8).
- BAYNAM, John: gt, 30.
- Bealatury: 587.
- Bear, *see* Berehaven.
- BEAULIEU, J.: letters to Sir William Trumbull, 340 (n) c, 348 (n).  
*See also* Bellew.
- BEDLOE (Bedlowe, Bedlon):  
James (En): 184 (n).  
Joorge (Sgt): lce, 2433.  
Juan: A 7.
- BEGLEY (Begle, Beglin):  
John: trsid, 2763.  
Mortagh: gt, 326 [e], A 7.  
— (Sgt): gt, 1938.
- BEHR, Col John: 1790.
- Beins, *see* Binche.
- BKEN, J. V., member of Council of Finances: 1061.
- BELBER, *see* Belver.
- Belclare: A 27.
- Belgard: A 27.
- BELLEM, Peter, shipwrecked sailor: 539
- BELLEW, Lawrence: A 27.  
*See also* BEAULIEU.
- BELLING (Beling, Bellings, Bellingsle):  
Christopher (Col): authorised by Charles I to take 1000 Irish recruits to Continent, 1687 (n) f. [Sir Henry]: 1861 (n) c, A 27.  
Richard, "young", son of Sir Henry: 'sent to Rome to petition for creation of 9 bishops in Ireland', 2645; A 27.
- R. (Capt'n): served under Sir William Stanley: 32 (n).
- BELVEDER, Col the Marquis de: 2809.
- BELVER (Belber), Ferdinand (de), judge-advocate: 670, 925, 927.



- BELVI, Captn Francisco de: 1320.
- BENAVIDES, Col Luis de, Governor of Dunkirk: 1183, 1248.
- BENESSA, Monsignor —, secretary to apostolic legation at Cologne: report from Richard Stravius, nuncio: 1527 (n) a.
- BENETT, Sir Henry: 2277 (n).
- BENNYON, John: gt, 8 (n) v.
- BENS, Sgt John: gt, 1462.
- BENTIVOGLIO, Cardinal Guido, Papal Nuncio: 304 (n) c, e; endeavours to prevent fugitive Earls from going to Rome, 304 (n) d; 306 (n) a; visited by Earl of Tyrone, 306 (n) c; 328 (n); 1791.  
Letters to Cardinal Barberini, 303 (n) b, c, 306 (n) d, 307 (n) e—g, 308 (n) c, 326 (n) b, c, 359 (n), 365 (n).  
Letter from Cardinal Barberini, 537 (n) a.
- BERHAVEN, Count of (Earl of): 873 (n) l, n, 982, 1031 (n) b.  
See also O'Sullivan and Index II.
- Berehaven (Bear): 873 (n) j, l, A 27.
- Bergen-op-Zoom (Bergh, Berghes op Zoom, Berg op Zoom, Bergues op Zoom): 10, 810, 881—2, 1374, A 12.
- BERGH, Count Henri de: orders from Infanta Isabella, 1052; 1061.
- Bergues St Winnoc: 1079 [b] [c], 1098—9, 1101, 1104, 1598, 1600.
- BERIN, see O BYRNE.
- BERINGTON, John: gt, A 1.
- BERLIN, Col the Viscount: 2340.
- BERMINGHAM (Bermisam, Breemechan, Bremegan, Bremeghen, Bremansey-n, Bremgham, Bremigan, Brimigan):  
Edmond (Capt): 2064.  
James (En): gt, 1503.  
John (Capt, *aftwds* Col): gt, 1388, 1513; lce, 1470; 1767; recruiting in Ireland, 1774 (n) a, 1780 (n) e.  
Myles (Lt): A 27.  
Nicholas (Capt): recruiting, 1983—4; 2026.  
Richard (En): lce, 2100.  
Thomas (En): gt, 89.  
—, Lord: A 27.  
—, 'lalfair' [? alfero], A 24.
- BERN, Berneo, see O BYRNE.
- BERNABE (Barnabe, Pernave), En Gaspar: lce, Spain, 1088, 1129, 1147, 1152, 1166.
- BERNARD, Captn Francis: 2064.
- BERNAVAL, see BARNEWALL.
- BERRONT, Egmond: gt, 326 [b].
- BERTIN, Captn Peter: 2320.
- BERTRAND (Bertran):  
John: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).  
Raymond: 2213 (n).
- Besancon: 2779.
- BETH, see BATHE.
- Béthune: 1592, 1713, 1747—8, 1769, 1771, 1796—7, 1809.
- Beveren: 2—5, 727.
- BICHE, see LA BICHE.
- BICHI, Antonio, internuncio at Brussels: letters to Papal secretariat of State, 1387 (n) a, 1848 (n) a.
- Biest: A 9.
- Bilbao: 1761, 2046 (n) a, 2109 (n) b.
- BILLELA, Juan de: 989.
- Binche (Beins): 17—24, 158—70, 302, 304, 304 (n) e, 306, 307 (n) a, 320 (n) b, c, 451.
- BINGHAM, Sir Richard: 970 (n).
- BIP, see VHIP.
- BIRN, see O BYRNE.
- BIRNE, see O BRIEN.
- Birtcastle: 403 (n) b.
- Biscay (Bischoigne, Viscoigne): 65 (n) c, 1720 [a], 1751 [a], 2046 (n) a, 2143.
- BIZES, see LA BICHE.
- BLACKWALL, Henry, *alias* Henry Moore: letter to Secretary Thurloe, 2201 (n) b.
- BLACQ, see STAPLETON.
- BLAKE:  
Peter (Capt): 1861 (n) b.  
Richard: 1970 [e] [g].
- BLANCHEVILLE (Blanguenville):  
Denis (Capt): lce, 2227.  
James (Capt): 2173.  
Leonard (Capt): gt, 2260.
- BLASVELT, Captn James: gt to co, 1556.
- BLONDT, Roland: gt, 47.
- BLOUNT, see MOUNTJOY.
- BODKINE (Bodquin, Botfin):  
Gregory (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2796.  
Henry: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).  
Nicholas (Fr): ppt, 2115.  
Richard (Capt): gt, 2176.
- Bleaugies, Seigneur de, see HAEN.
- Boenury, Seigneur de, see HAEN.
- Bohemia: A 18.
- BOISCHOT, —: 1666.
- Bois Le Duc: 77—80, 1177—8.
- BOMFAY, see BONIFAZ.
- Bommel, Island of: 1307.
- BONIFAZ (Bomfay), Col Gaspar: 1890, 2045, 2529, 2622, 2634, 2639.
- BONNIER, C de: letter to — de la Faille, 1134.
- BOONHEF, Albert: 967.
- BORCEL, —, Dutch Ambassador at Paris: 2186 (n) a.
- Bordeaux: 80 (n) g, 876, 877 [b], 2027 (n) d, 2029, 2029 (n) d.
- BORGHESE, —: 306 (n) d.
- BORGIA (Borsa), Col Inigo de: 667.  
See also BOUSSU, Helene de.
- Borredstown: A 27.
- BOSTOCK (Bostocque):  
Robert (Capt): 50, 52 [c]; gt, 69; killed, 80 (n) c; A 1.  
Thomas: gt, A 1.



- BOTECCQUES, William: gt, 48.  
 BOFFIN, *see* BODKINE.  
 BOTLERO, *see* BUTLER.  
 Bouchain: 1975, 1977-80.  
 BOUET, — (Fr): 1343 [k].  
 Bourbonnais (Bourbrucque): 890, 917, 954-5, 1025-6, 1054, 1063, 1068-9, 1073, 1079 [c], 1099, 1100-2, 1106, 1108-10, 1112, 1588, 2022-4, 2213 (n), 2570.  
 BOURCHE, Bourke, *see* BURKE.  
 Bourges: 2224 (n).  
 Bourgogne: 2779.  
*See also* Index II.  
 BOUSSU:  
   Albert, Comte de: A 9.  
   Alexandrine de Gaure, Comtesse Douairière de: *ibid.*  
   Anne de, widow of Loys de Velasco, Comte de Salazar, *ibid.*  
   Anne Margheritte de, wife of Col Hugh O Donnell: A 9, A 10.  
   Claude de, Baronne de Haussy, Dame d'Idevoorde: A 9.  
   Hélène de, widow of Col Inigo de Borgia: *ibid.*  
   Maxmilien, Comte de: *ibid.*  
 Boussu: A 9; 2168.  
 BOWLOCKE, —: 338 (n).  
 BOYLE (Boile, Boyll, Oboill, Oboyle, Obuil, Obuyle, Obuyll, Obuis):  
   Francisco (Fr): 1320.  
   Nelán (Capt): gt, 1192, 1194; lce, to recruit, 1197; 1222, 1343 [k]; lce, to recruit, 1389; 1410, 1424, 1450.  
   Richard, 1st Earl of Cork: letter to Lord Clare, 873 (n) o; letters to Viscount Falkland, 873 (n) k, o; letters from Fr Florence Mac Donnell (Mac Dermot), 873 (n) k, m, o; letter from Sir Thomas Roper, 873 (n) k, o.  
   —, 'El Señor Boile': 1031 (n) b.  
   — (Sgt): 1320.  
 BOYO, William: gt, 326 [e].  
 Brabant: 47 (n) a, 272 (n), 355 [a], 587, 831, 925, 1805, A 9, A 12.  
*See also* Index II.  
 BRABANCON, Prince de: 1049.  
 Bracklon: A 27.  
 BRADAGAN (Barnigan, Bradegan),  
   Thadéus (Sgt *aftrwds* En): gt, 700, 767, 915, 1322, 1636; lce, to go to sea, 911.  
 BRADY (Bradeus, Bradi, Braty),  
   Daniel, son of Capt'n Fiacre *infra*: ppt, 2531.  
   Fiacre (Capt): killed, 2530. *See* Fiacre *supra* and James, Margaret, Patrick and Rosa *infra*.  
   Hugh (Capt): gt, 2280; 2281.  
   James, son of Capt'n Fiacre, *supra*: ppt, 2531.  
   James (Sgt): 2264.  
   John (Adj't): pay, 2228; gt, 2344; lce, 2393; A 27.  
   Margaret, widow of Capt'n Fiacre *supra*: lce, 2530.  
   Nicholas (Capt): 2204; gt, 2229.  
   Patrick, son of Capt'n Fiacre *supra*: ppt, 2531.  
   Philip (En): 2154; lce, 2439.  
   Rosa, dau. of Capt'n Fiacre *supra*: ppt, 2531.  
   Thomas (Capt): gt, 2291.  
   Thomas (Lte), chaplain: pay, 1143; 2268; commd to inquire into administration of a seminary, 2677.  
 BRANDENBURGH, Marquis of: 2171.  
 BRANDON:  
   Edward: 93.  
   John: lce, Italy, 93.  
 BRANGAN, En Martin: lce, 362.  
 BRAY (Brae, Brey, O Bray):  
   Nicholas, chaplain: 250; gt, 306.  
   Victor (Sgt): gt, 79, 144; lce, 90.  
   William: lce, 421.  
 Brazil: 896 [b], [d], 1356-7.  
 Breda: 873 (n) i, 881-2, 885-7, 896 [b], 900, 923, 930, 932, 951, 1142, 1214, 1304, 1374, 1440, 1451, 1634, A 12.  
 BREMECHAN, Breemechan, Bremegan, Bremanseyn, Bremghan, Bremigan, *see* BERMINGHAM.  
 BRENACH (Brenagh):  
   Charles (Adj't): 2789.  
   James: gt, 326 [e].  
   P: gt, 190.  
 BRENAN (Brenane, Brenat, Obrenan):  
   Edmund (En): A 27.  
   Hugo: lce, France, 478.  
   John: gt, 319; A 7.  
   Nicholas: lce, 367.  
   Roger (En): A 27.  
   Terence: gt, 2712.  
   Thadéus: gt, 314, 703, 718, 739; lce, 463, 884.  
 BREARTON, Randall: pn, 8 (n) v.  
 BRETE, *see* BRITO.  
 BREVES, — de, French Ambassador: 575 (n) a.  
 Bridges, *see* Bruges.  
 BRIMIGAN, *see* BERMINGHAM.  
 BRIN, *see* O BRIEN.  
 BRIS, Capt'n Thomas: 2368.  
 BRISLAN, William: lce, 548.  
 BRISTOL, Earl of, *see* DIGBY.  
 BRITO (Brete, Brith, Bryth):  
   Alexander (Capt): 2319, 2392.  
   Daniel (Sgt): gt, 1286; lce, Spain, 1540.  
   George: lce, to recruit, 1302.  
   Robert (Fr): ppt, 853.  
 Brittany: 65 (n) c, 286 (n), 290 (n) a, b.  
 BRITTN, Capt'n —: 2518.



- BRIZUELA, Fr Enrique de: 689.  
 Broadhaven: 884 (n).  
 BRON, *see* BROWNE.  
 BROWNE (Bron, Broun, Brown, Brun):  
 Ambrose (Captn, Adjnt): 2211, 2683.  
 Anthony: 1997.  
 David: 1784 (n).  
 Edmond (Sgt): gt, 2365.  
 John: 327 (n) b.  
 Thomas (Captn), of Bear and Bantry:  
 A 27.  
 Valentine (qr master): 799; lce, 1053.  
 Valentine (Fr), O.F.M.: letter to  
 Fr Hugh de Burgo, 1861 (n) b.  
 Sir Valentine: A 7, A 27.  
 William (Col), of Ballrankan: A 27.  
*See also* BRUN.  
 BRUCE, Captn —: 2794.  
 BRUCK, Baron: 1783.  
 BRUDIN, Fr Bonaventure de, OSF: gt  
 to enable him to go to Ireland, 2694.  
 Bruff (Broof): A 27.  
 Bruges (Bridges): 7-9, 303 (n) a, 437,  
 1026, 1036, 1084, 1148, 1177-8,  
 2157 (n) a, c, 2171 (n) a, 2220 (n),  
 2240-2, 2689 [3].  
 BRUIN, *see* O BRIEN.  
 BRUM, Sgt Oliver: gt, 2178.  
 BRUMEU, Captn —: 1095.  
 BRUN, Col Francisco de: 1470.  
*See also* BROWNE.  
 BRUNEAU (Brubeau), Jacques: 895,  
 896 [c], 905 [b], 1002.  
 BRUNSWICK, —: A 12.  
 Brunswick: 1613, A 12.  
 Brussels: *passim*.  
 BRYAN, *see* O BRIEN.  
 BRYTH, *see* BRITO.  
 BUCKE, *see* BURKE.  
 BUCKINGHAM, Duke of: letter from  
 Lord Clare, 873 (n) o; 1024; his  
 widow married to Marquis of Antrim,  
 1869.  
 BUENDIA, Col Gabriel de: 2834.  
 Buen Ritiro: 2848.  
 BULGER, Major —: 2267.  
 BURENA, Augustino Navarro, Secretary  
 to Archduke Leopold: letter from  
 Geronimo de la Torre, Secretary to  
 Philip IV, 2031.  
 BURGHEY (Burleigh), William Cecil,  
 Lord Chancellor, d. 1598: 46 (n) b, c;  
 letter to Earl of Leicester, 8 (n) m;  
 letter from Captn Dautry, 52 (n) c;  
 letter from Sir William Stanley, 8 (n) k.  
 BURGOMAIN, Marquis de: 2821.  
 Burgos: 164, 168-9, 172, 188, 191, 194,  
 208, 585, 1628.  
 Burgundy: 1729, 2157 [b].  
*See also* Infantry.  
 BURKE (Bourche, Bourcq, Bourk,  
 Bourke, Bourque, Bucke, Burc,  
 Burghque, Burgo, Burgos, Burque,  
 De Burgh, De Burgo):
- Balthasar (Adjnt): gt, 2810.  
 David: A 7, 325 (n).  
 DAVID (Adjnt), of Harmanlahie: 2322,  
 A 27.  
 Denis: gt, 371, 378.  
 Edmond (Lte), chaplain: 2311.  
 Edmund (Adjnt): gt, 721, 733, 929;  
 1436, A 27.  
 Edmund (En), 1826.  
 Hugh (Fr), O.F.M., de Burgo, *afstuds*  
 Bp of Kilmacduagh: 1387 (n) a, b;  
 petition for mortmain, 1668, 1680;  
 letter to him from Madame Preston  
 mentioned, 1786 (n); 1791; obtains  
 pardon for persons who left  
 Flanders for Irish insurrection,  
 1823, 1825; ill in Paris on way to  
 Spain, 1869; Philip IV thinks he  
 should be treated with caution,  
 1878; Confederation proposes that  
 Bp of Ross, rather than Fr Hugh,  
 should represent Ireland in Spain,  
 1970 [e]; letter to Wadding as to  
 Constantino O Neill mentioned,  
 2029 (n) d; A 21, A 22, A 25 (n).  
 Letters to Francisco de Mello,  
 1823, 1825; to Fr Luke Wadding,  
 1787 (n), 1796 (n) a, 1798 (n) c,  
 1801 (n) a, b, 1803 (n) a, c-e, 1804  
 (n) a, 1807 (n) a, c, A 25 (n).  
 Letters from Fr Valentine  
 Browne, 1861 (n) b; from Col  
 Eugenio O Neill (Owen Roe  
 O Neill), 1762 (n) 1803 (n) b,  
 A 25 (as to state of Ireland in  
 1642); from Henry O Neill, 1807  
 (n) b; from Madame Preston, A 24;  
 from Fr Luke Wadding, 1798 (n) b.  
 Nephew of, 1762 (n).  
 John (Lte), chaplain: pay, 1675.  
 John: gt, 10, 212 [d], 773, 834.  
 John (En, Captn, Adjnt, Lt Col): gt,  
 262; 885; gt to co, 1192; 1207,  
 1272, 1798 (n) c, 1828, A 12, A 18.  
 John (John Raymund, Redmundo):  
 gt, 265; 265 (n) a, b.  
 John (En, Captn): 2116 (n) b; gt,  
 2133, 2231; ppt, 2676; 2703 [d];  
 lce, to recruit, 2841.  
 Louis (Captn): lce, to recruit, 2841.  
 Maurice: 2009.  
 Melchior (Captn): 2215; lce, 2561;  
 gt, 2569, 2638; 2703 [d]; com-  
 mended by Col Hugh O Donnell,  
 A 12; by Lt Col Maurice Fitz-  
 Gerald, A 18.  
 Olice: 326 [b].  
 Philip: gt, 773.  
 Raymond (Lte), chaplain: lce, Spain,  
 2085; 2091.  
 Raymund (En): 1379.  
 Richard (Sgt): gt, 1341.  
 Richard: gt, 10, 52 [c]; lce, 60;  
 60 (n); pn, 184 (n); 325 (n), 455;



- Ice, 517; 773, 796; gt, 863; 1461, 1492.
- Richard (Captn, Col): commended by Alonso de Cardenas, 1633; co of 100 to be recruited in Nieuport, 1651, 1667; gt to newly-raised co, 1756; 1784 (n); accompanies Col Eugenio O'Neill to Ireland in 1642, 1803 (n) *e*; with Col Costello and others brings Irish recruits to Flanders, 2046 (n) *a, b*; agreement with Commissary-General Reynolds after surrender of Carrickon-Shannon, 2223 (n), 2653 (n); gt, 2653; 2787.
- Richard (En): gt, 2284; 2819; reinstated as En after charge of homicide, 2828; Ice (twice mentioned), to recruit, 2841.
- Thadeus Baldo (Captn): dead, 2703 [d].
- Theobald (Tybott): 47 (n) *b*; Ice, 487.
- Theobald (Captn), son of Col Richard *supra*: 1915; gt to co, 1950; 2009, 2084; ppt, 2443; trsfed, 2748; Ice, Spain, 2787; pay, 2812.
- Thomas (En, Captn): trsfed, 2748; 2776; Ice, to recruit, 2841.
- Thomas, of Clonloe and Ballynaneen, brother of Baron of Leitrim: 587; ppt, 775.  
*See* MAHON, Leonora.
- Ulick: Ice, 543.
- Ulick (Captn), came over from French service: pn, 2167.
- Sir Ullick, 'Knight and baronet of Glynsk': A 27.
- Walter: gt, 10; Ice, 518.
- Walter (En): gt, 1920.
- William: gt, 10.
- William (Captn), of Bealatury, brother of Baron of Leitrim: 587.
- William (Fr), O.S.D.: gt, to enable him to go to Ireland, 2696.
- William (Lt), of Turlagh: gt, 2381; A 27.
- Wil. (Col): A 27.
- William Mac Redmond (Captn): A 27.
- , known as Mac William Jaghter: 878 (n) *b*.
- , known as Earl (Marquis) of Mayo: 878 (n) *b*, 884 (n), 1031 (n) *b*.  
*See also* CLANRICKARD, Earl of.
- Busciera: 2202 (n) *b*.
- BUSQUOY (Bucquoy), Count de: 240 (n), 2109; correspondence with Secretary of the Audience, 1836-7, 1839-41.
- BUTLER (Botler, Botlero, Bulter, Butelar, Buteler, Butiler, Butilier, Butlerin, Butlero, Butler, Vuteler): Anthony (En): gt, 2356.
- Edmond (Sgt): gt, 1457.
- Edmund (Captn): 826, 829; dead, 1434.
- Edward (Captn): 2338, 2729, 2795. ppt, 1705.
- Edward (Captn), nephew of Marquis of Ormonde: 2320; gt, 2332; 2356; Ice, 2371; gt to co, 2375; Ice, 2442, 2533.
- Edward (Captn): 2398, 2729, 2795.
- Eleanor, sister of Marquis of Ormonde, wife of Viscount Muskerry: 2194 (n), 2309 (n).
- Gaspar (Lt Col): gt, 2010.
- James: gt, 240.
- James (Captn): Ice, 2549; ppt, 2559; 2605.
- James, 12th Earl of Ormonde, *see* ORMONDE.
- John: gt, 61; 212 [a].
- John (Lte), chaplain: pay, 1788.
- John (Col): to raise 3000 for Irish regt, 1571; 1575-6, 1578-9; 1582-4; seeks licence to recruit, 1591; authorised to raise 1000 by Charles I, 1687 (n) *e f*; agreement with Alonso de Cardenas as to conditions, 1751; petitions Charles I against stoppage of recruiting, 1774 (n) *a*; 1780 (n) *c, d*; 1805 (n) *d*.
- Peter (Captn): alleges unjust imprisonment, 1024; made Captn, 1905; dead, 2032.
- Peter (Captn): 2320; gt, 2379; Ice, 2429.
- Peter (Lt): ppt, 2675.
- Pierce Duff (En): A 27.
- Richard (Captn, Col), son of Viscount Mountgarret: offers to recruit, 1170; 1209; Ice, to recruit, 1277, 1369; 1391, 1523, 1654, 2201 (n) *a*, A 27.
- Stephen (Captn): A 27.
- Theobald (En, Captn): ppt, 1848; gt, 2156; Ice, England, 2449; ppt, Germany, 2621; A 27.
- Thomas, 10th Earl of Ormonde, *see* ORMONDE.
- Thomas: gt, 3, 6, 63.
- Thomas (Captn, Col): commd Col, 1290; 1560; authorised by Charles I to take 500 Irish recruits, 1687 (n) *f*; 1780 (n) *d*, A 27.
- Thomas (En): A 27.
- Walter (Col): 2019 (n) *c*, A 27; Ice, 2400.
- Walter (En), of Shanballyduffy: A 27.
- Walter: pn, 184 (n); gt, 210, 252, 316, 326 [g]; Ice, 279, 316; to be paid for time of imprisonment, 1119.
- William (Sgt): gt, 2369.
- William (Capt, Major): Ice, 1173; commd, to recruit, 1294; arrested, Alonso de Cardenas intervenes in his favour, 1601; to be trsfed,



- 1602-3; transfer cancelled, 1604;  
1706, 1725, 1784 (n); gt, 2269,  
2297; 2269 (n); lce, Spain, 2270;  
2288; A 18, A 27.  
—, 'Baron Butler': dead, 2716.  
—, 'Baroness Butler': gt, 2716.
- C
- CABELLUS, *see* MAC CAUGHWELL.  
CABLET, Daniel: lce, 113.  
CADEL, William: gt, 16.  
Cadiz: 987 (n) b.  
Caen: 1965 (n).  
CAFERLIN, James: gt, 2712.  
CAFFE, Denis de: lce, Brussels, 1785.  
Caffersconce: 403 (n) b.  
CAFFOYR, Lt —: 72 (n) a.  
CAGLANO, *see* COGHLAN.  
CAHA, *see* O CAHAN.  
CAHALAN, *see* CALLAGHAN.  
CAHIL (Ocahil):  
Daniel (Sgt): ppt, 2480.  
Hubert (Lte), chaplain: 2209.  
Cahir Castle: 2019 (n) c.  
Calais: 338 (n), 965, 1188 (n), 1349.  
CALAN, *see* CALLAGHAN.  
CALARETA, *see* GALARRETA.  
CALECHAN, *see* CALLAGHAN.  
CALEN, *see* CAMPBELL.  
CALINGEN, *see* CALLAGHAN.  
CALLAGHAN (Cahalan, Calahan, Calan,  
Calechan, Calingen, Callagan, O  
Calaghane, Ocalan, O Kalechane):  
Arturo (Adj): 1861.  
Cajetan (Lte), chaplain: *to* Spanish  
infantry, 1476; 1580-1; *to* Irish  
infantry, pay, 1674.  
Charles (En): 2235.  
Daniel (Lt): gt, 2381.  
Denis: gt, 168.  
Donnogh, of Clonmeen: A 27.  
John (Lte), chaplain: gt, 1544;  
trsf, 1858; lce, Spain, 2606.  
Malachy (Capt): 2122; gt, 2132;  
2240.  
Walter (Capt): gt, 1796-7, 1799,  
2004.  
CAMBRAI, Abp of: 656.  
Cambrai: 180, 314, 341, 345, 357, 368,  
373, 378, 384, 459, 463, 570, 911,  
915, 1424-8, 1430-8, 2798, 2826.  
CAMILLO, John: gt, A 1.  
CAMPBELL (na Calen, Can Bel):  
Archibald (Col), Duke of Argyle:  
795 [b], 866, 866 (n), 914, 983 [d].  
Donoch: lce, Scotland, 137.  
John (Capt): 1961-3.  
CAMPI, Carlo: 2116.  
CAMPO LATARO, Col the Marquis de: 834.  
Canary Isles, *see* Isles de Canarie,  
Index II.  
Can Awyle [? Kinawley]: 184 (n).
- CAN BEL, *see* CAMPBELL.  
CANDAL, Fr Miler, O.S.A.: gt, 24;  
ppt, 26.  
Cantabria: 545, 1685, 1755.  
CANTELMO, Andreas: 1629, 1700 [a].  
CANTERBURY, Abp of, *see* ABBOT,  
George.  
Canterbury: 978 (n).  
CANTHON, Oliver: 455.  
CANTOR, Captn Walter: pn, 1422.  
CANTRAINED (Chantrain), Sieur  
(Chevalier) de, *see* BAULDE.  
CANTWELL (Cantel, Cantol, Cantuol,  
Cantuel):  
John (Capt): 2320; gt to co, 2375;  
lce, 2455; lce extended, 2543.  
Pedro: A 7.  
Cape Teelin: 983 [a].  
CARACENA:  
—, Marquis de, Governor of  
Galicia: 325 (n).  
—, Marquis de: 2277 (n), 2528 (n),  
2529 (n) a, 2679 (n); letters *to*  
Philip IV, 2528, 2644-5, 2698;  
letters *from* Philip IV, 2438, 2515,  
2529, 2554, 2667-8, 2702, 2703 [f],  
2725.  
CARBRY, Sgt Patrick: gt, 2666.  
Carbury: A 27 (bis).  
CARDENAS, Alonso de: 1534, 1570,  
1572, 1575, 1591; loan by Spain *to*  
Charles I *to* be contingent on raising  
recruits from Ireland, 1618, 1622;  
will continue recruitments from  
Ireland, 1693; 1713, 1719-20; recruit-  
ment agreements with Col John  
Butler and others, 1751; 1764, 1772-  
4, 1779-80, 1780 (n) c; Col John  
Murphy *to* form Irish regt, 1904;  
negotiations with Marquis of Or-  
monde, 1967; English Parliament  
offer him prisoners as levies for  
Spain, 1971; 1997, 2027 (n) c, 2029,  
2036 [c], 2041, 2062, 2110-11, 2147;  
sends Chancellor Hyde's views as *to*  
Irish troops serving in France, 2153;  
Don John of Austria's views on same  
subject, 2157; leaves England for  
Flanders, refused interview by Crom-  
well, 2163, 2163 (n); his recruiting  
arrangements in Ireland vetoed by  
English Parliament, A 19, A 20;  
asks for release of Hugo O'Neill from  
Tower, A 26.  
Letters *to* Marquis de Castel  
Rodrigo, 1866; *to* Council of State,  
2074 (n); *to* Don Ferdinand, 1539,  
1545, 1575, 1577-8, 1601, 1626, 1630,  
1633, 1635, 1669-70, 1687, 1753,  
1760-1, 1763, 1769, 1778, 1783; *to*  
Miguel de Salamanca, 1582-3, 1589,  
1690, 1698, 1707, 1714, 1739, 1766,  
1775; *to* Parliament of England,  
1861 (n) a.



- Letters *from* Earl of Craford, 1968 (n); *from* Don Ferdinand, 1347, 1530, 1571, 1573-4, 1576, 1590, 1738, 1755; *from* Col Richard Plunket, 1768; *from* Col George Porter, 1767; *from* Miguel de Salamanca, 1579.
- CARDILLIO, Philip, chaplain: pay, 635.
- CAREW (Carey):  
 Sir George, President of Munster, 1600-03, d. 1629: 574 (n); letters *to* Earl of Salisbury, 80 (n) *b*; *to* Privy Council, 80 (n) *d*; *to* Sir Thomas Roe, 613 (n).  
 Robert (Capt): 1503.  
*See also* CARY.
- CARIA, Fr Matheu de: his letter *to* Earl of Tyrone cited, 80 (n) *f*.
- Caribes, The: 2063 (n) *c*, 2103 (n).
- CARILLO, Col Antonio: 2586.
- CARLETON, Sir Dudley: letter *to* Sir William Trumbull, 575 (n) *a*; letters *from* Dr Robert Chamberlain, 747 (n) *a*, *c*; letter *from* — Locke, 747 (n) *b*.
- CARLINGFORD, Earl of, *see* TAAFFE, Col Theobald.
- Carlingford: 610 (n).
- CARLON, *see* GERON.
- CARLOS, Don, *see* COLONNA, Prince Don Carlos.
- Carlow: 2641 (n).
- CARLY, Captn Theodore (Thadeus): 2064, 2069; lce Spa and Aix-la-Chapelle 2567.
- CARME, En Simon: lce, 2407.
- CARNEY, *see* KEARNY.
- CARON, *see* CHARON.
- CARR (Car):  
 George (Capt): 1265, 1467; gt, 1490.  
 Robert, *see* ROCHESTER, Viscount.
- CARRERO, Captn Robert: 1444, 1469.
- CARRI, Cari, *see* MAC CARTHY; *see* CARVE.
- Carrick: A 27 (*bis*).
- Carrickeouquis: A 27.
- Carrick fergus (Knock fergus): 780 (n), 1687 (n) *c*, A 21.
- Carrick-on-Shannon (Drumrusk): 2223 (n), 2653 (n).
- CARRIGCONLLI, Baron of: 120.
- CARROLL (Caral, Carol, Carolan, Caroll, Corolano, Kerrel, O Carrole, Ocharula, Ocelarl, Quarol):  
 John (Lt, Capt): gt, 2381; lce, 2435; A 27.  
 Patrick (Sgt, Adj): gt, 2379, 2603.  
 Patrick: gt, 326 [h], A 7.  
 Pedro: A 7.  
 Richard: gt, 52 [c].  
 Teige (En): A 27.  
 Teige (Capt): A 27.  
 Thomas: 47 (n) *b*.  
 Thurlough (Lt): A 27.  
 William (En): A 27.
- CARTAN, Henry: 1372 (n), 1728 (n) *b*, 1779 (n), 1784 (n), 1792 (n) *d*.
- CARTHIE, Carthy, Carti, Cartye, *see* MAC CARTHY.
- CARVAYAL, Captn Matheo de: 1183.
- CARVE (Cario, Carri), Captn Rosse: lce, 1249, 1334; 1318, 1321, 1341.
- CARVILLAN, Patrick: A 16.
- CARY, Patrick: lce, Spain, 1816.  
*See also* CAREW.
- CASCAR, Col William: 2368.
- CASEY (Cassi, Cassy, Ocase, Ocasse):  
 Dermot (Sgt): 2148.  
 John: gt, 326 [h].  
 John (Lt Col): lce, 2397; A 27.  
 Nil (Lt): gt, 2368.
- CASHEL, Abp of, *see* KEARNEY, David; OHURLY, Dermot.
- CASNI, En Patrick: 2703 [a].
- Cassel: 807.
- CASSIDI, Hugh, surgeon: pay, 2401.
- CASSIN, Lt John: A 27.
- CASSY, Cassi, *see* CASEY.
- Castaloe, *see* Costello.
- CASTANAGA, Marquis de, *see* D'AGURTO.
- CASTEBRAN (Castebrryn, Castebrryen), *see* O REILLY, Captn Charles; O REILLY, En Hugh.
- Castel RODRIGO, Manuel de Moura Cortereal, Marquis de, Governor of the Low Countries (1644-47): supplies munitions for Irish insurrection, 1863 (n) *a*; 1868; authorises payment to Madame Preston, 1952, 1952 (n); 2013, 2277 (n); letters *to* Don Ferdinand, 1529; *to* Philip IV, 1862-5, 1869, 1879, 1884, 1907, 1967; letters *from* Alonso de Cardenas, 1866; *from* Philip IV, 1867, 1877-8, 1880, 1882, 1892, 1897-8, 1903.
- Castile: 946, A 10, A 19 (8).  
*See also* INDEX II.
- CASTLE CONNELL, Lord: A 27.
- Castledoe: 1818 (n).
- CASTLEHAVEN, Lord: 1848 (n) *d*, 2051 (n), 2107, 2201 (n) *a*, 2277 (n), 2413 (n) *b*.
- Castlehaven: 265 (n) *a*.
- Castlekeale: A 27.
- CASTLELEVI, Col George de: 1734, 1789, 1833.
- Castle Martin: 272 (n).
- CASTLEMENDE, Col Count de: 2091.
- CASTRO, Count Francisco de, Spanish Ambassador: 575 (n) *b*, 581, 589; letter *from* Philip III, 587 (n).
- Catalonia: 1527 (n) *e*, 1877, 2014, 2023 (n), 2058 (n) *c*, 2116 (n) *b*, 2157 [b], 2157 (n) *a*, 2160, 2203, 2222, 2253 (n) *a*, 2602, 2623, 2653, 2686 (n), 2761, 2781, 2821, 2832, A 19 (5).
- CATHARINE of Aragon, Queen, d. 1536: 618 [d].



- CATIVEL, Capt'n Walter: lce, 1487.
- CAUDRE, George: gt, A 1.
- CAULFIELD, Sir Toby (Lord): 571 (n) *b*, 996 (n).
- CAUS, Capt'n Henry: gt, 1920; 1924; gt to co, 1950.
- CAUSTELAN, *see* COSTELLO.
- Cavan: A 27 (*bis*).
- CAVANAGH (Cavan, Cavanac, Cavanacq, Cavanca, Cavanola, Cavenole, Kevenagh, Kevvanagh):  
 Arturo (Capt'n): 2641, 2641 (n).  
 Bernard (Capt'n): 2319; gt, 2588, 2724; trsf'd, 2751; lce, England, 2756; lce, 2778.  
 Daniel: 2641 (n).  
 Griffin (Capt'n): 47 (n) *b*, 1444, 1469, 1506; gt, 1518; lce, 1558; 1784 (n).  
 James (Capt'n): lce, Germany, 1399.  
 John Geraldin *alias* Geraldin (Capt'n): trsf'd, 2757; lce, Milan, 2816.  
 Morgan: lce, 59.  
 Thomas (Capt'n): 2144; pay, 2275.
- CAVELL, Cavello, Cavellus, *see* MAC CAUGHWELL.
- CAYRO, Capt'n Lucas, 119.
- CECIL:  
 Sir Robert, *see* Salisbury, Earl of.  
 Sir William, *see* Burghley, Lord.
- Celtabar: A 27.
- CENIS, Adj't Henry: 2703 [c].
- CERBAN, Maurice: gt, 1174.
- CERRALVO, Marchioness of: 1618 [c].
- CHAIN, Bartholomew: lce, 1815.
- CHALET, Capt'n John: lce, 2099.
- CHALLENGER, John: gt, A 1.
- CHAMBERLAIN (Chamberlino, Chamberlyn), Dr Robert: 272 (n); lce, Spain, 324; 327 (n) *d*; gt, 349; letters to Sir Dudley Carleton, 747 (n) *a, c*; A 2.
- CHAMBRIS, William: gt, A 1.
- Champagne: 2770.
- CHANTRAIN, Chevalier de, *see* BAULDE.
- CHARASIO, —, doctor: pay, 1298.
- Charlemont: 1818 (n).
- CHARLES I, King of England (1625-49): 1229, 1527 (n) *f*; desires nothing more than long war between France and Spain, 1539; letter from Sir Thomas Wentworth, 1539 (n); loan from Spain mooted, 1572; 1575-6; would ally with Spain and break with Dutch, 1618 [a]; authorises Irish recruiting, 1618 [b], 1622; loan from Spain again discussed, 1618 [f]; disbands Irish force raised to fight Scots, 1687 (n) *e*; agrees to further Irish Levies, 1687 (n) *f*, 1714; his reasons for putting stay on recruiting, A 19.  
*See also* Recruiting.
- CHARLES II, King of England (1660-85):  
*Before accession.*  
 Proposed marriage with Infanta Maria, 840, 859 (n), 948 (n), 968; 2105 (n) *b*; treaty with Don John of Austria, 2147; 2153; his incognito desirable, 2157 [c]; meets Duke of York at Bruges, 2157 (n) *a*; prefers Flanders to Cologne, 2163; 2166 (n), 2186 (n) *b*, 2195 (n) *b*, 2196 (n); his orders to Col Donough Mac Carthy concerning fees for commissions, 2198 (n); 2201, 2201 (n) *b*, 2202 (n) *a*, 2205, 2220 (n), 2244-5, 2262 (n), 2267, 2277 (n), 2288, 2296, 2299, 2302-3, 2309, 2309 (n), 2457.  
*See also* Recruiting.  
*After accession.*  
 2520, 2528, 2528 (n), 2532; petition of Captain Walter Hope, 2552 (n) *a*; of Col Pierce Walsh, 2552 (n) *b*; 2596, 2622-3, 2667; troops released by him to be made Col Farrell's regt, 2679 (n), 2709 (n) *b*; 2732, 2740, 2838 [7]; gives permission to Sir Thomas Nugent to raise volunteers for Spain, 2841 (n) *b*; 2844; A 9; declaration for settlement of his kingdom of Ireland, A 27.
- CHARLES II, King of Spain (1665-1700): letter to Duke de Villa Hermosa, 2821; authority for money grants, 2829-31, 2840, 2848, 2850; letter to Alexander Farnese fixing establishment of Army in Low Countries, 2833; 2841 (n) *b*; letter from Marquis de Grana, 2842; letters to the Council of Finances, 2843, 2852; letters to Marquis de Castanaga, 2844-6; letter to Maxmilian di Wittelsbach, 2851.
- CHARLES III, King of France, *see* Charles, Duke of LORRAINE.
- Charleville: 2780.
- CHARON (Caron):  
 Raymund O.S.F.: ppt, 2034, 2113.  
 —: 320 [d].
- Chastelet: 2353.
- CHAY, *see* SHEA.
- CHEAM, Capt'n —: 1052.
- Chelsea: 1526-7.
- CHERNE, Patrick: gt, 54.
- CHERENSI, James: lce, Scotland, 360.
- CHERREL, Richard: gt, 33.
- Chester: 8 (n) *l*, 1767, 2074 (n).
- CHICHESTER:  
 Sir Arthur (Baron Chichester of Belfast), Lord Deputy 1604-16: letters to Earl of Salisbury, 271 (n) *a*, 326 (n) *a*, 610 (n) *passim*; letter from Sir Humphrey May, 579 (n) *a*; letters from Sir Ralph Winwood, 579 (n) *b*, 585 (n).  
 Sir Arthur, Lord Chichester: petition from Daniel Mac Carthy, 1129 (n).  
 Chocques, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.



- CHODY, *see* CODY.  
 CHORTAL, *see* SCHORTALL.  
 CHUARRE, William: gt, 52 [a].  
 CIARNA, John: gt, 171 [c].  
 CLAHERTY, *see* O FLAHERTY.  
 CIRIZA, Juan de, Secretary of State: 580, 605.  
 Clanboren: A 27.  
 CLANCARTY, Earl, Countess of, *see* MAC CARTHY.  
 CLANCY (Clanchi, Clanchy, Clanci, Clansi, Glanchi, Oclanichi):  
 Daniel (Lte): letter of commendation to Philip III, 687; lce, Rome, 695; gt, 771, 860, 957.  
 Daniel, *see* MAHON, Elena.  
 Dermot: lce, 399.  
 Dermot (Denis) (Col): ppt, Brussels, 2210; lce, 2222.  
 Hugh (Sgt): lce, 1302.  
 Marguerite: gt, 2619.  
 Moriarto (Capt): gt, 2353; lce, 2409; 2447, A 27.  
 CLANDONALDS, The: 1539 (n).  
 CLANMORRIS, Baron, *see* MOY, Abbot of.  
 CLANRICKARD (Clanricard):  
 Richard de Burgh, Earl of, 60 (n).  
 Richard de Burgh, 3rd Earl of: 304 (n) *e*.  
 Ulick de Burgh, 5th Earl of, A 25.  
 Ulick de Burgh, 6th Earl of: A 27.  
 CLARAMBON, Col —, Seigneur of Merna: 452.  
 CLARAMONT (e), Captn John de: 57, 63, 77, 92, 106, 116.  
 CLARE, Earl of: letter to Duke of Buckingham, 873 (n) o; letter from Earl of Cork, *ibid*; his offer to raise regt in Ireland, 2821.  
 Clare: 948 (n), 2025 (n), A 27 *passim*.  
 Clare Castle: 2269 (n), 2306 (n).  
 Clare Island: 2046 (n) a.  
 CLAUSEN (Clussen), Col William Renier van der: 2215, 2235, 2638.  
 CLEMENT VIII, Pope (1592–1605): 108 (n).  
 CLENTON, Lt Patrick: A 27.  
 Clermont: 2162 (n) a.  
 CLERQUE (Clerq):  
 Henry: 627.  
 Thomas: lce, 291.  
 CLERY (Clery, de Cleri, Oclery):  
 Cormac: gt, 326 [h].  
 Cornelius (Sgt): gt, 1676.  
 Denis (Fr), chaplain: gt, 1682.  
 Florence: gt, 707, 775.  
 Nicholas: ppt, 1820.  
 Thadeus: gt, 743.  
 William: ppt, 1819.  
 CLEJNI, Patrick: gt, A 1.  
 Cloghane: A 27.  
 CLOGHER, Bishop of: 1970 [b].  
 Clogher: 403 (n) b.  
 Clonaloe: 587.  
 Cloncalaih: A 27.  
 Clongowes Wood: 878 (n) c.  
 Clonleage: 403 (n) b.  
 Clonmeen: A 27.  
 Clonmel: 184 (n), 873 (n) k, 1525 (n).  
 CLOSSEN, Sgt Patrick: lce, to recruit, 1731.  
 Cloughoughter: 2264 (n).  
 Clunmore: A 27.  
 CLUSSEN, *see* CLAUSEN.  
 COBRAANT, Col —: 2000.  
 CODY (Chody):  
 Remundo (Sgt): gt, 2126.  
 Richard (En): A 27.  
 CODRINGTON, Edward: gt, 48.  
 COESTLAN, *see* COGHLAN.  
 COFFLOY, William: lce, 560.  
 COGHLAN (Caglano, Coestlan, Coghlane, Coghano, Coglan, Coglono, Corglan, Coxglan, Goghan, Mac Coghlan, Machoglan):  
 Arturo (Lte): dead, 2252.  
 Charles (Lt): gt, 2381.  
 Constantine: gt, 2669.  
 Francis (Capt): 2064, 2072; lce, England, 2301, 2305, 2456, 2485, 2534, 2551; 2669, A 27.  
 John (En): 326 [c], 1724.  
 Lawrence (Adj): 2735.  
 Moriarty, Maurus (Capt): 2084, 2100, 2127; gt, 2131; 2133.  
 Symon (Lt): A 27.  
 Terence (Capt): 2064; dead, 2072.  
 COHAL, Captn Thomas: 1921.  
 COHANO, Gerard, chaplain: pay, 953.  
 COKE (Cooke), Sir John: letter to Sir Thomas Wentworth, 1346 (n); complains as to behaviour of Irish officers in London, 1455; letters from Sir Thomas Wentworth, 1525 (n), 1569 (n) b.  
 COLAN, *see* COLLIN.  
 COLARUVIAS, Col Diego de: 2796.  
 COLE, Sir William: 1728 (n) a.  
 COLEPAPER, Sir Jo., member of Parliament: A 20.  
 Coleraine: 780 (n), A 21.  
 COLGAN, Fr John, O.F.M.: 1804 (n) b; letter to Fr Luke Wadding, A 21; A 22.  
 Colley: 184 (n).  
 COLLIER, William, *see* FLENNE.  
 COLLIN (Colan, Colin):  
 James: gt, A 1.  
 John: gt, 1390.  
 Murgan, surgeon: gt, 214.  
 P. (Col): 2358, 2674.  
 Patrick: gt, A 1.  
 Patrick: ppt, 2476.  
 COLMAN:  
 Agnes, daughter of John, *infra*: pn, 1343 [d].  
 John: lce, Spain, 85; gt, 219.  
 John, son of John, *supra*: pn, 1343 [d].



- Susana, daughter of John, *supra*:  
pn, 1343 [d].
- COLOGNE, Elector of: 1877 [f].
- Cologne: 8 (n) o, p, 1527 (n) a, 2122 (n) a, 2163, 2630, 2672.
- COLOMA, Pedro: 1867.
- COLONNA, Prince Don Carlos, bro. of Philip III: proposal that he be King of Ireland, 618 [e]; 873, 876; letter to Philip IV, 877; 1034; visit to England, 1064, 1085.
- Colony: A 27.
- COLUMBANUS, Fr —, Discalced Carmelite: petition to Philip IV, 1039.
- COMERFORD (Comerfort, Commesfort, Cummerford):  
Edmond: trsfed, 1718.  
James (Lt): A 27.  
John (Capt): 1432; pay, 1486; trsfed, 1695; lce, Spain, 1793.  
Nicholas (Lte), S.J., chaplain: pay, 1493; 1586; letter to Fr Florence de Grauenbroeck, S.J., 1593; 1607; trsfed, 1890; trsfed, 2000; trsfed, 2340.
- COMONIO, Bernard, chaplain: pay, 836.
- COMYN (Coman, Comant, Comin, Comine, Commin):  
Andrew (Capt): ppt, Spain, 2489; 2703 [j].  
Edmond: gt, 679, 701; A 7.  
Francis (En): gt, 2604.  
John: lce, 2601.  
Moriarty: pay, 2590.
- CONDÉ, Prince of: 1970 (n) b, 2051 (n), 2057, 2063 (n) a, b; siege of Arras, 2105 (n) b, 2107-9; 2168; 2224 (n), 2282, 2314, 2315 (n), 2318 (n), 2341, 2345, 2354, 2359-60, 2370, 2380-1, 2384-6, 2388, 2394, 2413 (n) b, 2427-8, 2433, 2446-7, 2458-60, 2464, 2468, 2470, 2475, 2478-80, 2483, 2486, 2489-91, 2499, 2505-6, 2514, 2516, 2549, 2596.
- Condé: 2106, 2149-52, 2154-63, 2163 (n).
- CONDON:  
Leonora, orphan of William, *infra*:  
pn, 1343 [k].  
William, *see* Leonora, *supra*.  
Geraldo: A 7.
- CONELAN, Sgt Moriarto: ppt, 2686.
- CONER, *see* O CONOR.
- CONFIN, Deincio: gt, 1661.
- CONNAUGHT, Lower, Baron of (Hugh O'Donnell): A 12.
- Connaught: 65 (n) a, 184 (n), 272 (n), 325 (n), 983 [a], 1707 (n), 2046 (n) a, 2168 (n), 2245 (n), 2262 (n), 2552 (n) a, A 12, A 25.
- CONNALLY (Conaly, Kanely, Kanly):  
Arnold, chaplain: 2796.  
Benicio (En): gt, 2369.  
Bernard: lce, Spain, 2199.  
Maurice (Lt): gt, 2369.
- CONNELL, *see* O CONNELL.
- CONNIO, John: lce, 570.
- CONOR, *see* O CONOR.
- CONRAGAN, Sgt Eugenio: gt, 1916.
- CONRAN, Patrick: gt, 326 [a].
- CONRRAD, Art: lce, 118.
- CONRY (Connryo, Conrie, Conrrio, Conryo, O Conrrey, O Maolconaire):  
Florence (Flaithri), O.F.M., Irish Provincial 1606, Abp of Tuam 1609, d. 1629: 286 (n), 290 (n) c, 307 (n) a, f, g, 325 (n), 326 (n), 419 (n), 429 (n) a, 616, 877 [c]; letter from Secretary of Audience, 964; 966; leaving Louvain for Spain, 968-9, 969 (n) a, b; 982; plan for invasion of Ireland, 983 [a], 986-7, 990-1, 995; A 6.  
John: gt, 373.  
Tully (Tullio, Julio, Julius): lce, 282; doctor to English regt of Col Reresby, 1151; doctor to Spanish regt of Col de Guevara, 1162; doctor to regt of Col Eugenio O'Neill, 1414.
- CONSIDIN (Conseden):  
Anna ni, widow of Donah Helly: pn, 1343 [i].  
Dermott (Capt): 1784 (n).
- CONSTANTINE (Constantino): Capt'n Denis (Dermot): 1553, 1555, 1661, 1722, 1724; pay, 1921; 1949.
- CONWAY (Conuuy): Sir Edward: letter from Sir Francis Annesley, 873 (n) b; letter from Edward Eustace, 878 (n) a; letter from Viscount Falkland, 873 (n) i.  
Patricio: A 7.
- COOTE:  
Sir Charles: mentions intended Spanish invasion of Ireland, 873 (n) d; authorised to facilitate transport of Irish troops out of Connaught, 2046 (n) a.  
Richard: 2046 (n) a.
- COPPINGER (Copinger):  
Gaspar: lce, 508.  
James, of Cloghane: A 27.  
John: ppt, 1644.  
Thomas: lce, 119.
- CORBAN, Mauricio: gt, 928.
- Corbie: 1562.
- Corck Quinzal, *see* Kinsale.
- CORCOROM, John, chaplain: lce, 636.
- CORDOVA (Cordova y Argote):  
Andrés de, O.S.A.: gt, 22.  
Antonio de (Capt): 2500.  
Gonzalo Fernandez de: 1213.
- Corduff: 67 (n) b.
- COREAM, Nicholas: gt, A 1.
- CORGLAN, *see* COGHLAN.
- CORK:  
Bp. of: 1031 (n) b.  
Earl of, *see* Boyle, Richard.



- CORK: 184 (n), 338 (n), 599 (n), 2194 (n),  
A 27, *passim*.
- CORNELIS, Thadeus: gt, 1662.
- CORNWALL: 156 (n).
- COROLANO, *see* CARROLL.
- COUR: A 27.
- CORTAL, *see* SCHORTALL.
- CORUNNA: 80 (n) *f*, 356, 496, 1720 [a],  
2623.
- COSTELLO (Caustelan, Costelo, De  
Castello):  
Dudley (Lt Col): raises regt of 653  
Irishmen, 2046, 2046 (n) *a*; commd  
Col, 2047; lce, 2061; gt, 2248;  
2254; lce, 2416; lce, England,  
2507, 2548.  
Roderick (Capt): pay, 2472.  
Walter (Lt): A 27.  
William (Capt): gt, 2283; lce, 2415.
- Costello (Castaloe), barony of: 2223 (n).
- COSUN, Elena ni, widow of Capt James  
Garland: pn, 1343 [i].
- COTERA, Col O de: 1795.
- COTTINGTON, —: 1687.
- COUPIGNY, Count de: orders (Army):  
1046.
- COURTOWN, Baron of, *see* GRACE,  
Robert.
- Courtrai: 1746, 1983, 2171 (n) *a*.
- COVERT, Capt Humphrey: letter to  
Earl of Salisbury, 81 (n).
- COWELL, George: 8 (n) *z*.
- COX (?), En Thadeus: 2703 [e].
- COXGLAN, *see* COGHLAN.
- CRAFURD (Crawford), Ludovic, Earl of:  
letter to Alonso de Cardenas, 1968 (n).
- CRAGH, CRAH, *see* MAGRATH.
- CRANBOURNE, Viscount: letter from  
Sir John Davys, 127 (n).
- CRAVART, David: lce, England, 542.
- CREAGH (Creach, Creaghe, Cregh,  
Criach, Greagh), Capt Charles:  
2016, 2104, 2300, 2355; erroneously  
reported dead, gt, 2432; lce, Spain,  
2448; lce not used, 2448 (n), 2471;  
2495.
- Crecy: 46 (n) *b*.
- Credenhead: 1960 (n) *a*.
- Creevagh: A 27.
- CROAK, En Edmond: 2101.
- CROFT (Croft): Lte Maurice, chaplain:  
pay, 1831; tsfd, 1888.
- CROIN, Capt Gaspar: 437.
- CROLLI, *see* CROULLI.
- Crolscamp (Koolskamp): 1019-20.
- CROMWELL:  
Henry: letter from Secretary Thurloe,  
2163 (n).  
Oliver, Lord Protector (1653-58):  
letter from Commissioners of the  
Army in Ireland, 2031 (n) *a*;  
2058 (n) *b*; letter to Commissioners  
agreeing to levy of Irish troops  
for Continent, 2088 (n); 2147,  
2153 [a]; his treaty with France  
obliged French to expel Duke of  
York, 2157 (n) *a*; orders Alonso de  
Cardenas to leave England, 2163  
(n); 2253 (n) *a*, 2413 (n) *b*, 2686 (n).  
Richard, Lord Protector (1658-59):  
2528, 2528 (n).
- CROSBY, Sir Piers (Peirce): letter from  
Ormonde, 1897 (n); Col Eugenio  
O Neill hears he is bringing regt to  
Flanders, A 11.
- CROULY (Crolli, Croyle, Cruli, Cruly):  
Elena, widow of Maurus Mac Swiney:  
pn, 1343 [b].  
Francis (Campaign-Capt): 880.  
John: gt, 54, A 1.  
Thadeus (Qr Master): 1055.
- CUERCK, *see* QUIRK.
- CUIN, *see* QUIN.
- CUINY, Capt Edmond, of Massan-  
glashy: A 27.
- CUL, Sgt Thomas: gt, 1936.
- Culadin: A 27.
- CULLEN (Culenano, Cullan, Cullon,  
O Culan, O Cullaine, O Cullan,  
O Cullen):  
Bernard: gt, 171 [c].  
Donee (En), of Baly Courroy: A 27.  
John (Lte), tutor to Hugh O Donnell:  
646.  
Patrick: gt, 33.  
Poers: 55 (n) *c*.
- TIEGE *alias* Totave (Lt): A 27.  
— (Capt, Col): 1803 (n) *e*; lce,  
2424.
- Culmore: 81 (n).
- CUMERTON (En): A 27.
- CUNIGA (o):  
Diego de: 1067.  
Pierre de, Spanish ambassador: 390,  
623.
- CURTAINE, En Phellim: A 27.
- CUSACK (Cusacke, Cusacq, Cusak,  
Cusaq):  
Andrew: gt, 2712.  
Charles (En): lce, 2841.  
Christopher: petition to Archduke  
Albert, 453.  
George (Col), 'Governor of Inish-  
boffin': transports recruits to  
Flanders, 2046 (n) *a*, *b*; arrested by  
Duke of Lorraine, 2046 (n) *b*,  
2058 (n) *b*; restored to his regt,  
2058 (n) *b*; commd Col, 2145;  
leaves French service, 2145 (n) *b*;  
2149, 2162, 2164-5, 2183, 2239,  
2243, 2246, 2249, 2256, 2271, 2279,  
2294, 2301, 2313, 2329-30, 2332-3,  
2338, 2356, 2362-6, 2373, 2391,  
2393, 2396, 2412, 2419, 2424, 2444,  
2456, 2465, 2467, 2477; lce,  
England, 2484; 2495, 2525, 2561;  
gt, 2562; 2567, 2572-81 *passim*;  
gt, 2582; 2583, 2587, 2597, 2635,



- 2638, 2647, 2661, 2709 (n) *a, b*,  
2752; trsf'd, 2783; 2793-4, 2806,  
2811, 2815; A 27; dead, 2820.
- Geratt: A 16.  
Henry (En): 2794.  
Patrick: gt, 2647.  
Peter (En): gt, 2581.  
Philip: lce, 285.  
Richard (Sgt, Qr master): gt, 2713;  
2731.  
Richard (Capt, Adj't); 2692, 2704,  
2811; lce, 2841.  
Robert (Capt): 2613, 2712-4;  
retired, 2729.  
Sir Thomas: 272 (n).  
Thomas, son of Col George *supra*:  
gt, 2597.  
Thomas, of Carrick: A 27.  
— (Fr), 'president of all the Irish  
colleges': 272 (n).  
—, 'one Cusacke': 271 (n) *c*.  
Cusca: A 27.  
CUSCAR, Col —: 2571.
- D
- DAIRE, Sgt —: 8 (n) *x*.  
DALHUT, *see* Delahyde.  
DALEO, Dally, Dalluy, *see* DALY.  
DAL HEYD, Dal Hut, *see* DELAHYDE.  
DALLACHANTY, Lt Patrick: A 27.  
DALTON (Daltan):  
Alexander (Lt): A 27.  
Ambrose: gt, 1638.  
Miler, chaplain: pay, 1306.  
Miles: lce, 411.  
Morgan: gt, 326 [f].  
Nicholas (Capt): 1638, 1784 (n),  
1940.  
Nicolas: pn, 184 (n).  
Oliver (Capt): lce, Spain, 1402; gt,  
2161.  
Redmund: gt, 158; pn, 184 (n);  
lce, 413.  
Thomas: pn, 184 (n).  
Walter (Capt): gt, 1195; 1312, 1377;  
pn, 1415; lce, Spain, 1466.  
DALY (Daleo, Dali, Dalluy, Dally,  
Odali, Odaly, O Daly, Odoela):  
Anthony (Fr), Irish Franciscan:  
ppt, 2238.  
Charles (Adj't, Capt): letter to  
Infanta Isabella, 493; gt, 759; lce,  
Spain, 938; 1374; dead, 1419;  
1420.  
Cornelius (Sgt): lce, 2408.  
Daniel (Capt): 1123; gt, 1130;  
1161, 1173, 1198, 1202, 1219,  
1225, 1257; lce, 1369; 1438.  
Diego: A 7.  
Dogno: to be paid for time when  
prisoner, 1119.  
Hugh (Capt): 2064.  
Thomas: lce, 300.  
Damm (Dama, Doma): 429 (n) *b*,  
455-6, 2689 [3], A 7.  
DANETO, *see* DAVITT.  
DANFORT, John: gt, A 1.  
DANGAN (Dungan):  
Christopher (Capt): 1444, 1469.  
Marcus (Capt): 1547; dead, 1623.  
Sir William: 2029 (n) *a*.  
Dangan: A 27.  
Dangan Hill: 1965 (n).  
DANIEL, Danly, *see* O DONNELL.  
DANON (Dannan):  
Daire (Capt), of Davanstown: A 27.  
David (Capt): 2296.  
Maria, widow of James d'Estafor:  
pn, 1343 [d].  
DARCY (Darsi, Dercie):  
Gerald (En): 184 (n); gt, 396.  
James, Irish Franciscan: ppt, 2119.  
Sir James (Col): 2163 (n).  
Oliver, Bp of Kilmore: letter *from*  
Ormonde mentioned, 2163 (n).  
William (Capt): 156 (n), 184 (n),  
212 [c], 271 (n) *c*, 281, 302.  
— (Capt): 1804 (n) *c*.  
DARDIS, Sgt Gerald: lce, 936, 1311.  
DARGAN, Capt William: gt, 2712.  
DASMAN, *see* DESMOND.  
DASUNI, Alonso: gt, 258.  
DAUTRY, Capt —: letter to Lord  
Burghley, 52 (n) *c*.  
Davanstown: A 27.  
DAVITT (Daveid, Davet, Daneto,  
Daveto):  
Edmond, "of Quly'n", tutor to  
Hugh O Donnell: 372 (n).  
Eugenio, chaplain: lce, 974; pay,  
858, 1122.  
Hugo: gt, 9.  
DAVINE, *see* DEVIN.  
DAVYS, Sir John: letter to Viscount  
Cranbourne, 127 (n).  
DEINAN, Capt Quirry: gt, 2739.  
DELAHUNTY, *see* DALLACHANTY.  
DELAHYDE (Dal Heyd, Dal Hut, De la  
Heyd, De la Hid, De la Hoid, De la  
Hoid, De la Hoit, De la Hoyd, De  
la Hoyt, De la Hoyte, De laid, De  
Laoyd, Del Hay, Deoyd, Hid, Hide,  
Hoid, Hoyd, Hoydt, La Loyd):  
Denis (Capt): 1657.  
George (Capt): gt, 242; 271 (n) *c*;  
lce, Spain, 615; gt, 705; 736; gt to  
co, 737; 742, 821, 831, 835, 837,  
841, A 5 (n).  
James (Col): gt, 2146; trsf'd, *ibid*; 2251.  
John, chaplain: gt, 365.  
Lawrence: 272 (n).  
Matthew: lce, 274, 415. *See also*  
Michael, *infra*.  
Michael (Matthew) (Capt): 1887,  
1915; gt, 1921; 1928-9; gt, 1945;  
gt to co, 1950.



- Richard (Capt): 2064; lce, 2658; 2659, 2666.  
*See also* VILLAVICIOSA, Cecilia de.
- Roderick (En): 921.
- Stephen (Capt): gt, 1418; 1736, 1784 (n), 1884; dead, 1887.
- Walter (Capt), son of Lawrence, *supra*: 272, 272 (n), 274, 276, 283, 289, 293-4; willing to serve English interests, 313 (n) *a*; letter to Salisbury expressing such willingness, A 5; letter from Sir William Trumbull, A 5 (n); 318, 326 [f], 354, 392; gt, 396, 535; lce, Spain, 637; 640; letter from Infanta Isabella commending him to Philip IV, 764; gt, 766; 777, 777 (n), 788, 791-2, 835, 878 (n) *b*, 921, 1136-7, 1187, 1270, 1343 [f] [k], 1369, 1398, 1418, 1478, 1513-4, 1531, 1542-3, 1580-1, 1602-4; gt, 1646, 1664; trsfid, 1885; A 18.
- DEL REANO, *see* MULRIAN.
- DELVIN, Lord of, *see* NUGENT.
- DEMPSY (Demsí, Dempši, Dempssi, Demptsi, Deinsi, Denpsy, Densi, Deymse, O Demy, Odensy, Odense, Odensi, Odiomsa, Odionsi):  
 Cary (Capt): 2320; gt to co, 2375; 2591, 2599.  
 Daniel (En, Adj, Capt, Major): 1919, 2098, 2152, 2744, 2749, 2753, 2766, 2768.  
 Denis (En, Capt, Col): 1861; gt, 1941; lce, England, 2539; 2553, 2591-2, 2603.  
 Darby (En): lce, 83; gt, 111; 111 (n) *a*.  
 Dermot (Capt): gt, 1921; 1925, 1937; gt, 1954; 2064, 2086, 2088.  
*See also* LICUREZ, Anna de.
- James (Capt, Col): 2105 (n) *b*, 2318, 2318 (n), 2320, 2322-6, 2341, 2372, 2375-6, 2378-9, 2382-3, 2401, 2404, 2406, 2409, 2415-8, 2420-2, 2425-6, 2428-31, 2439, 2442, 2445, 2448, 2450-1, 2455, 2462, 2471, 2473, 2507, 2509, 2518, 2533, 2538-40, 2546, 2556-7, 2563, 2585, 2601, 2706, 2806.  
 John (Sgt): gt, 2088.  
 Mortagh (Capt): 2320; gt to co, 2375.  
 Peter (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2378.  
 Phellem (En): A 27.  
 Roger (En, Capt): gt, 1937, 1955, 2086; 2320; gt, 2379.
- Denain: 1059.
- Dendermonde (Tenremonde, Termonde): 438, 834, 1015-6, 1019, 1021-2, 1477, 1540, 1562, 2148, 2506.
- Dendreuwe, baronnie de, *see* HAEN.
- DENICQUE, En Cornelius: 2703 [i].
- Denmark: 522 (n), 618 [j].
- DENNELLY, Henry (Adj): 2165.
- DENSI, *see* DEMPSY.
- DEOYD, *see* DELAHYDE.
- DERBISIERIS, Robert: gt, A 1.
- DERGANE, Catherine, widow of Cornelius Hallurane: 1580.
- DERMICIO, Dermott, *see* MAC DERMOT.
- DERRY, Bp of, 'an Englishman': ppt, 2015.
- Derry (Londonderry): 81 (n), 610 (n), 780 (n), 873 (n) *g*, 948 (n), 983 [a], 1070 (n) *a, b, A 21*.
- DESMOND (Dasman):  
 Cornelius (Fr), O.S.F., chaplain: 383.  
 Dermont: lce, 393.  
 Earls of, mentioned by Infanta Isabella in letter to Philip IV: 869.  
*See also* Fitz Gerald, James; *see also* Index II.
- Desmond: 184 (n) *passim*.
- DESTE, Capt, Geoffrey, Governor of Weert: letter from Archduke Albert, 445; letter to Secretary Prats, 446.
- Destledonck: 1435, 1861.
- Deventer: 8 (n) *r-u*, 47 (n) *b*, 52 [b] (n).
- DEVERUS (Deverox, Devrus):  
 Guilermo: A 7.  
 Richard: pn, 184 (n).  
 Walter, *see* O DONNELL, Elena.
- DEVIN (Davine):  
 James (Capt): A 27.  
 Patrick (Lt): gt, 2381.
- DEVONSHIRE, Earl of, *see* MOUNTJOY.
- DEYMSE, *see* DEMPSY.
- DEYS, Nicholas, chaplain: pay, 1212.
- DIANO, Capt Ludovico: 2064.
- DIER (Diez):  
 Anthony (En): gt, 1498.  
 Denis (Capt): 1444, 1469, 1498.  
 Robert: gt, 52 [a]; pn, 126 (n) *b*; gt, A 1.
- Diest: 101, 393, 581, 668-9, 828-9, 831, 1044, 1048-50, 1356, A 12, A 13.
- DIGBY (Digbye):  
 Francis (Capt): 2288.  
 George (Col), 2nd Earl of Bristol: 1774 (n); correspondence with Ormonde, 1848 (n) *b, c*, 1954 (n) *a, b*, 1956 (n), 1962 (n), 1965 (n), 1965 (n), 1970 (n) *b*; 1995 (n), 2122 (n) *b*; to command regt for Charles II, 2185; 2195 (n) *b*; 2196; summary of his career, 2196 (n); 2209, 2224 (n), 2245, 2288.  
 Sir John, *afwds* 1st Earl of Bristol: letters from Sir William Trumbull, 459 (n), 472 (n), 481 (n) *b*.
- DILLON (Diloine, Dillon, D'illon):  
 Charles (Col): lce, 2060; 2064, 2064 (n) *a, b*, 2068; lce, to leave Flanders, 2073; 2075.  
 Christopher (Capt): 2064; lce, 2465, 2522.



- Edward (En): A 27.  
 Francis, 'a friar': 2102.  
 George (Fr), O.S.F, brother of Sir James, *infra*: 2225 (n).  
 Gerald (Capt): 2064, 2184; gt, 2661; 2661 (n), A 27.  
 James (Capt, Col), styled Sir James Dillon, Viscount Caustelan, and Viscount Dillon, son of Theobald, Viscount Dillon, *infra*; lce, 1425; contract for Irish recruits with Alonso de Cardenas, 1751; ready to seize Dublin Castle, 1767 (n); protests to Charles I against recruiting hindrances, 1774 (n) a; 1784 (n), 1791; 2064 (n) a, b; to Spain from Ireland with recruits, 2116 (n) b; 2122 (n) a; ppt, 2181; brings co from France, 2225; surrendered fort to Duke of Vendosma, 2225 (n); 2688; A 27.  
 John (Lt): A 27.  
 John (Adj): A 27.  
 John, father of Captn Gerald, *supra*: 2661 (n).  
 Patrick (En): gt, 51; 313 (n) b.  
 Robert (En): A 27.  
 Theobald, Viscount Dillon, father of Sir James, *supra*: 2225 (n).  
 Theobald (Capt): A 27.  
 DINNAGH, Sgt Theodore: lce, 2360.  
 DIVES, —: 2122 (n) b.  
 Dixmude: 8 (n) n, 910, 1014, 1018-21, 1025-6, A 9.  
 DIXON:  
 Edward: lce, 533.  
 James (Sgt): gt, 2208.  
 John (En): gt, 1542; lce, 1559.  
 DOBBINS, Joseph, merchant: 2027 (n) d.  
 DOGORTON, Doharty, *see* O DOHERTY.  
 DOLART, Captn Thomas: 2680.  
 DOLFIN, Richard: lce, 404.  
 DOLLAN, Thomas: gt, 326 [a].  
 DOMARA, Domeara, *see* O MEARA.  
 Donalonge: 403 (n) b.  
 DONE, *see* ODOYNE.  
 Donegal: 403 (n) b, 777 (n), 1782 (n) a.  
 Donegal Bay: 983 [a].  
 DONEGAN, *see* DUNEGAN.  
 DONEL, Donoly, *see* O DONNELL.  
 Donesaide: A 27.  
 Donore: A 27.  
 DONOY, —: A 10.  
 DORGAN (Dongan), Walter (Col): 2596, 2622, 2641.  
 DORMER, Jane, *see* FERIA, Countess de.  
 DOROGHEY, *see* O DOHERTY.  
 Douai: 272 (n), 290 (n) c, 304, 345, 347, 368, 378, 384, 406, 452-4, 459, 481 (n) a, 573, 575-6, 689, 864, 1059, 1163 (n) a, 1606, 1635 (n) a, 1673, 1683 (n), 1732, 1822.  
 DOUDAL (Dudal, Du Dal):  
 Christopher: lce, 626.  
 Francis (En, Capt): 2064, 2070.  
 Henry (En, Adj, Capt): gt, 1913; A 7; 2139; gt, 2272; 2279, 2331; gt, 2333.  
 Laurenso: A 7.  
 Patrick (En): gt, 1913.  
 Ricardo: A 7.  
 DOULEN (Dulin):  
 James: gt, 326 [f].  
 Rou: lce, 546.  
 DOULART, Captn Thomas: 2589.  
 DOUN, *see* ODOYNE.  
 DOVAN (Douvan, Dovano):  
 Malachy: ppt, 2545.  
 Matthew (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2193.  
 Maurice: gt, 183.  
 Dover: 948 (n), 978 (n), 1163 (n) a, b, A 20.  
 DOWDA, Col —: 1070 (n) a, b.  
 Down: 780 (n), A 27.  
 Downes, The: 1753.  
 Drogheda: 67 (n) b, 325 (n), 403 (n) b, 878 (n) d, 2029 (n) b.  
 DROMOGAL, *see* DRUMGUL.  
 DRUT, Col —: 2255.  
 Drumagh: A 27.  
 DRUMGUL (Dromogal), Henry: gt, 326 [c], A 7.  
 Drumrusk, *see* Carrick-on-Shannon.  
 DUAN, Sgt James: gt, 2832.  
 DUARSE, Captn Christopher: 1497.  
 Dublin (Dublin Castle): 184 (n), 271 (n) a-c, 272 (n), 344 (n), 451 (n), 579 (n) a, b, 617, 780 (n), 878 (n) d, 896 [d], 905 [c], 1563 (n), 1687 (n) a, 1751 [a], 1767, 1767 (n), 1768, 1782 (n) c, 1848 (n) b, 1897 (n), 2841 (n) a, A 14, A 14 (n) a, A 21, A 27 *passim*.  
 DUBLIN, Abp of: 878 (n) d.  
*See also* JONES, Thomas; LOFTUS, Adam; MATTHEWS, Eugene.  
 Dudeneameand: 18.  
 DUFF (Duffi):  
 Constantine, chaplain: pay, 1429.  
 James, foster-brother of Captn Patrick Fleming: A 16.  
 Stephen: letter to Lord Chancellor Loftus: 67 (n) b.  
 DUICI, En Patrick: trsf, 2779.  
 DUIL, En Denis: gt, 1501.  
 DUIR, *see* O DWYER.  
 DUIT, Captn Gaspar: 2093.  
 DULANY (Odalani):  
 Dermot (Capt): gt, 2232.  
 William (Capt): A 27.  
 Dulish Murrian: A 27.  
 Dullhally: A 27.  
 DULLY (Duly):  
 James (En): lce, 2499; gt, 2712.  
 Margaret, widow of William Trassi: 1581.  
 Philip (En): lce, 2458.  
 Dully: A 27.  
 DUM, *see* DUNN.



- DU MOULIN, —, French agent: 1891 (n), 1929 (n), 1954 (n) *a, c*, 1956 (n).  
 Dunbogy: A 27.  
 Duncannon: 1960 (n) *a*, 1991.  
 DUNBOYNE:  
   Baron of, his son: 313 (n) *f*.  
   Baron: A 27.  
 Dundalk: 403 (n) *b*.  
 DUNEGAN, Francis: ppt, 2780.  
 DUNES, Prelate of: letter from Secretary of the Audience, 1643.  
 Dunes: 656, 1307, 2591, 2622.  
 DUNGAN, *see* DANGAN.  
 Dungannon (Dungenan): 80 (n) *a*, 304 (n) *e*, 403 (n) *b*.  
 Dunkirk: 325 (n), 429 (n) *b*, 539, 605-7, 656, 878 (n) *d*, 891-2, 894, 897-8, 900-4, 911, 1004, 1064, 1079 [c], 1085, 1087 (n), 1101, 1106-7, 1110, 1118, 1136, 1149, 1188 (n), 1231 (n), 1248, 1349, 1351, 1353-4, 1375, 1387, 1387 (n) *b*, 1527 (n) *a, c*, 1572-4, 1583, 1618 [d] [e], 1684, 1714-5, 1726 [a] [c], 1782, 1798 (n) *c*, 1803 (n) *e*, 1804 (n) *a*, 1818 (n), 1825, 1847, 1859, 1863 (n) *a*, 1877, 1881, 1895 (n) *a*, 2027 (n) *a*, 2029, 2058 (n) *a*, 2094, 2145 (n) *a*, 2212-5, 2213 (n), 2217, 2239, 2393 (n), 2528 (n), 2529 (n) *a, b*, 2554 (n), 2616, 2631-2, 2660-1.  
 Dun Mhuire: 1804 (n) *b*.  
 DUNN (Dum, Dun):  
   James (Sgt): lce, England, 309.  
   John: 94 (n).  
   Teyge: gt, 326 [f].  
 DUNSANY, Baron of: A 27.  
 Dunsoghly: A 27.  
 DU PIN, Seigneur: 1041.  
 DURCAN (Durcano), Maurice, chaplain:  
   pay, 2045, 2529, 2671; lce, 2634, 2671.  
 DU VIVIER, Col —: 2407.  
 DUYGIN, Roger: A 27.  
 DUYR, *see* O DWYER.  
 DUYT (Duye):  
   John (En): lce, 2535.  
   Patrick (En): gt, 2238.  
 DWUIR, *see* O DWYER.
- E
- Edinburgh: 1778 (n) *a*.  
 EDMONDES, Sir Thomas: 320 [a].  
   Letters to Archduke Albert, 416 (n); to Duke of Lorraine, 328 (n) *a*; to Earl of Salisbury, 290 (n) *a-c*, 303 (n) *a*, 305 (n) *a, b*, 306 (n) *a-c*, 307 (n) *a, b, d*, 308 (n) *b, d*, 313 (n) *a*, 320 (n) *a-c*, 327 (n) *a, c*, 328 (n) *b*, 333 (n) *c*, 340 (n) *a*, 344 (n); to Sir William Turnbull, 340 (n) *b*, 419 (n), 435 (n).  
   Letters from Duke of Lorraine, 328 (n) *b*; from Earl of Salisbury, 397 (n); from Sir William Turnbull, 419 (n) *a-d*.  
 EGAN, *see* GEOGHEGAN.  
 EGMONT, Count de: orders from Archduke Albert, 578.  
 Elbelgem: 1079 [a].  
 ELEYOTT, *see* MAC ELLIGOT.  
 ELFORT, Stephen, chief surgeon: gt, 1697.  
 ELIZABETH, Queen of England (1558-1603): 8 (n) *passim*, 47 (n) *b*, 307 344 (n), 587, 617 [c], 795 [a], 970.  
 ELIZABETH, Sister, *see* Veitreyken, Luis.  
 ELMER, Capt'n Garret: 2288.  
 ELPHIN, Bp of: 878 (n) *d*.  
 El Pardo: 333, 616, 863, 986.  
 Elvas: 2358, 2622.  
 EMOLYN, Tibbot: gt, 326 [b].  
 England: *passim*; King of, *see* JAMES I; CHARLES I; CHARLES II; JAMES II; Queen of, *see* ELIZABETH; HENRIETTA MARIA.  
 ENIS, Lt James: A 27.  
 Ennisbuffin, *see* Inishbofin.  
 ENNISKILLEN, Lord: 2036 (n) *c*, 2116 (n) *a*.  
 Enniskillen (Ineskilyn, Inniskelling): 403 (n) *b*, A 27.  
 ENRAT, Thomas: gt, 326 [f].  
 ENRIQUE, Count —: 873.  
 EQUIZIA, Pedro de: 1774.  
 Erdegem: 1079 [a].  
 ERENS, Nicholas, drum-major: 202.  
 ERNEST, Archduke: 57.  
 Erquelens: 1027.  
 Erteralchen, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.  
 ERVIN, William: 491.  
 ESCORZAM, Nicholas: gt, A 1.  
 ESLALIVE, Daniel: 1119.  
 ESMITE, *see* SMITH.  
 ESPINAY, Prince de: 1028, 1059.  
 ESPINOSA, Col Diego Gomez de: 2765, 2782, 2787, 2812.  
 ESSEX, Earl of: 795 [a].  
 Essex: 1447, 1455-6.  
 ESTAFOR, James de, *see* DANON, Maria.  
 Estampuy: 583.  
 ESTANFORT (Stumfort), Capt'n Erasmus: commd, 2834; gt, 2835.  
 ESTANUS, *see* STANIHURST.  
 ESTE, Col the Count de: 2021.  
 Estremadura: 2674, 2781.  
 ETON, —, doctor of civil law: 1618 [d].  
 EUSTACE (Eaistais, Eustachio, Eustas, Yeustas, Eustaz):  
   Alexander (Capt'n): subject of letter from Hugh O'Neill, 111 (n) *b*; 132-3, 136, 140, 151, 184 (n).  
   Christopher: gt, 326 [b].  
   David: 212 [b].  
   Edward (Capt'n): 265 (n) *b*; lce, 293;



- 416 (n); safe conduct, 484; letter to Sir Edward Conway, 878 (n) a; 878 (n) b, c; gt, 1394; 1465.
- James: gt, 48, 141.
- James, of Culadin: A 27.
- Melas (En): gt, 1465.
- Oliver (Capt): 46 (n) b, 72 (n) a, 94 (n).
- (Capt), of Castle Martin, "lately cashiered": 272 (n).
- Patrick (Sgt): 184 (n).
- EVA:
- John, *see* Juan, *infra*.
- Juan, daughter of John, *supra*: pn, 1343 [i].
- EVERARD (Everardo):
- Nicholas, Irish merchant: 964-6.
- Peter: ppt, Germany, 2632.
- Richard: lce, 464.
- (? Sir Redmund): 1863 (n) b, A 27.
- EVERS, —: 271 (n) c.
- Evin (Avesnes?): 2166-7.
- EYCHEN, Charles van der, *see* PRESTON, Madame.
- Eyghendon (Vyghendom), Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- F
- FA (*sic*), Sgt Thadeus: gt, 396.
- FACHINETTI, Cardinal —, Nuncio at Madrid: letter from Cardinal Barberini, 1792 (n) c; letter to Cardinal Barberini, 1774 (n) e.
- FAHAN, Sgt John: lce, 2520.
- FAHY, Nicholas: lce, Spain, 2200.
- FAIRFAX, Sir Thomas: 1895 (n) d.
- FALDEGAN, *see* FALLEGAN.
- Fale: A 27.
- FALI, Con Conoi: gt, 175.
- FALKLAND, Viscount, Lord Deputy 1622-29): 777 (n), 873 (n) l, o, 884 (n); letter to Sir Edward Conway, 873 (n) i; letter from loyal-hearted Papist, 873 (n) f; letter from Sir Thomas Roper, 873 (n) j; letter from Earl of Cork, 873 (n) k, o; abstracts of 4 letters in *Cal. S. P. Ire*, 878 (n) d; letter from Lords Justices concerning Capt Barnewall, 1070 (n) a; letters from Sir Henry de Vic as to Col Eugenio O'Neill's intention to go to Ireland (1642): 1801 (n) c; A 20.
- FALLEGAN (Falagano, Faldegan):
- James, chaplain: pay, 898; lce, 1090. Thomas: gt, 326 [h].
- FALLON (Fallan, Ofallon):
- Andrew (En), of Miltown: A 27.
- Lawrence (Capt): 52 [c].
- Malachy: gt, 264.
- FALVIUS, *see* O FALVY.
- Famars (Frameris?): 2145-6.
- FANNING (Fanin, Faning, Fanino, Fannin):
- James (Capt): lce, 2467.
- Richard (Capt): 1911, 1915; gt to co, 1950; gt, 2143; 2285, 2391; lce, England, 2423.
- (Sgt): hanged, 52 (n) a.
- FARAGH, Viscount de, *see* PRESTON, Col Thomas.
- FARNESE, Alexander, brother of Duke of Parma, Governor of Low Countries (1678-82): letter from Charles II, King of Spain, 2833.
- FARREL (Faral, Farel, Farello, Faril, Farolle, Farrell, Farrol, Feral, Ferall, Ofarel, O Farel, O Farelle, Ofaril, O Farrell, Ofarrell, O Farrol, Oferal, O Feral, Oferil, Oferol, Oferoll, Oferri, Offarel, Offarrelle, Offaril, Oseral):
- Brian (En): 2703 [a].
- Charles (Cahil): 326 [b] [c], A 27.
- Connel (Lt Col), Chevalier: 2245, 2245 (n); petition for payment of arrears, 2262; 2262 (n); payments due, 2554; gt, 2622; lce, England, 2633; to form regt to serve against Portugal, 2679 (n); pay resumed, 2691; 2709 (n) b; gt, 2737; pay, 2746; A 27.
- Daniel: begging-lce, 574.
- Dermot (Sgt): 2216.
- Dermot (Capt): *ibid*.
- Donoch, of Capt O'Neill's co: lce, 353.
- Donoch, of Capt Delahyde's co: lce, Galicia, 354.
- Edmond: gt, 326 [a].
- Eugenio: gt, 1377.
- Faghna (Capt): A 27.
- Fergus (Capt): 2135; gt, 2334; lce, Prague, 2350; lce, destination not stated, 2525.
- Gerald (Capt): 2622, A 27.
- Gerard (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2728.
- Gunes: lce, Spain, 1814.
- James: trsf, 2090, 2760.
- James (Major): 2245.
- James: A 7.
- John (Capt): 2288, 2622, A 27.
- John Mac Rory: gt, A 27.
- Lisach: 2262 (n).
- Louis (Capt, Lt Col, Col): pn, 2168; 2168 (n); 2245, 2245 (n); petition for payment of arrears, 2262; 2262 (n), 2288, 2295, 2475; payts due, 2554; 2622, 2679 (n); pay, 2746; A 27.
- Maurice (Capt): gt, 1195; 1218.
- Patrick: trsf, 2764.
- Richard: lce, 400; gt, 681.
- Richard (Col): 2168, 2262 (n), 2449, 2622, 2703 [a].
- Richard (En): A 27.



- Robert (En): Ice, Spain, 1696.  
 Terence (Major, Col): 2168, 2622,  
 A 27.  
 Thadeus (En): 2135.  
 Thomas: gt, A 1.  
 William (Lte), chaplain: pay, 1006;  
 Ice, 1092.  
 William (Sgt): gt, 2806.  
 — (Sgt): 1807 (n) a.
- FAY, Mortagh: Ice, Rome, 471.  
 FELETER, Feliter, *see* FERRITER.  
 FELICES, *see* TOLMO Y FELICES.  
 FELLY (Feli):  
 Thadeus: 1119.  
 William (En): gt, 1280.
- FELIPE, Edmond: Ice, 529.  
 Feneit: 1033.  
 FENNO, John, chaplain: gt, 12.  
 FENTON, Sir Jeffrey: letter to Earl of  
 Salisbury, 271 (n) a.
- FERAL *see* FARREL.
- FERDINAND (Don Ferdinand), Cardinal  
 Infante, Governor of Low Countries  
 (1634-41): 1372 (n), 1516-7, 1600;  
 appoints Col O'Neill governor of  
 Arras, 1628; 1631, 1640, 1643, 1648,  
 1667, 1685, 1700 [c], 1720 [b], 1721,  
 1752, 1771, 1775, 1777, 1850, 1986,  
 1990.  
 Letters to Council of Brabant,  
 1680; to Alonso de Cardenas, 1347,  
 1530, 1571, 1573-4, 1576, 1590, 1738,  
 1755; to Louis Philip de Guevarra,  
 Guevarra, 1551; to Count d'Isen-  
 bourg, 1616; to Virgilio Malvezzi,  
 1608; to Philip IV, 1345-6, 1350,  
 1356, 1360, 1405, 1538, 1572, 1597,  
 1599, 1609, 1683, 1703, 1719-20,  
 1754, 1779-80; to Miguel de Salam-  
 anca, 1772; to Marquis de Velada,  
 1624; to Count de Villa Mediana,  
 1480, 1517.  
 Letters from Albert Omallun,  
 1596; from Col John Barry, 1447;  
 from Col John Butler, 1591; from  
 Alonso de Cardenas, 1539, 1545,  
 1575, 1577-8, 1601, 1626, 1630, 1633,  
 1635, 1669-70, 1687, 1753, 1760-1,  
 1763, 1769, 1778, 1783; from Marquis  
 de Castel Rodrigo, 1529; from  
 Franciscan community at Louvain,  
 1666; from Capt'n Patrick Fitz-  
 Gerald, 1570, 1584, 1594-5; from  
 Baron Cornelius Kennedy, 1702;  
 from Marquis Virgilio Malvezzi, 1626,  
 1630, 1635, 1669; from Juan de  
 Necolalde, 1348, 1351-2, 1357-9,  
 1410, 1412, 1455; from Col Hugh  
 O Brian, 1713; from Col Hugh  
 O'Donnell, 1344; from Duke of  
 Olivares, 1357 (n), 1439 (n) b,  
 1447 (n), 1526 (n), 1527 (n) e; from  
 Col Eugenio O'Neill, 1592; from  
 Philip IV, 1533-4, 1685, 1693, 1699;  
 from En Christopher Plunket, 1616;  
 from Fr Onofrio de St. Iago, 1481;  
 from Marquis de Velado, 1612, 1614,  
 1626, 1630, 1635, 1669, 1687; from  
 Count de Villa Mediana, 1527.
- Fergus, Capt'n —: 2064.  
 FERIA (Dormer, Jane), Countess de:  
 1618 [c].  
 Fermanagh: 403 (n) b, 571 (n) b, 777 (n).  
 Fermoy, barony of: A 27 (*bis*).  
 Fermoy: A 27.  
 FERNANDES, Antonio: 1772.  
 FERNS, Bp of, *see* FRENCH, Nicholas.  
 FERRANO, John: 1087.  
 FERRIER, *see* FERRITER.  
 FERRITER (Faleter, Feliter, Feriter,  
 Ferrier):  
 Edmond (Capt'n): gt, 2369.  
 Henry (Capt'n): 2319; 2408, 2509,  
 2615, 2663, 2690.  
 James (En): Ice, 2385.  
 Richard (Capt'n): 2345, 2385, 2399.  
 Ferroll: 65 (n) c.
- FEYSOO, Antonio: 2694 (n).  
 FFINY, Cormac: trsf'd, 1632.  
 FIELAN, *see* PHELAN.
- FIELD:  
 Grainne ny nOwen: 1031 (n) a.  
 Owen (Fr): 1031 (n) a, b.
- FIENUS, Doctor Thomas: 443.  
 FIEHLY (O Fihily): Capt'n John: gt,  
 2369; 2377, 2386, 2392.  
 FILDO: Denis: gt, 203.  
 John (Doctor): gt, 384; Ice, 674-5.
- FINCH, Heneage, *see* Nottingham, Earl of  
 FINEGAN (Finigan), Terence, chaplain:  
 pay, 742; trsf'd, 835.  
 FINGAL, Earl of, *see* PLUNKET, Capt'n  
 Edward; A 27.  
 Fingall: A 25.
- FINGLAS, Thomas: his activities in  
 France and Belgium, 46 (n) b, c.
- FISHER, Capt'n —: 1895 (n) d.
- FITZ GERALD (De Geraldino, Fick-  
 gerald, *filis* Gerald, Fisgeralde,  
 Fits gerralt, Fitz Garrett, Fitz  
 Morris Gerald, Fyegarot, Garrett,  
 Geraldin (a) (e) (i) (o), Geraldus,  
 Gerard, Gerardin (o), Gernalt,  
 Gheraldino, Wisgeralt):  
 —, widow of Col Edward ('Baron  
 Geraldin'), *infra*: letter to Philip  
 IV in commendation of her  
 husband's services, 1998-9.  
 —, Earl of Desmond: to raise regt,  
 1200.  
 —, Earl of, Kildare, 'The Tower  
 Earl': 308, 308 (n) a, 648.  
 —, Earl of Kildare: 272 (n).  
 —, brother of 'Capt'n Gerald' (Lt  
 Col Maurice, *infra*): 313 (n) b.  
 —, 'brother of Sir Edward Fitz-  
 Gerald': 313 (n) b.  
 —: 2029 (n) a, 2122 (n) a.



- Anna, widow of Denis Kelly: pn, 1343 [d].
- Bernard (Capt): 2320; lce, 2546.
- Brigid, dau Henry, Earl of Kildare, *infra*: 987 (n) b.
- Brigida, dau William, *infra*: pn, 1343 [b], 1403-6, 1709, 2747.
- Catalina, sister of Earl of Desmond: gt, 308.
- Catalina, orphan of Capt John, *infra*: pn, 1343 [j].
- Catherine, sister of Peter Connel: pn, 1585.
- Christopher: gt, 326 [b].
- Christopher (En): gt, 2122.
- Cormac Mac Desmond: 272 (n).
- Denis: gt, 73; lce, 498.
- Edmond Fitz Maurice: gt, 33, 52 [b]; lce, 64, 138.
- Edmund (Edmund Thomas): lce, 139, 507; gt, 223, 326 [e].
- Edmund, of Ballymallo: A 27.
- Edward (Capt, Major): 58, 79, 82-4, 89, 91, 93; lce, 94; 94 (n), 104; gt, 125; 180; gt, 479; lce, Spain, 586; lce, Germany, 686; gt, 1729.
- Edward (Col, Sargento Generale de batalla, Major-General), 'Baron Geraldin': 1737, 1824; arrears, 1873; commd Battle Sergeant-General, 1972; dead, 1998-9; 2013, 2413 (n) b.
- Garret (Lt), of Lickfour: A 27.
- Gaspar (En, Capt), son of Lt Col Maurice, *infra*: 1094, 1310, 1335, 1367, 1413; dead, 1821; 1844, A 18.
- See also* GOCEN, Elenora.
- George (Capt): 816, 818-9; gt, 820; 825, 831; 878 (n) b; dead, 923.
- George, chaplain: pay, 1237.
- George, of Tirohane: A 27.
- Gerald (En, Capt): gt, 774, 1515; 1712; gt to co, 1770; 1784 (n), 1807 (n) b, 2829.
- Gerald ('Capt Gerald'), *see* Lt Col Maurice, *infra*.
- Gerardo (En): ppt, 2478.
- Helena, dau William, *infra*: pn, 1343 [b], 1709, 1988, 2747.
- Henry (Capt): gt, 242; lce, 332.
- Henry, Earl of Kildare: 987 (n) b.
- Isabella (Isabel, Inez), widow of William, *infra*, *see* Barry.
- James (Capt, Major): gt, 171 [c]; 184 (n), 498; lce, 624, 643; 679, 1425, 1472, 1537; commended to Don Ferdinand, 1670; gt, 2014; pay, 2044; lce, Spain, 2074; prisoner at Chester, 2074 (n); Council of State asked to permit him to go to Ireland for recruits, *ibid*.
- James (Sgt): gt, 1925.
- James (En): 1372, 1372 (n).
- James, Earl of Desmond, 'the Sagan Earl': 308 (n) a, 352.
- Jeanne, sister of Peter Connel: pn, 1585.
- John, son of Isabella, *supra*: gt, 907.
- John (En, Sgt, Capt): gt, 126, 326 [b]; 751; gt, 803; 941; gt, 1338: 1445. *See also* Catalina, *supra*, and Juana, *infra*.
- John (Sgt, Capt): gt, 1917; 2096; lce, 2384.
- John, 'base son of last Earl of Kildare': 46 (n) b.
- John (Col): 2385.
- Juana, orphan of Capt John, *supra*: pn, 1343 [j].
- Leonora, dau William, *infra*: pn, 1343 [b], 1403, 1406, 1709, 1987, 2747.
- Marcellus, son of Capt Maurice *infra*: gt, 1204.
- Maria, sister of Leonora, *supra*: pn, 1343 [b], 1403, 1406, 1709, 1958, 2747.
- Maria Mauricia, dau capt Maurice, *infra*: gt, 2829, 2831.
- Maurice (En, Capt, Major), *alias* 'Capt Gerald': gt, 16, 52 [c]; lce, 145; 184 (n), 212 [b], 272 (n), 273, 275, 310, 312, 326 [b], 391, 429, 429 (n) b, 528, 531, 536, 543, 576 (n) a, b, 592 [b], 665, 745, 751, 777 (n), 898, 913, 923, 940-2, 953, 1061, 1091, 1094, 1136, 1204, 1213-4; gt, 1274; 1307, 1310, 1704, A 18.
- Mauricio Gerald (En, Capt): gt, 673; lce, Spain, 869; 881, 1752.
- Morris (En), of Ballynemark: A 27.
- Morris Fitz Richard (Capt): 184 (n).
- Oliver (Capt): gt, 1153, 1194; 1222, 1278, 1301; lce, 1367, 1396; lce, Brussels, 1496.
- Patrick (Capt, Col), son of William, *infra*: gt, 1154; 1200, 1372; payment, 1412; lce, Brussels, 1471; lce, Spain, 1511, 1524; introduction to Spanish Ambassador in London, 1516-7; lce, 1563; commd Col, lce to recruit, asks letter of recommendation from Don Ferdinand, 1570, 1584; 1575-6; letters of recommendation, 1590-1; letters to Don Ferdinand, 1594-5; quarters for his recruits, 1598, 1601; 1587-8, 1606, 1625; to La Bassée, 1637; 1654, 1670; to Ypres, 1671-2; 1674-5, 1677; gt to co, 1678; 1679, 1681-2, 1689, 1695, 1697; to raise 3000 Irish recruits, 1699, 1700; 1705, 1708, 1715; regt gone to Spain, 1725; 1793, 1957.



- Peter (En, Adj): lce, 312; gt, 331; 1427.  
*See also* MAHON, Marie.
- Peter (Capt, Major), son of Captn Maurice, *supra*: gt, 1204; 2087; commd Major, 2138; 2314, 2316; gt to co, 2375; 2433, 2436, 2470, 2478-80, 2489; lce, England, 2493; lce extended, 2570.
- Raymond (Capt): to recruit, 1232; gt to co, 1258, 1433; 1426, 1457-8.
- Richard (Capt, Major), son of Captn Maurice, *supra*: gt, 665; 923, 941, 1136, 1169, 1213-4; gt, 1260; 1304, A 27.
- Salaman (Qr master): 246.
- Theobald (Capt), Head of the Canteen: ppt, Spain, 2655; gt, 2710.
- Thomas: ppt, Spain, to join the Fleet, 19.
- Thomas (Capt): gt, 213; lce, 290; 300; lapsed gt renewed, 2142.
- Thomas (En, Capt): 751; ppt, 1923; 1959; ppt, 2155, 2197; 2319, 2585.
- Thomas (Fr), O.S.F.: 286 (n).
- Walter (Capt): 2584.
- William: gt, 334; 907, 1200, 1709.  
*See also* Brigida, Helena, Leonora, Maria, *supra*; Col Patrick, *supra*; Captn William, *infra*; BARRY, Isabella.
- William (En, Capt), son of William *supra*: 1200; lce, 1302; gt, 1464.
- William (Fr): *A Christian and Devout Exercise*, 81.
- William (Fr): memorial as to recruiting of Irishmen, 1699-00.
- FITZ HARRIS (Fitzharryes):  
 James: gt, 239.  
 Oliver (Major): A 27.  
 Richard: lce, 424.
- FITZ JAMES, Richard: lce, 501.
- FITZMORIS (Fiz Morish):  
 Edmund: gt, A 1.  
 Theodore (Capt): lce, England, 2683.
- FITZPATRICK (filiz Patrice, Fitzpatricio, Fiz Patricio, Patrick, Patricio):  
 — (Fr): 451 (n).  
 — (Col): 2019 (n) a, b, 2025 (n), 2029 (n) a, 2031 (n) a, b, 2299, 2674.  
 Anthony (Capt): 2358.  
 Bernard (Adj): lce, Spain, 2358; gt, 2674; 2703 [b].  
 Brian (Capt): A 27.  
 Daniel: ppt, Galicia, 2114.  
 James (Lt Col): A 27.  
 Jeffrey (Lt): A 27.  
 John (Capt, Major): 2286, 2319, 2486, 2609, 2642, 2712, 2751, 2757, 2790, 2839.  
 John (En): A 27.  
 Theodore (En): lce, 2486.
- FITZSIMONS (Fitzshymons, Fitz Simon, Fitz Symons, Visummunns, Vissumunns, Vissumens, Vissumes, Vitsum):  
 — (Fr): 344 (n).  
 Jenquin (Capt): 184 (n); gt, 154, 157, 242; lce, Spain, 412.  
 Walter: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).
- FLAHERTY, *see* O FLAHERTY.
- FLAMINGHE, Flaminio, *see* FLEMING.
- FLANAGAN:  
 Daniel: gt, 699.  
 Thomas: gt, 2558.
- Flanders: *passim*.
- FLANELLY, Lt John: A 27.
- FLARQUI, *see* O FLAHERTY.
- FLATISBURGH (Flates-bury), Fr —, chaplain: dead, 2263.
- FLATTERY, *see* O FLAHERTY.
- FLEMING (Flamengo, Flamine, Flaminghe, Flaminio, Fleyng):  
 Bartholomew (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2263.  
 James (Lt Col): 1861 (n) b, A 16.  
 Christopher, Lord Baron of Slane, father of Captn Patrick, *infra*: A 16.  
 John: gt, 1.  
 Laurence (Capt) 1861 (n) b, A 16.  
 Patrick (Capt): lce, to recruit, 1373: his will, A 16.  
*See* BARNEWALL, Nicholas.
- Robert (Capt): lce, 424; lce, to recruit, 1395; 1407.
- Thomas, brother of Captn Patrick, *supra*: A 16.
- William, brother of Captn Patrick, *supra*: A 16.  
*See also* DUFF, James; O FLAME; SARFIELD, William; VLEMINCX.
- FLENNE:  
 Herman: 35.  
 William Collier, son of Herman: lce, 35.
- FLEYMG, *see* FLEMING.
- FLINS, Captn Balaquias: 2064.
- FLORENCE, Duke of: 60 (n), 336, 1030 [u], 2827.
- Florence: 327 (n) b.
- FLORES, Christoval: gt, 1437.
- Floru: A 12.
- FLOTINY, Hugo: lce, 2519.
- FLPS, *see* PHILIPS.
- FLUD, Captn Henry: 112.
- FLUEL, Henry: gt, 52 [c].
- Flushing: 8 (n) k, m, 156 (n).
- FLYN (Flin, Ofsen, Ofsin, O Flyne):  
 Charles, of Celtabar: A 27.  
 Daniel (En): 2648.  
 Donald (En): gt, 2175.  
 Malachy (Capt): 2175; gt, 2180; 2184, 2226; dead, 2279.  
 Philip (Sgt): gt, 2584.  
 Thomas (En): 2226.



- FOGARTY (Fogurthy, Fugarty, Ofogarty, O Fogerty):  
 — (Captn): lce, England, 2516.  
 John: gt, 1206.  
 Jhuan: A 7.  
 William (Lt): A 27.
- FOGIL, Bartolome: A 7.
- FOISSOT (Foisette, Foisoit, Foisot, Foisotte, Fosset, Foysoite), Francisco de: lce, England, 1847; 1848 (n) *b*, in Ireland, ordered to return to Flanders, 1867-8; letter *from* Philip IV regarding his activities in Ireland, 1868; 1869, 1891, 1898, 1907, 1952, 1952 (n); letters to Col Preston as to recruiting difficulties, 1960 (n) *a, b*, 1963 (n) *a*; letter *from* Col Preston, 1963 (n) *b*; recalled by Archduke Leopold, 1966; Philip IV approves of his recall, 1969.
- FONCLARA, Count de: 1466.
- FONTAINE (Fontana, Fontayne), Col Count de: 805, 808, 810, 1136, 1329, 1355.
- Fontaine l'Èvêque: 1058-9.
- Forneise: A 27.
- Fort de la Croix: 1014, 1019, 1021, 1026.
- FORTELL, Captn Oliver de: 2096.
- FOSSE, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- FOSSET, *see* FOISSOT.
- FOURLONG, *see* FURLONG.
- FOX:  
 Francis (Fr): 2033, 2036 [a].  
 John (Captn): 1464; gt, 2369; 2392; lce, 2405; A 27.  
 Thomas (En): lce, 2585.
- Fraga: 1900.
- Frameries, *see* Famars.
- France, *see* Index II.
- FRANCISCHI (Franceschi, Francisqui), Thomas: gt, 33, 52 [d], A 1.
- FRANCISCO (Francisco):  
 — (Col), 'of Spanish infantry': 1402.  
 Jacques, Jacomo (Captn, Col): 46, 46 (n) *b*, 52 [b], 52 [b] n, 52 (n) *a*, 59, 65 (n) *a*, 80 (n) *e*, 94 (n); dead, 446 (n).
- FRANGIPANI, Ottavo, Papal Nuncio: letter to Cardinal Aldobrandini, 71 (n).
- Frankfort: A 12.
- FRANQUIN-MEABLE, Captn —: letter *from* Col Eugenio O Neill, 1025.  
*See also* MBEL.
- FREDERICK, Elector Palatine: 618 [c], 873, 1030 [u], A 19 (5).
- FRENCH  
 Anthony (Lte): 2271, 2366; lce, 2444; A 27.  
 Nicholas, Bp of Ferns: 1970 [d].
- FRESIGNIES, Marquis de: 2712.
- FRESIN, Pierre Ernest de Gaure, Comte de: A 9.
- FREYNE (Frayn), William: gt, 126; lce, 422.
- FRIEL, Catalina, wife of Captn Mortagh Mac Dermody Roe: gt, 2700.
- FRIERMONT, Carlos: A 7.
- Friesland (Frisia): 52 [d] (n), 602, 896 [a], 1142, 1704.
- FRIGILIO (Virgilius), Terence, chaplain: lce, 914.
- FUADANO, Ferdinand, chaplain: pay, 622; lce, 854.
- FUENCLARA, Count de: 2172.
- FUENSALDANA, Count de: 2018.
- Fuentarabia: 1538, 1544 (n).
- FUENTES, Count de: 336, 340 (n) *c*, 1447.
- Fuentes: 58.
- FULLIGHAN, Maurice: trsfid, 2784.
- FULLAM, Fullan, *see* PHELAN.
- FURLONG (Fournal), Captn James: 1462; dead, 1634.
- Furnes: 909, 912, 1025-6, 1598, 2171 (n) *b*, 2712.
- FUYT, *see* WHITE.
- FYRR, Manus: 184 (n).

## G

- GAFNY, Juan: A 7.
- GAGE, Henry (Lt Col, Col): commd Col, 2820; 2827-8, 2837.
- GALARETTA (Galarreta, Calareta):  
 Francisco de: letters *from* Juan de Nocolalde, 1411, 1447, 1456; 1517; letter *from* Count de Villa Mediana, 1526; 1865; letter to Secretary of Audience, 1962; 1971.  
 Martin de: letter *from* Don John of Austria, 2157.
- GALCHUT, *see* GALLAGHER.
- GALGANO, Morgan, chaplain: pay, 1833.
- Galicia: 303, 325 (n), 354, 1003-4, 1755, 2114, 2116 (n) *b*, 2591, 2702, 2723, 2781.  
*See also* Index II.
- GALIJUR, Galixur, *see* GALLAGHER.
- GALLAGHER (Galachor, Galachuir, Galahour, Galchuir, Galchut, Galijur, Galixur, Gallochor, Galchur, Gallochowse, Gallocjur, Gallocyur, Ogalacur, Ogalachur, Ogalchur, Ogaligor, Ogallachor, Ogallecor, O Galuchor, Ogaulcur, Ogulacur):  
 —, 'one of the Gallaghers, just returned from the Low Countries': 1782 (n) *a*.  
 —: his son a hostage, 80 (n) *b*.
- Cecilia, nurse to infant Hugh O Donnell: 441-2.
- Charles: gt, 939.
- Daniel, son of Captn Hugh, *infra*: gt, 908; pn, 1343 [i].
- Denis: lce, 426.



- Felix: gt, 889.  
 Ferdinand: gt, 660.  
 Hugh, tutor to infant Hugh O  
 Donnell: 372 (n), 419 (n), 441.  
 Hugh (Captn): 880, 908.  
*See* Daniel, *supra*; Juanna, *infra*.  
 Hugh Mac Donnell: attainted, 403  
 (n) b.  
 Jacobs: lce, 2398.  
 James: lce, 865; gt, 930.  
 Juanna Barri, widow of Captn Hugh,  
*supra*: 908.  
 Niell, Qr master Sgt: 1408.  
 Terence (Captn), son of Lord Lagan:  
 735, 1419, 1856-7; dead, 1875.  
 Terrelagh Garragh: attainted, 403  
 (n) b.  
 Thadeus: gt, 621.
- GALLIEROS, Fr Francis, chaplain: lce,  
 Spain, 2761.  
 GALLO, Michael: 1952.  
 GALLOCHOWSE, *see* GALLAGHER.  
 GALMOY, Viscount: A 27.  
 GALON, *see* GERNON.  
 GAL VEY (Galway), Arthur: lce, 287.  
 Galway: 184 (n) *passim*, 873 (n) d,  
 896 [d], 905 [c], 1804 (n) c, 1861 (n) b,  
 c, 2016 (n) a, 2223 (n), 2244, 2653 (n),  
 A 25, A 27 *passim*.
- GAMARRA:  
 Esteban de (Col): 1411, 1846.  
 Juan (Captn): 90.
- GAR, Sgt James: gt, 1468.
- GARA, Lte —, chaplain: pay, 2321.
- GARCE, Leonard: lce, 520.
- GARHARD, *see* GERNON.
- GARLAN, Garland, Garland, Garlo,  
 Garlon, *see* GERNON.
- GARDINER (Gardener):  
 Bartholomew: gt, 16.  
 John: deposition in *Cal. S.P. Ire.*,  
 884 (n).  
 Sir Richard: 67 (n) a.
- GARNEY (Garned):  
 Anthony, son of Sir Christopher,  
*infra*: to serve under French King,  
 1346 (n).  
 Sir Christopher, *see* Anthony, *supra*.
- GARRETT, *see* FITZGERALD.
- GARVI, Lte Luke, chaplain: pay, 2162.
- GAURE:  
 Alexandrine de, *see* BOUSSU, Com-  
 tesse de.  
 Pierre Ernest de, *see* Fresin, Comte  
 de.
- GASTON, James: gt, 52 (d).
- GAVARELLI, Juan de, Superintendent  
 of the Fleet: 1757.
- GAVILLEROS, Councillor: 1356.  
 Geest Geronpoint: 696.
- GEFFREY (Geferi, Gefry, Gefrey, Gefri,  
 Gefry):  
 Daniel, chaplain: pay, 1221.  
 James (En, Captn): lce, 1389; gt to  
 co, 1625; 1679; gt, 1681; 1708,  
 1721, 1723, 1745, 1784 (n).  
 Lawrence (Captn): gt, 1192; 1212,  
 1389, 1706, A 7.
- GEILLIS, *see* GILES.
- GENAPPE, Count de: 583.
- Genappe (Genep, Gennep, Ginnip):  
 1297 (n), 1505, 1538, 1569 (n) a,  
 1586, 1607, 1620, 1786, 1803, 2005  
 [a].
- GENI, Richard: lce, 499.
- GELLY, *see* KELLY.
- Genoa: 326 (n) c.
- GENTILMAN, Walter: gt, 1514.
- GEOGHEGAN (Egan, Egano, Egant,  
 Geagin, Gegin, Geoghegane, Goeg-  
 han, Groghegan, Mac Egan, Mac-  
 hougegan, Mageocheman, Mag-  
 eoghan):  
 Conly, of Donore: A 27.  
 Denis (Lte), chaplain: 2065.  
 Dermot (Captn): gt, 2266; lce, 2640.  
 Edmond (En): lce, 2646.  
 Eugenio (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2237,  
 2257, 2373.  
 Eugenio: gt, 326 [g].  
 Francis (Qr master): 2758.  
 Francis (En, Adj): 2815.  
 James (Captn): 2579-80; gt, 2587;  
 lce, 2636; 2785.  
 Malachy (En): lce, 2421.  
 Nellan (En): gt, 773; 888.  
 Owen Oge (Adj): A 27.  
 Solomon (Qr master): lce, 2841.
- GEORGE, Captn —: 1443.
- GERALD, Geraldino, Gerard, *see* FITZ-  
 GERALD.
- Germany, *see* Index II.
- GERMIN, *see* GERNON.
- GERNALT, *see* FITZGERALD.
- GERNON (Carlou, Galon, Garhard,  
 Garlan, Garland, Garland, Garlo,  
 Garlon, Garnon, Germin, Gernuni):  
 Alexander: A 7.  
 Charles (Captn): 568.  
 Denis (Captn): 269.  
 Ferdinand: lce, 530; gt, 846.  
 James (Captn): 94 (n), 184 (n), 220,  
 245, 272 (n), 287, 296, 386, 392;  
 gt, 396; 470, 488, 494, 502, 504,  
 508-10, 522, 524, 550, 566, 571,  
 576 (n) a, b, 592 [b], 628-9, 740,  
 749, 785, 799; dead, 824; 831,  
 854, 1343 [f] [i], A 7 (*bis*).  
 Patrick (Captn): dead, 1845.  
 Simon: A 7.
- GERVIS, *see* JERVIS.
- Ghent: 85, 94, 96, 98-100, 103-10,  
 116, 390, 452, 641-5, 658, 688, 909-  
 10, 1011-2, 1014-7, 1019-22, 1026,  
 1531-2, 1570, 1619-20, 1624-5, 1628,  
 1636, 1815-7, 1819, 1875, 2110,  
 2218-9, 2554.
- GHINDERTAELEN, G van: 1666.



- Ghistelles: 1800-1.
- GIAVERINA, Francisco, Venetian Resident: letter *from* Luis Males, 2140 (n) a; letter *from* Antwerp, 2140 (n) b.
- GIBON (Gibene):  
Pilipe: A 7.  
William: 537 (n) a.
- Gibraltar, *see* Grebalter, Index II.
- GILES (Geillis):  
— (Fr.): A 16.  
Hugo: gt, A 2.  
Patrick (Capt): 51.
- GILMER, En Owen: A 27.
- GINELLI, En Michael: ppt, 2774.
- GIPS, Andres: gt, A 1.
- GIRON, Diego: 1979, 1985.
- Gironde: 2116 (n) b.
- Givet: 825, 830-1.
- GLACHLIN, *see* O MULOGHLYN.
- GLANCHI, *see* CLANCY.
- Glanfinn: 1782 (n) a.
- Glanfriacan: A 27.
- GLEAN and GUERCHY, Baron of, *see* OMALLUN, Dermot.
- Gleancoy: 304 (n) e.
- Glenconkeine: 111 (n) a, b.
- GLENOMALUN, Baron of, *see* Omallun, Dermot;  
Omallun, Albert.
- Glenomallun (Glean Omallun, Glenamlune): 648, 945 (n).
- GLIN, Nicholas, chaplain: trsf, 1183.
- Glinsk: A 27.
- Gloccere: A 27.
- GLOUCESTER, Henry, Duke of (1639-1660): 2166 (n), 2171 (n) a, 2182, 2195 (n) b, 2207, 2224-5, 2286, 2299, 2304, 2552 (n) a, 2651, 2657, 2660-1.
- GOAL, Thomas de: gt, 68.
- GOBRINOS, Lte —: 2236.
- GOCEN, Elenora, widow of Captn Gaspar Fitz Gerald: gt, 1821; moneys due to her from his pay, 1844.
- GODOY, Francis, "a Spanish captain": 65 (n) c.
- Goettingen: 1613.
- GOFFE, En Anthony: A 27.
- GOGLAN, *see* COGLAN.
- GOLBORNE, Richard: letter *to* Adam Loftus, 80 (n) g.
- GOLD, Fr Richard, *see* Tuam, *See of*.
- GOLDEIN (Goldinn):  
Richard: A 7.  
Stephen, chaplain: pay, 1161.
- GOMEZ, Captn and Commissary General Ochoa: 838.
- GONALY, *see* CONNALLY.
- GONY, Col Diego de: 2387, 2423, 2558.
- GONZALES, Juan, Governor: 798.
- GOODMAN, En Thomas: 184 (n); lce, 470.
- GORKIN, Baron de: 1967.
- GORMAN, Captn Denis: lce, 2521: A 27.
- GORMANSTON, Viscount, *see* PRESTON.
- Gormanston: A 11.
- GORMLÆUS (Gormley), Bernard, chaplain: pay, 457.
- Gortachutrey: A 27.
- GOVERNEUR, Jacques: 1881.
- GOVAN, Gelasius, chaplain: pay, 1495: A 16.
- GOYH, Sgt Guillan: gt, 2578.
- GRACE (Gras):  
Oliver (Lt): A 7.  
Redmond: A 7.  
Richard (Col): 2105 (n) a, 2116 (n) b, 2171 (n) a, 2253; summary of career, 2253 (n) a; 2253 (n) b, 2267, 2288, 2302, 2321 (n), 2453, 2461, 2516, 2519-20, 2732, A 27.  
Robert, Baron of Courtown: 2253 (n) a.
- Grammont: 2818.
- GRANA, Marquis di: 1863; letter *to* Charles II (Spain), 2842; 2845.
- GRANDE, Gaspar: 556.
- GRANDISON, Lord, *see* ST. JOHN.
- Grange: A 27.
- GRANGER, John: gt, A 1.
- GRANILL, William: lce, 1225.
- Granloy: 58.
- GRATZ, Count de: 2584.
- Gravelines: 8 (n) n, 1526, 1611, 1803 (n) b, 1858, 2025-6, 2213 (n), 2477.
- GRAUENBROECK, Fr Florence de, S.J., chaplain: letters *from* Fr Nicholas Comerford, S.J., 1586, 1593.
- GRAVUOY, Lt Donat: gt, 2792.
- GRAY (Grayo):  
Mark (Capt): ppt, 2498.  
MASTER OF: letter *to* Earl of Salisbury: 80 (n) e.  
Roberto: A 7.
- Greenland: 992, 996.
- GREGG, Lt Edward: gt, 41.
- GREG, En Daniel, *see* MOLOCHAN, Leonora.
- GREGORY, —, Irish soldier: 1586.
- Grenada: A 10.
- GRENAN (Grenon, Grinan, Grinant, O Grenane), En Donogh (Derbi, Dermot): 184 (n); gt, 186; lce, 290; gt, 351, 377, 685.
- GRENE (Greni, Grin, Grini):  
Dermot: A 7.  
Henry: gt, A 1.  
John: gt, 52 [a], A 1.  
Richard: gt, 33, 52 [c].  
Thomas: gt, 52 [b], A 1.
- GRINANT, *see* GRENAN.
- GRENFIELD (Grienfield, Grinfit), Thomas: gt, 33, 52 [b], A 1.
- GROGHEGAN, *see* GEOGHEGAN.
- Grol: 1061, 1142.
- GROMIE, Sgt Owen, 184 (n).
- GRONENDONCK, Count de: 1771.
- GRIFON, Alonso: gt, 960.



- GRUGAN, En Anthony: lce, 1386.  
GRUIS, *see* RUIZ.
- GUADAGNA, — de: 2105 (n) a.  
GUADALESTE, Marquis de: 328.  
GUALER, En Edward: gt, 1620.  
GUALTERS, *see* WALTERS.
- GUASCO (Guascro), Col Octavio: 1338, 1429-30.  
Guatelort, *see* Waterford.
- GUBRINAS, Bernard, chaplain: 2050.  
Gueldres: 1952 (n), 2791.  
*See also* Index II.
- GUERCHY, Baron of, *see* OMALLUN, Dermot.
- GUEVARA:  
Alonso de (Col): 1162.  
Juan Ladrón de (Capt): 1636.  
Louis Philip de: letter *from* Don Ferdinand, 1551.  
Guienne: 2058 (n) c, 2168.
- GUIFORDE, Richard: gt, A 1.  
GUIN (Guierne, Guyn):  
— (Capt): 32 (n).  
John: gt, 43; lce, 237.
- GUINCHE, Patrick: lce, 1191.  
GUINEO (Gineo), Lte Patrick, chaplain:  
pay, 2311; lce, England, 2454.
- GUIRE, *see* MAGUIRE.
- GURIERE, Pedro de: 1771.  
GUSE, Guilan: pay, 2590.  
GUZMAN (Gusman):  
Aniolo de (Col): 2832.  
Gaspar de: 986, 990.  
Juan Clares de (Col): 985.
- ## H
- HACKETT (Hacht, Hacket, Hacquet, Haquet):  
Francis (Capt): 2304, A 27.  
James: lce, 563.  
Oliver: ppt, 25; gt, 31.  
*See also* MULRIAN, Unnualy.  
Thomas: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).  
Walter: gt, 135.
- HADDOCKE, Fr —: 8 (n) x.  
HADSER (Hadsor):  
James: lce, 489.  
Patrick: lce, Spain, 2039.
- HAEN, Gaspar de, judge-advocate, 'Baillly de la baronnie de Liedekerck et Dendreleuwe, Viscomté de Lombeck, Seigneur de Boenury, Chocquer, Fosse, Saily la Bourse, Bleaugies, Soombeke, Vyghendom (Eyghendom), Vrenbodeghem, Welle, Idergham, Erteralchen': 1182, A 9.
- HAENANS, —, Collector: 379.  
Haeren: 1292.
- HAGE, — VAN DER, notary: A 7.  
HAGERU(E), Seigneur of, *see* OMALLUN, Dermot.  
Haggerstown (Hagertown): A 27 (*bis*).
- HAGHVIEN, Catalina ni, widow of Thomas O Ceni: pn, 1343 [c].
- HAGIBEN, *see* O HAGAN.
- Hague, The: 320, 1995 (n).  
Hainault: 454, 831, 1059, 1732, 2109, 2220 (n), 2554.
- Hal (Notre Dame de Hal): 304 (n) b, e, 306 (n) a, 455, 828, 830, 1377, 1521, 1566-7, 1701, 1785, 1883, 1885, 1976, 2009, 2090, 2670, 2738, 2743-5, 2749, 2749-50, 2753, 2759-60, 2763-4, 2784, 2801, 2813-4, 2818.
- Halen: 1027.
- HALFIEDT, Captn Hogel: 2064.
- HALLAGHAN, James: 1398.
- HALLEN, Denis: lce, 405.
- HALLENAN (Henenan), John: petition, 1803; gt, ppt, 1804.
- HALLURANE, Cornelius, *see* DERGANE, Catherine.
- HALPENI (Halpun, Hapiny):  
Thadeus: lce, 516.  
William: A 16.  
*See also* VELDE, Juana van de.
- Halsen: 1451.
- HALSEY, Edmond: gt, 52 [b].
- HALY, *see* HELY.
- HAMILTON:  
George (Capt): 2457, A 27.  
William (Capt): 936, 1120.  
—, Marquis of: 1004.
- HANEDOUCHE (Handouche):  
Charles, Seigneur de Fay: 587.  
Sebastian, Seigneur of Hunctun: letters to Archduke Albert, 452, 576.
- HANEGHAN, Fr John, OSA, chaplain:  
pay, 2207.
- HANING, Sgt Guilan: gt, 2369.
- HANLUN, *see* O HANLON.
- HANLY (Hanley, Hanoly, O Hanly):  
Benicio (En): gt, 2367.  
Denis (En, Lt): gt, 2392, 2588.  
Fariagh (Lt), of Slewbane: A 27.  
Hugh (Lt): gt, 2368.
- HANNIS, Aegidio de: A 7.
- HANOM, Captn James: 1136.
- HANRACAN, Cornelius: gt, 326 [d].
- HAPER, Thomas: 2048 [d].
- HARA, Haran, *see* OHARA.
- HARCOURT, Pr[ince]: to raise 3000 men for France, 1848 (n) b.
- HARIN, *see* HERRIN.
- HARISON (Arisson, Arizon, Harisson), Captn Walter: 1911, 1915, 1950, 1965.
- HARLEO, Captn William: gt, 2353.  
Harmanlahie: A 27.
- HARO (Hero), Luis Mendez de: 2018, 2039.
- HAROLD, —, of Kilnekeuge, A 27.
- HARQUOT, Barnabas: gt, 62.
- HARRIS, William: 8 (n) x.
- HART, *see* O HART.



- HARTECAM, Sgt Dermot: ppt, England, 2687.
- HARUY, Juan, drummer: A 7.
- HASEO, Lte John, chaplain: pay, 2194, 2206.
- Hasselt: 1027.
- HAUSSY, Baronne de, *see* BOUSSU, Claude de.
- Havre (Havre de Grace, Newhaven): 46 (n) b.
- HAY, Hey, *see* O HAY.
- HAYNES (Hayn, Heyn):  
 Florence: ppt, 1852.  
 John: lce, 426.  
 W: 32 (n).
- HAZDE, Captn —: 121.
- HEADIN, Captn George: 2428.
- HEALY, T. M.: 606 (n) a.
- Hebrides: 896 [c], 905 [b], 983 [a] [c].
- Heegem (Egem): 1019-20.
- HEHIR (Heyr, Oher, Ohyr):  
 Cornelius (En): lce, 2651.  
 Patrick: gt, 326 [d].  
 Turlagy (En), of Balline: A 27.  
 — (En): gt, 1737.
- HELly (Haly, Hali, Heli, Helly, O Haly):  
 Donah, *see* CONSIDIN, Anna James (Sgt): gt, 2377.  
 Raphael: lce, 559. *See also* TAX, Isabella.  
 — (Sgt): gt, 1913.
- HENENAN, *see* HALLENAN.
- HENIN, Count de: 805.
- HENRIETTA MARIA, Queen of England: 1778, 1970 [d].
- HENRI III, King of France (1574-1589): 46 (n) b.
- HENRI IV, King of France (1589-1610): 344 *passim*.
- HENRY VIII, King of England (1509-1547): 617 [c], 618 [d], [e].
- HERBERT (Harbart, Harbert):  
 George: 55 (n) b.  
 Thomas: 455, A 7.
- HEREL, Richard: gt, A 1.
- Herenthals (Herendall): 327 (n) c, 429 (n) b, 455.
- HERISS (Herris), Earl of: 1719.
- HERMOSILLA, Captn Rodrigo de: 2678.
- HERNAN (Ohernan):  
 James (Captn): 2020.  
 Maolmory: gt, 2712.
- HERNANI, Diego de: 1313.
- HERNINGTON, Martin: gt, 47.
- HERRIES, *see* HERRISS.
- HERRIN (Harin, Harrin):  
 Dermot (Dimicio), doctor: gt, 32, 52 [b], A 1.  
 Patrick: gt, A 1.
- HERRO, Captn Augustine: 1338.
- Hesdin: 452, 576, 1074-5.
- HESQUET, Richard: gt, A 1.
- HEYDIN, Captn George: 2320; gt to co, 2375.
- HEYK, Captn Martin: 96.
- HEYN, *see* HAYNES.
- HICKEY, *see* HIQUY.
- HID, Hide, *see* DELAHYDE.
- HIERLESTON, Richard: lce, 509.
- HIEUS, En Owen: ppt, 2824.
- HIGGIN (Ohigny, Ohugin):  
 Brian: 326 [h].  
 Daniel (En): A 27.  
 Thadeus: trsf, 1830.
- HILLI, Cormac: gt, 326 [f].
- HIN (Hins):  
 John: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).  
 Onoro (Sgt): ppt, 2773.
- HINACOME, Morog: gt, 326 [a].
- HINOJOSA, *see* INOJOSA.
- HIQUY (O Hiqiy):  
 Eugenio: A 7.  
 Guillermo: A 7.  
 Oliver (Lt-Col): gt, 2242.
- Hlondeschoote: 1598.
- HOBOKEN (Hoboque), Baron of, Ambassador from States of Holland: 397 (n); letters to Archduke Albert, 307 [a], 313, 317, 321, 327, 336, 343-4, 347, 350, 352; letter from Archduke Albert, 322; conferences with Privy Council, 320, 355; interviews with James I, 307, 321.
- HOCQ, *see* HOPE.
- HODSON, Sgt Robert: A 7.
- HOEFNAGLE, Lt Col James Gille: 2496.
- HOGAN (Hogane, O Hogan, O Hogab):  
 B. (*alias* O Hagan): 780 (n).  
 Donel: A 7.  
 Edmond (Lt): lce, 2434, (Sgt) ppt, 2682.  
 Moriarto: ppt, 2380, 2598.  
 Philip (En), of Holly: A 27.  
 Philip (En), of Aylehie: A 27.  
 Quenedy: A 7.  
*See also* O HAGAN, Brian.
- HOLAN, *see* NOLAN.
- HOLLY: A 27.
- HOLMAN:  
 John, *see* Thomas, *infra*.  
 Thomas, orphan of John, *supra*: pn, 1343 [k].
- HOLLYWOOD (Holliwod):  
 Nicholas: petition to James I, 579 (n) a.  
 Owny ny Shyle, wife of Nicholas, and foster-sister of Earl of Tyrone, 579 (n) a, b.
- HOND, Captn —: 756.
- Hondegem: 1079 [a].
- HONEL, *see* O NEILL.
- HOCHSTRAET, Count de: 578.
- HOOR, Helena, widow of Sgt William Anglin: ppt, 2049.
- Hooton: 8 (n) h.
- HOPE (Hocq, Hop, Open):  
 Alexander: 2552 (n) a.



- Gerald (Capt): gt, 1192; lce, 1239, 1522.
- Walter (Capt): petition to Charles II, 2552 (n) a; A 27.
- (Sgt): lce, 1187.
- HOPTON, Sir Arthur: correspondence with Sir Thomas Wentworth, 1544 (n), 1563 (n), 1569 (n) a.
- HORAN, Dermot: trsfcd, 2801.
- HORNES:
- Amand de: 1844.
- Count (Frederick) de: 1010, 1585, 2689 [9].
- Horst: 1952 (n).
- HOSEO, *see* O HOSY.
- HOUTTE, Adrian van: 1891.
- HOVENDEN (Hovendon, Obendon, Ovington, Owedan):
- George (Capt): gt, 706; 1634, 1650, 1762, 1784 (n); 1921.
- Henry: his son a hostage, 80 (n) b; 304 (n) a, 305 (n) a; attainted, 403 (n) b.
- HOWARD, Lord —: A 20.
- HOWTH, Baron of, *see* ST LAWRENCE, Sir.
- HOYA, *see* O HAY.
- HOYD (t), *see* DELAHYDE.
- HU, John: lce, 136.
- HUALAHAYN (Hullacayn, Huolana, O Huolehan):
- David: A 7.
- Dermot, chaplain: pay, 268; lce, Spain, 531.
- Philip (Fr): 1032.
- HUARTA, Capt — de: 2500.
- HUBART, Davit: A 7.
- HUERLY, *see* OHURLY.
- HUGO (Hugano, Hugonis):
- Patrick, chaplain: pay, 1175.
- Thomas, chaplain: pay, 2202.
- (En): lce, 50.
- HUIBEG, En Charles: lce, 1386.
- HUIN, Sgt Patrick: gt, 1281.
- HULLACAYN, *see* HUALAHAYN.
- Hulst: 63, 116, 394-5, 397, 429 (n) b, 455, 577, 582-4, 1307.
- HULSTON, Richard: lce, 425.
- Hunctun: 452, 576.
- HUOLANO, *see* HULLACAYN.
- HURLEO, Hurli, *see* O HURLEY.
- HURTADO, *see* MENDOZA.
- HUSEY (Husse, Ossett):
- Nicholas: lce, 420.
- Walter (Sgt, En): 184 (n); gt, 396.
- HUSTEN, En William: gt, 1959.
- HUTE, *see* WHITE.
- HUYNNE, En Maurus: 2037.
- HYDE, Edward, Chancellor to CHARLES II: proposals to Don John of Austria as to Irish troops in France, 2153, 2157.
- HYNANE, Lt James: A 27.
- I
- IBANEZ, Captn Luis: 2410.
- ICHINGHAM (Igingham), George: lce, 466; 466 (n).
- Idergham, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- Idevoorde, Dame de, *see* BOUSSU, Claude de.
- Ikerin, barony of: A 27.
- IKERRYV, Viscount: A 27.
- IMOKILLY, Seneschal of: 2413 (n) b.
- INARRA, *see* IVARRA.
- Inchloger: 2253 (n) a.
- Indies: 60 (n), 618 [c], [d], 873 (n) c, 896 [a], [b], 905 [a], 946, 1783.
- See also* Indes, Index II.
- INGOLDSBY, Col —: 2046 (n) a.
- Inishbofin (Ennisbuffn): 2046 (n) a, b, 2058 (n) b.
- Inniskelling, *see* Enniskillen.
- INNOCENT X, Pope (1644-55): 1970 [d].
- INOJOSA (Hinojosa, Injossa), Marquis de: 873, 1002, 1597.
- Intch: A 27.
- INVERNIZZI (Inverneti, Invernity):
- Carlo Francesco (Fr): 1862-3, 1863 (n) a, b.
- Giuseppe (Joseph), bro of Fr Carlo, *v.s.*: 1862-3.
- Ionschote: 1611.
- Ireland, *see* Index II.
- IRETON, General Henry: 1804 (n) c, 1995 (n), 2036 (n) a.
- IRMONTE, *see* ORMONDE.
- ISABELLA, Clara Eugenia, Infanta of Spain (1566-1633): Brian O'Neill and Hugh O'Donnell her pages, 613 (n), 619, A 10; 935; grant to Irish Franciscans at Louvain, 1171; gave permission to Irish Dominicans to settle in Louvain, 2466.
- Letters to Prince de Ligne, 791-2; to Diego Messia, 947, 952, 969, 973; to Philip IV, 746, 764-5, 793-5, 800, 809, 817, 840, 857, 859, 869-70, 875, 904, 906, 945, 950-1, 968, 970, 972, 979-81, 988, 992, 996, 1001, 1008, 1037, 1125, 1146, 1180, 1231; to Abbot of St. Amand, 1042; to Duke of San Lucar, 995; to Abbot of St. Vaast, 1042; to Count Tilly, 1035.
- Letters from Council of Finances, 1061; from Charles Daly, 493; from La Faille, 1032; from Captn Maurice Marury, 1033-4; from Diego Messia, 986-7; from Captn Hugh O'Brien, 1051; from Albert, Baron d'Omallun, 1164; from Col John O'Neill, 1076; from Captn Dermot O'Sullivan Mor, 1075; from Philip IV, 752-3, 801, 873-4, 876, 893, 895, 899, 989, 994, 1002-4, 1029, 1038, 1121, 1132, 1159, 1186, 1200, 1252; 2852 (n); from St. Anthony's, Louvain, 754;



from Duke of San Lucar, 982, 990;  
from Earl of Tyrone, 111 (n) a;  
from Louis Verreyken, 756, 828.

Military matters: Orders to Authorities at Antwerp, 919; at Artois, 1056; at Berges St. Winnoc, 1079 [b], 1098, 1104; at Bourbourg, 917, 954-5, 1054, 1063, 1069, 1073, 1079 [c], 1106, 1108-9; at Bruges, 1148; at Cassell and Ypres, 807; at Diest, 1044, 1049-50; at Dixmude, 910; at Dunkirk, 1079 [c], 1107, 1110, 1118; at Furnes, 909, 912; at Lierre, 872; at St Omer, 1141; at Sichein, 1028; orders 'to all authorities concerned', 1027, 1059; to Duke of Aerschot, 1058; to Count Henry de Bergh, 1052; to Council of Brabant, 927; to Col de Fontaine, 805, 808; to Governor of Nieuport, 1079 [c]; to Governor of Ostend, 1079 [c], 1099; to Hugh O Donnell, 1095; to Col Eugene O'Neill, 1011-23, 1025; to Col John O'Neill, 1074, 1079 [c], 1080; to Count de St Aldegonde, 816, 1060, 1070, 1072, 1078-9, 1079 [a], 1100, 1111; to Jehan de Pretz, 770; to Matheo de Urquina, 825; to Louis Verreyken, 891.

ISAMBERE, Capt'n —: 94 (n).

ISENBURG, Count de: 1587; letter from Secretary of the Audience, 1592; 1606; letter from Don Ferdinand, 1616.

Isle of Man: 610 (n).

Italy: *passim*.

IVARRA (Inarra), Martin de: 1628; letters to Secretary of Audience, 1640, 1648.

IVEAGH, *see* MAC GENNIS.

Iveagh: A 27.

Iverke, barony of: A 27.

IVOIR, Maurice, surgeon: 2742.

## J

JACOB, Capt'n Miguel: 992.

JALACHINO, James: 1185.

JAMBLOUNE, Fr Henricus, S.J.: 1580 (n).

JAMES I, King of England (1603-25): interviews with Baron of Hoboken, 307 [a] [b], 321; proclamation against Earls of Tyrone and Tirconnel mentioned, 328 (n) a, d; 344; Act of Attainder against certain Irish noblemen, 403 (n) b; reports from Sir William Turnbull, 526 (n) a, 537 (n) b, 553 (n); petition from Nicholas Hollywood, 579 (n) a; Efforts to have Earl of Tyrone arrested, 581; 591; the Hydras main head, "vomiting infernal poison against the Cath-

olics," 618 [a] [c]; proposed marriage of his son with Infanta condemned, 618 [d]; 777 (n); his resolve to regain Palatinate, 873; alleged plot against his person and that of the heir-apparent, A 5 (n); offer of services made by John Rathe—will endeavour to have Earl Hugh and Col John O N submit themselves, A 6; A 9, A 10, A 15, A 19.

JAMES II, King of England (1685-1689), *see* YORK, Duke of.

JAMES VI, King of Scotland: 970 (n), 1001.

JAXON, Capt'n —: 186.

Jerusalem: 946.

*See also* INDEX II.

JERVIS (Gervis), Henry: gt, 52 (a); A 1.

JOHN OF AUSTRIA, natural son of Philip IV, Governor of the Low Countries (1656-59): letters from Philip IV, 2147, 2198; treaty with Charles II, 2147; proposals made to him on behalf of Charles II as to Irishmen serving in France, 2153; his reply, 2157; letter to Philip IV, 2163; 2186 (n) b, 2411; petition from Dominicans in Louvain, 2466, 2554; letter from Earl of Clare mentioned, 2821.

JOHNSON:

John: 8 (n) x.

—, cousin of Henry Blackwall *alias* Moore, 2201 (n) b.

JONES:

Henry (Dr): letter to Commissioners of the Army, 2641 (n).

Robert: 47 (n) b.

Theophilus (Col): 2116 (n) a, 2264 (n).

Thomas, Abp of Dublin: letter to Earl of Salisbury, 271 (n) c.

JONGHEN (Jonghem), Baron de (Col): 2716, 2792.

JORDAN (Jordane):

Edmond (Major): gt, 2289; lce, 2418; dead, 2563.

John (Adj't, Capt'n): gt, 229, 1145, 1409; dead, 1509.

Thomas (Capt'n): gt, 2290.

Leonora, widow of Lt Col Jordane: gt, 2563.

William: 47 (n) b.

Joriza: 1867-8.

JOSIP, William: gt, A 1.

JOYCE (Joyes):

Henry, pro-vicar of troops of Charles II: 2244.

Thomas (Lte), chaplain: 2849.

JOYE, Simon: trsf'd, 2752.

JUEREZ, William: gt, 1401.

Juliers: 602.

Jumap: (Jemappes). 2204.

JURICARD, William: gt, 326 [b].



## K

- KANELY, Kanly, *see* CONNALLY.
- KANNAN, James: recruiting, 2048.
- KARROY, Lt Cornelius: gt, 2392.
- KEARNY (Kearnye, Carney, Carny, Keherni, O Kearney, O Kearny):  
 David, Abp of Cashel: letter to  
 Archduke Albert, 454.  
 Daniel (Lt): gt, 2381.  
 Maurice: lce, 150.  
 Neill: lce, 519.  
 Nicholas (Capt): ppt, 2754-5.  
 Patrick (Fr), Irish Dominican: ppt,  
 2112, 2120.  
 Thomas (Lte), judge-advocate: 1994.
- KEATING, *see* QUETING.
- KEEGAN, *see* QUEGAN.
- KELLY (Aquely, Gelly, Kelley, Ocely,  
 O Kelly, O Kely, O Keyli, Oc-  
 quelli, Oqqeli, Oqueley, O Queli,  
 Oquelli, Oquelly, O Quely,  
 Oyquelli, Queli, Quellay, Quelli,  
 Quelly, Quely):  
 Alexander: A 7.  
 Anna (ni Madin), wife of Denis,  
*infra*, nurse to infant Hugh O  
 Donnell: gt, 303, 512; 436, 439-40,  
 443.  
 Brian: pn, 184 (n); A 7.  
 Cecilia, daughter of Denis, *infra*: gt,  
 512; pn, 1343 [b] [j].  
 Charles (Capt), Major, Col): 2609;  
 gt, 2623; recruiting, 2623 (n);  
 lce, 2624; gt, 2625; pn, 2665; A 27.  
 Cornelius: gt, 232, 253; 587.  
 Daniel: pn, 184 (n); lce, 549.  
 Denis: attended infant Hugh O  
 Donnell, 391, 430, 439, 443; letter  
 to Luis Verreykens, 434; gt, 473;  
 lce, 566; ppt, 763; gt, 785.  
*See* Anna, Cecilia, *supra*.  
 Denis, of co of Captn Maurus Mahon,  
*see* FITZGERALD, Anna.  
 Denis (En, Capt): gt, 2247, 2348,  
 2703 [f], A 27.  
 Dermot (En): 2172.  
 Dionisio: A 7.  
 Dualtagh: A 7.  
 Edmond: lce, Spain, 1564, 1569.  
 Edmond, drum-major: 1787.  
 Edmund (Lte): gt, 196, 335; lce, 476;  
 A 7.  
 Edward (Sgt): gt, 1461.  
 Henry: gt, 962.  
 Hugh, page to Marquis of Mayo:  
 884 (n).  
 Ignatius (En, Capt): gt, 2021,  
 2219.  
 John: gt, 7.  
 John (En): gt, 2712.  
 Malachy: lce, 428.  
 Melaglen: A 7.  
 Patrick: ppt, 978.
- Susanna, widow of Cornelius, *supra*:  
 pn, 1343 [j].
- Thadeus (Capt): recruiting, 1234,  
 1246-7; gt, 1242; gt to co, 1258;  
 1318; gt, 1331; lce, 1336; 1341.  
 Thomas: lce, 152; gt, 396.  
 William (Sgt): lce, 1312.  
 William (Lte), chaplain: 2496.  
 William (Capt): 2623 (n).  
 William, of co of Col Henry O Neill:  
 gt, 326 [a].  
 William, of co of Captn Art O Neill:  
 gt, 326 [a].  
 William, of co of Captn Maurice  
 FitzGerald: lce, 528.  
 — (En): 184 (n).  
 —: 2122 (n) a.  
 — (Col): lce, 482.
- KENANO, *see* KYNAN.
- KENNEDY (Kenedi, Kenedy, Okenedy,  
 Oquenedy, Oquenedy, Quenade,  
 Quenedach, Quenedi, Quenedy):  
 Bernard (Capt): 2319; gt, 2588;  
 2703 [h].  
 Cornelius (Baron): lce, Spain 1694;  
 letters of commendation, 1702-3.  
 Daniel (En, Lt): 2069, A 27.  
 Denis: gt, 642; lce, 1202.  
 Edmond, chaplain: pay, 1430.  
 John (Adj): gt, 55; lce, 112; gt,  
 148, 153, 197; gt, has served  
 50 years, 1704.  
 Maurus (Qr master): 2081.  
 Morgan: gt, 883.  
 Morog: A 27.  
 Philip (Capt): A 27.  
 Thomas (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2461.  
 Triell (En): lce, 1555.  
 — (Adj): gt, 2276.
- KEOGH, Lt Theodore: lce, 2441.
- KERAN, William: lce, Rome, 467.
- KERCHEM, Capt Ernest: 2021.
- KERREL, *see* CARROLL.
- KERRY (Kiery), Lord of, brother-in-  
 law of O Sullivan Mór: 873 (n) l,  
 1031 (n) b.
- Kerry: 184 (n) *passim*, 2413 (n) a, A 27  
*passim*.
- KERVEL, John, chaplain: 1120.
- Kester: 2109.
- Keuraing: 2109.
- KEVENAGH, Kevenagh, Kavvanagh,  
*see* CAVANAGH.
- Kilbolane: A 27.
- Kilbred: A 27.
- Kilbretan: A 27.
- Kilconel: A 27.
- Kilcreaghe: 338 (n).
- KILDARE, Earl of, *see* FITZGERALD.
- Kildare: 184 (n), 272 (n), 1372 (n), A 27  
*passim*.
- KILKENNY, Bp of: 878 (n) d.
- Kilkenny: 1848 (n) b, d, 1867 (n) a,  
 1929 (n), 1960 (n) b, 1963 (n) a, b,



- 1970 (n) *a*, *b*, 2017 (n), 2025 (n), 2029 (n) *a*, 2031 (n) *b*, 2253 (n) *b*, A 25, A 27 *passim*.
- KILLALOE, Bp of, *see* O MULRIAN, Cornelius.
- Killcellman: A 27.
- Killmalloch (Kilmalac): 184 (n), A 27.
- Killybegs: 884 (n), 983 [a].
- KILMORE, Bp of, *see* DARCY, Oliver.
- Kilnekeuge: A 27.
- KINAHAN, *see* QUINEGHAN.
- Kinawley, *see* Can Awyle.
- KING OF ENGLAND, *see* Henry VIII; James I; Charles I; Charles II.
- KING OF FRANCE, *see* LOUIS XI; HENRI III; HENRI IV; LOUIS XIII.
- KING OF SPAIN, *see* PHILIP II; PHILIP III; PHILIP IV; CHARLES II.
- King's Co: A 27 *passim*.
- Kinsale (Corck Quinzal): 265 (n) *a*, 1163 (n) *c*, 1761.
- KINSCHOT: 1102.
- KIVETT, John: 184 (n).
- Knockfergus, *see* Carrickfergus.
- Knockinroe: A 27.
- Knocktofer, barony of: A 27.
- KNOWLES, Professor Edwin B: 69 (n) *c*, 87 (n).
- KOCK, Captn Adam: 2016.
- KOSKIER, German: gt, 2714.
- KYNAN (Kenano), Patrick, chaplain: pay, 998; 1207.
- KYNTIRE, Viscount, *see* MAC DONNELL.
- L
- La Bassée: 1637, 1713, 1745.
- LA BATERIA, Col John de: 2280.
- LA BICHE (Bizes, Vihe):  
Bonaventure de (Captn): 587, 1434, 1436; pn, 1531; 1974-5; dead, 1981.  
*See also* BIZES.  
Emile (de Biche), governor of Hulst: letter to Jehan Prats, 397; letter from Archduke Albert, 395.
- LACY (Laci, Lassi):  
John de: gt, 20.  
Peter (Lt): lce, 2459.  
Piers (Col), of Bruff: A 27.  
P—o: gt, 259.
- LADRON, Col Alonso: 1162, 1320.
- LA FAILLE, — de: letter to Infanta Isabella, 1032; correspondance with Girardot de Noscroy, 1040-1; orders to Count de Warfusse, 1045, 1047; orders to Count de Coupigny, 1046; orders to Treasurer-General, 1048; letter from P. de San Juan, 1115; letter to P. de San Juan, 1117; letter from C. de Bonnier, 1134; letter to M. de Sonaitre, 1138; letters to Juan de Necolalde, 1139-40.
- LAFAN, Patrick: ppt, Spain, 2003.
- LAGAN, Lord: 735.
- LAGHI, John de: 2255.
- LAGLEY, Fr Nicholas, chaplain: gt, 12; 46 (n) *c*.
- LA GRANGE, Col: 1532, 2013.
- LAINAG, Andrie: A 7.
- LALOR (De Lalor, Lalar, Laleur, Laloer, Lalour, Olalor):  
Denis (Captn, Qr master): gt to co, 1258; 1342; 1561, 1784 (n), 2250.  
George: lce, 537.  
James: ppt, 1820.  
Martin (Captn): 1911, 1915; gt to co, 1950; dead, 1973.  
Patrick (En): lce, 1736.  
Richard (Captn): gt, 2158; 2243, 2574, 2578; gt, 2635.
- LA LOYD, *see* DELAHYDE.
- LA MAR:  
Bartholomew de: 2469.  
Florent de, son of Bartholomew *supra*: gt, 2469.
- LA MARSELLA (Marsela), Captn John de: 52 [d], A 1.
- Lambeth: 575 (n) *b*.
- LAMBERT, Captn Oliver: letter to Earl of Leicester, 55 (n) *a*.
- LAMBOY, Col Baron de: 1877 [b], [c].
- LAMEO, En John: ppt, 2823.
- LA MONNERIE (La Moinerie, Moinery, Moniere), — de: 1848 (n) *c*, *d*, 1929 (n), 1954 (n), 1962 (n).
- LAMOY, Col Claude de: 577.
- L'Amprenesse: A 9.
- LANAN, Captn Daniel: gt, 2330.
- Landen: 831.
- LANE (Layan, Lein):  
Aeneas: lce, Italy, 92.  
Sir George, secretary to Ormond, 2186 (n) *b*; petition for payment of arrears due to him, 2261; 2261 (n).  
Hugh: 2186.  
John: 2186.  
Richard, of Tulske: A 27.
- LANG, Thomas: lce, 273.
- Langerbrugge: 437.
- LANGLIN (Langles):  
James (Captn): 2392.  
Nicolas: gt, A 1.
- LANORGAN, En William: lce, 2511.
- Languedoc: 106.
- LANY, Captn Thimoly: gt, 2260.
- LAOYD, *see* DELAHYDE.
- LAPLEY, —: 67 (n) *a*.
- LARRALVO, Marquis de: 2173.
- LA ROCHA, *see* ROCHE.
- LASOR, Maurice: gt, 326 [f].
- LASSI, *see* LACY.
- LASSO, Captn Francisco: 667.
- LA TORRE:  
Diego de: letter from Secretary of the Audience, 1667; letter from Marquis de Velada, 1716; letter to



- Captn de Novara, 1721; letter to Secretary of the Audience, 1801; sent to forbid Col Eugenio O'Neill going to Ireland, 1801 (n) *c*; in Ireland to recruit, 1879, 1882, 1892, 1897; to return to Spain, 1898, 1903, 1907; Confederation authorises him to raise regt, 1929 (n); 1952; recruiting difficulties, 1960 (n) *b*; 1963 (n) *a*; disagreement with Col Preston, 1963 (n) *b*; differences with Francisco Foissot, 1966; Philip IV advises his recall to Spain; summary of his letters to Philip IV, 1970; 1970 (n).
- Geronimo de, Secretary to Philip IV: letter to Don Leopold's Secretary, 2031; letter from Don Leopold's Secretary, 2063.
- LA TOUR, Anna de, widow of John de Monuilla: pn, 1343 [e].
- LAUHLIN (Lachlin), Nicholas: gt, 52 [a], 53.
- LAULES, Patricio: A 7.
- LAUREAN, Sgt John: gt, 2127.
- LAUSANNE, Bp of: 1040-1.
- LAVALA, Col — de: 2633.
- LA VILLA MEDINA, Count de: 297.
- La Vuere: 649.
- LAYAN, *see* LANE.
- LAYL, Eugenio Oge: 1157.
- LEAGHIO, Lt Thomas: lce, 2446.
- LEAHY, Flores: 2255.
- LEDE (Leede), Marquis de, Captain General of the Fleet: letter to Francisco de Mello, 1823; letter from Francisco de Mello, 1825; arranges for shipping to transport recruits from Ireland, 1881; 2239.
- LEDIRLAN (Le Dirlan, de Ledirlan), Baron: 896 [c], 905 [b].
- LEDROICHE, Edmond: lce, 400.
- LEDU, Edmond: gt, 326 [c].
- LEFFIR (L'Esser), Baron de, *see* O DONNELL, Hugh.
- LEGANES, Marquis de: 1131 (n).
- LEGG (Legh):  
Edward: gt, A 1.  
— (Lt Col): 2303, A 27.
- LEHAGAM, Sgt William: gt, 2355.
- LEICESTER:  
Earl of (1588): letter from Sir John Perrot, 8 (n) *c*; correspondence with Sir Francis Walsingham as to recruitment of Irish soldiers for Flanders, 8 (n) *d, e, f, h, i, j*; letter from Sir Thomas Shirley; letter from Lord Burghley, 8 (n) *m*; letter from Captn Oliver Lambert, 55 (n) *a*.  
Earl of (1641): petition from Col Hugh O Brian for licence to recruit in Ireland, 1698 (n).
- LEIN, *see* LANE.
- LEINGH, Thomas: gt, 221.
- Leinster: 1728 (n) *b*, 1861 (n) *b*.
- LEITRIM:  
Baron of, *see* BURKE, Captn William; BURKE, Thomas.  
Lord of, *see* O ROURKE.
- Leitrim: 970, 970 (n), A 25.
- Leix: 184 (n).
- LELAN, Captn Daniel: 2362, 2364.
- LEMMENS, Ottavio, judge advocate: 1404.
- LEN, William de: 1521.
- LENNAN (Lenan):  
Bryan (Captn), of Fale: A 27.  
John (En): gt, 1929.
- Lens: 1683 (n).
- LEON:  
Claudio de: 1700 [a].  
P—: 1771.
- Leon: 946, A 10.  
*See also* Index II.
- LEOPOLD WILLIAM (Archduke Leopold of Austria, Don Leopold), brother of Emperor Ferdinand II, Governor of the Low Countries (1647-56): 1787 (n); arranges for raising co of Irish infantry by Captn John Campbell, 1961-3; 2019, 2031; re-organises army in Flanders, 2064 (n) *a*; orders to authorities at Armentieres, 2097; besieges Arras, 2105 (n) *b*; orders to the Four Members, 2106; orders Irish troops leaving Conde's army to be arrested, 2107.  
Letters to Philip IV: 1966, 1971, 1989, 1991, 1996-7, 1999, 2013, 2018, 2029, 2036, 2041, 2080, 2102, 2110-11, 2117.  
Letters from Philip IV: 1969, 1992, 2001, 2017, 2031-3, 2038, 2062, 2118, Widow of Baron FitzGerald, 1998; Col Patrick O'Donnell, 1995; Baron Omallun, 1986; Col Gilbert Talbot, 2075.
- LERCO, Fr Edmund, chaplain: ppt, 849.
- LERMA:  
Duke of: letters from Archduke Albert, 613, 620, 632-3.  
Juan de: 925, 927.
- LERMA: 163, 165-7, 171, 174-5, 187, 189-90, 193, 252, 254, 258-9, 262, 264-6, 319, 371.
- LERNAEUS, Thadeus, chaplain: pay, 1269.
- LE ROUX, Rene, judge-advocate: 1423.
- Les Algarbes: A 10.
- Lesin: 1084.
- LESLIE (Lesly):  
— (Lord): 1572.  
— (General): A 25.
- Les Maillorcques: A 10.
- LESSENA, J. D.: letter to Secretary of Audience, 1084.
- LETTUCE, Edmund: pn, 184 (n).



- LEVINGSTON, John: gt, 728.  
 LEWES, Adjt Henry: 2319.  
 LEY (de la Lay):  
   John de: ppt, 18; letter to Archduke Albert, 556.  
   Thomas, uncle of John: 556.  
   Vasco, father of John: 556.  
 LEYDE, James: gt, A 1.  
 LEYNDEN, John: gt, 16.  
 LEYNSI, Leinsi, *see* LYNCH.  
 LEYRA, Sancho Martinez de: 68.  
 LIBRIDAS, Sgt John: gt, 2362.  
 Lichtervelde: 1014, 1021.  
 LICQUES, Baron de, Governor of Bourbourg: 1102; letter from Infanta Isabella, 1108-9.  
 Lickfour: A 27.  
 LICUREZ, Anna de, widow of Capt Dermot Dempsey: gt, 2565.  
 Liedekerck, baronnie de, *see* HAEN.  
 Liège: 365 (n), 1059.  
 Lierre: 219, 872, 977, 985, 1000, 1158, 1230, 1307, 1706, 2150-1, 2751, 2756-7, 2778, 2785, 2816.  
 Liers (Lillers?): 2208.  
 LIGNE, Prince de: orders from Archduke Albert, 582, 727; letter from Infanta Isabella, 791-2; embassy to England, 2440, 2454.  
 Lille: 582, 656, 1632, 1747, 1804, 2738.  
 Lillers: 807, 1772, 1774.  
 LIMALA, Baron de, *see* VILOA, Thomas Lopez de.  
 Limerick: 184 (n) *passim*, 780 (n), 1804 (n) c, 1863 (n) b, 1893 (n) a, b, 1895 (n) b, 2036 (n) a, 2413 (n) a, A 27 *passim*.  
 LINC, Lince, Lincha, *see* LYNCH.  
 LINE, En Benicio: gt, 2369.  
 Lingen: 1061.  
 LINGHEN, Edward: gt, A 1.  
 LIPEN:  
   Antonio Nicholas van der: 1891.  
   Martin Claysen van der: *ibid*.  
 Lisbon: 556, 698, 1356, 2358.  
 Liscarul (Lizcarul): 1358-9.  
 Lisle (Lyle): 272 (n), 2016 (n) b.  
 LISCO, Captn Fergus: 2064.  
 LISSANE, William: gt, 2618.  
 LIXNAW, Baron of: 869.  
 LLOYDE, Henry: gt, A 1.  
 Loa: 656.  
 LOACHE, *see* ROCHE.  
 Locheren (Lokeren): A 9.  
 LOCKE, —: letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, 747 (n) b.  
 LOCKHART, William: letters to Secretary Thurloe: 2162 (n) a, b.  
 LODGIES, Thomas, doctor: 255.  
 LOFTUS:  
   Adam, Abp of Armagh (1563-7) of Dublin (1567-1605), Lord Chancellor: letters to Earl of Salisbury, 67 (n) a, c; letter from Stephen Duff, 67 (n) b; letter from Richard Golborne, 80 (n) g.  
   Adam (En): lce, 1240.  
   William: gt, 681.  
 LOGH, Thadeus: gt, 2712.  
 Loghaman: 2253 (n) b.  
 LOGLAN, Catalina de, widow of Obrun Oslatter: pn, 1343 [c].  
 Lois, Teig: A 7.  
 LOMBARD, Peter, Abp of Armagh (1601-25): 307 (n) e, 326 (n); letter from Earls of Tyrone and Tirconnell, 333 (n) a.  
 Lombardy: 951.  
 London: 156 (n), 306 (n) e, 308 (n) a, 327 (n) b, 340 (n) c, 451 (n), 610 (n), 747, 747 (n) a, 877 [a], 896 [c], 905 [b], 1064, 1308, 1337, 1348-9, 1351, 1351 (n) a, 1352, 1354-5, 1357-8, 1362, 1382-3, 1410, 1412, 1455-6, 1516, 1534, 1539, 1545, 1551, 1575, 1577-8, 1589, 1601, 1612, 1614, 1617, 1622, 1626, 1630-1, 1633, 1670, 1687, 1690-2, 1698, 1707, 1714, 1738 (n), 1739-40, 1751, 1753, 1760-1, 1766-7, 1769, 1772, 1775, 1778, 1780 (n) a-e, 1782 (n) b, 1783, 1792 (n) e, 2027 (n) c, 2051 (n), 2201 (n) b, 2277 (n), A 5 (n), A 21, A 26.  
 Londonderry, *see* Derry.  
 LONG (Longanus, Longe):  
   David (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2195.  
   Maurice: gt, 169; lce, 292.  
 Longford: A 27 *passim*.  
 LONGNEVAL, Sgt Thomas de, *see* BARRY, Juana.  
 Loochristi (Lochristi): 1812-4.  
 LOPELLA, Captn Juan Bautista: 2087.  
 LOPEZ, *see* VILOA, Thomas Lopez de.  
 LORDS JUSTICES AND COUNCIL: letter to Viscount Falkland, 1070 (n) a; letter from Sir Henry Vane, 1707 (n); report from Sir William Cole, 1728 (n) a; letters to Sir Henry Vane, 1780 (n) b-e.  
 Loreto: 11, 23, 108 (n), 231, 461, 547, 1349, 2509-10, 2518.  
 LORNE, Lord of: his country, 1539 (n).  
 LORQUAN, John: gt, 104; lce, Spain, 109.  
 LORRAINE:  
   —, Duke of: correspondence with Sir Thomas Edmonds as to reception of Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, 328 (n) a, b; 328 (n) c.  
   Charles, Duke of, *aftruds* Charles III of France: supplies munitions for Irish wars through Invernizzi, 1863 (n) a; commands troops in campaign against France, 1762 (n); 1889; 1893; refused recruits by Rinuccini, 1893 (n) b; 1895 (n) b; letter to Ormonde, 1993 (n); 2013, 2017; arrests Col George Cusack,



- who has arrived with Irish troops, 2046 (n) *b*, 2058 (n) *b*; 2058; suggests to Cromwell that while he attacks Holland by land, the English should attack by sea, 2058 (n) *b*; 2064 (n) *b*; besieges Arras, 2105 (n) *b*; sent to Dunkirk to be conveyed to Spain, 2145 (n) *a*; 2146, 2195 (n) *a*, 2214, 2219, 2241-2, 2246-7, 2249, 2251, 2315 (n) *a*, 2814.
- Francis, Duke of: goes over to the French, 2145, 2145 (n) *b*; 2146, 2156, 2158, 2167, 2189, 2214, 2549.
- Lorraine: 2167, 2189, 2231-2, 2235, 2248, 2254, 2256, 2258-60, 2265-6, 2283-4, 2407.
- See also* Infantry (Lorraine).
- LOS BALBASES, Marques de: 873, 989[a].
- LOTT, Richard: 2255.
- Lough Coyte: A 25.
- Lough Foyle: 80 (n) *b*, 983 [a].
- LOUGHRAN, Edmond, auditor: 1784 (n).
- LOUGHRIAN, Catalina ni, widow of Bernard Slateny: pn, 1343 [d].
- Lough Swilly: 286 (n), 304 (n) *b*.
- LOUIS XI, King of France (1461-83): 452.
- LOUIS XIII, King of France (1610-43): 493, 597, 1030 [t].
- LOUIS XIV, King of France (1643-1715): 2407, 2645, 2709 (n) *a*.
- Louth: 184 (n), 403 (n) *b*, A 27 *passim*.
- Louvain (Lovaine, Lovayne): 196, 272 (n), 304 (n) *e*, 306 (n) *a*, *d*, 307 (n) *b*, *c*, *f*, 308 (n) *b*, 327 (n) *a*, 333 (n) *c*, 349, 372, 375-6, 379-82, 391, 430-6, 439-44, 447-8, 450, 456, 460, 481 (n) *b*, 515, 522 (n), 573, 656-7, 679, 701, 719, 752-4, 765, 828, 830, 876, 877 [c], 966, 1042, 1171, 1289, 1303, 1313, 1452, 1533, 1668, 1680, 1725, 1791, 1802, 1804 (n) *b*, 1805-7, 1952 (n), 2199, 2200, 2466, 2705, 2840, 2843, 2846, 2848, 2850, 2852, A 3, A 7; Col Preston's description of siege of, A 13; A 14, A 14 (n) *b*, A 16, A 21, A 24.
- Low Countries: *passim*.
- LOWTHER, Sir Gerrard: 1372 (n), 1792 (n) *d*.
- Loyhall: A 27.
- LUCAS A SAN FRANCISCO, Fr, *see* WADDING, Fr Luke.
- LUCHE, Andrew: 1119.
- LUCIE, Lucas, London merchant: 2051, 2051 (n).
- LUCWOOD, John: gt, 16.
- LUDLOW, Lt General —: 2194 (n), 2269 (n).
- LUDOVISI, Cardinal Ludovico: letter from Cardinal di Bagno, 859 (n).
- LUKE OF ST FRANCIS, Fr, *see* WADDING, Fr Luke.
- Lunack: 1299, 1300-3, 1306.
- LUNEO, Donat, chaplain: pay, 731.
- LURCANO, Gelasius: gt, 368, 459.
- LUTERE, Sgt —: gt, 1463.
- Lygoine (Leghorn, Livorno): 60 (n).
- LYNALL, Thomas: letter to Sir Francis Walsyngham, 8 (n) *l*.
- LYNAUGH, Sgt Andrew: 184 (n).
- LYNCH (Leinsi, Leynsi, Linc, Lince, Linch, Lincha):  
Arthur: A 27.  
Cornelius (Sgt): lce, 2541, 2627.  
Denis (En): lce, 2608.  
John, chaplain: 1931.  
Nicholas, Provincial of Dominicans: gt, 1086.  
Nicholas: pn, 184 (n); 325 (n); gt, 396.  
Oliver (En): 2294; gt, 2364.  
Ullick: pn, 184 (n).
- Lynestowne: A 27.

## M

## MABE:

- Gerat: gt, 326 [b].  
Valter: A 7.
- MACAFI, Eneas: lce, 693; gt, 781.
- MACAGLON, Lte Arturo, chaplain: pay, 2071.
- MACAIL, *see* MACHAIL.
- MAC AINGEALL, Mac Agnan, Mac Angell, *see* MAC CAUGHWELL.
- MACAN (Macana):  
Denis (Sgt): gt, 1327.  
James: gt, 733.  
William: lce, 418.
- MACARAG, Mac Cary, Macarru, *see* MACCARTHY.
- MAC ARTHUR (Arthur, Artur, Mac Art, Macart, Mc Ardre):  
Denis: gt, A 1.  
Edward: 272 (n).  
Martin: A 7.  
Robert: gt, 228; 290 (n) *c*.
- MAC AULIFFE (Macaliph, Machaliph, Mac Awlyffe):  
Cornelius: gt, 222.  
Dermot: 241.  
William (Sgt): 184 (n).
- MAC AWLEY (Mac Awly, Mac Awyle):  
Dermod: pn, 184 (n).  
John: pn, 184 (n).
- MAC BARON, *see* O NEILL, Captn Art;  
O NEILL, Captn Eugenio.
- MAC BRADY, Fr John: arrested, 878 (n) *d*.
- MAC BRIEN (Mac Bryan):  
Donel: A 7.  
Fynyne: pn, 184 (n).  
Morgan: gt, 156.  
Querred: gt, 1641.  
*See also* O BRIEN.



- MAC CALERO, Eveir: A 6.  
 MACCARIG, *see* MAC CARTHY.  
 MAC CARTANE, Henry: ppt, Germany, 2620.  
 MAC CARTHY (Cari, Carri, Carru, Carthie, Carthy, Carti, Carty, Cartye, Macarag, Macaragh, Macarru, Macarte, Macarti, Macartie, Maccarig, Mac Cartie, Mac Carty, Mac Cartye, Mac Cary, Mac Mortagh, Macortagh):  
 Anthony (Sgt): gt, 2595.  
 Bellaham, *see* Calaghane, *infra*.  
 Calaghane (Bellaham) (Lt): gt, 2353; lce, 2447.  
 Carlos, Lord of Musgry: 1031 (n) b.  
 Catalina, daughter of Denis, *infra*: pn, 1343 [i].  
 Cecilia, daughter of Denis, *infra*: pn, 1343 [e].  
 Cecilia, widow of John Cornelius Mahon: gt, 1900.  
 Charles (Corema, Cormac): gt, 134; lce, 318, 465.  
 Charles (Capt), of Cloncalaih: A 27.  
 Charles (Col), 'Mac Carty Rieagh' of Kilbretan: A 27; lce, 2513.  
 Charles, *alias* Cormac (Col), eldest son of Donough, *infra*, 2nd Viscount Muskerry: 2105 (n) a; transfers from French to Spanish service, 2163 (n); becomes Lt Col of Duke of York's regt, *ibid*; 2171 (n) a; orders as to fees for commissions, 2198 (n); 2253 (n) a; becomes Col, 2309; note of his career, 2309 (n); brings troops for Charles II to Dunkirk, 2529 (n) a, b, 2554 (n).  
 Cormac, *alias* Charles (En): 1829; gt, 1948.  
 Daniel (Capt): 1129 (n); gt, 1216; 1451, 1809; gt, 1921, 1942; dead, 1974; 1975, 2315 (n).  
 Daniel (Lt): lce, 2403, 2427.  
 Daniel (En): 2413 (n) b; lce, 2428.  
 Daniel, 'Carti Macartimor', Earl of Clancarty: in Tower, 648; 1343 [f]; gt, 2411; A 27.  
 Denis (En): gt, 33, 166, 750, 768, 934; lce, 388, 424, 485, 485 (n).  
 Denis (Capt): 2331; lce, 2370; 2436; ppt, 2481.  
 Dermot: gt, 171 [a].  
 Dermot (Lt): gt, 2353.  
 Dermot (En, Capt): lce, 1722; 1826, 1948; dead, *see* QUIN, Susanne.  
 Dermot *alias* Dormey (Capt): 2543.  
 Dermot (Lt): lce, 2427.  
 Dominick (Sgt): gt, 1321.  
 Donnell, father of Capt Thadeus, *infra*: 272 (n).  
 Donogh Moell: pn, 184 (n) bis.  
 Donough, 2nd Viscount Muskerry (Masquerrie, Moscry, Muscarrie, Muscry, Muskry) (Col): 1970 [d], 2016 (n) a, 2029 (n) a, 2105 (n) a; serving in France, Ormond asks him to go to Flanders to serve Charles II, 2162 (n) a, b; 2163 (n), 2194; surrendered Ross, 2309 (n), 2399, 2413 (n) a.  
     *See also* BUTLER, Eleanor.  
 Elena, daughter of Denis, *supra*: ppt, 638; gt, 726, 786, 977, 979; pn, 950, 1343 [i].  
 Elena, sister of Denis, *supra*: pn, 1343 [b].  
 Elena, sister of Captain Thadeus, *infra*: pn, 1343 [a] [f].  
 Eugenio (En): lce, 2331.  
     *See also* Owen, *infra*.  
 Felix: gt, 2274.  
 Finin: gt, 165.  
 Florence: his base brother and foster brother to be hostages, 80 (n) d.  
 Florence: gt, 243, 247; lce, 280; gt, 342, 345, 348; 1031 (n) b; lce, 1370.  
 Florence (En, Capt): gt, 1679, 2134; 2235; lce, England, 2662.  
 Florence (Fr): 873 (n).  
 Lady Florence: 459 (n).  
 Francisco: A 7.  
 Juan, orphan of Col Charles, *supra*: pn, 1343 [d].  
 Maurice: gt, 167.  
 Onora, daughter of Denis, *supra*: pn, 1343 [i].  
 Owen (Capt), of Glocere: A 27.  
 Patrick: 455.  
 Peter (Fr), S.J., chaplain: 1580 (n).  
 Thadeus, *alias* Teg, Thomas (Capt): gt, 77; 256, 272 (n), 291, 295, 367, 388, 400, 438, 457, 465, 491, 499, 503, 506, 509, 552, 562, 566, 576 (n) a, b, 577, 592 [b]; lce, Spain, 672; gt, 855; 942-3, 1061, 1067, 1089; dead, 1142; 1343 [c].  
 Thadeus, *alias* Thomas (En, Capt): 784; lce, 1176; 1902; gt, 1913; 1916, 1978.  
 Theodore (Capt): gt, 2477; 2481; gt, 2506.  
 Teige (Capt): A 27.  
 Walter: gt, 236.  
 — (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2071.  
 —, 'Mc Cartye Riogh': 184 (n).  
 —, Countess of Clancarty: 531.  
 MAC CASSIN, Donatus, doctor: 2187.  
 MAC CAUGHWELL (Cabellus, Cavell, Cavello, Cavellus, Mac Agnan, Mac Aingeal, Mac Angell):  
 Hugh, chief chaplain, Guardian of St Anthony's, Louvain, afterwards Abp of Armagh: 182, 272 (n), 430, 447, 451, 571 (n) c, d, 658, 662-3, 719; letter to Luis Verreyken, 449; letters to Arch-



- duke Albert, 656-7; dead, 1009; A 6, A 7.
- Patrick: lce, 802.
- MAC CHEHICE, *see* MAC SHEEHY.
- MAC COGHLAN, *see* COGHLAN.
- MACCOREMOGQ, Thomas: gt, 1659.
- MAC COTOLI, Holan: gt, 1647.
- MAC CREAS, Donogh: A 7.
- MAC CRODDYN, Fr Tyrlogh: 571 (n) b.
- MACCROFTE, *see* MAGRATH.
- MAC DANIEL, *see* MAC DONNELL.
- MAC DAVID:
- Edmond Grome: attainted, 403 (n) b.
- John (Fr), O.S.A., chaplain: pay, 2182.
- Phelim Réagh: attainted, 403 (n) b.
- MAC DERMOT (Dermicio, Dermott, Macdermody, Mac Dermody Roe, Macdiermeda, Macdiermedy Rie, Macdiermodi, Macdiermot, Macdiermuda, Macdomiots, Macdormedy, Magderivote):
- Amiele (En): 2104.
- Bernard (Captn): gt, lce, 315; gt, 1421; 1460.
- Caloo: gt, 47.
- Daniel: gt, 326 [d].
- Eugenio: gt, 963.
- Hugo: gt, 326 [c].
- John: ppt, 815.
- Mortan (Captn): 2123, 2125; gt, 2130; 2134, 2150-1, 2226.
- See also* FRIEL, Catalina.
- Roger: gt, 267.
- MAC DESMOND, Cormack: 272 (n).
- MAC DONNELL (Mac Daniel, Macdonald, Macdonile, Macdonnel, Macdoneill, Magdonados, Magdonel):
- Aeneas: gt, 1168.
- Alexander (Captn): lce, 1397; 2215, 2357; dead, 2735; A 27.
- Charles (Lt): A 27.
- Colla: gt, 782.
- Edmond: gt, 326 [e].
- Gelasius, nephew of Earl of Tyrone: 800.
- Gorme: his son a hostage, 80 (n) b.
- John (Captn): lce, 1369.
- Maurice (Captn): 1114; gt to co, 1287; 1368; lce, 1386; 1409; offers to raise 300 recruits if licence available from Charles I, 1582; 1735, 1746, 1784 (n), 1792, 1818; gt, 1827; trsfed, 1846; lce, 1876.
- Raynell: lce, 289.
- Sorley *alias* Samberloy, Sanherley, Sobne, Earl of Antrim and Viscount of Kyntire (Captn, Col): 827, 836, 849, 896 [c], 905 [b], 944, 1136, 1144, 1190; offers to recruit regt of 2000, 1869; made Col, 1870; 1871; lce, 1872; to be helped in recruiting by Captn Maurice, *supra*, 1876; Philip IV dubious of suitability of Scots troops to be recruited, 1878; payment for ships to transport troops, 1881; sailors desert, 1960 (n) b; 1970 [d].
- See also* BUCKINGHAM, Duke of.
- Teig (Captn): 184 (n).
- Thadeus: gt, 129.
- Thomas: to recruit co of Scots, 1263.
- MAC DONOGH (Mac Donagh, Macdonnogh, Macdonoch, Mac Donogo, Macdonoq, Magdonogh, Magdonoghe):
- Bryan (Lt): A 27.
- Charles (En, Lt): gt, 2381; 2483.
- Christopher (En): A 27.
- Emmanuel (Captn): 2319, 2483, 2497.
- Ferdinand, *see* MADIN, Anna ni.
- Florence (Captn): 2319, 2611.
- John (Lt), of Cusca: gt, 2381; A 27.
- Michael (En, Lt), of Coloony: lce, 2402; A 27.
- Terlogh (Lt): A 27.
- MAC DORMEDY, *see* MAC DERMOT.
- MAC DOWEL (Macdouil):
- Donah: lce, 546.
- Lowys (En): A 27.
- MAC EDMOND (Mac Edmondo):
- Theobald: gt, 1650.
- Wm: 47 (n) b.
- MAC EGAN, *see* GEOGHEGAN.
- MAC ELLIGOTT (Eleyott, Elgot, Elligotte, Machquiligot, Queligor, Queligot):
- Mauricio (Sgt): gt, 2353.
- Thomas (En, Captn): gt, 1328; 1438, 1509.
- Thomas: pn, 184 (n).
- (Captn): 2413 (n) b; ppt, Germany, 2616.
- MACENE, *see* MAC KEGNE.
- MAC ENRI (Mac Enrique):
- John, Lte, chaplain: 2220.
- Richard: gt, 21.
- MACATER, John: lce, 414.
- MAC GAURAN (Mac Gawran), Sgt Luke: 2230.
- See also* MAC SAMRAGAN.
- MACGENILLONEL, Sgt Patrick: 2053.
- MACHRODRIGO, Sgt William: gt, 2704.
- MAC GENNIS (Mac Genid, Mac Genis, Magenis, Magenise):
- Arthur, Viscount Iveagh: 1861 (n) b, c, 2302, A 27.
- Brian (En): A 27.
- Brian (Lt): A 27.
- Constantine (Lt, Captn): gt, 2189; A 27.
- Phelim (Captn): A 27.
- : A 6.
- MACGLIBRIDI, Tireligh: gt, 326 [a].
- MAC GILLARAY, Daniel: trsfed, 2738.



- MAC GILLICUDDY (Macgillodye, Macgillicudi, Macgillicudie, Macguilliendy, Macgullicudie, Macgullicudy, Macgulloccudy, Macgullucudy, Mackguilliguilly, Maghelgody, Magullucody, Maquil-coel):  
 Cornelius (Captn): gt, 2353; 2427, 2473; gt, 2593; 2594-5; lce, 2615.  
 Denis (Major): 2328; gt to co, 2351; 2359, 2361; lce, England, 2390; 2530; 2413 (n) b, 2473; lce extended, 2554.  
 Denis, *alias* Dermot (En): gt, 2594; lce, 2614.  
 Florenzo (En): gt, 2353; lce, 2451.  
 Patrick (Sgt): gt, 2089.
- MAC GRATH, *see* MAGRATH.
- MAC GUIRE, *see* MAGUIRE.
- MACGUNIN, John: gt, 326 [d].
- MACH, Lte Malachy, chaplain: pay, 2205.
- MACHAIL (Macail), Thomas (En, Captn): 1845, 1927, 1933; gt, 1943.  
 MACHALIPH, *see* MAC AULIFFE.
- MACHANE, Julim: gt, 326 [g].
- MACHEMEMORAN, — (En): gt, 1913.
- MACHENEL, Sgt Oen: gt, 1324.
- MAC HENRY (Macherey, Machery, MaKere, Ogmakere):  
 Dermot: gt, 91; lce, Spain, 115.  
 John (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2252; 2257.
- MACHICHI, *see* MAC SHEEHY.
- MACHILPATRICE, *see* MAQUELPATRICK.
- MACHOGLEN, *see* COGHLAN.
- MACHON, *see* MAHON.
- MACHOUEN, Patricio, chaplain: pay, 1329.
- MACHOUGEGAN, *see* GEOGHEGAN.
- MACHOYRE, *see* MAGUIRE.
- MACHU, Machui, *see* MATTHEWS.
- MACIBIN, Patrick: gt, 783.
- MAC INESLIS, Donogh: lce, 505.
- MAC IWARD, *see* WARD.
- MAC KEYNE (Macene), Turlough (Terreloch), gt, 33; 47 (n) b.
- MACKENISSI, William: lce, 1251.
- MAC KIERNAN, *see* MACQUIERNAN.
- MAC KEON, *see* MACHOUEN.
- MACKERIN, En John: gt, 2136.
- MAC KIBBIN, *see* MACIBIN.
- MAC KILPATRICK, *see* MAQUELPATRICK.
- MACLAER, En —: gt, 2574.
- MAC MAHON, *see* MAHON.
- MAC MEROCHENI, En John: 2703 [c].
- MAC MILAGHLAN, *see* O MULOGHLYN.
- MACMILOR, *see* O REILLY, Captn John.
- MACMODY, Captn Min: 2648.
- MAC MORGAN, Eneas: gt, A 1.
- MAC MORRIS (Macmoris, Macmureitz):  
 Arturo, drum-major: 1436.  
 Richard, 'probably Richard Morres of Templemore': 522, 522 (n).
- Richard: gt, 1262.  
 Thomas: gt, 678, 704, 848, 848 (n).  
 William (Sgt): 184 (n).
- MACNAMARA (Macnemara):  
 Daniel (Captn): lce, 2314.  
 Denis (Captn): lce, Italy, 2510.  
 Felix, drum-major: 2319.  
 Remy (En): gt, 2588.  
 Theodore (En): gt, 2353; lce, England, 2452.  
 William (Sgt): gt, 2353.  
 —, of Creevagh: A 27.
- MACNEALIS, Donogh: lce, France, 364.
- MACNRIGOT, Captn John: gt, 2353.
- MACOGH, Eugenio: gt, 2712.
- MACONEL, *see* CONELL.
- MACONOR, Dermot: lce, Spain, 708.
- MACORARDI, Eugenio: gt, 326 [h].
- MACORTAGH, *see* MAC CARTHY.
- MAC OWNHY, Conogher: pn, 184 (n).
- MACQUENAR, Patrick: gt, 1450.
- MA[c] QUORT, Juan: A 7.
- MACQUIERNAN, Lte, chaplain: 2406.
- MACRA, Macrafte, *see* MAGRATH.
- MAC RORY (Macro, Mac Ruory, Macruy):  
 Cormac: gt, 48.  
 Hugo (Sgt): gt, 2588.  
 Malachy (Lt): gt, 2381.  
 Mauroi (Captn): 1932, 1936; gt, 1944.  
 Owny, 'the famous rebel that took prisoner the Earl of Ormond': 1188 (n).  
 Tadeo: A 7.
- MAC ROS, Con, *see* O CONNOR, Charles.
- MACRIDE, Philip: gt, 198.
- Macroom: 2194 (n).
- MAC RUDDERY, Morrice, brother of Kt of Kerry: pn, 184 (n).
- MAC SAMRAGAN (Mac Gawran), Edmond, Abp of Armagh: ppt, 14; killed, 65 (n) a.
- MAC SHANE, Dermot: pn, 184 (n).
- MAC SHEEHY (Mac Chechice, Machichi, Mac Shehiee):  
 Daniel: gt, 358.  
 John: 184 (n).  
 Manus: pn, 184 (n).  
 Moitogh (Sgt): 184 (n).
- MACSONE, *see* MAC SWINEY.
- MAC SWINEY (Machsuiui, Macqsini, Macsone, Macsoyni, Macsuini, Macsunnne, Macsuyin, Macsuyini, Mac-Swyne, Mac Swynie, Maksuini, Macsuinuy, Soyin, Soyni, Suini, Suney, Suyne, Suyni, Suyno, Sweny, Swyne):  
 Colero: gt, 773.  
 Daniel, *see* Juan, *infra*.  
 Denis: lce, 490.  
 Dualtach (Captn): dead, gt to widow, 2602.  
 Edmund: lce, 481; A 7.



- Edmund (Capt): 1917; ppt, England, 2492.
- Eveden, a justice of the peace: 1782 (n) a.
- Juan, orphan of Daniel, *supra*: pn, 1343 [f].
- Leonora, widow of Sgt William Nachlen: pn, 1343 [g].
- Marirut (En): gt, 2129.
- Maurice (Capt, Col): 1346 (n), 1611-2; petition to Don Ferdinand, 1613.
- See also* CROULY, Elena.
- Molmory, *see* NENEVUIN, Eylin.
- Owen (Eugenio): pn, 184 (n); gt, 326 [b], 511, 822; 873 (n) e.
- Rory (R—o) (En): 184 (n); gt, 419.
- Terence (Capt): Ice, Germany, 2642.
- MAC TEIGE (Mac Teig, Mac Tiege):  
Guillermo: A 7.  
John (En), *alias* Mac Teige of Carbury: A 27.
- MAC THOMAS (Mas Thomas): David: Ice, 1560; 2122 (n) a.
- MAC TRENIR, Philip: Ice, 551.
- MAC WILLIAM JEGHTER, *see* BURKE.
- MACXY, Owen: A 7.
- MADIN (Madaine, Maden, Omadin, ni Vadin):  
Anna ni, *see* KELLY, Denis.  
Anna ni, widow of Ferdinand Mac Donogh: pn, 1343 [j].  
Donoch: Ice, 338; gt, 340.  
Hugo (En, Sgt): ppt, 2490; Ice, 2543.  
John (Lte), chaplain; pay, 1473; trsfd, 1734; trsfd, pay, 1789.
- MADOC, Maurice: Ice, 427.
- Madrid: 71 (n), 150 (n), 265 (n) b, 341, 346, 390, 419, 429 (n) d, 561, 588 (n), 589, 595, 597, 603-5, 621, 641, 646, 669, 673, 677, 683, 703, 718-9, 752, 757, 760-2, 765, 801, 814, 822, 833, 855, 873, 873 (n) n, 874, 878 (n) d, 883, 892-3, 899, 924, 930, 960, 982, 989, 994, 1002, 1029, 1030 [x], 1031 (n) a, b, 1038, 1126-7, 1154, 1159, 1179, 1186, 1252, 1289, 1296, 1357 (n), 1447 (n), 1526 (n), 1527 (n) e, 1533-4, 1544 (n), 1596, 1618 [h], 1683, 1685, 1699-00, 1764, 1774, 1774 (n) d, e, 1792 (n) c, 1802, 1848 (n) c, 1969, 1992, 2001, 2011, 2014, 2017-8, 2027 (n) a, d, 2031, 2033, 2038-9, 2058 (n) c, 2062, 2118, 2147, 2203, 2411, 2438, 2515, 2529, 2554, 2667-8, 2679 (n), 2702, 2767, 2781, 2821, 2829-31, 2833, 2840, 2843-6, 2851-2.
- MAELE, Louis van, Envoy of Infanta Isabella at London: letter to Antonio de Suarez de Arguelo, 747.
- MAES:  
J. B. (J. R.): 1061, 1844.  
Philip: correspondence with Archduke Albert, 497, 500, 515, 527, 532, 534.  
Maestricht: 49, 75, 446 (n), 578, 830, 1027, 1310, 1796 (n) a, A 13.  
MAGDERIVOTE, *see* MAC DERMOT.  
MAGDONADOS, *see* MAC DONNELL.  
MAGDUL, Alin: gt, 205.  
MAGENILLE, Edmond: Ice, 529.  
MAGENIS, *see* MAC GENNIS.  
MAGEOGHAN, Mageocheman, Mageoghagan, *see* GEOGHEGAN.  
MAGER, Mahohier, *see* MEAGHER.  
MA GIBON, *see* GIBON.  
MAGNER, Francis: 451 (n).  
MAGNUS:  
Constantine (Capt): 2703 [i].  
Constantine (En): 2703 [i].  
MAGRALL, *see* MAGRATH.  
MAGRATH (Mac Croite, Macra, Macrafte, Macragh, Macrah, Magrak, Magrall, MCragh, ni Crah):  
Bernard, chaplain: 943, 1077; dead, 1306.  
Egmondo: gt, 1657.  
John (Capt): 2171; Ice, England, 2453.  
Maria, orphan of Oliver, *infra*: pn, 1343 [k].  
Oliver, *see* Maria, *supra*.  
Owen Groome, Vicar Provincial, O.S.F.: 286 (n).  
Roger (En): gt, 2361.  
Thomas: 94 (n), 338 (n).  
— (En): gt, 1341.
- MAGREGIBORN, Edmond: 455.
- MAGRILES PATRICE, *see* MAQUEL-PATRICK.
- MAGUINO, Captn Constantine: gt, 2254.
- MAGUIRE (Guire, Mac Guier, Mac Guire, Mc Guyre, Mac Gwre, Mac Gwyer, Machoyre, Maghir, Maguir, Maguirre, Manquiere):  
Connor (Lord): 1728 (n) b, 1792 (n) e.  
Conor (En): A 27.  
Cuconnaught *alias* Cormac, d. 1608: 271 (n) a, c, 272 (n), 286 (n); Ice, 290; 290 (n) a-c, 304 (n) e, 306 (n) a, 325 (n); attainted, 403 (n) b; 575 (n) b.  
Carlos: A 7.  
Eugene (En): 2703 [i].  
John (Capt): 847, 858.  
HUGH (Sgt): ppt, 2470.  
[Sir Hugh], slain 1600: 599 (n).  
Hugh (Col): 2116 (n) a.  
John (Capt), son of Cuconnaught, *supra*: gt, 326 [d]; letter to Archduke Albert, 599; 777 (n), 778, 788, 791-2, 1285.  
John, son of Captn John, *supra*, and nephew of Col John O'Neill: gt 1285.



- Patrick: gt, 326 [d].  
 Patrick, of Balykilclunry: A 27.  
 Roger: 1728 (n) b.  
 Terence (Capt): 1854; dead, 1856.  
 —, brother of Cuconnaught, *supra*,  
 a pledge: 80 (n) b.
- MAGUNA, Patrick, drum-major: 2326.
- MAHON (Machon, Mac Magon, Mac Mahon, Mac Mahowne, Macmahum, Macmaon, Mahan, Mahona, Mahoni, Mahun, Mahuna, Mahuno, Malun, Mauno, Omahon, Omahoni, O Mahoni, Omahouni, O Mahowny, Omahun):  
 Arthur: gt, 813; lce, 937.  
 Brian Oge, *alias* Brian na Sawagh: attainted, 403 (n) b.  
 Conogher: pn, 184 (n).  
 Cornelius: gt, 171 [c].  
 Cornelius (En): lce, gt, 1557.  
 Daniel (Capt): gt, 171 [c], 326 [e]; 1136, 1142, 1213; 1343 [i].  
 Daniel: gt, 2712.  
 Denis (Capt): gt, 227; to raise co, 1672; gt to co, 1689.  
 Dermot: gt, 326 [d].  
 Dermot: 2255.  
 Donnell: pn, 184 (n).  
 Elena, widow of Daniel Clanci: pn, 1343 [e].  
 Finni: gt, 171 [b].  
 James (Sgt): gt, 2788.  
 John Cornelius, *see* MAC CARTHY, Cecilia.  
 Leonora, widow of Thomas Burke: pn, 1343 [b].  
 Leonora, widow of Sgt Dermot Ruis: pn, 1343 [c].  
 Maria (Mariana), wife of Hugo Shaughnessy: gt, 496, 592 [d]; 630; begging licence, 1065; pn, 1343 [g].  
 Marie, wife of Peter FitzGerald: 2213 (n).  
 Maurice (Capt, Major), Seigneur of Mahemburg: 839, 882, 956, 963, 984, 1136, 1150, 1316; gt, 1322; 1343 [d], [f]; commended to Philip IV by Don Ferdinand, 1683; 1717; commended to Philip IV by Marquis of Castel Rodrigo, 1864-5; 1893, 1918, 1930, 1980, 2032, 2035, 2116 (n) a; his post filled because of his defection, 2138; 2213, 2213 (n), 2590, 2712.  
 Michael: lce, England, 2387.  
 Quien (Quieno): lce, 558; gt, 814.  
 Richard: lce, 626.  
 Roderick (Sgt): 935.  
 Terence (En), son of Baron of Carrigconli: gt, 120; 1431.  
 Thomas: gt, 171 [c].  
 Tieg ne Bally: pn, 184 (n).  
 —: 271 (n) c.
- (Dr), 'a divine': 272 (n).
- MAHORONE, Denis: lce, 557.
- MAKERE, *see* MAC HENRY.
- MALE:  
 Juan Baptista van: 874.  
 Livinus van de: 1435.
- Malembourg (Malemberg): 1864-5, 2213 (n).
- MALES, Luis: letter to Francisco Giaverina, 2140 (n) a.
- MALFONT, Sgt William: gt, 1341.
- MALINES, Abp of: 383, 1009, 1796 (n) a.  
 Malines: 306, 383, 452, 455, 575, 1163, 1181, 1208, 1600, 2094, 2108, 2606, 2648.  
*See also* Index II.
- MALLEA:  
 Juan (Capt): 1251.  
 Philip de (Col): 2586.
- MALLER, Henry: lce, 562.
- MALLI, Maly, *see* O MALLI.
- MALLON, *see* OMALLUN.
- MALSON, William: lce, 529.
- MALUN, *see* MAHON.
- MALVEZZI, Marquis Virgilio: 1617; in London to discuss recruiting from Ireland and question of loan to Charles I, 1618, 1622; 1713, 1716, 1739; letters to Don Ferdinand, 1626, 1630, 1635, 1669, 1687; letters from Don Ferdinand, 1608; from Marquis de Velada, 1631; from Miguel de Salamanca, 1605, 1615; letter to Miguel de Salamanca, 1692.
- MANAG:  
 Elis, orphan of Walter, *infra*: pn, 1343 [k].  
 Leonora, orphan of Walter, *infra*: *ibid*.  
 Walter: *ibid*.
- MANCICIDOR, Juan de, Secretary to Archduke Albert: 251, 449, 472 (n); letters to Luis Verreyken, 374-5, 380, 451; letter from Philip III, 580.
- Mandeville, Lt Edward, of Ballyyne: A 27.
- Manlin: 180.
- MANRIQUE, Col Joseph: 2783.
- MANQUIERE, *see* MAGUIRE.
- MANSFELT (Maunsfeyld), Count: 873 (n) i, 1087 (n), A 12.
- MAQUELPATRICK (Machilpatrice, Magriles Patrice), Captn Thadeus: 1976, 2030; dead, 2098.
- MAQUESHY, John: gt, 88.
- MAQUIRY, *see* MERURY.
- Mardick (Mardyck): 893, 1030 [o], 1099, 1101, 1136, 1804 (n) a, 1887, 1904.
- Margate: 1163 (n) b.
- MARGREDI, Sgt John: gt, 1926.
- MARIA, Infanta of Spain: 840, 859 (n), 948 (n), 968.
- Mariemont: 304 (n) e, 353-4, 392, 473, 475-7, 494-6, 498-9, 535-7, 593, 596, 638-9, 671-5, 690-2, 694-5, 697.



- MARNE, Luys de: A 7.  
 MARTIN, Lucas: trsf'd, 2813.  
 MARTINEZ, *see* PAZ, Pedro Martinez de.  
 Maruelles (Merville?): 2210.  
 MARURY (Maquiry), Capt'n Maurice: petition to Infanta Isabella, 1033-4; 1035.  
 MASDUN, Thomas: lce, 272.  
 MASENI, Thiriloq: gt, A 1.  
 MAS HUL, Gerod: gt, 16.  
 MASQUERRYE, *see* Mac Carthy.  
 Massanglashy: A 27.  
 MASSARI, —: 2201 (n) a.  
 MASSI:  
   John (Adj't): 1343 [h].  
   Manish, orphan of John, *supra*: pn, 1343 [h].  
 MASTERSON, Thomas: gt, 745.  
 MATTHEWS (Machu, Machui):  
   Charles (Capt'n): gt to co, 2375.  
   Eugene, Abp of Dublin, d. 1623: 8 (n) x, 481 (n) b, 526 (n) a.  
   Gerot: gt, A 1.  
 MAUGRE, Col —: letter from Archduke Leopold, 1961; 1962.  
 MAUR, *see* MOORE.  
 MAUNO, *see* MAHON.  
 MAURICE (Mauricio):  
   — (Count): 537 (n) a.  
   —, 'son of late Count Maurice: 905 [a].  
   Dualto, com. capt'n.: 1906.  
   Robert (En): gt, 2353.  
 MAYENNE, Duc de: 46 (n) b.  
 MAY, Sir Humphrey: letter to Sir Arthur Chichester, 579 (n) a.  
 MAYGHE, En Dominick: trsf'd, 1976.  
 MAYO:  
   Earl (Marquis) of, *see* BURKE.  
   Viscount: A 27.  
   *See also* Index II.  
 Mayo: 884 (n), 2223 (n), A 27.  
 MAYORDAN, Melchior: 1119.  
 MAXI (Maxum):  
   John (Adj't): gt, 206.  
   Michael (Sgt): lce, 142.  
 MAXMILIAN, Governor of the Low Countries (1692-1701): letter to Spanish Privy Council as to Augustinians, 2851.  
 MAZARIN, Cardinal: 1869; correspondence with Rinuccini, 1891 (n), 1929 (n); 1954 (n) b; sends the brothers White to the Bastille, 2109 (n) a; advancing France's interests in Flanders, 2110-11; asks Cromwell to allow Duke of York to remain in French service, 2157 (n) a; refuses, and afterwards grants, leave to Viscount Muskerry (*see* MAC CARTHY) to go to Flanders, 2162 (n) b, 2163 (n) b; forces Digby to leave France, 2197; 2686 (n).  
 MBEL (*sic*), En Denis: gt, 396.  
   *See also* FRANQUIN-MEABLE.  
 MEABLE, *see* FRANQUIN-MEABLE.  
 MEAGH, *see* MYAGH.  
 MEAGHER (Mager, Mahohier):  
   Charles: lce, 75.  
   John (Lt, Capt'n), of Grange: 2223, A 27.  
 Zierlock: lce, 95.  
 MEATH, Bishop of, excommunicated, A 25.  
 Meath: 184 (n) *passim*, 271 (n) c, 1861 (n) b, A 25, A 27 *passim*.  
 MEDE, Nicholas, chaplain: pay, 651.  
 MEEHORO, Daniel: gt, 326 [b].  
 Meerbeek: 2108.  
 Meffe: 1058-9.  
 MEINART (Meynart), Capt'n Martin: 52 [d], A 1.  
 MELEN, Elisabeth, widow of Manis mac ny Urchun: pn, 1343 [e].  
 MELLO, Francisco de, Comte d'Assumar, Governor of the Low Countries (1641-44): 1687, 1786, 1787 (n); letter from Fr Luke Wadding, 1791; 1792 (n) c, 1796 (n) b, 1798 (n) c; letter from Philip IV, 1802; 1809; correspondence with Marquis de Leede, 1823, 1825; 1844; sends Foissot to Ireland for recruits, 1848 (n) c, 1867; A 24, A 25.  
 MELOY, *see* MOLLOY.  
 MELYN, Liberto, notary: 430, A 3.  
 MEN, Jenne: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).  
 MENDEZ, Domingo: to make payment to Col O'Neill, 2847.  
 MENDOZA (Mendosa):  
   Antonio Hurtado de (Col): 2550, 2613, 2624, 2652, 2662, 2717, 2721, 2741, 2765.  
   Pedro: to supply powder and ball, 2058.  
 MENESSES (Menejes, Meneses, Menjes):  
   Bernardine de, Governor of Perpignan: 911.  
   Francisco de (Col): 2085, 2186, 2282, 2345.  
 Menin: 1971.  
 MER, *see* O MOORE.  
 Merbe-le-Potrie: 2205-7.  
 MERCEDES (Mercades), Col Baltasar: 2044, 2074.  
 Mereghem: 1014, 1019-21.  
 MERIMAN, Merseman, *see* TYRRELL, Dominic Meriman.  
 MERLI, Fr Bernard: ppt, 2734.  
 MERNA, Seigneur of, *see* CLARAMBON.  
 Merville: 727, 1784, 1796-7, 1799.  
 MESIA Y PAZ, Antonio: 2689.  
 MESSIA, Diego (Duke de): 838, 1008; letters to Infanta Isabella, 986-7; letters from Infanta Isabella, 947, 952, 969, 973.  
 MIAGH, *see* MYAGH.



- MICHAN:  
Auly Falvy: 2552.  
Lawrence, father of Auly.
- MIDDLETON (Middleton), Col John: 2166 (n), 2188, 2195 (n) b.
- Milan: 333 (n) a, b, 336, 340 (n) c, 1349, 1862-3, 1877 [d], 2559, 2770, 2816.  
*See also* Index II.
- Milford Haven: 896 [d], 905 [d].
- MILLER, John: lce, 552.
- MILLIGAN, Bernard: lce, 95.
- MILTOWN: A 27.
- MIN (Men):  
James: gt, 116.  
Jenne: lce, England, 131.
- MINCANE, William: pay, 2590.
- MINSHEWE, —: 8 (n) x.
- MISSET, Lt Robert: A 27.
- MITFORD, Fr —: 327 (n) b.
- MOBOA, *see* NOBOA.
- MOCADEL, William: gt, A 1.
- MOCAREDESI, Sgt William: gt, 2127.
- MOCCLAN, Sgt Gelasius: lce, 1368.
- MODE, Michael: gt, A 1.
- MOINERY, *see* MONNERIE.
- MOLANO:  
Bernard, chaplain: pay, 1499.  
Donatus, chaplain: 942.
- MOLEDY (Moledi, Muledi, Omoledi, O Mulerie):  
Charles (Captn, Col): 1981, 1985, 2035, 2064, 2064 (n) b; gt, 2078.  
Daniel: lce, 521.  
Patrick: 1993; commended to Philip IV, 2018; ppt, 2019; 2039, 2667; memorial on behalf of Lt Col Farrell, 2679 (n).
- MOLLOY (Meloy, Molmoy, Mulloy, Muloy, O Molloy):  
Artur (Captn): 2267, A 27.  
Cahir: gt, 1660.  
Charles (Captn, Col): 2253, 2253 (n) b, A 27.  
Conor (Sgt): gt, 2123.  
Edmund (Lt): A 27.  
Edward (Lt): A 27.  
Fannagh (En): A 27.  
Hugo: lce, 506.  
John Mac Gerrot (Lt): A 27 *bis*.  
Paul (Fr), O.S.F., chaplain: 2174.  
Stephen (Captn): A 27.  
Terence, of Gortachutrey: A 27.  
Therlagh (Captn): A 27.
- MOLOCHAN, Leonora, widow of En Daniel Greg: pn, 1343 [k].
- MOLYNEUX, *see* MULLINEUX.
- MOMIEL, En: gt, 1932.
- MONCADA, Francisco de, Governor of the Low Countries (1633-4): payt to Col Hugh O Donnell, 1252; 1313; letter from Juan de Neocolalde, 1337.
- MONCLE, Col the Baron de: 1049.
- MOINERY, Monniere, *see* LA MONNERIE.
- Monaghan: 403 (n) b, 777 (n), A 15.
- Monaneme: A 27.
- MONES, *see* MORRIS.
- MONROY, Marquis de: 2609.
- Mons: 452, 454, 1423, 1831-2, 1836, 1839, 1841, 2108.
- Montague: 72 (n) b, 456.
- Mont Cassel: 1713.
- MONTECUCCOLI, Count de: letter from Secretary of the Audience, 2116.
- MONTERBAUT, —, governor of Quesnoy: 1836.
- MONTEREV, Count de: 1121.
- MONTEYA, Don Pedro Luya de: 1627.
- Montmedy: 2219.
- MONTROSE, Marquis of: 1971.
- MONUILLA, John de, *see* LA TOUR, Anna de.
- MOONEY (Moneus, Mony, Muyni):  
Donagh (Fr), Provincial of Irish Franciscans, 1615-8: 379, 439, 613 (n).  
Mathew (Captn): 2096, 2101, 2127, A 27.
- MOORE (Maur, Mer, Moor, Mor, Morea, Moro, Muir, Murri, Omarro, Omor, Omora, Omoro, Omorra, Omorro, Omory):  
Edmond Mac Kery Oge (Captn): pn, 184 (n); gt, 235, 724; 729; gt, 732; 768, 773, 831, 881, 888, 976, 1136, 1203, 1215, 1343 [e].  
Henry, *see* BLACKWALL.  
James (Captn): 1292.  
John: gt, 326 [a]; lce, 524; 610, 610 (n).  
John: ppt, Spain, 2628.  
Jorge: 466 (n).  
Leysigh: 326 [a].  
Malachy (Captn): lce, 1203; 1215; gt, 1217; 1221, 1342; lce, Spain, 1561; 1641, 1663, 1701, 1718, 1784 (n).  
Margarita, orphan of Captn Edmond, *supra*: pn, 1343 [f].  
Peter: dead, 1292.  
Richard: gt, 326 [d].  
Roger: 1728 (n) b.  
William: gt, 33; lce, 469.
- MORALES, Miguel de, paymaster: 1252.
- MORAN (Morian, Morran):  
Cornelius: lce, Spain, 124; gt, 333.  
Cornelius: lce, Italy, 2518.
- Moravia: A 12.
- Morbeck: 1759, 1762, 1770.
- MORCA, Pedro, Campaign-Captn with Hugh O Donnell: 1193.
- MORCHOE, *see* OMORROGHU.
- MOREAU, *see* MOORE.
- MORES, Captn Henri Sair Baussan de: 1379.  
*See also* MORRIS.
- MORFI, Morfy, Morphy, *see* MURPHY.



- MORGAN (O Morgan, O Morgu):  
 Anthony: 1719.  
 Dermot (Sgt): gt, 2580.  
 Diego: A 7.  
 Hugo: A 7.  
 Terlough: A 7.
- MORIAGH, David: A 7.
- MORIAN, *see* MORAN.
- MORIARTAGH (Moriartax, Muriarti):  
 Mathew (En, Adj): gt, 1939; 2027.  
 Morto (En): lce, 2345.
- MORICH, *see* MORRIS.
- MORIMAN, —: gt, 326 [a].
- MORISEY (Morsi):  
 Michael (Capt): A 27.  
 William (Sgt): gt, 2363.
- MORLY (Omorley, O Morly):  
 Conor: lce, 569; A 7.  
 Valter: A 7.
- MORO, *see* MOORE.
- MORRA, Lucio, Nuncio at Brussels:  
 letter to Cardinal Barberini, 613 (n).
- MORRIS (Maris, Mauris, Mones, Mores, Morich, Morish, Morres, Murgesio, O Morise):  
 Charles: gt, 188.  
 Cornelius (En): gt, 123.  
 Godfrey (Capt): 1294, 1318; gt, 1332.  
 James: gt, 326 [a].  
 Juan: A 7.  
 Neil (Capt): gt, 1665; A 27.  
 Peter, doctor: 1039.  
 Richard: gt, 177; lce, 329.  
*See also* MAC MORRIS, Richard.  
 Thadeus (Capt): 1915; gt to co, 1950.  
 Walter (Capt): 1341.  
 William (Sgt): gt, 396.  
 —: statement to Earl of Salisbury, 522 (n).
- MORTELL, William: gt, 326 [b].
- MORTOGH (Mortog):  
 Morart (Sgt): gt, 396.  
 — (Lt): gt, 2392.
- MORY, *see* MURRY.
- MOSCOW: 459 (n).
- MOSTIN (Mosten, Mostian):  
 Hugo (Capt): 216-7, 265 (n) a; lce, Spain, 204, 207.  
 Richard: gt, 326 [d].
- MOULLON, En John: ppt, 2685.
- MOUNTGARRET, Viscount: 1170, 1780 (n) c, A 27.  
*See also* BUTLER, Richard.
- MOUNJOY, Charles Blount, 8th Baron, Lord Deputy, created Earl of Devonshire and apptd. Lord Lieutenant 1603, d. 1606: letter to Privy Council, 85 (n).
- MOURA CORTERREAL, *see* CASTEL RODRIGO, Marquis de.
- MOY, Abbot of (Baron Clanmorris): 809.
- Moycashell, barony of: 1163 (n) c.
- Moyglare: 272 (n).
- Muenster (Germany): 2755.
- MULLINEUX, Captn Theodore: ppt, 2596.
- Mullingar (Molingare): 2552 (n) a, A 27.
- MULRIAN (Del Reano, Melrian, Mulriane, Omilrian, Omolrian, Omulrean, Omulrian, Omulrigan, Omulrean):  
 Anthony (Capt, Lt Col): 1097, 1102, 1108, 111-2; gt, 1113; 1120, 1141, 1156, 1172, 1199, 1201; lce, 1277; dead, 1440.  
 Antonio (Lt Col): 2317; gt, 2697.  
 Charles (Capt): 2405; gt, 2588; 2790, 2799, 2805.  
 Cornelius, Bp of Killaloe: gt, 147, 269; 406, 406 (n), 452, 576, 648.  
 Daniel (En): lce, 1156, 1369, 1850.  
 Denis (En): gt, 2786.  
 Dermot (Lt Col): pay, 2781; lce, Spain, 2799; 2805.  
 Edmond (En, Lt): gt, 2381, 2588.  
 Eugenio (Capt): gt, 1192; lce, 1201; 1205, 1250, 1253-4; lce, 1369; 1398.  
 John (Sgt, Capt): gt, 2353, 2369; 2392; lce, Cologne, 2630; gt, 2672.  
 Louis (Capt): 2391, 2396.  
 Michael (Lt): 2814.  
 Owen (En): gt, 2369.  
 Patrick (Capt): gt to co, 1256.  
 Peter (Capt): lce, 2388.  
 Quadrix, *see* VICAM, Juana.  
 Theodore (Sgt): gt, 2588.  
 Thomas: 2826.  
 Unnualy, widow of Oliver Hackett: 1581.
- MUNOZ, Anthony: lce, 2809.
- Munster: 272 (n), 338 (n), 599 (n), 873 (n) k, l, 946, 1569 (n) b, 1613, 1804 (n) c, 1970 (n) b, 2163 (n), 2413 (n) a, b, A 25.  
*See also* ORMONDE, 12th Earl of.
- MURCHA, *see* OMORROGHU.
- MURGESIO, *see* MORRIS.
- MURPHY (Morfeo, Morfi, Morfie, Morphie, Morphy, Murfie):  
 Arnold, chaplain: 1795.  
 Denis (Capt): ppt, Holland, 2212; gt, 2282; lce, Spain, 2308.  
 Henry (Capt): dead, 2239.  
 Hugo (En): ppt, 2660.  
 Jerome (Sgt): gt, 2020.  
 John (En, Capt): 1910, 2239, 2477, 2561.  
 John (Col): to form Irish regt, 1904-6, 1908; 1909-11; regt to be reduced to 12 cos, 1915; 1917, 1920, 1924, 1931; gt to each co, 1950; 1959, 1973-8 *passim*, 1983, 1994, 2009, 2016, 2016 (n) a, b,



- 2020, 2022, 2025, 2027, 2030, 2032, 2037, 2040-3 *passim*, 2050, 2053, 2059, 2064, 2064 (n) *a*, *b*, 2065, 2070-93 *passim*, 2097, 2097 (n), 2099, 2104, 2122-39 *passim*, 2144, 2148, 2150, 2165, 2171, 2175-6, 2184, 2208, 2211, 2216, 2220, 2226-7, 2237-8, 2240, 2250, 2252, 2257, 2272-7; *gt*, *regt* *disbd*, 2277; 2277 (n), 2282, 2298; *lce*, Spain, 2307; *gt*, 2337, 2342; 2524, 2565; *lce*, 2652; 2669; *pay*, 2708; *gt*, 2711; 2712-4, 2724-31 *passim*.  
Philip (En): 2256.  
Thadeus (Capt): 2043, 2308, 2424.  
William (En): 2703 [d].
- MURRI, *see* MOORE.
- MURRY (Mory, Mury):  
David (Capt): *gt*, 2298.  
Dudley (Capt): 1915.  
William (Sgt): *lce*, 2505.
- Murtagh, David: A 7.
- MURTHA, Brian na, *see* O ROURKE.
- Muscovy: 459 (n).
- Muskerry: 184 (n).
- MUSKERRY, *see* MAC CARTHY.
- MYAGH (Meagh, Miagh):  
James: *gt*, 326 [d].  
Stephen, 'of Kilmalloch': *pn*, 184 (n).  
Stephen Fitz James: *pn*, 184 (n).  
Stephen, quartermaster Sgt: 514.
- N
- NACHLEN, Sgt William, *see* MAC Swiney, Leonora.
- NAGLE:  
Martin (Lt): *gt*, 2381.  
Pierce (Capt), of Monaneme: A 27.
- NAMAHA, Mortan: *pay*, 2590.
- NAMUR:  
Bp of: 663.  
Margarita de, *see* PRESTON, Madame.
- Namur: 304 (n) *e*, 307 (n) *b*, 578, 663, 816, 1059, 1311-5, 1825-9, A 13.  
*See also* Index II.
- Nancy: 328 (n) *c*.
- NANGLE:  
Richard (En): 184 (n).  
Peter (Fr): 65 (n) *a*, 67 (n) *a*.
- Nantes: 290 (n) *b*.
- Naples: 60 (n), 340 (n) *c*, 873 (n) *c*, 1349.
- Narden: 2814.
- NARY, Nicholas: *ppt*, 2352.
- Navarre: 946.  
*See also* Index II.
- NECOLALDE (Nicolalde):  
Juan de, Ambassador to England: 1551, 1891, 1895.  
Letters to Martin d'Arpe, 1308, 1349, 1354-5, 1362, 1382-3; to Don Ferdinand, 1348, 1351-2, 1357-9, 1410, 1412, 1455; to Francisco de Galarreta, 1411, 1447, 1456; to Francisco Moncada, 1337; to Sir Thomas Wentworth, 1231 (n), 1249 (n), 1351 (n) *b*, A 14 (n) *b*.  
Letters from Martin d'Arpe, 1353, 1361, 1375, 1381; from de la Faille, 1139-40; from Sir Thomas Wentworth, 1351 (n) *a*, A 14 (n) *a*.  
Miguel de: 1526.
- NEGRETE, Captn Roque: 1858.
- NEALE, Neil, Neile, Nel, Niel, *see* O NEILL.
- NELAN, Edmond: *gt*, 326 [h].
- NELIS, David: *lce*, Spain, 149.
- NENEVIN, Emlin, widow of Molmory Mac Swiney: *pn*, 1343 [k].
- NETERVILLE (Netelvel, Netervel, Netervilla, Neterwill, Netirvel):  
Thomas (Capt): 1444, 1469, 1485; *lce*, 1543.  
William: *gt*, 653.  
Viscount —: A 27.
- NEWBURGH (Neubourg), Duke (Lord) of: 1877 [g], 2195 (n) *b*.
- Newcastle: 610 (n).
- Newhaven, *see* Havre.
- NEWPORT, Lord —: A 20.
- Newry: 780 (n).
- NICHOLAS:  
Harbert: 873 (n) *k*.  
—, Secretary: letter to Ormond, 1868 (n); A 20.
- Nieuport, 80 (n) *c*, 89-93, 656, 756, 1019-20, 1022, 1025-6, 1079 [c], 1087 (n), 1136, 1185, 1206, 1632, 1651, 1667, 1717, 1733, 1777, 1794, 1876, 2005 [b], 2022, 2024, 2327, 2351, 2390, 2473, 2570, 2798 [2], 2838 [1].
- Nieuwerkerche (Nieuwerkerken): 807.
- NILIAN, En Mauro: *gt*, 1940.
- NITEYGE, Onor, widow of Mortagh Obely: *pn*, 1343 [h].
- NIVEL, En James: A 3.
- Nivelles: 304 (n) *e passim*.
- NOBOA, Captn —: 2391, 2423.
- NOEUVILLE, Everard de: 696.
- NOHEI, Sgt John: 2703 [h].
- NOLAN (Holan, Noland, Nolano, Onolan, Onulan):  
Denis (Capt): *lce*, 2550.  
Donogh (En): 184 (n).  
James (En, Or master, Capt): *lce*, Germany, 1271; 1346 (n), 2256, 2313, 2365; *gt*, 2419, 2553; 2741, 2801, 2808.  
Nicholas (Capt, Adj): *gt*, 2576; 2613, 2738, 2808, 2819, 2826.  
William (Capt): *lce*, Germany, 2560.
- Nonsuch: 67 (n) *a*.  
William (Capt): *lce*, Germany, 2560.
- Nonsuch: 67 (n) *a*.
- NOORR, P. van der: 587.



- Norbertain: 807.  
 NOREL, Capt'n John: 2452.  
 NORMEL, William: lce, 1261.  
 NORRIS (Norris):  
   Alan (Capt'n): 592 [c], 734.  
   Henry (Capt'n): 943, 1061.  
   Sir Thomas, President of Munster (1597-99): 599 (n).  
   —: 46 (n) b.  
 NORTHAMPTON (Compton Spencer), Earl of: 320 [h], 355 [a], [b].  
 NOSCROY, Girardot de: correspondence with De La Faille, 1040-1.  
 Notre Dame de Hal, *see* Hal.  
 NOTTINGHAM (Heneage Finch), Earl of: 355 [a].  
 NOVARA, Capt'n Rodolfo de: letter from Diego de la Torre, 1721; correspondence with Secretary of the Audience, 1782.  
 NOYELLA, Count H de: 1844.  
 NUGENT (Nogent, Nugencio, Nugente):  
   Christopher: ppt, Spain, 2629, 2654; lce, 2782; knighted, *ibid*.  
   Edward: gt, 326 [c].  
   Edward (Sgt): 2093.  
   Giraldo (Gerardo): gt, 16, 212 [c], 224.  
   Henry: England, 2657; 2744.  
   James, Earl of Westmeath: gt, 959; lce, Spain, 1137; gt, 1270; lce, 1302, 1349; offers to raise regt at his own cost, 1353; 2029 (n) a, A 27.  
   James (En): gt, 1506.  
   Nicholas: gt, 248.  
   Redmund (Raymond) (Capt'n): gt, 2159; lce, England, 2414.  
   Richard, eldest son of William, *infra*: 67 (n) a; gt, 87, 155.  
   Richard (Capt'n): 1374, 1662, A 16.  
   Thomas (Capt'n): gt, 1243.  
   Sir Thomas: permission to raise 400 volunteers in Ireland for Spanish service, 2841 (n) b.  
   William, brother to Lord of Delvin: 67 (n) a.
- O
- OBALLY (Obely):  
   Cornelius (Sgt): gt, 2369.  
   Mortagh, *see* Niteyge, Onor.  
 OBENDON, *see* HOVENDEN.  
 OBERTY, Sgt James: gt, 2353.  
 OBOYLE, *see* BOYLE.  
 OBRAGAN, Sgt Daniel: lce, 1389; pay, 1424.  
 O BRAY, *see* Bray.  
 OBRENAN, *see* BREANAN.  
 OBRESSEL (Obro Sail):  
   Daniel: gt, 2714.  
   Philip: lce, 1851.
- O BRIEN (Berneo, Brin, Bruin, Bryan, Obrein, Obrian, Obrin, Obrine, Obruen, Obrun, Obruni, Obruy, Obryan, Obryn, Ubrin):  
 Anthony (En): gt, 1762.  
 Arturo (Capt'n): 1305, 1319; lce, 1369.  
 Aulon: lce, 550.  
 Bernard (En): gt, 1949, 2077.  
 Christopher (Col): A 27.  
 Cornelius: lce, 544; pn for his orphans, 1343 [j].  
 Cornelius: lce, 2542.  
 Sir Daniel, father of Col Murtagh, *infra*: 2105 (n) b, A 27.  
 Denis (En): 1267.  
 Denis (Sgt, Lt): gt, 2175, 2329; ppt, 2688.  
 Dermot, Dermisio (Capt'n): recruiting, 1751; 1767 (n); gt, 2140-1; 2639; lce, Spain, 2684; 2703 [b], A27.  
 Diego (Capt'n): to recruit in Bourbourg, 1054; A 7.  
 Donogh (Dionisio) Mac Mahowne: lce, 286; 286 (n), 304 (n) e; attained, 403 (n) b.  
 Edward, *alias* Edmond (Capt'n): 1305; gt to co, 1314; 1558; lce, 1759; 1779 (n).  
 Felix (Capt'n): 1233; gt to co, 1258; lce, 1475.  
 Gerald (Sgt): 1488.  
 Hubert: gt, 326 [a], 772.  
 Hugh (Capt'n, Col): 1048; letter to Infanta Isabella, 1051; 1063, 1068-9, 1072-3; gt, 1071; 1077, 1136, 1197; lce, recruiting, 1277, 1369; 1392, 1399; in London, fails to get permission to recruit in Ireland, 1698, 1698 (n); claims payment he alleges is due, 1713; proposes to get 400 Irishmen to transfer from French to Spanish army, 1716, 1747-8.  
 Hugo, an Irish priest: gt, 201.  
 James (En): gt, 2076.  
 Mathias: dead, 1497.  
 Mlaghlin: lce, 502.  
 Murrough, *alias* Moriarto, Moriarty, Mortagh (Capt'n, Col), Baron Inchiquin: proposes to recruit 1500 Irishmen and to get licence for this through intermediary, 1707, 1719-20; 1780; 2025 (n); 2029 (n) a, 2105 (n) a, b, 2122 (n) b, 2163 (n), 2327; gt to co, 2339; 2380, 2413, 2413 (n) a, b, 2427; lce, England, 2440; 2446-7, 2452, 2468, 2506; lce extended, 2482; 2506; lce extended, 2523, 2544; 2685-6, 2686 (n), 2687.  
 Terence, *alias* Terlach, Therlagh (En, Capt'n): gt, 2353; lce, 2395; 2535; gt, 2712; A 27.



- Theodore, *alias* Thadeus (Capt, Major): 2319; gt, 2341; pay, 2394; 2395, 2413, 2434, 2441; ppt, 2487; lce, 2504, 2526, 2537; 2569, 2588; lce, England, 2609.
- William (En, Sgt): gt, 1913, 2070, 2379.
- William, eldest son of Col Murrough, *supra*: 2686 (n).
- , Earl of Thomond: 304 (n) *e*.
- OBRO SAIL, *see* OBRESSEL.
- OBUIS, *see* BOYLE.
- O BYRNE (Berin, Bern, Berne, Berni, Birn, Birne, Byern, Byrne, Oberin, Oberne, Oberni, O Berny, Obirne, Obirren):
- Alexander (En): A 27.
- Bernard, chaplain: pay, 1005.
- Brian Mac Phelim: 1807 (n) *b*.
- Charles (Capt): 2319; gt, 2588; lce, 2656, 2807.
- Denis (Capt, Major, Col): gt, 2723; 2726, 2762, 2766, 2775-6, 2783-5, 2788-9, 2791, 2795, 2797; to recruit 56 Irishmen, 2798; 2799, 2800-2, 2807-8, 2810, 2813, 2817-9, 2826; conditions on which he will recruit 500, 2838; 2839; lce, 2841; asks Ormonde for loan of £100, 2841 (n) *a*; 2842, 2845.
- Donat (Lt): lce, 2592.
- Dowlin, *alias* Declin: 46 (n) *b*; gt, A 1.
- Felix (Capt): 1526.
- Fra (Capt), of Rodin: A 27.
- Garret: 47 (n) *b*, 94 (n).
- Henry, of Dangan: A 27.
- James (En): gt, 2588.
- Maurice (Sgt): gt, 2588.
- Richard, chaplain: pay, 724.
- Rulin: gt, 16, 52 [b].
- Thomas (En): A 27.
- William (Capt): 2733.
- O CAHAN (Caha, Cahano, Ocaan, O Cane, O Kahan):
- Brian: 948 (n).
- Daniel (Donnell Baleagh Mac Manus) (Capt): gt, 948; 948 (n): gt, 1192; dead, 1214.
- Daniel (Capt, Col): 1484, 1807 (n) *b*, 2116 (n) *a*.
- Denis: gt, 661.
- Donal (Sir Donal): in the Tower, 614 (n).
- Farfell: ppt, Germany, 2631.
- John: lce, 385.
- Manus: gt, 827; 948 (n).
- OCAHIL, *see* CAHIL.
- O CALAGHANE, Ocalan, *see* CALLAGHAN.
- OCALLANAN, Florence, chief surgeon: pay, 852.
- O CANE, *see* O CAHAN.
- O CARROLE, *see* CARROLL.
- O CASI, Ocasse, *see* CASEY.
- OCEANAM, Edmond: lce, 568.
- Oceania, *see* Oceane, Index II.
- OCELARL, *see* CARROLL.
- OCELY, *see* KELLY.
- O CENI, Thomas, *see* HAGHIREN, Catalina ni.
- OCHARULA, *see* CARROLL.
- OCHEALE, O CHIELY, *see* O SHIEL.
- O CHEY, *see* SHEA.
- OCLANUCHI, *see* CLANCY.
- OCLEARI, *see* CLERY.
- OCONHUAR, *see* O CONOR.
- OCONE, Hugo: lce, 961.
- OCONIG, *see* O CONOR.
- O CONLEY, Fr Toole: 1728 (n) *b*.
- O CONNEL (Conel, Maconel, Oconel, Oconell):
- Cormac: gt, 326 [f].
- Daniel: lce, 2399.
- Elizabeth: pn, 1036.
- Ferdinand: gt, 370.
- James (Capt): ppt, Vienna, 2568.
- John, chief surgeon: 1220.
- Miler: gt, 242.
- Peter: 1036. *See also* FITZ GERALD, Catherine, and FITZ GERALD, Jeanne.
- Terence (Sgt): gt, 2379.
- Thomas: lce, 475.
- (Capt): gt, 242.
- O CONOR (Conner, Connor, Conor, O Conchuar, Oconig, Oconner, O Conner Dun, Oconnor, O Conogher, Oconoi, Oconos):
- Ambrose (Fr), Provincial of the Irish Dominicans: appeal for payment of arrears to Louvain, 2852.
- Art: pn, 184 (n); lce, 409.
- Bernard: lce, 504.
- Bernard (Capt): 2260.
- Charles, *alias* Cormac Ros, Conacio: gt, 16; 46 (n) *b*; ppt, 117; lce, 133; gt, 199, 326 [g]; gt, A 1.
- Con: 175.
- Connor: 2255.
- Conoco (Sgt): gt, 1504.
- Daniel (En): A 27.
- Denis (En): gt, 16, 52 [b].
- Farlox: 2258.
- Ferdinand (Sgt): gt, 1460.
- Hugh (En): A 27.
- Hugh (Capt), 'O Conner Dun': A 27.
- Jacob (Col): 2156, 2158.
- John (Capt): gt, 126, 242, 326 [g], 369; lce, 410.
- John: 2255.
- Maurice: gt, 212 [c].
- Morgan: lce, 644.
- Owen (Capt, Major): 2299, A 27.
- Patrick: lce, 151.
- Patrick (Fr): 1861 (n) *b*.
- Peter (Sgt): gt, 2011.
- Philip (Qr master): 2817.
- Richard: lce, 523.



- Roque (Capt): gt, 2259.  
 Teyge: gt, 326 [d].  
 Thadeus (Capt): 2096.  
 Thadeus, *alias* Theodore (En): gt, 2357, 2571: 2703 [g].  
 Thomas, drum-major: 1093.  
 William: lce, 541.  
 —, 'O'Connor's brother': 65 (n) *d*.  
 —, 'alferex to Colonel' [O'Neill]: 338 (n).  
 — (Col), served under Duke of Lorraine: 2247.
- O COYN (Ocoyne):  
 Hugh: lce, 294.  
 Patrick: gt, 326 [a].
- O CULLEN, *see* CULLEN.
- O CULLINAN:  
 Glasny: 878 (n) *d*.  
 Owen, Bp of Raphoe: 878 (n) *d*.
- O CURQUE, *see* QUIRK.
- ODALANI, *see* DALANY.
- O DALY, *see* DALY.
- O DANIEL, John (Capt): 1807 (n), *b*.
- O DEA (Odaes, Odea, Ottea):  
 Edmund: gt, 244; lce, 414; A 7.  
 Flahartag: A 7.  
 Gerard (Lt): gt, 2381.
- ODEIR, *see* O DWYER.
- ODEMSY, Odense, Odensi, Odiomsa, Odionsi, *see* DEMPSY.
- ODEORAN:  
 Daniel (En): gt, 2753.  
 William (Capt): 1818 (n) *b*.
- ODOELA, *see* DALY.
- O DOHERTY (Dogorton, Dohart, Doharty, Doroughy, Odhorty, Odoarti, Odocarti, Odocarty, Odochardie, Odocharti, Odocharty, Odocherti, Odogherty, Odohort, Odoquirti, O Dougherty):  
 Bernard: 1398.  
 Cahir: attainted, 403 (n) *b*, 610 (n).  
 Felim: gt, 326 [h].  
 Hugh: gt, 940.  
 Manus (Sgt): lce, 99; gt, 198.  
 Owen: 1807 (n) *b*.  
 Philip: 1883.  
 Roderick (Capt): gt, 669; 694; dead, 717.  
 Rosa, wife of Col Eugenio O'Neill: gt, 1000, 1158; letter to unnamed priest, 1804 (n) *b*; 1804 (n) *c*; now widow, Philip IV orders that her gt be paid to her in full, 2118.  
 Thomas (Capt): 2618.  
 —: his son a hostage, 80 (n) *b*; 343, 347 [a], [b].
- O DOLAN, Guillermo: A 7.
- Odonck: 1019–20.
- ODONENEN, Dermot: lce, 133.
- ODONGAYLE, *see* O DONNELL.
- O DONNELL (Daniel, Danly, Danyell, Doneil, Donel, Doneli, Donell, Doniel, Donnelle, Donoly, Odaniel, Odoneil, Odoneill, Odonel, O Donelan, O Donell, Odonelly, Odonely, Odongale, Odoniel, Odonille, O Donnelly):  
 Bernard, son of Col Patrick, *infra*: gt, 2650.  
 Bernardine: gt, 174.  
 Cathbarr, *alias* Caffer, Carlos, brother of Rory, 1st Earl of Tyrconnell, *infra*, d. 1608: 304 (n) *e*, 361 (n); attainted, 403 (n) *b*.  
 Constantine (Capt): 2827; lce, to recruit, 2841.  
 Cornelius: lce, 625.  
 Daniel (Capt): 675, 693; dead, 694; A 8.  
 Daniel, chaplain: 1930.  
 Edmond: gt, 716; A 3.  
 Elena, widow of Walter Dlorus: pn, 1343 [e].  
 Ferdinand (Lt): lce, 65.  
 Fergus, son of Hugh Donnel of Tene Kelly: 537 (n) *b*, *c*.  
 Henry (Adj): 2643.  
 Hugh Roe, Lord of Tyrconnell, d. 1602: 265 (n) *a*.  
 Hugh, *titular* 2nd Earl of Tyrconnell, Baron Leffr, Lord of Sligeach, son of Rory *infra*, d. 1642: in Louvain, with the White Ladies and afterwards with the Franciscans, 372, 372 (n), 374–6, 379–82, 391; attainted, 403 (n) *b*; 419 (n), 430, 432–6, 441–2, 447–8, 450; his education to be in care of his Aunt, Nuala, 481 (n) *b*; gt, 458; takes name of Albert at Confirmation, 526 (n) *a*; 571 (n) *b*; gt, 592 [d], 594, 598, 603, 608, 612–3; page to Infanta Isabella, 619; 646; gt, 659, 668, 671; 735; gt, 817, 867; 873 (n) *n*, 878 (n) *b*, *c*; in Spain, 884 (n); gt, 894; to be given a regt, 899, 906; Abp Conry's visit to Spain on his behalf and Col John O'Neill's, 968–9, 969 (n) *a*, *b*; petition to the Pope, 969 (n) *b*; proposal that his sister marry Col John O'Neill, 991 [a], 995; captain of mounted cuirassiers, 999; pay and allowances, *ibid*; 1027–8; not to be given co of infantry as well, 1037–8; 1056, 1067, 1070, 1088, 1095; his seniority, 1128; made Col of regt of Irish infantry, 1177; commissions for 14 captains, 1179; gt, 1184; gt to his co, 1192; gt, 1231, 1252; claims arrears of pay, 1344, 1350; Philip IV orders that he and Col O'Neill enjoy all becoming esteem, 1346; paid portion of arrears, 1350; regt going to Spain, 1527 (n) *b*; Richelieu said



- to try to entice him and Col John O'Neill to move their troops to Ireland, 1527 (n) *f*; his death reported, *ibid*; in Madrid, 1544 (n); Strafford aware of his wish to replant himself in his native soil, 1563 (n); Strafford opposes recruiting of Irishmen to serve under O'Donnell or O'Neill for Spain, 1569 (n) *a*; Lord Deputy says Irish recruits should not be put under O'Donnell's command, 1617, 1635; John Rathe's proposals in his regard, A 6; his marriage contract, A 9; his act of naturalisation, A 10; recommendation of Melchior de Burgo, A 12; death mentioned, 1804 (n) *b*; funeral mentioned, 2029 (n) *d*.
- Regiment of Col Hugh O'Donnell—minor references: 1178, 1180, 1188, 1188 (n), 1197–1312 *passim*, 1377, 1389, 1395–6, 1405, 1408, 1416, 1423–4, 1434, 1436, 1444, 1446, 1450, 1485–6, 1488, 1496, 1498, 1522, 1534, 1538, 1551, 1561, 1564.
- See also CULLEN, John; Ireland (Index II); LEFFIR, Baron de.
- Hugh (Captain), son of Cathbharr, *supra*: 361 (n); pn, 592 [d], 594; gt, 867; dead, 881.
- James (Capt), son of Col Patrick, *infra*: 2082–3.
- John: lce, 11, 23, 27; letters to Earl of Salisbury, 65 (n) *a, d*, 72 (n) *a*; lce, 226.
- John (En, Adj, Capt): gt, 1341; 1653, 1784 (n), 1883; dead, 1978; 1979.
- Juana, widow of Dominick White: pn, 1343 [f].
- Manuel: gt, 920.
- Manus (En): ppt, 2474.
- Margaret, sister of Rory, *infra*: 793.
- Martin (Sgt): A 7.
- Mary, 'Lady Mary of Tyrconnell', sister of Hugh, *titular* 2nd Earl: 987 [h], 987 (n) *a*; marriage with Col John O'Neill mooted, 991 [a], 995; pension, 1164.
- Nachtan, *alias* Neaghton, son of Niall Garv, *infra*: in Tower, 614 (n): gt, 744.
- Niall Garv: 347 [a]; in Tower, 614 (n): 987 (n) *a*.
- Nuala, sister of Rory, *infra*: 481 (n) *b*: gt, 592 [d], 987 [g].
- Patrick (En, Capt, Major, Col): 184 (n); gt, 212 [a], 654; lce, Spain, 676; 680; in Spain, pay to be continued, 702; lce, Spain, 722; commended to Philip IV, 723, 780, 780 (n), 788, 790–2, 843; 845, 880, 902, 913, 932, 935, 958 (n), 974, 998, 1057, 1066, 1122, 1136, 1157, 1231 (n), 1352; recruiting efforts, 1351 (n) *a*, 1355, 1357, 1827, 1829, 1830, 1835; letter to Count de Busquoy, 1838–9; 1842, 1846, 1849, 1853–6, 1860–1, 1873, 1875, 1883, 1885, 1888–9, 1893; paid 400 crowns secret service money, 1896; crown, 1919, 1925–35, 1937, 1940–9, 1951, 1953–6; paid moneys due, 1957; 1986; knighted by Philip IV, 1992; portion of arrears to be paid him, *ibid*; letter to Archduke Leopold, 1995; 2004, 2082; had 47 years' service, 2622; 2649–50; letters to Sir Thomas Wentworth, A 15, A 17.
- See also O'NEILL, Brigida.
- Patrick, son of Col Patrick, *supra*: gt, 2649.
- Philip (En): ppt, 2479.
- Robert (Capt): 8 (n) *x*; gt, 29; 55 (n) *b*; gt, 84; 94 (n); gt, 106; lce, Spain, 110; 184 (n); gt, 261; 272 (n), 277, 399, 549 (n), 577; gt, 677, 1116.
- Rory, 1st Earl of Tyrconnell, d. 1608: sends 2 hostages to Spain, 80 (n) *b*; 81 (n); his intended flight known in Dublin, 271 (n) *a*; 272 (n), 347 [a], 384 (n); attainted, 403 (n) *b*; 430, 441, 575 (n) *b*, 793, A 9, A 10.
- Shane Mac Phelémy: examined by Sir Toby Caulfield, 571 (n) *b*.
- O'DONOGHAN MORE, see O'DONOVAN.
- O'DONOGHUE (Donogh, Odonoch, Odonogh, Odonogho, Odonoghee, Odonoghoe):
- Ariceno (En): 2703 [g].
- Edmund, chaplain: pay, 200.
- Florence (Capt): 2703 [e].
- Mortogh (Lt): gt, 2359; ppt, 2386.
- Rodrigo: 597–8.
- Roger (Sgt): lce, 2436.
- O'DONOVAN (Donovan, O'Donnan, O'Donaghan, Odonolan, Odonollan, Odonovan, O'Donovane, O'Donoweine):
- Daniel: gt, 776, 850.
- Daniel Boy (Capt), of Kilcellman: A 27.
- Daniel (En), of Forneise: A 27.
- John (Sgt): 184 (n).
- Mortagh (Sgt): 184 (n); lce, 629; gt, 749.
- , O'Donoghon More: pn, 184 (n).
- ODOQUIRI, see O'DOHERTY.
- ODORGAN, Capt William: gt, 2246.
- O'DOUGHTY, see O'DOHERTY.
- ODOWINE, Odoyre, see O'DWYER.
- ODOYNE (Done, Doun, Doyn, O'Doyen, Odoyn, Odoyne):



- Bernard, chaplain: pay, 2678.  
 James: gt, A 1.  
 John: lce, 100.  
 John (Lt): gt, 2381.  
 Telac: gt, 1655.  
 William: gt, A 1.  
*See also* ODROYN.
- O DRISCOLL (Driscoll, Odriscoll, O Dryshall):  
 Cornelius (Capt): 184 (n), 272 (n), 298; gt, 311; 429 (n) *b*, 466, 495, 523, 525, 555; lce, 565; 567, 567 (n) *a*, *b*, 592 [*b*]; lce, Spain, 601-2.  
 Cornelius (Abbot): 746; letter to Fr Florence Mac Carthy, 873 (n) *n*, *o*; A 8.  
 Cornelius (En, Lt Col): lce, 1478, Brussels; 2315 (n), 2413 (n) *a*, *b*, A 27.  
 Daniel: 746.  
 Daniel (Lt), of Carbury: A 27.  
 Denis (Capt): lce, Spain, 1257, 1364.  
 Dermot (Sgt): 746; lce, 1392.  
 Dononello (Capt): 384.  
 Sir Finin: 272 (n).  
 Florence (Sgt): gt, 837.  
 Florence (En), of Ballyhan: A 27.  
 Louis: lce, Spain, 1710.  
 Macon (Sgt): gt, 270; lce, 323.  
 Thadeus: lce, 868.
- ODROYN, Capt —: 2392.  
*See also* ODOYNE.
- O DRYSHALL, *see* O DRISCOLL.
- ODUGAN, Sgt John: lce, to recruit, 1389.
- O DWYER (Duir, Duyr, Dwier, Dwire, Dwuir, Odier, Odowine, Odoyre, Oduir, O Duire, Odwier, Odwin, Odwuys, Odwyer):  
 Denis (En): lce, 1295.  
 Donogh (Col): 2019 (n) *c*, A 11.  
 Edmund (Col): 2019 (n) *a*, *c*, 2025 (n), 2029 (n) *a*, 2036 (n) *b*; brings Irish recruits to Flanders, 2051 (n); altercation with Owens, *ibid*; difficulties in transportation of recruits, 2063 (n) *a-c*, 2103 (n); 2413 (n) *b*.  
 James: 2749.  
 John (Qr master): gt, 1642; 2319.  
 John (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2730; 2742.  
 Philip (Lt): gt, 2381.  
 Philip (Capt): 2319, 2367; gt, 2369; seniority, 2497; 2784.  
 Richard (Capt): gt, 2260.  
 William (Sgt): 2795.
- OERTI, *see* ORORII.
- O FALVY (Falvius):  
 Alexius (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2196.  
 Dermot (Sgt): gt, 2791.
- OFAY, Sgt Martin: gt, 2127.
- O FERRAL, Ofertti, *see* FARREL.
- OFFA, John: gt, 1335.
- O FIHILY, *see* FIEHLY.
- OFILAN: Thomas: lce, 513.
- OFINALA, James: lce, 295.
- O FLAHERTY (Claherty, Flaharty, Flaherty, Flarqui, Flattery, O Flahari):  
 Bernard: ppt, 2105.  
 Brian (Lt): A 27.  
 Edmund, chaplain: pay, 1315, 1317.  
 Mark (Capt): 2638.  
 Morgan (Capt): dead, 2243.  
 Morogh (Lt), of Uman: A 27.  
 Owen (Capt): A 27.  
 Thadeus, *alias* Theodore, Teige (Col): gt, 2293; lce, 2412; lce, England, 2663; 2690, 2703 [*a*], A 27.
- OFLAME, Edmond: lce, 276.
- OFLÉN, Oflin, Oflyne, *see* FLYN.
- OFOGARTY, *see* FOGARTY.
- O FRIEL, *see* FRIEL.
- OGALCHUR, Ogaulcur, Ogaligor, *see* GALLAGHER.
- O GERIG, Capt Henry: 184 (n).
- OGLISSAN, Daniel: lce, 1407.
- OGMAKERE, *see* MAC HENRY.
- Ognies: 1636, 1638-40, 1642-53.
- O GRADY, Capt John: 2288.
- O GREANAN, *see* GREANAN.
- OGROGAN, Mulrony: gt, 326 [*d*].
- OHAER, *see* O HART.
- O HAGAN (Hagan, Hagiben, Ohagan, O Haggan):  
 Arturo: gt, 916; lce, Spain, 1096.  
 Brian Mac Donnogho Braddaugh, *alias* Hogan: 780 (n), 948, 988 (n), 996 (n).  
 Dionisio: 466 (n).  
 Edmond: gt, 2712.  
 Gerald (Qr master): 1245.  
 Henry (Capt): attainted, 403 (n) *b*; 779, 788-9, 791-2, 808; gt, 811; 823, 831, 900, 916, 918, 1136, 1143, 1273.  
 James (Capt): 1794.  
 John Opanty: attainted, 403 (n) *b*; gt, 684.  
 Teige: attainted, 403 (n) *b*.  
 Terence: gt, 918.
- OHALEGAN, Thomas: lce, 408.
- O HALY, *see* HELY.
- O HANLON (Hanlun, Oanlun, Ohanloin, Ohanlon, Ohonlun, Ohaolen):  
 Ardel: gt, 725.  
 Eugenius, *alias* Oghy Oge (Captain): attainted, 403 (n) *b*; 609-10, 610 (n), 717, 725, 741, 760, 776; dead, 821; 831, 839, 856.  
 Sir Oghy: 403 (n) *b*, 610 (n).
- OHAODD, Lte Patrick, chaplain: pay, 2268.
- O HARA (Hara, Haran):  
 Edmond: gt, 806.  
 Eugenio, chaplain: pay, 1790.  
 Hugo (Capt): gt, 2160; lce, 2425.



- OHARLEY, John: gt, A 1.  
 O HART (Art, Hart, Ohaer):  
 Charles (Cahire) (Capt): 2223; gt to  
 co, 2375; 2425.  
 John: lce, Cologne, 2630.  
 Matthew (Lt): 32 (n).  
 O HARTEGAN, Matthew S. J.: 1807  
 (n) b.  
 O HAY (Aya, Ayo, Hay, Hayo, Hey,  
 Hoya, Ohay, Ohaye, Ohea, Ohoye,  
 Ohy):  
 Bernard, chaplain: pay, 843.  
 David (Sgt): gt, 2573.  
 Donogh: A 7.  
 Edmond (Capt): ppt, 2825.  
 Eugenio (Adj): lce, 2775, 2841.  
 Fernando: lce, 2841.  
 George (En): gt, 1935.  
 John: gt, 2714.  
 Peter: pn, 1343 [h].  
 Philip (Capt): 1817-8; gt, 1921;  
 1934; gt, 1946; 1977, 2022, 2040,  
 2053, 2064, 2076; gt, 2079; 2089,  
 2393, 2465, 2572-3; gt, 2575.  
 Richard (En, Adj): gt, 212 [a],  
 326 [a], 841, 887; 1343 [h].  
 Thadeus (Qr master): 2040.  
 Thomas: lce, 480.  
 Thomas: 2818.  
 William: lce, 553.  
 OHEIN, Sgt Nicholas: gt, 2704.  
 OHEM, *see* O HOAN.  
 OHENNAN, Teige: attainted, 403 (n) b.  
 OHER, *see* HEHIR.  
 OHERNAN, *see* HERNAN.  
 OHIGNY, Ohugin, *see* HIGGIN.  
 O HIQIY, *see* HIQUY.  
 O HOAN (Ohem, Ohoeyn), Maurice  
 (En, Adj): lce, England, 1266; 1568,  
 1784 (n).  
 O HOSY (Hoseo, O Holy):  
 Maurice, chaplain: pay, 1222.  
 Moelmurry (En, Capt): lce, Eng-  
 land, 2527; A 27.  
 O HURLEY (Huerly, Hurleo, Hurli,  
 Ohierly, Ohurly):  
 Dermot, Abp of Cashel, executed  
 1584; 648.  
 Thadeus (En): ppt, Spain, 2488,  
 2524.  
 William (Capt): lce, 2404; 2446.  
 OHYR, *see* HEHIR.  
 O KAHAN, *see* O CAHAN.  
 O KALECHANE, *see* CALLAGHAN.  
 O KEEF (Aquife, O Kinife, Oquif):  
 Arthur (Capt), of Glanifriacan: lce,  
 Spain, 1813; ppt, Germany, 2617;  
 A 27.  
 Daniel (Capt), of Drumagh: A 27.  
 O KEHERNI (O Kearney): *see* KEARNY.  
 O KELLY, *see* KELLY.  
 O KENY, En, Owen, of Clanboren:  
 A 27.  
 O KERVICK, Lt Daniel: gt, 2381.  
 O KINIFE. *See* O KEEF.  
 OKWIRK, *see* CUERCK.  
 OLAVERRY, En Bernard: 2500.  
 OLDENSEEL: 1061.  
 OLEAN, Baron: 1043.  
 OLECHIE, Lt Thomas: gt, 2353.  
 OLEM, Malachi: lce, 566.  
 OLEMARR, En John: gt, 2273.  
 OLESTIN, Lt General the Duke of:  
 2804.  
 OLIN (Olein), Capt (Major) Thomas:  
 2310; gt, 2389.  
 OLINAN, Capt Daniel: 2294.  
 OLIVARES de:  
 Duke: letters to Don Ferdinand,  
 1357 (n), 1439 (n) b, 1447 (n),  
 1526 (n), 1527 (n) e.  
 Miguel de: 1774.  
 OLLERY, Olly: gt, 2712.  
 Olmedo: 120, 173.  
 OLOER, Cornelius: gt, 187.  
 OLONAR, Capt Daniel: 2703 [j].  
 Oloonzel: 972.  
 OMADIN, *see* MADIN.  
 OMAELANO, Donat, chaplain: pay, 536.  
 O MAGHEAR (Omaer, Omehair):  
 Dermot: gt, 107; lce, 245.  
 Philip: ppt, Ireland, 2681.  
 OMAHONI, *see* MAHON.  
 OMALLUN (Mallon, O Malun, Omalun,  
 Umallu):  
 Albert, son of Dermot, *infra*: petition  
 to Infanta Isabella, pn increased,  
 1164; petition to Don Ferdinand,  
 1596; Don Ferdinand commends  
 him to Philip IV, 1597, 1599;  
 further commendatory letters,  
 1690-2; lce, Spain, 1860; petition  
 to Archduke Leopold, 1986; lce,  
 Spain, *ibid*; Archduke Leopold  
 commends him to Philip IV,  
 1989-90.  
 Dermot Roger, Seigneur of Hageru,  
 Baron of Glenomalun, Baron of  
 Glean and Guerchy: letters to  
 Archduke Albert, 406, 648; 452-4,  
 576, 579, 585, 587-8, 631, 649-50,  
 652; pn, 770; equerry to Infanta  
 Isabella, 945; 945 (n), 947; gt,  
 538, 1043, 1103, 1135, 1164; Don  
 Ferdinand commends him to  
 Philip IV, 1360; 1596, 1798.  
 Isabella, daughter of Dermot, *supra*:  
 pn, 1798.  
 Jeanne, daughter of Dermot, *supra*:  
 pn, *ibid*.  
 Lawrence (En): lce, 133.  
 Marie, daughter of Dermot, *supra*:  
 648-50, 652, 857; pn, 1798.  
 O MALLY (Malla, Malli, Omale, O  
 Malle, O Malli):  
 Bernard (Sgt): gt, 1927.  
 Cormac (En): lce, 2413.  
 Denis: lce, 132.



- Edmond (Capt): gt, 2258; 2703 [g].  
 Eugenio: lce, purpose not stated, 284.  
 John: gt, 326 [h].  
 Thomas (En): gt, 1933.
- O MALREANIN, Roger: A 27.
- O MAOLCONAIRE, *see* CONRY.
- O MAQUY:  
 Davit: A 7.  
 Tomas: *ibid*.
- O MEARA (Omara, De Meara, D' Omara, Domara, Domeara):  
 Alexander (Capt): 2630, 2656, 2672, 2704.  
 Charles (Qr master): 2736.  
 Denis (En): gt, 2588.  
 Theodore (Col): 2315; note of his career, 2315 (n); 2316-7, 2319, 2331, 2347, 2354, 2367, 2369, 2371, 2374, 2377, 2381, 2384, 2392, 2400, 2402-3, 2405, 2434-5, 2441, 2483, 2486, 2489, 2504, 2511, 2532, 2541-2, 2549, 2560, 2564, 2569, 2571, 2588-90, 2599, 2605, 2607-8, 2610-11, 2613-4, 2618, 2626-7, 2630, 2636-7, 2640, 2642-3, 2648, 2656, 2659, 2661, 2663-4, 2673, 2680, 2683, 2692-3, 2697, 2704, 2724.  
 Thomas (Capt): lce, Spa, 2607, 2664.
- OMECHAN, Daniel, *see* AL, Juana ni.
- OMEHAIR, *see* O MAGHEAR.
- O MELAGHLEN, *see* O MULOGHLYN.
- O MELLAN, Terence: lce, 625.
- OMIAGNINE, Capt'n Hugh: A 27.
- OMOHERLACH, En Mortog: gt, 2369.
- OMOLEDI, *see* MOLEDY.
- O MOLINN, McLaglin: A 7.
- OMOLOGAN, Dermot: gt, 1413.
- O MOLUONY (Omolouni):  
 John: 2255.  
 Patrick: A 7.
- OMOR, Omora, Omory, *see* MOORE.
- O MORGU, O Morgan, *see* MORGAN.
- OMORIS, O Morise, *see* MORRIS.
- OMORLEY, *see* MORLY.
- OMORRA, *see* MOORE.
- OMORROGHU (Morchoe, Murcha, Omorogh):  
 Donogh: lce, 402.  
 Patrick: 47 (n) b.  
 Thomas: gt, 260.  
 Tireligh: gt, 326 [e].
- OMOYNE, Sgt Theodore: gt, 2369.
- OMULCAGHLIN, *see* O MULOGHLYN.
- OMULCHONOR, John: lce, 526.
- O MULERIE, *see* MOLEDY.
- O MULOGHLYN (Glachlin, Mac Milaghlán, O Melaghlen, Omolcaghlin, Omulloaghlyn):  
 Con, *alias* Neale, Nelán, Neillán (Capt): 184 (n) ; 212 [a], 242, 257.
- Morogh: A 7.  
 Peter (Adj): ppt, 2771.
- O MULRIAN, *see* MULRIAN.
- OMULTALLY (Omuiltali):  
 Matthew Oge: attainted, 403 (n) b.  
 — (Sgt): gt, 2338.
- O MURRANE (O Murriane):  
 Dermot (Lt): A 27.  
 Edmund (Capt), of Dulish Murrian: *ibid*.
- O NAGHTEN (Onachten):  
 Brian: 456.  
 Hugo: A 7.
- ONATE, Count —, Spanish Ambassador, 1516, 1970 [e].
- ONCLE, Ambroise Van, Collector General of Finances: 1171.
- O NEILL (Honel, Neale, Neil, Neile, Nel, Niel, O Neal, Onel, Oneli, Onell, Oneyl, Oneyle, Oneyll):  
 Anthony, orphan of Mark, *infra*: pn, 1343 [k].  
 Art, *alias* Art Og, *alias* Mac Art (Capt, Major), son of Art Mac Baron O Neill, and nephew to Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: 184 (n), 195, 237, 272 (n), 290, 304 (n) e, 309, 326 [g], 386; attainted, 403 (n) b; 409-11, 418, 424, 426, 429, 464, 477, 486, 490, 548, 576 (n) a, b, 578, 592 [b], 610 (n), 622, 625, 627, 651, 676, 684, 702, 720, 722, 743, 831, 937, 997, 1005, 1087, 1136, 1343 [d]; lce, 1449, 1519; 2767.
- Bernard, *alias* Brian, son of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: 466 (n), 515, 527, 534, gt, 592 [d]; 594, 598, 602, 608; murdered, 613 (n).
- Bernard, *alias* Brian (En, Capt'n, Col): lce, 1442; trsf'd, 1520; 1548, 1632, 1647, 1649; lce, 1728, 1728 (n) b, 1767 (n), 1779 (n), 1784 (n), 1794, 1803 (n) b, 1807 (n) b; gt, 2566; to levy regt of Irish infantry, 2689, 2689 (n); 2690, 2692; complaint as to excesses of his regt when at sea, 2698; 2702, 2723-4, 2761.  
*See also* BARRY, Enora.
- Brigida, widow of Col Patk O Donnell: lce, 2512.
- Catherine, Countess of Tyrone (1607): A 7.
- Charles, *alias* Cormac (En, Capt'n): lce, Spain, 628; 633-4, 713; gt, 715; 730-1; gt, 732; 744; gt, 760; 761, 774; lce, 789; 790, 802, 831, 865, 886, 933, 1440, 1521, 1564, 1569, A 7.
- Conatio, *see* John, *infra*.
- Constantine, *alias* Con Mc Neale (Capt), son of Art Mac Baron O Neill (brother of 2nd Earl): gt,



- 211; lce, 902; gt, 903; 1087, 1120, 1136, 1185, 1206; gt, 1258; 1266, 1343 [h], 1372 (n), 1520, 1645, 1655-6, 1658-8; lce, England, 1688; ready to recruit, asks money 1714; 1731, 1779 (n), 1784 (n), 1792 (n) *b*, 1794; entitled to earldom of Tyrone, 1801 (n) *a*; 1807 (n) *b*; 2029 (n) *b*-*d*, 2036 (n) *b*; gt, 2249; 2300; gt, 2349; lce, England, 2417; gt, made in error, withdrawn, 2432; gt, 2495; trsid, 2692.
- Con (Col): 2029 (n) *e*, 2116 (n) *a*, A 27.
- Con, (basa) son to Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: A 6.
- Cormac (Mac Baron), brother of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: 305 (n) *b*, 466 (n), 614 (n), 793, 948 (n), A 6.
- Daniel (Col): gt, 711, 1268; letter from (Col) Owen (Roe) O'Neill, 1867 (n) *a*; letter to Marchioness of Ormond, 1995 (n); 1997; Knighted, 2767; pay, 2767, 2830, 2847, 2847 (n).
- Denis: 2186.
- Edmond: gt, 997.
- Ennis: 47 (n) *b*.
- Eugenio (Capt, Col), afterwards known as Owen Roe O'Neill, son of Art Mac Baron O'Neill, and nephew to Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: 207, 212 [e], 272 (n), 286, 326 [d], 353, 360, 392; gt, 396; lce, Spain, 398; 561; gt, 692; 901, 912, 925, 927; lce, Spain, 971; 980, 988, 1011-23, 1025, 1029, 1030 [a], [x], 1099, 1101, 1104-5, 1115, 1117; will leave service as protest against new regt being given to Hugh O'Donnell, 1180, 1186; 1234, 1242, 1246, 1249, 1255, 1258, 1266, 1269, 1290, 1293-5, 1298, 1305, 1314, 1319, 1321, 1330-4, 1336, 1341-2, 1343 [d], 1352, 1355, 1370, 1372-3, 1372 (n), 1387 (n) *b*, 1407, 1412, 1414, 1425, 1431, 1435, 1439, 1442, 1446, 1448, 1451, 1457-8, 1471-3, 1475, 1487, 1494, 1497, 1502, 1511, 1537, 1544, 1546-7, 1550-6, 1558, 1560-1, 1563, 1566, 1568, 1581, 1592; arrests Capt'n William Butler, 1601; 1602, 1606; asks to be paid regularly, 1609-10; Col Maurice Mac Swiney complains of unfair treatment by him, 1613; Lord Deputy says Irish recruits should not be put under his command, 1617, 1635; 1623; made governor of Arras, 1627-8; 1629, 1632, 1634; surrenders Arras, 1635 (n) *a*; arrested, 1635 (n) *b*; 1638, 1641-2, 1646-9, 1652-3, 1657, 1660, 1662, 1665, 1667; to leave Douai for Valenciennes without further delay, 1673; to move to Lens, 1683 (n); to be paid punctually, 1686; 1688, 1696, 1714, 1717, 1722; paid 2400 crowns for recruiting 400 Irishmen, 1726; 1727-8; will assist insurrection in Ireland, 1728 (n) *b*; 1730-2, 1734, 1736, 1756, 1759, 1762, 1771; at la Basse and Lille, 1762 (n); conference with an Irish friar, 'one of the O'Neales', disguised, 1779 (n); 1782, 1784-5, 1784 (n), 1787, 1792; seeks leave to go to Ireland (1642), 1792 (n) *c*, *d*, 1796 (n) *b*, 1798 (n) *passim*; 1794; exchange of letters with Secretary of Audience, 1796-7; 'Eating his heart out in Flanders, (1642), 1798 (n) *c*; would serve Phelim O'Neill loyally, 1801 (n) *a*; Fr Hugh Burke's opinion of his character, 1801 (n) *b*; will go to Ireland even if without leave, 1801 (n) *c*; De Vic's description of him, *ibid*; to leave for Ireland on 10th June, 1642, 1803 (n) *a*; given 10,000 florins by Fr Hugh Burke, *ibid*; explains delay in departure, 1803 (n) *b*; delayed till 20th June, 1804 (n) *a*; 1804 (n) *b*, *c*, 1807 (n) *a*, *b*; account of men and munitions brought by him, 1818 (n); 1856; explains his association with the Spanish agent in Ireland, 1867 (n) *a*, *b*; is head of army of 12,000 and is head of only party able to oppose Ormonde, 1970 [b]; willing to hand Ireland to Spain, *ibid*; 1970 [c], [d], [e]; disobeys Confederation but is supported by Rinuccini, 1970 [f]; 1970 [g], [h], 2029 (n) *c*, 2036 (n) *a*, 2118, 2122 (n) *b*; date of death mentioned, 2847 (n).
- Letter to unnamed friend, A 11; to Fr Luke Wadding, A 22, A 23; to Fr Hugh Burke, 1762 (n), A 25, A 25 (n).
- See also Rosa, *infra*.
- Feardorcha, slain by Sean an Diomais: 958 (n) *a*, *b*.
- Felix, see Phelim, *infra*.
- Ferdinand: 466 (n); gt, 691.
- Henry (Col), 2nd son of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: sent as hostage to Spain, 80 (n) *b*; at Salamanca, 80 (n) *f*, *g*, A 2; recalled by his father, 127 (n); asks to be given regt in Flanders, 150 (n); gt, 173; 176, 178-81, 184 (n); gt, 185, 192;



- 195, 195 (n), 197, 200, 202, 204, 206-7, 212, 214, 216-7, 220-1, 231, 237, 245 (n), 246, 249-51, 255, 268-9, 271 (n) *a-c*, 272 (n), 273-6, 282, 286-8, 290, 292, 297, 300, 303 (n) *a*, 305; visits Sir Thomas Edmonds, 306 (n) *b*; 308 (n) *b*, 311-2, 325 (n), 326; 'a true child of his father', 326 (n) *a*; 329, 338 (n), 339, 340 (n) *a-c*, 344 [b], 351, 354; commended by Pope Paul V, 354 (n), 359 (n); 359, 364, 366, 383; letter to Philip III, 384 (n); 391; letter to Archduke Albert, 394; 395-6; Ice, Spain, 398, 403; attainted, 403 (n) *b*; Ice, Spain, 407, 412; gone to Spain, 416 (n), 429 (n) *d*; 417, 422-3; dead, 446 (n); 680, 1133 [b], A 3, A 8.
- Henry (En, Capt'n), son of Cormac O'Neill and nephew of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: arrives in Brussels, 614; gt, 683, 710, 762; Ice, 790, 1057; returns from Ireland after 5 years' absence, gt, 1259; Ice, 1386; to raise co, 1711; in Tyrone, 1728 (n) *a*; 1752; gt to co, 1770.
- Henry (En, Capt'n), son of Col Eugenio O'Neill: 1336, 1431, 1482, 1548, 1557, 1565, 1645, 1649, 1784, 1784 (n), 1804 (n) *b, c*, 1807 (n) *a*; *b*: letter of; dead, 2043.
- Henry Mac Shane, father of Phelim O'Neill: 958 (n) *a*.
- Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone, 'Conte of Teron', d. 1616: 55 (n) *b*, 67 (n) *b*; his person described, 81 (n); 94 (n); recalls his son Henry from Spain, 127 (n); 265 (n) *a*, 271 (n) *a, b*; visits to Spain and Rome unwellcome, 304 (n) *c*; 305, 313, 338 (n), 344 [b]; money grant from the Pope, 348 (n); 355 [a], 384 (n); attainted, 403 (n) *b*; 407, 497, 500, 515, 527, 532, 534; asks to be restored to his dignity and estates, 571 (n) *c, d*; poor and friendless in Rome, 575 (n) *a, b*, 579 (n) *b*; his return to Flanders not desired, 581, 581 (n); 588 (n), 589-90, 595-6, 599 (n), 869; 'now old and decaying', 878 (n) *c*; John Rathes' proposals, A 6.
- Letters to Archduke Albert, 80 (n) *a*, 111 (n) *a, b*; to Philip II, 55 (n) *c*; to Abp of Armagh, 333 (n) *a*.
- Letters from Archduke Albert, 282 (n); from Fr Matheu de Caria, 80 (n) *f*.
- See also Flight of the Earls.
- Hugh, Baron of Dungannon and son of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: 304 (n) *e*, 361 (n), 365 (n), 447; gt, 458.
- Hugh Boy, son of Sir Tirlogh: 55 (n) *b*, 610 (n), 948 (n).
- Hugh, soldier of co of Capt'n Thadeus O'Sullivan: gt, 975.
- Hugh, son of Capt'n Henry and grandson of Col Eugenio O'Neill: kidnapped by 'one of the Blakes', 1804 (n) *c*.
- Hugh, nephew of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: gt, 769, 804.
- Hugh (Major, Major General), nephew of Rosa, *infra*, 'General (Owen Roe) O'Neill's lady: 1804 (n) *c*; imprisoned after defence of Limerick; Irish friar asks Don Leopold to secure his liberation, 2036, 2036 (n) *a*; Cardenas asks that he be freed, A 26; released from prison, 2062; Philip IV asks that he be sent to Spain, *ibid*; gone to Spain, 2063; 2160, A 27.
- Hugo (En, Adj't): 466 (n), 613 (n), 1393.
- John, *alias* Conatio, nephew of Hugh, 2nd Earl of Tyrone: 588 (n), 590; pn, 592 [d], 594-6, 598; gt, 600, 608; commanded to Philip III, 611; gt, 738, 761, 867.
- John (Col), *titular* 3rd Earl of Tyrone, son of Hugh, 2nd Earl: in Louvain, 450; gt, 671; Ice, Spain, 712; 713; commended to Philip III, 714; 730; Ice extended, 748; 780 (n); claims restoration of Tyrone estates, 794-5, 801, 840, 859; 817, 830; letter to Secretary of the Audience, 851; petition to the Pope, 859 (n); Ice, Spain, 862; gt, 867; proposal that he, with Col Hugh O'Donnell bring expeditionary force to Ireland, *see* Ireland; 878 (n) *c*, 927, 958 (n) *a, b*; Abp Conry's visit to Spain on his behalf and that of Hugh O'Donnell, 968-9, 969 (n) *a, b*; suggested marriage to sister of Hugh O'Donnell, 991 [a], 995; 992, 996 (n), 1017; letter to Infanta Isabella, 1076; orders from Infanta, 1079 [c], 1080; Ice, Spain, 1081-2, 1088; pay, 1126; Ice extended, 1129; petitions Philip IV as to grievances of his officers, 1132-3, 1146; Ice extended, 1147, 1152, 1165, 1196, 1210, 1224; pay, 1231, 1235-6; Philip IV's concern for the welfare of the Irish regts of O'Neill and O'Donnell, 1345-6; proposal that his regt go to Brazil, 1356; Ice, Brussels, 1453, 1489; 1495, 1509, 1512; regt ordered to Spain, 1527 (n) *a*; Richelieu said to try to entice him and Col Hugh O'Donnell to move their troops



- to Ireland, 1527 (n) *f*; said to have been mortally wounded, *ibid*; 1528, 1534, 1538, 1539 (n), 1540, 1544 (n), 1551, 1563 (n), 1567, 1569 (n) *a*, 1617, 1635, 1664, 1696, 1865; John Rathe's proposals to James I in his regard, A 6; A 7, A 8, A 12, A 13.
- Other (minor) references to Col John O'Neill's co and/or regt: 465-1484 *passim*.
- John (En, Captn): gt, 1341; 1623, 1642, 1784 (n), A 27.
- John: lce, 418; gt, 709, 866.
- Leonora, orphan of Roderick, *infra*: pn, 1343 [j].
- Mark, *see* Anthony, *supra*.
- Nelan (Captn): gt to co, 1314; 1616, 1784 (n).
- Owen Roe, *see* Col Eugenio O'Neill, *supra*.
- Patrick (En): gt, 2579.
- Phelim, *alias* Felice, Felix, Felize (Major): gt, 691, 922, 948 (n); lce, Spain, with commendation to Philip IV by Infanta Isabella, 951; 952; lce, 958; petition to Secretary of State, 958 (n) *a, b*; 1040-1; lce, Spain, 1082; 1728 (n) *a*, 1792 (n) *d*; possibility of friction with Owen Roe O'Neill in Ireland, 1798 (n) *b*; 1801 (n) *a*, A 25; 2122 (n) *b*.
- Philip (Lte), chaplain: 1727, 1779 (n).
- Roderick: gt, 997.
- Rosa, nee O Doherty, wife of Col Eugenio O'Neill: gt, 1000, 1158, 1762 (n); petition to Don Leopold, 2118.
- Sara: petition, 1640; wishes to become a religious, 1643.
- Sean an Diomais: 958 (n) *b*.
- Terence: gt, 720, 900, 1639, A 7.
- Terence (En, Captn): lce, 2772; lce, Italy, 2827; lce, to recruit, 2841.
- Tirlough Mac Henry: 610 (n).
- William: gt, 2712.
- See also* Tyrone (Index II).
- ONGNYES, C de: 1061.
- ONO, Captn Maurice: 1921.
- OPECAN, Patrick: 1701.
- OPEN, *see* HOPE.
- O QUELEHAN, Donogh: A 7.
- OQQUELI, Oquelli, *see* KELLY.
- OQUENIN, Lt William: gt, 2392.
- OQUENY, Captn Constantino: lce, 1834.
- OQUIAN, O Quinn, Oquine, Oquyn, *see* QUIN.
- OQUILLIN, Daniel: lce, 281.
- OQUIF, *see* O KEEF.
- OQUIERIGAN, Loughlen: 1566.
- O QUIRE (O QUIRRE):  
Donogh: A 7.  
Patricio: A 7.
- ORACHELLI, Edmond: lce, 1420.
- ORANGE, Henry Frederick, Prince of: 1297 (n), A 13, A 19 (7).
- O REILLY (De Relli, Oreali, Oreilly, Oreli, Orelle, Orelli, Orelly, O Rely, Oreylli, O Reylly, Reilly, de Orelli', Reli, Relly, Rely, Reylhe):  
Bernard: gt, 254; A 3.  
Bernard (Sgt, En): 2169; gt, 2191.  
Bernard (Fr), O S F: ppt, 2734.  
Charles (Captn): 2230, 2264, 2264 (n):  
gt, 2335; 2343; gt to co, 2375; 2538.  
Cornelius, *alias* Conor Og: 459 (n); to receive arrears due to Philip O'Reilly, A 3; these moneys subsequently paid to Franciscans, *ibid*; 472 (n), 497, 522 (n).  
Edmond: lce, 533.  
Edmond (En, Sgt, Qr master, Captn): 1309; gt, 1323; 2166, 2233-4, 2324-5; lce, 2422.  
Edmund, 'cousin of Col O'Reilly', Abp of Armagh 1654-69: 2528, 2528 (n).  
Eugenio (Captn): lce, 1276; 1309, 1316, 1323-5; gt, 1326.  
Eugenio (Sgt): 2236; lce, 2431.  
Ferdinand: gt, 932; lce, 1066, 1288, 1325.  
Gelasius, father of Fr Bernard, *supra*: 2734.  
Gerald: A 3.  
Honora, mother of Fr Bernard, *supra*: 2734.  
Hugh (Captn): gt, 233, 641; lce, 1277; 1309, 1316, 1327-8; lce, 1339.  
Hugh (En): 2137; gt, 2343; lce, 2437, 2510.  
Hugo: gt, A 1.  
Hugo Nechten (Lt): gt, 2804.  
John (Captn): 2154; dead, 2217.  
John, Macmilor (En, Captn): 2278; lce, 2312, 2372; gt, 2379; 2439; lce, Spain, 2591; gt, 2599; 2603; lce, Amsterdam, 2637; 2727.  
Juan: A 7.  
Melchior (Captn): gt to co, 2375; 2703 [f].  
Myles (Col): 2116 (n) *a, b*; letter to Ormonde, 2710 (n).  
Philip: gt, 212 [a]; his arrears to be paid to Cornelius, A 3.  
Philip (Sgt): 2278.  
Philip (Captn): 2169; gt, 2251; 2312, 2372; gt to co, 2375; 2426, 2437, 2450, 2495; lce, 2538.  
Philip (Col): 1346 (n), 1728 (n) *b*; his troops mutiny, 2116-7; takes Irishmen to Spain, 2116 (n) *a, b*; 2140, 2154, 2166, 2190, 2217, 2223, 2228, 2230, 2233-4, 2236, 2264, 2264 (n), 2268, 2278, 2300, 2307-8,



- 2312, 2334-5; gt, 2336; 2341-4, 2346, 2349, 2355, 2401, 2406; appeals to Philip IV for restoration of his regt, 2515; why regt was disbd, 2528, 2528 (n); 2530; gt, 2564; pn, 2626; payt for rations, 2679; gt, 2701; pay, 2709. Terence (En, Adj): gt, 2203; pay, 2217; 2312, 2323; gt, 2346; lce, 2430; 2703 [f].
- ORENDONCO, George (En, Adj): 1502.
- ORGAN, Sgt Quedar y: gt, 2577.
- ORIEGAN, *see* RIEGAN.
- ORIERDEN, *see* RIORDAN.
- ORIENTI, *see* ORORTI.
- ORMONDE (Ormont, Oimonte):  
James Butler, 12th Earl, Marquis of Munster, 1st Duke of Lord Lieutenant (d. 1688): raises army, aftwds disbd, against Scots, 1687 (n) *b, d, e*; letter from Sir Henry Vane, 1778 (n) *a*; letter from Major Hugh O Neill mentioned, 1804 (n) *c*; correspondence with Sir J. Digby, 1848 (n) *b, c*, 1954 (n) *a, b*, 1956 (n), 1962 (n), 1965 (n), 1970 (n); letter from Secretary Nicholas, 1868 (n); letter to Sir Piers Crosby, 1897 (n); proposes to recruit 4000 Irishmen for Spain, he to be Col in chief, 1967; journey to France, 1970 [a]; only person in Ireland who can oppose him is Owen Roe O Neill, 1970 [b]; gold seized at sea, 1970 [i]: 1991; letter from Duke of Lorraine, 1993 (n); letter from Patrick Archer, 2016 (n) *b*; 2064 (n) *a*; letter from Sir George Radcliffe, 2109 (n) *a*; preparing for expedition to Spain, 2122 (n) *b*; proposals to Don John of Austria through Chancellor Hyde, 2153; Don John's reply, 2157; his regt in France, 2157 (n) *a*; letter to Viscount Muskerry mentioned, 2162 (n) *a*; granted 4000 crowns to bring Duke of York from France, 2163; asks Irish officers in France to go over to army in Flanders, 2163 (n); 2166 (n); to command regt for Charles II, 2171 (n) *a*; 2174, 2186 (n) *b*, 2193, 2194 (n), 2195 (n) *a, b*; ppt, Germany, 2218; order from Charles II as to payt of troops, 2220 (n); 2253 (n) *a*, 2288, 2309 (n); 2442; recalls Edmund Butler from Flanders, 2533; 2552 (n) *b*, 2686 (n); letter from Col Myles O Reilly, 2710 (n); Col Denis O Byrne asks him for loan of £100, 2841 (n) *a*. Thomas Butler, 10th Earl: 1188 (n). —, Marchioness of: letter from Daniel O Neill, 1995 (n).
- Ormont, fort at: 2224 (n).
- ORORTI (Oerti, Orierti), Captn Morirtach: gt, 2124; 2126, 2129.
- O ROURKE (Ororque, Orurque, Ourerch, Rorque, Ruarck, Ruarque, Ruerque, Ruerqui, Rurque):  
Brian (Brian-na-Murtha), Lord of Leitrim, executed 1591: 970, 970 (n).  
Brian Oge (Brian-na-Samthach), son of Brian, *supra*: 970 (n).  
Cornelius (Capt): gt, 2190-2; lce, 2426.  
Hugo, grandson of Brian-na-Murtha: lce, 944; 970, 983 [c].  
Lawrence (En, Sgt): gt, 2125, 2572.  
Patrick (Capt): 2764.  
Robert: gt, 1523.  
Roger (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2586.  
Thadeus (Sgt, Capt): gt, 2192; 2775; dead, 2776.  
Thadeus, chaplain: pay, 1448.  
Thomas (Sgt): 1830.  
Orsay (Orsi, Orssoy): 452, 1061, 1704.
- ORTIZ, Captn Juan: 838.
- OSCACHNOTI, *see* O SHAGHNUSSEY.
- OSCANLON (Oscaulon):  
Daniel (En): lce, 2460; ppt, 2514.  
Moriarto: lce, Spain, 2359.
- OSCHEALE, *see* O SHIEL.
- OSERAL, *see* FARREL.
- O SHAGHNUSSEY (Oscachnati, Sachnez, Sagnes, Schaghmosy, Schiamussy, Seacnassi, Shaghanes, Shaghunishy, Shaguene):  
Dermot: A 27.  
Hugo: lce, 98; gt, 121.  
*See also* MAHON, Maria.  
James, *see* William, *infra*.  
Juana y Maria, daughters of Hugo, *supra*: gt, 630; pn, 1343 [f].  
Maria, daughter of Hugo, *supra*: gt, 630.  
Roger (Capt): gt, 2353; lce, 2420.  
William: lce, Spain, 108; jointly with James, his brother, petition to the Pope, 108 (n); gt, 266, 472.
- OSHERIDAN, *see* SHERIDAN.
- O SHIEL (Ocheale, O Chiely, Oscheale, O Shiell, Schiel, Shell):  
Cate, wife of Owen, *infra*: 1163 (n) *c*.  
Charles (Capt): 1915; gt to co, 1950; A 27.  
James, father of Owen, *infra*: 1163 (n) *a*.  
Owen (Eugenio), surgeon: gt, 1163; refuses to take oath of allegiance at Dover, 1163 (n) *a, b*; 1163 (n) *c*; gt, 1181, 1208, 1550, A 7.
- O SHINAN, Captn Dermot: A 27.
- OSLATTER, Obrun, *see* LOGLAN, Catalina de.
- O SOWLYWAINE, *see* O SULLIVAN.
- OSSETT, *see* HUSEY.



- OSSORY, Earl of, his brother: 1861 (n) *b*.  
*See also* UPPER OSSORY, Baron of.
- OSTANHUERTS, *see* STANIURST.
- Ostend: 55 (n) *a*, 88, 91, 104, 114, 126, 126 (n) *a, c*, 151, 180, 220, 257, 320, 333, 338 (n), 394, 429 (n) *b*, 455-6, 825, 1079 [c], 1087 (n), 1099, 1136, 1307, 1398, 1450, 1542-3, 1549, 1580-1, 1602-3, 1706, 1803 (n) *b*, 1804 (n) *a*, 1863 (n) *a, b*, 1864-5, 1918, 2005 [b], 2087, 2213, 2328, 2440, 2585, 2689 [3], 2698, 2798 [2], 2838 [1], 2849, A 7, A 12, A 18.
- Oxford: 1868 (n).
- O SULLIVAN (O Sowlywaine, Ossulevan, Ossullivan, Osuleban, Osulevan, Osuliban, Osulivan, Osullevan, O Sullevane, Soliban, Solivan, Sullian, Sollivan, Souliman, Sul-eman, Suliban, Sullevan, Sullivane):
- Conoghor, son of Owen, *infra*: pn, 184 (n).
- Cornelius (En): gt, 1131; lce, 1155; gt, 1226; lce, 1380.
- Daniel: gt, 356.
- Daniel (En): gt, 2353; 2703 [c].
- Denis (Capt): lce, Brussels, 1454.
- Dermot (Capt), Major, Col), 'O Sullivan More': gt, 833; 873 (n), 884 (n); gt, 985; 1002 (n); recruiting at Diest and Sichein, 1044-7; letter to Infanta Isabella, 1075; 1131, 1136, 1155, 1343 [e], 1380; lce, Spain, 1512; granted letter of introduction to Spanish Ambassador at London, 1516-7; lce, Spain, 1525; 1901-2, 1911, 1913; gt, 1914; 1916, 1918; secret service money, 1922; 1951; 1960, 1965, 2030; lce, 2059.
- Dermot (En): gt, 2641.
- Dermot (Lt), of Fermoy: A 27.
- Dermot (Capt), of Kilmalac: A 27.
- Donnell (Col), O Sullivan Beare of Berehaven: 2413 (n) *a, b*.
- Elena: desires to become a nun, 981.
- Gelasius, son of Owen, *infra*: gt, 163; pn, 184 (n).
- John: gt, 1127.
- John (Sgt): gt, 2588.
- Owen: 184 (n), 509.
- Owen (En): 2255, A 27.
- [Philip], 'O Sullivan Beare', 'Earl of Berehaven': 591, 597, 981.
- Philip O Sullivan Mor (Col): to recruit from Holland and France, 1800-1; gt, 1913; lce, Spain, 2287.
- Thadeus (En, Capt), son of Owen, *supra*: 184 (n); gt, 212 [a]; lce, 525; 582-4, 592 [b], 624, 635-6, 728, 759, 786, 919, 975, 1006-7, 1083, 1092, 1136, 1160, 1213; gt, 1227; lce, Spain, 1244; 1343 [e] [j].
- OSUNA, Duke of: 113.
- O TIERNAN, Conor: A 7.
- OTORTAU, David: lce, 510.
- OTRASHE, *see* TRASSI.
- OTTEA, *see* O DEA.
- Oudenarde (Audenarde): 1721, 1723, 1745.
- OVETON, Ovington, *see* HOVENDEN.
- OWEDAN, *see* HOVENDEN.
- OWENS (Oen, Owen, O Wen):  
 Hugh (Fr): 307 [a], 321.  
 Francis, a London merchant: 2051, 2051 (n) *a, b*, 2066-7.  
 Lewis (Sgt): gt, 734.  
 Richard (Capt): 184 (n); gt, A 1.  
 Rolan: gt, 47.  
 Thomas, chaplain: gt, 1535.  
 —: A 2.
- OWGAN, James: gt, 16.

## P

- P (*sic*), John: gt, 4.
- PACKER, John: letter to Sir William Trumbull, 460 (n).
- Palace Greeny: A 27.
- Palatinate, The: 801, 831, 834, 840, 873 (n) *f*, 1062, 1304, 1451, 1634, 1783, A 20.
- PALATINE, The Elector, *see* FREDERICK.
- PALAVICINI, Alexander, Superintendent of the army, 2852 (n).
- PALEYO, John: gt, A 1.
- Palins: 1040.
- PAMPHILI, Cardinal: 1863 (n) *b*.
- PANZIROLO, Cardinal: letter from Rinuccini, 1867 (n) *b*.
- PARAVICINO, Fr Hortensio Felix: 1121, 1125.
- PARDO, Captn Bartholomew Sanchez: 149.
- PARHAM, Col Edward: 1149.
- Paris: 46 (n) *b*, 94 (n), 416 (n), 493, 969 (n) *b*, 1803 (n) *e*, 1807 (n) *b*, 1848 (n) *c*, 1863 (n) *a*, 1869, 1970 (n), 2001 (n), 2051 (n), 2058 (n) *c*, 2109 (n) *a*, 2110, 2157 (n) *b*, 2162 (n) *b*, 2186 (n) *a*, 2195 (n) *a*, 2224 (n), 2309 (n).
- PARMA, Prince (Duke) of: 8 (n) *p*, 46 (n) *a, b*.
- Passage: 1954 (n) *b*.
- PASTON, En: gt, A 1.
- PATON:  
 Alexander: gt, A 1.  
 William (Capt): 52 [d]; gt, A 1.
- PATRICK, *see* FITZPATRICK.
- PAULI-STRAVIUS, *see* STRAVIUS.
- PAUL V, Pope (1605-21): 307 (n) *c, e, g*, 321, 328 (n) *d*, 333 (n) *a*, 338 (n), 348 (n), 354 (n), 359 (n), 487 (n), 537 (n) *b*, 571 (n) *b*, 575 (n) *a, b*, 587.



- PAZ, Pedro Martinez de: secret service money, 1895-6, 1899, 1921-2.  
*See also* MESIA Y PAZ.
- PENERANDA, Count de: 2218.
- PENTENEY, Sir Edward, his son: 8 (n) z.
- PERALTA:  
 Juan Perez de (Capt): 1548.  
 Luis Ibanez de (Capt): 2348.  
*See also* SEPECHIA Y PERALTA.
- PERCEVAL, William: Ice, England, 275.
- Pernambuca: 1357.
- PERNAVE, *see* BERNABE.
- Perpignan: 911.
- PERROT, Sir John, Lord Deputy (1584-88): letter to Earl of Leicester, 8 (n) c; letter to Privy Council, 8 (n) b; letter from Privy Council, 8 (n) u.
- PESTOCQ, *see* BOSTOCK.
- Pethem (Pittern): 1019-20.
- PETIT (Pettit):  
 John (Lt): gt, 40.  
 William: pn, 184 (n); gt, 797.
- PHAIRE, Col —: letter from the Commissioners in Ireland, 2103 (n).
- PHELAN (Fielan, Fullam, Fullan):  
 Denis: gt, 215.  
 Lawrence (Capt): A 1.  
 Richard: 65 (n) d.
- PHILIP II, King of Spain (1556-98):  
 1; letter from Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnel, 55 (n) c; 573, 896 [d].
- PHILIP III, King of Spain (1598-1621):  
 120, 122-3, 125, 128-9, 134-5, 141, 156, 163-75, 184, 187-91, 193-4, 199, 208, 218-9, 222-3, 241, 252-4, 258-67, 270-1, 286 (n), 304 (n) d, 333, 333 (n) a; arrival of Earls reported to him, A 4; 334, 341, 346, 356, 371, 390, 419; displeased with treatment of Irish regt, 429 (n) d; 496, 540, 545, 561; 571 (n) b; "the Hercules who will destroy the Hydra" (James I), 618 [b]; 621, 641-2, 653, 659, 669, 673, 677, 698-700, 705, 707, 739; interview with Fr Paul Ragetto, 877 [a]; 945, 1164.  
 Letters to Archduke Albert, 572-3, 585, 589, 595, 597, 600, 603-5, 616, 646, 703, 718; to Catholic League, 946; to Francesco de Castro, 588 (n); to Juan de Mancicador, 580.  
 Letters from Archduke Albert, 579, 581, 586, 588, 590-1, 593, 596, 598, 602, 607-9, 611-2, 614-5, 619, 623, 631, 633, 640, 668, 680, 687, 713-4; from Col Henry O'Neill, 384 (n).
- PHILIP IV, King of Spain (1621-65):  
 757, 760-2, 814, 822, 833-4, 855, 863, 883, 889, 892, 924, 926, 930, 960, 993, 1000, 1086, 1126-7, 1135, 1154, 1174, 1211, 1216, 1226, 1231, 1235-6, 1285-6, 1289, 1291, 1296, 1344, 1511-2, 1524-5, 1570, 1720 [b], 1900, 2011, 2014, 2153, 2203, 2411;
- his titles and dominions, A 10; A 19.  
 Letters to Marquis de Caracena, 2438, 2515, 2529, 2554, 2667-8, 2702; to Marquis de Castel Rodrigo, 1867, 1877-8, 1880, 1882, 1892, 1897-8, 1903; to Don Ferdinand, 1533-4, 1685, 1693, 1699; to Francisco Foissot, 1868; to Infanta Isabella, 752-3, 801, 873-4, 876, 893, 895, 899, 989, 994, 1002-4, 1029, 1038, 1121, 1132, 1159, 1186, 1200, 1252; to Don John of Austria, 2147; to Don Leopold William, 1969, 1992, 1996-7, 2001, 2017, 2031-3, 2038, 2062, 2118, 2198; to Francisco de Mello, 1802; to Miguel de Salamanca, 1764, 1773-4.  
 Letters from Archduke Albert, 719, 723, 735; from Marquis d'Aytona, 1131 (n); from Marquis de Caracena, 2644-5 ('petition of a person zealous for religion'), 2698 (complaining of excesses and disorders of Col Bernard O Neills regt); from Marquis de Castel Rodrigo, 1862-5, 1869, 1879, 1884, 1907, 1967, 2528; from Don Carlos Colonna, 877; from Fr Columbanus (petition), 1039; from Don Ferdinand, 1345-6, 1350, 1356, 1360, 1405, 1538, 1572, 1597, 1599, 1609, 1683, 1703, 1719-20, 1754, 1779-80; from Infanta Isabella, 746, 764-5, 793-5, 800, 809, 817, 840, 857, 859, 869-70, 875, 904, 906, 945, 950-1, 968, 970, 972, 979-81, 988, 992, 996, 1001, 1008, 1037, 1125, 1146, 1180, 1231; from Don John of Austria, 2163; from Diego de La Torre, 1970; from Don Leopold William, 1966, 1971, 1989, 1991, 1999, 2013, 2018, 2029, 2036, 2041, 2080, 2102, 2110-11, 2117; from St Anthony's, Louvain (petition), 1039; from Marquis de Velada, 1617.
- Philippeville: 455, 578.
- Philipina: 1407.
- PHILLIPS (Flps, Philips):  
 Walter (Capt), of Clunmore: A 27.  
 — (Major, Lt Col): 2224 (n).
- PICCOLLOMINI, —: A 13.
- Piedmont: 2623.
- PIPARD, Captin Anthony: ppt, 1758.
- PIGENOTTI, Francesco Maria: 1713.
- PIS, John: 1783.
- Plancques: 1627.
- PLUNKET (Planquet, Plonckett, Plonquet, Plonquet, Plonqueto, Plunquet, Pluncquet, Plunqueto, Plunkett, Plunquet, Plunquette, Plunqueto):  
 Bartholomew (Lte), chaplain: 1931; pay, 2183.  
 Sir Christopher: attainted, 403 (n) b; 1188 (n).



- Christopher (En, Captn): petition to Don Ferdinand, 1616; 1875; secret service money, 1921; 1926, 1935; gt, 1947, 1956; 2024.
- Edward (Captn), son of Earl of Fingal: 1861 (n) *c*.
- George: gt, 33, A 1.
- Henry (En): 2410.
- Humphrey: gt, 126.
- James (Captn): 1554; gt, 2292.
- John: lce, 387.
- Nicholas (Captn), of Dunsoghly: 1970 [d], A 27.
- Oliver: lce, 1547.
- Patrick: gt, 326 [c].
- Patrick (Fr), chaplain: pay, 667, 838.
- Patrick: gt, 2717-22, 2765.
- Richard (Captn, Col), 'a younger son of Sir Christopher': 1188 (n); gt, 1194; lce, 1238; 1299; lce, 1378; in Ireland, recruiting, 1410-11; 1444, 1455-6, 1469; gt, 1483, 1491; 1501, 1504; lce, gt, 1508; authorised to take 1000 Irishmen to Continent, 1687 (n) *f*; contract with Alonso de Cardenas to furnish recruits, 1751; 1767, 1767 (n); letter to Alonso de Cardenas, 1768; petition to Charles I protesting against hindrances, 1774 (n) *a*; accompanies Owen Roe O'Neill to Ireland, 1803 (n) *e*.
- Thomas *alias* Thadeus (Captn, Major): gt, 666; 1319; lce, 1385; 1443, 1468; gt, 1528; 1532, 1535; pay, 1886; ppt, 1893; trying to recruit a regt in Ireland, 1893 (n) *a*; letter from Rinuccini as to difficulties in obtaining authority for recruiting, 1895 (n) *b*; licence to recruit refused, 1897 (n); lce, Spain, 2012; commended to Philip IV, 2013; account of his service, *ibid*; levies in Ireland, 2027 (n) *a-d*, 2035 (n); death, 2027 (n) *d*.
- William: gt, 856, 956; lce, 984; gt, 1150; lce, 1169.
- Plymouth: A 20.
- PODERICO, Luis: 2702.
- Poland: 459 (n), 747 (n) *a*, 873 (n) *f*.
- POLAND, King of: 459 (n), 472 (n), 1030 [t].
- POLISH AMBASSADOR, London: to recruit 2000 Irishmen to fight Turk: 747, 747 (n) *a-c*.
- PONSY, Domingo: A 7.
- Pont a Lambres: 1059.
- Pont-a-Wendin: 582-3.
- POOLE, Eduard: A 7.
- POPE, THE, *see* ADRIAN IV; CLEMENT VIII; PAUL V; URBAN VIII; INNOCENT X.
- PORDI, Robert (Qr master Sgt): 1439.
- PORIGNE, Daniel: pay, 2590.
- PORTA, Antonio: 1614.
- PORTER:  
George (Col): authorised by Charles I to take 1000 Irishmen to Continent, 1687 (n) *f*; agreement with Alonso de Cardenas as to conditions for recruiting Irish soldiers, 1751; letter to Cardenas, 1767; 1773 (n) *a*; petition to Charles I protesting against hindrances, 1774 (n) *a*; 1778 (n) *a*.
- James: proposal that 6000 infantry be maintained at call of King of England in Flanders, 2844.
- Portlech: A 27.
- Portugal: 576, 648, 946, 1357, 1685, 1687, 1866, 1995 (n), 2033, 2036 [a], 2051 (n), 2628, 2645, 2653-5, 2679 (n), 2689 (n), A 19 (5), (8).  
*See also* Index II.
- PORTUGAL, King of: 2645.  
*See also* TOLEDO Y PORTUGAL; Index II.
- PORES, En George: gt, 1492.
- POUZEL, *see* PURCEL.
- POWER (Poer, Pouer, Pour, Poure, Puer):  
David, of Kilbolane: A 27.
- Edmondo: gt, 326 [f].
- Edmund (Captn), of Intch, A 27.
- Godfrid: lce, Spain, 1089.
- Sir Henry: 599 (n).
- James (Captn): 1371.
- John: gt, 1291; lce, Italy, 2509.
- Peter (Captn): 1444, 1469; lce, gt, 1507.
- William (En): lce, 2610.
- POWELL, Edmond: pn, 184 (n).
- PRADA, Andres de: 946.
- PRAGUE: 896 [a], 2350, 2560, A 12.
- PRATS (de Pretz), Jehan: letters to Archduke Albert, 251, 328; letter from Emile de Biche, 397; *from* Captn Deste, 446; 770, A 10.
- PRENDERGAST (Prendergas, Pringidas, Pyndergast):  
John: A 27.
- Patrick: lce, 429.
- Richard (En): gt, 2369.
- Zepherinus: gt, 346.
- PRENGUEL, Thomas: gt, A 1.
- Presburg: A 12.
- PRESTON:  
—, Viscount Gormanston, brother of Col Thomas, *infra*: 271 (n) *c*, 272 (n), 326 (n) *a*, 585 (n), 1188 (n), 1297 (n), A 27.
- Anthony, son of Col Thomas, *infra*: gt, 901.
- James: pn, 184 (n).
- James (Captn, Col), son of Col Thomas, *infra*: gt, 901, 1264, 1192; 1300, 1302, 1376, 1441; lce, Brussels, 1479; 1488; his regt being



- recruited in Ireland, 1868; 1891; his two shiploads of Irishmen captured by French, 1960 (n) *a, b*, 1970 (n); 1963 (n) *a, b*; 2051 (n); his regt remains in French service, 2163 (n).
- Margarita de Namur, daughter of Charles van der Eychen and wife of Col Thomas Preston, *infra*: letters to Fr Hugh Burke, 1786 (n), A 24; left Flanders for Ireland, 1807 (n) *c*; claim for moneys given by her husband to Francisco Foissot allowed, 1952, 1952 (n); fails to sell family residence at Beets, *ibid*; 1960 (n) *b*; 2001 (n).
- Peter: gt, 230, 326 [h]; 466 (n).
- Robert: lce, 1300.
- Thomas (Captn, Col, Major, Sargento generale de batalla), Viscount Targ [Tara], Viscount de Faragh: gt, 146; 178, 184 (n), 272 (n), 285, 291; gt, 297, 326 [h], 326 (n) *a*, 404-5, 408, 415, 418, 420-1, 424-6, 428, 474, 478, 482, 492, 516, 526, 533, 537, 541-2, 544, 546, 559, 563, 576 (n) *a, b*, 585 (n), 592, 796-7, 831-2, 856; going to Spain, commended to Philip IV, 870; 878, 878 (n) *b*; gt, 879; 882; gt, 897; 901; 1178; lce, 1188; 1188 (n), 1297; defence and surrender of Genappe, 1297 (n); 1299-1302, 1304, 1307-8, 1311-3, 1343 [g], [i]; in London after recruiting in Ireland, 1351; described by Sir Thomas Wentworth as one of the civilest gentlemen of his nation', 1351 (n); in Flanders with recruits, 1352; 1371, 1376, 1378; sent to Ireland for further levies, 1383; 1394, 1404, 1444, 1417, 1419, 1421-2, 1427-8, 1432-3, 1455, 1459-65, 1469, 1483, 1485-6, 1490-2, 1498, 1500-1, 1503-7, 1518, 1551; 'a gentleman of English race, well affected to the King' (Strafford), 1569 (n) *a*; accused of betraying Genappe to the Dutch, 1786, 1786 (n); leave to go to Ireland (1642) sought, 1792 (n) *c*, 1796 (n) *b*, 1798 (n) *a-c*; Fr Hugh Burke's opinion of his character, 1801 (n) *b*; departs for Ireland (1642), 1803 (n) *c, d, e*; 1886; to be paid secret service money, 1899; 1952; list of his children, 1952 (n); correspondence with Francisco Foissot, 1960 (n) *a, b*, 1963 (n) *a, b*; 1965 (n); conditions on which he will recruit in Ireland for Spain, 2005-6, 2023; made Sargento generale, 2005, 2007-8; 2023 (n); levies in Ireland, 2027 (n) *b*; gt, 2028; 2036 [b], 2036 (n), 2051 (n), A 8, A 11; letter to Sir Thomas Wentworth, A 13; letter from Sir Thomas Wentworth, A 14; A 14 (n) *a, b*, A 24, A 25.
- See also* Margarita, *supra*.
- PRETZ, *see* PRATS.
- PRINCE THOMAS: 1308, 1342 (n), A 11, A 13, A 14.
- PRINGIDAS, *see* PRENDERGAST.
- PROSSEL, *see* PURCEL.
- Providence Island: 1783.
- PUER, *see* POWER.
- PULCHET, Henry: gt, 160.
- PURCEL (Perzel, Porcel, Pouzel, Prossel, Pursel, Purzel):  
Hugo (Captn): 1341.  
James (Lt), of Knockinroe: A 27.  
John: gt, 740; A 7.  
Peter (Captn): 2320, 2376; gt, 2712.  
Philip (Captn): lce, 1198; 1202; gt, 1219; 1318, 1330, 1333.  
Thomas: gt, 741.
- PUTEANUS, —, Judge: 455.
- PYNDERGAST, *see* PRENDERGAST.

## Q

- QUANACQ (Quenacq, Quenenacq):  
James (Captn): 1240-1, 1267.  
Maurice (Sgt): lce, 1241.
- QUAROL, *see* CARROLL.
- QUEANO, Fr David, chaplain: gt, 218.
- Queechy: 945 (n).
- QUEEN OF ENGLAND, *see* CATHARINE (of Aragon); ELIZABETH; HENRIETTA MARIA.
- QUEGAN, Rosa: gt, 926.
- QUELIGOT, Queligor, *see* MAC ELLIGOT.
- QUELLENANO, Matthew: lce, 1565.
- QUELLI, QUELLEY, *see* KELLY.
- Quelquein: 556.
- QUEN, Juan: A 7.
- QUENEDI, *see* KENNEDY.
- QUERAIN, William: 1119.
- Querbuq: 1451.
- QUERE, William: gt, A 1.
- QUERMAN, Arthur: gt, 34.
- Quesnoy (Quisnoy): 1836-7, 1841, 1843, 1849, A 9, A 16.
- QUESSA, Sgt Daniel: ppt, 2491.
- QUETING (Quetung):  
John (Captn): ppt, 1010.  
Michael: gt, 2670.
- QUEURIN. *See* QUIEVRAIN.
- Quieni: 1200.
- QUEVERAYN (Quievrain): 1984, 2148.
- QUILAN, Bernard: gt, 271.
- QUIGO, John: lce, 2841.
- QUILEANO, Captn Maurus: 2127; gt, 2128; 2136; 2152.
- Quilleboeuf: 304 (n) *b*.



QUIMM, Daniel, chaplain: pay, 1218.  
 QUIN (Cuin, mc Quinn, Oquinn, Oquine, O Quinn, Oquyn):  
 Gerard (En): ppt, 2501.  
 Hugh: gt, 326 [a].  
 John (Campaign-Capt): 2319.  
 Mortogh *alias* Morogh: attainted, 403 (n) b; A 7.  
 Patricio: 466 (n).  
 Susanne, widow of Dermot Mac Carthy: ppt, 2121.  
 Teige Modder: attainted, 403 (n) b.  
 Walter: gt, 15.  
 QUINEGHAN, Lachlyn: lce, 363.  
 QUINTAL, Raymund de: 2186.  
 QUINTIN, Lte George, chaplain: pay, 2188.  
 QUIRK (Cuerck, Querque, O Curque, Okwirk, Quirque):  
 Margaret, widow of Captn Fiacre Brady: lce, 2530.  
 Michael (Sgt): gt, 1828.  
 Pierce (En): A 27.  
 Robert: gt, 1391.  
 William (Adj): 2319, 2703 [c], A 27.  
 QUIXIG, Sgt Richard: gt, 1934.

## R

RACT, Raet, *see* BATHE.  
 RADCLIFFE, Sir George: letter to Ormonde, 2109 (n) a.  
 RADDOCK (Redico, Reduc, Vadock), Captn Paul: 220, 576 (n) a, b, 592 [c], 1061.  
 RAQUETO (Requet), Fr Paul, General of Order of St Bernard: plan for invasion of Ireland, 617-8, 877.  
 RALEIGN, Sir Walter: 65 (n) b, 618 [c].  
 RALFE, En John: 184 (n).  
 RAPHOE, Bp of, *see* O CULLINAN, Owen.  
 RAPPENHEIM, Count: 1310.  
 RASSLY, Sgt John: gt, 1330.  
 Ratcliffe: 451 (n).  
 Rathdown: A 27.  
 RATHE, Ratt, *see* BATHE.  
 RATHFERT, Capt —: 487 (n).  
 Rathmelton: 304 (n) b.  
 Rathmulin: 403 (n) b.  
 RAYMUNDS, Thomas: gt, 171 [c].  
 RAYNES, Guillan: pay, 2590.  
 REDEMONT, Baron: 108.  
 REDICO, Reduc, *see* RADDOCK.  
 Regersvliet: 805, 807.  
 REIS (Reys), Marcus: lce, Paris, 283; gt, 299.  
 RELY, RELLY, *see* O REILLY.  
 Rembergh: 972.  
 REMIRCAM, Sgt Richard: gt, 2770.  
 REOGH, En Thomas Walter: 184 (n).  
 REQUET, *see* RAQUETO.  
 RERESBY, Col —: 1151, 1162.  
 Reverat: 1654-65.

REUX, Count de: 1771.  
 REVILLA, Antonio de, Paymaster-General: 2705.  
 REWTHAN, Patrick: in Tower, 614 (n).  
 REYK, Captn Philip: 1136.  
 REYLIE, *see* O REILLY.  
 REYNOLDS:  
 — (Commissary General): 2019 (n) b, 2046 (n) a, 2168 (n), 2223 (n), 2321 (n), 2623 (n), 2653 (n).  
 T: 32 (n).  
 Rhe, Isle of: 1780 (n) c, 1971.  
 Rheinberg (Rynberck): 180, 326, 341, 429 (n) b, 1142, 1307.  
 RIAN (Riane, Riano, Ryano):  
 Charles (Capt): 2319, 2497.  
 Charles (Lte), chaplain: pay, 2374.  
 Edmond, *alias* Eymán (Capt): ppt, 2475; 2743.  
 Eugenio: gt, 194, 1172.  
 James: lce, 1199.  
 John (Sgt, Capt): gt, 2588; lce, Amsterdam, 2637.  
 Louis (Major): gt, lce, 2706; dead, 2726.  
*See also* MULRIAN.  
 RIBAUCOURT, Col de: 1609-10.  
 RICARDO, James: gt, 28.  
 RICHARDOT, Jean, President of States of Holland: letter from Archduke Albert, 304; 308 (n) d, 320 (n) a, b.  
 'RICHARDSON, Henry', pseudonym of James Bathe, *q.v.*  
 RICHELIEU, Cardinal: 1527 (n) f.  
 RIEGAN (Oriegan):  
 Dermot: gt, 341.  
 Malachy: gt, 263.  
 Rimbergh: 972.  
 RINDAN, *see* RIORDAN.  
 Ringquaran: A 27.  
 RINGUIER, Eugenio: gt, 886.  
 Rinsberg: 1952.  
 RINUCCINI, Giovanni Batista, Abp of Fermo, Papal Nuncio in Ireland (d. 1653): 1863 (n) a; letter to Cardinal Panzirolo, 1867 (n) b; 1869; letters from Cardinal Mazarin, 1891 (n), 1929 (n); letter to nuncio at Brussels, 1893 (n) a; to Duke of Lorraine, 1893 (n) b; to Col Thomas Plunket, 1895 (n) b; his attitude to foreign powers trying to get men from Ireland, 1895 (n) c; letters to Cardinal Mazarin, 1929 (n); 1970; La Torre brings him 24,000 crowns, 1970 (n); 2194 (n).  
 RIORDAN (Orierdan, Orirdan, Reardon, Rierdan, Rinden, Rirdan, Rirden, Riurdan):  
 Daniel: lce, 1091.  
 Denis: gt, 924.  
 Dermot: lce, 645; 924.  
 Eneas (En): A 27.  
 Eugenio: lce, 647, 696; ppt, 664; petition to Archduke Albert, 688.



- James: lce, 101.  
 James (En): ppt, Spain, 2517.  
 John: gt, 1567.  
 Richard: 1809.
- RISBOURG, Marshal de: 2689 [2] [9].
- RIVAS, Col —: 126 (n) a.
- Robeck: 1782.
- ROBERTSON, Alexander; lce, 509.
- Robertstown: A 27.
- ROCHE (De la Rocha, De la Roche, De Roc, De Roche, Loache, Roach, Roch, Rocha, Roco, Rocq, Rooch):  
 Adam (Capt): 1906, 1908, 1915; gt to co, 1950; 2081, 2092, 2144, 2177-8; gt, 2179; lce, 2396; lce, England, 2612.  
 Charles (En, Adj): 1432; gt, 1500, 1505.  
 Christopher: 46 (n) a.  
 David: gt, 162.  
 David, *alias* Dualtach (Capt): 1906, 1915; gt to co, 1950.  
 Dominic (Lt Col): gt, 2583.  
 Denis (Sgt), gt, 1458.  
 Edmund: lce, 529.  
 James: lce, 288; 306 (n) e: A 7.  
 Maurice (En, Capt): lce, 1167, 1376; 1441, 1906.  
 Melon: lce, Rome, 468.  
 Miles (En): A 27.  
 Philip: ppt, 1644; A 7.  
 Raymond (Capt): recruiting, 1715, 1733, 1757; 1788, 1794.  
 Richard: lce, Spain, 1853.  
 Thomas: gt, 86; 94 (n); gt, 337.  
 Walter: lce, 1302.  
 William: gt, 171 [c], 1474.  
 William, a shipwrecked sailor: 539.  
 —, 'one Teniente Roche, a Spaniard born, but of Irish extraction', 'son of Lord Roche': 1801 (n) c, 1803 (n) a.  
 —, Marquis de la: 2464.
- Rochelle (La Rochelle): 1780 (n) c, 1792 (n) b, 1954 (n) a, 1971, 2029 (n) d.
- Rochester: 347 [a].
- ROCHESTER:  
 Robert Carr, Viscount, Earl of Somerset, d. 1645; letters to Sir William Turnbull, 571 (n) c, d, 575 (n) c.  
 — (Col): 2205.
- ROCHFORD (Rochfort), Captn Henry, of Kilbred: gt, 2241; A 27.
- Rochefort: camp at, 1755, 1756.
- ROC MORTON, *see* TROCKMORTON.
- Roco, *see* ROCHE.
- Rocroy: 2060-1.
- Rodin: A 27.
- ROE, Sir Thomas: letter from Sir George Carew cited, 613 (n).
- ROEULX, Count de: 1732.
- ROHITE, Captn John de: lce, England, 2494.
- ROJAS (Rosas), Andres de: 1773-4.
- Rome: 11, 33 (n), 65 (n) a, 108 (n), 304 (n) d, 307 [a], 307 (n) c, f, g, 326 (n) b, c, 327 (n) a-c, 328 (n) d, 333 (n) a, b, 384 (n), 439, 441-2, 461, 467-8, 471, 497, 515, 532, 534, 537 (n) a, 575 (n) a, b, 579 (n) b, 581, 581 (n), 612, 613 (n), 684, 687, 689, 695, 771, 969 (n) b, 1029, 1086, 1349, 1529, 1791, 1862, 1863 (n) a, 1869, 1970 [d] [i], 2036 [d], 2103, 2118, 2201 (n) b, 2645, 2706, A 6.
- RONCEN, Thomas: gt, 13.
- RONER, Denis: gt, A 1.
- RONOT, William: gt, 326 [h].
- RONY, Mons. de: 344 [b].
- ROOSE (Roosse), Pierre, President of Privy Council: letter from Fr Hugh Burke, 1668; gives oath of allegiance to Hugh O Donnell, A 10.
- ROPER, Sir Thomas: letter to Viscount Falkland, 873 (n) j; letter to Earl of Cork, 873 (n) k.
- ROQUE, *see* ROCHE.
- Ros, *see* RUIS.
- Ros, town of, 1807 (n) b.
- Roscommon: 2623 (n), 2661 (n), A 27 *passim*.
- ROSCOMMON, Lord (of): 1956 (n).
- ROSETTI, Carlo: letters to Cardinal Barberini, 1738 (n), 1780 (n) a; letter from Cardinal Barberini, 1774 (n) e.
- ROSPIGLIOSI, Mgr —, Nuncio: 1863; reports from Mgr de Vecchi, 2166 (n), 2171 (n) b, 2202 (n) b.
- Ross, Bishop of, Boetius Egan: 1970 [e].
- Ross: 1954 (n) a, 2194 (n), 2413 (n) a.
- Rossy, Captn William: 2037.
- Rouen: 304 (n) b.
- ROULY (Ruley):  
 Denis: gt, A 1.  
 Maurice (Lt): gt, 2392.
- ROUTH, Lte Andrew, chaplain: 2382.
- ROZAS, Captn Julian de: 2782.
- RUARCK, *see* O ROURKE.
- RUDOLFO, James, chaplain: pay, 1120.
- RUERQUE, *see* O ROURKE.
- RUIS (Ros), Sgt Dermot: gt, 396.  
*See also* MAHON, Leonora.
- Ruisbroeck (Ruysbroeck): 438, 2108.
- RUIZ (Gruis), Marcos, Governor of Mardick fort: 1099, 1101.
- RUPEFORTI, Christopher: gt, 184.
- RUPERT, Prince: 2122 (n) b.
- RUREMONDE (Roermonde): 76, 1862, 2472.
- RUSSEL (Rosel, Rossel, Rousel, Ruchelle, Ruschel, Russol):  
 Christopher (En), of Seaton: A 27.  
 Francis (En): gt, 1459.  
 John (En): lce, 1371.



- Richard (En, Capt'n, Adj't): 2164, 2567, 2643, 2712, 2727, 2735, 2743, 2763.
- Russen: 884 (n).
- Russia (Russland): 459 (n), 610 (n).
- Ruysbroeck, *see* Ruysbroeck: 438.
- Rynberck, *see* Rheinberg.
- S
- SACHET, Walter: gt, 114.
- SACHEVERELL, Francis: 1818 (n).
- SACHNEZ (Sagnes), *see* O SHAGHNUSSEY.
- SAILLY LA BOURSE, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- Sas (Sas-van-Ghent): 1188, 1223, 1244, 1340.
- St Albert: 126 (n) a.
- St ALDEGONDE (Aldegonde), Count de: orders from Infanta Isabella, 816, 1060, 1070, 1072, 1078, 1079 [a] [c], 1100, 1111.
- St Amand, Abbot of: 658; letter from Infanta Isabella, 1042.
- St Anthony's, Louvain: 752-4, 765, 1045; gt, 2705.
- See also* BURKE, Fr Hugh; CONRY, Fr Florence; Mac Caughwell, Fr Hugh.
- St Bernard: 437.
- St Bertin, Abbot of: 1070.
- St GEORGE, Seigneur of, *see* EYCHEN, Charles van der.
- St Georges: 1611, 2213 (n).
- St Gertrude's (Louvain): Abbot of: 851.
- St Ghislain (Ghillain, Guilloun, Guillain, Julien): 2157 [b], 2185-6, 2186 (n) a-c, 2561, 2622.
- St Gregorio's [St George's] Channel: 1753.
- St Guillain, St Giullain. *See* St Ghislain.
- St. IAGO, Fr Onofrio, Vicar Provincial of Irish Discalced Carmelites: 1480-1.
- St Ives: 156 (n).
- St JOHN, Sir Oliver, 1st Visct Grandison: letter to Earl of Salisbury, 327 (n) d; 996 (n).
- St Julien. *See* St Ghislain.
- St LAWRENCE (San Lorens, San Lorenzo):
- Bartholomew (Capt'n): lce, 1302; gt, 1428; 1459, 1463.
- Sir Christopher, Baron of Howth: 272 (n), 326 (n) a.
- Thomas (Capt'n): 184 (n); gt, 242; 302, 326 [c], 326 (n) a, 392; gt, 396.
- ST. LEGER:
- Sir Warham: 599 (n).
- "young": 305 (n) a.
- St. Marguerite: 2496, 2639.
- St. Martin, Tournai, Abbot of: 658.
- St. Mary's, Abbot of, *see* RAGETTO, Fr Paul.
- St. Omer (St. Thomeyere): 56, 94 (n), 573, 907-8, 1100, 1109, 1111, 1134, 1138-9, 1141, 1481, 1587-8, 1600, 1606, 1634, 1747-8, 1752, 1758, 1777, 1850, 2187, A 15.
- St. Pierre, Ghent, Abbot of: 658.
- St. Quentin: 1821, 1844.
- St. Vaast, Abbot of: 658; letter from Infanta Isabella, 1042.
- SALAMANCA, Miguel de, Secretary of State: 1530, 1584, 1596, 1628, 1669, 1700 [c], 1702, 1760-1, 1763, 1779, 1887 [h], 1903.
- Letters to Alonso de Cardenas, 1579; to Virgilio de Malvezzi, 1605, 1615; to Secretary of the Audience, 1602, 1684, 1747, 1752, 1777.
- Letters from Alonso de Cardenas, 1582-3, 1589, 1690, 1698, 1707, 1714, 1739, 1766, 1775; from Virgilio de Malvezzi, 1692; from Don Ferdinand, 1772; from Philip IV, 1764, 1773-4; from Marquis de Velada, 1691; from Secretary of the Audience, 1673.
- Salamanca: 80 (n) f, 384 (n), A 2.
- SALAS, —, Superintendent of Military Justice: 925.
- See also* Military Police.
- SALAZAR, Count de, *see* Velasco, Luis de.
- SALISBURY:
- O (Capt'n): 32 (n).
- Robert Cecil, 1st Earl of, Lord Treasurer of England, d. 1612: 313, 320 [a]—[h], 322, 327, 344, 347 [b], 350, 352, 355 [a], [b].
- Letters from:
- Bathe, James: 305 (n) b, 313 (n) b.
- Carew, Sir George: 80 (n) b.
- Chichester, Sir Arthur: 271 (n) a, 326 (n) a.
- Covert, Capt'n Humphrey: 81 (n).
- Daniel, John: 65 (n) a, d, 72 (n) a.
- Delahyde, Capt'n Walter: A 5.
- Edmonds, Sir Thomas: 290 (n) a-c, 303 (n) a, 305 (n) a, b, 306 (n) a-c, 307 (n) a, b, d, 308 (n) b, d, 313 (n) a, 320 (n) a-c, 327 (n) a, c, 328 (n) b, 333 (n) c, 340 (n) a, 344 (n).
- Fenton, Sir Jeffrey: 271 (n) b.
- Gray, Master of: 80 (n) e.
- Jones, Thomas, Abp of Dublin: 271 (n) c.
- Lofthus, Lord Chancellor, 67 (n) a, c.
- Morres, Richard: 522 (n) (*State-ment*).
- St. John, Sir Oliver: 327 (n) d.
- Trumbull, Sir William: 446 (n).
- Walton, Roger: 47 (n) a.
- Wooton, Sir Henry: 327 (n) c, 338 (n).
- Letters to
- Bathe, John: 327 (n) b.
- Edmondson, Sir Thomas: 397 (n).



- SALIUS, Fr Thomas, SJ: 72 (n) *b*.  
 SALO (Saul), Fr Andreas de, SJ: gt to spend on books for Ireland, 2695.  
 SAMMES, Henry: lce, Rome, Loreto, 461.  
 SAMPAYO, *see* TEXEYRA.  
 SAN AUGUSTIN, Fr Juan de: 1631.  
 SANCY, *see* SANKEY.  
 SANDYS, Col —: 1895 (n) *d*.  
 San Flue: 1527 (n) *f*.  
 SANGARDEL, *see* SINGARDEL.  
 SAN JUAN, Pedro de: letters from Secretary of Audience, 1074, 1101, 1107, 1105; letter from Luis Verreyken, 1110; letter to De la Faille, 1115; letter from De la Faille, 1117.  
 San Juan de Luz: 545.  
 SANKEY (Sancy):  
   Hierome (Col): 2019 (n) *a*, 2253 (n) *a*,  
   *b*, 2623 (n).  
   Richard: gt, 1658.  
 SAN LORENZO, *see* St. LAWRENCE.  
 San Lorenzo: 156, 334, 496, 540, 545, 600, 653, 659, 699-00, 707, 739, 876, 1285-6, 1892.  
 SAN LUCAR, Duke of: letters to Infanta Isabella, 982, 990; from Infanta Isabella, 995; 1627; 2679 (n).  
 SAN MIGUEL, Walter de: gt, 209.  
 San Sebastian: 1348, 1526, 1879, 1897, 1970 (n), 2027 (n) *d*, 2046 (n) *a*, 2109 (n) *b*, 2623.  
 Santuliet: 1014, 1019-21, 1025-6, 1304, 1440, 1451, 1600, 1634.  
   *See also* San Flue.  
 SANTVOORT, Dr —: dead, 2677.  
 Saragossa: 1877-8, 1880, 1882, 1897-8, 1903.  
 SARMIENTO, Captn Antonio: 697.  
 SARFIELD:  
   Edward (Captn): A 27.  
   William, uncle of Captn Patrick Fleming: A 16.  
   "Lord": 1031 (n) *b*.  
 SARTEL, Captn Oliver: 2165; dead, 2240.  
 Sas van Ghent: 1223.  
 Saucy Estre: 2164-5.  
 Saveyestre: 2209.  
 Stabroek: 1014, 1019, 1021.  
 Staden: 1033.  
 SAVAGE (Sauvage, Savadge):  
   Sir Arthur: 65 (n) *d*.  
   Seneca (Captn): dead, 2042.  
 SAVOY:  
   Duke of: 1030 [u].  
   Richard: gt, 1656.  
 Savoy: 618 [c], 873 (n) *o*.  
 SAXONY, Duke of: 1030 [t].  
 SAY, Baron: 1783.  
 SCARAMPI, —: 1863 (n) *a*.  
 SCAGHMOSY, *see* O SHAGHNUSSY.  
 SCHEGAN (Sehgan), James: gt, 33; A 1.  
 SCHERLEY, *see* SHIRLEY.  
 SCHIEL, *see* O SHIEL.  
 SCHOLY, Dierick: ppt, 2464.  
 SCHORTALL (Chortal, Cortal), Captn Peter: 2320; gt to co, 2375; 2429; lce, England, 2445.  
 SCHYDY, Qr Master Peter: trsfed, 2673.  
 SCOCLOCK, *see* SHERLOCK.  
 SCHOT, Schote, *see* SCOTT.  
 Scotland, *see* Index II.  
 SCOTT (Schot, Schote, Scots):  
   Edward (Sgt Major): 2303, A 27.  
   Francis (Col): 2793.  
   John (Jokim): 1061, 1844.  
 SCOURLOCK, *see* SHERLOCK.  
 SDROOGEN, John (Juan), notary: 587, A 3, A 8.  
 SEA, *see* SHEA.  
 SEACNOSSI, *see* O SHAGHNUSSY.  
 SEATON: A 27.  
 SEDAN: 2105 (n) *a*.  
 SEIS, Roland: A 7.  
 SENAN, William: lce, 477.  
 SENEXANE, En Thadeus: trsfed, 2759.  
 SEPECHIA Y PERALTA, Captn Baltazar Ibanez de: 2172.  
 SERRIA, Luis de: 999.  
 SHAFTESBURY, Earl of: 352.  
 SHAGHANES, Shaghunishy, Shaguenes, *see* O SHAGHNUSSY.  
 Shanballyduff: A 27.  
 SHEA (Chay, O Chey, Schea, Sea, Shaa, Shail, She):  
   Donogh: A 7.  
   Elias: gt, 1124.  
   John (Captn): 2288, 2449.  
   George (En), of Kilkenny: A 27.  
   Nicholas, chaplain: lce, London, 1064; 1085; gt, 1149; lce, Spain, 1248; lce, 1387; 1387 (n) *a*; letter to Cardinal Berberini, 1387 (n) *b*.  
   Thadeus: lce, 417.  
   Theodore (Sgt): gt, 2353.  
   Walter (En, Captn): lce, 554; 1417.  
 SHEEDY, *see* SCHYDY.  
 SHELL, Shiell, *see* O SHIEL.  
 SHELTON, [Thomas]: 67 (n) *a-c*, 333 (n) *c*, 487 (n).  
 SHERIDAN (Osheridan, Oshiridan, Osiridan, Seredan, Sheridan, Shiridan, Surdane, Syridan):  
   James (Sgt, Lt): gt, 2343, 2381; lce, 2450.  
   John, chaplain: pay, 1222.  
   Terence: lce, 1007, 1083; commended by Philip IV, 1159; gt, 1211.  
 SHERLOCK (Scoclocq, Scourlock):  
   Edward (Sgt): lce, 310.  
   John (Captn): 1188 (n): gt, 1195.  
 SHERWOOD (Sher Vood), Richard: gt, 33, 52 (a).  
 SHIRLEY (Scherley):  
   John: gt, 33.  
   Sir Thomas: letter to Earl of Leicester, 8 (n) *g*, A 27.



- Sichem: 56, 72 (n) *b*, 437, 828, 831, 1027-8, 1046, 1056, 1067, 1095.
- Sicily (The Two Sicilies): 946, A 10, 2821.
- See also* Index II.
- SIERA, Juan: A 7.
- SILVA, Captn Juan de: 95.
- SILVANO, Cornelius, chaplain: pay, 823.
- SILVIUS, Conradus, notary: 439.
- Simancas: 195 (n), 384 (n).
- SIMON, Lt James: gt, 2281; 2703 [f].
- SIMPLE, Artus: gt, A 1.
- SINGARDEL (Sangardel), Thadeus: 455.
- SINNAN (Sinan), John: gt, 326 [c], A 7.
- SINOT, *see* SYNNOT.
- SKELTON, Captn William: A 27.
- SKIDDYE, Nicholas: lce, 1144.
- Skyrne: A 27.
- SLATENIDY, Bernard, *see* LOUGHRIAN, Catalina ni.
- SLATIMOR, John: ppt, 17.
- SLATON, Bernard: A 7.
- SLEBOUSCH, Col James: 2010.
- Slewbane: A 27.
- SLIGEACH (Slyga), Lord of, *see* O DONNELL, Hugh.
- Sligo: A 25, A 27.
- SMET, —, accounts clerk at Lille: order from Secretary of Audience, 1804.
- SMITH (Es Mit, Esmite, Smit, Smyght, Smyth):  
 Christopher (En): lce, 1446.  
 John (En): gt, 52 [a], 82; 94 (n): gt, 126; gt, A 1.  
 Rowland: 8 (n) *x*.  
 Pilipe: A 7.
- SOLCHIER, George: gt, A 1.
- SOLEVO, Fr —, OSF: gt to enable him to go to Ireland, 2694.
- SOLIBAN, Solivan, Sollivan, *see* O SULLIVAN.
- SOLKER, George: gt, 33.
- SOMERSET, Earl of, *see* Rochester, Viscount.
- SONAITRE, M. de: letter from de la Faille, 1138.
- SONNY, Solomon: dead, 2731.
- Soombeke, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- SORILLA, *see* TYRRELL.
- SOTO, Fr Andrew de: 753.
- SOUTHAMPTON, Earl of: 352.
- Southampton: 156 (n).
- Spa: 32, 934, 1971, 2567, 2607, 2664.
- SPADA, Cardinal: 969 (n) *b*; letter from Cardinal di Bagno, 987 (n) *b*.
- Spain: *passim*; King of, *see* PHILIP II; PHILIP III; PHILIP IV; CHARLES II.
- Speier: 1304, 1451, 1634, A 12.
- SPENCER, Compton, *see* NORTHAMPTON, Earl of.
- Spike Island: 2063 (n) *b*.
- SPINOLA, Marquis Ambrose, Commander of Spanish Forces, d. 1630: 56 (n), 240 (n), 251, 304 (n) *e*, 306 (n) *a*, *c*, 308 (n) *d*, 320 [a], [d], [e], 320 (n) *b*, 322, 397 (n); letter from Cardinal Barberini, 549 (n); 613 (n); letters to Luis Verreyken, 810, 830; 828, 873 (n) *k*, *n*, 983 [d], 1003; petition from Peter Butler, 1024; payments to Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, A 4.
- SQUIN, Guillermo: A 7.
- STACK, Gerard: pay, 2590.
- STALLEDT, Captn John: 2064.
- STAMERTS, *see* STANIHURST.
- STANIHURST (Estanihurst, Estanus, Ostanhuerts, Stamerts, Staniers, Stanyhurst, Stonihurst):  
 Francis: lce, 1302.  
 John: gt, 2, 37, 52 [c], A 1.  
 Richard: gt, 5, 36; lce, Spain, 44; 65 (n) *a*; gt, 66, 71; 71 (n); gt, 170; 272 (n); gt, A 1.  
 Thomas (Captn): gt, 52 [c]; lce, 76; lce, Spain, 105; 184 (n), 272 (n), 282-4, 288, 290, 362, 377, 385; gt, 483; 1664; gt, A 1; letter to an unnamed friar, A 2.  
 Walter: gt, 67; 67 (n) *a*; gt, A 1.
- STANLEY (Estanley, Standely):  
 Edward (Captn), brother of Sir William, *infra*: gt, 38; 39-41, 52 [c], 58, A 1.  
 John (En): gt, 39, 130.  
 Sir William (Col): formation of his regt and its first months of service in Low Countries, 8 (n); letter to Burghley as to victualling of 1000 men at Waterford, 8 (n) *k*; his Irish troops arrive at Flushing, 8 (n) *m*; attacks Gravelines and retires to Dixmude, 8 (n) *n*; attacks Zutphen; occupies Deventer, 8 (n) *r*; hands over Deventer and Zutphen to Spain, 8 (n) *s*, *u*; outlawed in England, 8 (n) *y*; 8, 8 (n), 10, 12, 16, 28-30, 32, 32 (n), 33 (n), 37-8, 42-3, 45; at Valenciennes, 46 (n) *a*; 46 (n) *b*, *c*, 47; leaves Antwerp for Brabant, 47 (n) *a*; some of his troops return to English service, 47 (n) *b*, 49-51, 52 [a], 52 (n) *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, 53-79 *passim*; reported wounded, 80 (n) *c*; 81-175 *passim*; named by James I with epithets, 307 [a]; 321, 451 (n), 873 (n) *k*, 1343 [j], A 1.
- STAPLETON:  
 Richard (Lt), of Lynestown: A 27.  
 Theobald (Fr): 1347.  
 Theobald (En) *alias* Blacq: 2286.  
 William (Captn): A 27.  
 — (Captn): 2516.
- STAYMES, En Thomas: 94 (n).
- Stemuerde (Steenwoorde): 2211.



- STEGAN, Sgt William: 2016.  
 STELLING, James: ppt, 1874.  
 Stenay: 2105 (n) *a*, *b*, 2253 (n) *a*, 2309 (n).  
 Stepney: 307, 313, 317, 321, 327, 336, 344, 347, 350, 352.  
 Stevensweert, Island of: 1440, 1537 (n), 1537.  
 STRABANE, Baron of: A 27.  
 STRAFFORD, Earl of, *see* WENTWORTH, Sir Thomas.  
 STRAVIUS (Pauli-Stravius, Stravio), Richard, Nuncio: 1628 (n), 1792 (n) *c*; letters to Cardinal Barberini, 1342 (n), 1635 (n) *b*, 1683 (n), 1798 (n) *a*; to Mgr Banessa, 1527 (n) *a*; from Cardinal Barberini, 1796 (n) *b*.  
 Streamstown: 2019 (n) *b*.  
 STRITCH:  
   Bartholomew, a merchant: ppt, 2502.  
   John, a merchant: ppt, 2503.  
 STRONG, Fr: 873 (n) *k*, *l*.  
 STUART (Stewart):  
   Lady Arabella: in Tower, 614 (n).  
   Mary, eldest daughter of Charles I, wife of Prince of Orange, A 19 (7).  
   Sir Robert: 610 (n).  
 STUBBERS, Col —: 2046 (n) *a*.  
 STUMFORD, *see* ESTANFORT.  
 SUAREZ, Antonio de: 1615.  
 SUETMAN, *see* SWEETMAN.  
 SUFFOLK, Earl of: 355 [a].  
 SULEMAN, Sulevan, Sullivan, *see* O SULLIVAN.  
 SUPPEL, James: gt, 33.  
 SURDANE, *see* SHERIDAN.  
 SUTON, Davit, chaplain: pay, 140.  
 Sycari: 2821.  
 SUYNI, Sweny, Swyne, *see* MAC SWINEY.  
 SWEDEN, King of: 610, 1070 (n) *a*.  
 Sweden: 525 (n), 610, 610 (n).  
 SWEETMAN (Suetman):  
   John: lce, 366.  
   Nicholas (Lt): A 27.  
 Switzerland: 336.  
 SYLVA, Lt General Felipe de: 1627.  
 SYMONDES, Capt —: 338 (n).  
 SYNNOT (Sinnot, Sinot, Sinote, Synot):  
   David (En): lce, 1189.  
   Edmond (Capt): gt, 2214; lce, Aix-la-Chapelle, 2589; gt, 2704.  
   Oliver (Col): 1803 (n) *e*, 1993 (n).  
 SYRIDAN, *see* SHERIDAN.
- T
- TAAFFE (Taaf, Taaff, Taf, Taff, Taffe, Taife, Taiff):  
   Francis (Capt): gt, 2715.  
   James: lce, 1562.  
   John (Capt): 2768–9; lce, England, 2797; lce, Germany, 2800; 2802.  
   Laurent: A 7.  
   Luke (Capt): 2802–3; lce, 2841.  
   Nicholas (Col), Count Taaffe: 2735–9; lce, England, 2740; 2750, 2758.  
   Peter (En, Capt): gt, 1537, 1541; gone to Ireland, 1817; to Spain with troops from Ireland, 2116 (n) *b*.  
 Theobald (Col), 2nd Viscount Taaffe and 1st Earl of Carlingford: authorised by Charles I to take 1000 Irish recruits to Continent, 1687 (n) *f*; agreement with Alonso de Cardenas as to conditions, 1751; 1773 (n) *a*; protests to Charles I against hindrances, 1774 (n) *a*; 1778 (n) *a*, 1848 (n) *b*; asks Archduke Leopold for leave to take ship with munitions from Flanders, 1996; 2116 (n) *b*; Lt Col of Irish regts formed for Charles Stewart in 1656, 2166 (n); 2195, 2195 (n) *a*, *b*, A 27.  
 Thomas (Col): 2741–44, 2748–49, 2753, 2757, 2759–60; dead, 2762; 2764.  
 William (Col): 2321, 2321 (n), A 27.  
 TADEO, Anthony: lce, 495.  
 TAILLER, *see* TAYLOR.  
 TALBOT (Talbot, Talbotus, Tabatt):  
   Bernard, of Rathdown: A 27.  
   Christopher: pn, 184 (n); gt, 326 [c]; lce, 486.  
   Francis (En): 1264; gt, 1283; lce, 1302.  
   Gilbert (Major): lce, Spain, 2068; asks for letter of commendation to Philip IV, 2075, 2080.  
   James, chaplain: pay, 818.  
   John (Lt), of Belgard: lce, England, 2508; A 27.  
   John (Fr): proposal that he be made Abp of Armagh, 1002; president of Irish seminary at Antwerp, 1593.  
   Peter, SJ: 2201 (n) *b*.  
   Sir Robert: 2201 (n) *a*, *b*.  
   Thomas (Capt): dead, 1433.  
   Thomas (Fr), OSF, chaplain: 1861 (n) *b*, 2122 (n) *a*; pro-vicar of Irish troops, pay, 2201; 2201 (n) *c*; appearance described, 2201 (n) *b*.  
   Walter (Fr): gt, 33, 52 [b], A 1, 72 (n) *b*; dead, 1580 (n).  
   William (En), of Haggerstown: A 27.  
 TALLON (Du Talon), —, French agent: 1929 (n), 1954 (n) *b*; to sail with recruits for France, 1962 (n); 1970 (n).  
 TALUY, Capt Stephen: lce, 2468.  
 TANETO, Eugenio, chaplain: 913. *See* Davitt.  
 TARA (Targ), Viscount, *see* PRESTON, Col Thomas.  
 Tartayne [?] Artane: 579 (n) *a*.



- TASSCEL, Adrian: 1108.  
 TATHE, George: *lce*, 291.  
 TAVANUS, Viscount: 46 (n) *b*.  
 TAX, Isabella, widow of Raphael Hely: 1581.  
 TAYLOR (Tailler, Tayleur, Tayller):  
   Ignatius: *gt*, 1810.  
   Patrick (Capt): 1433, 1619-20, 1784 (n), 1803, 1810, 1830, 1835.  
 TEBATT, *see* TALBOT.  
 TEBON, Libod: *lce*, 429.  
 TECHVACAR, Capt: 1343 [c].  
 TEINLINGE, Gerard: *ppt*, 2777.  
 TELLANO, Sgt Maurus: *gt*, 1619.  
 TELLY, Lt Col —: 121.  
 Templemore: 522 (n).  
 Tenremonde, *see* Dendremonde.  
 TEREL, Terguol, *see* TYRRELL.  
 TERMIGNY, Baron de: 1627.  
 Termonde, *see* Dendermonde.  
 TERON, Conte of, *see* O NEILL, Hugh.  
 TERRANUOVA, Duke of: 1971.  
 TERRUANO, John, chaplain: *pay*, 1842.  
 Terveuren: 2391, 602, 615, 651, 676-8, 689, 698-01.  
 TEYERA (Sampayo), Diego de: 1772, 1774.  
 Theboynan: 587.  
 THEODORE, Capt: Lawrence: *gt*, 2260.  
 THOMAS (Tomis):  
   Gerald: *lce*, 423.  
   James: *gt*, 326 [g].  
   Stephen: *gt*, 1477.  
   *See also* PRINCE THOMAS.  
 THOMOND, Earl of, *see* O BRIEN, Muirough.  
 Thomond: 780 (n), 878 (n) *a*, 2413 (n) *b*.  
 THURLOE, —, Secretary: 2058 (n) *c*;  
   letters *from* William Lockhart, 2162 (n) *a*, *b*; letter *to* Henry Cromwell, 2163 (n); letter *from* Henry Blackwall *alias* Moore, 2201 (n) *b*.  
 TIBER, William: *gt*, 931.  
 TIGE, Eugenio: *pay*, 2590.  
 TILLY, Count —: 1033-4; letter *from* Infanta Isabella, 1035; 1613.  
 Timoleague (Timolagg): 873 (n) *h*, 1031 (n) *b*.  
 TIPPEN (Tipen), John: *gt*, 33, A 1.  
 TIPPERARY: 184 (n), 2019 (n) *a*, *c*, A 27.  
 Tir Conaill, *see* Tyrconnel.  
 Tireohane: A 27.  
 TIREO, Patrick, chaplain: *pay*, 697.  
 Tirepan: A 8.  
 Tirlmont (Tilmont): 56-7, 437, 830-1, 1067, 1297-8, A 13.  
 Tirliekin: A 27.  
 TOBIN (Tobyn):  
   James: *ppt*, 2002.  
   Walter: *lce*, 503.  
   William: *lce*, 416; 416 (n).  
 TOLEDO (Toleda y Portugal), Col Juan de: 1844, 2612, 2701.  
   *See also* Index II.  
 TOLMO Y FELICES, Geronimo: *gt*, 2648.  
 TOMASIO, Fr Juan Maria, chaplain: 1859.  
 Tomgreny: 587.  
 TOMIS, *see* THOMAS.  
 TOOLE (Toulli, Tuoil):  
   Dominic: *ppt*, 655.  
   Ferdinand (Ferral): 46 (n) *b*; *gt*, 326 [h].  
 Tordesillas: 170.  
 TOREL, Torella, *see* TYRRELL.  
 TOTAVE, *see* CULLEN, Tiede.  
 TOULIN, James: *gt*, A 1.  
 TOURNAI, Bp of: 656.  
 Tournai: 1, 272 (n), 363 (n) *c*, 304 (n) *b*, 658, 1699, 2063-4, 2243, 2712-4.  
 TRACY, *see* TRASSI.  
 Traly: A 27.  
 TRANT:  
   Philip: *lce*, 566.  
   Richard: *lce*, 217.  
 TRASSI (Otrashe, Tresy):  
   Balthasar (Capt): *gt*, 2260.  
   Denis: 2255.  
   William, *see* Dully.  
 TRAVERS (Tavers):  
   Gefery, messenger from Capt: Walter Delahyde *to* Earl of Salisbury, A 5.  
   Jasper: 305 (n) *b*, 313 (n) *a*.  
 TREBACH, Col —: 2000.  
 TRESHAM:  
   Francis: *gt*, A 1.  
   William (Col): 1559.  
 TRESWEEL, Col Daniel: *to* transport recruits, 2094 (n).  
 TREVES: A 12.  
 TRIAGUL, Capt: Huan: A 7.  
 TRIAT, John: *gt*, A 1.  
 TRICHET (Triquet), Juan: 2033, 2036 [a], [c], 2041.  
 TRIMLETSTOWN, Baron of: A 27.  
 TRIQUET, *see* TRICHET.  
 TROGMORTON (Throckmorton, Roc Morton, Trochmorton, Troimorton):  
   Clement: *gt*, 33, A 1.  
   Jorge (Lt): *gt*, 52 [b], A 1.  
 TRUMBULL, Sir William, Ambassador at Brussels: 403 (n) *a*, 485 (n), 585 (n); forwards John Rathe's offer of services to James I, A 6.  
   Letters *to* Capt: Walter Delahyde, A 5 (n); *to* Sir J. Digbye, 459 (n), 472 (n), 481 (n) *b*; *to* Sir Thomas Edmonds, 419 (n), 429 (n) *a-d*; *to* James I, 526 (n) *a*, 537 (n) *b*, 553 (n); *to* Earl of Salisbury, 446 (n); *to* Secretary of State, 487 (n).  
   Letters *from* J Beaulieu, 340 (n) *c*, 348 (n); *from* Abp of Canterbury, 575 (n) *b*; *from* Sir Thomas Edmonds, 340 (n) *b*, 419 (n), 435 (n); *from* Edward Eustace, 416 (n); *from* John Packer: 460 (n); *from* Viscount Rochester, 571 (n) *a*, *d*; 575 (n) *c*;



- from Sir Ralph Winwood, 575 (n) *a*, 576 (n) *c, d*.
- TSERRAERTS (Tseraerts, Tserarrats):  
Sister Catharina (Kateryna) de, Prioress of White Ladies: 374-5, 380, 382, 441; letters to Archduke Albert, 372, 450; letters from Luis Verreyken, 376, 381; letters to Luis Verreyken, 379, 431, 433, 435, 440; letter to Mme Verreyken, 432; letter from Archduke Albert, 447; receipt for moneys, 448.
- TUAM, Abp of, 'who died in Antwerp': 65 (n) *a*.  
*See also* CONRY, Fr Florence.
- TUITE (Tuit, Tute):  
Henry (Lt): A 27.  
Jasper (Capt): 2288, A 27.  
Thomas (Sgt): 184 (n).  
William: 326 [f].  
William (En): A 27.
- TULLENAN, Thomas: lce, England, 131, 131 (n).
- TULLY (Tuli, Tulio, Tulli, Tullio, Tullius):  
Antonio: A 7.  
Charles (Lte), chaplain: lce, 2462.  
Gulari, *alias* Nulario: lce, Paris, 283; gt, 299.  
John: gt, 773.  
Lucas: lce, 2463.  
Marcus, chaplain: pay, 2600.  
Matthew: 286 (n); lce, Spain, 325; 325 (n).  
Tobias: lce, 976.  
Tully Mulreanin: A 27.  
Tulske: A 27.
- TUREL, *see* TYRRELL.
- Turlagh: A 27.
- TURENNE, Marshal: 2105 (n) *a, b*.
- TURNBULL, *see* TRUMBULL, 481 (n) *b*.
- TUSCANY, Grand Duke of: 539.
- TYE, William: gt, 48.
- TYRCONNEL, Earl of, *see* O DONNELL;  
Flight of the Earls.  
Tyrconnel (Tir Conaill): 873 (n) *d, g*, 983 [a], 1804 (n) *b*, A 25.
- TYRONE, Earl of, *see* O NEILL; Flight of the Earls.  
Tyron: 67 (n) *a*, 325 (n), 403 (n) *b*, 571 (n) *b*, 873 (n) *g*, 1728 (n) *a*.
- TYRRELL (Lorilla, Sorilla, Terel, Terguol, Teriel, Terrel, Terrell, Tiriel, Torel, Torella, Turel, Turill):  
Cate, wife of Eugenio O Shiel: 1163 (n) *c*.  
Dominic Meriman *alias* Berseman *alias* Merseman (Capt): 1911, 1915; gt to co, 1950; 2064, 2077.  
Edward: lce, 546.  
James: gt, 933; A 7.  
John: gt, 161.  
Richard (Lt, Capt): 156 (n), 347 [b], 1188 (n); dead, 1553.
- Thomas (Capt): lce, 1239; 1264, 1275; gt, 1282; 1283-4.  
Walter (Capt), 'old Capt Tyrrell's son': 1293, A 13, A 14.

## U

- U BARD, UBART, *see* WARD.
- UBRIN, *see* O BRIEN.
- Ulster: 184 (n), 272 (n), 326 (n) *a*, 361 (n), 983 [a], 987 [f], 1525 (n), 1613, 1804 (n) *b*, 2116 (n) *a*, 2168 (n), 2245 (n), 2262 (n), A 27.  
*See also* Index II.
- ULTANO (Ultach), Dr Maurice: lce, 1384.
- UMALLU, *see* OMALLUN.
- Uman: A 27.
- UMANES, Count —: 1337, 1348.
- UNCETA, Martin de, Paymaster-General: A 3.
- UPPER OSSORY, Baron of: A 27.  
*See also* OSSORY, Earl of.
- Uppertrough: 403 (n) *b*.
- URBAN VIII, Pope (1623-44): letters to Philip IV in favour of Earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnel, 859 (n); 873 (n) *d, k*, 878 (n) *d*, 969 (n) *b*, 987 (n) *b*, 1030, 1792 (n) *c*.
- URCHUN, Manis mac ny, *see* MELEN, Elisabeth.
- URIBARRI (Uribari), Alonso de: 1349, 1881.
- URQUINA, Matheo de: letter from Luis Verreyken and his reply thereto, 787-8; order from Infanta Isabella, 825; letter to authorities at Diest, 829.
- Utrecht: 8 (n) *r*.
- UXBURGH, Marquis: orders to pay arrears due to regt of Col Eugenio O Neill, 1494.

## V

- Vadancourt: 1973-4.
- VADIN, Ni, *see* MADIN.
- VADOCK, *see* RADDOCK.
- VAGUAHOME, Hugo: 1062.
- VAL, *see* Walle.
- VALECIO, Valescio, Valesius, Valoes, *see* WALSH.
- Valenciennes: 46 (n) *a*, 304, 1673, 2028, 2144, 2202-3, 2530.
- VALENTIN, Edmond: gt, 52 [a], A 1.
- Valladolid: 122-3, 125, 128-9, 134-5, 184, 199, 253, 260-1, 263, 267, 270-1, 946.
- VALLU, Juan: A 7.
- VANDEVELDE (Vandeval), Jacques: 1881.



- VANE:  
 Sir A, member of Parliament: A 20.  
 Sir Henry: letter to Lords Justices, 1707 (n); letter to Earl of Ormonde, 1778 (n) a; letters from Lords Justices, 1780 (n) b—e.
- VANNINOVEN, Henrique: A 7.
- VARD, Vardes, Vayrds, *see* WARD.
- VAREN, *see* WAREN.
- VARRI, Captn Louis: 2806.
- VARTINGTON, *see* WORTHINGTON.
- VATORE Y MAYO, Col: 2623.
- VAUGHAN, Sir John: 1070 (n) b.
- Vechii (Vecchi), Mgr de: reports to Mgr Rospigliosi, 2166 (n), 2171 (n) b, 2202 (n) b; reports surrender of St Ghislain, 2186 (n) c; reports to Papal secretariat, 2393 (n), 2529 (n) a, b, 2554 (n); report as to imprisonment and dismissal of Col Philip O Reilly, 2528 (n); susceptible of impressions favourable to English Court, 2645.
- Veda: 896 [c], 905 [b].
- VEEDLOO, James: gt, 128.
- VEGUER, Captn Juan Feliz: 1288.
- VELADA, Marquis de: 1548; negotiations as to recruiting and loan to Charles I, 1618, 1622, 1693; 1713, 1739, 2679 (n).  
 Letters to Don Ferdinand, 1612, 1614, 1626, 1630, 1635, 1669, 1687; to Virgilio Malvezzi, 1631; to Miguel de Salamanca, 1691; to Philip IV, 1617; to Diego de la Torre, 1716.  
 Letter from Don Ferdinand, 1624.
- VELAGITIERRE, Col Pedro Roco de: 1888.
- VELANDIA, Col de: 1858.
- VELASCO:  
 Francisco Marcos de (Captn): 2723.  
 Luis de, Comte de Salazar: 873, 1052, 1636, 1795.  
*See also* BOUSSU, Ann de.
- VELDE, Juana Van de, widow of William Halpun: pn, 1343 [f].
- VENDOSME, Mons de (Duke of): 2058 (n) c, 2224 (n).
- VENICE, Duke of: 1030 [u].
- VERE (Veere), Sir Francis: 47 (n) b, 350, 352.
- VELDON, Christopher: gt, 326 [b].
- VELS, P—o: gt, 189.
- Veluwe, Island of: 1177—8, 1214, 1304, 1440, 1634.
- Venice: 575 (n) a.
- Venloo: 1535—6.
- Ventosilla: 141, 572.
- VERDUGO, Col Guillermo: A 12.
- Vernicosa: 2160.
- VERREYKEN:  
 Luis, Secretary of State: correspondence with Prioress of the White Ladies, 376, 379, 381, 431, 433, 435, 440, 448; his cousin, Sister Elizabeth, mentioned, 376, 379, 381, 433, 444; correspondence with Matheo de Urquina, 786—7; 891, 1095, 1110, 1115.  
 Letters to Governor of Bourgbourg, 1063, 1069; to a Franciscan Father, 1099; to Infanta Isabella, 756, 828.  
 Letters from Denis Kelly, 434; from Juan de Mancidor, 374—5, 380; from General Ambrose Spinola, 810, 830; from Sister Anna van Wamel, 444.  
 —, wife of Luis: letter from Prioress of the White Ladies, 432.
- VEY, *see* GALWAY.
- VHIP (U Bip), William: gt, 52 [a], 53.
- VIC, Sir Henry de, English Minister to Flanders: letters to Viscount Falkland as to Col Eugenio O'Neill's intentions, 1801 (n) c; asks leave to take out ship with munitions, 1996; 2157 [d]; 2220 (n).
- VICAM, Juana, widow of Quadrix Omulrian: pn: 1343 [j].
- Vicq: 2602.
- Vienna: 2568.
- VIHE, *see* LA BICHE.
- VILDAN, Sgt Eugenio, *see* BARRY, Eylina.
- VILIERES (Villes), Captn Edward: 52 [c], A 1.
- VILLAGRANA, Captn Matheo de: 1531.
- VILLA HERMOSA, Duke de: letter from Charles II, King of Spain, 2821.
- VILLA MEDIANA, Count de: letters from Don Ferdinand, 1480, 1517; letter to Francisco de Galaretta, 1526; letter to Don Ferdinand, 1527.
- VILLAVICIOSA, Cecilia de, widow of Captn Richard Delahyde: pn, 1343 [e] [k].
- VILLA VINCENTIA (Villaviscenca), Lorenzo de: 1099, 1101.
- VILLE, Captn Alexander de: 2368.
- VILLEYN, Gillam de: 382.
- VILLOA, Thomas Lopez de, Baron de Limala: 1881, 1895—6.
- Vilvorde: 455, 1024, 2779.
- VINDER, Captn N de: 2496.
- Viscoigne, *see* BISCAY.
- VISUMMUNS, *see* FITZSIMONS.
- VIT, Vite, Vithe, Vitte, Vitus, *see* WHITE.
- VITUM, *see* FITZSIMONS.
- VLEMINCX, Francois, rector of the seminary *des Bons Pasteurs*: 2677.
- VOLUDESTON, En Robert: lce, 1416.
- Vos, Sgt Francis: lce, 1386; gt, 1467.
- Vorselaer: 1019—20.
- VOTHINGTON, *see* WORTHINGTON.
- VRENBODEGHEM, Seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- VUTELER, *see* BUTLER.
- Vyghendom, *see* Eyghendon.



## W

- Waas: 46 (n) *b*, 437, 1014-6, 1019, 1021-2, 1777.
- WADDING:**  
 Luke (Fr Lucas of San Francisco, Fr Luke of St Francis): 1529.  
 Letters *to* Cardinal Barberini, 1792 (n) *a*, *b*; *to* Fr Hugh Burke, 1798 (n) *b*; *to* Francisco de Mello, 1791.  
 Letters *from* Fr Hugh Burke, 1787 (n), 1796 (n) *a*, 1798 (n) *c*, 1801 (n) *a*, *b*, 1803 (n) *a*, *c-e*, 1804 (n) *a*, 1807 (n) *a*, *c*, A 25 (n), 2029 (n) *d*; *from* Fr John Colgan, A 21; *from* Fr Matthew O Hartegan, 1807 (n) *b*; *from* Col Eugenio (Owen Roe) O Neill, A 22-3.
- Peter (Fr), S.J.: 436.
- Waesmunsteren: A 9.
- WAHUN, ni: *see* MAHON.
- WALECIO, *see* WALSH.
- WALES, Charles, Prince of, *see* CHARLES II (England).
- WALKER, Sir Edward: order from Charles (II), 2171 (n) *a*, 2220 (n).
- WALLE (de Val, Val, de Wael, Wal):  
 George: gt, 326 [f].  
 John: gt, 326 [a], 390, 698.  
 Piers (En): A 27.  
 Richard: lce, 1663.  
 Sud (En): lce, 1375.  
 Walter (En, Captn): 2026.
- WALLER:**  
 Major-General Sir Hardress: 2025 (n), 2413 (n) *a*.  
 — (Mr), member of Parliament: A 20.
- WALPOULE (Walpoul): gt, 33, A 1.
- WALSH (Valecio, Valechio, Valescio, Vales, Valesius, Valoes, Valois, Valechio, Wallshe, Wals, Walsche, Wallseeh, Wyelch):  
 David: lce, 474.  
 Edmond: lce, 1369.  
 Henry (Captn): gt, 72; 94 (n): lce, 102.  
 Hoyle (Col), of Arderry: A 27.  
 James (En): lce, 2611.  
 Nicholas, of Traly: A 27.  
 Patrick: 1255, 1256, 1439, 1445, 1472.  
 Peter, gt, 639.  
 Peter, Franciscan: 2051.  
 Peter (Col): 2413 (n) *b*.  
 Pierce: petition to Charles II, 2552 (n) *b*.  
 Pierce (Lt): A 27.  
 Robert (Captn), of Borredstown: A 27.  
 Walter (Captn): 2302, A 27.  
 William (Captn): 143, 184 (n), 272 (n); gt, 278, 593.  
 William (Captn): says it is false to state that Irish Franciscans enlisted soldiers to leave Spain, 2038; ppt, to facilitate recruitment in England and Ireland, 2051; lce, to live in the Parliament's quarters, 2051 (n) *a*.
- WALSYNGHAM, Sir Francis, Secretary of State: correspondence with Earl of Leicester, 8 (n) *d-f*, *h-j*; letter *from* Thomas Lyall, 8 (n) *b*.
- WALTER (Gualters, Walters):  
 Sir Edward, Secretary of War to Charles (II): 2198 (n).  
 George (Col): 2027 (n) *d*, 2160.
- WALTON (Waldon):  
 James (Captn): A 27.  
 Roger: letter *to* Earl of Salisbury, 47 (n) *a*.
- WAMEL, Sister Anna Van, Procuratrix of the Convent of White Ladies: 382; letter *to* Luis Verreyken, 444; receipt *for* moneys, 448.
- WARAMBON, Col the Marquis de: 1237.
- WARD (Bardeo, Mac Iward, U Bard, Ubart, Vard, Vardes, Vayrds, Wardet):  
 Connor (Fr): 873 (n) *d*, *e*.  
 Eugenio, gt, 540.  
 Hugh, chaplain: pay, 1190, 1205.  
 William (Captn): gt, 42, 52[a], 53, A1.
- WAREN (Varen):  
 George: lce, 488.  
 —, widow of Sir William, 327 (n) *d*.
- WARFUSSE, Count de: 1045, 1047.
- WARWICK, Earl of: 1783.
- Waterford (Guatelort): 8 (n) *h*, 184 (n), 272 (n), 873 (n) *h*, *l*, 1761, 1767, 1848 (n) *b*, *d*, 1861 (n) *b*, 1954 (n) *b*, 1960 (n) *a*, 1970 (n), 2019 (n) *a*, *c*, 2031 (n) *a*, A 2, A 27.
- Watermael: 2108.
- WATTEVILLE, Baron de: 1040-1.
- WATZ, Francis: gt, 52 [c].
- WEAVER, —: 2024 (n).
- Weert: 445-6.
- WEL, *see* WALLE.
- Welle, seigneur de, *see* HAEN.
- WENTWORTH, Sir Thomas, Lord Deputy 1633-39, created Earl of Strafford, 1640, d. 1641: 1188 (n), 1351 (n); displeased that some Irishmen are serving French, 1352, 1357, 1362, 1383; 1687 (n) *a*, *b*, *d*.  
 Letters *to* CHARLES I, 1539 (n); *to* Sir John Coke, 1525 (n), 1569 (n) *b*; *to* Sir Arthur Hopton, 1563 (n); *to* Juan de Nocolalde, 1351 (n) *a*, A 14 (n) *a*; *to* Col Thomas Preston, A 14; *to* Secretary Windebank, 1569 (n) *a*.  
 Letters *from* Sir John Coke, 1346 (n); *from* Sir Arthur Hopton, 1544 (n); *from* Juan de Nocolalde, 1231 (n), 1249 (n), 1351 (n) *b*, A 14 (n) *b*; *from* Col Patrick O Donnell, A 15, A 17; *from* Col Thomas Preston, A 13.



- WESLEY** (Wessele):  
 Edmond: lce, 46; 46 (n) b.  
 Oliver (Sgt): lce, 103.  
**Westcapelle** (West Capple, West-  
 kapelle): 1079 [a], A II.  
**Westinne**: 1757.  
**WESTMEATH**, Earl of, *see* NUGENT,  
 James.  
**Westmeath**: 1163 (n) a, c, 2019 (n) b, A 27.  
**Westminster**: 328 (n) d, 1895 (n) d,  
 2157 (n) a.  
**WESTON**:  
 Mathias: lce, 564.  
 Richard: attainted, 403 (n) b.  
 William (Capt): dead, 1977; 1979.  
**Wexford**: 184 (n), 780 (n), 1188 (n),  
 1848 (n) b, A 27.  
**Wesel**: 1142.  
**WHELEHAN**, *see* FULLIGHAN.  
**WHITE** (De Hute, Fuyt, Vit, Vite,  
 Vithe, De Vithe, Vitte, Vitus,  
 Whiteo, Whyte, De Whyte, De  
 Wid, Wilz, De Witthe, De Witt):  
 Andrew (Capt): 1831, 1850, 1894;  
 lce, 1912; 1938-9; to bring 2000  
 Irishmen to Spain, 2109 (n) b;  
 in Bastille, 2109 (n) a.  
 Dominick, *see* O DONNELL, Juana.  
 Edmond: lce, 401.  
 Francis (Capt): gt, 2376, 2673.  
 Gaspar (Capt): 2064.  
 James: gt, 8.  
 John: lce, 296.  
 John (Capt), of Loyhall: A 27.  
 Michael (Capt): 1973; leave of  
 absence, 2025; commended to  
 Archduke Leopold, 2031; 2099,  
 2211, 2410, 2438.  
 Nicholas: in Bastille, 2109 (n) a.  
 Richard: pn, 184 (n); gt, 326 [f].  
 Richard: gt, 225, 326 [e].  
 Richard (Capt): recruiting, 2025  
 (n), 2031, 2031 (n) a, b.  
 Stephen (Col): gt, 2306; 2306 (n).  
**Whitehall**: 320, 397 (n), 575 (n) a, c,  
 576 (n) d, 1346 (n), 1707 (n), 1774  
 (n) a, 2088 (n).  
**WHITE KNIGHT**, The: 338 (n).  
**Wicklow**: 1897 (n).  
**WIES**, Lt Henry: A 27.  
**WILLIAM**:  
 Luis: gt, A I.  
 Richard: gt, A I.  
**WILMOT** (Willmot):  
 Sir Charles: 338 (n).  
 Lord —: 2195 (n) b.  
**WILZ**, *see* WHITE.  
**WINDEBANK**, —, Secretary: 1351 (n)  
 a; letter from Sir Thomas Wentworth,  
 1569 (n) a; 1614, 1618 [i], 1739.  
**Windsor**: 2841 (n) b.  
**Winnoc**: 1860.  
**WINWOOD** (Windwood), Sir Ralph:  
 letters to Sir William Trumbull,  
 575 (n) a, 576 (n) c, d; letters to Sir  
 Arthur Chichester: 579 (n) b, 585 (n).  
**WISGERALD**, *see* FITZGERALD.  
**WITHE**, Witte, *see* WHITE.  
**WODUARDO**, Philip, chaplain: pay, 12.  
**WOOTON**, Sir Henry: letters to Earl  
 of Salisbury, 327 (n) c, 338 (n).  
**WORCESTER**, Earl of: 355 [a].  
**WORTHINGTON** (Vartington, Vothing-  
 ton), Thomas, chaplain: pay, 12,  
 52 [a], A I.  
**WRIGHT**, Richard: gt, 52 [c].  
**WYN**, Capt P: 32 (n).  
**Wytzcate**: 807.

## Y

- YEUSTAS**, *see* EUSTACE.  
**YLARTE**, Richard: gt, 171 [c].  
**YLLAN**, Raymond: gt, 171 [c].  
**YORK**, James, Duke of, subsequently  
 James II: 2051 (n), 2105 (n) b,  
 2109 (n) a, 2122 (n) b, 2140 (n) b;  
 Lt General of Irish regt in France,  
 2153 [a] [b] [c], 2157 (n) a; Don John  
 agrees that he should transfer to  
 Flanders, 2157 [b] [c]; Cromwell  
 agreeable to his serving in Italy,  
 2157 (n) a; meets his brother  
 Charles at Bruges, 2157 (n) a-c;  
 2162 (n) b; Ormonde to bring him  
 to Flanders, 2163; Col Darcy takes  
 over his regt, 2163 (n); 'Duke of  
 York's regt' formed, *ibid*; to serve  
 under Charles, 2171 (n) a; 2195 (n) b,  
 2198 (n), 2202, 2202 (n) a, b, 2206,  
 2263, 2296, 2303-4, 2309, 2399, 2457,  
 2481, 2492-4, 2508, 2513, 2521, 2527,  
 2535, 2543, 2552 (n) a, 2568, 2631-2,  
 2646, 2675-6, 2681-2.  
**YORK** (Yorke), Captn Rowland  
 (Orlando): 7, 8 (n) s-u.  
**York**: 1669.  
**YOUNG**, Thomas: 327 (n) b.  
**Ypres**: 807, 1671-2, 1684, 1961-3, 2095.

## Z

- ZAPATA**, Col Francisco: 1402, 1415.  
**Zeeland**: 896 [a].  
*See also* Zelande, Index II.  
**ZELADA**, Col the Marquis de: 1288.  
**ZERRALUS**, Col the Marquis de: 2414.  
**ZIFE**, Captn Antoine van de: ppt, to  
 take arms to Ireland, 1993.  
**Zoombeke** (Soombeke): A 9.  
**ZOUCH**, Lord: 1163 (n) a, b.  
**ZUBIAR**, Pedro, Commander of Spanish  
 Fleet at Kinsale: 265 (n) a.  
**ZUNIGA**, Col Luis de: 2684, 2691.  
**Zutphen**: 8 (n) p, s, u.  
*See also* Index II.



## A

- Afrique, Dominateur en*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Alcantara, Order of: 999, 1177, A 9, A 10, A 12.  
*Alfero*: 184 (n).  
*Algarbes, Roi des*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Aragon:  
   Cardinal of: 2644.  
   King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
*Algevre, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
*Andenacker, seigneurie de*: A 9.  
 Archers of the Guard: 825, 1026.  
 Ardfert, See of: Fr Richard Gold recommended for, 1121, 1125.  
 Armada: 19, 22, 24, 970, 970 (n).  
 Army (Spanish): 591-2, 598, 842, 873 (n) f, 2833.  
   *See also* Infantry; Pay.  
 Army, Commissioners of (Ireland): reports to Council of State, 2017 (n), 2035 (n), 2036 (n) b, 2081 (n) a, 2088 (n) a; reports to Parliament, 2025 (n), 2029 (n) a, 2081 (n) b; letter to Oliver Cromwell, 2031 (n) a; 2031 (n) b, 2063 (n) a; letter from Oliver Cromwell, 2088 (n) b; report from Dr Henry Jones, 2641 (n).  
 Arquebusiers: 878-9, 2170, 2838 [1].  
 Artillery: 91, 94 (n), 104, 126, 983 [a], 987 [c].  
*Artois (Arihoie), Conte de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
*Asie, Dominateur en*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Augustinians: 22, 24, 26, 572-3, 575, 1631, 1859, 2182, 2207, 2851.  
   *See also* WHITE LADIES.  
 Austria:  
   Archduke of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
   House of, its interests interwoven with Spain's: A 19 (5).

## B

- Bailiff of Douai, post of: 406.  
 Bankers: 2852 (n).  
 Bastille, The: 2109 (n) a.  
 Beets, the Preston family residence: 1952 (n).  
 Begging-licences: 539, 574, 657, 1065.  
 Benedictine nuns: 526 (n) a, b, 572-3, 575, 649.  
 Berehaven, Earl of, a title not fitting to be granted by King of Spain: A 19 (3).  
 Billeting difficulties: 890-1, 954-5, 1108, 1134, 1667, 1796, 1799, 1836-41, 1843.

- Bishoprics in Ireland, presentation o candidates for: 2645, 2668.  
*Bonccellaer, seigneurie de*: A 9.  
*Bourgogne, Duc de, Conte de*, titles of Philip IV: A 10.  
 Bows and arrows: 8 (n) o.  
 Brabant:  
   Council of: 925, 927, 1680, 2466 [b].  
   *Duc de*, one of Philip IV's titles, A 10.  
 Burning of farm, etc.—regt fined: 1435.  
 Butter from Ireland: 964-7.

## C

- Calatrava, Order of: 587, 631, 648, 857, 945, 1043, 1184, 1596, 1691, 1881, 2767, 2782.  
*Cantadors* (sic): 1960 (n) b.  
 Canteen, Head of, *see* FITZ GERALD, Captn Theobald.  
 Capuchins: 1032, 2780.  
 Carmelites: 572-3, 575, 1039, 1480-1.  
   *See also* Poor Clares.  
 Carthusians: 575.  
 Castile:  
   Constable of: 623.  
   King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Catholic League: 686, 946, 970, 1030 [t].  
 Catholics in Ireland, disabilities and hardships of: 617-8.  
 Cavalry: 1447 (n); desirable in invasion of Ireland, 991 [b].  
 Chaplains: 12, 22, 46 (n) c, 72 (n) b, 140, 182, 200-1, 218, 231, 250, 268, 272 (n), 365, 383, 456, 531, 536, 622, 635-6, 651, 667, 697, 724, 731, 742, 818, 823, 835-6, 838, 843, 849, 854, 858, 873 (n) l, 898, 913-4, 942-3, 953, 974, 998, 1005-6, 1009, 1064, 1077, 1090, 1120, 1122, 1143, 1149, 1161, 1175, 1183, 1190, 1205, 1207, 1212, 1218, 1221-2, 1237, 1248, 1269, 1306, 1313, 1315, 1317, 1329, 1387, 1429-30, 1448, 1473, 1476, 1493, 1495, 1499, 1535, 1544, 1546, 1580, 1580 (n), 1581, 1586, 1593, 1668, 1674-5, 1682, 1699, 1700 [c], 1720 [b], 1725, 1727, 1788-90, 1795, 1831, 1833, 1842, 1858-9, 1861 (n) b, 1888, 1890, 1930-1, 1980, 2000, 2038, 2045, 2050, 2065, 2071, 2085, 2091, 2102, 2122 (n) a, 2162, 2174, 2182, 2188, 2193-6, 2202, 2205-7, 2209, 2220, 2236, 2244, 2252, 2257, 2263, 2268, 2311, 2321, 2340, 2373-4, 2378, 2382, 2406, 2454, 2461-2, 2496, 2529, 2586, 2600, 2606, 2634, 2671, 2677-8, 2728, 2761, 2796, 2849.  
*Christian and Devout Exercise* (Fr William Fitz Gerald): 81.  
 Cipher: 1882, 1884, 2528.



Cistercians: 218, 617, 877.  
 Cloth, gift of: 2019, 2036.  
 Code, *see* Cipher.  
 Commissions, fees to be charged for: 2198 (n).  
 Confederation, Irish: 1825, 1882, 1891 (n), 1895 (n) b, 1907, 1929 (n), 1954 (n) b; 1970, 1970 (n), 2019 (n) a, 2118, 2194 (n).  
 Confirmation (Sacrament):  
 of Bernard O'Neill: 515, 527, 532, 534.  
 of son of Earl of Tyrconnel: 526 (n).  
*Cordube, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
*Corsique, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Council of Finances (Brussels): 1061, 1164, 1171, 1802, 1844, 1881, 2554; letters from Charles II (Spain), 2843, 2852.  
 Council of State (Brussels): 1134, 2027 (n) c.  
 Council of State (Ireland): reports from Commissioners of the Army, 2017 (n), 2035 (n), 2036 (n) b, 2081 (n) a, 2088 (n) a; letter from Alonso de Cardenas, 2074 (n) A 26.  
 Counsellor of War, title of: 1228, A 10.

## D

'*Daemones incarnati*': 2201 (n) a.  
*Des Bons Pasteurs*, seminary: 2677.  
 'Desmond, Earl of', a title not fitting to be granted by King of Spain: A 19 (3).  
 Doctors and Surgeons: 32, 214, 255, 384, 443, 852, 1039, 1151, 1162-3, 1181, 1208, 1220, 1298, 1384, 1414, 1442, 1550, 1563, 1697, 2187, 2401, 2730, 2742, A 7.  
 Dominicans: 572-3, 575, 1086, 1448, 1452; difficulty in collecting grant made to them, 1533; 1859; to be paid moneys out of secret service funds, 1895; grant for assignment of a chaplain, 1980; 2112, 2120; petition for authority to acquire additional property in Louvain, 2466, 2466 (n), 2554; 2696; gt to College of Holy Cross, Louvain, 2843, 2852.

## E

English nuns, *see* Benedictine nuns.  
*Entretenidos*, 576 (n) b.  
 Excommunication: 1030 [q], 2019 (n) a.  
 Executions: 52 (n) a, 245 (n).

## F

'Feagh Mac Hue's country': 338 (n).  
 Finances: 2852 (n).  
 Fish, *see* Waggon and Fish.  
 Fishing grounds, suggested attack on: 896 [c], 905 [b].  
 Flanders, Four Members of: 2106.  
*Flandres, Conte de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Fleet (Spanish): 65 (n) b; in Lough Foyle, 80 (n) b, 261; 200; at Kinsale, 265 (n) a; 429 (n) b; recruits to be sought in Flanders, 604; harbour for in Ireland described, 618 [j].  
*See also* Armada; Sea Power.  
 Flight of the Earls (Tyrone and Tyrconnell): their departure from Ireland, arrival and reception in Flanders, journey to Rome, 271 (n) a, 286 (n), 290 (n) a, c, 303 (n) b, c, 304, 304 (n) a-e, 305 (n) a, b, 306 (n) a-e, 307, 307 (n) a-g, 313 (n) a, b, 317, 320-2, 320 (n), 325 (n), 326 (n) a-c, 327, 327 (n) a-e, 328, 328 (n) a, c, d, 333 (n) b, c, 336, 340 (n) c, 451 (n); their arrival reported to Philip III, A 4; their letter to Abp of Armagh, 333 (n) a; A 4, A 6.  
*See also* ALBERT, Archduke; O DONNELL; O NEILL.  
 France:  
 King of, *see* Henri IV, Lorraine, Duke Charles of; Louis XI; Louis XIII; Louis XIV  
 described as 'this sweet mistress of liberty', 2110.  
*See also* Recruiting.  
 Franciscans: 286 (n), 383, 481 (n) a, 572-3, 575, 752-4, 873 (n) k, 1032, 1042, 1171, 1289, 1296, 1303, 1313, 1348; filling of post of commissary-general, 1529; 1534; petition to Don Ferdinand for use of mortmain, 1666; Fr Hugh Burke supports petition, 1668; petition refused, 1680; 1725, 1802; payments to, 1805-7; 1861 (n) b; a second provincial proposed, 1970 [j]; 2034, 2038, 2051; friars moving about the armies in Flanders to be removed, 2102; 2113, 2118, 2174, 2201, 2201 (n) a, b, 2224 (n), 2239, 2694; gt to St. Anthony's, Louvain, 2705; 2734; gt to St. Anthony's, 2840, 2846, 2848, 2850; A 3; new convent and chapel at Louvain, A 7.  
 Frigate, *St Francis*: 1818 (n) b.  
*Frinze, Seigneur de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Fronde, The: 2196 (n).



## G

- Galicia, King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Galleys, Irish and Scots condemned to: 605-7.
- Gascons: 2168 (n).
- Germany: 686, 896 [a], 905 [a], 951, 1030 [u], 1033-5, 1271-2, 1399, 1613, 1729, 1834, 2162 (n) a, 2218, 2315, 2474, 2501, 2560, 2598, 2616-7, 2620-1, 2631-2, 2800, 2802, A 12, A 13, A 18, A 19 (8). *See also* Infantry.
- Gifts, *see* Cloth; Greyhounds; Harp; Paintings; Tapestry.
- Gold, intended for Flanders, seized by Parliament ships: 1970 [i].
- Golden Fleece, *see* *La Toison d'Or*.
- Good Shepherd, Order of, *see* *Des Bons Pasteurs*.
- Grebalter, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Grenada, King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Greyhounds, gifts of: 352, 1349.
- Groennige, Seigneur de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Gueldres, Duc de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

## H

- Hambourg, Conte de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Hanseatic Cities: 1030 [u].
- Harp, gift of: 1349.
- Haynau, Palatin de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- 'Hercules and the Hydra': 618 [a]-[c].
- Hietégatt, "the street called", 526 (n) b.
- Hollande, Palatin de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Holy Cross, College of, *see* Dominicans.
- Holy Roman Empire, *see* *Saint Empire de Rome*.
- Hounds, *see* Greyhounds.

## I

- Ijssil, river: 8 (n) u.
- Indes, tant Orientales qu' Occidentales, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.
- Infantry:
- Burgundian: 951, 1237, 1274.
  - German: 1186, 1338, 1429-30, 1578, 1737, 1790, 1824, 1890, 2000, 2010, 2021, 2185, 2228, 2280, 2357, 2368, 2498, 2571, 2609, 2792, 2804, 2814.
  - Irish: *passim*.
  - Italian: 1500.
  - Lorraine: 1379, 1470.

- Scottish: 389, 747 (n) a, 1263, 1265, 1397, 1740, 1868, 2166 (n), 2793-4, 2815, 2820, 2828, 2833, A 25.
  - Walloon: 951, 983 [b], 988, 991 [b], 1186, 1329, 1356, 1357 (n), 1439 (n) a, b, 1447 (n), 1527 (n) a, 1877 [d], 2215, 2357, 2469, 2584, 2638, 2689 [2], 2779, 2833, A 9.
- "Infantry cannot all be saints": 1101.
- Invasion of Ireland: landing of troops under Col Jacques Francisco proposed, 94 (n); expedition under Earl of Tyrone contemplated, 338 (n), 397 (n), 451 (n), 487 (n), 537 (n) b, 571 (n) b, 575 (n) a, b; expedition under Col John O'Neill and Col Hugh O'Donnell planned: 873 (n), 874-7, 878 (n) d, 884 (n), 895-6, 904-5, 948 (n), 982-3, 986-92, 994-6, 1001, 1002 (n), 1003-4, 1008, 1029-31, 1031 (n) b.
- Ireland: better treated by Spain than Spain has ever treated any nation, 878 (n) c; unity necessary for success in Irish struggle, 987 [a], [d]; proposal that it be made a republic, 1030; friendship with Spain, Duke of Lorraine claims to be Protector of, 2046 (n) b; Charles II's settlement of his kingdom of, A 27.

*See also* Army, Commissioners of; Catholics; Confederation; Council of State (Ireland); Fleet; Irishmen; Irish Insurrection; Invasion.

- Irish Insurrection: rumour of rebellion mentioned by Sir Henry Vane, 1707 (n); design suspected, 1728 (n) a, b, 1773, (n) a; Sir James Dillon ready to seize Dublin Castle, 1767 (n); accelerated by revolt of levy assembled for Spain, 1782 (n) b; repercussions in the army in Flanders, 1792 (n) a-d; Fr Hugh Wadding tries to raise cost of frigate, 1796 (n) a; Cardinal Stravius hopes to send 12,000 muskets, 1798 (n) a; Fr Luke Wadding sends 10,000 crowns, 1798 (n) b; army in Flanders not willing to release Col Eugenio O'Neill, 1798 (n); Spanish authorities pardon persons who have left for Ireland, 1823, 1825; free passage from France to Ireland allowed to Geoffrey Baron's loaded vessel, 1832; munitions from Duke of Lorraine, 1863, 1863 (n) a, b; 1886, 1970, 1991; surrender of Ulster leaders, 2029 (n) e; 2552 (n) a.
- Irishmen: troops with Sir Wm Stanley described, 8 (n) o-q; attempts to bring them back to English allegiance, 46 (n) b; are civilised and disciplined by travel, 574 (n); troops moved to Spain, 1534; reduced by



war and disease, 1536; highly esteemed in Spain, 1544 (n), 1685, 1779; alleged to have precedence over English troops in Flanders, 1614; Walloons and Irish preferred for army in Cantabria, 1685; to be treated in best manner possible, 1837; giving of titles of honour to them by Spain deprecated, A 19 (3); will cause the ruin of Spain, 2058 (n) c; go over from Spanish to French in Catalonia, *ibid*; their bravery in the Gironde, 2116 (n) b; Duke of York commands the strongest Irish regt, 2153; Chancellor Hyde's views on, *ibid*; French use every artifice to retain Irish troops in their service, *ibid*.

See also Munstermen; Prisoners; Privateers; Scotsmen; Students; Sureties; Ulstermen.

Island, near Waterford: 1954 (n) b.  
*Isles de Canarie, Roi des*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

## J

*Jane, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Jansenism: 1862.

Jerusalem, King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Jesuits: 344 (n), 436, 572-3, 575, 873 (n) h, 878 (n) c, 1580 (n), 1586, 1593, 1848 (n) b, 2063 (n) a, 2201 (n) b, 2695.

Jubilarian: 1704.

## K

King's Evil: 364.

## L

La Scala, Church of: 1862-3.

*La Toison d'Or, Ordre de*: A 9.

*Lembourg, Duc de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Leon, King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Licences for Ireland, to recruit: 1155, 1187-9, 1197-8, 1201-3, 1219, 1225, 1238-41, 1249, 1276-8, 1295, 1299, 1300-2, 1367, 1369, 1373, 1375, 1378, 1385-6, 1389, 1395-7, 1730-1, 1736, 1759, 1856, 2060, 2841.

Licentiates in Theology: gt to two going to Rome, 2707.

*Lombeck, viscomte de*, see HAEN.

*Lothier, Duc de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

*Luxembourg, Duc de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

## M

'Mac Guennis's country': 338 (n).

'Mac Guire's country': 571 (n) b.

*Maillorcques, Roi des*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

*Malines, Seigneur de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

'Mayo, Marquess of,' a title not fitting to be granted by King of Spain: A 19 (3).

*Milan, Duc de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Military Police: 1762, 2528.

See also SALAS.

Money, Spanish, value of: 2852 (n).

Mortmain: 1666, 1668, 1680, 2466.

Munitions: 1818 (n) b.

Munstermen: 'as false as the Devil', 305 (n) b; held in scorn by Ulstermen, 1613.

*Murcie, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Mutiny: 56-7, 56 (n), 2116-7.

## N

*Namur, Palatin de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Navarre, King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

Neapolitans, The: 1439 (n) b.

## O

*Oceane, Isles et terre firme de la mer, Roi des*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

*Overyssel, Seigneur de*, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.

## P

Paintings, gift of: 2018.

Papal Bull: 618 [f] [g], A 25.

Papist, Loyal-hearted: letter to Viscount Falkland: 873 (n) f.

Parliament, English: 1783, letter from Alonso de Cardenas, 1861 (n) a; 1882; Irish levies stopped, 1895 (n) d; 1956 (n); prevent passage of troops to Spain, 1968 (n); offer 6000 prisoners to Cardenas, 1971; 1996; Philip IV at peace with, 2017; facilitates Irish forces going to Continent, 2019 (n) a, b; 2024 (n); reports from Commissioners of the Army, 2025 (n), 2029 (n) a, 2081 (n) b; 2031 (n) a, 2041, 2168 (n), A 19, A 20.

Pay, soldiers defrauded of: 1131 (n).

Paymaster-General, see Treasurer-General.



Peace Treaty, proposed: 320.  
 Pensions for Irish soldiers: 580.  
 Petards: 987 [c].  
 Pikemen: 2170.  
 Pirates: 606, 1804 (n) c, 2198.  
 Plantations (Irish): 326 (n) a, 487 (n).  
 Platform at siege of Ostend: 126, 126 (n) a.  
 Poor Clares: 2213 (n).  
*See also Carmelites.*  
 Portugal, King of, one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Portuguese, The: 2641.  
 Prisoners, Irish, at Dover and Canterbury: 978 (n).  
 Privateers, Irish: 2198.  
 Privy Council: letter from Sir John Perrot, 8 (n) b; letter to Sir John Perrot, 8 (n) u; 8 (n) y; letter from Sir George Carew, 80 (n) d; letter from Lord Mountjoy, 85 (n); conferences with Baron of Hoboken, 320, 325; 525 (n), 610 (n); letter from Council of War for Ireland recommending banishment of popish priests, prelates and Jesuits, 873 (n) h; represents to Charles I danger of friendship between Catholic Irish and the Spaniards, 1229.  
 Prophecy: 618 [j].  
 Protestants:  
 Army in Ireland composed entirely of, 1687 (n) c.  
 Not suitable for service in Spain, 1868, 1878.  
 Puritans, The: 1783.

## R

## Recruiting:

For Charles Stuart *aftrwds* CHARLES II: 2140 (n) a, 2153, 2157, 2162 (n) a, b, 2163, 2163 (n), 2170, 2171 (n) a, b, 2198 (n).  
 For French Army: 1346, 1346 (n), 1352, 1687, 1861 (n) a—c, 1868 (n), 1879, 1891 (n), 1893 (n) a, b, 1929 (n), 1954 (n) a, b, 1956 (n), 1962 (n), 2105 (n) a, b.  
 For Polish Army: 747, 747 (n) a—c.  
 For Spanish Army: 576 (n) c, d, 777, 777 (n), 778—9, 791—2, 819, 873, 873 (n) e—e, n, 1056, 1192, 1194, 1231 (n), 1232—3, 1265, 1273, 1293—5, 1305, 1337, 1356—7, 1357 (n), 1527, 1527 (n) d, 1539, 1536, 1539, 1545, 1551, 1569 (n) a, b, 1572—4, 1577, 1582, 1589, 1605, 1608, 1615, 1617—8, 1622, 1624, 1626, 1630—1, 1635, 1669, 1687, 1689, 1693, 1707, 1707 (n), 1713—4, 1716, 1719—20, 1728, 1735—6, 1738, 1738 (n), 1739—83 *passim*, 1848 (n)

a—c, 1861 (n) a—c, 1866—8, 1877—9, 1882, 1893 (n) b, 1895 (n) c, d, 1897—8, 1897 (n), 1903, 1907, 1929 (n), 1952, 1961—7 *passim*, 1968 (n), 1970 (n) a, b, 1971, 1991, 1995 (n), 1997, 2001, 2019 (n) a—c, 2029 (n) a, 2033, 2036 [b], 2036 (n) c, 2041, 2052, 2054—7, 2075, 2075 (n), 2081 (n), 2088 (n), 2094, 2103 (n), 2106, 2122 (n), 2143, 2147, 2157 (n) a, 2160, 2162 (n) a, 2170, 2223, 2223 (n), 2245 (n), 2679 (n), 2838 [1], 2845, A 19, A 20.

*See also* ALARD, Sgt John; BARNEWALL, Col Richard; BARRY, Lt Col Gerald; BARRY, Col John; BELLING, Col Christopher; BERMINGHAM, Col John; BERMINGHAM, Captn Nicholas; BURKE, Col Richard; BUTLER, Col John, BUTLER, Col Richard; BUTLER, Col Thomas; CLARE, Earl of; COSTELLO, Col Dudley; CUSACK, Col George; DILLON, Col James; FITZGERALD, Col James; FITZGERALD, Col Patrick; KANNAN, James; KELLY, Col Charles; KELLY, Captn Thadeus; MAC MACCARTHY, Col Donough; MAC-DONNELL, Captn Maurice; MAC-DONNELL, Col Sorley; MAC-DONOGH, Thomas; MURPHY, Col John; NUGENT, James; NUGENT, Sir Thomas; O BRIEN, Captn Dermot; O BRIEN, Col Hugh; O BRIEN, Miltough; O BYRNE, Col Denis; O DONNELL, Col Patrick; O DWYER, Col Edmond; O NEILL, Col Bernard; O NEILL, Captn Constantine; O NEILL, Col Eugenio; O REILLY, Col Philip; O SULLIVAN MORE, Col Dermot; O SULLIVAN MORE, Col Philip; PLUNKET, Col Richard; PLUNKET, Col Thomas; PORTER, Col George; PRESTON, Col James; PRESTON, Col Thomas; ROCHE, Captn Raymond; TAAFFE, Col Theobald; TAAFFE, Captn Peter; FRESWELL, Col Daniel; WHITE, Captn Andrew; WHITE, Captn Richard.

*See also* CARDENAS, Alonso de; CHARLES I; CHARLES II (of England); Licences.

Religious Orders, *see* Augustinians; Benedictine nuns, Capuchins; Carmelites; Carthusians; Cistercians; *Des Bons Pasteurs*; Dominicans; Franciscans; Jesuits; Poor Clares; Scots (seminary); White Ladies.

*Reformados*: 184 (n).

Republic for Ireland proposed: 1030 [h] [i] [1].



## S

- St. Ambrose, Church of: 1863.  
 St. Anthony's, Louvain, *see* Franciscans.  
 St. Benedict, Order of: 1798.  
 St. Bernard, Order of: 877 [a].  
*Saint Empire de Rome, Marquis de*,  
 one of Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 St. Francis, Church of: 606.  
*St. Francis*, frigate: 1803 (n) b.  
 St. Iago, Order of: 384 (n) 650, A 9.  
 St. Isidore's (Rome): 1791.  
 St. James, Order of: 1628.  
*St. Mary*, frigate: 1960 (n) b.  
 St. Philip, fortress of: 1858.  
*Salins, Seigneur de*, one of Philip IV's  
 titles: A 10.  
 Sambre, river: 2202 (n) b.  
 Sardinia, King of, one of Philip IV's  
 titles: A 10.  
 Scheldt, river: 437, 919.  
 Scotland: 19, 67 (n) a, b, 326 (n) a, 343,  
 360, 361 (n), 491, 610 (n), 617, 618  
 [j], 657, 728, 873 (n) d, 896 [c], [d],  
 905 [b], [c], 970 (n), 1004, 1030  
 [a], [u], 1577, 1589, 1618 [a], 1669,  
 1687-8, 1767 (n), 2201 (n) b, A 2.  
 King of, *see* JAMES VI.  
*See also* Infantry; Scotsmen.  
 Scotsmen: Students at Douai, 575; in  
 Poland, 747 (n) a; more hardy than  
 Irish, 1001, 1804 (n) b; not suitable  
 for service in Spain, 1868, 1878;  
 prisoners, held by English, offered  
 to Spain as levies, 1971; troops under  
 Middleton, 2166 (n).  
 Scourging: 1084.  
*Sea Flower*, 610 (n).  
 Sea Power: defensive policy ruinous,  
 896 [c], 905 [a].  
*See also* Fleet (Spanish); Fishing  
 Grounds.  
 Secret Service money: 1236, 1252,  
 1895-6, 1899, 2712, 2847.  
 Seine, river: 304 (n) b.  
*Seville, Roi de*, one of Philip IV's titles:  
 A 10.  
 Sicilies, The Two, King of, one of  
 Philip IV's titles: A 10.  
 Stilts: 8 (n) o.  
 Students, Irish, at Douai: 575, 874.  
 Sugar: 539.  
 Sureties: business men's preferred to  
 those of gentlemen in Ireland, 1775.  
 Surgeons, *see* Doctors and Surgeons.  
 Sutlers: 338 (n), 394-5.

## T

- Tapestry, gift of: 1352, 1362, 1383.  
*Tirol, Palatin de*, one of Philip IV's  
 titles: A 10.  
 Toledo (Tolete), King of, one of Philip  
 IV's titles: A 10.  
 Tower of London: 308 (n), 614, 614 (n),  
 648, 793, 1792 (n) e, 2029 (n) c, A 26.  
 Treasurer-General (Treasurer, Pay-  
 master-General): 1048, 1068, 1806.  
*See also* Council of Finances;  
 PRATS, Jehan; VILOA, Thomas Lopez  
 de.  
 Trepanning: 2591.  
 Tuam, *See* of: Fr Richard Gold  
 recommended for, 1121.  
 Turks, The: 747, 747 (n) a—c, 987 [a].  
 Tyrone, Earldom of: 1801 (n) a.

## U

- 'Ulster, Prince of', a title not fitting to  
 be given by King of Spain: A 19 (3).  
 Ulstermen said to hold Munstermen in  
 scorn: 1613.  
 Uniform: 2838 [1].  
*Ulrecht, Seigneur de*, one of Philip IV's  
 titles: A 10.

## V

- Valence, King of, one of Philip IV's  
 titles: A 10.  
 Venetian Ambassador: 747 (n) a.  
 Venetians, The: 618 [c], 1970 (n),  
 2140 (n) a, b.

## W

- Waggons and fish seized by military:  
 925.  
 Weapons, *see* Archers of the Guard;  
 Arquebusiers; Artillery; Bows and  
 Arrows; Petards; Pikemen.  
 Whale Fishery: 992, 996.  
 White Ladies (Sisters of St Augustine):  
 430, 443-4, 449-51.  
*See also* TSERRAERTS; Van WAMEL.  
 Witchcraft: 446 (n).

## Z

- Zelande, Palatin de, Prince de*, titles of  
 Philip IV: A 10.  
*Zutphen, Palatin de*, one of Philip IV's  
 titles: A 10.



















